



# A Naive Short-tempered Girl - Chapter 001-370

### **Table of Contents**

- 1. A Naive short-tempered girl (on going)
- 2. Character Detail
- 3. <u>1</u>
- 4. <u>2</u>
- 5. <u>3</u>
- 6. <u>4</u>
- 7. <u>5</u>
- 8. 6
- 9. <u>7</u>
- 10. 8
- 11. <u>9</u>
- 12. <u>10</u>
- 13. <u>11</u>
- 14. <u>12</u>
- 15. <u>13</u>
- 16. <u>14</u>
- 17. <u>15</u>
- 18. <u>16</u>
- 19. <u>17</u>
- 20. <u>18</u>
- 21. <u>19</u>
- 22. <u>20</u>
- 23. <u>21</u>
- 24. <u>22</u>
- 24. <u>22</u>
- 25. <u>23</u>
- 26. <u>24</u>
- 27. <u>25</u>

- 28. <u>26</u>
- 29. <u>27</u>
- 30. <u>28</u>
- 31. <u>29</u>
- 32. <u>30</u>
- 33. <u>31</u>
- 34. <u>32</u>
- 35. <u>33</u>
- \_\_\_\_
- 36. <u>34</u>
- 37. <u>35</u>
- 38. <u>36</u>
- 39. <u>37</u>
- 40. <u>38</u>
- 41. <u>39</u>
- 42. <u>40</u>
- 43. <u>41</u>
- 44. <u>42</u>
- 45. <u>43</u>
- 46. <u>44</u>
- 47. <u>45</u>
- 48. <u>46</u>
- 49. <u>47 48</u>
- 50. <u>49</u>
- 51. <u>50</u>
- 52. <u>51</u>
- 53. <u>52</u>
- 54. <u>53</u>
- 55. <u>54 55</u>
- 56. <u>56</u>
- 57. <u>57</u>
- 58. <u>58</u>
- 59. <u>59</u>
- 60. <u>60</u>
- 61. <u>61</u>

- 62. <u>62</u>
- 63. <u>63</u>
- 64. <u>64</u>
- 65. <u>65</u>
- 66. <u>66 67</u>
- 67. <u>68</u>
- 68. 69 72
- 69. <u>73</u>
- 70. <u>74</u>
- 71. <u>75</u>
- 72. <u>76 -78</u>
- 73. <u>79</u>
- 74. <u>80</u>
- 75. <u>81</u>
- 76. <u>82</u>
- 77. <u>83</u>
- 78. <u>84</u>
- 79. <u>85</u>
- 80. <u>86</u>
- 81. <u>87 88</u>
- 82. <u>89</u>
- 83. <u>90</u>
- 84. <u>91 93</u>
- 85. <u>94</u>
- 86. <u>95 96</u>
- 87. <u>97 100</u>
- 88. <u>101 103</u>
- 89. <u>104 106</u>
- 90. <u>107 110</u>
- 91. <u>111 114</u>
- 92. <u>115 118</u>
- 93. <u>119</u>
- 94. <u>120</u>
- 95. <u>121</u>

- 96. <u>122</u>
- 97. <u>123 124</u>
- 98. <u>125</u>
- 99. <u>126</u>
- 00. <u>127</u>
- 01. <u>128</u>
- 02. 129 130
- 03. <u>131 132</u>
- 04. <u>133</u>
- 05. <u>134</u>
- 06. <u>135 136</u>
- 07. <u>137 140</u>
- 08. <u>141 143</u>
- 09. <u>144 145</u>
- 10. <u>146</u>
- 11. <u>147</u>
- 12. <u>148 150</u>
- 13. <u>151 154</u>
- 14. <u>155 157</u>
- 15. <u>158 160</u>
- 16. <u>161</u>
- 17. <u>162 163</u>
- 18. <u>164</u>
- 19. <u>165-167</u>
- 20. <u>168</u>
- 21. <u>169 170</u>
- 22. <u>171</u>
- 23. <u>172</u>
- 24. <u>173</u>
- 25. <u>174 176</u>
- 26. <u>177</u>
- 27. <u>178</u>
- 28. <u>179 180</u>
- 29. <u>181 182</u>

- 30. <u>183</u>
- 31. <u>184</u>
- 32. <u>185</u>
- 33. <u>186 188</u>
- 34. <u>189 190</u>
- 35. <u>191 194</u>
- 36. <u>195 196</u>
- 37. <u>197 198</u>
- 38. <u>199 A</u>
- 39. <u>199 B</u>
- 40. <u>200 A</u>
- 41. <u>200 B</u>
- 42. <u>201 A</u>
- 43. <u>201 B</u>
- 44. <u>202 A</u>
- 45. <u>202 B</u>
- 46. <u>203 A</u>
- 47. <u>203 B</u>
- 48. <u>204 A</u>
- 49. <u>204 B</u>
- 50. <u>205 A</u>
- 51. <u>205 B</u>
- 52. <u>206 A</u>
- 53. <u>206 B</u>
- 54. <u>207 A</u>
- 55. <u>207 B</u>
- 56. <u>208 A</u>
- 57. <u>208 B</u>
- 58. <u>208 C</u>
- 59. <u>208 D</u>
- 60. <u>209</u>
- 61. <u>210 A</u>
- 62. <u>210 B</u>
- 63. <u>210 C</u>

- 64. <u>210 D</u>
- 65. <u>210 E</u>
- 66. <u>211 A</u>
- 67. <u>211 B</u>
- 68. <u>211 C</u>
- 69. <u>211 D</u>
- 70. <u>212 A</u>
- 71. <u>212 B</u>
- 72. <u>212 C</u>
- 73. <u>212 D</u>
- 74. <u>213 A</u>
- 75. <u>213 B</u>
- 76. <u>213 C</u>
- 77. <u>213 D</u>
- 78. <u>214 A</u>
- 79. <u>214 B</u>
- 80. <u>214 C</u>
- 81. <u>215</u>
- 82. <u>216 A</u>
- 83. <u>216 B</u>
- 84. <u>217 A</u>
- 85. <u>217 B</u>
- 86. <u>218 A</u>
- 87. <u>218 B</u>
- 88. <u>218 C</u>
- 89. <u>218 D</u>
- 90. <u>219 A</u>
- 91. <u>219 B</u>
- 92. <u>219 C</u>
- 93. <u>220 A</u>
- 94. <u>220 B</u>
- 95. <u>221 A</u>
- 96. <u>221 B</u>
- 97. <u>221 C</u>

- 98. <u>222 A</u>
- 99. <u>222 B</u>
- 00. <u>222 C</u>
- 01. <u>223 A</u>
- 02. <u>223 B</u>
- 03. <u>223 C</u>
- 04. <u>223 D</u>
- 05. <u>223 E</u>
- 06. <u>224 A</u>
- 07. <u>224 B</u>
- 08. <u>224 C</u>
- 09. <u>224 D</u>
- 10. <u>225 A</u>
- 11. <u>225 B</u>
- 12. <u>225 C</u>
- 13. <u>225 D</u>
- 14. <u>225E</u>
- 15. <u>226 A</u>
- 16. <u>226 B</u>
- 17. <u>226 C</u>
- 18. <u>226 D</u>
- 19. <u>227 A</u>
- 20. <u>227 B</u>
- 21. <u>227 C</u>
- 22. <u>227 D</u>
- 23. <u>227 E</u>
- 24. <u>228 A</u>
- 25. <u>228 B</u>
- 26. <u>228 C</u>
- 27. <u>228 D</u>
- 28. <u>229 A</u>
- 29. <u>229 B</u>
- 30. <u>229 C</u>
- 31. <u>229 D</u>

- 32. <u>229 E</u>
- 33. <u>230 A</u>
- 34. <u>230 B</u>
- 35. <u>230 C</u>
- 36. <u>230 D</u>
- 37. <u>230E</u>
- 38. <u>231 A</u>
- 39. <u>231 B</u>
- 40. <u>231C</u>
- 41. <u>231 D</u>
- 42. <u>232 A</u>
- 43. <u>232 B</u>
- 44. <u>232 C</u>
- 45. <u>232 D</u>
- 46. <u>233 A</u>
- 47. <u>233 B</u>
- 48. <u>234A</u>
- 49. <u>234B</u>
- 50. <u>235</u>
- 51. <u>236</u>
- 52. <u>237</u>
- 53. <u>238</u>
- 54. <u>239</u>
- 55. <u>240</u>
- 56. <u>241</u>
- 57. <u>242</u>
- 58. <u>243 A</u>
- \_\_\_\_\_
- 59. <u>243 B</u>
- 60. <u>244 A</u>
- 61. <u>244 B</u>
- 62. <u>245 A</u>
- 63. <u>245 B</u>
- 64. <u>246</u>
- 65. <u>247</u>

- 66. <u>248</u>
- 67. <u>249 A</u>
- 68. <u>249 B</u>
- 69. <u>250 A</u>
- 70. <u>250 B</u>
- 71. <u>251 A</u>
- 72. <u>251 B</u>
- 73. <u>252 A</u>
- 74. <u>252 B</u>
- 75. <u>253 A</u>
- 76. <u>253 B</u>
- 77. <u>254 A</u>
- 78. <u>254 B</u>
- 79. <u>255 A</u>
- 80. <u>255 B</u>
- 81. <u>256 A</u>
- 82. <u>256 B</u>
- 83. <u>257 A</u>
- 84. <u>257 B</u>
- 85. <u>258 A</u>
- 86. <u>258 B</u>
- 87. <u>259 A</u>
- 88. <u>259 B</u>
- 89. <u>260</u>
- 90. <u>261</u>
- 91. <u>262</u>
- 92. <u>263</u>
- 93. <u>264 A</u>
- 94. <u>264 B</u>
- 95. <u>265 A</u>
- 96. <u>265 B</u>
- 97. <u>266 A</u>
- 98. <u>266 B</u>
- 99. <u>267 A</u>

- 00. <u>267 B</u>
- 01. <u>267 C</u>
- 02. <u>268</u>
- 03. <u>269 A</u>
- 04. <u>269 B</u>
- 05. <u>270 A</u>
- 06. <u>270 B</u>
- 07. <u>271 A</u>
- 08. <u>271 B</u>
- 09. <u>272 A</u>
- 10. <u>272 B</u>
- 11. <u>273</u>
- 12. <u>274 A</u>
- 13. <u>274 B</u>
- 14. <u>275 A</u>
- 15. <u>275 B</u>
- 16. <u>276 A</u>
- 17. <u>276 B</u>
- 18. <u>277</u>
- 19. <u>278</u>
- 20. <u>279</u>
- 21. <u>280 A</u>
- 22. <u>280 B</u>
- 23. <u>281</u>
- 24. <u>282A</u>
- 25. <u>282 B</u>
- 26. <u>283</u>
- 27. <u>284</u>
- 28. <u>285</u>
- 29. <u>286</u>
- 30. <u>287</u>
- 31. <u>288</u>
- 32. <u>289</u>
- 33. <u>290</u>

- 34. <u>291</u>
- 35. <u>292A</u>
- 36. <u>292 B</u>
- 37. <u>293</u>
- 38. <u>294</u>
- 39. <u>295</u>
- 40. <u>296</u>
- 41. <u>297</u>
- 42. <u>298</u>
- 43. <u>299</u>
- 44. <u>300</u>
- 45. <u>301</u>
- 46. <u>302</u>
- 47. <u>303</u>
- 48. <u>304</u>
- 49. <u>305</u>
- 50. <u>306</u>
- 51. <u>307</u>
- 52. <u>308</u>
- 53. <u>309</u>
- 54. <u>310</u>
- 55. 311 + 312
- 56. <u>313 +</u>
- 57. 315 + 316
- 58. <u>317</u>
- 59. <u>318</u>
- 60. <u>319</u>
- 61. <u>320</u>
- 62. <u>321</u>
- 63. <u>322</u>
- 64. <u>323</u>
- 65. <u>324 A</u>
- 66. <u>324 B</u>
- 67. <u>325</u>

- 68. <u>326 A</u>
- 69. <u>326 B</u>
- 70. <u>327 A</u>
- 71. <u>327 B</u>
- 72. <u>328 A</u>
- 73. <u>328 B</u>
- 74. <u>329 A</u>
- 75. <u>329 B</u>
- 76. <u>330A</u>
- 77. <u>330B</u>
- 78. <u>331A</u>
- 79. <u>331B</u>
- 80. <u>332 A</u>
- 81. <u>332 B</u>
- ----
- 82. <u>333</u>
- 83. <u>334</u>
- 84. <u>335</u>
- 85. <u>336</u>
- 86. <u>337</u>
- 87. <u>338A</u>
- 88. <u>338 B</u>
- 89. <u>338 C</u>
- 90. <u>339 A</u>
- 91. <u>339 B</u>
- 92. <u>340</u>
- 93. <u>341</u>
- 94. <u>342</u>
- 95. <u>343</u>
- 96. <u>344</u>
- 97. <u>345 A + B</u>
- 98. <u>346</u>
- 99. <u>347 A</u>
- 00. <u>347 B</u>
- 01. <u>348 A</u>

- 02. <u>B</u>
- 03. <u>349 A</u>
- 04. <u>B</u>
- 05. <u>350 A</u>
- 06. <u>B</u>
- 07. <u>351</u>
- 08. <u>352</u>
- 09. <u>353</u>
- 10. <u>354</u>
- 11. <u>355</u>
- 12. <u>356</u>
- 13. <u>357A</u>
- 14. <u>B</u>
- 15. <u>358</u>
- 16. <u>359</u>
- 17. <u>360 A</u>
- 18. <u>361</u>
- 19. <u>362</u>
- 20. <u>363</u>
- 21. <u>364</u>
- 22. <u>365</u>
- 23. <u>366</u>
- 24. <u>367 + 368</u>
- 25. 369 + 370

## A Naive short-tempered girl (on going)

Title:纯情丫头火辣辣

Author: 齐成琨

Reading resources: Manga Novel 1 (500++) Novel 2 (800++)

PS: there are so many resources for the novel and also the manhwa. Synopsis:

One night she drunk and mistaken the most well-known Mafia boss as Host\* and intending to sleep with him. Oh my! what should I do? best to run away! After two years, she is working as elevator lady who works in one of the big company in China. She often get harassed by handsome colleagues when working. "Hey! Hey! I don't to play, this is not fun at all!" "Finally I found her! You little brat, two years ago you was running away, two years later I swear to "eat you up", until not left the bones." Description: Luo Yao Yao just broke with her boyfriend when she found out her boyfriend slept with another girl. She decided to make revenge by visiting one of the Host bar, accompany by her best friend. That night when she went to the Host bar, she drunk and mistaken Yu Ao Tian, the "Underworld Emperor" as Host. That time she managed herself to escape from Yu Ao Tian. Two years later she backs to China and work as elevator lady in Bo Sen, one of the biggest company in China. Again, she mistaken Yu Ao Tian who is the CEO as PR staff. Yu Ao Tian is well known underworld emperor in Japan, two years later he is moving to China to start as Business man, CEO of Bo Sen. He has more than super scary character and coldhearted man. If Luo Yao Yao is flower that able to attract (bees) many kind of Men, especially powerful and rich whom willing to sacrifice every thing for her, then Yu Ao Tian is the flame that able to attract (moths) many kind of Women who fall for him even they knew they would be get burn.

Warning: this novel contain quite many hot scenes, harsh, improper languages. but, it also has many funnies scenes. The female lead may look alike little white rabbit at the beginning but actually she is wolf in sheep skin after being trained

by Yu Ao Tian. My personal opinion, This is quite complicated novel with amount of twist. At the beginning, this novel looks more alike nasty writing because the steamy description in chapters. But, again... excluding the steamy and improper language, this novel worth to get chance. Let me know what you think about this novel

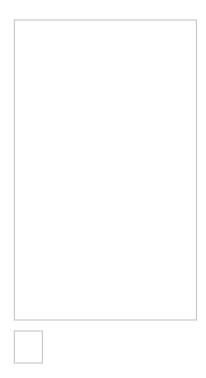
## **Character Detail**



There will be some character that does not same with the manhwa drawing so I put another picture as replacement.

All picture credit to Google, Baidu, etc (all picture not belong to me)

## **Character Detail**

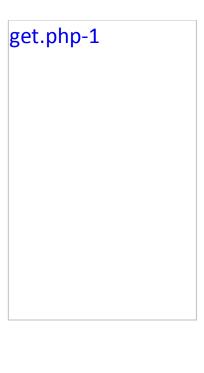


#### Female lead: Luo Yao Yao

Sometimes she can be super genius but another time she is muddle head, short tempered little girl. Ex-Girl friend of Feng Chen Yi, Lover to Yu Ao Tian.

Her nicknames: Xiao Meng Li (Long Ye called), Flat Chest (Long Qi), Little Thing + Bao Bei (Yu Ao Tian), You girl (Han Li Shang), My Beloved (Feng Chen Yi), Little foolish / Little Dummy (Qi Lian Ao Yun), Beloved one (Gong Xiao Man), You Women + Hey Woman (Hei Yan Long)

Position in Berson: Elevator Lady, Financial Department Staff, Lawyers Team

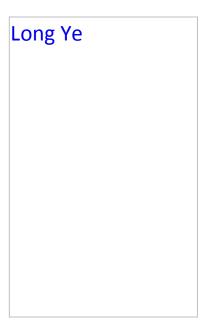


Male Lead: Yu Ao Tian

He is well known Yakuza's head, has nickname as Underworld Emperor in Japan, later moved to China to start business, acquiring Berson Group, become CEO and in very short time make the company to be the largest Group in China.

Position in Yu Long: Underworld Emperor

Position in Berson : CEO, Chairman Political Rank : Member of Congress



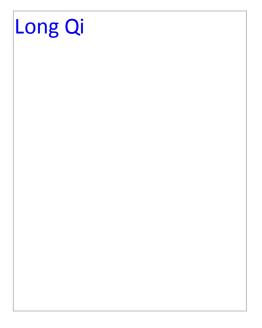
Supporting role: Long Ye

He is the Older brother for Long Qi, best friend of Yu Ao Tian. He has joined Yu Ao Tian since teenager in underworld as his comrade. Have very good brain and

great negotiation skill. Sweet and smooth talking. Seldom to call Yao Yao name but love to address her as Xiao Meng Li.

Position in Yu Long: Strategist, Diplomat

Position in Berson: General Manager (promote to Vice CEO)



#### Supporting Role: Long Qi

He is younger brother of Long Ye, same age with Yao Yao, hot temper young man. His body lots better compare to his brain. Sometime he acts first then think. He likes to call Yao Yao Flat Chest. Has bright future and excellent career in underworld. Just like his older brother he has followed Yu Ao Tian for long time.

Position in Yu Long: Comrade and Fighter

Position in Berson: Service Manager and Security Manager

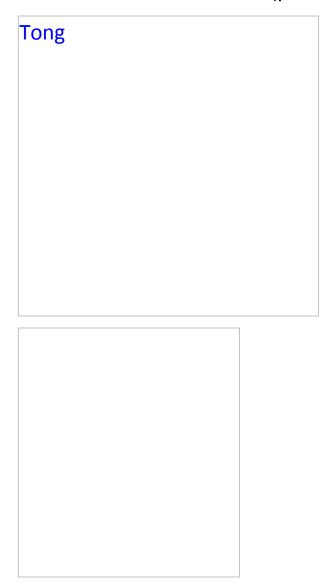
Han			

#### Supporting Role: Han Li Shang

He is best friend of Yu Ao Tian, older two year than Yu Ao Tian. Study in business, have background as entrepreneur. Cold, Heartless, He almost "clean" with women.

Position in Yu Long: Killer

Position in Berson: Vice CEO (promote to CEO)



#### Manhwa Version

#### Supporting Role: Mo Xue Tong

Note: I cannot find any good pict of Mo Xue Tong but at least this picture more alike her description in novel and better compare to the manhwa drawing. She is the only female in Yu Long group and best friend of Yu Ao Tian. Her personality introvert, she talk less but she is the scariest member compare to Li Shang, Long Qi and Long Ye. Her personalities suit Yu Ao Tian's taste that's she is precious friend for Yu Ao Tian.

Position in Yu Long: Killer

Position in Berson: Secretary to Yu Ao Tian.



#### Oi Lian Ao Yun

President of Student council where Yao Yao and Gong Xiao Man study. He is one of the most popular student, both for his brain and appearance. He well-known as someone warm, nice, gentle and good. A perfect prince to be true. Younger brother of Yu Ao Tian. He is third year student of First University.

## Feng's Group



#### **Feng Chen Yi**

He is the second young master of Feng group. born with silver spoon in his mouth that's why he is so arrogant but skillful. Yao Yao Ex-boyfriend.

Position in Feng Group: General Manager, CEO

Manhwa Version	
Manhwa Version	
My Version	
Lisa	
•	ry. She capable to do any task Feng Chen Yi asked, or company matters. she likes Feng Chen Yi but
•	ver pushed herself to Feng Chen Yi, understand
ner position very well.	, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , ,
Position in Feng Group : Secr	etary + Personal Assistant

**Feng Xiao** 

He is Father of Feng Chen Yi and also Feng Chen Rui. Former CEO of Feng Group and since he has retired, the Feng Group management hand over to Feng Chen Rui and Feng Chen Yi.

Position in Feng Group: Ex CEO and Board Chairman of Feng Group



#### **Feng Chen Rui**

He is elder brother of Feng Chen Yi and rival for succeeding Feng Group. Position in Feng Group: Vice CEO promote to CEO (jobless)

## Feng Ke Xin

She is the only daughter of Feng Xiao. Younger sister of Feng Chen Rui and half sister of Feng Chen Yi. She currently is study at same university with Luo Yao Yao.

## **Best Friend**

Gong Xiao Man, My Version

Gong Xiao Man, My Version

#### **Gong Xiao Man**

She is Japanese born Chinese, she changed her nationality after her mother remarry the Japanese husband. She met Yao Yao when both of them were

studying at the same high school. She is one of Yao Yao best friend. True friend that always protect Yao Yao even she needs to offend Feng Chen Yu in order to protect Yao Yao. She has cheerful, easy going, strong and sometime clueless character. Her life principle, dare to love dare to hate. Life to the fullest even if she should experience bitterness in life.

Manhwa ersion		
Bai Ling		

### **Bai Ling**

She is first best friend of Yao Yao when she back to China after graduated from high school in Japan. Bai Ling is talkative, gossiper, kind, cute, muddle-headed, cheerful and nice. She is type of white rabbit that easy to hunt.

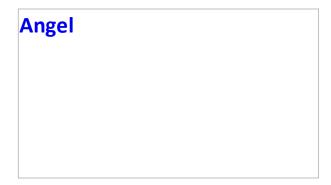
She is working as elevator lady in Berson Group for sometime and later on get promotion as OL.

### \_\_\_\_

#### Nan Lu

Another friend of Yao Yao. She is working as maid in Yu Ao Tian villa who who under Mo Xue Tong command. She has same character with Long Qi, very temperamental and excellent fighter. She is loyal to the group and also friendship.

Position in Yu Long: Assassin work under Mo Xue Tong



### **Angel**

she is housekeeper in Yu Ao Tian's villa. She also working and member of Yu Long's group.

Position in Yu Long: Assassin Work under Han Li Shang

## **Others**



**Xiao Cong** 

## **Xiao Cong**

Xiao Cong is the only son of Cong Qing Rui, the Big Boss of Long Chi Bang which is one of four biggest mafia group in China.

Li Mei Yun		
Manhwa version		
Li Mei Yun		
	st from China, she also rose fame in Japan. Her	father is
•	rich. The one who stays longest as Yu Ao Tian's	
Rank: one beloved love	· -	
Job : Artist		
Manhwa Version		
Li Ruo Ting		
She is younger sister o	f Li Mei Yun. Drop out student and stalker who	followed
,	ere. She loves Feng Chen Yi so much, very simil	
	e her life as Feng Chen Yi's bed-mate. She hates	
_	en Yi has already broke up with Yao Yao becaus	е чао
Yao always become to Status: unemploymen	t, Feng Chen Yi's bed-mate	
Status . unemploymen	Grens Chen ir s bea-mate	

#### **Xia Ren Liang**

He is one of the Financial Department employee in Berson Group and also colleagues of Yao Yao. He has very good temperament, soft, warm, gentle and caring. He likes Yao Yao since the first time he saw her. He is also the sole heir of Lan Du group and the only son of Xia Yu.

**Position in Berson: Financial Department Staff** 

Position in Lan Du: CEO

## Xia Yu

He is the chairman of Lan Du group, a father of Xia Ren Liang. He has very nice appearance, clean freak and also narcissist (love himself so much). Well known as woman killer. Fifty something old man who has thirties something outlook, very stylist and playboy.

Position in Lan Du Group: Board of Chairman

### Ou Yang Zi Xuan

He is best friend of Feng Chen Yi. He comes from rich family, but hard core fan of underworld lifestyle. He idolized Yu Ao Tian so much and called him as Big Boss Yu instead CEO Yu. His character is cheerful, like to play, having fun but always worry too much about Feng Chen Yi.

### Hei Yan Long

The Youngest CEO in China, best friend of Ou Yang Zi Xuan and Feng Chen Yi, the sole owner of Bao Lai Group and His company is ranked three in China. Taking position as CEO and also Chairman at eighteen years old, little bit childish and does not have any liking toward women.

He likes to call Yao Yao with 'You woman' or 'Hey woman'.

Although he type violent man, bad temper but at same time righteous, high sense of loyalty especially toward friends, have clear line about white and

black. Position in Bao Lai: CEO + Chairman



The daughter of Zhao Zhi Cheng who is one of Yu Ao Tian's enemy. She is former girlfriend and lover of Yu Ao Tian, her position replaced by Li Mei Yun after losing Yu Ao Tian favor.

She is Ex – heiress of Ao Mei Group after the her father death. She has brother.

#### **Shang Yun Yin**

She is First University third year student. Her father is one of the four Big Mafia Bosses in China. Yu Ao Tian newest bed mate after Li Mei Yun. She is counted as good fighter for Woman level. Her reputation crushed after being left by Yu Ao Tian.

Note: Another character will be updated as the chapters go.

1

chun q

**Edited by : Zephron** 

## **Chapter 1**

## **Little Maiden Playing With Fire**

The glamour and splendour of Japan, everywhere one looks is lively and crowded.

At one corner inside the Host Bar, the drunken Luo Yao Yao is accompanied by two good looking hosts, frustrated complains to her friend; "Xiao, Xiao Man, you said the hosts in here are... are the best ones, but why are they so disappointing?"

"Hey, Xiao Man, we are accompanying her to give face to your mother as our loyal client, but now she has complained we are not good looking enough. How can you explain this?!!" The host felt he was being insulted by her manner, how could the hosts endure?

Gong Xiao Man helplessly smiled. "Sorry, she has been drinking too much so she became like this, sorry, sorry."

While her best friend was conversing with the hosts, through her blurred pair of eyes, Yao Yao looks around.

"Ugh..." she staggered and went to the host bars exit...

At this moment, a man wearing a suit is slowly walking inside, his appearance allures all the women clients.

That black and silky hair, those oblique double-edge sword eyebrows, his sharp clear black eyes carry a demonic charm, with thin and glossy lips, a definite silhouette with a tall and slender figure is a model's body; sharp like nighthawk, cold, and arrogant but mystically charming.

Solitary and independent while emitting a strong aura that disdains the world. Even though those men who are behind him though are decent men, their aura seem pale in comparison to his, no! So to say, all of the hosts in here compared to him, all of them are bleak.

It's him! Suddenly Yao Yao stops, lifts her hand and points at the man.

"You, stop!"

All of the people around suddenly quieted down, following her surprising call, even the hosts that accompanied her...

"No... Oh my, Xiao Man, is your friend crazy? She is even daring...to provoke that man?"

"It's normal since he is so good looking, I also want to tease him, tease." Gong Xiao Man who is still not clear with the situation has been infatuated and was admiring that good looking man who stands not far from her.

"Aiya, Xiao Man, don't you know who he is...."

"Mei Mei (little girl), are you calling me?" The man asked with low and deep voice, his pair of eyes that looked in Luo Yao Yaos direction were cold and gloomy.

"Yes." Staggering, she walks in front of him, giving him the thumbs up while nodding.

"Hmm, not bad, your appearance is much more like a host. Come, come, I want you to accompany me." One of her hands grabs his neck through the necktie, strongly pulling him to her place.

When a few of his subordinates see this, their eyebrows crease as they quickly stand up; but that man silently signals them not to make any movement. Since they don't have to help, they relax.

The man followed her to sit, while the other two of hosts hurriedly stood up, their feet unstoppably trembling.

"Hmm." That man coughed once, then clapped his hands. Two of the hosts have received the order. Quietly bring Gong Xiao Man out from there.

The heavily drunk Luo Yao Yao doesn't know that her best friend isn't there anymore, and grabs the wine glass. "Handsome bro, accompany... accompany me to have drink..."

The man exposed his demonic smile while looking at her pour the drink, leisurely crossing her legs. This scenery is like sitcom, as if she is the hostess while he is the common client.

"Hey, handsome man, now that the client has called you to drink, why don't you drink? Faster! Drink!"

"Eh?" after he heard her order him, his eyes flashed, he pinches her jaw, "Little girl as the minor you are playing wildly in here, be careful or you will get burned!"

At this moment, the man's face exposed a strong presence which gives a heavy feeling of suffocation for all the people around; but the drunken Luo Yao Yao is not paying attention to this detail. "Hey, you are hurting me! To...to be honest let me tell you, today my purpose for coming here is because I want to get wild, so it is none of your business!"

"Eh? Interesting..." loosening his hands, the man stood up and asked one of his nearest subordinates, with low voice: "Bring her into my room." His deep eyes hid cunning looks; he quickly disappeared from the first floor...

_	_
- 4	,
	,

	Hi Guys,

What you think after read the first chapter? I will update this novel daily.

## **Chapter 2**

## Being forced by Host to...

"Hey, where are you going? I have given you money, you can't go!" Yao Yao caught up with him but being stopped by two of his subordinates, directly brought her to second floor.

This Host bar second floor is quite beautiful and splendid, it is the place where the host "do that" with the client.

"Let go of me, let go, where are you guys taking me?" Yao Yao was yelling and her voice echoing in second floor. That two people who brought her were ignored her, they just tossed her into one of the room. They looked each other, helplessly shaking their head: "This little girl is dead meat..."

Inside the room, Yao Yao was looking at the surrounding of the splendid room: "This is?" her eyes flashed and stopped at where the red wine was put: "Ha, there is wine." And then she was rushing to the in front, she grabbed one bottle of the red wine and opened it, she gulped one big mouthful, she was gulping the red wine big mouthful...

"Is it taste good?"

"It tasted good." Ugh? Was there somebody inside the room? She looked all around of the room... there was a man who standing right in front of the French window and his hand was holding the wine glass.

Who is he? Yao Yao moving to take a look...

"Oh it's you ah. Hm, why did run just now? All because of you, I was brought by two bastards to here, they grabbed my hand and it still feels hurt."

"Oh, you are tall, are you 190cm something? Do you have hobby to play basket ball? Ha, you have sturdy muscle." Now she was comparing her height with the man who standing in front of her, while her hands touching his muscles.

"Ugh." Facing with this kind of situation, the man sneered, taking the opportunity to take the wine bottle from her hands.

"Hey, what are you doing? Why are you taking my thing? Give it back to me! Give it back!" The only 150 cm something of Yao Yao would not be able to reach to that man's hands even she jumping as high as she could, this kind of scene simply to say very cute.

"Take off your clothes."

Take off clothes? Did she heard wrong? "You... what was you said?"

"Little Thing, didn't you say that you want to get wildly today? I am here to accompany you, moreover... I don't collect money." The man exposed devilish smile, the wine bottle was put near the bedside, turned his back, at the blink of eyes he has already in bed, his showed kind of sinister expression: "Are you taking off by yourself or should I help you?"

Hah????

This man domineering way of speaking is startled Yao Yao, this... this host... why has he so aggressive?

When she stills in very confusing moment, the man suddenly laughed: "Hm, it seems I need to help you to take off." He seemed to lift his 'little bro', harshly tossed her in bed.

"Hey, I..." she just wanted to climb down from the bed, but the man has already strongly pressed her back, to stay still. She completely looked alike unfortunate little lamb: "Wait...wait, I...my purpose coming here... just to play, I don't need any special treatment."

"Heh?" The man sexy lips suddenly curled up, showed devilish smile: "O? So you no need any special treatment?"

"Yes, Yes! I don't need! I don't need it!"

"But...I need the special treatment!" after he said, that man eyes showed hidden intention, stretched his other free hand, using little bit strength, forced to tear...

'tearing sound', she just felt her back chilling, suddenly bad negative thought invading her head. "You... You... what do you want to do? Let me go! Let me go! I just only a little girl, You let me go."

"O? Little girl? But just now you are not showing the manner of being a little girl."

When she heard this man taunting voice, she finally understood everything is happened because she asked it for herself. But... "Big... Big brother, actually my coming her only for revenge my Ex-boyfriend, I had seen by myself he and another woman "doing that", so I pissed off and...coming here. I begged you to let me off."

(October 2016)

# Begging to you, please let me off!

"Oh, so it was that."

She could feel that the man lighten his pressure on her back, naively Yao Yao thought she has succeed persuading the man, it seemed this host not that kind of bastard from beginning.

"Oh yeah..." Again that man's eyes showed hidden meaning, his lips curled up with demonic smiled: "You have seen, your Ex-boyfriend and that woman 'doing that'?"

Ugh... she really not able to guess? "They... were... were.." she still not able to say it, Yao Yao small face suddenly blushed.

At this moment...

"Um..."

That man slender and long fingers were reaching and sliding down to her neck... "Did they do... the thing that we are going to do now?"

Going to...do? Do the things? She muddled, actually what was this host meant? Didn't he not intend to let her go?

"Hu..." his hands were kept on moving at her back, feeling little bit stiffen, fears are enveloped her heart, "bumps" "Bumps", it keep thumping. "Big, Big brother, why are you still not letting me go, but you..." his hands has reached at her butt-cleavage, her hands were grasping the bed sheet tightly, nervously to the point she not even daring to breathe or making any sound.

"You bad Little Thing, I am helping you to take revenge to your Ex-boyfriend, you should thanks me, aren't you?"

"Together... to revenge... to my Ex-boyfriend?"

"Yeah, how he treated you, we are going to make him paid back in double." That man eyes flashed, slowly released her hands that pressed at her back, well-build body was pressing down...

That man was spreading warm breathe to her ears which giving her tickling sensation, she thousand times nervous: "No! No! thanks for your good intention, big brother, I... I don't want that kind of revenge."

"Heh?" she tried, kept on calling him Big Brother, if not because this Little Thing really interesting, he might be burned (pissed off) from the beginning, he is not types of man that have this kind of patience.

"Little Thing, the game of Big Brother and Little Sister, I have bored to play." That man showed gloomy expression.

Not waiting for her to response... "Ah..." something cold thing and smooth landed on her back. Took a look at that man's hand which holding a glass of wine, the wine was slowly dripping from her back to the bed, that man looked so satisfied with his masterpiece.

"Hm, does know how the wine taste?" He blinked his eyes, he tossed the glass wine aside.

#### "Glass broke sound"

The wine glass fell down immediately, the man lowered his head, he stretched out his tongue and licked her back, occasionally it issued out sucking sound.

"No, Don't... hu." The body unstoppable moving, her body kept on moving because of her fears.

"Little Thing, your body is too sensitive, trembling strongly, perhaps it said... come and play with me, hurry play with me."

"No, No! It is not like that."

"Oh? So how can you prove it to me?" his sexy lips trying to take off her undergarment, devilish smile showed from the way he curled up his lips.

Her undergarment is opened as if being casted a magic spell by him.

"No!" she panic, subconsciously Yao Yao moved her body, but her small butt whether it intentionally or unintentionally was rubbing at that man "things".

"Oh, you Little Brat, now I really suspect whether you are innocent or not, at the moment, if I found out you are not a virgin, I will ask my subordinate to play with you till death!" there was no woman could scheme in front at him, if there really that kind of audacious woman, one the best reward he could give is, it is... death!

# Chapter 4 Pain

Yao Yao did not want to think whatever the nasty words that man said, she just wanted to escape from this scary Host.

Her petite posture was touched by that man: "Huh..." the man subordinate has stood in front of her, while she was crying.

"Damn it! I satisfied with the reaction." when the man saw this type lovely-pity act, he did not show any mercy, further more he even felt more excited.

His big hands were strongly forced to break her hand that blocking in front of her chest.

Seeing her chest cleavage exposed, she still preserved to beg: "Big...Big Brother, I... I don't have 'anything', not interesting; you go to serve other client, will you?"

"Ah." She looked so scared while the man showed his devilish smile, intentionally stopped.

"Hu..." Yao Yao felt little bit relax. But at the other moment, she felt chills and her body became rigid, this was really not alike herself.

"Yu Lao Da (Big Boss Yu)!" At the moment when the man wanted to do something, one of the subordinates suddenly barging into the room, cut the conversation.

"Yu...Lao Da?" She dumbfounded after heard it, Yao Yao felt as if a bolt from the blue.

She looked terrifying to the man that pressed her body.

He...

He..

## He is? Yu...Ao Tian???

## The Host is actually Yakuza Head?

Yu Ao Tian is Japan strongest underworld Boss of Yu Long group. His reputation is being well-known entire Japan. The government, the businessmen, two of these group are also not dare to offend him, even if he stomps his feet, people are afraid as if the earthquake in Japan will occur.

He is fierce, his violent is not an ordinary people able to imaging about. Even if there is someone dared to offend him, the result only death, that path, being tortured slowly by slowly until death. For him, the women are only toys, playing for once then being thrown, if pregnant should get rid the baby by abortion, nevertheless, there are still many women that want to sacrifice themselves alike moths fly to flame.

Now, Luo Yao Yao is considered as 'sacrifice' her body, uh...uh.. how could she be so stupid to mistaken this underworld emperor as Host? Was this mean digging herself own grave?

Yu Ao Tian turned to look at his subordinate, a pair of eyes sight piercing sharply, at the moment he has already stood in front of his subordinate, he gave a slap...

"Yu Lao..."

Not to wait until the subordinate stood, Yu Ao Tian directly stepped on him...

Oh My Heaven...

Yu, Yu Ao Tian was treating his own subordinate.... Very merciless, Yao Yao being terrified after saw the scene.

\*\*

The next day, University of Japan...

"Hey see, faster, isn't she, the exchange student from China, how disgraced, really make the Chinese losing a face."

"Yes."

Walking around the campus, Luo Yao Yao was helplessly and looked awkward, listened to people who were talking about her, kept on walking by lowered her head. Although, she understood her current condition shameful, but compare to death, this was still better off.

Initially when she was at Host Bar, when Yu Ao Tian was leaving the room, she managed to escape by jumping from the window. But, who's knew, when she was jumping to escape from second floor balcony, her body only draped around by guilt.

She thought she is doomed, but fortunately, there was a good guy who gave her a western suit to cover her body, so she directly came back to school in that way.

But, because that good guy walked too fast, she wasn't see the person clearly, and also did not have time to thank him. Whatever, if fate allowed, one day they would be able to meet, when the time arrived, she would personally thank him.

She faster her steps, heading to the girl dormitory.

"Yao Yao!" The girl who was waiting her in front of the girl's dormitory was Gong Xiao Man, when she spotted Yao Yao, she flew in front of her: "Did everything Okay, seeing the Host took you out. So that..."

"Xiao Man, don't blame yourself, I am fine." She cut Xiao Man's words, she tried to force herself, showing her best smile.

"Are you really Okay? Those people who brought you..."

"Yao chan!" Before Xiao Man done, there was a Japanese girl who cut their conversation.

Yao Yao glancing over her shoulder to see....

Then, she saw not far from her there was a pair of man and woman, holding hands and smiling, walking to her direction. At the moment, Yao Yao face turned as cold as ice, her expression filled with deep hatred....



	_	
1		
		١
V	)	,

	From chapter one to five, the novel has introduced cold-heart, bad,
super scar	y man. He is Yu Ao Tian, big boss of Yu Long. In this chapter we will be
introduced	l another heartless man.

Pity of Yao Yao to meet one to another heartless man.

Feng Chen Yi....

## **Cheap Guy**

"Woah, Chen Yi, you had broken with your girl just only by one day, but your Ex-girl friend has wore other man's suit, she really brave enough." A beautiful Japanese girl with joyful smile swept her glance to Yao Yao, eyes subconsciously looked to Feng Chen Yi.

He has beautiful flawless white angular sharp face, a pair of deep glowing black eyes with charming color, thick sharp arch eyebrows, the aquiline nose, glossy lips, a face that showed noble and elegant charm. Especially his flashing and dazzling diamond earring in his left ear that complete his beautiful face, absolutely....

"Eh?" Feng Chen Yi eyes flashed, he walked toward Yao Yao in front, with devilish laughing, said: "My beloved Yao Yao, don't you tell me that because you want to revenge me, you went to find stranger for \*\*one night stand, do you?"

Ugh... she could say that Feng Chen Yi is guessed right. But, that was not as heavy as \*\*one night stand, she almost being force for\*\* one night stand, that was the truth.

"Feng Chen Yi! You this...." Gong Xiao Man who was right beside, starting to yell at him but she is stopped by Yao Yao.

She closed her eyes, sweetly smile, said: "Ha ha, Feng Chen Yi you were guessing right. I really did it with stranger... the\*\*one night stand." Her smiles vanished: "How? Are you jealous? Are you envy? Moreover, I will do with anyone but absolutely not with you!"

After heard Yao Yao's sharp words, that Japanese girl dumbfounded, the people who dared to speak to Feng Chen Yi with that speaking tone, perhaps there might few peoples in this world.

"Yao Yao, what you are saying, could I assume that my existence in your life is so important?" who could predicted, Feng Chen Yi was not angry but he even

smiled ambiguously: "If you could accept that I have bed partner, I might welcome you once again to my embrace."

Damn cheap guy, simply said he did not ashamed, super foolish, how could she believe this playboy sweet honey talk that time? "Feng Chen Yi, have your brain damaged? I have said that clear, didn't you understand? If you are not understood, let me tell you once again so that you can be clearer, I am Luo Yao Yao, this lifetime no matter whomever I will date later, but I won't date you, Feng Chen Yi, anymore. Have you understood?" She pulled Gong Xiao Man's hand, turned her back and heading to the girl's dormitory.

"Woah, Yao Yao, you were so cool. I afraid the only person who daring to speak with one of the chaebol (richest young master), the person might only you. If the media took the shot, I believe you would be famous."

Cool? It true... at least she could fight and bring back her face, standing up for herself.

From the beginning, if two persons are loving each other, no matter what the status, background, as long as able together it is more than enough, but who's know...even this humble and simple love are only her side's wish.

This moment, she did not know whether that Feng Chen Yi would be hurt or not, but at least, she understood, she felt hurt....

"Geezz, this time simply to say Luo Yao Yao is dead meat. Chen Yi, you broke with her is one of the best decision you have ever made." Before that Japanese girl done with her words, she curiously saw at banknotes given by Feng Chen Yi, and then she looked at his gloomy beautiful face, "Chen Yi, why do you...give me banknotes?"

"Payment for break up, understood?"

"Break up...payment? But we are just dating now."

"Ah, Na Mei, I think you are mistaken, "break up payment" meaning. This means we are done with our relationship as bed-mate!" After he said, Feng Chen Yi coldly laughing, throwing that banknotes to that girl's face.

"Chen Yi, what do you think me as..."

"Chen Yi." At this time, another girl who has similar beautiful face, cut the conversation between them.

Feng Chen Yi embraces that girl: "Honey, you come."

"Chen Yi, I have book and made the check in for our room, let's we go."

"You really are aggressive, but I like it." turned his back, Feng Chen Yi left that place together with that girl.

While that girl who named Na Mei dumbfounded looking at their shadow faded-away.

This moment, another young sweet girl approached, she made wry face: "Idiot, do you think only by sleeping with him one time then you are his girl friend?" when she passed her, that girl smiling face disappeared: "Except, Luo Yao Yao..."

#### My opinion

He loves her but he hurt her...

She was the only girl that he admitted as his girl friend, but again he hurt her.

She wanted to have a the simple and humble love but he wanted the burning and passionate love.

#### Passion inside the car

China....

"Mr. Yu, congratulation for your achievement to get Berson (Bo Sen) group, may I ask, what do you plan and think about Berson's future?"

"Mr. Yu, now Berson is one of the strongest groups in China. Do you have confident to keep the growth pace as strong as Feng's group and any others chief monetary groups within ten years?"

"Ten years?" when he heard the question of the reporter, Yu Ao Tian exposed cold and arrogant devilish smile: "Two years more than enough!" he showed his elegant smile, arrogant and domineering aura but strangely the female reporter seemed to admire him more.

Yu Ao Tian's men were hurried and quickly alike machine to make humanfence, stopped the reporters so that he could out from the crowded.

"Yu Lao Da, please get inside the car." One of his men opened the door of car and at the moment, Yu Ao Tian showed deep ghastly expression to that person, feeling he made mistake, he hurried change the way he addressed him: "Yu, Yu CEO, please get inside the car."

"Hm." He showed his satisfaction, smile and then stepped inside to that exclusive and expensive car.

"Brother Ao Tian, congratulation, now, you are one of China businessmen." Inside the car, there was a beautiful woman said.

"Mei Nai Zi (Minako), is this the way you praise me?" He touched her neck, showing his devilish smile to the woman beside him.

"Aiyaaa, Yu Ao Tian, you are bad bad ah. Inside car, there still are Brother Li Shang and Brother Long Qi." A woman said, she showed her shy face, looking at two persons who sitting face them.

Yu Ao Tian frowned, he pulled that woman hair: "If you don't want, scat from my car!" he really not type of man who has high patience with women.

"Yu, Yu Ao Tian Ge, I'm sorry. I.... I am wrong." That woman was enduring the pain, immediately unzip Yu Ao Tian pants, lowered her head and her little mouth filled.

"Uh." He moaned hinting that he is satisfied.

"Ao Tian, you are not really thought to satisfied yourself in front of me and Li Shang, aren't you?" at this time, facing to Long Qi who is laughing.

Yu Ao Tian frowned, who should be blame? He almost "eat up" that little sheep, but suddenly there was called from Berson board directors who were agreed to sign the business contract so that he rushed back to China for settling the contract. He has endured that "fire" for one night, of course he needed to vent it out.

"Long Qi, if you don't want to die, better to shut your mouth."

"Geez." Seeing him emitting his anger, Long Qi quickly behaved.

'ring...ring...' suddenly the phone is ringing, Han Li Shang answered the phone and when he saw Yu Ao Tian has done with his "business" and tidy up his clothes, he handed over the phone.

After he heard the report from the phone, his satisfied expression changed to be anger: "You all are trash, even a little girl cannot find, what all of you can do except eat?!" he threw the phone, make a fist and hit into the car window.

The people inside the car could not help except showing surprised expression....

"Oh, What kind of matter that make Ao Tian Ge angry, may Minako know?" woman with her coquettishly manner, leaning to his chest.

Who knew, she being pushed away by Yu Ao Tian, she even get slapped: "Don't ever think that you only slept one time with me, then you are able to be my woman, in this world... there is no one who really able to be mine, Yu Ao Tian's woman!

"Brother, Ao Tian?" The woman showed innocent looked.

At this time, Long Qi who has been irritating, his eyebrows frowned: "Woman, you are so annoying." He opened the car's door, not even to wait that woman begging, he pulled that woman's hair and ruthless kicked her out from car.

"Ao Tian, is that girl so important?" finally inside the silent car, Han Li Shang coldly asked.

That beautiful – handsome man looked out from car's windows, his black deep pair of eyes covered with his anger, softly he whispered: "Important....very important...."

Edited: October 2016

(	C	3	)
(	C	3	)

Aha!

My little pry, you coming by yourself. I have been looking you for two years and finally my little sheep coming to send herself.

## Two Years later working at his company

Two years later, Berson group...

"Yao Yao, this elevator is only allowed to used by the company executives, Don't be slack off, Do you understand?"

"Yes, Manager Zhang." A girl that dressed neatly in ESL (Elevator Service Lady) uniform is Yao Yao. She gotten into the elevator, smiling when she sent off her own department manager.

After she graduated from her senior high in Japan, once she returned back to China, the first thing that she did, she was applying for job that paid \$5000 as elevator service lady that she found in the newspaper. For such big company in China, Berson is one of the high ranked companies in China which afford to pay such generous amount of money.

Of course to be compared it's pace with Feng's group is still counted as goodpaid, but unfortunately....

She would not go to her Ex-boyfriend's place in order to sacrifice herself!

Two years ago, after both of them broke up, Feng Chen Yi was asked by his father to come back to China, continuing the family business, since then both of them never had any contact between each other. This was best out from the worst for her because she did not need to meet this playboy anymore.

"Hu... this job really not easy." Although the job itself not that tiring, but still this job required hundred percent focus and concentration because she should take a note into her mind whomever the executives that would use the elevator, she should be first person to press the button to which floor department they heading to. This kind of job, for someone like Yao Yao who hardly to remember and recognized people's face actually quite challenging work.

When looking at the time.... "It has been passed working time, would there be anyone come?" exhale the air, she relaxed her body and leaning at the elevator

wall.

But exactly at this time... "Ding Dong" the elevator moved. "It has already 10 AM, would there anyone come to work? Who would be? This person must be so bold because come such late."

\*

One Rolls Royce Phantom slowly moved towards Berson Group's doorway, at this moment there were people who made stand by position and queue in two lines to welcome the person who was coming soon. When the car stopped, all the people bending down and lowering their head, held their breath, seemed like welcoming someone very important.

Car's door opened, seeing a man who was wearing a black suit and necktie got down from the car. His body is covered kind of domineering and aggressiveness aura, the atmosphere surrounded the car seemed to be suppressed into suffocating feeling.

"CEO Yu." Everyone in unison to call him and then made 90 degree formal bowed.

Yu Ao Tian brought couple of subordinates, straightly walking inside Berson's big lobby, stopped in front of the elevator, while the person inside the elevator welcoming him and he entered to the elevator, then all of the people finally daring to raise their head.

"Fiuh... CEO Yu always spread that kind of strong and domineering aura, just now it really scared me to death." among that people there was person spontaneously agreed with that...

\*\*

At the first floor of elevator, when Yao Yao was waiting inside the elevator she surprised to see four men with one woman gotten into the elevator...

"How could it be in this world there are so good looking men like them? The woman is extremely beautiful. Moreover the man who standing in front of them, that atmosphere surrounded him is different as if this stage is his. Anyway..."

Huff... he looked be familiar, have I ever seen him before at somewhere? Ah,

whatever lah. Stretching the hand, when wanted to press the button, suddenly Yao Yao's face changed to be serious.

Dead, doomed....

In her memory, she has never seen these few of people in the organization chart, what should she do? This was her first day working, but she did not want to be scolded. She shed her cold sweat in her forehead, she pressed the elevator button with her trembling hand. Just hope, she made right guess!!!

"Say, today after we get off from the work, we go to HAPPY, should we?" While waiting for the slowly elevator moving, the impatience Long Qi finally opened his mouth, he exposed his devilish smile, tugged at Yu Ao Tian who standing next to him.

"Whatever."

"This kind of matter, usually you are the one who made the decision, how can it be whatever, are you still mortal? Or..."

"Ding Dong" elevator come to it end, Long Qi who intended to make calculation frowned: "Why are we arrived faster than usual?"

Those people who are inside the elevator together looked at the floor number that displayed in elevator screen....

42<sup>th</sup> floor, why the elevator stopped at 42<sup>th</sup> floor?

At this moment, Yu Ao Tian face showed serious expression.

While Long Qi pissed off and yelling: "Hey, the elevator lady, why are we stopped at 42<sup>th</sup> floor?"

Am I making a mistake? Don't they belong to 42<sup>th</sup> floor department? It's doomed! "I am sorry...I am sorry...all chiefs. Today is my first day working, so that I.... I am sorry, I am sorry." She continuously to apologize, tilted her head at one side.

In this instant moment, Yu Ao Tian good looking face showed expressionless, an abstruse pair of eyes looked pass through....

# Once again "Eats her up"

Two years ago, he has ordered his branch subordinates in Japan to search this Little Thing, but within that two years there was no news about her, never thought, after two years this Little Thing has showed up and working in his company. Ah, this has arranged by fate.

Two years ago, she has escaped from his hands, two years later, he would not let this little sheep to escape from him again— he will eat her up until not left the bones!!!

"What do you mean by first day of working? So don't tell me and make excuse that the first day working is allowed to make mistake? Let me tell you, who is your manager, I will..."

"I will praise (talk good things) about you to your manager."

Seeing how Yu Ao Tian reaction, Long Qi, the person who words being cut seemed to be dumbfounded for moment, what was happening to Ao Tian? Due to his character, he would not allow such useless person to work at Berson, but why he reacted in... different way?!

"Mr, so do you mean that I am not make mistake?" Yao Yao raised her head, looked closely to Yu Ao Tian, her moist pair of eyes filled with gratitude.

He smiled warmly: "En, not wrong, please continued to have good work." He stretched his hands and patting her shoulder, he turned his body and talked to Han Li Shang's direction and others: "Arrived, let's we get out from elevator."

"Yes."

After they left the elevator, Long Qi felt curious, looking at the 41<sup>th</sup> floor

number that displayed in elevator: "Why that flat chest brought us to 41<sup>th</sup> floor, what department it is?"

Not to mention why Long Qi curious, the others also wanted to know the reason. At this time, Han Li Shang expressionless opened his mouth, said: "PR department."

"Haha?" Long Ye who was silent for this time suddenly burst into laughing.

"Long Ye, why are you laughing?"

"Aiya, aiya. Didn't you guys know, that elevator lady to be sure was that stupid girl who mistaken Ao Tian as Host, two years ago. Now, she was... mistakenly thought Ao Tian as PR department staff, hahaha..."

The Puzzling statement, at this time Long Qi finally understood why Yu Ao Tian suddenly changed his mood toward that elevator lady: "It seems that Ao Tian image as "soft-rice" man would never disappeared from that girl heart."

"Ha ha..." inside the quiet corridor, suddenly the loud laughter was echoing.

Still looked at Yu Ao Tian's face, it has been blacken to somewhat point: "Long Qi, before the work time ended, you make an announcement, starting from today onward there is no one allow to use this elevator!"

"Yes."

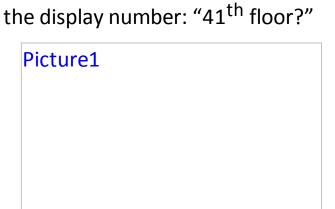
"Others..." he showed cold smiled, his glossy lips curled up with devilish smile: "Once you see me get into the elevator, shut down all of the surveillance cameras."

Woah, it seemed there would be "good show" waiting. Long Qi smiled with high expectation, hurried raised his hand and with powerful voice said: "OK!"

\*

It almost the time to leave work off, the elevator was still in first floor and no movement, Yao Yao kept on looking her watch: "Doesn't Berson working hour ended at 5PM? They must be exhausted..." her body leaning at one of the elevator's wall, boring and staring blankly.

"ding" at this time, the elevator moves. Yao Yao raised her head and looked at



"I will praise (talk good things) about you to your manager."

"Please to have good work."

That man has intoxicating voice, an elegant and beautiful face is filling at her mind now, recalled those situations that happened this morning, she helplessly smiled, little bit shy and her cheeks turned red.

Never thought that the PR staffs in Berson are so good looking, they have great style of communication way, filling with demeanor aura. Did not know whoever the person going to get inside the elevator, would the person be he or not?

The elevator moved to 41th floor, when the elevator door opened.

Yao Yao's eyes were reflecting Yu Ao Tian silhouette. it really him!

#### Note:

1] 软 Ruan 饭 Fan: soft rice means man who like and live by depended on woman.

#### **Information**

When Yu Ao Tian in happy mood he will call Luo Yao Yao : Bao Bei (Babe, Baby)

When Yu Ao Tian in bad mood he will call Luo Yao Yao: You, Little Thing

When Yu Ao Tian in mischievous mood he will call Luo Yao Yao: My little sheep

Long Qi like to call Yao Yao: Flat Chest

Han Li Shang called Yao Yao as "Woman"

Long Ye called Yao Yao as Meng Li Feng Chen Yi called Yao Yao as My beloved

# Have you ever tried XX inside elevator?

Her eyes moisten when she saw the man in front of her, once she felt there is contact between that man and her, she lowering her head, while her hand busying to press button no.1

When the elevator moving, Yu Ao Tian slowly raised his head, looking directly to the surveillance camera....

#### Control Room.

"Aiyoooo, Ao Tian seriously knew it, clearly I have shut the surveillance camera's light, still be found out by him, really not interesting. I shut, I really shut down. Big brother, please don't glared at me? I am afraid." In front of computer screen, Long Qi was helplessly glanced Yu Ao Tian who looked at him through the surveillance camera in his monitor screen, shut down the monitor system.

"Cih, cannot see your "show", I go to watch my blue film, at least the vigorous teacher might show better than your woman who would be \*\*," He showed his devilish smiled, he took out one DVD from his drawer and played it in his computer....

#### Inside the elevator.

After he ensured the surveillance camera and monitor being shut down, Yu Ao Tian warmly smile at Yao Yao's back: "What is your name?"

"Ah?" Yao Yao whom seemed lost in her thought, suddenly turned her back, rigidly: "Mr, are you talking to me?"

"Ah, is there other person than us?"

Exclude the ghosts. "My name is Luo Yao...Yao!"

"Deng" when she said one of her last name, suddenly the elevator stopped.

Yao Yao panic, her eyes opened widen: "What is happened?"

"Aiya, it seemed the elevator is broken."

Looking at that man who showed helplessly expression, Yao Yao frowned, her luck could not be as bad as this, she only reported her own name why suddenly the elevator broken? Did her name make such big destruction?

"What should we do? We should immediately called people to help."

Called people to help? That would not do. How could he let this Little Thing easily to escape once again? "There's no need, perhaps there will be someone come to help, let's we have "rest" in here."

"En, Well, just wait." Both of they were sitting by leaning at elevator wall.

"Are you Yao Yao? How old are you this year?"

"19 years old."

"Oh, you are just 19 years old. No wonder you looked so young." After he done with his words, he showed his evil expression.

"On your first day, how could you able to guess that we are come from PR department?"

Cold sweat! Can she say that their appearances are suitable to work in PR department? "I was just lucky, yeah just lucky."

"Oh, so that's it. Your luck quite good, Yao Yao!"

After she being praised by the man, Yao Yao felt little bit embarrassed, she guessed that he might someone warm and also friendly: "Hehe, this is my job."

Because she was too happy she not aware that, the person was slowly by slowly getting closer to her, Yu Ao Tian was....

"Oh yeah, Yao Yao."

Raised her head, looked into his direction, she discovered the man was almost sit side by side with her, subconsciously something under the body moved: "What, What happened?"

"Have you been ever tried to do\*\* inside the elevator?"

Ah? What? What has he said....

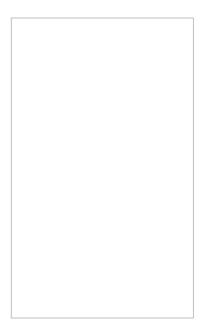
Impossible, how could someone who has an elegant demeanor and graceful aura able to say such thing? She must be heard mistaken. "You, what did you said, Mr?"

"Didn't you understand? Well, let me repeat once again..."

"rustling" sounds

At the moment, Yu Ao Tian was silent, finally he stripped his nice guy mask, he gotten back to his true nature that domineering and devilish aura: "I want to \*\* with you in elevator!"





## Inside the elevator ....

This time finally she clearly heard what he intending to, while looking at that man expression....

#### Deadmeat! Doomed!

He was not a nice man as she thought, he just a man who wear elegant well-make western suit who actually hunger wolf, in this such isolated place, finally he revealed his true nature, didn't he?

Yao Yao panic wanting to escape, but once she was trying to stand up, she is being pulled back by Yu Ao Tian: "Bao Bei (Babe), this is an isolated place, where can you escape?" he used little bit strength to push her down, she alike kite that fall down into Yu Ao Tian's embraces, face to face.

#### He have big strength!

When looking that flawless face closer, the masculine cologne that he used, hard for her not to fall for him, but because her fears, her petite body trembling slightly.

"If you not speak anything, may I assume that you are agreed? You really are open-minded girl."

His sinister appearance, his demonic words, at this moment this man gave Yao Yao familiar feeling and also sense as if she ever met this man before in somewhere. "No, I don't agree, you don't talk nonsense!"

"Heh? Still, you really are give positive response. Now... let me try your 'smell'".

The man has an intoxicating voice which echoing in her ear. Without waiting for her response, at the next seconds, he has pressed down his lips into her lips. "Ug..."

Her small hands was trying hard to push forward that man chest but her strength was not enough, his strong kissed penetrating into her soft lips as if able to melt her.

Sticking his lips into her as cold as ice cream lips, the man feeling unsatisfied, his tongue strongly pushed into her mouth, aggressively pry to open her white teeth.

"Ng, Ng...." in intermittent of Yao Yao's voice resisting to open her mouth, gradually her tears has fallen down and wet her eyes.

His tongue not stopping but even become fierce, flirting, stirring, the sweet taste filled the man's mouth.

That petite body was trembling to resist his "fierce" but no matter how hard she tried, she couldn't. The man is still being so aggressively but slowly he gotten arouse and make him even more possessive.

His big hands restless, slowly moving to her chest and...

Yao Yao was panicking her eyes widen covered with fear, this man obviously obtaining an elegant appearance, graceful aura, but how could he do such dirty and impolite things? The most important, this still in a company, didn't he afraid to be fired?

Tears streaming down from her eyes edge, she unstoppable to move her petite body to resist that man aggressiveness but still he succeed.

His big hands succeed to get down into her shirt until the low end. A trace of chilling sensation was coming, Yao Yao body suddenly quivering.

No....

Didn't, I didn't want to recall two years ago nightmares which I suppressed from my memory!!!

"Ug,...." All her voice that intending to beg are swallowed by the man, the last only the moans voice could be heard, if this little sheep was making "meh" "baa" voices, it only would make the man become more aggressive to bully her.

His big hands were stroking into her white and soft skin, Yao Yao heart seems to be stopped, to withstand that man movement which made her chest burning hot and gradually lost her power...

At this moment, a pair of Yu Ao Tian eyes opened, exposing his sinister and disappointed expression. He enjoyed playing with this little sheep who was struggling in his embraces before but suddenly she changed a like death fish, then it better for him to play with others common coquettishly bi\*\*h who used to send themselves to him!

"Ringgggg.....Ringgggg"

Suddenly the phone ringing, once again Yao Yao saw there was a trace of hope and once again she was struggling as the first response, Yu Ao Tian was more aggressive to end this by giving her strong kiss.

"Hu, Hu, Hu" strong hot breath, she raised her hand: "You have crossed the line!!! Bastard!!!"

She wanted to slap his good looking face with her full power strength...

# **12**

It's Updated

#### Yao Yao counterattack

As predicted, it so easy for the man to stop her. "Ah." His mouth curled up showed his sinister smile, he took out his phone from his suit pocket: "Hello?"

"Help me!!!"

After he heard her panic-chicken voice, Yu Ao Tian smiling devilish, helplessly shaking his head: "Bao Bei, those who call me in phone are more "beast" than me, you begging them to help you, it means you are expecting... them to play with us together, don't you understand?"

It true ah, those who called him were certainly not a good person. "Geez, shameless!!!" Yao Yao finally gave up her last hope, fiercely glaring at him.

"Ao Tian, what are you doing?" The person who called is Long Ye.

"Me, I am in the middle playing with my "kitty"." He said, Yu Ao Tian really looked alike playing with cat, teasing her by softly scratching her chin.

Yao Yao did not want to suffer losses, she pushed that man hands, shouted: "Then you are dog!"

"Ha, Ao Tian, it seems that you are playing with wild cat, just don't tell me that you are not injure while playing?" the person who was speaking in phone, Long Ye helplessly laughing.

This time, Yu Ao Tian pissed off. "Long Ye, shut your mouth!" and then he glared at Yao Yao, by adding little bit strength, her petite body has enveloped by him, while one his hand covered her mouth.

"What the matter, go straightforwardly!!"

"Well, this, the betrayer of Long Yu's group has caught."

"Understood, I will settle it in moment." After he hung up the phone, slowly he loosened his hand that covered her little mouth.

After she released, Yao Yao gotten up quickly: "What, you can't win over

debating with me and then covered my mouth? Cih, I thought you are good person, but who knows that you are beast, you dare to do such thing inside Berson group, doesn't you afraid to lost your job?"

After he heard hers cursing words, Yu Ao Tian realized, this little girl have a nature to say something rational.

"Why don't you say anything? Afraid? If you know to be fear of what you did, why should you do such thing?! I told you, today this matter, I would take it as if I was bite by dog, if you later on...." Her neck straggled by the man, she felt difficult to breathe,

Just to let know, she has had challenge his temper twice today, before there was no woman that able to infuriated the impatience Yu Ao Tian, "Little thing, if you are thinking to continue "the matter", you can continue to talk!!!"

At the same time he showed that deathly sight in his face, his voice somewhat giving and spreading a demonic aura, she knew this man was not joking with his words.

However...

"If you want me...to stop, I can. But you should promise me... in the future you are not allowed to do such things inside the elevator... and also you are not allowed to do this kind of thing to others colleagues... I will... this matter never happened." Her neck is pinched, difficult to breath. She only could keep on talking about her circumstances...

But the problem, how she thought about Yu Ao Tian? was he as the elevator pervert? Pair of cold eyes squinted, released her: "Fine, I promised you, will never do that things to any of colleagues." But excluded you! He said, he turned and walked to the elevator door, only by pulling it harder, the elevator door is opened.

So, so powerful....

More Yao Yao thought about it more she feared of him, if there was no that phone called, she did not know her ends?

Who would have known...

Yu Ao Tian who walked out from the elevator could feel that Yao Yao felt little bit relief.

"ha..." again he showed his devilish smile, suddenly he found this Little Thing and more interesting, if he would have eaten her up at once, it would be wasted.

"Little thing, no rush, time is long, I will make you become more and more nervous." After he said, he backed with his cold expression....

# Two types of different moan

"Yu Lao Da." Inside the dim big hall, hundreds of men in black suit were bending and bowing 90 degrees when they saw Yu Ao Tian.

This was the third floor basement in Berson group, and also the other fort of Yu Ao Tian.

In front of everyone, the two years later of him, he is an elegant, successful and domineering businessman, but once the night come, he gotten back as a man how he used to be two years ago, the underworld emperor who's life filled with winds and rains, he is that merciless underworld emperor!

"Yu Lao Da, I promised not to betray Yu Long group in the future, I begging you to let me off." That man who kneeling in front of him continuously kowtow in front of him.

Yu Ao Tian squint his eyes, from his subordinate he took a little knife, he showed scary devilish smile in front of that man: "Come, stretch out your tongue."

His deep and low devil voice was echoing inside that dim big hall, everyone face seemed to have similar expression as if they were cast and covered with black gauze. While the man that kneeling on the floor has scared until unconscious, he was wet all over his body.

Each and every people who are joining underworld know very well Yu Ao Tian character. Yu Ao Tian confront his enemies or the betrayers, it would not end so soon. He always trying to torture them slowly by slowly until they die because of unimaginable pain, this is his greatest pleasures.

Once there are people said that Yu Ao Tian is someone merciless in handling matter, whomever he faces, either the betrayers or the enemies, all will have

same ending!

"Hey, it has not started yet, why are you pee, really not interesting. Long Qi!" his cold pair of black eyes is searching for Long Qi among the crowed: "I let you to handle him, all is up to you how to "play" with him, but if he not "shout", I will punish you." after he done, he tossed aside that knife and walked away.

Long Qi took that knife, he said to himself and smiled: "Feel reassured, I won't make you disappointed!"

"Ha." There's figure who walking slowly entering the big hall.

At this moment, a beautiful woman who has been standing there for while: "Ao Tian Ge (Bro Ao Tian)"

"Why are you coming?" Yu Ao Tian who was expressionless sitting in sofa, he watching attentively the scene in hall through the frosted glass, showing how Long Qi torturing that betrayer.

"Of course I have missed you, Ao Tian Ge." That coquettish woman was leaning at Ao Tian's side then fall to his embraces.

His deep black eyes looked at that woman: "Just in time, I want to vent "Fire", you know how to do it!"

"Ng, this, this is the first time for me."

After heard that woman coquettish voice, Yu Ao Tian expression darken, fiercely he pulled that woman hair and whispered at her ear with demonic voice: "Do you think if you are not virgin, will I have to consider about you?"

This woman knew very well his preference, just to know, those women that followed Yu Ao Tian there were none of them who were not virgin for first time. "I, I am sorry Ao Tian Ge, I... I know what should I do." The woman was enduring the pain because of her hair being pulled, trembling, she unzip Yu Ao Tian's pant.

But he pushed her away: "Go ahead directly." Just now when he was at elevator, he has been doing the "warm-up", so now he wanted to go directly for it.

Seeing the woman, she was trembling when he leasning "that monster", how could that thing get in and out directly? Ride him, the woman always afraid to sit

down.

Yu Ao Tian obviously impatience, so he forcefully and directly grabbed that woman shoulder and....

"Ah....!!!" Her body being violence at the moment, she lost her consciousness.

But not long after that, the woman has already gotten used with it, slowly by slowly addicted with the sensation, her cheek covered with pinkish color: "Oh... Oh...Yu Ao Tian Ge, I love you."

When the woman was crazily kissed toward him, what she got was his cold and chilling answered: "Get lost, you are blocking my sight, watching the show."

Inside the big hall, Long Qi used that small knife which given by Ao Tian to cut slide by slide that betrayer skin that man cried out loud inside the big hall but Long Qi is played more and more fiercely.

"Hm, this Long Qi really not disappointed my expectation."

Inside the hall the man continuously "moan" because being tortured while outside the big hall the woman is "moan" excitedly because addicted.

This kind of difference of moan are the most beautiful sound in this world and also one of the most "beautiful music" that Yu Ao Tian likes.

## **14**

Long Ye					

Long Ye

### Special treatment for the executives

"Oh, Oh..." the woman was using more strength to move at his body, but Yu Ao Tian did not even feel for it.

It seemed that he has lost his interest with this kind of women who are likely to bring themselves to him: "Little Thing, what should I do? Now I am feeling want to eat you up."

At this moment, Luo Yao Yao's face that has similar looked alike Rinka, her small face kept on appearing at his head. Yu Ao Tian lifting up his lips little bit and feeling little bit excited, the rushing breath slowly stabilized, his pair of hand moved to hug that woman S waist. While hurried to faster the...

"Ugh," deep low voice, but the excitement, not all getting inside that woman...

Not long after that, those passions inside the room gone, Yu Ao Tian tied up his cloths, throwing a banknote to that woman's body.

That woman takes that banknotes and see: "20 thousand?"

"Hm, this 20 thousand is to let you know whether you have my "seed" or not and, you know how to solve it."

Of course she understood very well. So, she nodded her head.

"And, don't ever show up in front of me again!"

"What? Ao Tian Ge, No! No! I begging you not to abandon me, Ao Tian Ge."

His coldness words, woman begging words, but he not even soften his heart moreover he even opened the door and walked out from that room.

He saw that betrayer, he has covered with blood, but Yu Ao Tian as if not seen that man conditions, heartless stepped at that betrayer corpse that already covered with blood, an extravagant and bloody, this is his underground slaughter house....

"Luo Yao Yao, at the first day you working, I had told you before, don't ever think that because you are groom quite good then you are able to attract those high executives. Relying on your look, you are still not qualified, understood?" inside the service department, Manager Zhang yelling and insulted.

"Manager Zhang, I don't understand why you should speak this way?" Early in the morning she has yelled and insulted of course she felt uncomfortable, furthermore because of yesterday matter, she even felt uneasy.

"Not understand? Which part didn't you understand?" (Sound of paper fall down) a document has thrown to her face: "Yesterday you got two complaints, I had told you, what I wanted... it's the complaints report! The report! Do you understand?"

#### Understood....

But the problems, yesterday was her first day moreover she has not done with her training period, so if she received any complaint it was something so normal, furthermore this was no correlation with her appearance at all, wasn't it?

"Geez, girl like you whom dreaming to be phoenix I have seen so many, but here is Berson, not nightclubs, if you want to catch men then, I can tell you this is wrong place for you, if you get any complaint, you hurried get lost. Scram!"

This manager simply to said, unreasonable person, but if the manager was trying to force her out, she would have done better for her to have good see of her, she is not that kind of girl who is dreaming to be phoenix so that she only trying to apply job as to be the elevator lady!

To restrain and control her grievances in her heart, she got back to work.

She saw her watch which showed almost ten, she felt little bit uncomfortable, stood up. This was almost the working time for that bastard to get work, she really didn't not want to see him...

"Ding..." just as predicted, ten sharp the elevator moving to first floor. The elevator door opened, that handsome face with devilish smile caught into her eyes...

Cannot see, not see, she lower her head, she acted as if she seen nothing, while Yu Ao Tian also acted as if not recognized her when he gotten into elevator

with Long Ye.

This was the best, just to avoid awkward situation.

When the elevator door closed, Yu Ao Tian eyes looked at Yao Yao's back, his lips curl up and laughed: "Manager Long, did you satisfy with yesterday "service", served by the female staff from logistics department?"

"Eh?" Long Ye paused for while, but he has quite fast reaction: "Satisfied, very satisfied." He squinted his eyes, showed his devilish smile: "Oh yeah, today which department staff will serve me?"

"Today seems to be the turn of... service department staff who will give you special treatment."

**15** 

Long Ye

#### I don't want to give special treatment for Yu Ao Tian

Service Department? Didn't it is my department?

Why are females staffs should service the PR department staffs, what the relationship and manger would do with them? Yao Yao confused with that two people conversation.

"Service Department, aiyaa, all the female staffs in that department at least in thirties, as you know my preference is those who are in twenties, where should I get my fun, you say?" Long Ye pretended to angry.

Yu Ao Tian pretending as if he apologized: "I am sorry, I am sorry Manager Long, I will help you to find the twenties service department staff."

Girls at their twenties? Special Service? Did they talk about...

Her heart thumping, Yao Yao little face suddenly turned white pale.

"I have found it Manager Long, there is female staff from service department working as elevator lady. Her name is...Luo Yao Yao."

Oh My? She would not be that unfortunate person, right? On the second day she has faced this kind of thing. At the moment she turned her head...

Inside the elevator both of the men were showing their "wolf hunger" appearances, both of them had dangerous hot gleam in their eyes.

Scar...so scary.... "Long, Manager Long, I am only the newbie in here."

Both of the men looked at each other, Long Ye moved one step to in front: "Ya, so it's you who is called Luo Yao Yao. Not bad, You Xiao Meng Li (little Lolli), I like."

Damn, this means she get tricked, "Manager Long, may you consider another person. I don't understand what you mean by service." She turned and fiercely glared at Yu Ao Tian.

While he shrugged, hinting as if he was very innocent.

"Consider another person?" Long Ye was pretending to consider something: "Ah,... perhaps, I need to consider changing other person. Your chest is too flat, I don't like."

Fiuh...too good...

Even though she was told that she was flat chest and feeling little bit unhappy about it, but compare to do whatsoever which they said "service", this was better off. She showed relief expression.

But another second...

"You!" Long Ye turned and pointed to Yu Ao Tian's direction: "This elevator lady from service department, today I reward her for you, she is yours, you cannot "settle" her, it obviously you don't have the ability to do your job, immediately get lost from Berson, understand?" after he said, he used strength pushing Yao Yao to Yu Ao Tian embraces.

"Manager Long, you asked me to do this, certainly makes thing difficult for me. But, because of job, I will try my best to finish the job." He said, showing his sinister expression, his big hands were holding her trembling petite body.

Heaven, she meant with changing other person was not making herself changed to other man ah.

Actually what kind of company this Berson Group? This felt as if escaping from tiger cave and then get into wolf den, she really wanted to die!

The elevator stopped at 41th floor, Long Ye and Yu Ao Tian hinting each other before got out from inside of elevator...

"Let me off! Let me off! Yesterday you have been promising me, you would not harass me anymore, wouldn't you?"Yao Yao was continuously struggling even being forced by Yu Ao Tian inside the elevator.

He was pretending as if him also helplessly: "Bao Bei, you have heard, I don't have choice." He said, he looked alike holding her, similar to hold a little kid facing to the PR's manager department.

At this moment, Long Ye reminded him to "clear up" the battle field, standing in front of the PR department door, he said: "I am expecting to see your

performances (show off yourself)".

"Alright, Manager Long, I won't make you...disappointed!" he said, both of the men after they looking and hinting each other, their lips lifted up.

While Yao Yao looked alike expressionless doll that glanced at Long Ye: "Manager Long..." she looked at his back, waiting and expecting that he would come back and changing his mind.

Unfortunately, these two men were acting and putting the show for her, so how could she expect the plan change easily?

### Let's we play

Walking inside the office room, Yu Ao Tian swept all the stuff in his table, he made Yao Yao to sit there.

She just trying to escape, but her body got pressed immediately. "Let me go! Is PR department hiring crazy people to work in here? They are asking the female staff to make "services"? Don't they afraid to be found out by the CEO and get fired?"

"Bao Bei, you should know what kind of workers, the male staffs in PR, all of us need to have "practice" so that we able to serve the client better."

What did he mean?

"Does the CEO agree with this kind of behavior? Geez! It shameless to know that Berson group as one of well-known and big company in China, this company not better that Host/brothel, your CEO even worse, he might not better than Gigolo, a bastard! Host!"

As information, the person she kept on saying "lewder", a bastard CEO actually is the person in front of her. Being vituperated by this little brat, Yu Ao Tian expressions suddenly changed darken. "You Little Thing, I think it better for us to get straight forwardly into the main topic."

"No, wait. You let me go, please. I know, you, you also have your own difficulty, how about we think another way to solve this problem?"

Looking at her tearing eyes which filled with hope, she hooked Yu Ao Tian's interest which made him even wanted to... "ruin" her more!!

"Oh, what kind of solution?"

She took her time to think of it, Yao Yao stayed quiet for moment and then she smiled: "I have an idea! How about we stay here for a while, then you get out and meet your manager, said that we have done "that", in this way, you do not need to be afraid got punish, it's also good for me, don't you think this is the

most perfect solution?"

Ha, this Little Thing really have her own way, but there was no such thing in this world as naïve as she thought, wasn't it?

"En, so that, are you agreed?"

"I am agreed but...."

"But what?"

Yu Ao Tian showed his devilish smile, he took an initiative to come closer to her ear and....

After he done with his words, Yao Yao's face and her ears turned to be so red: "No, you can't, I can't do it."

"Aiya, that is not solution. So I just can... do the task which given by Manager Long."

Seeing the man who stretching out his hand to her direction, Yao Yao panic so nodding her head: "Wait, wait! I, I, I obey whatever you said!"

At the moment, Yu Ao Tian lewd smiles even more obvious....

"En, en... ah...ah..." inside the office room, it was woman's XXXXX voice, but the voice really heard "too fake".

The initially Yu Ao Tian have high expectation for "that", but after he heard this kind of sound he could not stand anymore: "Bao Bei, if you make this kind of voice, this would not work. Manager Long is the veteran for something like this, he would find out that both of us are deceiving him."

"So, what should we do? I have told you, I could not make that "voice" ah."

If she really able to produce that voice, that was the real "problem", because two years ago, Yu Ao Tian had not got to eat her up and if others has done it before, how could he swallowing his anger?

"Well, it seems the only way, I should help you."

"How..."

Without waiting for her to finish her words, he has embraced her. She looked like a puppet which is sitting at Yu Ao Tian's legs and facing his hot chest.

"ugh...."

Her earlobe is sensitive because the man's tongue is licked her, the sensation of feeling numb suddenly is spreading to her body: "No, don't." the man kept on spreading that hot breath to her earlobe, if he continuing, she might go crazy.

"Bao Bei, your voice is right, now. Keeps on continuing..." his tongues is licking her ear sensitive area, while both of his big hand touching her waist, inch by inch closer to her dress....

### **17**

Still warned you guys, 18+ reading.

You read at your own risk

#### **Acting but Do Real**

"Wait!" fortunately Yao Yao reaction was fast enough, she stopped his hands: "Aren't we just acting but why...."

"It right, we are acting now, but... the acting should be little bit real." His devil sight flashing in his eyes, his big hands were directly to her, embraced her body firmly.

"Ugh..." her stupid white face suddenly turned red, her small hands that wrapped by his big hands also get weaken.

Taking this opportunity, a man's hand slipped into her undergarment.

"HEY!" suddenly fears surrounded her, she realized that man's hand has bad intentional, being sensitive XXXXX suddenly arouse, she freaking out, moving and wriggling her petite body: "Get... get your hand out!!!"

"Sst. Bao Bei, have you forgotten your job? It seems, I the only person who is work harder." He showed sinister expression, he was pulling her bra tie, so that two plump of little white rabbit breast will have exposed.

Without any obstacle, he was with audacity touching hers, big hands slowly made movement, his slender finger were playing with her sensitive "area": "uh..." Yao Yao felt her body weaken as if getting high voltage electricity, she felt numb, her mouth even made unclearly moan voices.

"Ha? Really unbelievable, you are little slut, it only being touched here but you have already made this kind of voice. How about if I touch two at same time...." He said, another hand of his, getting inside her undergarment, audacities deeply touched her.

"No, don't..." being harassed by the man, Yao Yao eyes were tearing, but the sensitive body was helplessly reacting to him. "Enough, stopped!"

"Are you sure to stop? Bao Bei, your body isn't said that way to ask me to stop."

The acting play real, he slowly taking off her dress: "Come, take a look, see how your body expecting for it."

Her white flawless skin exposed to the empty air, gradually that XXXXX react, Yao Yao felt ashamed and then closed her eyes.

Black-heart man, devilish smiles, pair of his hands.....

"En... ah..." at the moment, she felt her body as if being climbed by ants, while her body temperature increased.

It cleared that Yu Ao Tian enjoyed: "Aiya, why are you trembling such strong? Is it because the sensitive body? To let you know... this part of yours if being played at one time then it would have given even more strong response."

The man's hand was moving to her skirt, her eyes wide-opened, she gathered her strength to bite her lips: "No, Don't, Don't continue anymore!!"

Didn't this mean acting to be real? But how could it be reality? The reaction of body, the man hot body temperature, all were so real, this... this was not acting!

"Long Ye, shut your mouth up! if there is problem, go forward!!!"

She recalled the first time when she heard this man conversation with another man who named Long Ye in phone last time when they were trapped inside elevator.

Long Ye... Manager Long... could it be?

She could feel that the man hands still moving, Yao Yao stopped for while, her little face panic and even have cold bead of sweat: "You and the Manager Long, are both of you ally?

"Eh?" his hand stopped.

"Even you could not finish your "task", he would not punish you, am I right? Because both of you are friend!!!" She turned her head, with her moisten eyes she glared at that man: "Bastard, help, fired, you are liar!"

He really underestimated this Little Thing IQ. "Since you have knew it, let we stop this acting." He said, pairs of Yu Ao Tian's eyes flashed, he has stripped Yao Yao's dress...

Dumbfounded, her white flawless body has been exposing to the air.



That scar, I have searched her for such long time I have used all my power and strength gather my men because of that scar...

#### Scar

This bastard, it was so obvious that she has found out his bad intention, but he kept on continuing "to act" as the reason. Her pairs of hand protecting in front of her chest side, she pissed off, glared at him: "Will you stop?"

"Stop? Didn't anyone ever told you about once man is provoked to\*\* it hard and difficult to end it?" Furthermore if facing something refresh alike this Little Thing.

She is being pressed in the office desk, while his hands forcing to break apart her hands that protecting her in front.

She could feel that man burning eyes that kept on looking at her, she could not say out, what kind of embarrassment she felt: "Don't look! Stop to look!"

"Eh? Little Thing, you don't tell me that, you might get arouse even being looked by me, do you?"

"Not, not like that!" carried away, she tried her best to avoid him.

But at this moment, she felt a strong torrent in her body, responded to the man tongue which making her beet red, he kept on playing with his tongues in her "sensitive areas".

"Uh.. Ah...No, Stopped..." Yao Yao almost lost her control, she moving her body a lot, the deep nightmare of two years ago slowly opened up.

She did not want to recall, she really did not want to recall those two years ago bad memories!

"Are you sure that you want to continue?"

"Heh? Bao Bei, can I assume that you are challenging me?" He stopped for while and looked vicious.

Now, Yao Yao little face turned cold, very fiercely she said three words: "Yu Ao Tian!"

In this moment, Yu Ao Tian is stared blankly looking at her, he never expected this little girl would call his name, didn't she not recognized him? Or this Little Thing just act stupid before, was she trying to play pig eat tiger? He doubted for while.

Yao Yao pretended to be calmed and laughed: "How's? Are you afraid? It seems that you are also knowing about Yu Ao Tian, this name before? Let me tell you, he... he is my big brother, if you are keep on doing this, be careful he will kill all your family member!!!"

"....pu (sound of laughing)"

Seeing the man suddenly laughing, Yao Yao stunned for while.

As information, not to mention seeing Yu Ao Tian, the real person in Japan, even to hear his name, people would still have considered carefully, but why this man suddenly laughed after he heard his name?

"I, let me tell you, I am not kidding, he is the most well-known underworld boss, if he really wanted to kill you, it as easy as stepping an ant, understood?"

So that this Little Girl only remembered his name but not his face, geezz, he really wanted to strangle this Little Thing!

"Aiyo, as you said he is Japanese underworld boss, but here is China, well, you call him to come and kill me!" He said, Yu Ao Tian eyes showed sinister look, slowly he raised her up.

"No, Don't." she panic, her hair which covered her left shoulder fall to backward.

Once again that ugly scar showed up in front of him...

His jet black eyes gradually become gloomy, that sinister expression suddenly disappeared. Just because of this scar, he has been searching her for two years.

And then, this scar is by coincidence or no....

Turned his back, he left half-naked Yao Yao inside his office room.

"Have you done?" Long Ye who stood outside the room asked with devilish smile. But, Yu Ao Tian expressions even gloomier than before.

"Long Ye, immediately asked people to check and gather all information regarding Yao Yao, more detail is better!!"

Ugh, once he heard, Long Ye expression suddenly became so serious. He have feeling that, something complicated would have happened soon. "Understand, I will immediately check."

Two years ago he did not know her name, finally he knew her name, so that it much easier to check all information regarding that scar!!!

# Hell is opened

Being leave alone half-naked inside the office room, Yao Yao did not understand why the man suddenly left, but grasped the opportunity, she hurried to escape from there.

She accidentally bumped to lady who dressed an elevator lady uniform, she hastened to apologize: "I am sorry, I am sorry."

"No, No, I should be the person who says sorry." This young lady seems in her twenties, she smiled and also looked friendly. She quickly picked the letter that felt to floor: "Aiya, resignation letter? Xiao Luo, do you want to resign?"

Xiao Luo?

"Do you know me?" she taken back her resignation letter, curious asked her.

"hahaha, my name is Bai Ling, I am at same department with you. You are so cute, since you come to our department to make report, everyone has paid special attention to you, especially the males." Bai Ling spoke, she made a wry face. "Oh yeah, You just working in here, why do you want to resign?"

That's because....

What's matter, Yao Yao, have you being bullied by bad people? If I was not mistaken, you are exchanged student in Japan, was you? Perhaps you are not really understood about Berson group. Two years ago, Berson group was acquired by our new CEO, since then Berson grows very well. The new CEO has great leadership and policy, it has self-evident. So, how could be he let his subordinates to do "Physical trading" such things, you must be tricked!!!

After she met friendly girl named Bai Ling, Yao Yao listened to her heart, to expose the matter about PR department "trading" matter. After Bai Ling listened, she gave denial reaction. Suddenly Yao Yao realized that bastard and

manager Long was accomplice for tricking her!

"Damn Bastard, because of them I almost lost my \$5000 job-paid, bastard! Rotten egg bastard!"

Inside the elevator, Yao Yao who pissed off make fist with her hand, but also looking at her watch: "Is it the time for get off work? Very good! That damn bastard better not to meet me...."

"Ding"

When that "you" word has not said, the elevator has already stopped at 41th floor. Geez, still there was a path to heaven but not walk in, the hell without door you still breakthrough!

Yao Yao silently waiting the elevator door to open. Just as expected, Yu Ao Tian coming in alone.

She rolled her eyes, looked at him, pretending to be nervous said: "You, does your PR department still need other department to service?"

En? This Little Thing is accosted him, this was something weird. "If you really want to do, tomorrow I can arrange the time for you to make the service."

"I don't want! I asked you, did the other female colleagues from others department really serve the PR department, was it really the CEO policy?"

"Eh?" Yu Ao Tian is sensed something amiss, he moved one step to in front, sneered: "Why are you asked?"

"I am really curious. This is dirty dealing; I just don't understand why the CEO agreed."

Give me the answer ah! Answer ah! She has waited for long but the man said nothing, Yao Yao's heart is beating hard.

"Hahahaha." After while, Yu Ao Tian was burst into laughter, exposed his cold and dangerous smile.

She nervous, biting her lips: "You, what are you laughing of? Answer me."

"Answered?" his pair of jet black eyes flashed, he moved one step forward, suddenly he grabbed her arm.

"What are you thinking to do?"

"That is what I should ask you... what do you want to do?"

Cold smiles, his cold eyes with austere looked, pair of his hands quickly trapping down her body. And then, silently he moving his hand to her waist...

Crap! Yao Yao dumbfounded for moment and panic.

## Help, who's dare

"Hump. You Little Thing, I have coaxed with you so long, but you daring to defame me." he said, Yu Ao Tian slowly moving to her waist and got her mobile phone which still recording, her eyes showed fear.

Doomed, how could this man have such strong and good sight?

"Coax? Who needing you coaxed with me! Give back my mobile phone." Yao Yao jumping trying to take her mobile phone back, but because the man is taller than her, no matter how tall she jumping and bouncing, she couldn't reach his hand.

"Little Thing, no, now I should call you Little Vixen, it seems I have underestimated on you."

"This is what you forcing me to do."

"Oh? So let me ask you, whom would you going to give this recording to? Would it be manager Long?"

"I won't give the recording to him, both of you are ally." To be true, she still didn't not know to whom that recording she would have given to, she hasn't thought about it. She rolled her eyes: "I will give it to the Berson's CEO, I just not believe he won't do anything regarding what you do!"

Ugh, from the start to the end, this recording would still fall to his hand, then why bother? But, Yu Ao Tian really hate being scheme by others!!!

At this moment, Yao Yao coldly, opened her mouth and bites his arm!

"Huh? You Little Vixen still dares to bite." After he said, his cold eyes flashed, suddenly grabbed her long hair.

"Ah!!" Yao Yao who felt in pain, shouting.

"You Little Thing, this is what you seek for!!"

Glancing at that man cold and merciless eye, she understood that she would get in trouble.

One big hand...

"Dong" bumping sound, Yao Yao whole body is hitting to the elevator wall. "Bastard, bastard..." suddenly tears are streaming down from her pair of eyes, she hurried standing up: "You are simply rude rotten egg super bastard." Once again Yu Ao Tian tears apart to get up.

Just in this time, suddenly the elevator door opened at 46<sup>th</sup> floor. Yu Ao Tian eyes swept, suddenly in order to stop her, his next...

"You let me...ugh!"

With his domineering aura, his lips stick to her lips. This time, the elevator door opened.

Everyone eyes are caught by the scenes of man and woman kissing, all of them dumbfounded, but when they saw who was the male lead, everyone is showed same expression stopped a moment and changed to shock mode.

Yu... CEO Yu?

When they saw Yu Ao Tian shoot cold glance, everyone body was trembling...

"No...No...!" Yao Yao who is kissed by force didn't pay attention to those people reaction toward this strong kissed by this man actually she only felt fear, on the contrary, she constantly throw begging sight in order to get help from those people who standing in front of the elevator door.

But those people reacting in unexpected way, they pretending not to see, awkwardly smiled: "Sorry, really sorry, have... disturbed." Hurried turned and leaving.

What! Did all of them blind? Couldn't they see, I was forced kissed by him? Those people walked further, the elevator door closed. Yao Yao completely lost her hopes.

Right this moment, Yu Ao Tian has stopped his domineering kissed. At the next second, he pressed the power off button of the elevator.

"You, what do you want to do?" to come to an end spontaneously when the elevator stopped, Yao Yao at bad mood.

Yu Ao Tian chuckled, slowly walking toward her and said: "Congratulation you Little Thing, now you have...succeeded to piss me off!!"

She did not know how dangerous this man could be, she also did not know how her ends by pissed him off, but... she was very clear what would have be happened next to her...

"No... Don't, I begging you.. let me off.."

### **Merciless**

Her begging could not cold down the fire and anger which had flamed Yu Ao Tian, just alike two years ago when she challenged him.

Yu Ao Tian caressed her long hair, while the other hand is unzipped his pant, he seemed to release his 'sleeping dragon'.

He, what he wanted to do? Yao Yao afraid so she closed her eyes, this was her first time to see man's....

"Ha, you think by close your eyes nothing will happen?" Yu Ao Tian cold eyes looked at her, cruel pinched her to open her little mouth.

Ugh

At the next second, that unclean thing of men's suddenly getting into her mouth. Slowly get in...

"Vomit..." a kind of nausea feeling hit her badly, she obviously able to feel that man's thing in her mouth, occasionally she swallowing her own saliva.

This man how could he... how could he act so tyrannical? Without doubted, slowly, her tears were streaming down from her eyes.

On contrary, it cleared that Yu Ao Tian's face showed satisfaction.

Although this Little Thing technique was poor but weirdly he felt satisfactionpleasure. Moreover her tears, Yu Ao Tian indeed likes this types of native youth Little Thing to cry.

"Oh..." Gradually, her beautiful cheek pinkish, while the thing was moving faster inside her mouth.

In this time, he saw the surveillance camera's red light is turned on...

Damn! Suddenly silent and his face changed gloomy. Hurried he push away Yao Yao's head, zipped his pant, faster he got out from the elevator...

\*\*

Inside the control room...

"I have\*\*, Oh my I doomed." Long Qi who sat down inside the control room saw Yu Ao Tian who was emitting killing aura from the monitor is headed toward him, he hurried to escape from his own office room.

"Manager Long, what is happen?" the administration staff cast curious glance when saw their manager panic, hurried getting out from his office.

"None your business, later on if the CEO comes, just said that..."

The sound of door slammed!

Not waiting until he done, the main door of the department has opened with one kicked.

Everyone looked at the main door...

"Yu... CEO Yu." Shocked, they hurried standing up from their sitting position, they immediately bowed.

Yu Ao Tian who was emitting killing aura did not pay attention to them. He moving and suddenly grabbed Long Qi's neck, straightly pushed him to inside his office room...

"Ao Tian Ge, I am sorry, I wronged. But at least you give me little bit face, there are still many people outside." Once he inside the office room, Long Qi kept on begging him.

Yu Ao Tian shot him cold glance, gazing at the monitor inside control room: "Ha, Long Qi, Fuck! You really have disgusting taste and bad habit!"

"Yes, yes, I will change it later, certainly will change it. But this is not fully my fault."

Seeing Long Qi innocent expression, Yu Ao Tian face darkened: "So, according to you, was it my fault?"

"Nah, I don't mean it, Ao Tian Ge, begging you, please release, I hardly to

breathe."

To have heard what he said, Yu Ao Tian slowly let off Long Qi, turned his body and sat on sofa inside the office room.

Long Qi paused a while and swallowed his saliva, continued, said: "Actually, I am so curious why you looked so interested with that flat chest, so that... just as you know for these past years, there were lots beautiful women in your side, those who willingly sacrificed and sent themselves to you, so that why must you spend lot of energy for that little girl, I just could not think the matter as simple as she mistakenly thought you as Host two years ago?"

Long Qi is one of the persons who help and follow Yu Ao Tian from the start until today, he understood very well Yu Ao Tian's character. Just to know, Yu Ao Tian never forced any girl before, Luo Yao Yao is counted as first case, so that he has brimmed with curiosity for this little girl.

"Do you want to know?"

"Yes, yes."

"Come." Yu Ao Tian smiled and waved his hand, Long Qi immediately flew to his side, he made his ear closer to Yu Ao Tian.

Who's knew...

"Aiyooo."

Suddenly Yu Ao Tian pulled his ear, shouted: "None your business, if you are feel bored, I will send you to service department as cleaning service."

"Geez... Ao Tian you are really stingy." Long Qi disappointed gently rubbing his ear, suddenly his eyes looked at the monitor that showed: "Hey, where will that flat chest heading?"

Once Yu Ao Tian heard, hurried he walks to monitor in front, just seen, Yao Yao wiped her tears and run out from the elevator...

\*\*

"Ugh.. pei!...pei!" After the man gone, Yao Yao while still crying she also vomiting and spitting out her saliva, she hasn't reached twenty years old but has already experienced such hopeless situation.

Last afternoon during the work time in PR department's office, he suddenly left in mid-way, and again this time he was suddenly left, even though Yao Yao did not know what the reason but she was certain one thing that her fortune would not last forever.

"No, I can't continue like this, that bastard should get punishment!" while she said, she faster her steps, Yao Yao gotten an idea while she out of the elevator.

"En, just this place." She arrived at 42th floor, she stood in front of the glass door, it hung 'security section' in the door.

Slowly she pushed opened: "Excuse me, disturbed, may I ask, does the security manager here?"

Yao Yao got inside, the males staff's eyes brighten: "Hey, hey, come and see, she is so cute."

"Woah, she really is cute, is she wearing an elevator lady uniform? Why I never noticed her before, such cute elevator lady?"

"Didn't you hear that she is looking for our manager? I am sure she is our manager's girl friend, my suggestion you to forget her." Yao Yao looked innocent, cute, types of girl that easy to be loved by males.

"Miss, why are you looking for our manager?" at this moment, a man who sitting closest to Yao Yao asked her with curious expression.

She pouted and smiled bitterly: "I have urgency to meet him, if he is here, can you bring me to meet him? I come from service department, Luo Yao Yao.

"Okay, please wait for moment." Normally the staffs in here are so arrogant, but once Yao Yao coming, this male staff looked so happy and quickly rushed into manager's room: "CEO Yu, Manager Long, there is a staff who named Luo Yao Yao, she wanted to meet you."

"Luo Yao Yao?" Long Qi furrowed his brows, he took a newspaper and threw it to the male staff in front: "Who asked you to come and make report? I don't know that girl who named Luo Yao Yao, said, did she look beautiful so that you come and make report on behalf her? Bastard, have you never seen girl before?" he talked while keep hitting that staff male's head.

Long Qi is famous to be the rudest manager in company, ignored him as youngster, his temperamental is well-known as high.

"Yes, yes, Manager Long, I understood what to do."

"Wait." Before the male staff left, the person who sat in sofa, Yu Ao Tian opened his mouth: "Long Qi, since she is coming to make report, I thought she might have something to say, you should, go there to take a look."

# **Little Sheep Sending Herself Off**

Seeing the unusual Yu Ao Tian, Long Qi just...

Yu Ao Tian is someone who never wanted to get involved with others department simple matters, but now, he is opened his mouth and asked him to meet that little girl, must he do it? "Fine, My lord." And then he turned to say: "You tell others colleagues to get off working. I will meet that little girl."

"Yes."

Not waiting too long, all the staff were getting off, Yao Yao who was standing in front of the door way suddenly pulled that male staff: "What are you doing?"

"Oh, Manager asked us to get off earlier, but you rest assured, he will meet you immediately."

After he done, Yao Yao feel relieved: "Okay, thank you."

Waiting for one by one the staff gone, there was a man who worn suit walked out from the manager's room.

His height about 170cm something, he seemed at the twenties, he has pair of bright eyes, high nose that perfectly matched with his healthy wheat-color complexion which give brilliant atmosphere surrounded him.

But Yao Yao felt she was so familiar with this man: "You... You are..."

"Hello, I am the security manager." He walked to her in front, Long Qi seemed to behave polite, but that pair of his eyes are showed another way...

Ha, so she is that elevator lady, the flat chest. Even he not really remembered her looks but he would not ever forget how flat her chest that similar to airfield,

interesting.

"Security manager? You, you... didn't you are the PR department staff?" after a while she recalled her memory, he was that person who yelled at her at the first day she worked.

"Hey, flat chest, which part you saw me as someone eat soft rice? Those people were the PR department staffs while I am the security department's people."

So he came from the security department, that's why he was so angry when she stopped the elevator at PR department: "I am sorry. I thought you and they were same, those coming from PR department."

"Well, last time matter, don't talk about it anymore. So this time, what bring you here?" he said, Long Qi pulled a chair for Yao Yao so that they could seat face to face.

"I..." this manager and that bastard were coming together, they could be friend. No, if they are really friend, it would be so troublesome.

"Manager, yesterday the person who came with you, was he your friend?"

"Them? They could say as my colleagues, I am not types of person who relying on my appearance to live."

After she heard, her heart is soften: "Manager, this time I have something that... you can help me!"

Her moist eyes were slowly streaming tears and wet her face, that appearance obviously similar like the little rabbit that awaiting to slaughter. Long Qi heart, 'thump' the sudden unusual beat vibrate on him. He helplessly asked: "How old are you?"

"Ah? Me, I am nineteen years old."

"Doesn't it mean you are same age with me?" Why this girl, more he saw her more he felt XXXXX, has Yu Ao Tian changed his taste?

"Manager? Manager?

He gained his mind after being called by Yao Yao, suddenly Long Qi expression changed to be so serious: "Where we are... oh, what do you want me to help

you? How do you want me to help you? Tell me!"

"I... today is my second day working in here, I have harassed by the PR department staff, I hope..."

"What? Who dare to harass you? Berson group is not allowed this kind of thing happen!" Long Qi pissed off and stood up: "Rest assured, I will help you. come, come, tell me how they harassed you?"

"Uh..." Yao Yao should feel little bit relieved after hear what he said, but somewhat she felt something amiss so that: "Manager, can I no need to say about the process?"

"That won't do." The part that he missed out was actually the process.

"If you didn't tell me about the process how could I help you? Come, said it."

"Just like... that bastard..."

"This part you don't need to tell me anymore, I have seen it."

"Ah?"

"No, I mean, I mean this kind of thing is guessable, now you tell me the others, the others." The others which he hasn't seen. He he

"Others..."

Yao Yao started her story from the first day she worked, she told all the detailed to Long Qi, his expectation mood suddenly turned cold, there were lot of women who wanted to kiss Yu Ao Tian but didn't even have chance to do it, but now when Yu Ao Tian was the person who took initiative to kiss her, she even made report about him. She was really stupid girl.

"And then?" Long Qi felt little bit boring, slowly back to his seat.

"Yes, there was other!"

"Others? Say, hurried!!!"

"It was this afternoon, that PR department manager Long and that bastard..."

"Manager Long? Which one of the manager Long?" Long Qi cut her words.

"His name is Long Ye."

"Uh..." once he heard this name, Long Qi eyes flashed, he never thought that today, Long Ye and Ao Tian, both of them act separately. "Faster, continue, did both of them together...."

"No. that bastard Long Ye didn't participate, he just accomplices with..." Yao Yao told the incident that happened this afternoon once again in detailed.

Once again Long Qi yawned after he heard, he thought that Long Ye would be together with Ao Tian "played" her, but he just not expected that nothing was happening. Not interesting at all.

"Yao Yao ah, after I heard it, I felt so furious, I never thought that two types of persons are working in Berson."

"Yes. So that manager, you should help me?

"I really want to help you, but you should tell me the bastard name that harassed you? Moreover, if only based on what you said, you need to obtain evidence?"

Name...

Evidence...

Oh yeah, she did not know that man name: "The bastard who is always harassed me is the person who coming work together with you, that person."

"Coming work together with me? They are few, which one you refer to?"

Damn! No matter, I still have the way.

"Well, manager, that bastard took my mobile phone, inside my mobile phone there were having the evidence. As long as you call my phone, you would know who was that bastard."

"Oh, good idea. Come, tell me your phone number." Long Qi took out his mobile phone hastily, press the number that Yao Yao said.

However....

Let delete all things of yesterday, now you, in front of me you say that you love me, please give me chance...

There was familiar sound inside the office room.

Once Yao Yao heard it she knew... "Manager... this is my mobile phone ring tone, how can...."

Just in time, suddenly the door opened from manager room, Yu Ao Tian slowly walking out, his body leaning in door frame, his beautiful face showed sinister expression, while his hand playing with the pink color mobile phone.

"That, that is him... it's he! Manager! He was that bastard who are harassed me!!!" Yao Yao shocked, her face white pale, shivering she grabbed Long Qi's neck, that kind of Long Qi really looked pity.

October 2016

#### **Chapter 23**

# Her Pair of Hand Being Tied

"O? so he was the man, well, this much easier. The evidence, was it inside the mobile phone?" Long Qi was pretending to secure the evidence.

"En, en." Yao Yao nodded.

"Well, you wait for me." After he said, he walked faster to Yu Ao Tian in front, snatched the mobile phone from his hand. Hurried he gave it to Yao Yao: "Come, show me the evidence."

"En." Her eyes that wet with tears were glaring at Yu Ao Tian who still standing and leaning in door frame.

Bastard man, you kept on continuing showed that arrogant face ah, you would be dead meat later! But as long as she searching....

"He has deleted it!" she didn't find the evidence.

"Geez, there is no way, Yao Yao. I think..."

"It's okay manager. Humph. He thought that by deleting it, I would not able to recover it?" Yao Yao little face coldly emitting anger, glaring at Yu Ao Tian, she walked to one of the computer, looked so skilled in operating it.

Well— Long Qi who standing beside suddenly felt this girl was not as naïve as he thought.

"Ok, it has recovered!" in very short two minutes, Yao Yao smiled confidently, she clicked the play button.

The evidence that has already been deleted, it really recovered just like before, showed up in front of them.

"You, you... how can you do it?" Long Qi dumbstruck, hinting towards Yu Ao Tian who was also amazed with her skill.

His devilish smiles even deeper, he never thought this Little Thing always bringing so many surprises every time they met.

"I have studied repairing computer during my high school. Well, It is so easy to recover anything."

Even the elite IT staff of Berson need about five minutes to recover things but this Little Girl only spent two minutes, Long Qi was feeling alike 'really F\*\*k', this girl worked as elevator lady just too waste, no\*\*\* what?

"Humph, bastard, now the stolen good has recovered what you wanted to say then?" Yao Yao is held the mobile phone which still playing into Yu Ao Tian in front.

"heh?" He straighten his posture, his pair of hand inserted into his pocket, he just squinted his eyes, Yao Yao loftiness attitude suddenly weaken.

This man have dominating aura in his surrounded, really scary.

"Man...Manager." It was still better for her to seek help from others.

"No matter, don't be afraid. Now the evidence is in our hand, he won't win over us." Long Qi encouraged Yao Yao in front. Fiercely said: "Humph, at least you are twenty five or six, aren't you? But you have done that to 19 years old little girl, are you still human?"



"Yeah, you are not human!" since she has backed up, Yao Yao excited to shout and yell, hiding at Long Qi back. But once Yu Ao Tian glared, she backed down.



"Little girl that hasn't reached twenty years old is called Hua Li (blossom plum). How could you have heart to do it? Simply to say you are beast."

<sup>&</sup>quot;Right, you are a beast!!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;You see, let say you wanted to have appearance then you are had it, about

personality trait you have it, but how could you do wretch thing?"

"Yes, you are wretched."

Every time Long Qi criticized Yu Ao Tian, Yao Yao would follow at his back, but Yu Ao Tian kept silent, but his face turned darken.

Yao Yao has already been touched with Long Qi sense of justice, she did not expected this manager who has same age with her is someone so righteous.

But the next minutes....

"Do you think this little girl is matched with you? You should let her...stay at my side, this is the right thing!"

"Yeah, you should let her..." ugh.. what situation was it? Yao Yao expression changed stiff, slowly she make distance from Long Qi. With fear she looked at Long Qi who showed sinister smile: "You, both of you... are... compliance?"

Damn! She just not paid attention, that bastard who took her mobile phone was walked out from the manager of security room. Doomed..., she tricked again.

"I thought you are good person, could not believe you are cooperate with this bastard. All of you are not more than snake-mouse at one place.

"Aiyo, flat chest, you don't need to say such awful words, what is snake-mouse at one place, really awful. We are villains collude together only (nefarious ends)" Long Qi laughed, slowly he walked toward her.

He pushed away her finger that pointing at him, whispered: "Oh yeah, let me tell you something, the person that you said lecher manager Long.... He is my biological brother! I .... Am Long Qi!" he said, he eyes showed bad intention, turned to Yu Ao Tian, he waved his hand: "Well, it's time for you to enjoy your "meal". I have accomplished the mission. Have good play. Bye Bye."

Have good play... good play...

Looking at Long Qi who has walked far away, Yao Yao pair of eyes were dimming. A chilly wind blowing, at the moment she felt her body trembling, her eyes swept Yu Ao Tian's back.

The next second...

Run!

She wanted to run, but his hand was tightly gripped her hair pony tail.

"Ouw." Suddenly the pain spreading to her body, she finally stayed obediently, she stopped moving.

"Bao Bei, just now, have you enough scolded me?"

At back, that man's voice as cold as death knocking, while her face ashen as corpse, when she turned her head, her face met his face so close: "It was not me. I wasn't scolding you, it was Manager Long who said you, I just... Just..." ah whatever, there was no use to say anything now, anyway, both of them are compliance. She lowered her head, then she nodding her head as if she is a doll: "satisfied."

"Humph, it sound good, we are equal now, so this is the time you should make me satisfied, isn't it?" he said, Yu Ao Tian smiled, violently he pulled Yao Yao's pony tail and walk toward heading the inside of office...

"No.. hurt." No matter how she tried but still she helplessly being brought to inside of office room.

Yu Ao Tian loosen his grasped, her body just fell into sofa.

She intended to stand up, but her body is pressed by him, while his other hand loosen his necktie.

"You, what do you want to do?"

"En? You will know soon." His smile was so scary, he removed his necktie and then he rolled up his sleeves little bit.

"No, Don't! why are you tying me, let me go!"

At this moment, Yao Yao really looked alike little sheep that prepared to slaughter, her body could twist or move, resist, but her hand stay still.

Yu Ao Tian walked to the in front of camera, freely to adjust the camera position to the sofa and turn on the computer screen.

He looked himself at the monitor, seeing a man with dangerous smile, while her was panicking with widen eyes: "What do you want to do?"

"Hehehe, Bao Bei, I see you love to take people's pictures, this is because I wanted to satisfy your hobby." He said. Yu Ao Tian embraced her with one hand while the other hand holding the camera: "Come, give me a smile."

Subconsciously, she avoided the lens.

She made Yu Ao Tian felt little bit unsatisfied, that good looking face showed his sadistic expression: "I asked you to smile, understand?" Yu Ao Tian pinched her small face toward the lens.

October 2016



"Why did you do this to me?"

She just does not know why he acted so harsh toward her She could not find any reason why he must act this way

### **Chapter 24**

#### Molested

"Let me go, It's hurt..." her chin got pinched almost felt as if out of it shape, the pain made her tears flowing and wet her face.

"Oops, did it hurt you? But by this way you might get into the situation so that, the evidence that you have would be more convincing others?"

Did he really concern about this? But... "If not because you repeatedly did that to me, I would not make any report to anyone about your "habit". All are because forced by you."

"So, all are my fault. What should I do? What should I do to make up for your loss? So that you can happily smiling?" His lips curled up to make devious smile, slowly he loosened up his hand that pressed onto Yao Yao's, gently he...

One of her uniform button's opened. The next, one by one her uniform buttons are opened by Yu Ao Tian's. Since her hands are tied, helplessly, she could only see herself being "exposed" through the lens to monitor without able to do anything.

Very fast, her pastel color bra untied by the man, her white milky and smooth body suddenly uncovered. She tensed, not daring to breathe loudly, her head kept on shaking: "Stop, don't continue!!!"

"Sst, Bao Bei, don't move. You see, if you move, this will also follow to shake, it looks flirtatious." Yu Ao Tian pointing at the monitor screen.

Yao Yao ashamed glanced at herself, her milky white and smooth body indeed tempting.

That man pair of hands suddenly moves to her S waist, slowly sliding forward....

"No, uh...." Afraid, she closed her eyes, in intimidating atmosphere, his pair of strong hand keep on touching her.

"En, uh..." He has not had enough, she shamefully trembling and biting her lips,

but her mouth betraying herself by released seducing moans.

"Bao Bei, looked, you are looked so flirtatious now." Yu Ao Tian forcedly to make her to see herself at the monitor screen, while his "naughty" hand kept on touching.

Again and again, she could not control herself, unpredictable something flowing out. She felt shameless with wide-open eyes, seeing herself from the monitor screen.

Unbelievable, the cheeks flushed, her eyes blurred seeing if that girl really was her? Shy, ashamed and no face. Tears flowing from her eyes slowly on the contrary her body heat up as if blooming flower that so flirtatious.

"Bao Bei, how do you feel seeing yourself being touched by man, isn't it really give you more pleasure?" Yu Ao Tian used his lower and deep demonic voices which rout her last sanity, his big hand moving from her belly towards her breast.

"No..." gradually her confused head react faster, she wriggled into the man's waist that trying to thwart.

Who knew, her acted even provoking the man more.

His mouth showed alluring smiles that provoking to charming laughter, he probed into Yao Yao's dress.

She clearly could feel that man disgusting hands are moved toward her sensitive place.

And then...

"En?" when his hand reached to that sensitive place, his alluring smile suddenly vanished; this Little Thing body is....

He faster laid her body in sofa.

"You... No! No!" Yao Yao scared with the man sudden movement, her face white and alarmed. His next movement even scared Yao Yao more which let her heart cold.

"No!!"

"You!" one of his hand held her waist so that her body lift up, he as if admiring a work of art, staring at her which looked alike smooth eggs.....

"Damn Little Thing, said! Are you lying to me? How old are you?" Demoness! Demoness! This Little Thing if she really not yet twenty years old, she really is the rare-breed of alluring demoness.

At this moment, Yu Ao Tian felt his body hyperinflation, during the process, his acted more impulsive.

"What..."

"En?" her sobbing voice turned Yu Ao Tian's attention. He raised his head, facing the small face that wet with tears, Yu Ao Tian tilted his head: "What did you said, Little Thing?"

"Why you did this to me? This kind of thing, isn't it only done by the husband and wife? Why do you want to do it to me? When first time I saw you, I thought you are someone dazzling, but now with all you done, what is your difference with the scoundrel? I don't understand what about me that make you pissed off, why you repeatedly come to humiliate me?" She not understood, she did not understand why this man should act this way, she understood very well, this kind of good-looking man would not lack women beside him but why he bothered to come and tease her? was it because her schemed him? Did it because she wanted to report him?

Facing Yao Yao who showed questioning expression, suddenly Yu Ao Tian devilish expression changed to stern: "Scoundrel? Robber? Oh..." his deep eyes flashed an arrogant light, his lips curved up, smile. He lifts up his body from her and whispered to her ear: "You are still so naïve and innocent, Little Thing. But because.... I just like naïve, innocent and pure Little Thing like you so I can dirty you, slut! Did like it? It does not matter, there will be a day when you come and beg me to dirty you!" loosening her hands...

She landed heavily in sofa.

Yu Ao Tian until her hand which tied with his necktie, he turned and took out a CD from the computer and threw it to her body.

"Bao Bei, bring it to home and careful admired it, admired yourself that \*\*\*,

could not say for sure, perhaps you may fall in love with this kind of pleasure!" He said, and then he went out...

"Hiks...hiks..." after she left the company, Yao Yao was crying while walking in the side of street, the moonlight that illuminated her petite body showed how thin she is.

Shouldn't cry, shouldn't cry! Or else when arrived at home, Mom would find out!

The extraordinary shame and humiliation that she had experienced just now was indefinable lump in her heart. She tried to bury and forget it but it was so difficult to do. She afraid when she arrived at home Mom would worry, she just could not unstop to hypnotize herself to forget that terrible and scary nightmare as quickly as she could, just like two years ago.

"Hey, little chick." At the street side there are few of scoundrels called her.

Yao Yao acted as if she did not hear them, she walked faster.

"Hey, little chick, who are bullied you? Tell big brothers so we could help you." they were blocking her path.

"Little chick, we are talking to you, are you mute?" They said.

One of the men with blonde hair lifted her chin: "Heh? See just like I said before, this chick looked not bad."

"He he, see she looks even cuter when she cried."

"Let go!" Yao Yao stopped her tears, hit away that scoundrel hand.

"Aiyo, little sister is so fierce, this few big brother are worried you, why you are so fierce? Let's go with us, this few big brothers will make you happy, at the moment you won't cry anymore." After said, two men are holding at her right and left shoulder.

October 2016

#### **Chapter 25**

# He likes eating his food alone

In the cold and quiet street, a Bugatti Veyron sport car with loud harsh sound passed. The good looking man is seating in the driver seat, while beside him seating is the currently, one of most beautiful goddess, Li Mei Yun.

"Ao Tian, I miss you, tonight I stay at your place, can I?"

"Whatsoever."

"Thank you, Ao Tian." Li Mei Yun smiles elegantly, gently peck his face.

Deep black eyes rolled, he smiled: "Such brazenly, don't you afraid being photo by the paparazzi?"

"You don't afraid, and then I am also not afraid."

"Heh." Few meters away in front of the red traffic light, Yu Ao Tian suddenly stepped on brake.

"Help! Help!" a little girl is shouting and crying for help. Inside the car Yu Ao Tian frowned, looking through the car mirror...

Looking not far from the side street, Luo Yao Yao is plastered by few scoundrels.

"Ao Tian, the traffic light is green. Ao Tian..."

"Hah?"

Li Mei Yun helplessly shaking her head, pointed at the direction: "The light already green, Ao Tian, you are rare to be..." not waiting until she finished her word, Yu Ao Tian once again looked at the position of rear mirror reflector.

This time Li Mei Yun also looked at the direction, she paused helplessly and smile: "What? Does the CEO of Berson group has moved and grow compassion, want to be the hero that rescues the beauty? I will be jealous lo."

"Mei Yun."

"What?"

"Get down from car."

Her expression showed as if she heard mistaken: "Ao Tian, I just finished shooting my movie scenes and came to look for you right after I done, are you really want to leave me alone and go to help that person? The most important is..." she is helplessly looking out from the car window: "If now I get down from the car, the paparazzi will take my photos."

"Heh, didn't you say that you was not afraid being caught? Get down from car! I don't want to repeat for the three times." After said, Yu Ao Tian eyes gleam a dangerous sight.

Li Mei Yun knew very well Yu Ao Tian's temperamental, the current him, it better for her to leave.

At this time, Yu Ao Tian get down from his car, walking toward Yao Yao's...

"Little chick, stop shouting, it better for you to save your energy to "shout".

"Let off! Let me off!" panicking, Yao Yao opened her mouth and biting one of the men's hand.

"Aiyooo." One cried out voice, hurried let off his hand: "Fucking damn! You dare to bite me?" angrily the man raised his hand wanted to hit to her small face.

Just in time, one slender figure holding tight his hand, using the strength to break...

"Aiyooo." Still the same voice that cried out, that blonde hair man paused for moment, he feels as if his neck has sprained and broke.

Everyone looked at that slender figure, set their eyes to him...

Under the moonlight, under that man deep eye there is bottomless death sight

as if the reaper is coming, extremely scary. His body is emitting deathly aura.

"You...who are you?" obviously, those few scoundrels are intimidated by Yu Ao Tian strong presence so they not dare to make careless move.

But Yu Ao Tian looked them as useless people, one of his hand put inside his pant pocket, his cold dark eyes and sadistic smile, slowly looked at the Yao Yao who face showed as if seeing ghost: "You are really good flirting with men."

He still dares to say her, doesn't he just same with those scoundrels!

"How could you blame me?"

"Oh? A little girl walking so late at night in the street that sparsely populated, does this mean to emit signal for the pervert."

"If it not because you who made me stayed so late at company, I have seated in public bus and already at home, moreover I won't meet such situation."

"Heh, you may choose to ride taxi."

"Taxi?" once Yao Yao heard it she gets furious, faster she took out something from her pocket: "I just have three dollars, you say what kind of taxi I can ride!?"

Yu Ao Tian looked at the small change coins in her hands, he almost burst in laughed, in today world whom the young lady who almost twenty years old only bring few coins when go out? Now he really suspects this little thing whether she is pretended to hide her age, especially she has spotless body for the twenty years old girl.

"humph, so both of you know each other?" the blonde hair man asked when he heard Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao conversation, at the moment they just feel this man only scares them so that he emitting that terrifying aura, when he not that scared anymore, he said: "Hey, pretty boy, I suggested you don't come to interfere others matter, be careful to trouble yourself. If you also want to "play" with this chick, wait until brothers play enough then we will give you the share, how about it?"

A group of scoundrel added the handsome wolf, does this mean... she is fall into wolf den? No! No! She won't let him to join them as group.

"We, we can count as colleagues, right? Help... please help me." without think,

she quickly asked help from this big wolf, Yao Yao knows very well if she falls into this group of scoundrel the ending will be so terrifying. She pulled Yu Ao Tian's sleeves, she showed begging eyes.

When Yu Ao Tian saw it, he smiles devilish, bend his body little bit: "Bao Bei, you are still prefer me to play with you."

"Of course not!!!"

"Well, why should I help you? Is it because we are colleagues?"

Looking at the man jesting, Yao Yao knew this bastard is trying to anger her.

"You!!!"

"Before you kept on saying me as scoundrel, pervert, and whatsoever the names, so have you ever seen the scoundrel or pervert will come to help?"

Understood, so that he is acting up because this matter, he really such petty man: "Well, you are also can be the scoundrel or pervert that help others."

To be truth, Yu Ao Tian really wants to straggle this little thing, she really clever and eloquent.

"Yo, so both of you are colleagues?" from the outsider point of view after the scoundrel heard their conversation, they finally knew the man status which not frightening: "Dude, seeing your appearance, you must be white collar. If you are clever, you should understand what to do? We are always value loyalty of friendship (brotherhood), as long as you want to shut one your eyes, after we done with ours business, if you willing, you can play with this chick whatever you want!"

"Humph?" Yu Ao Tian rolled his eyes.

Yao Yao shocked as if her heart stopped, clear her throat, won't he... really agree with them?

"Although you guys suggestion are not bad. But.... I still prefer to "eat" my food alone!" after he said, he embraced Yao Yao's waist, looked at her and said: "Bao Bei, after you heard what I said, you must be very "happy", right?"

"Of, of course I am not." She isn't anyone "food", but only in this moment she does not want to fall in these few scoundrel hand.

"Aiyoo, little brat, after I heard, it feel as if you want to save this chick? But don't blame us not telling you, we are Long Yu's people, our big boss is...Yu Ao Tian! If you dare to anger us, I see you are tired of living!" after said, this few scoundrel are took out their shiny knife from their pocket....

### **Chapter 26**

# **Brought to desolate mountain**

After Yao Yao heard, she paused and her face white pale: "What...what should we do? They...

They are Yu Ao Tian's people...."

"Why are you afraid? Doesn't you Yu Ao Tian's little sister? Just tell them."

She was bragging last time, even two years ago she was really met the real Yu Ao Tian, but now she really does not remember how that person looks like.

Should she tell this man? No, cannot, later on in the future he will bully me.

"I, I am Yu Ao Tian's little sister, but...but my big brother is still in Japan, he has many subordinates, so that not all his subordinates are know me. Moreover I just back from Japan, in China I don't have any friend. As you can see, one group is six persons, how about you call some of your friends to scare them?"

"Ah? Me? But those people that I know, all of them are eating soft rice."

"I knew. But it won't matter. We should seize the opportunity, faster! Quickly call them." After said, Yao Yao turned from Ao Tian and glared to the scoundrels. She gathers her courage, fiercely piercing her sharp eyes to those scoundrels that holding knife: "Let me tell you guys, this man also who mingle in underworld, don't you people underestimated and fool by his appearance that groom very handsome and then thought he is someone eat soft rice, but actually he has nickname as Reaper! Reaper, do you know? He is merciless!"

Not far from where Yao Yao stands, Yu Ao Tian helplessly shook his head after heard her bragging to scare the scoundrels, this little thing, does she need to add that words, "eat soft rice"? He really wanted to punish her later!

"See, you guys looked! Now he is calling his men, he randomly can call two hundred people, if you want to live longer, better run faster now!"

"Bao Bei, there are only six persons, why change the couple peoples to call two hundred peoples?"

At her back, Yu Ao Tian pretending to be confused asked. She paused for moment: "Ah?"

At the next minutes, the impulsive Yu Ao Tian slowly talked in the phone: "Call two hundred people to here, within three minutes all should gather here!" he used commanded voice. Yao Yao dumbfounded.

"Hey, little brat, you are too good bragging, aren't you? Two hundred people? In this present, others than our big boss, Yu Ao Tian no one can make this kind of order in Asia, ordered more than ten of groups people. Not to mention three minutes, hah, I will give you ten minutes, if you can't ask your people come, you should crawl between our legs."

After he listened to these few scoundrels, Yu Ao Tian elegantly laughed.

Yao Yao who stands beside him, pinched his arm, helplessly asked: "Are you crazy? Are you really called two hundred people?"

"Didn't you say so?"

"......" Usually he is quite smart, but how can he turn be so stupid now? Didn't he know that she just bragging to scare the scoundrels? How could he hook to the bait, this is really troublesome.

"Oh my, what to do, it has been passed two minutes, whatever, if there an opportunity you should run."

"How are about you?"

"Does not matter, no matter how to say, everything is because of me, there is none of your business. I can't make you get involve with this matter. You run first."

"Hah." He just realized this little girl is also value loyalty. It is so obvious that she scared to death but because she does not want to drag and burden him, she

tried to act strong, deep and immeasurable little thing. Raised his hand, looked at his watch....

When the pointer closer to three minutes, sound, not far from that place suddenly there are countless cars getting close, Yu Ao Tian deep black eyes gleaming cold dangerous sight.

"What sound is it?"

"I don't know, it seems sport car engine?" this few scoundrels feel something amiss, they looked surrounded.

As seen, the flashing light from car headlamp are coming to their direction, the numbers of the car at least 40 cars.

"This...this..." those few scoundrels who holding knife suddenly panic.

At least there are 40 cars coming at the same time and stopped.

"Vroom, vroom" there are innumerable men who wear black suit get down from the cars.

Seeing the countless group of people, this scoundrels are completely at loss, Yao Yao also stuffed, perhaps they are never seen countless men in their life before.

Cautiously seeing those men in black suit, in their left chest is embroidered one word "Yu" clearly. Needless to say, this people are men from Yu Long's group!

When those men in black surrounded them, they bend and bowed: "Yu Lao Da!"

After they bowed, those few scoundrels and Yao Yao are looked at that good looking man direction.

At this moment, he has emitting killing aura while his charm already disappeared, the rest this suffocating atmosphere is come from underworld emperor! This is the real Yu Ao Tian who is leader of hundred and thousand men.

Finally Yao Yao understands, this man really not bragging and lie, before... he

indeed just played along with them.

"Yu, Yu Lao Da... Sorry, please not angry us who cannot see the big mountain in front of us, please forgive us." This few scoundrels, "Thumping" kneeling and kowtow nonstop.

But Yu Ao Tian just ignored them, expressionlessly said: "This few sticky worm are feigning as my Yu Long's group men, how to deal, you guys figure it by yourselves."

"Understood, Yu Lao Da."

The few of scoundrels are kneeling as if they just awake from dream, so that the Big Boss Yu has found out that they are actually not belong to Yu Long group, but why didn't he exposed them? Does this related to the spreading rumor....

As rumors spread, Yu Ao Tian is someone who never wanted to fight with his own men, moreover he does not want to waste his saliva, and to the extended he does not want know how to punish them.

Even when he talking, he just talked with Yao Yao, he completely ignored those scoundrels.

"Yu...Yu Lao Da...we just because admire you, so that we pretending to be men from Yu Long group. We are begging you... begging you to spare our life. We beg you." as long as those who mingle in underworld, no matter what status they are or they just simply no-body-scoundrels, everyone knows about the big name of Yu Ao Tian, run into this underworld emperor, everyone is surely understand very well what kind of ending they will have, included this few scoundrels.

No matter how they are begging, Yu Ao Tian ignored them not even one glanced to them, he pulled Yao Yao who legs felt weaken to his sport car.

"Yu Lao Da, take care (departing word)." The men in black suit are sending him in unison. Even when Yao Yao has far, she still clearly hears the sound of their farewell to Yu Ao Tian.

Inside the Mercedes-Benz, the car drove by Yu Ao Tian. He glanced at Yao Yao who face still pale: "Not asking me where I will take you?"

Did not hear... not hear anything, at the moment she almost forget where her house is, her eyes just open-wide looking at street, not even move.

The car slowly stopped at the most beautiful scenic hilltop. Yu Ao Tian as if dragging sculpture to make her get down from car, the scenic hilltop is beautiful: "Really beautiful."

"Yu...Yu... Yu Lao Da." Yao Yao turned her rigid body, looking at Yu Ao Tian's face, she wants to say something, but her mouth as if being glue, she cannot say....

#### **Chapter 27**

### What Do You Think I am?

"Bao Bei, those people are stunt men that I called to act before, aren't you Yu Ao Tian's little sister, how can you forget your big brother looked?"

Ha! Ha! It true, she, herself also pretending to be Yu Ao Tian's little sister, those scoundrels who are pretending to be his subordinate have beleaguered, so how about her who feigned to be his younger sister...how would be she ended?

"Yu Big Boss!" her rigid body suddenly become lively person, she hurried kneeled on the ground: "You don't toying with me, two years ago it was my fault, It really was my mistake. It was me who could not see the big mountain in front of me so that I thought you were host, I beg you, You are wise man that forgive little me, please spare me. And then, I am not really had bad intention to pretend as your younger sister. Please spare my... my life!"

Finally two years ago incident sealed open, countless nightmare in front of her, at the moment, everything came up and it was showed from starting she encountered with this beautiful good looking man who coincided as the underworld emperor, she really dislike herself that has weak memory, how could she forget this dangerous man's look?

"En?" Yu Ao Tian squatted, he smiles deviously: "Bao Bei, finally you recognized me?" he really wants to tell this little thing, not only she thought him as Host two years ago, but after two years, she even thought him as PR staff!

"Yu, Big Boss Yu, what do you mean?" Yao Yao feels as if awake from her dream, she finally understood that Yu Ao Tian has recognized her before: "Big boss Yu, you knew me, why don't you tell me?"

"Hah? I was afraid to recall your bad memory."

"But now you are even added my bad memory."

After he heard Yao Yao truth feeling, Yu Ao Tian squinted his cold eyes, he really wants to straggle this little thing who is talking honestly, "Oh, so that because of me, your bad memory even added more, then I apologized. I will make you to forget it immediately." After he said, only with his one hand, he has locked both of her wrists.

Yao Yao panic: "Yu Lao Da, what are you?" her feet off from ground, while her wrists are grasped by Yu Ao Tian, slowly walked to outside of the hilltop fence.

"Ah!!!!" under her feet that is cliff. If Yu Ao Tian does not grasp her tightly, she will fall down immediately: "Yu Lao Da, I beg you to let me off, please let me off."

"Sst, Bao Bei, don't move, if you randomly move, if I don't hold you steadily, you will..."

"Fine, fine. I... I won't move. I won't move." Yao Yao obediently settled, but because her fear, her body trembling.

"Humph, Bao Bei, you body still moves."

"I am afraid, of course my body will be trembling!!!" Yao Yao yelled because she angry.

Yu Ao Tian pretended unsatisfied, he frowned: "Ya, you still dare to talk back? What should I do? My hand can hold you anymore."

"No, no, no!!!!" she afraid once Yu Ao Tian really let her go her wrist, her body will fall from cliff.

"Ah!!" when she almost falls a few centimeters, Yu Ao Tian caught her.

"Thump, thump" her heart beat as if it will go out, her face as white as paper, seeing how Yu Ao Tian smiled alike demon, she yelled at him: "What do you want? I just mistaken you as Host two years ago, while you even took my first kiss, does it not enough? What should I do so that you will let me go?"

"First kiss?" so in other words, for these last two years no one ever taste this unripe fruit?

It is true that, her first kiss was actually kept for Feng Chen Yi until she celebrated her 18 years old. But who knows, that Feng Chen Yi was two timing her, that why she always keeps her first kiss until now.

"Do you really want me to let you off?"

When she gets back to her rational, she is panicking shaking her head.

"Well." smiled deviously, Yu Ao Tian slowly pulled Yao Yao back: "Close your eyes, stretch out your tongue. Without my command you are not allowed to open your eyes!"

"Why...?" does he want to crave her tongue? No. subconsciously she covered her mouth, she looked at him.

"Don't you want me to let you off? As long as you do as what I asked."

When she sees the stern facial expression of Yu Ao Tian, she calm down, whatever, as long as this underworld emperor let her go, no matter what he does, it fine! She closed her eyes, slowly she stretch out her tongue.

Suddenly, she feels something soft moves and touched her tongue...

This kind of feeling is something hard to describe, very gentle and comfortable, her body at the moment numb.

And then suddenly something soft alike small snake pry to open her mouth, his tongue is prying open to her hard teeth.

Is it?

Suddenly Yao Yao feels there is something wrong, hurried she opened her eyes...

She realized the good looking face of Yu Ao Tian has got too close nearly to stick with her face, his intoxicating cologne smell slowly sniff by her nose which makes her lost senses.

If she looked attentively to his long curled lash eyes, it really beautiful...

This is not right! Not right! Now she is being forced to kiss, then why she still able to admire his good looking face?

But...

This is so obvious, this is the second times for Yao Yao being force to kiss, compared to her first time which terrifying her, this time she is little bit obsessed by his lips that stick to her lips, does this is the result why she should close her eyes?

His strong tongue that forcing to her tongue inside mouth as if\*\* dance, that milky white and smooth little face gradually blushed.

Should continuing, Yao Yao knows if this things still keep on going, the next will be so dangerous: "uh! uh!" pair of hands are pushing away Yu Ao Tian's chest.

He opened his eyes, slowly leave her lips: "haven't I told you? Without my order, you are not allowed to open your eyes, how do you want me to punish you?" he spoke slowly but not intending to end his interesting game, with dissatisfaction he said: "Still, your kissing technique is really bad!"

"Why you said me? It clearly that you...." this Yu Ao Tian, simply to say is demon not human! She is just afraid to anger the underworld emperor, so that better for her to gulp her words back.

"Since I know that you never kissed any man, I decided not to punish you." after he said, he takes out his wallet from his pocket, took out some hundred dollars to her hands.

Once Yao Yao sees this, she fires up: "What do you mean? You think I am hostess?" she threw the money on ground.

"Eh, Bao Bei, if you are Hostess, only by kissing you earn thousand dollars, this mean you are so easy to earn money."

She looked at Yu Ao Tian who turned his back, she made fist to both of her hands, bastard, simply to say you are not as good as animal or beast. After you bullied then you still taunted people! You are really not human! If someday later when I have power, I will make you clean the toilet everyday! Pei, bastard!

### 28

Love letter?
Hah! just make a dream...
Now, Yu Ao Tian really being labelled as "Soft Rice"

### **Chapter 28**

### You are only fit as Lover

When Yu Ao Tian wanted to get into car, suddenly he turned his head looking at her.

At the moment, the fierce expression in Yao Yao's face immediately changed to warm and docile: "He He, Yu Lao Da, do you have anything to tell me?"

"That money...it is for you to call taxi and go home."

"thump" her heart inexplicable shocked, she never thought this evil who is underworld emperor actually... eyes rolled.

"Yu Lao Da, so that the debt between us, does it mean... all is settle?"

"Ha ha." His alluring smile, his expression suddenly cold: "You make dream, wait until you able to give me the feeling after kissed, when that day comes, then our debt will be settled." After he said, Yu Ao Tian gets into his car.

After seeing he has gone far, finally Yao Yao realized her frustration: "You bastard, son of bitch, demon, reaper!" but after she thought his last sentence, at the moment she felt as if she were deflated rubber ball: "A kiss with feeling? What kind of kiss that have feeling, if he said that is kiss with feeling then it is but how about if there is no feeling. What should I do...."

\*\*

Early in the morning, Yao Yao dispirited and downcast gets into the elevator. She looked at the time, it is the time for those PR staffs to get work. Although she has used to escort Yu Ao Tian to elevator, but today still her first day know that his real status.

"What to do, later when he gets into the elevator, should I call him like how his subordinate addressed him? Aiyoo, so troublesome.

"Dong" at ten sharp, the elevator move, Yu Ao Tian expressionless gets into the elevator. "Good morning, Flat chest." Long Qi greeted her.

When she heard Long Qi greeted her in that way, she pretending not sees him, or else she afraid to occur trouble.

And then followed by Long Ye gets inside the elevator, she lowered her head, she afraid Long Qi would tell him that Yao Yao yesterday called Long Ye as lecher, in order to avoid troublesome and even greater revenge, she silent.

Long Ye keeps quiet inside the elevator, Yao Yao even feels more relaxed as for the last person who are getting into the elevator, one woman and one man, finally she closed the elevator door.

The elevator slowly moved up stairs, inside the elevator is so quiet, when the last people are them who stand at Yao Yao's back, she feels restless again. Long Ye, Long Qi and Yu Ao Tian, aren't they at same boat? Now if they are team up, how to expect she becomes calmer? Or because there are a pair man and woman inside the elevator, then they won't do anything?

Yes, this is too good!

The elevator stopped ad 41th floor, this is the first time for her to feel how her day such bright in Berson group, when everyone left the elevator, she seizes the opportunity...

"Yu... Yu..." should she call him Yu Lao Da? Or should she called him "Yu Xian Sheng (Mr. Yu)."

"Eh? Flat Chest? Today Yu Ao Tian isn't pissed you off, but why are you sending yourself?" everyone stopped their step, Long Qi as if found something refreshing and interesting from her.

"hop and slip away"

Faster she gets into the elevator, hurried she put something at Yu Ao Tian's hand, at the time she run to the elevator, at that moment the door almost closed. "Fiuh... in time." Yao Yao feels little bit relaxed...

Those people who still stood outside the elevator, all of them looked at Yu Ao Tian's hand.

"What does Little Meng Li do?" Long Ye gently smiled: "seeing how she so

nervous as if she is giving love letter, Ao Tian, if you really being involved with little Meng Li, it will be troublesome."

Yu Ao Tian squinted his dark eyes, gloomy say nothing, he has already knew what kind of thing that slipped by little thing.

At this moment, Long Qi who stands right beside Yu Ao Tian looked precisely the thing in his hand: "Ugh, Brother, if seems not love letter.... But... money? Ao Tian, although the flat chest thought you as soft rice, but you really don't need to be real soft rice, you even took the little girl money. Hahahahahah...ugh." He stopped laughing.

Yu Ao Tian eyes flashed, he put all the money at his hand to Long Qi's mouth.

"coughing voice!, Fuck! Ao Tian, this is so dangerous." Long Qi threw out the money that stuck on his mouth, he unsatisfied complained, looking at the current expression of Yu Ao Tian, hurried he behaved.

"Long Ye, will you meet the representative of the Feng's group, today?"

When seeing this stern expression of Yu Ao Tian, all the people who are walking through the corridor suddenly changed to be so serious.

"En."

"This time the representative from Feng's group is someone that will give advantages to our side, you should entice the person."

"But Ao Tian, you still need to understand, he is still the Feng's people!" the current situation between Feng group and Berson group can be describe as friend and enemy, in the business surface both of group are looked as business partner, but at the back actually they are also business enemy. For Yu Ao Tian this kind of concepts, the slick and sly Long Ye will difficult to understand.

"Hm, Long Ye, believe me, this time the representative of Feng Group have more willingness to cooperate with us." He said, his corner mouth lift up and makes a smile...

\*\*

Luo Yao Yao immediately come to Manager of Service Department office room. — once she heard the noticed through the company speaker, Yao Yao

hurried run to the service department.

When she entered the office room, everyone eyes is looking at her.

This kind of atmosphere... what is going on? Yao Yao worried, she walks quietly on her tip toe and heading to the manager's office room. "Manager Zhang, Are you looking for me?"

"Close the door."

Uh... her expression not too good, the way she speaks also not too good, is Yao yao get into another trouble? She just closed the door. And then...

"Luo Yao Yao, yesterday afternoon you had left your post for half hour, the other day you also had left your post for thirty minutes earlier from the working time, do you still want to work or not?"

This bad, so because of this two matters! "Manager Zhang, please listen to my explanation..."

"You shut your mouth! I don't want to hear any explanation, I just want to know the efficiency of working.\*\*\*\*\*(perhaps all cursing words), if you want to be slut that is your matter, you free to do whatever you want after work, but you...during the work time you running wherever to seduce men, don't you think that you are too over, do you?"

What was happen to this manager Zhang? Why she spoke such bad?

"Manager Zhang, I...."

"Luo Yao Yao, I heard that you are so famous among the males colleagues from different department, you are not bad, you have worked for two days but progressed so much, keep on continuing your hard work, may be one day the CEO will fall for you, then you will be my Boss's wife. But...."

"Bang" a sound, Manager Zhang rage in anger, she slammed her table: "Before that, you are still my subordinate, you still have to listen to my order. Scram now!"

"Wait, Luo Yao Yao, this is my good intention to remind you for the last sentence." Manager Zhang slowly walks toward her, she sneered and laughed: "Remember, the successful men like someone like me who has inner beauty, lady. Not like you, little slut vixen. You groom not bad so that you have ability to seduce men, but at last... you only can be lover, this kind of status just deserve you!"

#### **Chapter 29**

# **Amorous feeling**

It's right. She is too shallow, but she clearly knows her position and status. Yao makes a fist with her hands, forced to smile: "Thank you so much for Manager Zhang reminder. I take...my leave first."

She did not want to deny about her irresponsible, but that manager Zhang was too much to insult and humiliate her which obviously nothing to do with her works.

Being famous among the males colleagues are good, want to fool around with others are okay, not to mention if she really has this intention, if she really has, there is nothing to do with manager Zhang? Why should she again and again bring up this topic?

Days and nights she hoped to enter the society after she graduated from her high school so she able to see how world it is, she just simply want to use her summer holiday to earn some extra money so that she can faster reached her goal.

Facing to her very first time working in her life, she really wants to work well, for the short time she wants to keep good memory of it, but who knows....

"This won't do! Yao Yao, you should not lose because of this small obstacle, or else when you graduated from the university you won't be able to cope with and stand in society!!"

She backs to herself and immediately heading to her post, the elevator moved, there is someone walk inside, she does not pay attention,

"Ring..."

When the notice bell of the elevator rang, she backs to herself conscious, lift her head: "Why the elevator stopped at 41th floor?" she looked outside the elevator: "No one. Didn't I mistakenly push the button to 41th floor?Cih... why should I push the button to 41th floor?"

Puzzled, suddenly there is a voice at her back: "Perhaps, you are missing me?"

At the moment she turned back....

"Ah!" the devilish but also good looking face is coming closer to her face, when she step backward, she sees the other party face: "Yu... Big Boss Yu, You... how can you be here?"

(Yao Yao called Yu Ao Tian as Big Boss because she just found out his status as underworld boss not as Berson CEO)

"I have been here for long time."

So that.... He has been there since she lost in her thought.

"I am so sorry, so sorry, Big Boss Yu, we have arrived at 41th floor, please you go out from the elevator."

"Little thing, when you are at work, you should put your heart ah? I just enter why should I go out?"

"Hah?" looking at his cold gleam eyes, Yao Yao has prepared to die, she really in mess\*\*\*\* wrongly said: "I am so sorry, so sorry, Yu Big Boss, which floor you heading? I will immediately take you there, you die... no! I will immediately escort you."

She has lost in her way, while Yu Ao Tian deep eyes flashed, he raise his hand and slowly reaching to hers....

"Yu Lao Da, what are you....no ah!" she covered her head for protection, she subconsciously squat down.

No one knows suddenly the elevator stopped. "What is going on?" lift her head up, Yu Ao Tian's finger has pushed the power button to stop the elevator.

"Yu Lao Da, what are you doing? Why are you stopped the elevator? Dead meat, Dead meat, if Manager Zhang finds out, she will scold me again, hurry! Hurry! Yu Lao Da, get your hand away, turn on the elevator so we can make up, quickly!!!"

Simply to say Yao Yao situation is similar as ant in hot pan, beside her, Yu Ao Tian is laughing: "Oh so that was the matter." No wonder this little thing not in her mood, her bad mood was because she has scold by her supervisor. His cold eyes looked at her: "Do you want to operate the elevator?"

"en! Yes!"

With devious smile, his single hand enveloped her small waist: "Beg me."

"Yu Lao Da, I beg you...uh.." this is wrong ah. "Why should I beg you? You are the PR department staff there is no your business and right to shut down the elevator? Hurried turned on!"

"Heh, Little thing, it seems that I haven't taught you well in normal days." His hand that enveloped her small waist suddenly moves to inside....

"Yah." Shocking sounded, his cold fingers caressing her back which resulting she felt cold and heat at the same time. "Put away your hand!"

It so weird, the domineering Yu Ao Tian, how could he still be so patience with this little thing, begging yet her commending sound? His hands slowly moved downward to her smooth back and slowly moved to her front.

She obviously can feel that man's fingers caressing at her back, trying to uncover her. Her white small face blushed.

"Yu! Yu Ao Tian, didn't you tell me that if I kissed you...then have the feeling, you will let me off?"

"Hm? But you haven't done to that point; furthermore, I never said that I won't touch you?" his quick and sensitive fingers are successfully break the last layer hider. This is\*\*\*\*

She feels as if the electric wave hit her. "Uh..." she helplessly released the shame moaning sound, she tried to stand up in her weaken feet, but finally she felt in his embraces.

Glancing at her blushed little face, as if the stunning sunset scenery, it hot but also seducing. "Bao Bei, your body is so sensitive to the point extremely scary, as long being touched this way, your body has already weaken?"

She really does not want it, but her body reacts in other ways as the result this

black-hearted man unstoppable to tease her.

"Yu, Yu Lao Da, this is my very first job in my life, I really want to treasure it, now, you have made me got scold by the manager. Do you want to force me to send my resignation letter, and then will you be happy?"

Lower her head, her pair of moisten eyes pleading, while her speaking tone not that harsh as before. If she put this little white rabbit expression, earlier she won't face such troublesome.

"Little Thing..." Yu Ao Tian slowly stretched out his hand from her cloths, gently caress her white little face: "If you dare to resign, I will... absolutely ask people to kill all yours family member!" with little bit strength, he pinched her cheek as reminder.

Yu Ao Tian is famous in Japan as the merciless underworld emperor so that she won't be surprised since she have heard before, if this man really want to kill all her family member, simply to say this is piece of cake for him. Two years had passed but why she still this stupid to make trouble with this demon?

"Yu, Yu Lao Da, you always say the same words, always be like this, even I don't take initiative to resign, but still there will be the possibility I get fire."

"Hah, you rest assured, this company can fire anybody but only you this company won't fire!"

At the moment, his hand loosen, hurried Yao Yao\*\*\* her own chin. It really hurt to death.

She secretly glanced at Yu Ao Tian confident smiles, she really not wants to believe, as long as there is manager Zhang, when she makes mistakes she must be fired. No matter how awesome this Yu Ao Tian, is he still the ordinary PR department staff? While she's only an ordinary elevator service lady from service department.

Whatever, if she says this out, she does not know how this arrogant man will torture her?

"Yu Lao Da, will you turn on the elevator, now?"

"Of course I can, but...you should answer one of my questions." Yu Ao Tian

bends his body little bit so that he can stand as Yao Yao's height: "You are keeping on calling me Yu Lao Da, Yu Lao Da but why this morning you call me Yu Xian Sheng (Mr. Yu)?"

Actually she has thought for long time how to address him.

"It because inside the elevator other than Long Ye, Long Qi, the Long's brothers, there are still a woman and a man, I just didn't.... want to make you in trouble."

### **Chapter 30**

### Flat Chest, Let's have lunch

Oh so was that! It seems he has underestimated this little thing that looked clueless white rabbit from her appearance, but actually she... really is one of the smartest!

"Hm." His lips curl up, Yu Ao Tian turn on the elevator power.

At the time he gets out from the elevator, he heard...

"Yu Ao Tian! Yesterday Taxi money... Thank you." the elevator door closed.

Yao Yao isn't seen Yu Ao Tian's expression at the moment elevator stopped, but expectedly she....

"Fiuh... although to say thank you to Yu Ao Tian in this way is impolite but I don't have other way." Actually she does not want to have any relation with that underworld emperor....

Finally the lunch time, can't help not to mention, Berson group lunch simply to say equal to the five stars hotel, splendid and luxurious. Even the canteen is decorated as beautiful as high class restaurant.

"Geez, first class business is really first class business, even the lunch menu they have abalone, simply to say, this company is rich." Putting the food at plate, Yao Yao is praising every available dish, while she is choosing her favorite foods.

"Yao Yao! Yao Yao!"

She turned her back when she heard Bai Ling called her, politely she smiles at her.

"Yao Yao, a matter that happen in the morning, you don't need to think about it."

The matter that happen this morning? What Bai Ling meant... "Oh, nothing."

"Still say nothing? That witch has scolded you that loud, even the employees who were outside her office room could hear her."

Just don't know why, every time she meet Bai Ling she always remember her high school best friend, Xiao Man, perhaps because of their friendly nature so that people like to get closer with them.

"I really feel okay. Bai Ling, thank you for your concern."

"Really okay? You just don't knew, that witch..." Bai Ling mysteriously looked at right and left, to ensure there is no familiar face of her colleagues, whispered: "She has forced many beautiful girl to resign the elevator lady job."

"Ah? Why did she force the elevator lady to resign?"

"Aiyo, it all because she jealous with that position."

"Are you sure? But she is manager ah, her position is higher, why should she feel jealous with the lower position such as elevator lady job?"

"He He, don't you know the reason?" They chat whilst look surrounded, they take the seat near the window: "When you came to Berson group for having interview, didn't you realized the countless number of ladies who apply for the job as elevator lady?"

This, she really didn't pay attention, but... "Aren't that because of the benefit that given to the elevator lady?"

"What! Perhaps it's only you who thought that way, we as the Berson group employees who work with hundred others employees, the only position which make us able to meet the high executives, talking to them, build connection. That's why in this company is ours job as the elevator lady from service department that the only position can do it.

No wonder Manager Zhang said that she wanted to be phoenix, fly to higher sky so that she applied for the elevator lady job. Does everyone also think her in that way too? It's frustrating. Yao Yao lower her head, scoop a spoon of white rice.

"Oh yeah, Yao Yao, tell me, have you met our Berson Group CEO for this passed days?"

"Hah..." every time this topic being brought, she always shows blank expression: "I, I don't pay attention."

"Oh my, how can! How can this good position given to you ah, My heaven." Bai Ling really wanted to cry out of her bitterness. "Just as rumor said, our Berson Group CEO is the most handsome good looking pretty man, the high quality ones ah and then, we also have our Vice CEO, also the high level manager, all of them are the most handsome men to death. Even though only see as eye-candy it also good ah."

After she heard what Bai Ling said....suddenly she put down her chopstick, Yao Yao asked curiously: "Bai Ling, you are one of the senior employee in here, haven't you ever seen our CEO in company?"

"It you bring out this topic, I have little bit frustrated. Just alike us who is lower floor employees, it harder to meet CEO in person rather than measure the sky, also our CEO, vice CEO are low-profile people, even the organizational structure and planning department in our company not have their photos. So that I have mentioned to you about the prestige being elevator lady "position" in this company, you should treasure it, really must." Talking about this, Bai Ling's eyes suddenly looked at the others table. She sees those white collar workers who wear beautiful dresses and high heels.

Yao Yao can feel that, Bai Ling has little bit envious glance to them, actually she personally also think in that way, under the big sky the most beautiful and also sexy ladies are those who work as white-collar, wear beautiful dress and high heels when coming for work, however as good as, just wait until she graduated from her university she will join them, work as career woman.

"Excuse me, does anyone sit in here?" two young men who wear formal and tidy suit interrupt both of Bai Ling and Yao Yao's thought.

Yao Yao and Bai Ling exchanged their looked, smile sweetly then nodding, that two young men strive to sit at Yao Yao's side. Finally one of them only can sit backward Bai Ling.

"Are you come from the service department?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Is you who name Yao Yao?"

Listened to endless questions of which asked by the two men, Yao Yao awkwardly signaling her cold eyes to Bai Ling...

"Bai Ling, have you done with your lunch? Let's we go."

"Wait Yao Yao." Bai Ling showed her excitement to the man who sat beside Yao Yao that looked quite handsome: "I remember you seem to be someone who come from marketing department, aren't you?"

"Yes. I am. Do you know me?"

"I have heard people mentioned about you. Can you give me your number?"

That man clearly showed his helpless expression, but because he wants to show his politeness, he gives her his name card to Bai Ling, also by taking this opportunity to give his name card to Yao Yao too: "My name is Li Wen Feng, can I address you as Yao Yao?"

"Of course you can't!" without waiting for Yao Yao to reply, suddenly Long Qi loud voice has cut the conversation, he has stood behind her.

"Manager Long?" they are trying to get girl, so there is nothing to do with Long manager who is security department staff.

Long Qi put his hand out from his pocket and then faster to grab the name card from Yao Yao's hand, read...

"Aiyoo, so are you the marketing department staff? It seems that you guys have good work in marketing department? You are even dares to picking chick during the lunch time, do you need me to talk with your department manager, adding little bit your work so you guys won't be bored?"

Everyone in this company knows very well about this Long Qi "fire" temperamental, even they are not afraid with the security manager, but still they should give his big brother face. "I have done with my meal." Both of the men are together leaving the place.

When seeing everyone is looking at their dining table, Yao Yao little face suddenly blushed because embarrassed, so she immediately leaving.

Before she able to do so, suddenly Long Qi who stands beside her: "Flat chest, accompany me eat!"

"......" Flat chest? Why this Long Qi should address her so loud? Seeing those eyes sight that focus on her, she really wants to find big hole, jump in and bury herself.

Long Qi walked toward the food section, when he reached the nearest trash bin, he glanced at that Li Wen Feng's name card: "You even dare to pick Ao Tian's girl? Simply to say his death is settled!" he torn the name card into two pieces...

"Bai Ling, hurry we leave."

"Ah? But that manager Long, didn't he ask us to...."

"Hurry!" when Yao Yao sees Long Qi choosing the food, she hurried pulling Bai Ling go with her....

7	1
5	Ш

Ah~ finally the Ex showed up.

I don't really like Feng Cheng Yi, from two years ago or the present two years...

So, another "beast" is showed up. A man that hurt Yao Yao deeply from two years ago, here he comes back. He isn't begging for forgiveness but to taunt her, perhaps...

# **Chapter 31**

### Meeting Ex-Boy friend after 2 years

"Yao Yao, do you and that Manager Long...."

"No!" no matter what Bai Ling intending to say, she hurried cut her: "I just ever met him one time."

"Ah? Are you sure you only met him one times? But he obliviously showed that he really cared about Li Wen Feng and others who stroke up the conversation with you. Ha, from my point of view, I can say that manager Long may interested with you."

Oh My Heaven! Does Bai Ling really loves to dream? "Nothing like that, I really meet him one time, that's all."

"Oh, so that's all. Fine, Yao Yao, his surname Long, and also manager... doesn't he someone who named as Long Qi?"

"Yes. Why?"

"Oh my goodness, really was he? Yao Yao, you really lucky, he is the youngest manager in our company, he also one of the most promising manager, moreover he also included as the most handsome men in our company list, seeing from both of your age and appearance, both of you are match each other. You should consider about him."

Whatever, she surrendered, no matter how she explained to Bai Ling, thing would be blacken....

"I go to my post."

"En, Bye Bye, Yao Yao."

\*\*

A luxurious limousine stopped at the Berson group's entrance, outside this car there are four or five people standing and waiting in front the door, waiting for the important person appeared. When the car's door opened, a slender man with good looking charm and wearing grey suit gets down from the car, in his left ear there is diamond earring shine brightly because illuminating by the sun light.

"General Manager Feng, please." one of the employee is greeting him with alluring smile.

That man pulled his suit, bring his own subordinate to walk inside Berson Group's lobby...

"Eh... who is that... man?" The on duty receptionist asked in reception table, she looked at that good looking man at glanced, stare blankly: "Vey elegant, so handsome! Simply to say he just as good looking as our Berson's CEO. Actually who is he, this important person? Since our PR department manager is privately welcoming him?"

"As what I know, he should be the second young master from Feng group, he is the General Manager of the Feng Group and also one of the heirs of Feng group."

"Fucking Damn, the generation of rich and handsome."

"That's right, he is someone who well-born rich young master, so that, you don't need to think about him."

Being poured cold water by her own colleagues, the unsatisfied receptionist said: "Why?"

"It seems you are lacking with the newest news, all the women beside him are equally fine women with our CEO Yu, furthermore his style and our CEO Yu almost similar, all the women are sexy and extraordinary beautiful, if you can get him so that it easy for you to settle our CEO."

After the on duty receptionist heard it, she suddenly felt hopeless: "just let it go... just seeing him as eye-candy ah."

"General Manager Feng, our General Manager is waiting you at his office, please use this elevator." The PR department manager said, he lead the way to Feng Chen Yi to the "high level top management executives" elevator.

Feng Chen Yi cold eyes gleaming: "Why doesn't General Manager Long that

privately welcomed me?"

"Uh...this." This PR manager has made lot of work and preparation in order to welcome Feng Chen Yi, but after he meets the real person, he still being intimidating by his aura.

"General Manager...General Manager Feng. Ha Ha, General Manager Long still busy with his work, so that...."

"Busy? So that he asked the people from your department to welcome me?" He said with domineering aura, smiling and lower his head: "Lisa, cancel today meeting."

"Yes."

Once the PR department manager heard his word, suddenly the cold sweats streaming down to his body: "General Manager Feng, please don't be angry."

No matter how the PR department manager made explanations, Feng Chen Yi seems not care, at the time he wanted to turn his back, leaving, the elevator door opened....

He suddenly stopped at this moment!

Luo Yao Yao? He has come back to country! His frozen eyes suddenly melting, the memories of past is gradually filled in his thoughts.

"General Manager Feng..."

Raised his hand, he stopped and said to the PR department manager: "Now I have changed my mind." His lips curled up with cold laugh, he brought his own subordinate inside the elevator....

This voice? The person who just entered the elevator?

Once Yao Yao turned her head she sees Feng Chen Yi get into the elevator, her heart suddenly thumping hard.

Is he? Really is he? "Thump" "Thump" her heart beating so fast, she does not want to see! Yao Yao don't look at back, she really tries hard to manage her mood, but still she can't control herself to look at him...

When she sees that familiar face with cold eyes suddenly at that moment...

```
"Chen Yi, I love you so much"
"Foolish Yao Yao."
"Chen Yu, wait until my 18 birthday, I will give you a present."
"You birthday but giving me a present? You are still that dummy!"
"En... chen Yi, use your strength...Chen Yi, I have reached."
"Minako, you really can show me."
```

"I hate you."

All those memories whether the good ones and bad ones are flashing in her eyes...

Long time ago, he was someone she loved the most, but also at the same time he is someone she hated the most, before, she thought she would be able to spend her life together with this man but what she got only the endless pain from him, before she thought he has left, he has gone, then she would not think about him anymore, won't love him anymore. But....

After two years, this man who ever hurt her deeply suddenly showed up, at the moment, her heart still hurts so much, suddenly her eyes moist and redden, what does this mean?

"52th floor, thank you." the PR department manager said, but Yao Yao could not move: "Hey, I am talking with you, 52th floor."

"Ah? I am sorry, I am sorry." She regained to herself, hurried pressed the button to 52th floor.

Feng Chen Yi who stands at her behind helplessly shook his head, it has been two years, this little girl is still muddle head? He really does not know how to deal with her. His stern face gradually hint a smile, his deep eyes rolled....

"Lisa, what perfume brand do you use today, smell good."

"Ah?" his secretary dumbfounded, her beautiful face suddenly blushed: "It is COCO Xiao jie. General Manager Feng."

"Next time you may try Little Daisy perfume, I think it suit you better."

"Glared" ineffable Yao Yao's body trembling...

```
Little Daisy?

"Yao Yao, this for you."

"Perfume?"

"Yes, you can't buy it in market, this is specially I ordered for you."

"What kind of fragrances is it?"

"This is Little Daisy fragrance, the only fragrance that belongs to you."
```

Before, when she received that perfume which only belongs to herself as her fragrance she extremely happy, very happy, but at the time they broke up, she still thought that Little Daisy fragrance stills her own-fragrance. But now, it seems...she wronged. Perhaps she has weight herself too much, the reality this man loves to use this kind of scheme to get any girl, to anyone, and he really can.

### **Chapter 32**

### The Pain

"Okay General Manager Feng, later I will change mine."

"Ha ha, Lisa, do you have time tonight? How about if we have dinner tonight."

"Ah? I have! I have time." Lisa has waited this moment for such long time, she has expected to have further relationship with Chen Feng Yi other than the working-relationship.

Who knows...

"Childish!" Yao Yao who stands backed them cannot stay still anymore, she has witness one by one the women that being dumped by Feng Chen Yi after he bored playing with them, she thought to meet the two years later of him, who has mature but who knows that his character hasn't changed much. This is called it is easier to change mountains and rivers than alter one's character (Idiom: The leopard cannot change its spot).

"Uh, what...she said?" Lisa face sterner, later she looked at Feng Chen Yi who smiles satisfied.

Yao Yao frowned and turned to look: "Of course I talked about the rotten egg rotten bastard who is standing beside you!"

"Hey, how can you say our General Manager such thing?"

"The service department staff, do you know who is he? Do you want to be fired?" only by Yao Yao single word everyone is pointing finger to her.

During the normal time, she won't say much thing, but because she sees Feng Chen Yi, she cannot control herself and also her mood.

If she being fired then it fine, even she gets another scold from manager Zhang it also well-do. Feng Chen Yi who is maintaining his calmness and also his cold

eyes with his devious smile, no wonder Yao Yao pissed off by clenched her hands that exposed her veins.

This moment, finally Feng Chen Yi responded: "Miss, are we know each other?"

Her face rigid, the oxygen suddenly empty in her heart, Feng...Feng Chen Yi this rotten bastard, what he intended to say? Just now, she thought because of Feng Chen Yi was busy to talk with others so that he was forgot to greet her, so that he unwilling to acknowledge her? Does he feel such shame to acknowledge her as his Ex-girl friend?

Her heart is pain so much, this kind of situation just brought back the two years ago pain, she never knew how their relationship broke up affecting Feng Chen Yu but she certainly knew how hurt and ache her during that time.

Later after two years, she never knew how bad would be her emotion get influence after meeting him again, but now... she surely knows her emotion stirred up.

"The elevator girl, hurried apologize to General Manager Feng, or else I will inform your manager and ask the manager to fire you!" the PR department manager step forward in front, shouting at Yao Yao.

But she does not show the intention to do so, Feng Chen Yi is the rotten bastard that likes to play with women, so that, why should she apologize him, she won't!

"Apologize! Understood?"

"Let it off, I don't need apologized, but... the staffs in Berson group really have such "high" inner-self." After he said, the elevator has stopped at 52th floor, Feng Chen Yi does not look at her even a glanced then he walked out from the elevator.

"General Manager Feng, just now the elevator lady is special case, later I will talk with her manager to fire her." after they get out from the elevator, the PR manager keeps on aphorizing.

Feng Chen Yi stopped his step: "I thought you have mistaken my meaning."

"Ah? Mistaken?"

Coldly he smiles, squinted his dark deep eyes, sternly said: "The staff that I mean was you! In front of the client you dare to shout and yell at your subordinate, if really can, later I will have good talk with General Manager Long to change the position of PR department manager."

"Ah? General manager Feng! General Manager Feng. I am so sorry, sorry, later on I will put more attention, please don't say anything to General Manager Long.'

No matter how the PR department manager talked and explained to Feng Chen Yi, he ignored him, leaving the PR department manager alone.

And then...

Lisa who has stood beside Chen Feng Yi for this time also thought that he pointed the impolite elevator lady as the staff who no manner, but how can suddenly he said that the PR department manager was at fault? Strange.

"General manager Feng, this can be say as the first time Berson and Feng group work together, I hope both of us will have perfect and beautiful cooperation from start to the end." After a brief negotiation, this most top China companies, Berson and Feng group are reached their agreement of the project cooperation. Long Ye even escort Feng Chen Yi, personally out from his own office.

"Ha Ha, just as I hope. No matter what, I really happy to know and work with General Manager Long, if there is an opportunity, we should have meal together, also call both CEO Yu and Vice CEO Han, both of them are two persons that I respect most."

"Certainly, certainly. Our CEO Yu also likes to talk about you, he wishes to make friend with you."

"Ha Ha, this good. So this all, I'm leaving."

"Well. See Yaa next time."

Two of them are exposed their alluring smiles, when Feng Chen Yi turned his back, the smile just disappeared replace with cold stern expression.

After being trained for two years, he has adapted with business environment and masked himself, hearing such praising words, actually it means fight between life and death. Towards strong and weak "meat" in this world, this is kind of very common communication skill.

"General Manager Feng, that is no secret that General Manager Long from Berson group is man with big smile and evil intention, are you really wanted to be friend with someone like him?" Lisa who stands beside him asked.

Feng Chen Yi cold glanced swept her: "Lisa, you has followed me for long time, didn't you understand this kind of courtesy words? But... there was one real word."

"which ones?"

"I really... want to know, to know that Yu Ao Tian!"

Two years ago, from zero capital, legally he able to acquire Berson Group, then shortly by using two years time he able to make Berson Group as one of the biggest group in China and also make it progress and develop very fast, clearly this man, Yu Ao Tian simply comes from Yakuza background, actually what scheme he used in order to position himself as businessman?

Can't avoid, Feng Chen Yi really respects Yu Ao Tian no matter as business partner or as business enemy, he really feel excited!

"Oh yeah, General Manager Feng, that... Little Daisy perfume, where can I buy it?" when Lisa asked her face blushed.

"Hah. You won't be able to buy it." because that fragrance is the most unique one in the world!

"Actually, after I think, that fragrance isn't really suitable for you!"

"Hah? So General Manager Feng, what kind of fragrance that suit me the best according to you?"

He puts one of his hand in pocket, Feng Chen Yi looked at Lisa with cold eyes: "There is no my business to think of it. And... tonight dinner, cancel it."

"Ah?" Lisa has waited so long for this momentum and opportunity, but she never thought it just an empty appointment.

"Understood, General Manager Feng."

"All of you take another elevator and wait me at the entrance."

"Yes. General Manager Feng." All of the subordinate are not really understand with Feng Chen Yi intention, but none of them dare to ask him. So that they just obediently get out from Berson Group with another elevator.....

Luo Yao Yao who is waiting inside the elevator which is sabotage by Feng Chen Yi appearance, showed his nervous expression while looking at the elevator display number screen: "How can this Berson group has such slow elevator!!"

### **Chapter 33**

# Flirting inside elevator

Yao Yao peek outside the elevator, that rotten bastard, Feng Chen Yi really standing there. Her face darken, straightforwardly she push button number 1...

"Miss, have I said that I want to go to 1st floor?"

"...." be patient, hold on...Yao Yao inhale deep, sweetly smile at Feng Chen Yi that entered the elevator: "Mr, which floor do you want to go?"

"51<sup>st</sup> floor."

"Ding" "Mr. we arrived."

"Ah, I remember wrong. It should be 50<sup>th</sup> floor."

"Mr, we arrived."

"I think I remember wrong again, it seems 49<sup>th</sup> floor."

Damn!!! Endure! "Mr, we arrived at 49<sup>th</sup> floor."

"Uh... it not 49<sup>th</sup> floor. Perhaps 48<sup>th</sup> floor."

"Mr, are you sure 48<sup>th</sup> floor? Will it be you wrongly remember again? Just to let you know, the electricity for elevator quite expensive." Yao Yao looked him with big sweet smile, but actually she is gritting her teeth and issued out "creak" voice.

"I am also not too sure which floor I heading to, you pushed the button first. Moreover, your Berson Group that so rich still afraid not effort to pay electricity bill?"

"Ha Ha, our Berson Group of course affordable to pay the electricity bill, just... I just afraid you won't get out alive from this elevator!!!" Yao Yao face gloomy,

she pushed the button with her strength, turned back facing him, she pulled his necktie: "Feng Chen Yi, what kind of scheme do you plan to do?"

"Oh, so this is how the employee of Berson Group acted toward their client?"

Pretend to be stupid! Just keep on pretending to be stupid! You are rotten bastard Feng Chen Yi. Bear! Endure...endured... slowly she let go her hand from his necktie, gently she stroke him: "Ha ha, General Manager Feng, because I don't have good quality, because I don't have good quality, so that years could like such rotten bastard like you!!!"

"Dome!" Feng Chen Yi finally lost his own control, pair of his hand enveloped her little waist, with his devious smile: "My beloved Yao Yao, I just played little joke with you, please don't be angry."

"Kidding? Little jokes? Feng Chen Yi, where have I ever sorry for you? Two years we never met, once we meet, should you act like this toward me? Do you... have sickness?" when she said her last sentence, suddenly Yao Yao eyes stung and red.

For this man who born with silver spoon in his mouth, every woman just a toy for him, but for the simple girl like her, two years ago, that first love period was her all.

Hands against front chest, the head lower, she ever promised to herself that she won't ever dropped single tear for this unworthy man who likes play other heart, but she just not understands why at this situation she cannot control her feeling and her emotions.

Silent... inside the elevator is deathly silent.

The cold good looking Feng Chen Yi suddenly showed warmness, he looked her with gentle eyes sight.

No one dares to believe two years ago he is an arrogant, playboy and domineering young master, then two years later he has changed be cold General Manager who able to show such gentleness, but only he, himself that knows very well, his warmness and gentleness only belong to whom.

Lift his head up with slightly smile, breathing, he slowly and gentle stroking and patting Yao Yao's head: "How you can still be like you used to be, as long as

teasing you then you will cry?"

"what?" at that moment she lift her head, she wiped dry her tears, pushed away him who hugging her, coldly said: "The person who never changed is you?" she back facing the elevator door: "General Manager Feng, which floor are you heading to, if you really want to play, what I have only time to play with you!"

Ha! This little demoness, he still shouldn't use the old days eyes sight to look at her. Feng Chen Yi patted Yao Yao's head, it has so difficult to act gentle toward her but she just poured cold water on him, he moved one step to front, he enveloped her whole body: "If Yao Yao really have time, how about you come to my house tonight?"

His intoxicating voice, his ambiguous flirting, simply to say she hates the way he deals with another woman and also play a same trick toward her. "Didn't you have appointment tonight with others woman?"

"Does not matter, whatever it is, you are my Ex, of course I will put you as priority." After he said, he gently brushes his face to her head.

She completely raging with anger because Feng Chen Yi is trying to flirting with her, she stood there coldly, no moving: "Oh, it's good. You shouldn't mind...if I bring my fiancé together!"

"fiancé?" paused, Feng Chen Yi cold eyes flared up, he loosen his embraced towards Yao Yao, coldly said: "Take me to 1<sup>st</sup> floor."

Ah. She secretly smiles, pushed the button to  $\mathbf{1}^{\text{st}}$  floor. Not takes much time the elevator stopped at  $\mathbf{1}^{\text{st}}$  floor.

"This is my name card. If you want to contact me, you call me."

"Okay. When the time I get married, I will make phone call."

Feng Chen Yi said nothing but his expression extremely bad when he gets out from the elevator, after the elevator door closed, he raged in anger said: "Still same, cannot lying. Damn! But still I pissed off!"

After he said, he punched the cold wall...

People passing the bustling business district, Yao Yao dressed in floral one piece dress, she is sitting in stone board while drinking milkshake, watching the crowd of people passing the street filled with skyscrapers and shopping malls: "Still own homeland is great." She has stayed four years in Japan, finally she able to admire her friendlier home country.

"Yao Yao."

"Bai Ling, you come." Of course, this date is invited by Bai Ling. She really happy can go out with this friend, window shopping, when she was in Japan she have Gong Xiao Man as friend, when she back to China she knew Bai Ling, she is lucky. But.... "Uh. Bai Ling, why..." Li Wen Feng and his friend are also coming?

"Yao Yao. Actually this time Li Wen Feng was the person asked for dating, he asked me to ask you out with us, so I... just help me this time." Bai Ling pulled Yao Yao at her side, she begged her.

Helpless, of course she understood Bai Ling intention very well. "Alright, let's we go together."

"Really? Thank you Yao Yao." Hence, initially these two girls are agreed to go out together but it turned be added two men to follow them. To be honest, Yao Yao isn't used to be shopping with stranger men.

"Ah, Bai Ling, after all, I thought that present is more suitable for my girlfriend, can you bring me to the shop? I forgot where the shop is." They have walked half an hour, suddenly Li Wen Feng's friend opened his mouth.

"En. Okay. Yao Yao, we...."

"Bai Ling, it still better only us go there, so that we can get there faster, it fine as long as Li Wen Feng accompany Luo Yao Yao."

"Alright. Yao Yao, then we are going." Bai Ling who does not suspect the intention of Li Wen Feng scheme, she left Yao Yao alone with Li Wen Feng and go with his friend.

"Uh... Bai..."

Yao Yao wanted to chase after them, but she is stopped by Li Wen Feng: "Yao Yao, they have gone far, we cannot chase after them, or, don't you want to go

with me alone?"

Absolutely she does not want.

"Ha HaHa, let we catch up with them."

#### 34

This is one of my favorite chapter because I like to see how man fight with their pride only to win girl's favor. But I should say, this Li Wen Feng is salted fish compare to Feng Chen Yi who is salmon no matter in term of look, wealthy, family background, career...

I don't really like Feng Chen Yi but I disdain Li Wen Feng more because... You can find the answer in this chapter.

Enjoy your reading

## **Chapter 34**

### She is Feng Chen Yi's woman

She is not used to be alone with Li Wen Feng, moreover this Li Wen Feng is trying to waste and dragging the time by walking such slowly. With this kind of speed, perhaps both of them won't ever can catch up with Bai Ling cs, really make people panic to death.

"Yao Yao, is it hard to be elevator lady?"

"Still okay, still okay." She gave him cold smile.

"Yao Yao ah, you are looked so young, also very beautiful, actually you don't need to be such hard to yourself, girl, as long as they are learning to... have sweet talk, able to please man, staying at home then you can be so relax counting money."

Ugh... what kind of words this supervisor Li said to her, no matter how she heard it, it sounded like twisting? She thought there is must be hidden intention, but now her heart is thinking about Bai Ling, so she forced herself to give him faint smile.

This time, suddenly Li Wen Feng stood in front of her.

"Supervisor Li, you?"

"Come, Yao Yao, come with me." Yao Yao hasn't agreed, but Li Wen Feng has pushed her into one of expensive boutique inside the mall.

"Supervisor Li, didn't we still need to find Bai Ling? Why we come here?"

"Ha ha." Li Wen Feng just laughed, say nothing but get inside to the Prada boutique, Yao Yao is forced to follow him to get inside too.

"Sales girl<sup>1]</sup>, how much this dress?"

"Mr, it has discounted price, \$2600."

"Oh it's only \$2600?" After he heard the price, Li Wen Feng showed his

exaggerated expression: "Aiya, how can Prada outfit be so cheap, although it cheap, please take this Miss to try on."

Ah?

"Supervisor Li, you...?" Yao Yao suddenly looked at him.

"Ha Ha, Yao Yao, don't worry, this dress is so cheap, just take it as gift from me. You hurry go to change and try it."

"But... Supervisor Li this is not money matter. But...."

"Yao Yao ah, I know you might think this dress is so expensive so that you want to help me to save some amount, but don't worry, this amount just small money for me."

This supervisor Li, every time he talked he always bring about money, what does he mean?

"Wait... wait supervisor Li, thank you for your good intention, I have my own dress, so there is no need to buy new ones."

"Aiya, Yao Yao, take a look, how can your dress match with Prada dresses? Better you throw it out. I just dote you, young maiden, as long as they understand to please man, then it will do, no need to be suffered."

Understood, no wonder she felt there was something amiss with this supervisor Li.

Indeed, the current her cannot afford to buy expensive and luxurious stuffs, but at least she understands very well what called as work hard-money, moreover she is not type of girl who win favor over other only to get those expensive stuffs. This Li Wen Feng indeed cheap man! It seems this time she cannot help Bai Ling anymore.

"I'm sorry, supervisor Li, I still have thing to do, so..."

"It seems that Prada outfit is in season." Not far from them, there is man's voice who is interrupted Yao Yao and Li Wen Feng conversation.

The man face is blocked by the mannequin, but Yao Yao feels this voice... is so familiar.

"This Mr, you are really have good eyes, this is our newest Prada collection."

Suddenly the man's face that blocked show up, his figure slowly get into Yao Yao's vision sight, he has dazzling diamond earring in his left ear. Humph, this Feng Chen Yi little brat, how can be so coincide she meets him in here?

"Heh." Feng Chen Yi showed his elegant smile, his slender fingers that grab one of the skirt, slowly moves in front of her: "I have feeling, this Miss aura more suitable and also match something more exclusive, but not something that....price \$2000 discount price dress." He turned: "Mr, what do you think?"

Li Wen Feng furrowed his brow clearly, because to save his face, he pretended stare blank, said: "Aiya, so that was the discount price, so how much this skirt price?" he touched that branded skirt, his frowned: "Ha Ha Ha, it's.... only \$10300."

"Sales girl, please wrap up this skirt, give it to..." his finger pointed at Yao Yao's, he smiled bitter: "This beautiful Miss."

"Yes, sir."

In order to reply Feng Chen Yu provocation, Li Wen Feng persistent to fight till end, saving his face: "Sales girl, how much this pair of shoes?"

"It is 13000, sir."

"Bring out the suitable pair for this Miss. Please wrap up the shoes." After he said, Li Wen Feng who got provoke by Feng Chen Yi looked at him with cold eyes.

But Feng Chen Yi acting as if he sees nothing, he keeps on pointing stuffs and this time he pointed at bag: "Sales girl, I also want this bag."

"Oh, Mr. you are really have good eyes. This bag is limited edition ones. It only limited to ten bags in the world. Thank you. It price \$153.000"

Feng Chen Yi smiled and clasping his hand, the person who is wearing suit and stand not far from there is Feng Chen Yi's assistant. He settled the payment in counter.

"Ah~ little brat, why do you want to fight with me?" Li Wen Feng has lost his control: "Sales girl, all these stuffs, I want all of them!"

Yao Yao sensed the matter will be gets bigger, when she wants to stop.

Suddenly Feng Chen Yi pulled her.

"Ha ha, the person who only have ordinary credit card<sup>2</sup>], even dare to settle all these stuff payment, Mr, I advice you before you settle the payment better you take a look how many zero your credit card afford to settle, afraid the limit won't enough. Don't shame yourself."

"Little brat, this you don't need to worry, I don't want to compare amount of money with you, just to let you know, this mall is belong to my uncle. There is nothing I can't have!"

"Oh? So Li Wen Bo is your uncle?" Feng Chen Yi said, helplessly he shook his head.

"Why? Are you afraid?"

"Afraid? Hah, I thought you have misunderstood something."

"What? Misunderstood?" Li Wen Feng didn't understand so he asked.

"This mall indeed own by Li Wen Bo but... at this moment this mall is already mine!" His cold eyes looked at him, "Veblen, hurry give a call to Li Wen Bo, said to him that I agreed to acquire this mall!"

"Yes, General Manager Feng."

Seeing the domineering aura and the way Feng Chen Yi talking, Li Wen Feng dumbfounded: "General Manager Feng? Are you.... you are... the second young master from Feng Group, Feng Chen Yi?"

In China, other than Berson group CEO Yu Ao Tian there is no other company that able to match the wealth of Feng group, moreover there are not many people dare to go against them, even Li Wen Feng who must try to work more than thousand year, his family wealth will never able to match his wealth, not even additional one zero.

"General...General Manager Feng, I don't wrong you, why are you go against me?"

"Do you want to know the answer?" his deep eyes looked at him, while one of his hand put inside his pocket, the other hand directly embraced Yao Yao: "Do you think, Feng Chen Yi's Ex-girl friend, what things that she never seen before? Just rely on your small money you think to get her? Idiot!"

"She... is she your Ex-girl friend?" this time Li Wen Feng absolutely turned be idiot, he thought Yao Yao is type of little girl that does not know how the outside world is, he never thought that she was Feng Chen Yi Ex-girl friend, the young master that never gave any discount present for her. He made fist of his hand, angrily walked away, leaving that place.

#### Note:

- 1] 服 Fu 務 Wu 員 Yuan: It can be mean servant, maid, attendant, etc just depend on how this word be used. In here, I translate it as salesgirl because it more proper and fit the sentences.
- 2] Feng Chen Yi refer to the common credit card such as the Silver, Gold and Platinum. While the highest level credit card such as Purple and Black card which usually to show and retain their status as the credit card colours of the seriously rich and well rewarded for the holder (but again this type of credit card depend on the issued bank)

### **Chapter 35**

## The impulsive Feng Chen Yi

Toward Feng Chen Yi domineering acting, Yao Yao has got used, two years ago he also this arrogant, as long there is person who come and provoke him, he would make that person end badly. Of course, she sometimes could not withstand Feng Chen Yi brassy attitude, but today....

Still need to say that, Feng Chen Yi has won beautifully. She does not want to know his purpose of doing this kind of thing, but one thing she believes that Li Wen Feng will never dare to come near her anymore. "Feng..."

"My beloved Yao Yao, don't say to me that man was your fiancé, I would pity your degrading taste, even that kind of man you really want?"

She thought that impulsive Feng Chen Yi would be angry after he said this: "Yes, I admitted that my eyes not too good, or else why could I fall for you two years ago?"

He smiled coldly: "Are you comparing that man with me?"

"So what? Is it strange? Do you think there will be another cheap and low man that can be comparing with you?"

"Luo Yao Yao!" Feng Chen Yi raised his hand and shook her shoulder, deathly grabbed her.

"Hah, General Manager Feng, don't be angry. I just told you the truth. But I am not intended to lie to you, just now, that person was not my fiancé."

Of course he knew it that man was not her fiancé, but the problem is.... "So he was not your fiancé, so why are you coming with him alone?" he rolled his eyes, but at same time there is no smile in his face: "Don't tell me that your fiancé has left you? Does not matter, Yao Yao, no matter what you are still my Ex-girlfriend, I will always welcome you."

What does this Feng Chen Yi mean? Is he thinks she is trash?

"Ha! Ha! Sorry to let you know, I have super good relationship with my fiancé, the most important is, I willing to go out with anyone I like and also it is my freedom, you are only my past! My Ex-boyfriend! That's all, none your business!"

"Luo Yao Yao, you!"

"General Manager Feng, congratulation to you, finally you acquire another company, but,,, believe me that I won't ever come to step my feet to this place for the rest of my life because I will feel disgusting! Good bye!" she turned her back, Yao Yao is leaving.

Feng Chen Yi is pissed off to the point his expression changed to...

"Damn!" he got out from that place.

Some of his assistants hurried to follow his step: "Feng... General Manager Feng."

"Scram!"

\*\*

"Rotten Bastard! Rotten Bastard! Feng Chen Yi is simply to say the most rotten bastard in this world, I shouldn't moved by him, the best is I must not meet him anymore!"

That thing has passed for two years, when the next Monday come and go for work, Yao Yao is still angry. It was so obvious when she wanted to thank him but he even.... Suddenly said that kind of word. Why others who broke up still can be friend but why they just cannot be friend after broke up even they turned to be foe? This is so troublesome!

"Yao Yao, last Sunday why was you left so early?"

Uh, it bad! "I am so sorry, Bai Ling, last Sunday I.... felt unwell so that I left early, did you have fun?" All because of Feng Chen Yi, if not because he angered her and made her muddle-headed, how could she forgot to notice Bai Ling?

"Still okay. But I didn't know why Li Wen Feng suddenly left. Hm, I sensed that he does not like me."

Actually good and nice girl like Bai Ling is not suitable with that rotten cheap man like Li Wen Feng, they just don't match: "It does not matter, Bai Ling, fate this kind of thing can't be forced, you should reconsider, consider others."

"Ah whatever, later we continue, I should go to work first."

"Okay, I also should go to work." Just done changing her uniform, Yao Yao walked out from the locker room...

"Luo Yao Yao, you go to my office." She met Manager Zhang.

When she arrived at manager Zhang office room, manager Zhang throws a letter to her face.

"Resignation letter?"

"Luo Yao Yao, I know you are so awesome, you have important person who support on you. But, this Friday you had done two mistakes during your work time as elevator lady, moreover you have offended and humiliated the second young master of Feng group, I think this matter is more than enough to kick you out."

Important people as backbones? Who will be the person?

"Yes, Manager Zhang, last Friday it was my fault, please you give me another chance."

"Hah? Another chance? How many chances should I have to give you? Luo Yao Yao, suddenly I realized that you are not coming for work but your real intention is trying to seduce men. So that, I advised you, perhaps you and... better you go to apply job as slut."

How can this manager Zhang spoke so dirty? Fine, since she said this way...

"Manager Zhang, please be so careful when using your words, or else I will sue you because humiliate other people!"

"Hah?"

Manager Zhang dumbfounded, but without wait her to responded, Yao Yao continued: "If you really want to fire me, I also don't want to say anything. But, the work contract clearly stated that, during my training period, if there isn't any big mistake that I have done, you don't have right to fire me!"

Manager Zhang coldly smiled: "Hah, are you talking about training period? All is up to me who said!"

"What? It just your thought one-sided." Yao Yao also smile coldly: "According to labor law article 7 point 187, the employee in probation period can take advantage to get payment of their wages and it must meet the standard payment of the minimum wage requirement. So you must pay my wages."

Looking at Yao Yao who showed professional career woman aura, who seems to be familiarizing with the law, again manager Zhang looked alike dummy, what exactly this little girl is? How can she be so familiarized with laws? It she knew, she should take look her CV before offended her.

"It does not matter. Does it because money? Berson Group affords to pay you. You can leave now."

\*\*

"CEO Yu, good morning!"

"CEO Yu, good morning."

Ten o'clock sharp, Yu Ao Tian and the others five people get into the elevator. Every time at this time, both of on duty receptionist always smile brightly: "Aiya, this is the most beautiful 10 o'clock. CEO Yu is good, Vice CEO Han also good, even the General Manager Long and Manager Long with the secretary are too good, they are group of good looking men and beautiful woman, every time seeing them, I filled with good vibe energy."

"See. Yourself, your love sickness disease."

"Cih, you still dare to say me? Just now you are drooling."

Basically this is how they said, but those people who have ever seen the top management executives, no one dares to deny that they indeed good looking, of course their face match their skill.

"Long Ye, how the negotiation went on last Friday with Feng Chen Yi?" during waiting for the elevator, Yu Ao Tian asked about last Friday negotiation.

"Very success. But as rumor spread about that little brat, he is much stronger. Ao Tian, are you really sure to pull him to your side? Be careful, don't lure the

wolf inside our place." This Long Ye is counted as commander chief of Berson Group, his easy going personality image and his smart brain are the one of the most valuable things of Berson Group blueprint success. When he met Feng Chen Yi last time, he knew and realized that Feng Chen Yi is different to the other business people that he ever met before. He is not someone easy to deal with.

### **Chapter 36**

## You, Flat Chest!

"Ha, the stronger is the business partner later on they will be the stronger enemy in the future, but it will be more interesting." It so obvious, during the negotiation between Long Ye and Feng Chen Yi, Yu Ao Tian is the person who has the most expectation for this "business agreement".

"Hah, Ao Tian, I really lost to do with you, your interest always forever such... unique!" he has tendency to "raised" his strong enemy to be stronger, and then he will "settle" them. Facing such person, all of them really lost to do with Yu Ao Tian.

When the elevator door opened, Yu Ao Tian just wants to enter... "Where is Luo Yao Yao?"

"Ah?" at this moment, the substitute elevator lady, Bai Ling paused for moment, who is this person? Well...he is so handsome.

"Yao Yao... Yao Yao... she just fired by our manager, is, is there any problems?"

Long Ye who stands beside Yu Ao Tian sensed something wrong with his expression, hurried he mediate the situation: "Oh, nothing. Sorry to disturb your job. We seem to use wrong elevator."

Woah, who is that man, he is so gentle and also handsome. "Thump" "Thump", at this moment, Bai Ling heart beat more than 180. "It does not matter."

When the elevator door closed, Yu Ao Tian with his anger face looked at Long Ye: "Didn't you have a good chat with her department manager?"

"I had talked."

"So, her department manager is still dared to fire her?"

How could he, Long Ye know the reason? "Alright, I will go and kick her department manager out from here."

"Long Ye." His cold gazed swept, suddenly his dangerous and killing smile exposed, he curled up his lips: "Since when...you be so compassionate?"

Huh, he really does not know how to deal with him, no matter what the problem is, as long as he unhappy, he will always showed this kind of scary smile. People who do not know him well might thought he is not angry but the truth, the wind and storm just begin: "OK, I understood what to do."

He turned to Long Qi, looked him: "You go to find that Luo Yao Yao, I will go for meeting."

"Understood!" Hurried Long Qi running to outside Berson Group, he has spotted Yao Yao not far from his place: "Hey, Flat Chest! You stay still!"

In the crowded and bustling business district, suddenly there is someone use this kind of word to address, how would you feel? Seeing that person who smiled from the bustling business district, Yao Yao face gets "Thin" and then she blushed red, faster she running.

"Damn! This flat chest dares to run." Long Qi who is dissatisfied, running to catch up with her.

Her petit body cannot win over Long Qi, less than two minutes, he has caught her. "Ah! It is so hurt! Hurt! You let me go!" her black pony tail hair is grabbed by Long Qi.

He only used his strength little bit but Yao Yao has already fall down to his embraces: "Humph, are you still dare to compete running with me? I asked you, why you run while you have heard I called you?"

She enduring her pain because he grabbed her hair, she pissed off and glared at Long Qi: "Nonsense, this is in crowded and bustling street, why did you call me flat chest?"

"Oh, so that's the problem." He loosen up, he smiled and opened the door: "It because you really have flat chest, are you afraid people know?"

"Don't! Don't said it anymore? Do you have something with me?" she hardens

her heart to find one big hole and then she wants to bury herself.

"Humph, I asked you, last Friday when I asked you to have meal with me, why you run away?"

Oh so that because last Friday matter, why he still remember? "I... I.."

"You cannot explain right? Follow me now."

"Why?"

Seeing how Yao Yao used all her strength to him push away, normally Long Qi who well-known for his hot temperamental, he rolled his eyes and then carried Yao Yao on his shoulder.

"Hey, are you sick! Faster let me down!"

He ignored her, Long Qi walked faster to Berson Lobby.

"Let me go! Let me go!" Yao Yao hit and punch his body, and also her legs keep on kicking him.

Those people who see this scene are dumbfounded: "Just now... is he the security manager, Long manager?"

"It seems to be."

"And who is that little girl who is carried by him in his shoulder?"

"Whose knows, but have you seen just now, that little girl is so cute. With 19 years old manager long, both of them are match together."

"You are right."

When they arrived at service department floor, Long Qi finally released her down.

Yao Yao is anger to the point her face turned red: "What are you intending? Didn't you know this is so shameless?"

"Cih. Your small\*\*\* still afraid of shame, still afraid be ashamed?"

"You!!!" This bastard, he is too much, he always attacked her weakness. She makes a fist then she waved to his.

But Long Qi avoided. "He He, not just you have flat chest but your response

also that slow."

"You said one more time?"

"I even wanted to say hundred times, I will say it. You are flat chest!" After he said, he provoked her by making wry face and then run so fast.

Yao Yao angry and then she chase him: "You standstill!"

This two people really take the big company as their Theme park, one run and one chase along the corridor. Both of them have same age so while they age are also suitable to study at campus.

During the chasing, Long Qi opened the door and ran inside room while Yao Yao just followed him entered....

Seeing inside, suddenly Yao Yao dumbfounded, this...where is it?

Standing inside huge and gorgeous office room, Yao Yao forehead drop cold sweat droplets, she swept her glanced to look at Long Ye who sit in sofa, but at this moment, he acted as if he seen nothing about just now incident, his expression so easy going.

She gazed to further way, a beautiful man is sitting in one big office chair, it can say that he has perfect features, moreover his black pitch eyes with long lashes, that able to trap anyone. The more prominent is his gentle and also his elegant majestic aura which make people want to come near him.

This person who sits inside this office room, it seems... he is the PR department manager Long Ye, right! It is him. He looked little bit different from the first time she saw him, this time he looked mature and also little bit solemn.

"Have both of you done with all the noise?" Long Ye slowly opened his mouth.

Long Qi who sat on sofa looked innocent by shook his shoulder: "It none my business. It was her who made the noise."

"What? It obviously you were the person who insult me?"

"Hey, flat chest, you touch your heart before said, didn't you who hit me first?"

"If not because you kept on mocking me, why should I hit you?"

"Shut up!" Long Ye really cannot hear this noise anymore, he vent his anger by slammed the document in his desk.

"Did both of you think this is campus? I don't have time to coax with both of you. Long Qi if you still tease her, you scram!"

"Cih." Being scolded by his big brother, Long Qi rolled his eyes.

While Yao Yao who stands in front the door also be quiet.

#### Comment:

No matter how cruel and merciless Long Qi when doing his "underworld business", Still I hardly come to dislike him because he just too adorable when he with Yao Yao. Just like this chapter, how he likes to tease Yao Yao verbally, calling her flat chest, running and chasing, both of them really look like normal teenagers. But, who knows, they are not...

I don't mean to ship Long Qi with Yao Yao but both of them are suit to be best friend, friend that tease you, entertain you, company you, just like another Gong Xiao Man for Yao Yao.

### **37**

Where the voice of Manager Zhang haters?

In this chapter that wicked Manager Zhang showed up again but this might her last scene in this chapter. Enjoy to read what deed she sow after saying so much bad words to Yao Yao.

## **Chapter 37**

#### His real status...

"Huh..." Long Ye silently gulping his saliva, he really cannot understand Yu Ao Tian, why he seems not tired to play with this little girl? "Xiao Meng Li, come here."

Long Ye suddenly gently patting Yao Yao who shocked: "You, what do you want?"

"Ha ha, reassured, this time I don't need your "special treatment"."

Did he say the truth? But, now she isn't Berson Group's employee anymore, he does not have any reason to bully her? Yao Yao slowly walking in front of his the desk.

Long Ye make a contemplation heh, she really more look alike Xiao Meng Li. "I heard you were fired?"

"En."

"Well, would you like to join my department?"

Puff, without waiting for Yao Yao to open her mouth, Long Qi who sat on sofa silently laughed.

"Thank you for your good intention, Long Manager, but I really don't want to join your department."

"Why? Not because...." He just said half, Long Ye slowly stands up, moves closer to her in front, gently said: "Are you afraid with me, this lewd manager?"

"Uh?" Long Qi has told his brother already, Yao Yao puts a deathly glared to Long Qi.

"No, manager Long, the past shouldn't bring up again. The most important is I don't have any interest with PR department.'

"Oh, I just am joking with you." Long Ye backs to his seat, smiles and then he clasped his hand: "Coming."

"Manager Zhang?" When Yao Yao sees the person who enters the room, suddenly she stares blankly.

"Manager Zhang, the thing that you should say, I think I don't need to teach you anymore?" Long Ye eyes coldly looked at that person.

Manager Zhang hurried nodding her head, forcing herself to make smiles: "I am so sorry, Luo Yao Yao. I....I knew in the past was my fault, please you forgive me. I promise you later in the future I won't say anything unreasonable to you. I am bad! I am slut, all is my bad, please forgive me."

What is going on? She could feel that Manager Zhang seems to be scared Manager Long, but how can, aren't they managers that have same level?

"Alright, Manager Zhang you can take your leave."

"Yes... General Manager Long."

"General Manager Long?" did she hear wrong? What was manager Zhang address this Long Ye?

"Are you the General Manager of Berson Group? Aren't you the PR department manager?"

"Xiao Meng Li, that is not important whether you know or not about me, anyway, later in the future you just don't call me lewd manager, and then everything is more than fine. I am... toward you, this little girl... really don't have any interest. Well, you can keep on continuing working in Berson Group."

"Wait, but I have been fired."

"Oh, I thought I still have this power to keep your position as elevator service lady."

But...

Yao Yao eyes rolled: "How if I don't agree to come back and working?" she is not easy to get out from Yu Ao Tian's demon hands, why should she comes back and trap herself again, she is not dummy.

"Don't want to come back?" Long Ye smiled, he raised hand and prop his chin, slowly said: "So, you make a guess, will Yu Ao Tian kill you family member or not?"

"....." Does this General Manager Long is someone with big smile and evil intention? How could he speaks with this gentle manner, but able to carry such killing aura?

"He had said before, if I resigned he would kill my family member but now, I was fired, so he did not have any reason to kill my family member."

"Oh? I just realized, you Xiao Meng Li really have one great mouth (very good in talking)."

Of course, they just don't know who she is.

Let delete all things of yesterday, now you, in front of me you say that you love me, please give me chance...

"Wait, Manager Long, let me answer my phone call."

"Hah?" Before Long Ye answered, she has picked her phone call, she even dares to ignore General Manager Long who is in the middle of conversation and just received her phone call, talking right beside him.

"Hello?" the voice from the caller, Yao Yao furrowed her brows: "What? I understand, okay, I hung the phone." After she hung her phone call, suddenly Yao Yao attitudes changed: "General Manager Long, I will back to work. But, I will start from tomorrow, can I?"

"Hm? Okay."

"Okay then I takes my leave." Both of the Long's brothers haven't come to react to hers, but she has flees away, leaving both of them inside the office room.

Before her leaving, she glanced at the sign board that hanging at the door. General Manager's room, this word are read by her, This Long Ye is really General Manager, seems like she being toyed by Yu Ao Tian...

\*\*

"504. This should be the place." Inside the hospital, Yao Yao anxious pushed and closed the room's door. "Mom." She goes straight to the bed and walked toward the window.

In the bed there is someone who aged 60 or 70 old man, beside his bed there

is a woman who sit with white pale face, both of them are Yao Yao's grand father and mother.

"How's Grandpa?"

"He is stabilized now."

Fuih, that's good. Yao Yao worries and looked at her grandpa who has slept soundly, whispered: "Mom, what is grandpa sickness? Why suddenly he collapsed?"

"That's...uremia."

"Uremia?" when she was in Japan she ever took "Period of one's life" subject during her high school, Yao Yao have ever learned little bit knowledge about medical, but for this uremic symptoms she has less knowledge about it: "How could be so severe? Why don't find out it early?"

"You should know your grandpa very well, even there is something goes wrong earlier, he won't say nothing."

"But now...Mom, this, just make grandpa to have full body check up. As for the money, I will find the way."

As for Mother Luo, the most honor and proud thing in her life is Luo Yao Yao, her only daughter, from she was little kid she is someone obedient, mature compare to the others kid in her age, although sometimes she still able to make simple problems which give a sense like girl never grew up, but when she facing bigger problems she is mature compare any other girls in her age. Because of hers, Mother Luo sometimes feels so sorry for her, really sorry for this daughter. "Yao Yao, Mom has money, now you just need to focus on your own business."

"Mom, you feel reassured. Believe on your daughter capability."

"Of course I believe on you, but..."

"Mom." Yao Yao gives her faint smile, cut her mom's words.

In this moment, there isn't much Mother Luo can say, she too understands her own daughter who is so persistent and stubborn when she has already set her goal.

She has took care her grandpa for the entire afternoon, Yao Yao looked little

bit relaxed, but after she left the hospital, she showed sad expression, Mother Luo understands her daughter very well.

"Believe on me that I must have this kind of capability, but what kind of capability I have? Why should my grandpa suffers from this damn sickness, no! no! If this uremia disease not cured, it can be able to take live, no matter what, I must! I must earn money then it will do!" she understands very well her mother earning. She won't able to cure and make full body check up, this is also her reason why she agreed to continue working at Berson after she picked up the phone call...

\*\*

"Yao Yao, really happy you still my colleague. Oh yeah, manager Zhang has transferred to another place, do you know about this matter? I really wish to have one good manager to replace her position. Oh there still other things, yesterday when you were fired by manager Zhang there was extremely handsome man asked about you, said, do you have relationship with that super handsome man? Eh?"

#### My Little comment:

To say, I really dislike someone like Manager Zhang who thought herself better than others by looking down and disgraced the other party. So, I like how Long Ye deals with Manager Zhang because he just did as Yu Ao Tian asked, fired Manager Zhang just too compassion for her. In order to fit Yu Ao Tian's taste, Long Ye, he....

#### 38

I really don't know how much accused Yu Ao Tian would get from Yao Yao. She has mistaken him as Host two years ago, later after two year, she mistaken him as PR staff and now, the eat soft rice man and the underworld emperor turned be "male-escort" for wealthy women.

I can't really blame Yu Ao Tian tendency to straggle her every time she mistaken him.

This is another interesting chapter, enjoy your reading ^-^

## **Chapter 38**

### She sleeps

Early in the morning, Bai Ling has been chirping blab la bla...

But Yao Yao not really listened to her, so she just gives a faint smile, while her brain is busy to think something else.

"Yao Yao? Yao Yao, is there something bother you?"

"Hah? Bai Ling, I am so sorry, what was you said before, I didn't listen. I feel little bit tired, I go for work."

Seeing at her who soulless, Bai Ling said: "Yao Yao yesterday you were not working, but how could you looked so tired? Strange..."

For the entire afternoon when she was working, she felt little bit tired and dizzy. She even made several errors: "Can't do! Focus! Yao Yao, you should focus! But, now is still lunch break, there might no one who will take the elevator, perhaps. So that I...." more she speaks more she powerless, lacking her strength, and then she sat inside the elevator floor, and straightly goes sleep.

"En.. uh.." She in hazy state, suddenly she feels there is something moving in her body, subconsciously moves to her under body, that "thing" keeps moving.

"Hmph." Her mouth rise abruptly showing unpleasant, she exhausted opened her eyes, a hand is moving toward her breast, and then... "Uh..." her eyes widen and bow her head, her clothes has been turned up, that pair of hands absolutely unrestrained has covered the top. And at the same time, she can feel that there is someone at her back who embrace her.

She turned her head to look...

"Yu... Yu Lao Da?" so that person is him! She is trying hard to break apart that person nasty hand from her.

But whatever she does that won't make Yu Ao Tian to stop, moreover his dexterous fingers are moving unstoppable, shocked her until her face beet red:

"Bao Bei, you really sleep so soundly."

"Uh... hah..." her small face blushed, simply to say she really hate this man to death, why he always does something abnormal to hers but at same time she always feel her heart beat faster and flustered?

"Yu! Yu Ao Tian, what are you doing? Let me go!"

"Hah? You really heartless little thing, it should be me who asked you what were you doing?"

Finally he stopped to tease her, she feels little bit relieved, at next seconds, her body is turned around by the man, so that her position now is sitting at the man arms, as if little girl hugs by their parent.

This position is really embarrassing.

At the moment Yao Yao wanted to pull down her clothes to cover her body, suddenly Yu Ao Tian pair of hands has firmly pressed down her body.

"You are really dares to sleep such soundly in this kind of public place, your clothes being turned up and you still don't know, or you are really on purpose to seduce others to commit crime on you?"

"Others than you, there won't be another people dare to do!"

"Oh? So according to what you said, this means you are trying to seduce me? Aiya, if that's so, you tell me how should I dote on you?" Yu Ao Tian showed sadistic smiled, lower his head and he forced a kiss to her lips.

"Uh..." unable to restrain her emotions, she moans little bit with lips sealed by his lips. Yao Yao feels extremely shy so she closed her eyes, she frowned: "Don't... don't be like this. Don't...."

His tongue has pry inside, that face gradually turned similar to the fresh red flowers in bloom.

Toward Yao Yao's body reactions, Yu Ao Tian always so satisfied every time he touched her, he stretching his hands, caress her back, moved to her white smooth skin, his movement is provoking her.

"En, ah..." Being provoked by this pair of hands, her body unstoppable to "bloom", but this is also one of the greatest humiliations toward herself. Yao Yao is trying to push that man by moving her head: "I... uh.. ah..."

The man's teeth nibble to next part on hers, it little bit hurt but also itchy feeling which makes her sadder.

"Bao Bei, you breathe is amazing."

Her undulate chest, it more than enough to prove her high sensitivity of her body. She does not dare to see that man's burning eyes, so that she lower her head, trying hard to make her breathing stabilized: "Enough, stop!"

"But your body... seems does not want to stop. Don't believe, you can touch by yourself." Yu Ao Tian takes her hand to touch herself.

"Uh." She understands very well that her body really disappointed her, and the most she afraid of...

"Aiya, Bao Bei, so that even you touch yourself you still able to grasp the "feel", your body really have such \*\*\*\* that's too scary."

"Enough, don't say anymore! I just felt asleep!" She didn't know why she suddenly burst out that words. But more unexpected....

Yu Ao Tian tied her bra, pulled together her clothes.

Initially she is more than fright but suddenly her eyes changed and glowed as if there is something magical thing happen, she slowly stands up, silent and stared blankly. Looking Yu Ao Tian, does he really go?

"What is going on?" Yao Yao stunned, as if everything that happen just now was dream because she still half awake when he went out from the elevator.

"Yao Yao!" at this moment, suddenly Bai Ling opened the elevator door.

"What happen, Bai Ling?"

"Are you okay?"

"I... am fine." What is really going on, she just taking nap for while but she seemed to missed lot of things that happen before?

"Aiyo, didn't you know, just now when you were sleeping inside the elevator,

there were two men, didn't know which department they came from, they were molested you. At beginning I wanted to help, but suddenly that super handsome man appeared and scared both men to scram. After that, the super handsome man asked me to get out first. Did he tell you this matter? You really should thank him. If not because of him, I really don't know what would happen to you."

If not because Bai Ling said this to her, she really does not know, perhaps in her entire life she might never knew there was something happen, no wonder when she told Yu Ao Tian she just felt asleep inside the elevator, Yu Ao Tian just left. Did he hint her to be more careful when sleeping in public area? But...

But still he didn't need to warn her in that way, if he didn't act that way, perhaps she really need to thank him. But now...

"Yao Yao, tell me the truth what is your relationship with that super handsome man?"

"Me, actually I not really familiar with him, I just know he is one from the PR department."

"Oh, no wonder he really handsome. Yao Yao, I think you better make distance with him little bit... just as rumor said...." Bai Ling looked right and left with serious glanced, whispered: "They said that most of the male colleague in PR department actually are "pet" by wealthy women, all that men are extremely good looking, they wear branded, as estimated those are given by the wealthy women."

This, does this really true? After all, he is Yu Ao Tian, the Japan underworld emperor who has "Mafia" background, how can he being "pet" by wealthy woman? Cih... but still, after all he is still underworld emperor but how can he runs into here and work as PR staff? She never thought about this matter before.

"Yao Yao, I back to my post."

"Oh, Bye." After seeing Bai Ling left, being shocked by Yu Ao Tian, finally Yao Yao gets back to her sense, she works with full consciousness for the entire day.

The work off time is approached, a woman is entering the elevator, when both of them are meet face to face...

#### Note:

I used the word "pet" to translate Chinese character 養 yang which literally means support, raise, grow, keep, maintain, etc. My reason not to use word "escort" or "courtesan" because I feel "pet" more suitable to describe the situation. Just like how I love my crystal, I "pet" her well. OMO, I almost get out of topic,

# **39**

The darker part of this novel is coming.

## **Chapter 39**

### Night club

"Xia Ru?" she met her high school classmate, world is really small. But Yao Yao didn't feel excited meeting this classmate, on contrary she wanted to make distance. "HaHa Ha, how can you be here?"

"Oh, I have friend who work in Berson, I come here to find him. Oh yeah." This woman is looking at Yao Yao from head to toe: "You, are you working as elevator lady in Berson?"

"Yes."

"Are you sure? How can you be such dire after dumped by Feng Chen Yi? You even do such low class job?"

She has knew that meeting Xia Ru there would not something good at all, actually the high school she entered before in Japan, there were lot of Chinese exchange students, but most of them were not come from an ordinary background but they were Chaebol (second rich generation), while Xia Ru is also one of those rich babies.

Actually those chaebol not really wanted to be friend with her who is extremely poor, but except Gong Xiao Man. Moreover when she dated Feng Chen Yi, those chaebols were insist to speak with her, trying be friend but when she broke with Feng Chen Yi, all of them were left her alone, included this Xia Ru.

"HaHa," She beats around the bush replied with fake smile, suddenly turned the topic: "Xia Ru, which floor are you heading?"

"42th floor."

42th floor is the service Department, Yao Yao did not think too much, she straightly pressed the button.

"Oh yeah, Yao Yao, this Saturday is my birthday party. There will some of our classmate come and gather, how about you also come to join."

"I can't. I have thing to do, cannot go." Even she goes there, still something no good would happen later.

"Oh? Really won't come? But I have invited Gong Xiao Man from Japan, do you really...not want to see your best friend?"

Gong Xiao Man? Will Gong Xiao Man really comes from Japan?

After she graduated from high school, Gong Xiao Man who has Japanese nationality so naturally she remain in Japan, while she went back to China, because she is always busy, both of them never have time to have good chat. Just to know, the best friend of Yao Yao in this life time is only Xiao Man.

They cried, laughed, crazy, being noisy, even played to Host Bar together, to recall all of those things, it was really one of best memories she had.

"Thank You Xia Ru, if I have time I will go."

"Oh, alright. This is the invitation card. I give you." Xia Ru gave the invitation card to Yao Yao before she left the elevator. During the time when the elevator door closed, she exposed her vicious smiled...

\*\*

Night time, the biggest night club in China "Tian Shang Ren Jian/Heaven in Earth" is bustling and lively place. In dance floor, the women dance, in big hall, the guests are playing crazily, but the middle place is covered quite strange atmosphere.

"Fuck, where is Xiao Lei? Lao Zi (means I ,used arrogantly or your father used when angry for men)!" a man shouted, his clothes exposure his tattoos skin.

That Ma Ma (procurer) who called by him has cold sweat, said: "Young Master Zong, today Xiao lei feels unwell so she didn't come, how about, you have little bit drink, I will make a phone call to Xiao Lei, asked her to come immediately, will this do?"

"Humph, go!"

"Okay, okay. Xiao Luo, hurried get one bottle XO for Young Master Zong." After said, the Ma Ma, went to the hall and clasped her hand asked one of the employee.

"Oh." The employee who wears employee dress is Yao Yao who comes out by bringing one bottle of XO.

This is her second job that she got yesterday, work as employee in night club. Even she knew very well how complicated this place is, but still she does not have option, in order to get the medical fees for curing her grandpa, the best salary she could get is working at this night club. So that, in the morning when she working she feels sleepy.

"Aiyoo, little sister are you newbie?" Young Master Zong asked when he saw Yao Yao appearance, his pair of eyes flashed lechers sight.

"Yes sir."

"Come. Come to accompany big brother to drink." After said, that lewd Young Master Zong grabbed Yao Yao's little wrist.

She scared, trying to free herself: "I am sorry sir, I can't drink." She turned her body, but at the time she wanted to leave.

"Stay still!" that Young Master Zong grabbed her wrist not let her go. "Little sister, big brother inviting you to have drink, if you don't drink, you really are not giving big brother face. If big brother lost face, I will not happy then."

"Client... client, I am only employee, not "Princess<sup>1</sup>]"." See the situation, Yao anxious and drop cold sweat.

"You fuck, so what if you are employee? Now I asked you to accompany me to have drink, you drink, must drink!"

Her first time to meet someone who has domineering and scary aura was Yu Ao Tian the underworld emperor that she can't anger and now this man seems to emitting that scary aura too, but this man is more harsh and rough compare to Yu Ao Tian, if she wants to make comparable then this person alike that Li Wen Feng while Yu Ao Tian more alike Feng Chen Yi. That is kind of huge comparison.

Sometimes there are people who speak louder but not powerful, on contrary the person like Yu Ao Tian, the low-key person is more dangerous.

Immediately she knows that man who in front of her is only "paper tiger" 2,

Yao Yao still can't act reckless. "Client, if I drink this glass, will you let me go?"

"See your performances." Young Master Zong opened one bottle XO, pour into the glass.

"Drink all, you go, if not finish drink it, you cannot go tonight."

She furrowed her brow, biting her lips, lift the glass, gulping the wine.

"Huhhhh, see this little sister is actually can drink."

She used her utmost effort to gulp all the XO to her stomach, Yao Yao just feel that her stomach uncomfortable and she feels little bit dizzy: "I, I have drunk all, can, can I go now?"

She just moved two steps, that man grabbed her neck, forcing her into his embrace: "Huh, little sister, since you are able to drink, stay here and accompany me."

"Let me go, you, let me go!" Yao Yao feels dizzy, her body weaken even to move it takes effort and hard.

"Aiyo, this little sisterm you are looked alike little chili. But I really like. Ha ha Ha." Young Master Zong laughing while trying to force kissing her but...

"No!" in her panicking she grabbed the XO bottle and smashed it to his...

"Young Master Zong?"

Paused for moment, the man head is bleeding, the music suddenly stopped, everyone is looking at her direction, the bleeding man with panic girl.

"You damn fuck! You little bitches!" that man touched his forehead, his glared at her, he is so furious and slapped her. But he still pissed off, he gave her another slap again.

"Ouch!" Yao Yao just felt there is blood in her corner mouth and the hot sensation in her cheek.

"You bitches, give you face but don't want face, alright, today I will rape you in front of these people and let others also "playing" with you!" After he said, the Young Master Zong raise his hand.

Both of her hands have pressed down, the weaken Yao Yao is trying to stand

up from sofa.

"No... help me, you, let me go." She tried to refused but she weaken, she didn't have more energy, she didn't know whether the influence of the XO or because got two slaps. In this splendid glamour world, this petit figure looked so lonely and helpless, but the only goal and purpose of little girl is only to earn medical fees for her beloved grandpa...

#### Note

- 1] princess another name of prostitute that working in that night club.
- 2] paper tiger = not harmless scoundrel.

### 40

Less than ten chapters we are catching up with the Manhwa. To be honest, I am not really like the Manhwa picture and also, the Manhwa is little bit differences with the novel. As for me, there are some characters that not fit my imagination and also the novel description so, if you check my character details, I have made little substitute pict.

## **Chapter 40**

### Let's we play this game

"What are you guys looking? Hurried strip her!"

"Yes!"

Once the man commanded his men, two of his men who are holding Yao Yao's hand are trying to undress her. Under this circumstance there is no one dares trying to stop, but all of them are waiting for the show. It seems that she would hardly to escape today!

"Little Zong."

At this moment when she is hanging between life and death, suddenly she heard a familiar voice in her dizzy state, this voice is belong to....

"Yo? Is this Yu Lao Da?"

Everyone who puts their attention to this situation before suddenly turned their focus into Yu Ao Tian, the silent big hall suddenly causes the chirping among these people. "Hey, Hey, Hey, is that Yu Ao Tian, the big boss of Yu Long's group?"

"No, you are wrong, now he is the CEO of Berson Group."

"Ah, whatever it is. All are same. Just as rumor said that he likes to play in here. But I never seen him before, never thought today I able to see him, simply to say, worthwhile trip ah." There are lots of people whispering.

It hard not to mention, no matter what to say, Yu Ao Tian is someone who always and forever able to takes the spotlight, there are too many stories about the legendary him, just too many.

"What happen?" Yu Ao Tian pair of hands is stuck in his pocket, walking in front of the young master Zong, he smiled.

"Aiyo, don't mention about it, all just because this slut. I have good heart to invite her drink but she hit me, you say, she will be deadmeat!"

His eyes swept to Yao Yao direction who in unconscious state, he laughed: "Why anger by this little sister? How about I play with you?"

"Aiyoo? Yu Lao Da, today you look so happy. Say, what game do you want to play, little Zong will keep company you till end!"

"Are you sure? With your words, I rest assured!" He sat on sofa, after thinking for a while, carefully he said... "How about we play... cut the hands off, this game!" after he said, the smile in his good looking face suddenly disappeared, there is a dangerous cold gleam in his pairs of eyes, silent but that aura really makes everyone luster with scared and trembling! Everyone is holding their breath, at the next minute...

Everyone sees Long Qi who rushed standing in front of Young Master Zong, he hasn't came to react...

"Argh!!!!!"

His hand being cut down, Long Qi cut his hand that slapped Yao Yao before!

Seeing that hand of young master zong, those men that brought by that brat has surrounded by Yu Ao Tian's men. No one dares to make a move.

Paused....

The entire night club is deathly silent, all the people witness are showing fear eyes sights, even those who see Yu Ao Tian as idol suddenly changed to be chicken-heart, fear to have looked, this kind of fear is coming from the strongest, the real fear from deep inside the heart!

"Yu...Yu Lao Da, my father at least he is one of the biggest fourth mafia group in China, the Long Bang, Dragon Head. Even you are not see the monk face at least you should see the Buddha's face (idiom similar to, see the master before hit the dog)? You... since you said you cut my hand and you just cut it off!" Young Master Zong really didn't understood, the reason of Yu Ao Tian to make this thing! Everyone said Yu Ao Tian is cold-hearted, fall out with and become hostile, but he never thought Yu Ao Tian able to do until this step, after all he didn't give anyone face?

"Hey, little brat, Yu Ao Tian just cut one of your hand, he has gave your daddy face by not killing you, you should thank and feel grateful! Or else, I will cut

another hand of yours, with additional one of your ear!" after said, Long Qi pulled that less one-hand young master Zong's hair, his hand that hold knife is stand by to cut his ear.

"No......No!" Young Master Zong is scared, trying to protect his pair of ears: "Thank you... thank you Yu Lao Da kindness! Thank you for Yu Lao Da kindness." He hurried kowtow to Yu Ao Tian.

At this time, Long Qi put away his knife.

Indeed, Yu Ao Tian still have many ways to torture people, there is no one who have ever got good ending if fall to his hand. As for this young master Zong, he is more than fortune since only losing one hand, but this is also confirm the truth, those who stepped into Yu Ao Tian's "limit", there is no easy way to escape?

The gloomy Yu Ao Tian exchanged glance with Long Qi to get out from the night club.

At this moment all people who soulless, back to their-self, cannot help but give a long breath: "Too...too scary. Yu...Yu Lao Da, simply to say exactly like what rumor spread."

"That's right."

"And also, did you see that young man who cut young master Zong's hand, he is such scary? I haven't react, but the young master Zong hand already gone. What is he background? Is he called Long Qi?"

"Long Qi? He is the craziest subordinate of Yu Ao Tian, one person of him able to fight ten people?"

"Ah, no wonder...."

"Damn!" After he waiting Yu Ao Tian left, this young master Zong helplessly cursing on the floor. To think carefully, he from Red Dragon Head and Yu Long's group never interfered each other matters, the most important thing is Yu Ao Tian since the last two years he never showed or interfere the matter of underworld things, but why today he....

Suspicious, his eyes flashed: "That girl? That girl who is smashed me with that wine bottle?"

Finally his subordinates realized.... "Zong, Young master Zong, it seems that girl who smashed you was brought by them."

"Brought? As predicted...., aha, so this was the matter." After he thought, this Young master Zong wickedly looked at his hand that being cut off: "Yu Ao Tian, you wait, I will come to find you and collect this debt!"

"Ao Tian, today I really happy, I really wish to have days like today." After leaving the night club, Long Qi is so excited talking for the whole time.

Beside him, Yu Ao Tian helplessly shook his head: "You little brat, everything that positive you don't learn, but once it about cutting and chopping, you are so excited. I really don't know how to say you?"

"Everyone has their likes and dislikes, since you came to China and own company, I often feel that I have retired from my job, this...." Every time talk about this, Long Qi really takes long breath.

Now, Yu Ao Tian really does not know how to say this little brat.

No matter Long Ye, Han Li Shang, even Mo Xue Tong, all of them has been with him for long time and work hard until today to have and support him as companion, it's only Long Qi who not accustom with this professional job, at last, he decided to give him the position which Long Qi does not need to use his brain but also free to use force position which is security manager.

"Long Qi, do you really likes to cut others hand? Rest assured, as soon as possible you will have opportunity to fulfill your desire."

"Are you sure? Is it real?"

"Ha, you patiently wait..." after he said, Yu Ao Tian curved up his lift, make a faint smile.

"Yeah, this is too good. Oh yeah, Ao Tian Ge."

"What?"

Suddenly his eyes looked at Yao Yao who is sleeping: "Her chest... really so flat, when I piggy back her, I completely can't feel it."

"....." The foot step stopped, Yu Ao Tian face looked not good, When he

about to reach and snatch Yao Yao...

"Oek"

"Damn! Ao Tian...she... is she throwing up?"

### **Chapter 41**

# I don't want to be pregnant.

In the silent secluded highway, a sport car is moving fast forward.

The wind that blowing during summer is so comfortable, even Yao Yao who still in half conscious, suddenly moving: "Uh, hurt..."

Her swollen face that as big as pie, how could it not hurt?

Yu Ao Tian who is driving swept a glanced at her and then he is continued driving towards.

Yao Yao slowly opened her dizzy eyes, she looked at the person seating beside her: "En? Yu Lao Da, how can you be here?"

"......" Silent.

"Yu Lao Da, where are we going to?"

"Yu Lao Da, why are you ignore me? oh.... I know. You want to kill me, is it right?"

Even he is Yu Ao Tian, is he really someone that likes to kill other people, moreover "kill" her? hah, to think about "to fuck" she really is something! It's just that, for this moment, he does not have any interest with little sister who drunk.

Yu Ao Tian not really in good mood, he lets Yao Yao to speak by herself, until at one point finally he realized how irritating and annoying Yao Yao is, when she is drunk.

Just at this moment... "Yu Lao Da, did you ever told me, as long as I able to kiss you and you got the feeling, will you really let me go?"

"Heh?" Yu Ao Tian dumbfounded, but before he able to response her, suddenly she looked alike the hunger "wolf" who is spotted the food, she is

forcing to kiss him....

Damn! How could he being forced-kissed by little girl? This simply is something humiliating for him!

At the super speed driving along the highway, while Yu Ao Tian is driving he also need to focus dealing with Yao Yao who turned be wild because alcohol. He really busy to the point he can't driving the car anymore.

He just simply parked his car slowly in the side of road and slowly enjoying this young inexperienced and also clumsy kiss.

Hah... she clearly has very bad technique of kissing, but he really does not know why, he even expected to have more from her, even breathing this simple things become so heavy. His pair of hands enveloped her little waist, this forcing kissed suddenly provoke him.

His tongue is prying to her teeth, and now both of their tongue intertwined like dancing tongues.

For long time, the atmosphere inside the car getting hotter, both of their lips slowly separated, their lips connected as if there is an ambiguous thread...

"Little thing, I never have slightly interest with drunken woman before but...."

Now he is unable to suppress the flames and desire of normal men.

He pushed the button to make the seat lay down, he also closed the convertible car.

He turned over (lying position) his body, with his domineering-self pressed under her body, while his hand moving inside her dresses....

The sun gradually rises, the sun shines brightly piercing through the curtain, illuminate the surface of splendid king size bed. The silk quilt is covering the naked body, both of man and woman which creating an ambiguous atmosphere.

Yao Yao is gritting her teeth even in her dream, she makes sound of "creak" "creak", kind sharp voice that pierce into ears, when she turned over her body, her small hands cycling at the man's body, cuddling the man but also her hand randomly groping the man's body.

Uh...

Her sleepiness suddenly gone, she hurried to take a look what kind of thing she cuddling.... Is there something strange?

Hurried opened her eyes, the first things that caught her eyes is Yu Ao Tian gloomy expression with his pair deep black eyes. "Arghhhh!" a high pitch piercing sound, she faster rise herself to sit position, what happen? How can she sleep with Yu Ao Tian at same bed?

Still lost in her thought, the quilts that cover her body gradually slipping down, finally she realized her naked body. "Arghhhh!" another piercing voice, she grabbed the guilt and wrapped herself. What happen? How can she wear nothing?

She looked Yu Ao Tian with fear eyes sight.

Since the quilt is wrapping her body, naturally, the naked body of Yu Ao Tian caught her eyes. What? Why he does not wear anything? Ha Ha Ha, hahahaha, if... this just a dream.... it must be a dream.... "Arghhh!"

"Bao Bei, do you always being so this energetic every time you wake up in the morning?"

How can it be? Who will be shouting as if seeing ghost every morning when wake up? But the problems...

"You, you wear some clothes first!" she closed her eyes, sitting at the bed without slightest move. After that she peeks to see the situation, ensuring that Yu Ao Tian has wore his clothes, she crazily mad yelled: "Are you still human? You even dare to do such thing?"

Her eyesight looked to down side, the bead of hot tears streaming, she used her fingers to wipe her corner eyes that wet with tears. Then she realized the pain of her swollen face. "You... yesterday, did you also hit me? I didn't agree to sleep with you and then you just hit me? I want to fight you at any cost!" after she said, she made fist from her hand, she punching towards Yu Ao Tian...

Now he really is admiring the ability of this little thing to associate the situation. He quickly dodged her, smile deviously: "Bao Bei, was I really hit you?"

"You didn't hit me, but how could my face such in pain? Won't you admit it? I never thought you are such scoundrel, I just 19 years old, how could you do this

to me? I hate you to death."

After he heard all the cursing and angry words that said by Yao Yao, Yu Ao Tian really does not have heart to pay attention of it, the most important... the entire night he was deathly exhausting. "Sst, Bao Bei, you should pay attention to your move, perhaps there is already have my baby inside your stomach, it will be bad if influence the Baby." after he done, he left the room without any expression in his face.

While Yao Yao who sat in bed has been dumbfounded because of shocked.... "Baby? Baby? I am only 19 years old, I don't.... I don't want to have baby! huhuhuhu...." She crying out-loud inside the room.

The time has passed for quite long, gradually her mind clear from all the confusion thoughts. "Something wrong, yesterday I met few of scoundrels in night club, but how could once I open my eyes, suddenly I have together with Yu Ao Tian? Would it..." her small hands stroking her little face.

Suddenly the memories from yesterday flowing in her mind. "Cih, that scoundrel said to strip me, but what was happen after that?"

"Yu Lao Da, did you ever told me that, as long as I able to kiss you and you got the feeling, will you really let me go?" after that matter, Yao Yao just recalled one things that was when she became wild.

"Ah~ so frustrating, how can I do such thing. Moreover, today I have wronged Yu Ao Tian. Grrrr... but I feel something is missing, if I really wronged Yu Ao Tian, how can I not wear anything and also slept together with him at one bed?" she believed the real answered only knew by Yu Ao Tian!

She tip toe opened the room's door, peeking at the living room, hurry she closed the door.

At this moment, Yu Ao Tian who is sitting in living room has realized her who silently peeking him, coldly said: "Have you calm down?"

She lower her head looked at floor, as if a little kid who caught doing wrong, she showed her innocent face: "I am sorry, Yu Lao Da. I knew you didn't hit me."

"Humph! Do you think this matter will settle only by saying sorry?"

"So what do you want?" Yao Yao pissed off stood in front the room's door: "You didn't hit me, but you undressed me, this is the fact!"

Aiyo, this little girl is not only simple wild cat. Yu Ao Tian stretching his legs, smile deviously: "To do such things, undress is necessary and must."

### **42**

I would like to say this Chapter is one of the funniest and sweetest chapter from chap 1 until 41. We have read all the bad things happen to poor Yao Yao but this time, she really being clueless little white rabbit because she almost forget who is Yu Ao Tian...

Well, enjoy the chapter and put your comment as usual

## **Chapter 42**

### How's my kissed?

Do such thing? Do such thing? What were they done?

The nervous plus panicking expression looking at Yu Ao Tian, damn, she could not guess whether he just joking or he is serious. "Yu, Yu Lao Da, I knew yesterday you was the person who helped me. If there weren't you, perhaps I might being that by those rotten bastard... but, can you tell me, what was happen yesterday between you and I, did we really.... Did that?" she didn't have any memory, no memory about what happen yesterday.

"This matter." Yu Ao Tian smiled deviously, pointing at her stomach: "After one month, you will know it."

Oh my... so did it really happen or not, she will be going crazy soon. But, the only thing that she very clear is, this black-hearted man is purposely torturing her. "Yu Lao Da, where is my clothes?"

"Laundry. Later they will bring here."

"Why are my clothes being laundry?"

She just didn't know... it was covered with her vomiting. Yu Ao Tian really does not want to bring up the topic: "Because it dirty, so that send to laundry."

"Oh, where is the bathroom?"

After he heard Yao Yao questions that being asked one by one, Yu Ao Tian who is never tolerant with woman, impatiently he stands up: "This is single apartment, you are standing in living room, just now you went out from bed room so the other of the room should be bathroom! Do you really have low IQ?"

Being insulted, Yao Yao really pissed off walking toward the bath room, but before she entered the bathroom, she hurried turned to have looked at him, screaming loudly: "You are the one with low IQ!"

"....." He? Did he hear something that he should not hear? "Little thing,

you, what was you said?" after he realized, Yu Ao Tian face changed darken, faster he rushing to the bathroom.

"Bamn!" a sound, when he arrived, Yao Yao firmly locked the bathroom's door as if even death she won't open it. But another second...

"Hah." Suddenly Yu Ao Tian who stands up in front of the door smiled.

Indeed, facing with his naughty little girl, even he really wants to angry, he not really able to anger towards her.

After he walking back to the living room, he heading to the kitchen, when he wanted to switch on the stove (electric stove), he heard the creak sound of the bathroom door being opened. Silently her head pop out to peep at him.

Yu Ao Tian impatiently frowned: "What do you want again?"

"Yu... Yu Lao Da, there is only one tooth brush in the bathroom, I... what should I use?"

"Boom" at the moment, the fire has strike to his head, the sleeping scenes from last night suddenly appeared in his mind.

Heaven knows, Yao Yao really have bad sleeping pattern, she not only sleep-talking but she also gritting her teeth, and also she likes to turned her body right and left, so that, this morning when he woke up there are big dark circle under his eyes. It not easy for him to go through until morning, but why should he keep on serving this little thing?

With faster speed he rushing to take the new tooth brush, he is angrily giving it to Yao Yao, crazily talking to himself: "Damn fucking annoying!"

Uh? When Yao Yao heard it, she flames up and provoking her: "If you dislike me that much why you bring me to your home, you damn fucking irritating!"

"Hah?" He thought that he was missed heard, this little thing seems... was she cursed him with dirty words? He was irritating at the moment his face turned dark with dangerous aura: "If you dare you said it once again?"

"I dare, there none your business. Moreover, it was you who said it first!"

"Little thing, am I too good to you since this morning so that your guts getting bigger and bigger!"

Looking at the dangerous expression of Yu Ao Tian, finally she realized the person she offended.

"Yu...Yu Lao Da. I take a bath first. Hehehe." She stopped with dried-laugh, when she turned to the bathroom, in that time... "Huh... it scared me to death! Really is, scared me to death. Yao Yao, are you crazy, he is the person who able to kill people without blinking eyes, that person is Yu Ao Tian, what have you done?" in brief, she really cannot describe what was happen this morning with words, but somewhat... this Yu Ao Tian isn't someone she really afraid of, at least this moment.

After she took a bath, her clean clothes has prepared, after Yao Yao changed into her clothes, she stupidly sitting in dining room, in front of table, looking at the food that already prepared in table: "Yu Lao Da, are these made by you?"

"So, where do you think all this food comes from?"

"Is it really made by you?" awesome, until today she still cannot cooking, the first time she cooked was for Feng Chen Yi, but she was criticized by him, she thought that the Yakuza Boss could not be this awesome, he cooked by himself, this is too unimaginable. "Really taste good."

Little girl really is little girl, no matter what unhappy things she encounters, but still she able to forget everything very fast, he really envy her. "Why you went and worked as employee in night club?"

"Because I am lacking of money and furthermore the payment and settlement are much easy." This is the best job that she could get for her grandpa medical fee.

"Hm." Yu Ao Tian puts down his chopsticks, one of his hand prop his chin, smiled: "How about you become my lover, the settlement of the payment also easy?"

She lifts her head up, looked at that man who half joking but also half serious, Yao Yao silent for moment: "I don't want!" she does not want to be lover, she just wants to experience a simple and normal love, the simple marriage life. "Furthermore, you are "pet (support)" by other, how can you have money to "pet (support)" me as your lover? Cih."

"You, how can you say that I "pet (support)" by someone?" Yu Ao Tian really does not know how to express his mood, whether to laugh or cry, how can this little thing comes with this thought?

"Ah, this is so easy. You see, you lived in very small apartment, but all the stuffs that you used are branded which can cost more than hundred and thousand dollars, if all be combined, it must be more than million dollars? Even the tableware are made from Croatia crystal, this must be cost about 20,000 dollars? And also your car, that must be given by the wealthy madam."

After he heard Yao Yao explanation, Yu Ao Tian really suspicious himself whether he really the "pet" of wealthy woman or not. "Little brat, you really have sharp eyes, for girl in your age you seem to know many branded things? Especially, this tableware."

This is because she was dating that Feng Chen Yi before, when they were in Japan, his villa has various branded stuffs, no matter how rotten Feng Chen Yi as bastard, at least what he said to that Li Wen Feng was true... "Me, Feng Chen Yi, there was nothing that my Ex-girlfriend never seen before."

The reason why that Li Wen Feng took her to the boutique and pretending to buy the things with discounted price, it was not really shocked her. "I knew from television."

"Oh, that's it." with one glanced Yu Ao Tian could sense that Yao Yao is lying, but why should she lied to him, whatever he not interested to know.

Not long after that, after they finished the breakfast, Yao Yao silently comes closer to Yu Ao Tian's back when he is cleaning, nervously she asked: "Yu, Yu Lao Da, I want to ask you, yesterday kissed.... Did you feel it?"

### **Chapter 43**

## I don't even feel your chest

If she does not stand at Yu Ao Tian's back, perhaps she would be shocked to see his deathly expression, simply to say, his face has black alike ink: "Yesterday matter, don't bring it anymore!"

"Why can't I say about it?" she curious, it not like every day she have guts to forcedly kiss a man, it was not easy for her to take an initiative to kiss him since she drunk so that her guts get bigger than normal days, of course she wanted to know the result: "Yu Lao Da, you tell me, if you feel something when I kissed you, you should fulfill your promised to let me go, isn't it?"

As for yesterday matter, he really does not want to talk about it anymore, not to mention about the kissed whether there was feeling or not, but once he thought about the half-way of kissed...

She suddenly vomited! If not because Yu Ao Tian avoid aside, perhaps she has vomiting inside his mouth, whenever he thought about it he feels so disgusting, simply to say it worst than nightmare. "I said don't ask then don't ask. We should go to work now!"

"Working?" oh yeah, today is Wednesday! "What time is it?"

"Nine o'clock."

"What, nine o'clock.... Dome!"

"Why are you such rushing, it hasn't working time." Yu Ao Tian is leisurely tidy up his clothes.

Yao Yao almost panicking to crazy: "You guys in PR department working time is ten o'clock, but me who work in service department, I work at eight o'clock, this time I really dome! I go first."

"Wait. You go with me, I ensure nothing will happen to you."

"Ah, forget it. Last time you said I won't be fired but at last, I also fired. If not because General Manager Long, perhaps I have fired!" but now, to bring up this topic...

"General Manager Long is your best friend, does because of you, and then General Manager Long help me to secure this job?"

When Yu Ao Tian done with all his stuffs, he opened the main door, exposure his evil smile: "Whose knows, come on. I drive you to office. Hurry up."

"Ao Tian." When the door is opened, she saw four people have stood in front the door. Others than Long Qi and Long Ye, there still two others people, a pair of woman and man who always go working together with Yu Ao Tian.

Do all of them live together?

Four of them looked each others, the atmosphere turned be uncomfortable. Especially Han Li Shang and Mo Xue Tong who are directly looked at Yao Yao.

"Ao Tian, why are you bringing her here?" Han Li Shang coldly asked, he swept glanced to Yao Yao who stare blankly.

As information, Yu Ao Tian have houses that even the tens fingers cannot count it, but the only this one is belong to five of them, no other people except five of them that ever stepped feet inside this house. Han Li Shang and Mo Xue Tong are not understood Yu Ao Tian's act represent what, but one thing that both of them know, they hates stranger stepped in their "territory"!

"Let's go to work, later we will talk about it." hurried they leave the house that live by these five persons, Yao Yao sits in Yu Ao Tian's car.

At the moment they arrived in front of the main door of Berson group, Yao Yao got down from the ride first and followed by Long Qi entered the office. But when she walked few steps, suddenly she stopped.

"Flat chest, hurried up!"

"No, we are coming together like this, it is not too good, it better you go first, wait, I go up first!"

After Long Qi heard, he is laughing so loud: "HAHAHAHa, you rest assured,

those people know my status. I just afraid they might think us as father and daughter."

"What do you mean by this? Even the idiot knows very well that we are at same age? Why don't you say that I am your mother then?"

"Ye? You flat chest really have sharp tongue, but..." he is enduring! He endured.

"Come, get into the elevator." He smiled sweetly asking Yao Yao to get inside the elevator.

She has bad premonition with Long Qi who showed such sweet smile. "You... do you plan something bad to me?"

"How can I dare? Am I that kind of person?"

How could not him that kind of person? Being suspicious for the entire time until she arrived at  $40^{th}$  floor which is the service department. She thought that Long Qi might goes up stair to 42th floor but he just followed her at  $40^{th}$  floor. "You do not need to escort me. Hurry up go to your office."

"Geezz, who is escorting you, flat chest. You really are over-confident of yourself."

"So why are you..."

"Yao Yao, finally you come, have you received the information? Manager Zhang has been rotate to sanitation department as cleaning service staff, while our new manager is..." Bai Ling just done with half of her sentences, she finally realized Long Qi is the person who stands beside Yao Yao: "Ah? Manager Long."

"Bai Ling, you continue ah, who is our new manager?"

Bai Ling furrowed her brow, pulled Yao Yao closer to her, whispered: "He is the one who stands beside you, Manager Long."

"Luo Yao Yao, you just newbie but have already late for two hours. Moreover this morning you even dared to talk back to your department manager, aiya, you say, how should I punish you?" inside the manager room, Long Qi seat at his chair while he puts his feet in table, he laughed with evil intention toward Yao Yao who stands right in front of him.

No wonder when just now Yao Yao said Long Qi, that person not even angry, so that the reason. She really can't understand how the top management way of thinking to put such evil person like him to this service department as manager? "I am so sorry, Manager Long."

"Sorry? Do you think this just settle with a single word of sorry?" Long Qi moved forward to in front of her, his finger poke her head: "I kind-hearted to piggy back you, but you throwing up all over my body, you make me become the laughing stock, do you think only by single word of sorry you can heal my trauma?"

"Uh... you piggy back me? I was throwing up all over your body?"

"That's right, it was yesterday night!"

Yesterday night... "Was you the person who helped me?"

Long Qi thought carefully: "So that Yu Ao Tian didn't tell you, both of us were helped you."

So that's how the things, could it be... "So, what was happen after that? After both of you helped me?"

"And then? And then I sent you to Ao Tian." After he said, suddenly Long Qi looked excited, smiled: "Oh yeah, did you and Yu Ao Tian doing that... that, yesterday?"

This is her purpose to ask Long Qi! "I, I didn't have any memory about it. That... according to your understanding about Yu Ao Tian, his character, would he doing that to the drunk little girl?"

Of course he won't, not to mention the drunk woman, even the woman who is not willing to do, he never forced them. But... Long Qi does not want to tell her! "Of course. No matter who the person as long as they trapped in Yu Ao Tian's hand, there is no woman able to escape, moreover, 100% he never missed, there are countless women who pregnant because of him. Perhaps, currently you have already had his baby." Long Qi said with cheerful tone.

But Yao Yao face is white pale, did she really do that with Yu Ao Tian? Rotten bastard, how could he do this to her! After all it still her fault, who asked her to drink so that being \*\*\* by others people, this is her retribution! Karma! She

#### asked for it!

"But to be honest, flat chest, if being touched by hand perhaps not that flat as seen. Are you using the chest pad?"

After she gained herself, she realized that Long Qi has poked her chest, she frowned: "scoundrel!" she lift her hand up and give him a fresh five fingers stamp (slap)...

#### **Chapter 44**

# The humiliation when attending the birthday party

Finally Saturday comes, Yao Yao woke up at afternoon, she opened her eyes, stretching her waist, she randomly grabbed one of her dress and wore it.

"Pat" an invitation card fall down to the floor: "This..." she took a look: "This is Xia Ru's birthday invitation card." The time is 6 tonight. Today I don't need to go for work, while the night club still having the break time, but shall I come?

"But there is possibility that Gong Xiao Man will come from Japan, don't you want to meet your best friend?"

Xiao Man, Xiao Man...ah whatsoever, I should go to hospital to take care of grandpa.

"My treasure baby Yao Yao, it is not easy for you to get one day off, why don't you stay at home and having a rest? I heard from your mom, this week you was going home late, actually what is your job?" Grand Pa Luo is lying at patient bed asked his precious granddaughter. These days her grandpa not really well, even his condition is stabilized.

"Grandpa, our company staffs have been working overtime lately, so that we also worked until late of night."

"Work overtime? Although it was work overtime but why it late till 2 am? Every day you go at seven in the morning, it must be tiring you to death?"

"Grandpa, it okay, every one also did the same thing. None of them complaining being tired, so how could I feel tired?" Yao Yao didn't tell her family

about her second job. Based on her grandpa temperamental, even he beat till death he won't ever let her to work in such place like night club.

"You little smart girl, grandpa never won over you, it is the time for you go home and rest, go."

"Aiya, grandpa, if I stay at home I will be bored to death, it still better if I stay here, is it okay?" Yao Yao pouted her little mouth to showed her protest, for this entire week, only her mom who taking care her grandpa, so she knows that her mom really is exhausting, so that not easy for her to get one day off in Saturday, of course she will help to decreased her mom burden.

"Let her be, Dad, just let Yao Yao stayed. You are know, she just back from Japan, she must be missed us lot so that she hope to stay longer with us."

"That's right. Just like mom said."

"Well, just in time, you better tell your grandpa everything happen during your staying in Japan."

Things that happen when stayed in Japan? Others than her good memories with Feng Chen Yi, the rest was about she almost being "that" by Big Boss Yu, and also about her friendship with Gong Xiao Man, others than that, she didn't have anything that worth to tell. But, the mature Yao Yao still makeup the beautiful and memorable story for her grandpa.

Time flies, it has been afternoon, the hospital is asking the family member to leave.

"Yao Yao, if you still have things to do, you go. I can go home by myself."

"Nothing mom, I want to go home with you."

"Haha, you still say nothing? Mom has seen the invitation card, go, my precious daughter, go to have fun. You are already growing up, don't always stick with mom."

"Mom, I loved to stick with you."

Facing this mature and considerate daughter, Mother Luo helplessly shook her head: "You have grow up this big but still loves to act like kid. Later on when you have a boyfriend, will you still stick with mom?"

"Humph, if that so, I won't find any boyfriend."

"Nonsense! If you not find any boyfriend, are you thinking to stay forever with mom? Yao Yao, I am your mother, your consideration, mom knows it. Mom also knows how mature you are, but still...forget it, I don't want to talk about it. Hurry up go." Mother Luo took long breath.

Yao Yao understands very well what her mom wanted to say, but there is a wound that both of this mother and daughter never wanted to talk about. "En, Mom, I take my leave."

"Wait, bring this with you." after said, Mother Luo took out something from her bag, it is one of beautiful cross-stitch.

"Mom, this is?"

"It is your friend birthday party, you can't go with empty hand. Mom knows that in order to save money you won't buy any expensive present, but we cannot lack in manner, just to let other party to understand our sincerity, so that, you give this to your friend."

"Mom...thank you." when she received that present from her mom, Yao Yao eyes redden.

These past years, when she was in Japan, her mom was depending on this cross-stitch, handmade craft to support the family, since grandpa sick, her mom always go home late at night, working. During the day time, she will go to hospital to take care grandpa. Her mom burden, she knows very well, or else, she won't take the job working in night club as second job."

Then, her mom even worried about the present, this cross stitch handmade at least need three days and nights to finish, her mom really loves Yao Yao so much.

Uh!

That stone in her heart feel heavier now, she really doesn't know what to do in order to decrease her mom burden. She wants to grow up faster, faster... grow up...little bit, on this way, she could use all her entire life to take good care of her mom...

When she arrived at the address which stated in the invitation card, it located

in Xiu Shan waterfall three storey villa. Inside there are many lights shining brightly, lighting the courtyard while the music keep on playing.

"Xia Ru, happy birthday, this is your present." Everyone is gathered in the courtyard for the party, Yao Yao has searched Xia Ru for the moment, finally she found her.

"Luo Yao Yao?" Everyone who is surrounded Xia Ru whether men or women are looking at Yao Yao. "Xia Ru, how can you invite her to come here?"

"I met her inside elevator, so that I just gave her the invitation card."

"Oh, you met her in elevator, which elevator?" All the people seem to be curious.

"I met her in Berson group's elevator."

"Hah? Yao Yao, are you working in Berson? What is your job?" there was someone asked after they heard from Xia Ru, immediately they changed the way they are speaking with her. Should be noted, Berson Group isn't common big company, even those with "wealth" background is not guarantee to enter that place, they only use and employed those who are really have skill.

"I work as elevator lady in Berson."

"WHAT? As elevator lady? OH, My God, how can you take that low job." One of the guests showed disgusting expression.

Facing this kind of person, she has used to, they were acting this way too during the school time. She lower her head, she intended to keep the present that she prepared for Xia Ru, but when she silently wanted to leave. Just this time...

"Yao Yao, is this your present for me? What it is."

"This is the cross stitch handmade craft that made by my mother, I hope you like it." when she said it was present that made by her mom, she happily to hand over it to Xia Ru.

Everyone who is surrounded them looked so excited with Yao Yao's present, all of them really want to know what kind of present Yao Yao gave to Xia Ru?

That cross-stitch really wide-open their eyes when the present unwrapped...

"Oh, My GOD... cross-stitch? Is it the little kid thingy?"

"Oh My? There still a person who give such thing as birthday present these days?"

"Yeah, it is not even worthwhile to keep as rug to wipe table, Xia Ru, hurry throw it."

### **Chapter 45**

## My boyfriend is Berson Group CEO

"Aiya, this is Yao Yao sincerity, thank you, Yao Yao." After Xia Ru said, her face turned cold, she on purpose tossed aside that cross stitch that made by Yao Yao's mom in one of the table. "I still need to greet other guests, you play by yourself, Yao Yao. You eat whatever you want, just doesn't be shy."

With her dim eyesight she glanced at that exquisite cross stitch which has stained, slowly she walked to pick up that cross stitch, suddenly she felt her heart in pain.

Indeed, this cross stitch not worth much money, but it is filled with her mom sincerity, so what with the branded stuff? So what with the luxurious stuffs? As for her, there is nothing worth than her mom handmade stuff to be replaced.

Confronting all these chaebol (Rich generation) kids, she has used to but she never blamed them about their characters, after all, they are living in different world, and then...

She can't forgive them! She could not forgive her for not appreciating the thing that her mom made! "Xia Ru! You stay still!"

"What's matter, Yao Yao?"

She moved, rushing in front of Xia Ru, she pissed off, picking up that cross stitch: "Even the present not expensive, but it was made by mom with sincerity, if you not really like it, why was you tossed aside like that?"

"Yao Yao, you are thinking too much. I don't say that I dislike it. But... it just really not suitable to put inside my house."

"That's right Yao Yao, it's okay if you poor, but how can you give such disgusting stuff? You see those presents that Xia Ru received, all of them are more than thousand dollars, how can you dare to give such stuff to her?"

"There is no way, who asked her to break with young master Feng? At last she was dumped by him and now she even worked as elevator lady. I remembered during that time, everything that she wore, all were the best in our school, but now you guys see, hahahahaha." That taunting voices, the sneering, one comes by one.

She knew, she understood, today birthday party she is afraid Gong Xiao Man won't be attended, she was stupidly being fool by Xia Ru to come, so everyone can taunt her. "Let me tell you guys, those days the dresses which I wore just similar with today I wore!"

That's right, she is not lying, Feng Chen Yi has bought her many things, but she seldom to wear them, she liked to wear her dresses that bought in supermarket which cost less than ten dollars, but because of that, everyone made it as trend, they kept on asking her what kind of brand she used. But now, after she broke with Feng Chen Yi, everything that she wears seem be trash? This is really laughable.

"Enough, Luo Yao Yao, you don't need to explain. Actually you are really wanted to reconcile with Feng Chen Yi? It's fine, last few days ago I have met Young master Feng, or shall I call him immediately, asking him whether he wants to reconcile or not?" Said one of the woman in that group, bring out her phone.

She really could not understand why everyone is weighted money and wealth more, while the poor always in bottom?

Since two years ago when she broke with Feng Chen Yi, she clearly knew very well that Feng Chen Yi was asked by his dad to back to China in order to help in their family business, but the rumor that spreading in her school was she deathly forcing herself to reconcile with Feng Chen Yi, so that in order to avoid her, he backed to China.

It seems in their eyes, she is someone who cannot live without Feng Chen Yi or else she might die. "It does not need to trouble you call for Feng Chen Yi, I already have new boyfriend!"

"Hah? Impossible? Yao Yao, I never heard you say about it? What's your new boyfriend job? Is he security?" Xia Ru who silent for this time suddenly opened her mouth with sharp question: "This won't do ah! Yao Yao, your Ex-boyfriend

was the second Young Master of Feng group, how can you find a security to be your current boyfriend? You really have bad taste."

"Hahahahaha...."

"My beloved Yao Yao, don't tell me if he is your fiancé, in this way I might feel your taste has degraded, even this kind of man you want."

"Don't tell me that your fiancé does not want you anymore? But it's okay, Yao Yao, no matter what you are my Ex-girl friend, I will always welcome you".

Being laughed by all the people, suddenly Yao Yao recalled her meeting with Feng Chen Yi, she can't deny, her Ex-boyfriend indeed someone extraordinary, but he also that rotten man who likes to toy with woman feeling, no matter how extraordinary he is, he is still trash and then, if she really dating with the security officer, so what? If that man really can treat her whole-hearted, even he does not have money and then so what? At least in her eyes, that man is more valuable compare to money. But...

Yao Yao understands, in front of these people, this group of rich generation, they won't never understand because they are weighted money more, weighted status more, wealth, having all of these are best for them!

"He, Feng Chen Yi no matter his status as the second young master from Feng group as high his position only the general manager. But my current boyfriend is CEO! CEO!" every time when people bring up the topic about Feng Chen Yi, she never calmed down, even for this time, after she said, she paused for moment and felt regret. But she has said already, she couldn't cancel it.

"C...EO..." suddenly all people laughing at her, sneered toward her, everyone looked at her and she looked at them.

Xia Ru who stood in the middle rolled her eyes: "Which CEO? Does the start up entrepreneur, the person who sell fish also can call as Boss, at least you must be mentioned the name? Perhaps I know the person, but if the CEO who sells fish I definitely don't know."

"That's true! I almost deceived by you. To think carefully, how can you work as elevator lady when your boyfriend is CEO? Luo Yao Yao, you don't need to pretend anymore, hurry to make phone call for Feng Chen Yi, begging him to

reconcile with you."

Tell lie one time then the next need cover with another lies, since she has walked to this path which no turning back, it better... keep on continuing walk in this path! "My boyfriend is Berson Group CEO!"

"Berson... Group...CEO?" at the moment, all the noise in the party gone, everyone showed white pale face expression, if she really Berson Group CEO girl friend, nine from ten persons in this party should kneel down to her, begging for her forgiveness, because it is important for their parent business who haven't have chance to partnership with Berson Group?

"Are you really serious that your boyfriend is Berson Group CEO?" Xia Ru narrowed her eyes.

"That's right! He is! I still have thing to do, I take my leave." At the moment she turned her body, Yao Yao really wants to cry, she just came back to China other than Feng Group she just know Berson Group, so that...

Calm and collected! Unperturbed! During in this atmosphere should stay strong, let make the lie to be seen as if it is truth, even those people found out she is lied.

"Stay still!" Xia Ru suddenly shouted at her. "Yao Yao, since your boyfriend is Berson Group CEO, how can you not come with him today?"

"Oh yeah... during this time, why didn't he come to accompany her?"

"It because... he is low-profile! Didn't all of you know that I just come back from Japan, so that most of you not really know about Berson Group CEO compare to me who join Berson Group, he seldom takes picture, he even does not really care simple matters in the company, most of the matter are giving to General manager Long Ye to do. So that, similar with this, of course he will not appear."

#### **Chapter 46**

## He is Berson Group CEO

"Xia Ru, Luo Yao Yao is right, there was one time when my father having business with Berson Group but that time it was General Manager Long Ye who dealed with the business."

Fiuh... it good that Bai Ling ever said about this matter with her, luckily she knows long Ye this name, or else she might look fool.

"Humph? This, aiya, there is a good saying about nothing curious coincidence. Yao Yao, did you not hear from your boyfriend, today he is... here talking business with my father. Just inside the villa! Come, I lead the way for all of you to greet him!"

Oh no, is it true? How can be so coincidence? Dome! Yao Yao, you should not have to lie, see this your end? It's dome! Once the lie being exposed, you might never able to raise your head up in front of Xia Ru. "Wait...Wait, I don't want to interrupt his work."

"Hah, it's okay, I just tell that I look for my father." Xia Ru brought some people with her, forcing to bring along Yao Yao to go inside the villa: "Aiya, Yao Yao, why are you trembling? Don't say... that you are afraid?"

All of the people looked at Yao Yao expression which as white as paper: "That's true, you looked sick? Don't say... damn! Luo Yao Yao, just as Xia Ru said, I almost deceived by you too."

"It's truth, how can you do such things? Bragging yourself, at least you should find someone that status reasonable. Now, more I think about it more impossible it is. The CEO of Berson group at least he is 27 or 28, how can he likes little brat like you?"

"That's right, Berson Group CEO is not lacking of women, cih, I almost believe

on you."

"Aiya, you guys don't act like this, perhaps the Berson Group CEO really likes our Yao Yao, this types of cute girl? Is it? Yao Yao." Xia Ru acted as good person, but sneered in front of Yao Yao.

Seeing how this few people taunting her, she feels little bit guilty and then she keeps silent, because at that moment she really cannot fight back.

"Yao Yao, better you tell us honestly, your boyfriend is not the CEO of Berson Group, if not, rest assured, we won't laugh at you."

"[..."

"Ru Ru! What are you doing at downstairs? How could there are lot of noise, you have disturb me and my client to talk about business." There is someone from second floor who suddenly cut Yao Yao words.

Xia Ru pouted her mouth, helplessly said: "It dome, my father is coming, even if you want to admit, it has been too late." She plastered with fake smile, rushing to second floor.

"Will Berson Group CEO come down with uncle Xia?"

"Aiya, perhaps not, just as rumor said, Berson Group CEO is someone extremely handsome, I really want to see him."

"Come, we also go there." Everyone chase after Xia Ru who is heading to second floor, leaving Yao Yao alone in the living room.

Is this the time to escape? This must be perfect time, but even she run, so what? She is still being laughed by them? Uh, lies still lies, the Cinderella will turn back to her ordinary self at 12 o'clock but she weren't Cinderella.

"Dad, this is..." Xia Ru has arrived at second floor, she looked by herself the person who sit beside her father, suddenly her eyes shone brightly.

"HeHe, Ru Ru, this is Berson Group CEO, Yu Ao Tian beside him is vice CEO, Han Li Shang. And this is..."

"I know, he is Long Qi." That time when she went to Berson, she came to meet Long Qi: "Long Qi, didn't you say that you can't come to my birthday party? Aren't you thinking to give me surprised?"

"Indeed, I don't have time, today I come to accompany CEO Yu."

"Uh." Xia Ru unhappy pouted her mouth, she lift up her head looked at Yu Ao Tian, politely smiled: "CEO Yu."

Those who finally catch up with her simply dumbfounded, looked at him: "You guys see, this is the real CEO of Berson Group just like rumor said, extremely handsome. You guys take a look the atmosphere surrounded him, that face, today Xia Ru birthday party really worth to come, later on I can boast to all of people that I have seen Berson Group CEO. Hahaha."

"Ha Ha, CEO Yu, she is my daughter Xia Ru, today is her birthday, don't know whether you want to have simple meal with us as to give face to me?"

"That's right, CEO Yu. Today is my 20<sup>th</sup> birthday, if you are joining, this will be the most memorable 20<sup>th</sup> year birthday."

"Miss Xia Ru, happy birthday. But I am sorry, I still have thing to do." Yu Ao Tian coldly said, elegantly he shakes hand with Xia Ru's father: "Mr. Xia, your proposal, I will consider about it. I take my leave."

"Woah. Have you guys heard? He has very nice voice. I even can't reject to enjoy the pleasure by only listened to his voice.

"Stopped enjoying, there still urgent matter to solve." One of her friend has rushed to Xia Ru beside, she pointed down stare: "Xia Ru, hurry up asked that question! Asked!"

"Ugh?" Xia Ru react faster, she rolled her eyes: "Wait! CEO Yu, your girl friend is here, in downstairs, do you want to meet her?"

"My girlfriend?" Yu Ao Tian stopped for moment, he frowned, then he looked at Long Qi and Han Li Shang, they are really curious, whom... girl friend is?

"Aiya, is it real? Ru Ru, you know CEO Yu's girlfriend? Then you must welcome and take good care of her." Xia Ru's father is trying to butter with Yu Ao Tian hurried reminding his daughter.

"Dad, you see CEO Yu expression, at one glanced I have knew that my classmate was lying." Xia Ru purposely took long breath: "CEO Yu, please don't feel bad, my classmate that person really likes to look for connection, she even

dares to lie. Now, the person is in first floor, please you take a glance, as long as you said she isn't your girl friend, the rest I will settle it."

Who is Yu Ao Tian? At one glance he has known the evil thought of this girl who standing in front of him, but he really does not want to play with this little girl, moreover to make used by her!

"I am sorry, I don't have time." He coldy said, and then he faster his step to go down stairs.

Hurried Xia Ru is signaling her friend to move faster step to first floor, stopped Yao Yao and bring her to the corridor. "Luo Yao Yao, this time you dead meat. We want to see how tragic your death!"

"Hahahaaaaha."

When Yu Ao Tian is getting closer, that person is showed her excited expression, but Yao Yao who stopped looked alike rock, she unable to sit or stands still, her head keep lowering.

"CEO Yu, that is her! that is the person who said you are her boyfriend."

CEO Yu? How coincident? Or still?

"Faster, lift your head up. Your boyfriend is here." said one of the persons from that group who laughed with bad intention, Yao Yao forced herself to lift her head up.

At the moment, the familiar silhouette is caught by her eyes which make her face even paler, Yu... Yu... Yu Ao Tian? How... he is Berson Group CEO?

## 47 – 48

Ah~ today took little longer to update...

## Chapter 47 and 48

#### The Passion

All people looked at one same direction, Yu Ao Tian almost burst out laughing, he really never thought that person who pretended to be his girlfriend actually is this little thing. His black eyes rolled, he smile devilish and said: "Bao Bei, how can you be here?"

"Bao Bei???!!!" those people who pressed Yao Yao's body almost fall sitting to floor because their leg are weaken, hurried they free Yao Yao.

"Yu... CEO Yu, but you said that...you said.... you don't have girlfriend?" Xia Ru dumbfounded, trembling asking Yu Ao Tian who stood beside her.

"Hah? Did I ever say it?"

"But your expression was...."

"HaHa, I just feel little bit strange, how can my, Yu Ao Tian's girl friend come to this kind of.....party!" that good looking face suddenly emitting dangerous aura. His evil aura really frightened all the people at there. Their legs are trembling continuously.

He slowly walking closer to Yao Yao in front, he took a short glance to look at her: "Bao Bei, you really are, how can you wear this kind of dress to this place, but you are also not wrong, this kind of low-grade party, you do not need to have any special makeup." A pair of Yao Yao's hand is clenched her cross stitch: "This is?"

"My mom made it." Yao Yao lower her head, automatically she answered.

"Oh? Does this is one of my favorite thing? Hm, how could be so dirty?" When Yu Ao Tian said that last sentence, suddenly pairs of eyes looked at Xia Ru direction which almost made that girl kneeling in the floor.

"Yu... Yu... CEO Yu, I am sorry, that was my fault to dirty it. I don't know if that "treasure" is one of your favorite things, so that I carelessly... actually I like that cross stitch. Is it, Yao Yao?" Xia Ru walked faster to Yao Yao's side, seeing her

with begging eyes sight, whispered: "I beg you, Yao Yao, help me to say few good words, I know that was my fault, begging you, help me to say few good words?"

Hah... who should she help to put good words? It so clearly that she is the person who telling lie, a lie that she said in right moment. "Pardon me, I feel unwell so I take my leave first." After she said, Yao Yao turned her back and run, leaving that place.

"Hey, flat... Luo Yao Yao!"

"Long Qi, faster chase her!" Yu Ao Tian glanced at Long Qi.

He suddenly remember something, when he just started running to catch up with Yao Yao, he said: "Oh Yeah, Xia Ru, later in the future... don't come to find me!" after he said, his expression changed darken, glaring at Xia Ru and then he disappeared from Xia's house.

"Mr. Xia, regarding to the proposal..."

"CEO Yu! CEO Yu, my daughter fault who not understood, I begging you, please to reconsider it for moment. I beg you, Xia Ru faster apologized."

"CEO Yu, I am sorry, it was my fault, it me who not mature enough, it me."

He raised his hand, it stopped whatever they said. Yu Ao Tian smiled, coldly said: "Mr. Xia, before you get contact with my Berson Group, you should know that what kind of person I am, Yu Ao Tian, I dislike people to cut my word. Well, today just end like this. I take my leave." After he said, he and Han Li Shang left.

Xia Ru's father can only see his big business leaving him far away, he even not dared to ask for forgiveness or begging for further, because... he understands Yu Ao Tian's character that never took back whatever he said, he just afraid more he beg more he lost!

\*\*

"Flat Chest! You fuck damn! Stop!" Long Qi yelling.

Suddenly Yao Yao stopped and turned: "Why are you yelling? I don't say that I won't stop!"

"Uh..." it's true. "Why are you here?"

"Xia Ru is my classmate."

"Impossible, is she really your classmate? But both of you if compared..." his expression kind strange.

Yao Yao cover her chest area: "Why are you looking at me that way?"

"Hey, Flat chest, it not I want to say, but the different between you two are too much."

Damn Long Qi, what he means. Yao Yao glared at him: "Any problem? If not I take my leave."

"Don't be so fierce, I know your mood not really good, come, kissed me, how about give me one sweet smile?"

"....." To be honest, Yao Yao really in super bad mood, but after she heard what Long Qi said, she said: "You, you are sick." Finally she smiled.

"Tick" "Tick" not far from them, the headlamp of car lighted both of them. Long Qi took a looked, he saw Yu Ao Tian's car is slowly closer to them.

Yao Yao intended to leave, but being stopped by Long Qi: "Ao Tian is coming, why are you leaving?"

Just now she has done such shameful things, how could she look at Yu Ao Tian? That time she was pretending as his little sister and now she pretending as his girl friend, really shame to death. "You let me go. Long Qi."

When she is nagging, suddenly Yu Ao Tian's car has stopped beside them: "Get into car!"

Han Shang Li who sits at the passenger seat get out from the car. But Yao Yao still stands there not moving.

"Long Qi! Force her to get into car."

"Oh."

"Wait! I get to car by myself!" after she said, Yao Yao expressionless sitting at the passenger seat. The sport car "vromm" one time suddenly disappeared from the silent night.

Does not know how time pass, finally Yao Yao who kept silent for this time

spoke: "You, why are you lying to me?"

"I lied to you? Hah, Bao Bei, you say, which part I lied to you?"

Still pretending! "Why you never told me if you are the CEO of Berson Group? You even pretending as PR department staff who is being pet?"

"Have you ever asked me? The most important point, you are the person who thought that I am working as PR staff?"

Seeing Yu Ao Tian lift up his lips with his devious smile, Yao Yao understood, she would never won over him because he never told her that he works as PR staff, all was her guessing!

"Fine, whatever, I don't care."

"You don't care? But... I care!" Zi, the sound, the car stopped at one side of street, Yu Ao Tian grabbed her neck fiercely.

Without any preparation, she faces to face with Yu Ao Tian, sitting in his lap: "You, what do you want to do?"

"Two years ago you took me as Host, two years later you take me as PR staff that pet by wealthy woman, You guess, how I punish you?" his slender fingers slowly moves and touch her skin.

An intolerable ticklish feeling, suddenly she moves her waist: "Sorry, I am sorry, Yu Lao Da, but really you have that looking as someone....eat..."

"What?"

Looking at pair of Yu Ao Tian eyes, she really wants to give herself two slaps to her face, she really bad in saying thing. "I am sorry."

"Little Thing, you really become brazen each day."

So again, Yao Yao gets her punishment from Yu Ao Tian. It isn't the first time Yao Yao molested, harass or even being violated by Yu Ao Tian. So this time, again she got that kind of punishment.

Yu Ao Tian simply to say is beast, the King of beast. He even dared to violate Yao Yao inside the car in the crowded street where people passing by.

Yao Yao begging him to stop just as usually she does, begging with moisten

puppy eyes, begging for his mercy but he is Yu Ao Tian, person who infamous with his rudeness and who can stop him when he has decided to start.

After crying and begging for while (and of course after being XX by Yu Ao Tian), she backs to usual self, be strong, she wiped dry her tears and stop to "resist". Just in this time, Yu Ao Tian stopped to tease her, he sees the cross stitch: "Hm, this cross stitch is really beautiful, your mom made it?"

Yao Yao who has almost stopped crying suddenly cried louder which confused expression Yu Ao Tian who thought after he praising her mom, she might feel little bit comfort with his words but who knows Yao Yao even sadden than before.

"You don't know anything! Give it back to me!" She said while crying.

"Why are you crying again?" Yu Ao Tian asked, he furrowed his brow, just cannot understand the way of this little girl thoughts.

"What do you know?" she angrily snatched back the cross stitch from him, continued: "This is made by my mom which spent much time to make it but people like Xia Ru treated this like trash, but again when you said that you like it, suddenly people like her changed. I just not understand, what kind of people they are?"

When she said this to Yu Ao Tian she recalled her old memory about Feng Chen Yi.

"Feng Chen Yi, they said you are rich. Is it true?"

"You see, am I really looked alike they said? They just talked nonsense."

Again when finally she knew the truth she ever asked Feng Chen Yi why he lied to her. He gave her very simple answered that was, "I just want to get closer to you."

Actually she never thought that status and money would make distance for people, but after she knew Feng Chen Yi later, she learnt that others than expensive things, world stance (status), the system of value, all are trash. It was not money or wealth that separated her and Feng Chen Yi just after she broke with him everyone turned their back...

Perhaps after she experienced this, hearing how Yu Ao Tian talked with those people, she felt so disgusting with them. Suddenly she feels everything just joke for her.

### **Chapter 49**

## They provoked her

"Why were you saying that you are Berson Group CEO's girl friend?" Yu Ao Tian asked.

"That because...." Because they brought up about Feng Chen Yi! She knew that lying isn't good moreover boasting, but when they brought up, talking about Feng Chen Yi, she really angry. Whatever, there is no used to say this anymore, Yu Ao Tian would never understand. Perhaps, in his heart he might think her as similar as to those people. "After all nothing is more important other than money and status?"

"You are right, money and status are important. Bao Bei, do you know why I came back to China and acquired Berson Group?"

This... "Why? Don't tell me it because money and status? Aren't you already has status in Japan as the underworld emperor?"

"No, I am indeed aiming money and status. I need much money, the higher position. The Yakuza big boss is not more than short-lived status, but the businessman is everlasting, longer than. Of course... the one I aiming is political and government circles!"

The Yakuza big boss is short-lived? Indeed true, no matter how awesome the Yakuza big boss, actually they need more money to support them, while the businessman can be more relax by "buy" this Yakuza. And how about the politics and government? Of course they can "eat up" the yakuza and also toying with businessman, it can be said that the most powerful people in this world are those who in politics and government circles.

She never thought that Yu Ao Tian is someone with long vision, if this to exchange with anybody, there won't be person who want to leave two years ago

success as Yakuza big boss and choosing to enter new world? But he did it!

Everyone said, to give up on something to get another thing, Yu Ao Tian gave up his position as Yakuza big boss in Japan in order to get the world in China.

It seems the rumors are right, he is not only vicious and merciless person but he also someone who has brain, very smart person. He is able to see very clearly the opportunities in front of him.

At this time, seeing through Yu Ao Tian's eyes, she could see his ambition, she feels as if seeing the ancient Emperor who was able to commanding thousands deportment, strangely, she admiring this scary man in front of her and also understandable that he really someone talented.

Just like just now when they were at Xia's household, looking at him who was not panic or surprised as if seeing her as his real girlfriend. Included the way of his speaking as if the wind piercing into Xia Ru, as well with the way he evaluating the cross stitches, everyone could see his strong insight. When will she be able become a person like him, who able to have strong insight and also big ambition?

"Even you did that to me (refer to his "violation"). But again, I really thank you because you didn't expose me."

"Yao Yao." Yu Ao Tian turned his head, looked into her direction, his eyes looked her so seriously: "How about to consider what I told you that time in my home?"

That thing that he asked her?

"How about you consider to be...my lover."

I don't want! I don't want! I don't want!

"Remember, the successful men like someone like me who has inner beauty, lady. Not like you, little slut vixen. You groom not bad so that you have ability to seduce men, but at last... you only can be lover!"

Ha, seems that what manager Zhang told her come to reality, her ending perhaps really become... "Perhaps long time ago I thought money and status aren't important. But after today, those people wake me up, I understood. But...

no matter how I thirst for money and status, I still don't want to be other people lover." After she said, she opened the car's door.

Seeing Yu Ao Tian expression...

"Humph? Interesting, I really want to "dirty" you!" after he said, his pair of eyes showed devilish gleam...

\*\*

"Mom, this afternoon I will go visit grandpa, you go first."

"It's okay Yao Yao, it not easy for you to have one off day, you better go tomorrow."

"Mom, you not need to worry, let me sleep for while."

"Well."

After she sees her mom leaving, Yao Yao "secretly goes out" changed her dress and running to down stairs.

"Little girl, what do you want to buy?"

The pharmacies who wear uniform come towards her, Yao Yao pointed at the pregnancy section, whispered: "can you give me... pregnancy test."

"What?"

"That... test... pregnancy test!"

After she paid, Yao Yao could feel her face flustered, that damn Yu Ao Tian, if she really "have", she will bring him to jump into sea and together meet the death God.

Every month she always "in time" but this time Yao Yao has been already late for three days, she just thought would she really... after that.

Carefully she went out from the pharmacy, just walking two steps, she sensed there a man who looks so suspicious, is he a thief?

At this time, one expensive splendid car slowly comes closer, but that middle age man suddenly jump in front of the car and shouted: "Aiyo!"

The car hurried stopped, the driver hurried up get down from the car: "Mr, are

you okay?"

"Aiyo, Aiyo, it hurt me to death, my hand seems to be broken." That middle age man keeps on shouting, while sitting in the street, he moving his hand.

No need to mention, this is scamming! She clearly saw that man jumped in front of the car, angrily she rushed into in front, but when she gets closer, suddenly she read the car plate number...1024? This is... Feng Chen Yi birth day?

Seeing the car, she able to see the man who sit inside the car, not mistaken, the person is Feng Chen Yi. Her pair of moisten eyes rolled, she smiled devious and walking toward that man side...

"Lisa, give him money, make him leave."

"Yes, General Manager Feng."

Inside the car Feng Chen Yi coldly giving money to his secretary, but when he looked outside the window, he spotted Yao Yao figure: "Wait, Lisa, think how to expose that person lie. Said to him he won't get any single penny!"

"Ah?" Lisa paused, even she knows that person might scammer, but Feng Chen Yi never wanted to spend time to play with this kind of people but why today? "I understood how to settle."

Lisa faster gets down from the car, she walked in front of the man: "Mr, let we go to hospital."

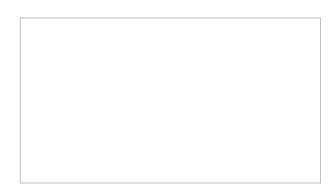
"Hospital? I don't have time to hospital! I still need to pick up my wife and kid."

"Well, there is no way, I should leave." Lisa stubbornly said.

At this moment, Yao Yao walked one step to in front: "Not going to hospital? This is hit and run, a crime."

"En? You?" Lisa felt she is so familiar with this little girl, but she just forget where she saw her. "What do you mean?"

"HaHa, simple, seeing your car is going against one way traffic regulation. According to (the traffic law) article 59 and article 145, if the car against one way traffic regulation and not to stop it could deducted to 12 points which penalty to revoked the driver's license and also get detention for three days. If you escape then your detention could be more than three days!"



#### **Chapter 50**

## Are you pregnant?

After heard what Yao Yao said, the driver suddenly turned white pale: "Miss Lisa, what should we do?"

"It's okay, Lao Zhang, how much your lost, our General Manager Feng will double to pay you. Drive the car!"

"But, Miss Lisa?"

"Lao Zhang, I asked you to drive the car!" Lisa attitude is so firmed.

At this moment, Yao Yao as outsider helplessly shook his shoulder: "You Go, Go lah. Seeing there is car incident but does not make report is considering as offended to law, to incite from the car incident is a crime, it's okay whether you believe or not and also that important man who sitting inside the car also worth to mention, perhaps all of you can be detained."

"You!" Very obvious that Lisa could not win over Yao Yao.

The man who sit inside the car simply laughing: "I just know that you little stupid will go against me! but, this is part of you that attracting me most." He opened the door...

"General Manager Feng." Lisa hurried bow.

All the people that surrounded the place, paused for moment: "That man... he really good looking. He looked alike... the... second young master of Feng

group?"

"It seems so?"

"This Miss, I really agreed with your point a view." Feng Chen Yi smiles, walking in front of Yao Yao, and then he frowned: "But, I remembered there was someone ever told me that something like law cannot be toyed in this way, it is the weapon for justice."

"Uh..." Yao Yao who thinks above wind suddenly paused, this words was said by her to Feng Chen Yi. Damn rotten bastard he hit her weakness. She makes fist with her hands, lower her head and walking to that middle age man who sitting on the ground: "Mr, it better you leave."

"Hah?"

"What happen? Which party did this little girl help?" all the people who are seeing the incident gradually questioned, just now that little girl seems above wind? But how at sudden...

"You, what are you talking?"

"Mr, there is something that I don't want to say so obvious, I advising you hurry to leave better."

"So, how about my hand? You see, my hand is broken!"

Yao Yao looked that man's baby finger (pinky finger), coldly said: "Are you sure that your hand really broke because hit by the car?"

"Nonsense, everyone saw it. Didn't it?" this man spoke, looking surrounded everyone seems agreed and nodded.

"Well, do you have witness? Well, very good I have evidence!"Yao Yao pointed at the car and the man who is lying on the ground: "The car was coming from left to right, and then it hit your left side of body, and normally your waypoints should be your right side but you are sitting in the ground facing toward (as if welcoming the car)."

"Second, you injured your left hand, but looking at the car height it is possible to hit where your hand injured, so that the only possibility, it was you who purposely lying on the ground and made yourself hit by the car, this is the point,

your left hand was not possible support your weight on the ground, furthermore to cause you broke your bone."

"The last point, seeing from the speed of the car, the speed was not more than 40km/hour, but after you appeared slowly in front of the car you were shouting, seeing from 10 stride of the average speed. On this way could see the brake marks. And of course, at least you should at least fell 20 steps from the car because the speed was about 20 strides as result."

"As for the human evidence, I believe, most of the people in here paid to the attention after you shouted, seeing the car incident, and then, it would not count as evidence in law, so it is invalid!"

"Pa" "Pa" Claps hands sound.

Yao Yao showed her confident face when she elaborating about law, make all the people claps hand for her, at the moment, the place of car incident suddenly turned to be court (law), Yao Yao who looks so young is actually the eloquent super lawyer!

"This little girl is awesome, how can she understand that much?"

"That's right, who is she?"

Everyone is praising her, Feng Chen Yi gives faint smile, from long time ago he has known and believe that Yao Yao has miracle ability.

As long as she stands in any side, no matter the other side has strong point of view, still her is much stronger, only by using her head, at the end result is always victory! How strong her capability, perhaps Yao Yao herself not really know! this case is the perfect example...

"You damn little girl, here is none of your business!" that scammer failed, angry scold her with cursing words.

Yao Yao helplessly shook her head, crouch down her body: "You better take back your words, or else I have capability to make this car owner to sue you until you go bankrupt, do you believe?"

"What do you mean? You just have said that he was the criminal!"

"That's right. From the law point of view he could be criminal, but did not

completely wrong, and then... you are scammer. You will be one who completely being responsible for this incident as scammer!"

"You... based on what evidence you said that I am scammer?"

"Uh, Mr, would you like make a check up in hospital? If it was fresh wound because of the accident, then it should still red, but your finger was old wound which at one glanced everyone know that has been heal for half month already. As additional this Rolls Royce was bumped by you, the repairing fee could exceed 300,000 dollar. Won't it make you to go bankrupt?"

"You, You..." this man being convinced, how can this small little girl could be so good? How she knows many things? "Damn!" that man pissed off gritting his teeth, suddenly pulled Yao Yao down to ground and running away.

"Yao Yao!" seeing her being pulled down, Feng Chen Yi face changed dark: "Lao Zhang, faster chase after that man!"

"Yes! Young Master."

"No need." She still understanding what is called "forgiveness", if not because that man have hard life, why should he be scammer? Moreover his finger really broke? Aish...money really is important.

"Ah, you are really, at one time you suddenly turned be another person, once you get bullied you prefer to swallow." For this point, Feng Chen Yi really cannot do anything, he and Yao Yao have been dating about two years, towards Yao Yao capability he has 100% trusting her, but the strange things, this little girl when facing with her problem she suddenly be muddle head. This perhaps to confirm old statement, some people with high IQ can be low in EQ.

Feng Chen Yi helped her to stand up.

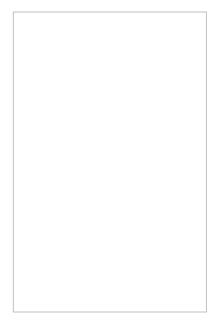
Yao Yao unhappy rolled her eyes: "Why you were you against one way traffic regulation?"

"I have things to settle."

"So if you really have thing need to settle then you think alright to against the law? Just now if that man really blackmail you, you would also seized this illegal loophole? Idiot!" She bent her body to pick up her stuffs scattered in the ground.

-	t? This is really kind of insult for myself." Feng er to pick her things up. but at this moment





Li Mei Yun Manhwa version

## **Chapter 51**

### Are You pregnant (2)

Not far from his sight there is something caught his attention. Feng Chen Yi hurried his step toward that thing, hurried picked up: "This is... yours?"

When she looked the thing in his hand, Yao Yao panicked: "Give it back to me!" she grabbed back that thing from his hand very fast and put inside her bag.

"In this short time, who the person you date, said!" He angry shouting and took people's attention.

Yao Yao feels so embarrassed moreover when she looked at the surrounding who come to see: "What are you doing, Feng Chen Yi, this is still in the street."

"Tell me, Luo Yao Yao, with whom are you...now!"

She kept silent being asked, she felt as if she gets the chills from hell, she never seen this kind of expression of Feng Chen Yi before. "None... none your business." She swayed his hand away, quickly she disappearing from...

"Damn!" He stood up, walking to get into his car with extremely bad mood.

He shocked Lisa who is beside him, hurried she asked him: "General Manager Feng, You, are you alright?"

It was not mistaken! Not mistaken! That time Yao Yao told him that she has already had fiancé but it was clearly she was lying that time, but how about the pregnancy test kit? He made fist with his hand and showing his vein: "Lisa, immediately you check about whomever the man that get in touch or close to Yao Yao within this past two years."

"Yes..."

The gynecology and obstetrics department in hospital.

"Little girl, are you kidding me? You are still virgin why are you checking for pregnancy?"

"Vir...? Impossible? Doctor, have you really had proper check up? My period is late lately."

"The reason might so many, perhaps you have burden in your heart, stress or perhaps because your body problems, you don't think to make fake pregnancy, little girl, you ought to know the basic thing about woman?"

"Uh.. I am sorry, really sorry, doctor. Thank you." after she went out from the gynecology and obstetrics section, Yao Yao simply ashamed to describe her feeling.

If not because she did not know how to use the pregnancy test, she would not go to see the gynecology and obstetrics doctor to make check up, her thought was mislead. That rotten bastard Yu Ao Tian was toying at her. but...

It seems that both of them were not doing that? "Really too good..." she took long breath, she slowly walking outside the hospital.

"Little girl, little girl." Suddenly a middle age woman pulled her closer.

"Uh, auntie, is there something?"

This middle aged woman mysteriously looked right and left, she gave her name card: "Just now I saw you have checked up, I see you are quite beautiful, and also pure girl. If you are interesting you can give me a call, the remuneration is... 1,000,000 dollar."

1,000,000 dollar? What kind of job? Yao Yao took a look at the name card, others than phone number, it written nothing. She wanted to ask that middle aged woman but she has already disappeared, really strange...

#### I want a child

Suburb, the magnificent villa with crystal glass, located in between the mountains, Yu Ao Tian is spending night with the rising star Mei Yun. Just like the others passed days, whenever they meet they will do that thing. So this time when they done with their thing, suddenly Li Mei Yun asked Yu Ao Tian who lying beside her: "Ao Tian, I want a child."

Her words just make him frowned, and then he said: "Mei Yun, do you want to retire from your job?"

"I fine." She answered him firmly.

There is nothing without blues why Mei Yun asking child from him. She has followed him so long but at the same time she feels insecurity, afraid he will leave her someday. Having a child with him is like insurance or guarantee, no wonder she asked him.

But, Yu Ao Tian isn't someone expecting for child, at least not now and not from her. He told her coldly: "Li Mei Yun, from all the women I ever have, you are the longest one who followed me, how could you not understand me?"

She understood him very well that's why she could be his side for longest time, compare to others women he had before. But she...

"most of my friend are envy of me because I have such magnificent boyfriend like you, while they just only can be others lover, I know you good to me, I am so grateful with everything you did for me, but still I am woman, I also expecting to have my own little family."

She thought Yu Ao Tian will be moved with her words but she wrong, his mood suddenly changed. So that she stopped to bring up the topic to have child. She still obediently consume that contraceptive pill.

Before Yu Ao Tian leaving he even told her that, it's okay if she accidentally pregnant because he still will ask her to abort that child.

"CEO Yang, Yu Ao Tian is here."

"CEO Liu, CEO Yu is here." a group of people welcoming Yu Ao Tian.

There is not much people who can enter this venue which worth millions of dollar, how many high rank chairman or deputy of governor can come here? But still after they see these fews CEO they cannot hide their fright.

"Ha Ha, as usual Yu Ao Tian coming always steal the limelight."

"Of course, Lao Yang, this brat have expanded his business quietly within two years, of course he is the one who steal the limelight. The most important is, he and Feng Chen Yi from Feng group are the only two persons who progressed within these two years, the new rising star? Can you make a guess, who might better between them?"

"It is hard to make the guess because Feng Chen Yi is younger few years from Yu Ao Tian. But Feng Chen Yi has already had family background while Yu Ao Tian was started from zero, how can you compare them?"

"Well this..." two men who are about fifty years of something spotted Yu Ao Tian coming. One of them suddenly said: "Who is that girl that coming with Yu Ao Tian?"

#### **Chapter 52**

### She sold

"Ha, Lao Liu you still have good eyes to enjoy high grade things never changed, that woman is Yu Ao Tian's personal secretary, Mo Xue Tong, I ever tried to make appointment with her but being rejected, very cold ones."

"Personal secretary? Ha, how if I said she perhaps Yu Ao Tian's personal \*\*\*? Yu Ao Tian infamous to be playboy, so that how could his personal secretary "clean"?" This man who surname Liu really someone does not know how sour grape is if he has not tasted by himself. But Mo Xue Tong is infamous with her coldness among businessmen.

The most important is her beauty of queen aura and also her glamorous self, there are no men who won't bow at her because of her grace...

\*\*

"The following auction is third rank product from the well-known engraver, the hibiscus syriacus incense wood. The opening price is 500,000 dollar."

After the product being displayed, Yu Ao Tian who sitting in the first row, his eyes is clearly shining.

"Ao Tian, what?"

"Wait Xue Tong, let them first." Seeing this kind of hunting, Yu Ao Tian really excited. By seeing this, he could see throughout the people so that most of time when he gathered in this kind of auction he will make his bet but it does not mean he must win the bet.

"Number 549 bet on 2,100,000 dollar, is there anyone higher?"

"Xue Tong, raised hand."

"Number 003, CEO Yu, bet on 2,200,000 million. Any other who is higher than CEO Yu? If not then...! Oh, number 005 General Manager Feng raised to 2,300,000." The auctioneer said.

Yu Ao Tian looking at the person who sits at the same row with him, just as predictable, Feng Chen Yi sits not far from...

Feng Chen Yi sensed that Yu Ao Tian is looking at him, waving his hand, smiled while Yu Ao Tian replied him with faint smiled.

At this time, Mo Tong Xue raised her hand but who knows that Feng Chen Yi secretary also followed.

"Ao Tian, this Feng Chen Yi simply wants to fight with you! Sister Xue Tong you keep raising your hand, \*\*\*him!" Long Qi who sits beside unhappy said all cursing words.

Mo Xue Tong looked Yu Ao Tian.

"No need to raise your hand. I don't want it anymore."

"What?" Long Qi gave him deathly glared.

"To confront with this kind of event where the value of things has exceeded the price, Yu Ao Tian never interested in. little brat, you better learn more since we are enter business world!" Long Ye who sits beside his younger brother laughed at him.

The problem is he isn't the "material" for entering business world.

"The next is the nine painting from the famous painter. The starting price is 800,000 dollar." Auctioneer said, Feng Chen Yi's people force to raise hand.

"Uh, there are rumor that General Manager Feng's father really like this painter painting, perhaps today Feng Chen Yi in order to gain his father favor, no matter what this paint we should win over? Even the price has up to 1,400,000 dollar, will it exceed General Manager Feng's price?"

"Xue Tong." Yu Ao Tian rolled his eyes: "This things, no matter how much the price, you should take it!"

"Yes."

"Beautiful. This is really my Ao Tian Ge, others seize us, we will fight back. Humph." Long Qi excited, he wanted to see how thing will end.

After while, the painting has been reaching to 4,000,000 million and ended up in Yu Ao Tian's hand. At this moment, Feng Chen Yi left the auction.

"Lao Yang, the youngster really is youngster. See, only to take revenge they fight as if you die I live. Simply to say, hard to become the talented person." The elders who sit at the same row smiled each other.

At this moment when the employees of the auction took down the painting and giving to Mo Xue Tong, she just wanted to receive...

"Xue Tong, go, give it to General Manager Feng."

"Yes." Mo Xue Tong walking towards Feng Chen Yi and gave him that painting.

"Ao Tian, what are you doing? Why you give him after we have..."

"CEO Yu? How do you do, I am General Manager Feng's secretary, Lisa. This is our General Manager Feng present for you. Moreover, he said he still have things to do so he takes his leave first, he won't wait till the end of auction. Good bye." After Lisa said, she gave the thing to Yu Ao Tian and hurried left the place.

"What stuff that gave by Feng Chen Yi? Don't say that?" Long Ye doubted said, but he saw Yu Ao Tian has unwrapped the gift... "Really the thing you want!"

Just now seeing Mo Xue Tong gave Feng Chen Yi the painting that won by Yu Ao Tian.

"What are you guys playing? What schemes that Feng Chen Yi plan?" long Qi who is still not understanding how businessmen "tricks".

His older brother who stood at his back laughed: "Ao Tian ah, it seems that Feng Chen Yi really has similar side with you, especially he likes to plunder others prey and then send back to the people. Really hard to make people to guess about this evil interest!"

"Long Ye, why don't you say that I have good eyes in seeing others?" Yu Ao Tian's eyes flashed. Stood up, he lifts up the small box, waving at the exit direction.

At the same time, in the exit way Feng Chen Yi also waving his box to Yu Ao Tian, smiled and then he left...

"Lao Liu, it seems you are underestimated both of that two brats, they are... compare to what you thought, both of them are real pain to confront!" CEO Yang attacked by saying those words.

"Lao Yang, I have received news about Yu Ao Tian intention to partnership with Feng group second young master, if the second young master really joining hand with Yu Ao Tian, in this way, there will no place for us inside China market?"

"Oh,... it seems this business fat (cash cow) later or sooner will eat by these two youngster." CEO Yang helplessly stroking his head...

"All of the guest, this is the last auction for today and also the climax. Old rule, it human auction!" after the auctioneer said, as seen there are two people who are pushing the transparent showcase slowly heading to the stage, while the inside the showcase is filled with a lady who wear sailor suit....

That girl is facing directly to Yu Ao Tian, suddenly his eyes emitting more than dangerous aura, the killing aura!

"Flat Chest!"

"Xiao Meng Li!"

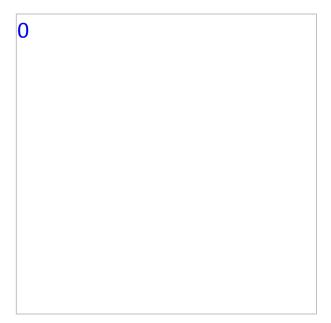
"Yao Yao, this is bad, grandpa seems cannot... cannot anymore!"

"Mom, what happen? What is going on?"

"Your grandpa kidney is necrosis, doctor said he must immediately changed it. But... it cost 12,000,000 dollar, we... what should we do?hu..."

Three days ago, it was the longest nightmare Yao Yao ever had in her life after she received that name card, she tried out to make the phone call. The others party simply said, as long as the girl still virgin the deposit money will be 1,000,000 million. About the job... she had guessed it!

She sitting and huddled inside the showcase, she cannot see the outside. But outside the auction there are lots of people keep on raising...



I feel bad for Yao Yao...

I should say, from the first chapter until this chapters, Yao Yao had been violate for many times, especially by Yu Ao Tian. she just simple girl who want to have simple life but somehow, her life turned be darker and darker after she broke with Feng Chen Yi and met Yu Ao Tian.

She has good academic, smart brain, high IQ but because of poverty and also sickly Grandpa, life is hard for her. The damn complicated fate that she has whether good or bad....

## **Chapter 53**

#### Inspection

"All guests, this is the last and climax auction. I think I don't need to make introduction, do I? In front of you, this is the pure innocent student! Moreover her body has been inspected that she is 100% virgin. Again, let me give little bit spoiler that she is\*\*\*\*\*oh!"

"\*\*\*\*? Is it\*\*\*\*?" all the people who joined the auction more excited to join this last auction.

"Ha Ha, the most important she isn't underage so rest assured, everything has been checked clearly, this time the "product" is over 18 years old. Guarantee, it won't troublesome you, in addition if you want to make her as 14 or 15 years little girl to fulfill your imagination is still well do. Alright, let end the nonsense, the opening price is 500,000 dollar, who want to raise the price!"

"Ao Tian! Ao Tian, is it true what the auctioneer said? Flat chest is....\*\*\*\*\*? Moreover still virgin? You haven't "finished" her?" Long Qi asked without thinking, while Yu Ao Tian's face turned to be so scary already.

He has known earlier that Yao Yao "body" condition which he kept secret, he just didn't want to make public! That damn little thing!

"Long Qi, you just not know, out of Ao Tian's taste, he is always prefer the "mature" women, this little girl just high grade toy for him, is it Ao Tian?"

He lazy to deal with both of Long brothers, coldly he said: "Xue Tong, don't be hesitate with the numbers, you should win this bet, win the little thing!"

Don't be hesitate? Yu Ao Tian underlined this word boldly. After he said, he left the auction house...

\*\*

"Miss Luo, your buyer has waiting for you in down stairs room, this is the room card." The auctioneer done and gave her the room card at Yao Yao's hand.

"How about the 1,000,000 dollar?" now she didn't want to think whether she sold or not, she also didn't want to think what would be heading in front of her, she just needed the money!"

"Rest assured, after you done with your job, the money will be transferred into your account."

"Thank..You." Ha, she is sold but still thanked the person, perhaps she is one of the most idiot ones today? But it could be understood, everyone has their own urgency?

After she goes down stairs, Yao Yao took out the room card, entered the room but when she just in half step...

"Yao Yao, what is your plan for future?"

"Ng...when I reached 22 years old have graduated from university I will take an entrance examination for graduate program, also looking for internship in big company. Perhaps after I passed the entrance, I might have little skill, in that way I might find better career. After that, at 25, I will get married, at 27 I will have child. At 30 I might have stabilized career with high position."

"Qie, you have already had Feng Young Master to support you, why do you want to be suffered? It still better you to focus be rich madam!"

"Xiao Man! I believe Feng Chen Yi will respect..."

She recalled the conversation between her and her best friend, Gong Xiao Man during high school time, but now... everything turned be bubbles. After she stepped in this room, she does not have right to talk about family, moreover marriage, she believe that, there is no man in this world will accept a girl that exchange her virginity with money?

"Humph, it does not matter, woman, if there is no family they still have career?" but... what is real meaning of family for woman?

She laughed clueless, takes long breath, slowly pushed open the door. "Is, is there anyone?" she used the smallest voice, walking inside the room...

But when she entered the room, she spotted that good looking face who smiled sadistically: "What? It is you?"

"As your owner, after I heard what you said, what do you think I feel?"

"You are my owner? You finally...bought me?"

"Humph? Bao Bei, your expression told me, you feel little bit regret." Yu Ao Tian said but during that time his eyes gleaming with dangerous yet obtain killing intention.

"No, as for me, whoever bought me just same."

"Just same?" she understood, whatever she said would only make Yu Ao Tian getting more and more pissed off!

"Two years ago searching for Host, two years later working as night club employee, and now sold yourself. Yao Yao, it seems that I was underestimating you, so that you just not more than "toy" in the bed, if normally you are this, why are you still pretending to be... so naïve in front of me?"

"Yu!!!" every words that the man accused on her, it was piercing deep inside her heart, but suddenly she realized there was no use to make any explanation because it just excuses. Able to stand here, did this mean how useless she, didn't she?

"Yao Yao." Yu Ao Tian crossed his leg, sitting in the bed, coldly said: "now, strip! Show me!"

She nervous and trembling, her lowered head slowly lifts up: "Please...turn off the lamp, can you?"

"Hah, now I am your owner, you don't have right to make bargain with me, understood!"

Understood! She understood very well! She bites her lips, layer by layer strip herself. After she strip herself and leave her undergarment, she weakly said: "Can it?"

"What do you think?"

She undressed herself until there is no thread left.

"Opened your hand, opened your eyes, and looked at me!"

That man coldly commanded her, she stubborn to cover her chest area. Tightly

closed her eyes...

"Come closer!"

One step, second step she has stopped in front of that man.

Yu Ao Tian made fist from his hand: "I said one more time, opened your eyes and looked at me!" after he said, he forcibly pinched her chin.

"Hu." her chin is hurt so much, she opened her eyes, straightly looking at the man expression. One bead tear, the second bead tears are slowly wet her eyes like crystal clear of flower dew.

"Good, this is good." He saw that tears dropping and wet her face, evil smile, his hand caressing her white skin.

"En..." pursed lips, she stepped back one step, and then facing that man cold eyes, she just can obediently walking in front of him.

"Tell me, when you sold yourself, how did they check your body?"

"They..." she mumbles, she really didn't want to recall the memory about checking up her body.

"I.. forgot."

"Forgot? Does not matter! Just tell me, did they touch here?" His finger touched\*\*\*\*

"Uh..." Yao Yao body response, hurried she shook her head: "No. No."

### 54 - 55

Today will post four chapters before I stopped A naive short-tempered girl for while (perhaps a week or more depend on...) in order to focus with Substitute Bride.

So, here the first two chapters...

This is the summary part of two chapters, enjoy

# **Chapter 54 and Chapter 55**

Yu Ao Tian keeps on teasing Yao Yao by touching one by one of her sensitive parts, confirm her whether that part has been touched by the auction's committee (the auction people). She kept saying no while crying.

She begged him to stop but the angry Yu Ao Tian became angrier and uncontrolled. She tried to use many ways in order to make Yu Ao Tian stopped his action from the begging, crying even negotiating with him but all just in vain.

"Tell me, how they checked on you?" this is the N times Yu Ao Tian asked.

Her mouth sealed so tight finally Yu Ao Tian used the last moved. It was the disgusting ones.

He asked her to perform fellatio by hand (you check yourself in google).

Yao Yao knew there were many women slept with him and also perhaps did same things. She felt so disgusting about that thing. She refused but he forced her to do. There was nothing she can do, except crying for her fate.

Even Yu Ao Tian asked her to perform fellatio, it was not to satisfied himself but more to vent his anger on her. After torturing and taunting her verbal or physical, he stopped for moment.

\*\*

"Bao Bei, you dares to sell yourself, you must prepare yourself to confront with various type of owner? At the moment we will continue the game."

Once Yao Yao thought what other worse thing would happen to her, her body could not stop from trembling. He teased her, he taunting her, he torturing her....

Ring...Ring...Ring... suddenly Yu Ao Tian phone ringing, even he hates to pick up the call still with unhappy expression he said: "Bao Bei, don't stop, keep on!"

Yao Yao did not dare to stop.

"Pardon me to disturb you, Ao Tian. I can't help but I think this matter will get your interest."

"Oh?" his eyes shines brightly, he really wanted to know what good news Long Ye wanted to tell him and made his mood better.

"You, asked me to find about Yao Yao... the result has came out!"

"Very good! You wait for me, I will be arrived immediately!"

Would Yu Ao Tian leaving? Would this mean? She could...

Yao Yao lifts her head as if looking at him like "Thanks for the mercy"

"Bao Bei, Your luck not bad." But.... It all depend on what Long Ye got, at that time we will see how your luck! Thinking about this, suddenly his eyes showed evil and cold sight, looking at her scar in her left shoulder.

"Thank...thank you."

"Hah! But, I don't say everything is ended. You see...how I walk now?"

His smiled deviously by pointing at his "dragon".

Yao Yao little face turned white pale: "You... whatever, actually this is already ended, isn't it?"

"Heh." He narrowed his eyes: "You can make it by mouth!"

"Using mouth? I... I cannot..."

"Are you trying to make bargaining with me, now?" He did not do "take" her first (Yao Yao still virgin until now), it means that he has showed his mercy on her. He just did not understand why this little thing still wanted to force him move another back step?

"I really cannot...."

Yu Ao Tian didn't give her time, he directly force "it" into her mouth.

After while....

"Little thing."

"What is this?" she bent herself, pick up something from the floor that threw by Yu Ao Tian, she saw: "Bank Note?" 100,000 dollar? What...does he mean? "I, I don't need tip!" she just wanted the amount that she needed.

"Tip? Hah, you really funny, I don't get what I expected from you, why should I

give you tip?"

"But...what is about this money?"

"That is what you deserve for." The basic thing for all women who were doing it with Yu Ao Tian would always get money.

"I, I just don't understand what your meaning?"

"Not understand? Oh...that's right, you are not working in this field, that's why you don't know anything." He turned his back, leaving the room but before that: "That company that sold you, the money that they promised you, afraid...ah. If you really love money that much, how but consider, consider to be my lover." After he said, at that time when Yu Ao Tian leaving that place his face turned be so cold.

Even this little lamb is fell to his hand, but if today, if today he didn't show up in that auction, or he just left like Feng Chen Yi, would there be someone came and took her then ate her up?

"You damn little thing, no matter you are really that naïve or you just pretending to be naïve, you will never escape from my hand!"

At this moment, Yu Ao Tian did not want to think the reason why she sold herself, he even did not want to understand what "difficulty" she had. For domineering man like him, there is nothing more challenging to conquer the every obstacle!

After he arrived at the apartment where five people live together, Yu Ao Tian knocking the room of Long's brothers. "Where is your brother?"

The person who opened the door is Long Qi: "My big brother is on the way, just wait for him a moment, Ao Tian."

"Why are you here?" he said while sitting in the sofa.

"I just know that you asked my brother to check on that Flat Cheat identity, so that, I also come to wait for that."

"Heh, Long Qi ah, you are still so busy doing of nothing."

"Qie, you are the one busy doing of nothing, why you need to check about that flat chest"

He frowned, coldly looked at Long Qi, if not because of that scar, he will never have interest to check on that little thing!

"creak" the door opened, Long Ye and Han Li Shang are coming together.

"Ha, Ao Tian! I want to tell you two things!" once he spotted Yu Ao Tian, Long Ye who was so excited sitting in the television rack, looking at three people who sit in front of him, he blinking his eyes mysteriously: "You make a guess... who is that little thing actually?"

Han Li Shang not interested to know, so he flings aside.

Yu Ao Tian also looked so composed, but only Long Qi who seems be so excited to know: "What? Who is she? Big brother, you faster say!"

### **Chapter 56**

# Yao Yao is talented little girl

"Hah, that Xiao Meng Li... Ka Luo Men's member!"

At the moment, three of the men showed same bright eyes.

"Ka Luo Men? That is the only organization where all the members are having super high IQ?" Han Li Shang coldly opened his mouth.

"That's right! Not wrong! Moreover... this Xiao Meng Li just lost 5 point from Yu Ao Tian's IQ!"

"So that, her IQ must be 205?" no wonder she could fix her mobile phone with the computer only within 2 minutes. But... just in this time suddenly wanted to scold her with, you damn fuck talented little girl why should you come and work as elevator lady? Does this mean\*\*\*?

"Brother... are you sure will all the data that you have? Because no matter how I tried to look at that flat chest really not look alike talented little girl moreover are you really sure she just lower by 5 point from Yu Ao Tian?"

"Yes, at the beginning I also suspicious with Xiao Meng Li's data regardless right or wrong. No matter how many times I made the check, the result was same. Since she was 12 she went to Japan as the number one China top student to be the exchange student, after that, she entered top one high school in Japan, besides she always got the awards, certificate and scholarship every years, at 19 she enrolled in top one university in China. You guys can take look of her data." After said, Long Ye gave the data to them.

Long Qi is so excited while he flipping page by page, carefully read: "Woah, flat chest has so many awards and certificate. Does flat chest is book worm? So that, made her looked so stupid? Foolish? So that she only good at study?"

"Whose knows." Long Ye shook his shoulder, but his face looked directly to Yu

Ao Tian who looked so composed: "Uh... Ao Tian, you?"

"I just want the data before she went to Japan!" After he said, his face looked gloomy.

Long Ye took long breath, he helplessly shook his head: "Actually, this is the second thing that I want to tell you. Regarding Xiao Meng Li's data information before she was 12... all was kept as top secret by the government. No matter who the person trying to track down about her data, it was clueless. Even her data after her 12 years old was track down from Japan."

Stood up, Yu Ao Tian walked with big step. The remaining people just staring him with strange eyesight...

"Why does Yu Ao Tian only wanted flat chest data before her 12 years old? Others... why should her data kept as government top secret?"

"There are only two types of person who data would keep as government top secret, one of the types is those in highly risk with dangerous."

After hear from Han Li Shang who said with cold tone, Long Qi thought flat chest not seem as someone might in high risk dangerous, shook his head: "She does not seem to be someone in high risk dangerous, how about the second?"

"The second is... someone who has important background!" he said. Inside the house the atmosphere is so strange....

\*\*

"No money! No money! No money! The phone is shut! The phone is shut! It seems what did Yu Ao Tian said was right, that company was.... Hu...hu..." Yao Yao has waited for more than half day, but there was nothing changes in her account book, even the phone number cannot be phoned.

Being tricked... she was deceived!

Why, why God not take a good look of her, she has face such many troubles and yet she was deceived?

She never entered the society, so that she not really knows the dark side of the society. This time when she backed to China, the first thing she wanted to do was entered the society, only in short 2 weeks, she has tried her best to get into

the situation, and also understand her situation is described as standing in thin layer of ice.

"Mom, grandpa, him..." Yao Yao looked so frustrated and sad when she came to hospital.

"Yao...Yao Yao, your grandpa...hu...hu..." Mother Luo just spoke two sentences but her tears are already streaming down.

Yao Yao knows very well that her mother is strong woman, if not because something too bad or too helpless, her mother won't ever cried. "Mom, I, this past few years I have 100,000 dollar saving, do you thinks this is enough?"

"You, your saving?"

Don't ask! Don't ask! Mom, I beg you, don't ask me about this saving. I begging you. she really afraid if her mother know about this money, she will not be able to hold this pressure and also the hurt.

"Enough, enough. Enough..." Mother Luo hurried wipe dry her tears, she forces herself to smile. She understood her daughter, she also can see her begging eyesight, so that she did not ask the resources of that money.

And then...

Yao Yao also not explain to her mom, she knows that the money isn't enough! She made fist: "Mom, you wait for me. I will come to get the rest of the money."

"Yao Yao? What foolish thing you said? 1,000,000 dollar, what will you does to earn that much?"

"Mom, you rest assured, I won't steal or rob. You wait for me...just wait for me..." after she said, she turned her back and left the hospital.

"Yao Yao! Yao Yao...Yao Yao.. silly girl, it does not mean either steal or rob then the money mom will take it. silly... girl..." tears, it wet that old face of her mom, she really afraid! Afraid that her daughter would do silly things.

When night almost comes, Yao Yao has stood in front of magnificent splendid building for half hour, her face is struggling, tensed and complicated.

"There is no way... really no other way, I don't have any option!" she made fist, gather her courage, she faster rushing inside that magnificent splendid building

lobby.

"Miss, Miss! Stay still. Who do you looking for?" the security in front of the door and also the receptionist stopped her.

Yao Yao hurried to take out the name card from her pocket.

She looked at the receptionist in front of her, smiled: "Miss, please get in."

That name card was Feng Chen Yi's name card which he gave her that time when they were in elevator, for the business man the name card could mean two things, one is for business purpose and the second is the special case purposes like Yao Yao had, the 24K card name. this card name showed her special "status", so that no one can stop her when she showed that card name.

"Miss, are...you?" Lisa is the person who sits in front of the General Manager office, at moment she recalled where she ever met this little girl.

"How.. how are you." Yao Yao is trying her best to be composed, calm down and smiled: "Are you Lisa? I want to meet Feng Chen Yi."

Lisa rolled her eyes: "Excuse me, do you have appointment with General Manager Feng? If not then...

Without waiting for Lisa, faster Yao Yao showed her that gold name card.

"Wait for moment!" turned her back, Lisa rushing got into Feng Chen Yi's office room, not long after that she came out: "Please get in."

Pushed that heavy wooden door, the first sight that caught her eyes is the splendid glamour office room, she rushed inside the room. "Feng..."

"My beloved Yao Yao, are you missing me?"

Confronting with this kind of intimidating tone and also domineering aura of Feng Chen Yi, she really hard to open her mouth, clearly first time she loved Feng Chen Yi was him, this person, this man!

She would rather to make contract with devil and go to hell other than insulted by Feng Chen Yi.

She would rather sold her soul and herself to Yu Ao Tian rather than came back to Feng Chen Yi's side.

She loved him,

She hated him,

Yet, she missed him

### **Chapter 57**

### Being his lover

"Come, let me see, are you getting fatter?" he stood up, slowly step by step walking in front of Yao Yao, he looked her from head to her toe, coldly he grabbed her neck: "Or do you really going to be mother?"

"Feng Chen Yi!"

"I just give little attention to my ex-girlfriend, why are so you angry?"

He tried to smiled, but that pair of cold eyes really made her uncomfortable, but did he really concerned her. "Feng Chen Yi, I...today I don't want to argue with you."

"I also don't want to argue with you. If you have thing to say, say it!" his smiled vanish, he coldly sitting back to his chair.

Perhaps in this way he might feel little bit comfortable: "You... can you borrow me 1,000,000 dollar?"

"Hah?" His eyes gleaming coldly, he curled upward his lips: "1,000,000dollar? Yao Yao, since when you are opened mouth asking for lion (greedy)? As I remembered when I was dating you, you never brought up money matter with me."

Indeed, when they were dating, others than he forcing her to take the presents, she really never spent single pennies of Feng Chen Yi's money. And then, after they broke two years ago, she begging him alike beggar for 1,000,000 million, she also felt ashamed. "Can...you borrow me?"

"Can!" Feng Chen Yi nodding, Yao Yao not that angry anymore, because she really needed this money so much, but at another second... "but...with what status you come to borrow money from me?"

What status? "Feng Chen Yi, you... what do you mean?"

"If you come as my ex-girlfriend, I won't borrow single penny for you. But if

you come as...my lover status, I will not hesitate to give you money, moreover... you don't have to pay back!" he props his chin with his hand support on his desk and laughing.

This kind of laughing piercing deep into her which has crossed her limitation!

"Chen Yi, have you seen yesterday news? One of the Japanese CEO finally revealed that his lover is an artist. I never thought that businessman who seems to be righteousness turned to be someone who "pet"lover."

"Heh, I don't think that is the CEO problems, on contrary I thought the woman is the one who cannot make herself to be respected by man so that she becomes lover. If were you then, I will make you as my wife."

"qie! Who wants to be your wife. annoyed!"

The person that not worth to get people respect only can be lover, so that the current her in front of him is someone that not worth to be respected? "Feng Chen Yi, perhaps I might be someone lover, but...I will never yours!"

"shua (brush)" at the moment, his good looking face is changed more than gloomy expression: "Luo Yao Yao, do you refer to the man that made you pregnant?"

"Ha Ha, you guessed right! Just pretending that I never came today, good bye!" after she said, she turned and left.

"Argh....Yao...Luo Yao Yao!" Feng Chen Yi rushing to chase after her, but she has run far away even there no her shadow. "Damn!" he is extremely angry and glared at Lisa who sits in front of the office.

She fears, pretending see nothing and lower her head.

"Lisa, the thing that I told you to check, is there the any result yet?"

"Feng... General manager Feng... I have asked the private detective to do it. Perhaps few days there will the result."

"Alright I understood. Now, hurry you put down all your works, quickly give this 1,000,000 bank notes to Luo Yao Yao!"

"Oh....!"

Outside the splendid building of Feng group, the sun sets, the night wind brushes her face, crystal beads of tears streaming down but at same time dried by the winds.

It clearly her purposed coming today was expecting to find Feng Chen Yi and gave a try to borrow money from him, but because he said that words to her suddenly she felt so sad, why should she be that sad?

Because... she still loves him, is it?

"Uh..." it cannot be denied, actually two years later after she met him for first time inside the elevator, all the past memories were flashing to her mind, but because... all those feeling just mixed with her hatred because his betrayal.

Would she really forget him? Perhaps she should really forget of him now, he is not the same Feng Chen Yi that she knew before, while she... is she still same with that Yao Yao? "Hahhahahaa...." She squatting on the side street, she gave the impression of being crazy laughed while took out her mobile phone. "Hello, I am Luo Yao Yao. Was that thing you say still valid?"

"What matter?" that side of person asked, that person is Yu Ao Tian's voice.

She understood, this man is smart guy, he just pretending in order to bully and tease her, but the current her, she just not in position to bargain? "be, be your lover, that matter." After she said that last word, she cannot hold her tears anymore, her vision is blurred.

"of course. Come to Long Ye's villa number 183. I will be waiting you in here."

Ended the phone call, she wiped her tears, she stopped the taxi in the street, getting into the taxi. After this she will have the most shameful life for the rest of her life....

"Feng Chen Yi, perhaps I might be someone lover, but... I will never yours!"

During her young and inexperienced time she had enjoyed those romantic and sentimental things, she wanted him to have the best memory about her in his heart, just like she expected to keep him in her heart as the most beautiful...

"Uh...Miss Luo! Miss Luo!"

Luo Yao Yao has been getting into the taxi in front of Feng group's building while Lisa is chasing at her back. She called her, but the taxi has gone far away.

"Hello, General Manager Feng, Miss Luo has gone."

"Then you go and send to her house!"

On that phone call Feng Chen Yi yelling at Lisa with anger voice, Lisa never seen this uncontrolled and lost temper Feng Chen Yi before, he always be the composed person as she knows. But now... since when her boss is so easy to lost his temper? Perhaps, after he met that girl who named Luo Yao Yao, after she showed up that moment...

\*\*

After she arrived at the address given by Yu Ao Tian, her eyes caught beautiful yet expensive villa. She pushed the bell button in front of the door, not long after there is no one came out.

She pushed the villa's door, she sees all the furniture seems to be new, all of them. Perhaps this is new Villa. "Excuse me, is there anyone here? I come to meet Yu Ao Tian. Excuse me, is there anyone here? I come... to meet Yu Ao Tian!" she keeps calling but there is no one answer. She just slowly walking to living room.

But inside there still no one, Yao Yao eyes is caught by the contract agreement put above the table.

She took it and read...

(The lover agreement) she read carefully every pages of the agreement document, every contents of the pages give her the feeling she really sold. Uh, actually isn't she really come to sell herself?

"Bao Bei, eh? Have you read the agreement contract?"

Turned her head, seeing Yu Ao Tian walking inside the living room. She put down the agreement contract, stood up: "I have read the content, no matter what, I accepted. But... you should promise me three things!"

### **Chapter 58**

# Humiliated by the contract agreement

"What are the three things?" Yu Ao Tian asked, he sat in the sofa.

"First, you cannot say anything about our relationship to the third party."

"Agree." That is what he also wanted too.

"Second, during the working time, I hope we keep our distance as boss and subordinate relationship."

"Fn."

"Third... you should give me two days off every week!"

"Bao Bei, don't you think... you are more and more bold?" After he said, his cold eyes looked at her.

"Alright, one day, only one day, can I?" she just wished even one day it more than enough for herself. She looked Yu Ao Tian with begging eyesight.

While after, he nodded: "Can." He pointed at the agreement contract: "Sign it."

This lover contract is bind for three years, as for normal girl three days are more than hell. She trembling pick up the pen, hold on, paused, hesitate she...

This time, Yu Ao Tian took the agreement contract.

"You?"

"If you are unwilling, I think, you better no need to sign?"

"No! I... I am willing!"

"Are you sure?"

"I am..sure." actually her first expression was so hesitate but suddenly it

changed so certain about her decision, she took the agreement contract from Yu Ao Tian's hand, immediately signed her name. "Give you."

After he took the agreement contract, Yu Ao Tian curl upwards his lips, smiled. His smiled really sharply pierce into her eyes.

It really true that he is really the number one yakuza big boss in Japan, he even can make the other party to lose satisfied.

She sits in the sofa thinking about her unfortunate, but at the next minute, after Yu Ao Tian said something, she just realized that she does not have any right to complain about her fortune, after all, it based on the agreement contract, there is no one force other party, everything is based on willingness of one's self.

"Alright, Bao Bei, this house is yours from now. You tell me how many maid you need." Yu Ao Tian throws bunch of keys.

"No, I don't need any maid." She hopes this matter only knows by Heaven, earth, him and herself.

"So, do you have any request, faster tell me."

"There is! I hope now you can give me..." *let everything happen yesterday as void, now you stand in front of me...* suddenly her phone ring. "Wait a minute." She turned her back, pick up the phone: "Hello?"

"Yao Yao, this is Mother."

Mom calling, is something happen? "Mom, is grandpa, he..."

"No, your grandpa is alright now, just now there was someone who has settled all the medical fees. Now... mom just wanted to see you, having a good chat, do you have time?"

"Alright, I will come to find you." she hung her phone call, with suspicious eyesight she looked at that man who still sitting in sofa, Yu Ao Tian: "Is... you who paid all the medical fees of my grandpa?"

"En? Didn't you come to find me and agreed to be my lover because you need money for your grandpa medical fees?"

He...after all he already knew it! Since the moment she agreed to be his lover

before, he has already paid all the medical fees, but how could he so sure that she would agree to be his lover?

Ha, but this is the reality, she has signed the agreement contract, she even happily to sign that agreement contract. Probably, all—everything has been in Yu Ao Tian grasped?

At this moment, Yao Yao could sense how scary this man, Yu Ao Tian who sitting in front of her, he is deep and unpredictable, she just similar to the toy in Yu Ao Tian's hand, a chess piece or the doll.

But how can Yu Ao Tian found out about Yao Yao's grandpa sickness? Was it because the report that Long Ye made. He actually not satisfied with the contains of the information, so that if he really wanted to know more about her, he must start it from her family member, so in this way, he got the information about her grandpa sickness, just because of this he knew that she would agree to be his lover!

Before she officially becomes Yu Ao Tian's lover, Yao Yao asked him to give her three hours for visiting the hospital to meet her mom, wanted to know what she mom wanted to tell her, the second, she wanted to take some her stuffs from her home.

After she arrived at hospital, she just knew that her grandpa has moved to the VIP single room, the patient room really beautiful. "Mom"

"Yao Yao, you come. We, we talk at outside." Mother Luo looking at the grandpa who has slept, nervously she brought her out from the patient room: "Your grandpa condition is already stabilized, after three days he will go for surgery. About the money... that, tomorrow I will change your grandpa room to the ordinary ones, on this way... the money that your boyfriend gave that 2,000,000 dollar, at least you can give back to him 800,000 dollar."

Boyfriend? "Mom, he... is he told you?"

"Ha ha Ha, it was his assistant who gave the money. I didn't see the person." After she said, Mother Luo cannot hold her tears anymore, she crying. Nervously Yao Yao hugged her: "Yao Yao, Mom... mom really sorry to you, I am sorry!"

With heavy and guilty feeling, mother Luo regained herself, when that

assistant gave her that money she felt something amiss, but grandpa condition is worst and she could not delay anymore, so she just took the money. Inside her heart, there is nothing than she so sorry to her daughter.

"Mom...mom! I, I don't understand your meaning, why are you saying sorry to me?" she loosen her hug, she tried her best to pretend that she is so happy: "He and I, actually we have been together for long time, he really treats me very well, very good. Or else how could he gave money for grandpa?"

"Yao Yao, you don't need to say anything, you are my daughter, am I not know you? anyway, you should remember, if you really not happy, I beg you not to force yourself because of money, even mom needs to sacrifice everything, mom will work to the utmost in order to pay back the money to that man!"

There is nothing can compete and compare to this twos, the mother and daughter, Mother Luo knows very well her daughter characters, since she was a kid she could force herself to the utmost in order to make other happy, even now, Mother Luo could see that her daughter will try her utmost to act happily so that she does not worry about her, and then, she only can see her but cannot help to lessen her burden!

After Yao Yao said good bye to her mother, she went to her house, just arrived at in front...

"Miss Luo, I have waited you for long time, finally you go home."

Is she? She is Feng Chen Yi secretary who named is Lisa? "Is there a problem?"

"This is our General Manager said that should be given to you. Beside that he said, he really sorry for everything happen this afternoon." After said, Lisa gave her the bank note in Yao Yao hand.

At the moment, she felt everything is so ridicule, not understood... she really not understood Feng Chen Yi, what game he played?

Meeting him is pain, finally after she decided to give up, he even comes to give her new hopes. Did he know how difficult to give up on one feeling, but when she took that... at the moment she....

The big bead of tears one by one fall down, she really does not know with this kind of feeling she should receive this bank note. If, if this bank note came little

bit earlier, if he did not say that thing in his office, perhaps she should not...

It's too late, everything just too late...

"brush" "brush", as if that bank note in her hand suddenly changed to be snowflake, she raised her hand as if she surrender to heaven, alike the patches of snow falling slowly and melting, this just like her feeling for Feng Chen Yi that scattered and torn into pieces...

### **59**

Today I have more free time so I update another chapter.

Soon we will catch up with the manhwa version. Hope you enjoy it

## **Chapter 59**

#### **Toyed**

She came back to that cold Villa, opened the room at second floor, that man has already lying in bed, waving his hand: "Come here."

Her footsteps felt so heavy, Yao Yao rest herself at the bedside, when she just wanted to rest suddenly Yu Ao Tian has already pulled her down to his embrace.

"Uh."

That hot lips with domineering aura, cold hands stripped her dress layer by layer.

Under that domineering aura, that white snow skin is trembling, that man lips gently kisses her neck to her collar bone. When he licked to her earlobe.... His tongue....

"Uh en." She endured herself, closed tight her eyes, her little hands made fist. As if she were a death or wood. Silently she is lying on the bed while that man keeps on teasing her.

That ice-cold hands moving in her body, touching her chest moved to her stomach. Her body still trembling, at the beginning it was so tensed but after that she loosens up.

Yao Yao might seem to be so "cooperate" with Yu Ao Tian, cooperate to stay still doing nothing, no denial, no refuse, no objection but because of these No's he was so unhappy.

Yu Ao Tian tried to provoke Yao Yao and just as predicted for Yao Yao's short tempered, he got hers.

The beginning she has given up, not wanted to struggle or did anything just let him to toyed her but because of Yu Ao Tian, she provoked. She regained herself back, the hot-stubborn character.

"You have won, why do you still want to dig my wound by provoking me?" She

said.

But Yu Ao Tian never thought he as winner because if not her grandpa sickness, would she obediently send herself to his in front door? Yu Ao Tian is someone value process more so that won over this kind of thing, he made him not happy.

"Dig into your wound? Hah, I just want to tell you, since you are already be my lover you should obey to the rules, knowing your own status!" he half kneel at the bed, gradually touch her little face, that handsome face get closer to her face: "Little thing, if you really want to through peaceful days within three years, you better know your status, or else... this three years you will live as if you death!" he loosens up, coldly turned: "I hope there is nothing like this happen in the future, I leave." After he said, he slammed the door and left.

His words just similar to the reaper, one by one gets into her ears, it stayed long. Now, she doubted herself, maybe she has made agreement with devil.

She crying because she felt ashamed and also humiliated at the same time, she did not know when she could get up from this nightmare....

One day in the morning.

"CEO Yu, yesterday afternoon contract with Ao Ting company (Austrian Pavilion Company), they have already sent it."

"CEO Yu, the thing that you asked me to do yesterday have done." That day when Yu Ao Tian entered the company, most of the high management executives approached him and made report to him about their work progressed.

Once the elevator door opened, when Yao Yao sees there are lots of the high management executives get into the elevator her heart thumping unstoppable.

This is her first time to meet her Boss, Yu Ao Tian as Lover status and also employee, simply to say her nervousness is doubled, she really afraid people would find out her relationship with Yu Ao Tian so she lower her head.

At the outside, Yu Ao Tian could sense Yao Yao nervousness, he even on purpose to lean closer to hers.

This moment, Yao Yao can feel the warm temperature of this domineering man's body.

"CEO Yu, our Berson Group annual report has already done, I have gave it to secretary Mo."

"En, I understand, later I will review it." his voice is low but sounded stern.

This is Yao Yao first time to hear the conversation between Yu Ao Tian with his subordinates, the way his usual speaking completely different, this kind of manner really on contrary. She also doubted whether the man who standing at her back is still a same man with the Yu Ao Tian she knew!

Suddenly, she feels strange there is hand that touched her shoulder, she tilted her head...

What is Yu Ao Tian doing? Nervously she looked at her surrounded, still better all those high management executives are standing at Yu Ao Tian's back, while only him who stands right behind her, so no one is paying attention to this.

She moves her body, she really wanted to sway away that hand in her shoulder, but who knows...

His hand becomes more brazen because he slips his hand to her dress pocket.

"Uh." Yao Yao was shocked with her sudden moan, she afraid to catch other attention, she bites her lips, furrowed her brow.

"Oh yeah, CEO Yu, two days ago during the business forum, the board director of Mo Lin had informed you something."

"What?" the way he spoke still so normal, but his nasty hands are stroking and moving, touching her sensitive parts.

That touching arousing her tension, she forced herself, she wanted to stop his bad intention but there still outsiders, so that better for her to endure, her white face suddenly turned red.

"The President Director of Mo Lin president is inviting you to have meal on this Friday."

"Meal? Asked General Manager Long to go, I don't have time."

"Yes."

The conversation goes smoothly; she bets no one will realize at this moment their CEO Yu is harassing the elevator lady. He stretched his hand to out from her undergarment.

Yao Yao finally able to take long breath, but another minute, his nasty hand is touching her chest.

No!!!

Yu Ao Tian really has pleasure to tease her inside the elevator. He teased her one after another.

Is he crazy? How can he do this inside the elevator?

Yao Yao is drove crazily by Yu Ao Tian but she could not do anything except glaring and glaring him with deathly eyesight.

At the moment, Yao Yao reached her limit suddenly...

"CEO Yu, regarding..."

"If you guys still have things to report to me about works, later all of you come to my office." Because he really not in mood to hear their reports and he is busy with teasing his little lamb.

"Yes."

Poor little lamb, Yao Yao. She still needs to endure her suffering longer inside the elevator.

### **Chapter 60**

## She is extremely sensitive

Just in time...

The elevator stopped.

This is bad! It seems that there will be people who wanted to get out from elevator, in this way the people might see what Yu Ao Tian doing. Why he still haven't stretch out his hand!

When the elevator door opened, inside the elevator there is foot step sound.

Yao Yao brain, "explode" as if her brain emptied.

And then, in the middle of struggling in the matter of life and death, Yu Ao Tian finally stretch out his hand.

"CEO Yu, I take my leave."

"CEO Yu, see you."

When one by one the people are leaving the elevator, at the moment when only left two of them, even the air feels leaving them.

"Hu..." if not because she afraid falling to the elevator floor, she using her palm that stick in elevator wall to support herself. This is more than taunting herself! "Yu Ao Tian!!!!"

"Bao Bei, tonight wait for me." without give her an opportunity to criticize his violent action, after Yu Ao Tian said, he directly left the elevator.

"He? Just now he, what did he said? was it, tonight he asked me to wait..."

\*\*\*\*her small white face blushed, she panic, open her eyes bigger and glared at him, she hopes that he won't come...

Staring at the clock that almost showed 8 o'clock, Yao Yao silently sitting inside the villa, restless, waiting for Yu Ao Tian who is the "Emperor".

"Hope he will forget to come, hope he will forget to come." She kept on chanting these words, but when the clock showed 8 sharp...

"Ding Dong" the bell rang, she pulled together her pieces heart, and panicky opened the door.

"Bao Bei, seeing my coming, how can you welcome me with disgusting expression?"

That devious smiles get into her eyes as if she sees the reaper is smiling to her, she nervously frowned: "I, I really don't know how to express myself when welcoming you, so I just... used the current mood to welcome you." she turned her back, she walking to the living room.

Yu Ao Tian eyes rolled: "So, can I make an assumption that you does not want to see me?"

Silent, she expressionless sitting on the sofa.

"Humph, Bao Bei, are you sure that if tonight I don't come, you can spend the night peacefully?" after he said, Yu Ao Tian smiled and sat beside her.

"You, what do you mean?"

"En? Do you really not understand?" his smiled with bad intention, pointing at Yao Yao small face which later turned red.

"Bao Bei, I just realized, you are heavy "eater". Yesterday no matter how I played with you, you didn't show any reaction, but today when I just touched you in elevator in front of many people. I really don't know how to say you?"

It obviously, Yu Ao Tian mood is good today, at least he does not say any cold words to frustrate her but he even bickering with her.

"Yu Ao Tian! You have promised me, in company we will keep distance as...Boss with subordinate?"

"Didn't this afternoon we were keeping that distance as Boss and subordinate? You just not mentioned... the boss cannot harass the subordinate?" After he said, Yu Ao Tian handsome face just brushed to her small

face.

Yao Yao bites her lips tightly: "You, you are twisting the words and forcing the logic."

"En? Well, Bao Bei when you "wet" how should I call you?"

Seeing how he teasing her, her face turned hot and red.

"Come, I want to make inspection, inspection, it has quite long, did your "below" already dry!" after he said, Yu Ao Tian did not give her opportunity to react, he pulled her down to his embrace.

"No...no need to have any inspection. I am fine." She feel worried, panic in his embrace, her back is caressed by his hot palm.

"Bao Bei, you lie, if "below" still "wet" what should do?"

"I don't lie!" she hopes Yu Ao Tian to stop. But this man is black-hearted man, he is clearly teasing her.

His nose sniffed her neck, suck her skin...

"Uh.. you... this make me itchy... so itchy..."

"Bao Bei, you really become not honest, tells me, do you really think it itchy? Or you think...you feel it?"

One by one Yu Ao Tian words as if knife which pierce and bleed her, when he started it real itchy but after he licking and sucking it really... "Of course, I feel itchy!"

"Do you still lying." His tongue licked her earlobe, sucking...

"En... You, please don't act like this."

"Aiyaaa, so your earlobe also sensitive? How about shoulder?" he used his hand to stroke her shoulder, then he licked.

She even feel the stronger sensation, she moves her body, swaying her body: "En.. en.." she feel unbearable but moans.

"Aiya, even your shoulder also sensitive? Bao Bei, it seems I was right about you, you really have\*\*\*\*body, no matter where being touched, everywhere just your sensitive point." This should be mentioned, facing with this kind of body

which has high sensitiveness, he loves it so much, loves to death!

He really likes to play with the today Yao Yao, she is so naïve have little girl innocent but at same time she have woman charming aura. The yesterday Yao Yao was similar with deathly wood without any charm so he hates that.

Aiya, aiya, what should he do? Every time he teases her, he really covered with guilty feeling, but he just cannot stop it.

#### **Chapter 61**

# **Stop! I Cannot Endure Anymore**

"It seems, it is my fault, how should I compensate you?"

"No need....." Before she done, he has\*\*\*\*

After long time finally he stop because...

"Stop! Stop! I really cannot bear anymore." She grabbed his neck, "I really cannot... please stop it, I begging you!"

"Ah, you reassured Bao Bei, how would like I satisfied you this fast?" He stopped teasing her.

"Hu... hu...." Suddenly the feeling being sold appeared, she worries, she afraid, but at the moment he stopped she panic. Actually, what kind of feeling this is?

"Bao Bei, let's sleep."

"Sleep?" she regained herself, she panic looking at Yu Ao Tian: "You... still not leave?"

"En, not leaving." He hugged that petit figure and slowly brought her to room.

"Thump" Thump" "Thump"

Her heart is beating faster and faster. After they are inside the room, she almost got shocked.

When she signed that contract agreement, she has made preparation to be real woman but still... she really does not know how? If she rejected him, she must be humiliated by him?

He puts her in the bed, her body tensed seeing that man strip himself layer by layer, and then he just lying at bed. "Turned, turned off the light?" even she does not have right to reject, but she still hope everything just happen in pitch dark.

"En? Sleeping, of course turn off the light."

"Ah?" without waiting for Yao Yao reaction, the light has turned off, later, a pair of hand enveloped her tightly.

One minute...

Two minutes...

Things that she thought might happen not happen, what is going on? Yao Yao opened her eyes widen, she is not intending to sleep: "Yu...Yu Ao Tian, You... You asleep?"

"En?"

"Nothing."

After 5 minutes, she not move but opened her eyes again: "Yu, Yu Ao Tian? Are you asleep?"

"Fn?"

"Nothing."

"......" loosen up her body, when Yu Ao Tian turned on the light, his expression really not good: "Bao Bei, if you asked me once every five minutes, this bad habit better you change, I advice you. If the next five minutes you still asking me and the next words you still said nothing, I will straggle you death!"

"I, I am sorry. But..." Yao Yao who has chicken-heart little girl, hurried to pull the quilt to cover half of her little face, looking at him.

"But what?"

"Nothing."

"......" he almost crazy! "You want to ask me why is there nothing happen between us?" if he did not clear up the things, he afraid he would experience the next "nothing" "nothing" forever.

Yao Yao silent, she pulled the quilt closed all her face, not dare to see him but nodded.

"I still remembered I ever told you, if you do not want to do it then I will not force you."

He really ever said that before, perhaps when they were in elevator. "You really say for real?" Yao Yao pulled down the quilt little bit, exposed her pair bright eyes.

"Of course! But..." he curl upward his lips, smiled: "Except I lost control!" but he believe this little thing will not make him lost control at least this time.

Actually the happy Yao Yao suddenly feel frustrated after she heard: "What do you mean by losing control?"

Yu Ao Tian takes long breath, silently shook his head, this naïve little thing used her innocent eyesight to ask him, he afraid tonight he won't be able to have good rest: "Do you want me to demonstrate it?"

"No, no need." She shook her head, faster she covered her head.

She believes she won't beg him to do it for her, so perhaps she might able to pass three years in peace. This is really good...

But Yao Yao does not know that type of person Yu Ao Tian is. He is types of man that have many tricks and schemes to achieve his goal.

As long as he wants, it will be so easy for him to get this little thing but why he does not make his moves yet? He just wants to wait until she ripe little bit, just ripe little bit, after he gets her body and her heart, then...

He will dump her!

In the earlier of midnight, Yao Yao really cautious, she afraid to touch Yu Ao Tian's body but at the next hours...

She sleeps freely!

Gritting teeth, cuddle Yu Ao Tian, pulling his hair, he doubted whether this little thing really fell asleep or not, but the answer really disappointed.

Finally when he could endure until morning, Yu Ao Tian really feel like "you damn fuck" this kind of feeling because long time ago he ever promised himself not to sleep with this kind of girl but still he renounced his promise by sleeping with her.

Could he say that he really cannot sleep after the midnight? "Today I don't want to go to work, you also don't need to go!"

"How can it be alright? Yesterday I saw there were many people busy to make report to you, you must go to work every day to finish your work? Moreover, the top management elevator only has me as the elevator lady, if I don't go to work, who will keep the elevator."

"Well, you go by yourself first."

"Cannot! You, this is not responsible, the ancient wise Emperor, every day they go to court to settle the matters, it's only the incapable ruler that said they won't go!"

Azurro: I will have more free time until Monday. So, I thinking to speed up the translation project before back to the normal. Which project you wish me to translate more?

Ah~

So, most of you are like A Naive Short-tempered Girl compare to others ;( well, I grant you guys wishes alike Genie..... LOL

Here I post another Chapter of A Naive Short-tempered Girl

## **Chapter 62**

#### The scary punishment

"Ao Tian... you don't need to go to work, is it okay?"

"Cannot, there are lot of things that should be settle in the office." He was recalling his old memories, usually all the women that ever spent night with him always begging him to stay, and then... this Luo Yao Yao is the first little girl that beg him to go to work!

"I don't say that I won't go for work? I just told you that you go first, you working time is starting from 8 o'clock, while mine is 10."

Uh... that's right, she almost forget. Yao Yao just wanted to rise but hurried lying down again, she feels embarrassed stood in front his without wearing anything: "Can you... turned over your body, please?"

Yu Ao Tian helplessly shook his head, slowly turned over his body, if not because he is in good mood, he won't care her begging!

"I go to work first." After she wore her dresses, Yao Yao is leaving the villa.

Not long after that, Yu Ao Tian also moves and goes to office.

"Ao Tian, your face look not too good, didn't you sleep?" inside the security manager office, Long Qi crossed his legs, while watching at the surveillance camera's monitor screen, asking Yu Ao Tian who sat listlessly on sofa.

"En."

"Hah, yesterday you didn't go to sister in law place, also not visited hotel, so where did you sleep?"

"How could you know that I wasn't in Mei Yun place?"

"Uh... yesterday she called me, asking me whereabouts you. I said I didn't know. Eh, Ao Tian, actually where were you? Did you go to your new girl friend's place?" After he said, Long Qi smiled deviously.

"Long Qi! If you still speak nonsense, I take my leave first." Yu Ao Tian stood

up, just when he stood, the monitor screen catch his attention, the view inside the elevator.

As he seen, a middle-age bald head man who stood behind at Yao Yao's back. Soon after, that middle age man purposely threw his pen in the floor. At the moment Yao Yao bend her body, that man's hand faster touched her butt.

That time, Yu Ao Tian face is darkening!

"Fuck, pervert? This flat chest really, she grows up with that look really has aura to be bullied by men, cannot help!" Long Qi unhappily said.

Yu Ao Tian who sounded like reaper with low and cold voice said: "Which department he belongs to?"

"Uh, it seems he is the manager of finance department."

"Later you bring him to my office!" after he said, Yu Ao Tian faster leaving....

After random half hour later, Long Qi finally came to that fat finance manager department.

"Manager Long, Do you know why CEO Yu looking for me?" That person who followed at Long Qi's back is that fat man who starting to mumbles by himself.

"You go then you will know."

"Uh, Manager Long, inside this company who does not know your relationship with our CEO Yu is good? At least you give me little bit information, is there any possibility I will get promoted?"

"I have told you that I don't know, when you arrive then you will know!" Long Qi impatiently said, he opened the CEO's office room door. "Have brings him."

At this time, Yu Ao Tian is standing in front of his indoor mini golf. The sun shines to his tall slender body makes him looked alike immortal.

This is the first time for the fat manager to see this high capability person as rumor said in very close distance, as rumor said he is one of the top business minded person, nervously: "Yu, CEO Yu."

Yu Ao Tian did not hear this fat manager greet him so that he makes himself enjoying play that mini golf.

So that this fat manager better to keep silent, standing at one side waiting for the CEO to speak, during that time his eyes leisurely looking at Mo Xue Tong who also inside the office room.

She is one of the most beautiful woman in this company, the slender snow white long legs, plump chest, slim waist, if could smell her fragrant... too wonderful for words! Thinking about these stuffs, this fat manager without his realizing he gulping his saliva, \*\*\*impatience to make move.

"Have you done looking?" suddenly there is the cold voice, Yu Ao Tian finally stopped from playing his mini golf, his pair of hand supported by the golf stick, smiled deviously looking at that fat manager standing direction in front of the door.

"Yu, CEO Yu, you, what do you mean?" while he speaking, this fat manager forehead has cold sweat, it so clearly that CEO Yu was playing mini golf, how could he know that he secretly looking at Mo Xue Tong?"

"Hah." Yu Ao Tian laughed, he makes single moves suddenly there is loud sound.

Without waiting for that fat manager to react, suddenly the office room door being opened by two men in black suit.

Less than minute, they are grabbing that fat manager and bring him, forcing him to lie in that mini golf, they force his head to that mini golf hole.

"Yu, CEO Yu..."

"Slap mouth." Yu Ao Tian laughed and said,

But that fat manager is panicking when he heard his words: "CEO Yu, this, what do you mean?"

At that moment, suddenly the smile is disappeared from Yu Ao Tian face, he raised his hand and suddenly put his golf stick to that fat manager's mouth.

"Ah!" few of the yellow teeth mixed with blood flow out from that manager thick lips, he showed painful expression.

"I hate to repeat my words." Very obvious, Yu Ao Tian has lost his temper, even his voice sounded as cold as the gloomy hell.

After that fat manager heard it, he opened his mouth wide.

When he saw Yu Ao Tian was waving his golf stick, that white ball fall directly hit into that fat manager eyes. "Argh!!"

Seeing this tragic scene, Yu Ao Tian pretending to be shocked, said: "Oh my, I hit it." after he said, once again he waves his stick and hit it hardly.

This time the white golf ball directly hit to this fat manager nose.

He actually cannot endure it anymore, trembling he is begging, said: "I am sorry, I am sorry, CEO Yu... I, I am not really on purpose to peek on secretary Mo."

Who's know, after he said that moment, Yu Ao Tian regained to his old self, turned his body with angry aura, hurry walking in front that fat manager, he use the other golf stick to rise his head, looking at him: "You fuck, I told you to open your mouth wide, what bullshit you split? Did I ask you to speak?"

The unpleasant glare of Yu Ao Tian because the blood has stained his trouser, he stepped on one of that fat manager's hand at moment he hurried to clean the stained that he made to Yu Ao Tian's trouser.

Yu Ao Tian throws his golf stick, with cold and killing sight he looked at that fat manager, coldly said: "What do you think after you touched my woman's butt?"

Just in this moment suddenly the fat manager finally understand, so the elevator lady which harassed by him inside the elevator is Yu Ao Tian's lover? This is described as temporary pervert but get into huge disaster ah. "Yu, CEO Yu... I am begging you, begging you to forgive me this time, later I won't dare anymore."

At this moment, Yu Ao Tian with pity tone, took a breath: "Well fine then, I will forgive you."

"Really? Thank you! Thank you, CEO Yu." That fat manager kowtow him.

But everyone who ever know or have relation with Yu Ao Tian, they know that what kind of person he is! If Yu Ao Tian really has sympathy heart it means he is not Yu Ao Tian anymore!

### **Chapter 63**

## Bao Bei, Served You Right

He curl upwards his mouth, his eyes looked at the other side: "Well, Xue Tong, did you forgive him?"

"Uh?" The fat manager nervously, hurried looking at Mo Xue Tong who is standing not far from him.

As seen, her pair of hands are enveloped her chest, with her cold aura, she slowly walking toward him. When she stopped at that fat manager in front, she raise her middle finger.

Two men that hold down that fat manager's body lift him up.

Finally, this thousand year cold mountain exposed her charming smile, her slender fingers caress that fat manager chest and moving to his trousers. Slowly he unzip his trouser, she pulled out that ugly thing.

Confronting with this kind of provocative, the fat manager still in composed. But at the next seconds....

As seen! Mo Xue Tong left index finger which wearing beautiful ring is holding small knife.

Not to wait the fat manager to response...

"Argh....!" One of the most hysterical screaming, constantly echoing from inside that splendid CEO's office room.

The men in that situation suddenly dumbstruck for moment because felt numb in their head, the life also follow engrave, she really fucking damn cruel.

Only Yu Ao Tian that looked happily and excited, smiled: "Hah, Xue Tong performance always make me happy, I extremely satisfied!" because he really likes to hear that man's painful scream because being\*\*\*\*.

As for Mo Xue Tong, she usually speaks less, cold appearances, but once she really get her hand down she is merciless. This is perfectly matched to Yu Ao Tian's "Taste".

If for him women just toy in bed, but only Mo Xue Tong is different, his attitude towards her just not same as other toys women he had before...

"Ao Tian." Just in this moment, Han Shang Li entered the office room, the tragic scene caught his eyes but he acted as if seen nothing, hurried walking in front of Yu Ao Tian, coldly said: "Something happen!"

There still two hours to go before the working time ended, Yao Yao is in her post to waiting and greet during the rush hour of get work off time. At this time, the elevator move to higher floor, Yu Ao Tian suddenly enters the elevator.

Although she has tried her best to accept their kind of relationship, but still every time she meets him she feels awkward: "Go, Go where, Yu...CEO Yu."

"I come to find you." Yu Ao Tian face looked stern.

"Why?"

"Later you prepare to go off work."

"Hah? But, but my work time ended at 6." The normal office employee is ended at 5, while the service employee always late one hour.

"I asked you to leave; I have already told Long Qi."

"Cannot! I don't want to have special treatment!" Yao Yao affirmed herself.

He never thought that little thing really that stubborn, his black eyes rolled, once again, he forced to shut down the elevator.

"Hey, what are you doing, faster turned on, in the moment everyone is get off working."

"Little thing, you seem to be so respect with your job. But when you are as my lover, why don't you act professional?"

After she heard what Yu Ao Tian said as if it pierce into her, she really does not want to be reminded their status so clearly, she better to chose become unconscious or hazy perhaps this is called as run away from reality. "You turned

on the power of elevator, it is okay?"

"Hah, Bao Bei, with what status does you asking me to do?"

When Yao Yao asked with that kind of question, it chills her. inside the company he is the boss while she only a small employee, in life, Yao Yao is pet by him while she is his pet, no matter from what kind of status still she is the person who should listen to him.

"Go or not go?"

But this time... at least she should be persistent with her point of view! "Not going!"

"Very good." His black eyes flashed, he enveloped Yao Yao to the elevator corner and forcing her to sit down.

"Humph..." the intolerable seductive voice wrapped inside the elevator. A pair of hand slowly groping into her undergarment, touching her. "You, why do like to act this way...this, huh...this is inside the company!"

"You know this is company, you being molested by other but still could show such happy face." Yu Ao Tian who sat behind her showed bitter smile, but his pair of hand kept moving.

"Uh...I, when did I molested and welcomed it happily?"

"Are you sure? It was today afternoon, did that person not touched you..."He said, Yu Ao Tian moved his hand to her lower body: "Your butt?"

She shocked, "That, that person was not careful!"

"Not careful?" Yu Ao Tian really does not know how to say her, perhaps only this little thing naively thought that everyone in this world is good people.

Before Yu Ao Tian stop teasing her, he asked her once again, "Are you going to leave or not?"

Again, stubbornly Yao Yao replied him "I am not going anywhere."

"Fine, just don't regret with your decision!" He left her.

### **Chapter 64**

## **The Scary Night**

Yao Yao looked at his back that slowly go further, Yao Yao just not understand why she will get regret if she does not leaving her work early.

"Dong" The elevator is moved to first floor. "The working time has already ended but why there is anyone come?"

Usually before five o'clock, the elevator has packed with people, even some might go for overwork."

The elevator door, slowly open, the floor corridor dark, in front the door is no one.

How can there is no anyone? Don't... don't say it ghost?

At the moment her heart thumping crazily, Yao Yao who is in panic mode crazily push the button, closed the elevator door: "Faster close ah! Faster ah! Faster ah" just when the elevator door is going to close suddenly there is one big hand block the way.

"Argh!" she shouting and squatted down to floor covered her head.

Directly the elevator door opened, seven to eight people with black suit get into the elevator.

Huh... what is happen, so that there are people! Yao Yao relaxed little bit, but she does not pay attention to that group of men in black suit who are looking at her."

"Mr..." when Yao Yao wanted to ask them which floor they heading, suddenly one of the man directly push the button.

Oh, they are going into CEO's room? This late of night why are they going to do? Do they want to steal things?

Impossible...

One would like to ask, is there any thief that come to steal but still using elevator, moreover they are coming in group, together get inside the elevator to steal things, impossible they have guts to do.

The elevator move to upstairs, those men in black are looking each other, one of the men is coming closer to Yao Yao's back, just in moment he want to take out something from his pocket...

When the elevator is reached 28<sup>th</sup> floor, suddenly it stopped. So that those men who originally got into the elevator actually for that "man", he took out the pistol that hidden inside his bosom.

Yao Yao suddenly dumbstruck!

"Don't blame me that I don't tell you. Tonight you will regret it!"

"You will really regret for it!"

Hahahaha now, she has regretted.

When the elevator isn't completely open, outside the door there is no one, but afraid once this elevator door is closed, there must be big turned over? This time, deadmeat...

"Aiya, where is my contact lens?" when the elevator door closed, Yao Yao squatted down as if searching for her contact lens in the floor. "Oh my, how can I see if there is no my contact lens."

Those men are looking each other with suspicious glanced, one of the man shook his head, he is implying better to kill wrongly rather than to let off!

Just in this moment suddenly the light inside the elevator is off, all the people inside the elevator are trapped in darkness.

Elevator stop?

Trapping in darkness, all of them only able to hear each breathing sounds, both Yao Yao and those men in black, all of them are not recklessly make a move.

Perhaps it has passed couple minutes, suddenly she felt that was something touched her shoulder, she stretch out her hand to touched it...

#### A string?

She rolled her eyes, she does not have any doubt, she deathly grabbed that string as if her life is depended on that things.

Yao Yao is taken by using that string out from the elevator while those men in black suit didn't know that she has already left the elevator.

Standing above the elevator, there is wind that blowing into her small face, when eyes are adapting with darkness, one big figure standing in front of her.

This black figure, basically Yao Yao has made guess already.

Later on, pair of hands closed her ears. It feels alike chilling sound from hell shouted: "Killed all!"

Later on inside the elevator there only sound of clashing and peng peng sounds.

When the ears not hear any clashing or peng sound anymore, her nose able to smell thick blood smell spread and piercing into her nose. She not daring to ask, not daring to move, she just stupidly standing there while her head is empty.

Suddenly one soft lips touched her lips, there also the smell of Yu Ao Tian cologne, this cologne is perfectly cover that blood smell, her rigid body suddenly melt down.

Inside the darkness, she cannot see anything but she used her feeling, she able to feel his domineering presence, feeling his soft lips, and also that intoxicated feeling. She entirely has fallen into it.

And then...

When her rationality comes, at the moment she pushed away Yu Ao Tian who kissed her.

"You are heartless little thing, is this the way you thank me?" that cold voice said inside the darkness which sent the deathly vibe, Regarding with what is happening, this afternoon Han Li Shang had made report, he also had made the comprehensive prevention as long as those men dare to rush to the top floor all of them would be minced meat.

But the plan changed because of one person and she is Yao Yao!

"Ao Tian, do you really not care to that flat chest?" when they were inside the security office, Long Qi helplessly not bother himself asking, looked at him.

He has already told her to leave, but she didn't want to leave. For Yu Ao Tian who never been so patience with any other woman, he never paid attention for their life.

"Ao Tian, didn't you tell that flat chest clearly?"

When Long Qi asked that question, suddenly Yu Ao Tian recalled...that scar: "Quickly change the plan!"

Within 3 minutes, Yu Ao Tian re-plan his plan, when one of the men inside the elevator wanted to kill Yao Yao after the elevator stopped at floor 28<sup>th</sup>, before they able to do it, the elevator has stopped.

Compared to previous plan, the new plan could be say as something extremely exhausting the brain, not only to prepare from start and also the time quite short. Still he also needed to figure out precisely and make correct prediction about other party thought.

Perhaps this is something easy for Yu Ao Tian who has 210 IQ so that he did not need to waste much time, also the questionable thing is, why must be him come save this little girl by himself.

To his unknown, this cruel and unscrupulous little thing did this thing to repay him?

"I..." Yao Yao bit her lips. It is so obviously that she has already became his lover, although he was not coming to save her, actually there is no reason for her to reject him. But...

Dislike! Just dislike this way! She hates kissed by person that she dislike! She still not able to be...

Deathly silence.

At other second, she could feel that her body merciless pushed by Yu Ao Tian.

"Thumping" the persons above the elevator is going down inside the elevator.

#### **Chapter 65**

There is strong smell of blood, she difficult to stand up from the floor, her small hand accidently touching on something. This.. hand? Is it hand?

At this moment, Yu Ao Tian who is standing on the top of elevator shook off his night vision glasses, facing the surveillance camera, coldly said: "turn on the light."

The darkness disappeared replace with the light, there are about seven or eight corpses filled inside the elevator, at that moment Yao Yao is sitting above one corpse, she shocked almost faint, "Woahhhh" that loud voice followed with crying sound.

"What to afraid?"

Yu Ao Tian who still standing from the top elevator asked, she looked pity and stammered lift up her head, hurried nodding, but in front of him her crying face quite cute.

"Do you want to get up to here?"

"En, en, huhhuhuhu..." she really does not want to stay any longer in this kind of place, this just such scary, so scary!

"Later when I kissed you, will you refuse?"

Her body stiff, she just never thought that Yu Ao Tian would ask such question; she only can use her puppy eyes to move him, hoping that he takes her up from here quickly.

But Yu Ao Tian isn't someone easy to please with this? He directly closed the only small window of the elevator.

With this answered, Yao Yao must be stayed together with seven or eight corpses, "Alone with corpses."...

"Ao Tian, you become more vicious each days, you even in dire strait got refused by little girl to kiss you?"

Yu Ao Tian left the top elevator's roof and went to the front door of elevator in 28<sup>th</sup> floor. At this moment, Long Ye, Long Qi and Han Li Shang have waited to congratulation him.

Regarding to his conversation with Yao Yao, they have heard it before when they were in security office room, this time he could say has lost his face already. After all, He either as the outstanding and talented CEO or the underworld emperor, he never refused by any woman when he wanted to kiss them, besides there are still many women who make line waiting for him to kiss them.

"Long Qi, will you death if you are not speaking?"

"Cih!" Long who is standing beside him sneered.

They looked Yao Yao who crying until wet all her face through the surveillance camera, rotten bastard! Yu Ao Tian simply is rotten bastard. One moment he saved me, another moment he left me in here.

Indeed, indeed it all was my fault not listened to him, but how could he torture me like this? "Yu Ao Tian! Yu Ao Tian! Take me out! Take me out!"

"Well, what is your decision?"

"Promise! Promise! I promise you whatever you want, faster take me out!" she simply forced to be crazy.

The elevator door opened, when the pity Yao Yao but also cute appearance caught into everyone eyes, Long Qi laughing straight forwardly, Long Ye is curled lift his mouth while Han Li Shang just cool as usual.

Yu Ao Tian stepped on the corpses and walking toward Yao Yao who looked so weak, without waiting him to stretch out his hand, she has already took an initiative to fall into Yu Ao Tian embrace. Pair of her hands hugged him tightly, while pair of her leg clamp onto his waist, she completely looked alike Koala.

"Huhu huh u...Woah...." She not cares with her image, she is crying loudly.

"Enough, stop crying, your tear wet my clothes." This moment, the expression of loving Yu Ao Tian is looked so loathing.

But on all his people eyes, this Yu Ao Tian who is heartless and merciless suddenly changed to be someone with love...

Leaving Berson Group, everyone has gone to clear up the mess, only leaving Long Qi who stayed with them.

From Berson until the parking lot, Yao Yao keeps crying, crying, no matter how to coax her, even Yu Ao Tian who silent to conscience, did his joke out the limit, thinking even man who staying with bunches of corpse perhaps, they might half-deathly moreover if the person was a girl?

But this little thing was not listening to him, so that he only has this way to give her lesson. Seems that he really is a man who not able to coax a girl.

"Long Qi, drive the car."

"Oh." Long Qi sat on the driver seat.

Yu Ao Tian hugged Luo Yao Yao and sat on the behind seat, the car is slowly leaving Berson Group.

Seeing how this little girl crying such miserable, Yu Ao Tian hugged her and made her seat on his lap: "Don't cry. Okay?" he took the tissue and wiped her tears, very patient sweet talking with her. But, this was not effective.

The Long Qi who sat in front seat wondering, his role model, Yu Ao Tian how he would coaxing Luo Yao Yao since he looked so helplessly?

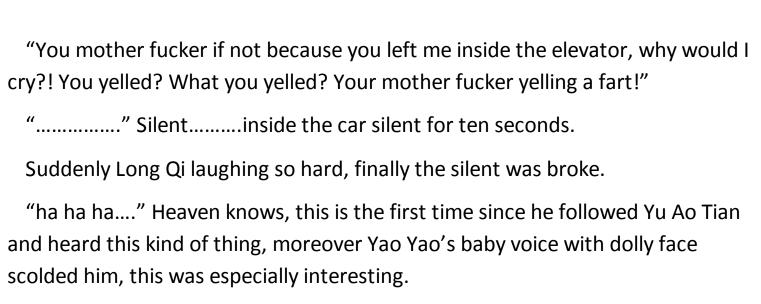
Bao Bei, stop crying...

"Stop crying..." the initially who spoke with faint smile expression suddenly changed to be slow and prudent, could see that Yu Ao Tian is trying to overcome his temper, but finally... "You Mother fuck stopped crying, annoying!" he exploded.

Long Qi who sat in front seat suddenly stop smiling, the angry Yu Ao Tian is more than terrifying, if not...Ao Tian Ge is types that not able to sweet-talking to the girl, moreover the little girl!

Perhaps she shocked with Yu Ao Tian and then silent, Yao Yao stopped crying, stare blankly looking at Yu Ao Tian.

Another moment... there will be drama to see!



"I have told you before, you are not allowed to say dirty words!" Yu Ao Tian coldly said.

To the unknown, not just Yao Yao not afraid of him, on contrary she even explained to him her mean: "I my mother fucker willing, I mother fucker like to curse, there is none of your mother fucker!"

*"* 

After hearing how smoothly Yao Yao said one by one her dirty words, Long Qi even hurried to stop the car: "ha haha." He could not stop from laughing, if the car still being driving under this circumstance, there absolutely would be car accident....

"You!" Yu Ao Tian was extremely angry, he just not understanding how could he meet this kind of little thing? He swear to himself that he does not want to have kid in his entire life, or else if he has kid like this Luo Yao Yao, perhaps his age would shorten for ten years!

"....." He has compromised, compromised, fine!

"Later in the future I will not scare you anymore."

After he said, Yao Yao did not react, even Long Qi who sat in front seat dumbfounded.

What kind of person Yu Ao Tian? He better to die rather than compromise other, moreover he was compromised little girl? Today must be joking, if looked back to the usual Yu Ao Tian, perhaps the next thing must be a slap.

He had ever said before, between the man and woman there are no differences, the thing that man can do, the woman also can do it, if because the

opposite is woman and then become soft-hearted, on that way would be trapped into woman's scheme. So that, he would not give any lenient and preferential treatment in gender.

But today he was...

Long Qi not understood, perhaps because Yu Ao Tian has good mood.

#### Chapter 66 and 67

"You, you must swear, you will never bully me again!" Yao Yao stopped crying and seriously looking at him.

"You don't be repellent!"

But she, Luo Yao Yao avowed herself to "eat" him today! "Humph, huh u....woah!!!" Luo Yao Yao closed her small face, crying louder.

Yu Ao Tian made fist on his hand, taking deep breath, suddenly he smiled: "Alright, I swear to you, I will never bully you anymore in the future."

"hi hi...hahahaha!" at the moment she put down her hands, there are bright smile on her face.

Finally Yu Ao Tian understood that, this little thing was faking, pretending crying! Very good, today he even toyed by this little girl. He squint his cold eyes, shaking his head looking at Long Qi.

Long Qi got down from the car so that he able to give a private time for both of them.

"Did you remember how I taught you about kissing before?"

"Ugh." She understood what would happen next, immediately she closed her mouth.

"Just now when you were inside the elevator you had promise, did you remember?"

Oh my, she seems....

There is slightly unwilling of her to put down her hand that closed her mouth, she pursed up her lips nervously.

Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao are kissing inside the car. This is not the first time Yao Yao kissed by Yu Ao Tian because he has violated her many times before. But, this time the kissed different with the before they ever had.

He kissed her softly and gentle, so this still the first time for Yao Yao to experience this type of kiss from Yu Ao Tian. Under the bright moonlight, inside the car, Yao Yao actually quite enjoy this kind of atmosphere. She could feel her body weaken but has very positive reaction.

"Huh, when your kissing technique will progress?" Yu Ao Tian teased Yao Yao, he smiled looking at Yao Yao who embarrassed and head down.

Yu Ao Tian moved to the driver seat and hurried he locked the car's door before Long Qi came closer.

"Hey, Ao Tian! Let me in."

"Don't you like to smile? Well, you just smile along the way to go home." After he said, Yu Ao Tian started the engine and leaving Long Qi alone.

"Isn't...this car belong to Manager Long?" Yao Yao asked.

"So what? You feel awful because he should go home by walking?"

Huh! Big rotten bastard, as long as not bully her, Yao Yao shut up and keep silent along the way home.

When she arrived at the big villa where she stays...

"You? Aren't you leaving?" standing in front the door, Yao Yao probing him.

"Not going."

Hah? Oh my... does this mean...

"Why don't you leave?"

"Heh? Bao Bei, don't you wish me to stay?"

Of course she not wishes him to stay! Even though he had promise her that he would not do that, but still there no guarantee he not toying with her!

"Of course no."

"Good, so I stay here." He smiled, he knew what this heartless little thing thought, he took big stride inside the villa.

Yao Yao knew that even if she asked him to leave, would he do it? Of course not!

"Ha Ha..." bitter laughed from Yao Yao, she is lying on the bed as if food that served for eat.

Yu Ao Tian is lying beside her and looked at her, caressed her body and...

"Not, please don't" Yao Yao begged.

"Well, let's we go to the main point, do you actually wish for it, right?" Yu Ao Tian smiled at Yao Yao.

"Huh..." She said with low voice, no one want wish for it, of course this last words only said inside her heart. Not dare to say it loud to Yu Ao Tian.

\*\*

"Bao Bei, what is your opinion with things happens today in Berson? The things that had happened inside the elevator!" Yu Ao Tian cold eyes looked at her.

Yao Yao lower her head, little bit hesitated: "That was you guys matter as mafia, nothing do with me." Did not know whether this kind of answer would make Yu Ao Tian angry or not but that how she felt it inside herself.

"When you saw those people brought gun why did not you run away?"

"Run away? If I run away... there one way to chose, death! Much better for me to pretend not see anything, perhaps it could make me live little longer."

This little thing looked alike the idiot and fool but when comes to live and death matter (the most important) she is cleverer and smarter than normal people, not to mention... she really the little girl who has IQ 205. No matter his first question or his second question, her given answered, he really satisfied of it. He likes someone like her, the things that should be solve must solve while the things she should not get involve better pretending to be fool! This kind of person may stay longer in his side. On that way he won't be bored.

"You seem to be little bit smart, so that today I will give you a reward."

Reward? Yao Yao felt her heart tighten, this reward.... Won't be something good, will it?

"No, I don't need any...." Before she finished, half of her body has raised up.

After half an hour...

"Why are you secretly crying?" Yu Ao Tian frowned.

"All is because of you! All is because of you! You make me become weirdos!"

"....." silent for seconds, and than Yu Ao Tian laughing so hardly.

"Bao Bei, have you enjoyed it?" He spoke softly near her ear.

The naïve and pure Yao Yao does not know the chemistry and mystery between man and woman's feeling with their body.

Yesterday that happened inside Berson, that thing as if nightmare, every death body just disappeared without trace as if evaporated like air, no blood trace as if nothing never happened before, but Yao Yao as the one of witness, she felt bad standing inside the elevator.

She hopes those death bodies would not become ghost and haunted her. It is so scary! She gained her sense, silently entering inside the elevator.

When the elevator's door opened, there is woman who wearing big black spectacles. This kind of style little bit weird, because this style only fit for those artist who is running away from media or paparazzi, or woman who afraid to be known...

She is?

"Miss, where are you heading?" Yao Yao asked while gauging her.

"The CEO's office."

Oh, looking for the CEO!

After arrived, the woman left the elevator, Yao Yao felt the mysterious woman quite familiar but not really sure.

"Flat Chest, immediately go to my office." There's Long Qi's voice through the speaker.

Luckily there is not anyone inside the elevator, if not she must be so embarrassed: "I know, I will go there immediately!"

Inside the CEO's office....

The mysterious woman slowly goes inside. The person who sat outside the room is the cold Mo Xue Tong who stood up: "Miss, do you have appointment?"

"HaHa, Miss Mo, it's me." After said, that woman took off her spectacle, smile faintly.

But Mo Xue Tong coldly said: "Miss Li, do you have any appointment?"

"Miss Mo, I come to find Yu Ao Tian, do I need make an appointment, don't I?"

"I am sorry, CEO Yu has full schedule, but I can inform CEO Yu that you are coming here, please (asking her to leave politely)." Mo Xue Tong is someone meticulous, in her world there is no flexibility, it could be say that everything that regarding to Yu Ao Tian's thingy all must through her.

"Miss Mo, fine... better I make phone call to Yu Ao Tian." At the moment Li Mei Yun had talked through the phone suddenly her beautiful face turned be darken.

She has been together with Yu Ao Tian almost two years, she knew there were many women beside Yu Ao Tian and she never angry of him, but only Mo Xue Tong, she simple is thorn in her flesh!

"Thank you, Ao Tian." After she done, she said: "Miss Mo, Yu Ao Tian asked to get in, then can I..."

"I have not got the notice from the CEO, please wait for moment."

Damn bitch! Li Mei Yun clenched her hands. She has waited for such long time, until she able to get inside Yu Ao Tian's room. "Ao Tian."

"Why you coming without a notice, something happen?" Yu Ao Tian is reading a document when he asked.

"I want to give you a surprised. Hehe. But really I want to say that every time I come here, it really hard to get into your office room, and also that Miss Mo..." when she talked about this, Li Mei Yun peek on Yu Ao Tian to see his expression, hurried she said the way she spoke: "She really serious with her work."

Before she ever directly talked bad about Mo Xue Tong, but at last she was got the coldness of Yu Ao Tian for three months, so that she always keep in her mind that she should not talk bad about Mo Xue Tong.

"If there something you want to say, Li Mei Yun hurry! I still have many things

to do."

"Ao Tian, actually I don't really have thing just I miss you so much." Her beautiful face looked little bit sad: "you knew that you have been so long never came to my place."

## **Chapter 68**

#### The humiliation inside the office room

"Recently I really busy, no time."

"[..."

"Yu Ao Tian!"

Bamn! The office room opened by Luo Yao Yao who rushed inside.

While the person who followed at her back was Long Qi with innocent look: "Ao Tian, I have tried my best to stop her, but..."

"Long Qi, you go out!"

"Oh..." Long Qi turned and left.

"Yu!" at the moment Yao Yao wanted to open her mouth she saw Li Mei Yun stood beside her.

Oh my gosh! Oh my gosh, she has been suspicious that mystery woman perhaps was Li Mei Yun the famous artist! "Li....Li....Li.... you are my.... My idol, give me, give me your sign, is it okay?" initially she was so angry but suddenly she became so "excited", she almost forgot the main reason why she coming to his office, without bother she took a piece of paper and pen, she gave in front of Li Me Yun.

It was so obvious, Li Mei Yun was dumbfounded with the situation, after she glanced at Yu Ao Tian, she gained herself.

He made fist with his hand, his face expression terrible bad, but impatiently looking at Li Mei Yun and nodded.

"Alright. Hehehe, thank you for your support." Li Mei Yun smiled, very happy to give her sign. While Yao Yao looked it as if she got priceless treasure, hugged it: "You, you know, Li Mei Yun is so famous in Japan and China, she is one of independent actress and also has nicknamed as goddess by the Japanese. I really like you, really really like you. At the same time I really proud as Chinese because

your achievement in showbiz. If you do not mind, can I have a photo with you?"

Li Mei Yun has not agrees yet, Yao Yao suddenly took out her mobile phone and gave it to Yu Ao Tian: "Come, faster! Help me to take a photo with Miss Li, quickly."

"Go out and wait for me."

"Hah?"

"Go out and wait for me, understood!" Yu Ao Tian pissed off, yelling at her while her mobile phone was smashed to outside.

At this moment, Yao Yao finally responsed....

Oh my! This is Yu Ao Tian's office room, what did she do! Because wanting to have photo with the artist, oh damn!

"I am...sorry. Really sorry. I go out, I immediately go out."

Waiting until Luo Yao Yao left, Li Mei Yun smiled: "HaHa, Yu Ao Tian this is my first time to meet someone that completely ignore you, moreover she asked you to take photo. Well, don't be angry. But who was that little sister....she seems no manner."

"Mei Yun, this is not your turned yet to give opinion about my employee!"

"Hah?" Li Mei Yun dumbstruck, looking at the icy and cold eyes of Yu Ao Tian, she really felt as if the atmosphere became chills.

"You also get out!"

"Under...understand."

When Li Mei Yun left, Yu Ao Tian still angry but dial the phone: "Xue Tong, ask Yao Yao to come inside!"

"Yes."

Not long, Yao Yao felt guilty, pushed the door opened: "I am sorry, really sorry, CEO Yu. Because I really like that Li Mei Yun, so that... I am really sorry, so sorry." She kept on saying sorry, sometimes she really hate her impulsive self.

"Why are you looking for me?" he coldly asked.

Uh, her first purpose coming to look at him was.... Stopped to asking forgiveness. Her little face gloomy: "Yu Ao Tian! Why are you fired me?" just now she was called to Long Qi's office in order to inform her that she is fired, once she heard it, she gone crazy, straightly coming here.

"Do you think that I need have reason to fire you?"

"How can you not need the reason?" Yao Yao moved one step in front, both of her hand slammed the desk: "First, I don't make a mistake, second I am so discipline, if there is evidence of you violate the work contract, I can sue you to employee bureau!"

Oh? So that this little thing is understood about law?

"Come here." Yu Ao Tian smiled and pointing his finger to her.

"What?"

"The peasant family has golden phoenix."

What is he thinking? She little bit confused.

Yu Ao Tian took the piece of paper from Yao Yao's hands, the piece paper that signed by Li Mei Yun, he swayed in front of her face: "This is my important contract between me with the Ao Mei corporate. Well, little sister Luo Yao Yao, didn't you know that ruining contract is more than enough to fire you?"

#### **IMPOSSIBLE!**

As if the bolt hit her head: "Sorry, I am so sorry. I was so impulsive just now, so that... I am sorry. I am willing to resign in order to compensate."

"Hah, resign as compensation? Bao Bei, you are really naïve." After he said, Yu Ao Tian pulled her into his embrace: "5 million dollar business contract, do you think by resigned you solve the matter?"

5 million dollar? Deadmeat! That piece of paper just re-sign, won't it be do?

""Really...sorry." After all she only could say I am sorry in order to express her apology.

"If by saying sorry worth 5 million dollar, I think, I don't need to do business anymore. What do you think?"

"But, I really... so what is your solution?"

"You asked me to think..." Yu Ao Tian furrowed his brow as if he thinking of something, while one of his hand embrace Yao Yao's waist.

"What are you doing now?"

"I am thinking the solution."

"But your hand..."

"What's wrong with my hand?" Yu Ao Tian acted as if he is innocent.

"Huh, Yu Ao Tian, this is...still in office, you had promised me, during working we should make distance...."

"But just now you have resigned?"

"You!" Yao Yao really didn't know how to communicate with him, "How can you act like this!" meeting this kind of rotten bastard, she really cried without tears.

# 69 – 72

This is super long chapters...

Have good time to enjoy it

## **Chapter 69 – 72**

#### **Been Seen**

"CEO Yu, Sunnyvale (Sen Ni Wei Er) business contract has already sent." Said Mo Xue Tong who walked inside the room. She saw Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian flirting, that scene... there is no changes in her expression, cold. "CEO Yu, I..." she put the documents in his desk.

"Xue Tong, please help me to tidy up my all the document in my desk." Said Yu Ao Tian.

"Alright."

While Mo Xue Tong tidy up Yu Ao Tian's desk, he is busying to play with Yao Yao. Not long after that Mo Xue Tong done with her work and leaving Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao.

"I have told you many times that... we have contract and it clear written that, first article was about our relation must not be revealed to the outsider!" She angrily looked at Yu Ao Tian.

"But Mo Xue Tong isn't outsider." Yu Ao Tian said as if nothing wrong with him.

Yao Yao understood very well there is no point to argue with Yu Ao Tian because everything he said is right, he is the rule because he is the master, her owner. Better for her to shut up her mouth, keep quite rather than provoke him to make things more difficult for herself.

After silent for moment...

"Do you have hobby to follow artists?" Yu Ao Tian asked her.

"No."

"So why are you interest with Li Mei Yun?"

"Hm... I only like Li Mei Yun, beside that I become fan only for her." She said

with bright eyes.

"Why must she?" Yu Ao Tian asked.

"She has good personality, she so beautiful, she is hard working and persistent and also many others reason. Ah~ you will never understand."

How can he not understand? Perhaps he is the one who understand Li Mei Yun utmost!

"Everything that you said was creating by the artist management."

"What do you mean?"

"I have told you it is an image that created by the artist management company. If the artist management company wanted her to be queen and then she would be the queen. Everything that you seen only an image, on contrary in her private life, she might another person."

What Yu Ao Tian wanted to say?

"Whatever, I like Li Mei Yun. Don't talk bad about her." She left Yu Ao Tian's office room because angry. She dislikes Yu Ao Tian talked bad about her idol, Li Mei Yun.

\*\*

After working time ended, Yao Yao go back to the villa where Yu Ao Tian gave her. That villa is belong to hers, given by Yu Ao Tian as present for her as his lover.

Eight o'clock sharp, the bell rang. During this time if the bell is ringing, Yao Yao always has bad premonition because around this time Yu Ao Tian always coming to visit. But...

"Miss Luo Yao Yao." Mo Xue Tong greeted Yao Yao when she opened the door.

"Good... you are?"

"My name is Mo Xue Tong, I am personal secretary of Yu Ao Tian."

So she is the secretary of Yu Ao Tian which means she was also this afternoon woman that...

Suddenly Yao Yao face turned red because she feels embarrassed with what

happened this afternoon inside Yu Ao Tian's office room.

"Miss Luo, this is given by Yu Ao Tian. He asked me to hand it over to you." After she said, she turned her back and disappeared in the darkness of night.

"What is this?" Yao Yao suspicious with an envelope in her hand. When she opened it, inside is a bank gold card.

"A card? You bastard! Rotten bastard Yu Ao Tian, what does he mean by giving me this card?" she pissed off, took out her phone and make phone call.

During this time, Yu Ao Tian is busy with his night activity with his other woman. When his phone rang, he angrily received the call.

"Yu Ao Tian why did you give me gold card?" Yao Yao was screaming through the phone.

Yu Ao Tian who mood being affected: "Later in the future don't scream at me in phone or I will kill you!"

"Oh..." after she realized, she lower her voice: "Why did you give me a gold card?"

"What you think my reason giving you gold card?" Asked Yu Ao Tian.

Yao Yao wanted to say something but she heard another voice so she ended the call quickly because she afraid she might disturb Yu Ao Tian.

\*\*

#### Other day!

"Miss, thank you for shopping with us, this is your neck tie." Said the sales girl who work at one of the expensive boutique. Yao Yao took the package and smiled to the sales girl before leaving the place.

Actually today she wanted to send back the gold card but suddenly Long Qi phoned her, asking her to buy necktie.

Hurry she went to the nearest shopping center to buy the thing that she asked to. During her window shopping in the shopping center, there was Kenzo boutique that caught her interest.

"Welcome, Miss, this is the first Kenzo boutique in China and today is the first

opening day, welcome to our store."

"Yao Yao, come!"

"Kenzo? Chen Yi, do you like this brand?"

It is so hard to see Feng Chen Yi likes one brand, four years ago, because his liking, he spent more than 200,000 dollar for this brand, never thought this brand would be in here.

"Miss, this is the newest product from Kenzo, it only has one for one model."

"Ah?" she gained herself, awkwardly smiled: "No, thanks."

"You may try, it suit you."

"Me.. well, alright." Meeting such passionate sales girl, she only forced herself to try it.

"Miss, your stuff let me help you to carry."

"Thank you."

"Yes."

When the sales girl took Yao Yao's thing, let her to go into fitting room, one of the sales girl colleague using her finger pointed at the logo: "Armani! Armani! A big catch, big customer."

"Ah~ Miss, this dress fits you so much." The salesgirl said.

"Thank you but I still..." before Yao Yao finished.

"This dress is bigger one size, please give me smaller size." Someone said who out from the fitting room beside Yao Yao's.

The sales girl smiled awkwardly: "I am sorry Miss, the smaller size is wore by this Miss. So that..."

When that girl turned: "Luo Yao Yao!"

When Yao Yao heard someone called her name, she looked at that person and... Li Ruo Ting?

Two years ago in Japan, when Feng Chen Yi...

"Chen Yi, it so good, oh...I love you Chen Yi."

"He he he, Ruo Ting you are really aggressive."

[The soft big bed, man and woman were intertwined, the person who stood in front of the door was Luo Yao Yao, angrily said: "Both of you...what are you twos doing?"]

Luo Yao Yao? That woman hurried covered herself with quilt, sitting in the bed.

While the man smiled: "Yao Yao, why you coming?"

If today I don't come here, do you want to hide it from me forever? Thinking me as idiot? Said!"

That man was silent.

Yao Yao who hurt because betrayed and also pissed off gave him a slap: "Feng Chen Yi, you are rotten bastard!" she turned her back and left.

Although things had passed for two years, she work hard to forget everything but when the moment that woman showed up in front of her, all those rotten bad memories filled her head.

When seeing that woman, as if everything happened yesterday.

"So coincide, Luo Yao Yao, he haven't met for almost one year and half? How do you do?"

Uh...she does want to have such coincide with this woman! Pair of her eyes looked that woman coldly: "I am very well!"

"Oh." Said Li Ruo Ting, seeing her and also the sales girl: "Oh Yeah, that cloth do you buy it?"

"Buy!" actually she didn't want to buy it!

"Uh!" Li Ruo Ting blanked for moment, she looked at her as if underestimated and smiled: "Luo Yao Yao, do you still mad with me?"

Bingo! She stills angry. Two years ago her man was snatched by her, but Feng Chen Yi, rotten man, she does not want anymore and after two years she won't lose for this dress. "HaHa, how can I still mad? I really like this dress."

"Thank you Miss. We will wrap it for you." Said the sales girl happily.

"Wait." Li Ruo Ting stopped her with her hand, coldly swept her gazed: "Luo

Yao Yao, don't you think this cloth is not suit you?"

"Oh yeah? If not, I still can make it to be rug." She smiled sweetly but her heart is already bleeding. It cost 20,000? Oh my, she does not have that much money!

"Luo Yao Yao! I speak honestly; this cloth isn't suiting you just alike Feng Chen Yi who not suit you. Or else why two years ago he chooses me over you. I really think that you not need to act like this because you still mad about two years ago."

Yao Yao really angry, "Li Ruo Ting, you do not need to bring about Feng Chen Yi, I am not mad because the past. Moreover, even I persistent to buy this dress, it does not has any relation with my past."

"What?"

So two girls are still arguing about the dresses until Li Ruo Ting called Feng Chen Yi to support her.

"Chen Yi, come here."

So finally both of them together, Yao Yao thought when she heard Li Ruo Ting called Feng Chen Yi's name.

Two years ago Feng Chen Yi hurried back to China and half year later followed by Li Ruo Ting. During that time, she resented both of them, every day and every night! Everyone who separated by third wheel might do same thing. After two years both of them still together.

"Chen Yi, you see that dress wore by Luo Yao Yao, do you think it suit her?" Li Ruo Ting asked.

He eyes cold as ice looking at the woman in front him, a woman that he loves so much...

And then when his eyes spotted at the things, carried by Yao Yao...

"General Manager Feng, Miss Luo didn't take the bank note."

"Said."

"Well, the detective who was investigated Miss Luo had said that she has associate with a man."

"Who's the man?"

"This... the detective said that the man is someone powerful either in status or wealth, moreover he also has his own bodyguard wherever he goes, alike his shadow following him."

Damn! Who is the man that together with Yao Yao?

"Of course you, Li Ruo Ting." Said Feng Chen Yi after he gained himself.

Suddenly Yao Yao felt her heart ached, cannot breathe. It is so normal if the boy friend praised his girl friend but how can she sad? Perhaps...

Later in order to end the conversation, Yao Yao asked the sales girl to wrapped all the stuffs and settle the bill.

"Vip gold card?"

Everyone looked at the sales girl who exclaimed the VIP Gold Card given by Yao Yao. No wonder everyone quite shocked when know she has VIP Gold Card because this kind of card is explained the power of wealth and status of the holder in society. There are only ten cards holder for this card in entire China, this card does not has limit and also it amount is countless, only the super rich people who can has this kind of card.

"Thank you! Thank you very much, Miss." Said the sales girl gave back the card to Yao Yao.

\*\*

Inside the office

Yu Ao Tian mobile phone kept on sending notification about the card spending. It has reached at least 3,000,000 dollar."It seems no matter what kind of people, all of them cannot resist the temptation of money."

"CEO Yu, what did you say?"

"Oh, nothing is important. Continued." He kept his mobile phone and exposed his devilish smiled, however, behind that smiles, he is gradually disappointed with Yao Yao...

At the shopping center.

"Oh my, I had swept more than 3,000,000. I might get possessed just now." She murmured.

That when she signed the contract, she pledge to herself that whatever she did only for grandpa medical fee so that she agreed to be lover, her status might lover but she does not want to live as lover.

But now?

After a moment she came back to the boutique when certain, Feng Chen Yi and Li Ruo Ting have left. She stood at Kenzo, welcomed by the sales girl.

When she said that she wanted to return back the stuff, the sales girl even thought she was kidding but she not. She really wanted to return all those stuffs. After the sales girl done with the process they without hesitation talked bad about Yao Yao in front of her but it okay for Yao Yao as long as the money refund and back.

When Yao Yao wanted to leave the store suddenly Feng Chen Yi appeared in front of her and said, "Wrapped all the things back!"

"Hah?" The sales girl doubted.

"Do you understand? I said wrapped all the things that returned by this lady!" he gave his own card to the sales girl.

Feng Chen Yi eyes as if locked his sight deathly to that Armani held by Yao Yao, "Have good taste." He pointed at that brand.

Yao Yao step backward, frowned: "You, you have left, why come back?"

"I didn't leave yet."

She lifts her head up looking at him.

"Are you curious why I haven't left?"

She nodded.

"Uh, I know that dresses isn't suitable for you and you will come back to return it."

Feng Chen Yi too understood her because they had together about two years.

This is one of the most humiliate situation that she ever experienced, initially

she met two rotten bastard, in order to vent her anger she insisted herself to buy the dress that she not like as the name of self-pride and then she returned back all the stuffs and caught red-handed.

It seems she always be loser in front of Feng Chen Yi!

"Yao Yao, seems that you have opened your mind not much, after all you take everything now."

"Feng Chen Yi, said clearly what you want to say?"

"Ha, that time when I gave you a card, beat you to death you would not accept it but now you are so easily take other?"

Hearing what Feng Chen Yi told her, as if there are thousand needles piercing inside her heart.

"This is for you, Yao Yao."

"Gold card? What do you mean?"

"Take it."

"No, I don't want. It not like I don't have my own money, I don't need it!" because of that matter, both of them were in cold-war until Feng Chen Yi made compromised.

Now, when this matter brought up, it felt as if she got a slap on her face. Hurt, it is absolutely hurt.

"Luo Yao Yao, with whom are you now?" Feng Chen Yi asked.

When she is being asked by him, she nervous and doubt, she lower her head. She does not want to say anything! Not want to think about it, although she tell everyone in this world that she is Yu Ao Tian's lover, she just does not want to let Feng Chen Yi know about her status.

Why? It not like she the person who made mistake, why should she afraid to let Feng Chen Yi know?

Yao Yao intending to leave the store but Feng Chen Yi stopped her: "Give you."

Ignored Feng Chen Yi she left. His expression terrible bad, took out his mobile phone: "Lisa, I want you to check one thing!"

"General Manager Feng, please say."

"You give a check about the names of VIP Gold Card holder!"

"Hah? General Manager Feng, that card is related to ten people who information well-protected. —— if you want to check it, it might take longer time."

"Rice tub (good for nothing)!" He, Feng Chen Yi, is all of his subordinate useless? "You just need to check seven others!"

"Why just seven?"

"....." pissed off, "my family has three, so that you just need to check others seven, if you cannot perform the simple mathematics, Lisa tomorrow you don't need to come for work anymore!"

"I am sorry General Manager Feng. I will check it immediately."

### **Chapter 71**

# **Kidnapped**

At Berson Group.

After Yao Yao sent the necktie, she went to Yu Ao Tian's office room directly, just...

"Bao Bei, today you have bought not less stuff?"

It seems that Yu Ao Tian has found out.

"Actually, my purpose coming here... just wanted to return your card." After said, she put the card in Yu Ao Tian's desk.

He gazed at her, he smiled: "It's okay Bao Bei, you don't need to worry. This card is belongs to you now, it means you can buy whatever you want. I don't have any objection."

She objected!

"Thank you, but, I really don't need." After said, she made big stride to leave the CEO's room.

Not long after she left, suddenly Yu Ao Tian's mobile phone ringing, he took out his phone and read all the notification stated all his money was refund. "So that was an emptied bill." It seems he has underestimated little thing self-control, but...

"What made little thing suddenly spending as if get possessed?"

Yao Yao left Berson Group, walking slowly and aimless.

It was her first day of jobless, she felt empty inside herself, later how she spend her days? She hopes school will start soon. Without she realized she has walked in the night club that she had worked before: "This is?"

Since that day she almost being "that" by the mafias she never go to work anymore, if now she continue to work, perhaps she might meet them again, "Still better... this place is not suitable for me."

She keeps walking without know where she aiming. Today she not spent any cent of Yu Ao Tian's money, but how tomorrow? The following day? Sooner or later she might—aiya, and also that contract.

"I must be searching for job."

Two days later...

"Welcome, what you want to order?" the person who wear waiter uniform is Yao Yao.

She has been working in this fast food restaurant for two days, the salary not much but at least it enough for her.

"Give me one set of super dine!"

"Please wait for moment." Wrapped the package very well, she smiled and bow: "Thank you, have save trip. The next one, what do you, uh.... What do you want to order?" the next customer who stand in front of her are two men in black suit, this is mafia's uniform while their face quite scary.

"Give me one —-ordinary set."

"Okay, okay, please wait for moment." Hurried she packed one set of food, when she wanted to hand it over to that man...

"Miss, if you do not wish to attract people attention, better follow us silently." One of the men took the package while the other hand holding gun and pointed to her stomach.

"What do you want to do?" her forehead sweating, Yao Yao eyes looked at the surrounded customers and she tried her best to act normal.

"Please follow me."

Who are these men? It not seems like messing people. Yao Yao rolled her eyes,

looked outside the fast food restaurant.

"Luo Yao Yao, where are you going, not serving the customer?" at the time she leaving the store suddenly the store manager yelled at her.

The opportunity comes! Her face expressionless but she exchanged the looked with the manager: "Manager, I, I have things to do."

"Now is working time, what things do you want to do, beside why are you blinking eyes toward me?"

"....."Heaven ah~

This manager really stupid, doesn't he can feel something not right happens?

At this time, one of the men who looked at Yao Yao swept his glanced to the store manager, randomly swaying his gun.

That store manager—-" Luo, Luo Yao Yao, if, if you have thing need to settle, here, here has me to taking care."

Inside big mansion, Yu Ao Tian is drinking red wine and suddenly his phone ringing. After he hung up the phone, his eyes flashed and his lips curled up: "I know, well done."

He changed his suit with the new one that keeps inside his apartment, he goes down to the Long's brother place.

"Ao Tian, it has been late night, why are you coming?" asked Long Ye who opened the door.

"Where is your brother?"

"Wait the moment." Not long after that, Long Ye wake up his younger brother Long Qi who slept soundly.

The half-sleeping Long Qi: "Ao Tian, what?"

"Now you go to meet the Chi Long Bang/Red Dragon gang (another mafia group)."

"Hah?" the half sleep Long Qi immediately wakes up, feeling so excited: "Are, are we starting the war? Ao Tian, finally you.... Finally you want to start the war? You say how many people should we bring? 500, is it enough or not? Or just

300? Hahahahaha.'

Seeing how excited Long Qi, Yu Ao Tian really helpless, frown: "Luo Yao Yao kidnapped, you hurry take five or six people to help her out!"

"Hah? I, I understood. I immediately go."

"Wait." Yu Ao Tian gave an order to Long Qi before he left. And then he nodded his head, changed his dress and left.

But not long after Long Qi left, Yu Ao Tian face expression changed. Long Ye who stood silently dumbstruck seeing the changes of Yu Ao Tian expression, suddenly laughed: "Ao Tian, what do you need me to do?"

"Of course. You have thing to do too." Turned his back, slowly he said, "Inform Xue Tong, Han Li Shang, plan... and then we can make move!"

"OK!"

"Cong Lao Da (Big Boss), the girl that you asked is here." One of the Xiao Di (mafia's subordinate) made a report. Yao Yao is walking slowly inside one of living room.

"Are you sure this little girl?" Cong Big Boss looking at Yao Yao, asking his Xiao Di to confirm.

"Yes. I had asked the Tian Shang Ren Jian's manager and those who followed Young Master, this is the girl."

"But.... This little girl is looked alike 14 or 15 years old, does really the types Yu Ao Tian like?" Cong Big Boss murmured, he just wanted to make thing clear: "You call my son come here to confirm the person."

"Yes."

#### **Chapter 74**

### **Smart Little Girl**

Not long after that, a man with one hand came toward Yao Yao.

More she looked more she felt familiar with that man, didn't he....

Damn! It seems really him! Deadmeat! Did he come to take revenge?

"Dad, this is the girl. It was her." Young Master Cong said.

Yao Yao trembling because fear: "That, that time I had smashed your head with bottle because...because... because you... you..."

"Haha, little girl, don't be nervous." Cong Big Boss stopped Yao Yao, slowly he walked in front of her: "I invite you come here, it's not to make things difficult for you. I just want you to speak honestly, are you Yu Ao Tian's woman or not."

Heh? How can this relate to Yu Ao Tian? She glanced at Cong Young Master, his hand... did Yu Ao Tian cut it? "Yu? Ao Tian, who?"

"You little bitch, don't act fool, if not because of you, Yu Ao Tian would not cut off my hand."

Oh! So his hand was really cut off by Yu Ao Tian? If there's the matter, she must even not admit that she knows Yu Ao Tian: "I really don't know the person named Yu Ao Tian, you guys not make thing difficult for me."

"Little girl, have you ever heard his name?" compare to his rough son, Cong Big Boss has better manner.

"I don't know!" Yao Yao shook her head certainly.

"Ha!" unknown to her, Cong Big Boss waved his hand: "Lock her up!"

"Wait! Why are you locking me up? I have told you that I don't know the person who named Yu Ao Tian, why are you locking me?"

"Little girl, you don't need to lie, Yu Ao Tian is very famous, although you never seen the person at least you might hear his name?"

So that this old grandpa is an old vixen, no wonder he asked whether I ever heard Yu Ao Tian's name or not. Yao Yao pouted: "I just back from... the south, absolutely I don't know the person you people said, beside that, if really as you said, if I really have relation with him how could I working in night club, trying to earn money to the point be such bitter?"

"Heh? It's sensible." Cong Big Boss rolled his eyes: "Release her."

"Big Boss, what should we do now?" one of the Xiao Di who stood beside him asked.

"Don't bother this little girl, I will make phone call to Yu Ao Tian."

"Yes."

One of the Xiao Di dialed the number directly to Yu Ao Tian's phone. Not long after that, "Hello?"

"Ao Tian, it's me Cong Qing Rui."

"Are you Cong Big Boss, what's matter?"

"HaHa, it not really a matter, but... your girlfriend came to my place as guest."

Damn! Yao Yao nervously, gulping her saliva.

"My girlfriend? Who do you mean?"

"Luo Yao Yao."

"Luo Yao Yao? I don't know." Yu Ao Tian spoke coldly.

Yao Yao felt so much relieved when she heard it, it seems that she and Yu Ao Tian had same way of thinking. But...

"Don't know? How can? But Luo Yao Yao said that she is your girlfriend. If both of you don't have any relation, I will...immediately kill her!"

Bastard! This old vixen how could he lie, she clearly said that she didn't know Yu Ao Tian, just hope that Yu Ao Tian smart enough to avoid his trap.

"Huh, that Luo Yao Yao really have gut she even dared to fake as my girlfriend,

well, Cong Big Boss, I bother you to finish her, that person." After said, Yu Ao Tian hung the phone call.

Otherside...

Seeing Yu Ao Tian hung the phone, Long Ye felt something amiss: "Ao Tian, you are denied but Xiao Meng Li has admitted, due to that old man character, he won't let her go."

Yu Ao Tian eyes flashed, he smiled: "Rest assure, according to that little thing IQ, she would never admit it."

Based on his intuition and the time together with her, Yu Ao Tian had known her reaction earlier, the way she thinking and analyzing on something, although sometime she can be so muddle headed, looked stupid but when she facing with big problem, this little thing really smart enough to handle, she won't lose.

Chi Long Bang...

"I have told you, I really don't know the person called Yu Ao Tian. Can you let me go?" Yao Yao innocently looked at Cong Big Boss, to "Proof" herself innocent.

Cong Qing Rui took deep breath, glanced at Yao Yao, confidently said: "It seems that, this little girl has no relation with Yu Ao Tian, so that..."

"Dad, no matter whether she has relation or no with Yu Ao Tian, the fact she smashed bottle to my head, so that..." after he said, Cong Young Master smiled. It seems that he has special attention toward Yao Yao since the beginning.

"Do whatever you like. She is useless."

"HaHa, little bitch, no matter how, you are still falling into my hand." Cong Young Master walked toward Yao Yao.

But at this moment...

"Big Boss, there is one of Yu Ao Tian's man looking of you."

"Heh? Yu Ao Tian's man? Let him in!"

"Dad, how is about me?" Cong Young Master stopped his step, unhappy looking at his own father.

"You wait aside. Don't do anything, just see what Yu Ao Tian's man want."

"Oh." Cong Young Master stood aside.

Yao Yao can take little break, does not know who Yu Ao Tian asked to come.

"Cong Big Boss."

The person is Long Qi and other five men.

"You?" Said Cong Big Boss.

"Dad, it was him! It was him who cut my hand off! His name is Long Qi!"

"Long Qi?" Cong Qing Rui ever heard this name before, paused: "Ha, I have ever heard the rumor there is one of Yu Ao Tian's men who name Long Qi, but never thought the real person such young? Very talented person!

## Chapter 75

"Oh, am I really that famous? Even you, Big Boss Cong knew me?"

"Of course. There is no one in underworld who doesn't know the four great men under Yu Ao Tian. The first one is the talented war strategist the cold Han Li Shang, as rumor spread, he is taking care half of the underworld Emperor's business. The second is your big brother, the man with big smile, Long Ye. The third is the cold and icy queen who beauty equal to fairy, Mo Xue Tong and the fourth... is you, the person who able to fight ten people at one time and also the makne (youngest) in Yu Long group. The best fighter and also the stronger warrior, it's you, Long Qi!"

This is not the courtesy conversation by Cong Qing Rui, in the mafia's world, the infamous Yu Ao Tian is legend, but his four men are also awesome and skilled people, if not because of their hard work, helping Yu Ao Tian, they won't be as famous as Yu Ao Tian like today.

"Ha, thank you for Cong Big Boss praising." After said, Long Qi laughed.

"Well, let we go to the point, why Yu Ao Tian asked you to come here?"

"It was not my Big Boss asked me to come here."

"Oh? So..."

"You will know just by seeing." Long Qi rolled his eyes and looked at Yao Yao who stood beside him.

"You strangely caught my girl of course I must come here!"

Yao Yao understood after she listened to their short conversation, there is no way for her to reject or deny Long Qi said.

"Oh, so is she your girl?"

"That's right. To recall, before your son even dare to dally my girl, I even cut his hand off. Did I? Cong Young Master." Long Qi is laughing while looking at Cong

Young Master.

"So, that how thing went on." Finally Cong Qing Rui understood, seeing the age between Yao Yao and Long Qi, both of them are look more compatible so that he believe that both of them really couple.

"If it was true, so my son was doing wrong."

"Dad!"

"Xiao Cong (little Cong), you shut up! Long Qi ah, I think there is misunderstanding in here, since everything is cleared, you may take your girl friend."

"Well, good bye Cong Big Boss." After said, Long Qi held Yao Yao's hand and took big stride leaving Chi Long Bang.

"Dad, are you really let them off?" Young Master Cong unhappily asked.

Cong Qing Rui stood up from his seat: "I can't do anything about this. First, that girl isn't Yu Ao Tian's woman so we cannot threaten him. Second, Long Qi isn't easy to handle even we force to make him stay here; it will only create an opportunity for Yu Ao Tian to get rid of us. Why should we make ourselves such bitter? Just wait another time!" continued: "when the time comes, we will able to hold his weakness and control even kill him!"

After heard what his father said, Cong Young Master who stood beside his father talking to himself: "In order to have someone weakness we need to get it from his woman or his family, but Yu Ao Tian simply to say too perfect, it was not easy to catch the girl which we thought as his woman, but never thought we would wrong caught. What can control him, actually?"

"Big Boss! Big Boss! Yu...Yu Ao Tian coming." Suddenly one of Xiao Di is rushing inside, informing Cong Qing Rui.

Cong Qing Rui and his son looked at the Xiao Di: "Are you sure that person the real Yu Ao Tian?"

"Certainly, absolutely!"

"Wait, how could after Long Qi left and then Yu Ao Tian comes? How many people he brings?"

"About ten!"

"Only ten, Dad, you don't need to be such tense?" Young Master Cong laughed at his father who looked so tense after hearing the Xiao Di report.

"Shut up, faster ask him to get in."

"Yes, Big Boss."

Yu Ao Tian brought Long Ye and Mo Xue Tong and also ten of his men inside Chi Long Bang.

Cong Qing Rui hurried welcoming him: "Yu Big Boss, what bring you to visit my place? Long Qi just left, and why are you coming here personally?"

Yu Ao Tian spoke with his lower voice which makes Cong Qing Rui dumbstruck: "En, I knew that Long Qi just left so I came here to find you."

"What Yu Big Boss means?"

"Aiya, actually my coming today is only to ask little favor from Cong Big Boss." He purposely said to bring up the topic.

"What favor?"

"Well, this, few days ago there were some cockroaches that got into my office, I want Cong Big Boss... help me to check whose cockroaches they were belong to, can I?" after said, he put pressure on Cong Qing Rui's shoulder.

Cong Qing Rui is trembling, his face white pale, after long time he gained himself: "Ha Ha Ha, Yu Big Boss. Impossible you didn't know, before you were such famous in Japan even the China mafia, all of us know about you. But two years ago you came to China and entered the business world while your underworld activity seems be lessen, everyone thought you might retire but there was rumor spreading saying that you wanted to conquer China's mafia, afterall...." His eyes rolled: "Even I help you to check why those people came to attack your company, you didn't have any evidence how could you revenge?"

Cong Qing Rui way of speaking has threatened meaning; he also knew that Yu Ao Tian had already known that he was the person who sent those men to his company. Even the commoner moreover the mafias knew that Yu Ao Tian is someone holds grudge and vicious, since he knew the person who attacked his

company, Yu Ao Tian has not made his movement because he did not want to act recklessly by offending others Mafia's groups. It seems the rumor about Yu Ao Tian is real.

"Well, it seems the information is quite fast come to Cong Big Boss, but you have mistaken about one thing."

"What?"

He free his hand that touched on Cong Qing Rui's shoulder and then elegantly he sat down and makeup his neck tie: "Now, my status is businessman, indeed I could not take any revenge without evidence, but..." a pair of his black eyes sharply looked: "My situation, I have evidence, if there is someone dare to kidnap my woman, I don't even say something, I might be an useless man, do I right?"

At this moment suddenly one of the Xiao Di is rushing inside.

"Cong, Cong Big Boss!"

Cong Qing Rui looked at Yu Ao Tian, "Yu..."

"Oh, don't be such rushed Cong Big Boss, there still something."

Cong Qing Rui face stiffens after he saw another Xiao Di rushing inside the living room... "Yu...You?" suddenly he felt his body numb.

"So that little girl really your girlfriend?" his put all his attention to Yu Ao Tian, "Yu Ao Tian, you... after all... you are taking your woman as bait?"

# **Chapter 76 – 78**

"If I don't make her as bait, how could you take the bait?" At that time when Yu Ao Tian cut off Young Master Cong's hand, he had predicted this thing, so that, he asked someone to follow Yao Yao for this entire time.

Finally through this situation, Cong Qing Rui understood the rumor spreading in Jiang Hu (refer to underworld) about Yu Ao Tian's characters. Now, he must be believed after experienced by himself.

He made Yao Yao as bait so that Cong Qing Rui would take the bait and then he asked Long Qi to pretend as Yao Yao's boyfriend and take her leaving this place. He had known earlier who had attacked his company but he could not make a move since there was no solid evidence to take revenge.

But today his appearance is more than enough to make people understood his temperament!

Chi Long Bang banished, it just time matter since Cong Qing Rui knew that as long as Yu Ao Tian determined then he would able to do it but he just not believed on himself who fail because Yao Yao.

When he asked that little girl, she showed her innocent expression as if she told him the truth. She told him that she didn't have any relation with Yu Ao Tian. So that he let her go. Unknown, after she left with Long Qi, Yu Ao Tian came to collect the debt with him.

In the blinked of eyes, Long Ye gun has shot Cong Qing Rui and that old man died instantly leaving his coward son who begged for mercy from Yu Ao Tian.

"Yu... Yu...Big Boss Yu, please let me go, I beg you. I promised to leave and won't ever come to seek revenge." Young Master Cong begged on Yu Ao Tian's feet.

"Are you sure?" asked Yu Ao Tian.

"I swear. I won't ever come back. I won't..." before the finished, the gun has shot his head.

"I never believe living people, only the dead worth to trust!" Yu Ao Tian left Chi Long Bang.

That night Chi Long Bang vanish without trace, all the men swept by Yu Ao Tian's men.

\*\*

"Drink the tea."

"Thank You." Long Qi poured the tea to Yao Yao and she took a sip. Suddenly Long Qi's phone rang, it was short message notification.

He took out his phone, read the message... "Damn!" he pissed off.

"Long Qi, what happen?"

"It pissed me off, my brother just messaged me they are on the way home from Chi Long Bang!"

"So what?"

"So what! Tonight Yu Ao Tian suddenly called me that he planned to banish Chi Long Bang, so that he asked me to take you out from there, the result after I took you out, all of them had already wiped them out, did he thought me as fool, cannot forgive!" after said, Long Qi tossed his phone aside because angry.

Seeing Long Qi, Yao Yao helplessly said: "I think, Yu Ao Tian because he trust you so much that's why he asked you to take me out."

"Humph, if he trusts me, he should bring me along to wipe out Chi Long Bang!"

"No, not like that Long Qi. I don't really understand how you guys work but at least I know, wipe out Chi Long Bang must be easy for anyone but not everyone can take me out from that place except you, Long Qi."

"Huh? What do you mean?" Long Qi curiously asked.

"I asked you, did Yu Ao Tian ask you to say that you are my boyfriend?"

"En."

"You think, when that scoundrel told I was your girlfriend they were believe

rather than when saying that I was Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend. Telling them, me as your girlfriend is safer, As long as you able to bring me out from that place and then, Yu Ao Tian can be freely to attack that place. So that, although you are not joining them, your contribution is the biggest one."

After he heard Yao Yao explanation suddenly his heart lighter even he not fully understand what she meant.

"Ha, you flat chest, you are really good in "catch" other heart, after I heard what you said, my mood better. Come, let me kiss you."

"No!"

When he wanted to kiss her suddenly Yu Ao Tian has already back and looked at him: "Ao Tian, you back?"

"This is my room, can't I come?"

"Oh yeah." But Long Qi felt something wrong with Yu Ao Tian.

"Long Qi, you go home."

"Hah?"

"Go home, understand?" Yu Ao Tian raised his voice.

"Good, Good bye." Yao Yao said looking at Long Ye and then glanced at Yu Ao Tian.

After Long Qi left, Yu Ao Tian rushed and sat beside Yao Yao, while she lower her head as if a student who caught do something wrong, silent.

"Do you understand your status now?"

He spoke coldly to Yao Yao and she just bit her lips.

"Do you like Long Qi?"

Before Yao Yao answered him, Yu Ao Tian has grabbed her hand and his action hurt her so she scream, "Aw, hurt!"

"Did he kiss you?"

"No, he not kissed me. Long Qi, he just..."

She felt so sad, her pair of eyes moistens. Her expression is similar to little

white rabbit which provoke Yu Ao Tian even more.

He dragged her to second floor and tossed her to his bed. "Hurt, let me go!" she screaming and then she crying. Seeing her crying such miserable, Yu Ao Tian soften.

"Later you cannot bring other man to home other than me, understand?"

"Hu Hu... that because Long..." suddenly Yu Ao Tian yelled at her: "Not allowed to call his name."

"I won't call."

At this moment suddenly Yu Ao Tian laughing, "Alright, stop crying." He wiped her tears with his fingers, and then his eyes looked at her left should that has scar.

"I only want her data before she went to Japan!"

"Actually, this is the second thing that I wanted to tell you. This Xiao Meng Li data before 12 years old is... kept secretly by the government, no matter how it cannot be tracked"

"No matter whom, it hard to track down..."

His mind recalled his conversation with Long Ye, while his finger pointed at the scar... "This..."

Yu Ao Tian hasn't finished but Yao Yao reacted: "This, This so ugly, right?"

"Why are you saying so?"

"Because... every time I had sport lesson, everyone would looked at me weirdly or they were laughing at me."

"How this scar..."

Being asked, Yao Yao hesitated for while, "Actually, I also, I don't have memory about it."

"Forget?"

"Hm, when I was 6 years old, I got car accident, so I forgot everything."

Damn!

Yu Ao Tian believed that Yao Yao did not lie to him, because he able to see her longing in her eyes for her memory. But he wanted the memory before she was six years!

"Is there anything?"

"Nothing." He pressed his anger in heart, Yu Ao Tian eyes is looking at somewhere...

Yao Yao sensed Yu Ao Tian eyes flames, she used the quilt to cover her body: "You, can you leave now?"

"Ha, Bao Bei, I have just arrived, why you drive me out?"

"No, I don't mean. Just..." if keep in this situation, she afraid something might "Happen"

"Do you afraid I will touch you?" Yu Ao Tian looked at her as if seeing through her heart.

Yao Yao silent as if that is her answered.

"Hah, Bao Bei, why I feel as if you are longing... me?" after he said, Yu Ao Tian smiled deviously.

After couple time got teased by Yu Ao Tian, Yao Yao seems to have little bit immune and also proving how good she controlled herself. At this time, Yu Ao Tian feels so satisfied with Yao Yao performance that not ease to surrender in this way, he will not boring playing with her.

Inside the dark room, Yao Yao who not moving, resting beside Yu Ao Tian, close her eyes: "Yu Ao Tian."

"....." Here it comes again! This little thing has a habit to have conversation with him before she goes to sleep? "What?"

"Thank You."

"Hah?"

"That time when in night club. If not because today matter, I will never knew what that brat did to me."

Bringing this topic, suddenly he remembered: "It seems that you secretly at my

back searching for job?"

"You, how did you know?" under the darkness, she could not see Yu Ao Tian expression. "You asked people to follow me?" her voice carried anger tone.

"Now you are Yu Ao Tian, my lover. Just behave staying at home, you don't need to work. Sleep!" Yu Ao Tian didn't explain reason or anything about asking people to follow her while his voice carried little bit coldness and command.

Yao Yao not reconciled, made fist, still wanted to say something but due to Yu Ao Tian temperament, she just asked her own pain if she did.

Still not understood, does this is his meaning being a lover, obey all what he wanted? But, she is not toy, why should she obey all he said? He just too unreasonable!

### **Chapter 79**

### The task as Lover

Early in the morning, Yu Ao Tian has wake up from bed.

He stood in front of the mirror changing his shirt, seeing through the mirror he swept his gazed to the lazy Yao Yao, coldly said: "If you have wake up you must get up!"

After she heard it, Yao Yao closed her eyes, keep on pretending still sleeping, at another second suddenly something heavy hit on her face, opened her eyes..."You, why are you throwing your necktie toward me?"

"Didn't you keep pretending to sleep? If not come here, tie the necktie on me!" Yu Ao Tian commanded her.

Yao Yao frowned: "I cannot tie it up."

"I really cannot..." Seeing his scary expression, better for her to swallow all her rejection, obediently walking in front of him.

150cm height facing 190cm height, this difference just...

Yao Yao tie up the necktie as if flinging on Yu Ao Tian's neck: "It's done."

"Bao Bei, do you really think this is okay?"

"I have told you that I cannot tie it up! Why you make thing difficult for me."

"Fine! You go down stairs with me." Yu Ao Tian re-ties his necktie and then walking out. "Wearing shoes? You help me to wear the shoes."

What! This is too much!

Seeing Yao Yao not moving, Yu Ao Tian pinched her chin, said: "Bao Bei, you

better don't say to me that you cannot wear the shoes! Or else, this week there will be no off day for you because I will find someone to teach you how to serve man!"

"No need...I, I understand what with my task." She afraid the only free day she has might gone, so she busy herself to help Yu Ao Tian wears his shoes.

"Heh, Bao Bei, I advise you don't think to go for work, if you have time learn how to tie the necktie, ironing the shirt, etc. I go to work!" after said, Yu Ao Tian took big stride and left.

She dumbfounded in front of the door, her white little face helplessly cast dark cloud.

This dictatorial man clearly wanted her to learn how to be lover, but how could he act too much like this? Who does he think he is, wanting to change other people and then the people must be changed?

Expressionless walking toward bathroom, what happened just now really makes her unhappy but cannot resist that strong attitude of Yu Ao Tian, not allowed to reject what he said really terrible, if this keep on continuing, will she really become lover and losing her true self?

"Ah! How can be?" shocked looking herself in the mirror, there is hickey in her neck that too obvious. Pulled down her pajamas: "In my body also have, this is...." Trying to remember, no wonder last night he... she felt little bit hurt, did this make by him? Actually what he want?

"Ding Dong"

This is early in the afternoon, the door bell suddenly ringing. She opened the door to have look, outside there are ten or more who standing and lineup, bringing clothes. "Who are you guys?"

"Miss Luo, hello, all of these are sent by CEO Yu for you, the latest clothes of Chanel, the total are twenty five pieces, please you signed it, if it does not fit you, you can come to our store to exchange. "

What does Yu Ao Tian want? "I am sorry, all these clothes, I don't want."

"Hahaha, I am so sorry Miss Luo, this is CEO Yu's order, if you want to return,

please contact CEO Yu." After said, those employees put all the clothes in living room, after put all the stuffs, they left directly.

The next three days also same, there are many branded stuff sent by those employees, shoes and others thing. Initially the living room was empty but suddenly filled with many types of branded stuffs, turned to be Small Mountain.

Yao Yao stood in front of the stuffs that piercing her eyes, laughing. Does not spend single money of him then she turned to be gift receiver? It reminded her the olden days with Feng Chen Yi. Perhaps all of bossy men really like to use this tactics for wooing girls. Must she change to be girl that love and enjoy all branded stuffs and then they will be satisfied?

Not understand, she only knows that all this bossy men behaviors are only to satisfy themselves to conquer her, simply to say they able to do anything!

The ancient Emperor also loved to do such things like giving stuff for their concubines? "Argh!" Helplessly she sighed, she turned on the Television. Silently she is waiting for her instant noodle cup to ready-eat.

"Ding Dong"

The door bell ringing, seeing the time must...

Six o'clock? Will be who? Yu Ao Tian? As if he has been three days not coming, wouldn't be him right? Pretending not to hear anything! Just pretending!

Yao Yao anxiously turned the volume higher so that she does not need to hear the doorbell. Long time, the door bell stopped. She relieved...

"Bao Bei, can I assume that you are purposely not come to open the door?" behind her, there man's cold voice.

She got the chills, nervously turned her head: "You, how can you get in?"

"This is my house, of course I have my spare keys!" 'pa' the sound of keys that tossed in table.

Yao Yao fright not dare to make move of her trembling body, can't do! She must not be intimidated by him.

"The television volume too high, so that I didn't hear the door bell rang."

"Oh, so that. Well, why you didn't pick up my phone call for few days?"

"I, my phone not charged for days!"

"Hah, you really have so many reasons to say to me." His devilish smile showed means he pissed off already, he untied his necktie, his eyes looked at the instant noodle cup in the table: "You, why you eat it?"

"I... my money had spent...left not much, you do not allow me to go for working, so that...." After said, she looked so depressing touching her small head, her flashing eyes inadvertently looked at the television screen...

He crazily sent her designer and branded stuffs, give her unlimited financial access, he thought that Yao Yao who being forced in this way would slowly adapting to the lover life, and then enjoying effortless life and all the beauties, giving up her independent self. But, seeing this little thing, she is more stubborn than his thought. "I have given you money."

Silent....

Her head lower and focus looking on the television screen.

Yu Ao Tian is obviously impatient; he sat on the sofa, stretched out his hand and pinched her chin, coldly said: "I still talking with you! You..."

"Hahaha." When her head lifted up that moment, her eyesight really focus on the television screen, her face showed happy laughter.

Yu Ao Tian frowned, followed her eyesight, looking at....

That.....

The television is having the cartoon comedic show. He could feel that he has been talking for half day and she is focusing her attention to the television?

#### **Chapter 80**

### On The Phone

At the moment, Yu Ao Tian feeling wanted to explode.

"Hahaha, you see, it really funny." She focus on the cartoon not realized the person who sat beside her almost like volcanic mountain waiting to erupt, excited hitting his leg, continuing watching the television.

He...

Surrender!

He really cannot do anything toward this little thing. Let go her chin that he pinched.

At this moment Yao Yao even go brazen by get closer watching the television: "Ha, Hahah." She is laughing happily.

That happy laughing sound penetrate into Yu Ao Tian's eyes, carefree and without worries, not contaminated by this mundane world. This kind of smile is not suitable belong to this society that filled with dirt. And at the same time, it must not belong to grown up Yao Yao who experienced manhood.

Deep his eyes there is an intense light, suddenly he enveloped her waist, forced himself....

Yao Yao hasn't reacted, but suddenly she has sat on his lap. Her back leaning on his chest, suddenly she able to feel the warm breathe from her back, simply to warn her, this kind of ambiguous gesture, although this is not the first time but still so devastating. "I am watching television."

"I know, you can continue watching your television."

Seeing smirk in Yu Ao Tian's face, she tries to focus back to watch the television, but at the next moment...

Her earlobe licked by him, at sudden it numb, it also arouse her face to get redden: "I, I am still watching television."

"You watch yours."

How can she continue to watch! Yao Yao glared at him, when her head turned from television suddenly his lips has touched her neck and gently kissed her.

She cannot focus on watching television anymore.

Restless, she is moving her body. While the man boldly hugged her, his tongue licked her inch by inch, exploit her body.

Her body completely sweating, her body arouse because his licking and suddenly...

"Ring, Ring, Ring"

Suddenly the phone is ringing.

As if Yao Yao got the opportunity to help herself out: "Phone! Your phone! Hurry pick up."

Yu Ao Tian not have any intention to let her go, one of his hand grasped her waist and other took the Bluetooth headset put in his ear.

"Hello?" answered the phone, on other way his bossy-self is forced her facing him and his domineering lips landed on her lips.

Yao Yao helplessly to avoid his sudden kiss, doesn't he pick up the phone? Why he does not let her go?

"Ao Tian...I am Mei Yun. Hu...."

When heard Li Mei Yun crying voice, Yu Ao Tian frowned, faster he let go Yao Yao, :"What happen to you?"

Seeing at Yu Ao Tian expression when he received the phone call, Yao Yao could tell herself that, the person who phoned him must be someone important, because she able to see his concern, this is first time.

But...

Since it is important phone call, he must not be continuing to tease her, right? Hehehe.

To unknown, Yao Yao just feel little bit relieved, suddenly his hand caress inside Yao Yao's "No, don't"

"Stsst"

Oh yeah, he still on the phone! Yao Yao hurried covered her mouth, struggling to move her head.

"En." He paused for moment, curled up his lips, smiled: "Bao Bei, no wonder you are so nervous, actually you are afraid me to discover you not wearing bra? You are really bold, my outrageous woman."

Her face flushed. Not dare to look at Yu Ao Tian.

"Ao Tian, you? Are you busy?" Li Mei Yun asked Yu Ao Tian on the phone because she heard Yu Ao Tian seem to have conversation with other, but the voice too soft so she hears nothing.

"Nothing, continue." He acted as if nothing but keep on teasing Yao Yao.

"Ugh." Yao Yao is so embarrassed with herself and afraid the person who called heard her voice, so she bites her lips.

But because of this, strangely her anxious body suddenly turned on, she gets arouse because her sensitive body...

After some time, finally Yu Ao Tian hung his phone called and stopped teasing Yao Yao when he heard she...

"Oh My, my instant noodle!" hurried opened to check out, the instant noodle has over-cooked.

"Whatever, perhaps it stills eatable." Not bother, she ate the instant noodle.

At this moment, the excited Yu Ao Tian suddenly sulked because he realized his value not better compare to an instant noodle in front of Yao Yao.

"Hem, hem," helplessly smiled, he more or less has get used with Yao Yao: "Bao Bei, don't eat that anymore, go, I take you for dinner!" after said, he dragged Yao Yao leaving the villa...

0	1	l
O		

Happy Late Thanks Giving guys from Indonesia

## **Chapter 81**

#### **Going out for Dinner**

"Welcome, Mr. Yu, the usual seat?" one of the waiters of five star restaurant welcoming Yu Ao Tian.

In front of Yu Ao Tian all of them are bowing to his direction.

"Woah, Woah, husband, husband, is he, Berson Group CEO, Yu Ao Tian?"

"Stsst, you better eat your meal."

"Didn't you ever have business partnership with him before? Why don't you greet him?"

"Shut up. He does not recognize me, the person who dealing with me always their General Manager."

"Oh, regretful, but real Yu Ao Tian and the rumor spread really similar, well describe. Oh yeah, who is the little girl that next to him?"

After the man heard, his eyes glanced at Yao Yao who walking beside Yu Ao Tian: "Never seen before, I don't know. Faster finish your meal!"

"Oh!"

"Mr. Yu, please." One of the waiters lead the way, both of they are entering VIP area and private room of that restaurant.

Finally Yao Yao can avoid all those people who secretly or boldly looked at her, while the waiter who is serving them also gazed to her.

This is kind of terrible feeling. all because the man who beside her, the outstanding man, either his aura or his good looking appearance, everyone curious to look at him even for seconds.

If her relationship just upright, perhaps she can feel so honorable standing side by side with this man. But...both of their relationship is something that cannot be known by other people. "All of you leave."

"Ah? Mr. Yu, what do you mean?"

Pair of eyes gleamed coldly, at least he able to see Yao Yao discomfort, coldly said: "All leave. I don't need all of you in here."

"Yes, yes." The waiter who served inside the private room is leaving.

Yao Yao who head look-down since she got inside to the restaurant until the private room, finally able to lift her head up, looking at Yu Ao Tian's eyes that has excitement trace...

Not long after that, the food have served all, Yao Yao does not think too much about eating manner, at moment she swept all the food, Yu Ao Tian dumbstruck to look at her.

"Bao Bei, you...eat too much, won't you feel sick later?"

"I won't." after she said, shyly she smiled: "I, can I order another portion of the beef steak?"

*"* 

A big man like him only ate half of beef steak, but this little thing—after all she even wanted to eat another more after done with two beef steak, actually how big her stomach size?

" waiter, get me another portion of beef steak."

"Yes. Mr. Yu." Another portion of beef steak served.

Again Yao Yao finished her food, but suddenly... "Yu, Yu Ao Tian, I, my stomach ache. I want to...go to toilet."

"Bao Bei, do you mean...asking me to bring you there?"

"No need, I can...go by myself."

"Then you go faster."

"Oh." After said, Yao Yao leave the private room as fast as wind.

"Huff." Yu Ao Tian took long breathe: he shook his head with cried-laugh. This little thing really good in eating and sleeping, after eat and then excreted, simply

to say....

"Haha" it seems that he really put live treasure beside him.

"CEO Yu."

Hearing there is someone called his name, Yu Ao Tian hurried back to his usual self, looking at door direction: "General Manager Feng."

Seeing Feng Chen Yi who is slowly walking inside the private room: "I heard from the waiter that, you are having your meal in here so I just drop by to say hello. If there nothing then I take my leave."

"There is no rush, have you eaten?"

"I have eaten, just in time to leave."

"Oh. It hard we get to meet each other, if there's a time, we should have good chat."

Feng Chen Yi stretched out one of his hand from his pocket, pointed at the seat facing Yu Ao Tian: "Have I disturb you?"

"HaHa, she is going to toilet, perhaps she will take sometimes."

"En, well."

Waiting until Feng Chen Yi to take the empty seat, Yu Ao Tian clapped his hand asked the waiter to close the private room door.

"Regarding to our business contract, what is your father opinion?" after said, Yu Ao Tian black eyes flashed.

"HaHa, CEO Yu, you must know that my father have already gave Feng Group to my older brother and me, so what do you want to know?"

It is the brain of Feng Chen Yi that Yu Ao Tian value most, he is only to make superficial contact<sup>1]</sup>, Feng Chen Yi even easier to get the main topic. This is better, also save much time. Smiled, he agreed by shrug his shoulder.

"My older brother is trying to stop our partnership."

"If I was your older brother, I would also do the same thing to stop you. But..." thread of discussion, his eyes flashed: "The decision still in your hand, am I right? You know better than me about the advantage."

"HaHa, CEO Yu, I always believe that the enemy of the enemy actually is best friend. So that, today I really "willing" to come and say hello to you!" Feng Chen Yi purposely emphasized "willing" this word in order to express himself.

After all, their business collaboration is having and involving very sensitive legal spots. In order to avoid future troublesome, both of them only can rely on hint, sign and code to talk about the collaboration agreement.

"Hah, the enemy of the enemy is best friend, I like this statement." Said Yu Ao Tian with cold smiled: "Well, I hope we become best friend and faster to breakdown the enemy." After said, he stood up elegantly and stretched out his hand.

Feng Chen Yi also showed his smile, politely shaking hand with Yu Ao Tian's hand. "CEO Yu, still one word, I really expecting to have "collaboration" with you."

"Same here with me."

After they exchange politeness, suddenly the door opened...

"Ao Tian."

Seeing Li Mei Yun coming inside, Feng Chen Yi elegantly nodding his head to Yu Ao Tian: "Not to disturb both of you, CEO Yu, I take my leave."

Li Mei Yun sees that Feng Chen Yi also there, awkwardly asked: "General Manager Feng you are also here? Am I... disturbing both of you?"

"No, I have done talking with CEO Yu. Miss Li, you continuing." After said, Feng Chen Yi faster his steps and left the private room.

"Ao Tian, did I disturb both of you?" Li Mei Yun swept her gaze to the empty seat and then she directly sit down.

"Mei Yun, that seat belong to someone."

"Ugh, didn't this seat belong...to General Manager Feng?" Li Mei Yun even thought that Yu Ao Tian was having dinner with Feng Chen Yi, at this moment she hurried stood up, go to another empty seat.

"Mei Yun, are you and Feng Chen Yi know each other?"

"HaHa, I can't say I know him. Two years ago I met him in party, he said, his Exgirl really like me so we had little bit chat, just that one time."

"Oh? Seeing how Feng Chen Yi in person, I don't think he is someone that able to take an initiative to chat with other." This was based on what Long Ye said when he met Feng Chen Yi to talk about their collaboration. He more belong to spectators types than active person, other than about business, he might speak less to the stranger.

"He really is someone quiet and not really like to speak with stranger, but once talk about his Ex-girl friend, he can speak about her unstoppable. This based on the six sense of woman, he must love her, he must really love his Ex-girlfriend."

#### Note:

1] 蜻 Qing 蜓 ting 点 dian 水 shui: the dragonfly touches the water lightly (idiom)

#### **Chapter 82**

# Feng Chen Yi forcing to kiss

"Huh, never thought that Feng Chen Yi is someone value love most, really hard to believe." All of them are mingle in same social circle, Yu Ao Tian ever heard about Feng Chen Yi who are not less than Casanova compare to himself, but never thought he has kind of very focus "heart" man!

"Aiya, I really want to see his Ex-girlfriend, what kind of girl she is? Since she is able to hold Feng Chen Yi's heart."

Li Mei Yun who sat beside him showed her expectation expression, while he enjoying his food, he rolled his eyes: "How can be? Are you curious with others Ex?"

"Haha, speak less nonsense. Mei Yun, didn't you know my standard for woman?" After he said, Yu Ao Tian curled up his lips.

"Hard to say, perhaps Feng Chen Yi never touched his Ex-girlfriend?"

"How the hell it could be? Feng Chen Yi is normal man."

"Humph, there is time, because so in love, have deep love, even not dare to touch!" Said Li Mei Yun, she moved her seat closer to him, pair of her hand enveloped his neck, slowly closer to his nose: "This kind of feeling you will not understand, okay?"

Indeed, Yu Ao Tian indeed never understood this kind of feeling because he never loved someone deeply!

"Ah, even I understood, you little bitch \*\*like it?"

"You hatred, Ao Tian." Li Mei Yun said, she kissed his lips...

"Argh, very comfortable." After she done with her "problem", Yao Yao face showed relax, prepared walking out from toilet.

"Hey, Hey, you guys made guessing, guessing, who was the little girl that brought by Mr. Yu just now?"

Since she heard some of the waiters chatting about herself, Yao Yao paused for moment and suddenly her eyes stung when the topic brought up.

"At one glanced she is absolutely his younger sister."

Huh...good.

"How, did all of you see Mr. Yu and that little girl look different? My opinion, that little girl might his lover?"

"Lover? Impossible, how can Mr. Yu interested with little girl?"

"That's why I said their relationship must be lover, he just toying with her after that he will dump her, no need responsible and also able to "taste" something new and refresh, why can't he?"

"Ugh, it seems the possibility both of they are lover is...."

Finally the relationship is still guessable by other, right? It is also strange, she and Yu Ao Tian aren't living at same roof but she only out with him this first time in front of many people. Yao Yao lower her head because the lover matter, when she sensed few of the waiters are screening her appearance she purposely faster her steps. Unknown... "Aiya." She bumped into someone who is walking closer to her front. "I am sorry, sorry, so..."

"Yao Yao."

This voice is? Hurried she lift up her head... the first thing that she spotted is the man's left ear diamond earring. Impossible, how can be such coincidence!

"Coming to have dinner?" pairs of eyes from left and right are looking at that cold eyes who straightly looked at her, Feng Chen Yi smiled: "Just in right time, I haven't had my dinner, how about we dine together."

"I, I came with my friend!" lower her head, she stammered answered him.

"Oh? Well, are you coming with your fiancé?" when he said, Feng Chen Yi eyes gleaming: "Ah, perfect time, I always want to know who is my "replacement", I want to say hello. Bring me to meet him."

Did Feng Chen Yi purposely saying this? Why every time I meet him, he must be talking in this way with me? "He does not know you! I am in hurry, I take my leave!" she took two steps but blocked by Feng Chen Yi who did not have any intention to let her go, she spoke with lower voice: "Scram away!"

Feng Chen Yi clenched, stiffen for while, he just compromise her, move to side, let her way to walk.

But when he is still in screening Yao Yao's body, that moment...

He spotted the hickey in her neck, it make him feel as if there is knife that stabbed into his eyes.

Before it was pregnancy test kit, later he spotted her to use VIP Gold Card and now he even sees hickey!

When he saw it, his expression changed gloomy, suddenly he stretched out his hand and pulled her to get into the restaurant inner corridor.

Yao Yao dumbfounded when seeing him pulled herself: "You, what do you want to do, Feng Chen Yi?"

"Feng Chen Yi, you hurt me!"

She looked at him who extremely pissed off, pair of his eyes gleamed coldly: "Are you hurt? I even hurt than you!" after he said, he pinched both of her hands, with domineering attitude he crazily kissed her as if storm, pressed into her lips!

"Ah." Their face is so close, her heart beating so fast. She only can feel his rough kiss, Yao Yao feels herself difficult to breathe, his kissing as if piercing to her wounds.

She really not understood what happen to Feng Chen Yi, in the past when they were still boy and girlfriend, Feng Chen Yi never used to force her. But now... what his reason!

The hickey that left by Yu Ao Tian? Did Feng Chen Yi objection with that? Why

must he? How can he? But, both of them... already broke up!

"Ah! Ah!" The lips feel numb, she kept on rejecting him. But she is not match for Feng Chen Yi strength!

"Hu... Hu..." finally... this harsh and rough kissed ended. Yao Yao angrily glared at him: "You..." when she spoke one word, he put strength to press into her lips again. And then...

This kissed changed little bit gentler, and gentler...

At the same time, he slowly loosen up the pressure that pressed into Yao Yao's wrist, tightly hug her to his embrace, his lips suck the sweetness of hers, he looks as if drunk, helplessly.

This is the first time for Yao Yao to have such close distance with this good looking face, no matter how long time passed, she lost control of herself, looking at him because this is the first time for her be so intimate with him, so close, but...

This happen right after both of them broke up.

Now she does not have right to have feeling for this man!

No one knew time passed, Yao Yao used all her strength to push him away and free herself from his embrace: "You are overly, Feng Chen Yi, let me go...let me go!"

"What do you think...and want?" her vision blurred looked at him, she really not understand this man who standing in front of her, she not allowed this man to touch her.

"Yao Yao." After some time, Feng Chen Yi finally spoke, his voice is low and coarse: "Is this the present that you said would be given when you turned 18?"

Another long chapters...

## **Chapter 83**

#### The Ex-boyfriend that she ever loved deeply

His question as if Pandora Box that opened her heart.

She never thought that he still remembered the promise she ever made for him. It true that this kiss was saved for Feng Chen Yi as birthday present, but now this present has been forgotten by her as time passed...

Her body frozen and stiff, it only her heart that still beat, but every beat of her heart only gives her pain, it hurt...

She cannot see his face, but she can feel the tightly embraced to herself by him and also the voices of broken heart.

"The present that you promised me for the 18<sup>th</sup> birthday I have take it, and also I want to take the 19<sup>th</sup> too. Now!" he loosens his embrace and looked at her: "I don't care with who you are, I also not bother what have you did with him. Just immediately! Now! You...back to my side!" This kind of order make other cannot refuse, it sound alike command. But somehow his eyes showed pleading to her.

Ha, so that the bossy Feng Chen Yi also able to show this kind of expression? Suddenly she feels so ridicule, why he never told her like this during the time both of them just broke up? Why must now? Why must wait until there is no turning back? Why must wait until she had made lover contract and then he came to her and said these things, didn't he know...everything just too late?

"Feng Chen Yi, I asked you... why are you asking me to come back to your side? Do you wish me to see you continue to sleep with another woman? Or do you want to hurt me more? You know what I want! I just want to have man that only love me, a man that only belong to me, but... not a man like you!"

Reason, reason, all only reasons, Yao Yao is trying to make up reason to put all the responsible into him, although the current Feng Chen Yi might become the sincere man, would she still able together with him? Why don't you tell him that you have been already someone lover? Because... you are afraid he will look down at you, right? Ha, this is really absurd!

All the past memories had gone, the past pure and innocent love also gone, the current her is not match for Feng Chen Yi!

Coldly sway his hand, she steady walking out from the corridor and left. Don't cry, don't cry, she cannot cry now. Her small hand made a fist, it still few steps before she leaving this place...

"Luo Yao Yao, do you really confident that your current boyfriend really loves you? Or don't he also rotten man as me?"

She stopped, listened to Feng Chen Yi cold voice, she not dare to turn her back, moreover she not even dare to answer his question.

The important thing is she not really understand what kind of man Yu Ao Tian and she also does not want to know about him, also perhaps Yu Ao Tian is more rotten compare to Feng Chen Yi, hundred and thousand times, again what can she do and what guarantee she has?

Feng Chen Yi just did not know, she never cares with that rotten Yu Ao Tian because...

She not loves him.

Because...

She is only his lover.

So why should she bother with all women at his sides?

She reached the door at the corridor edge, the light from outside pierce her eyes. Another seconds...

"Pa" she got hard slap. Yao Yao can feel her face burn hot and pain. When she able to react, the person who stood in front of the door is Li Ruo Ting.

"Ruo Ting! What did you do?" Feng Chen Yi is rushing to the door.

"I have seen all! I have seen what both of you did in here. Luo Yao Yao you don't have right to say me before because you just same as me!" after said, Li Ruo Ting raised her hand again prepare to give Yao Yao another slap.

But just in time her hand is stopped by Feng Chen Yi, when Li Ruo Ting gained herself, Feng Chen Yi has already slapped Li Ruo Ting.

"Chen Yi, you..." looking at Feng Chen Yi cold expression, Li Ruo Ting swallow back her words, she hurt and crying.

Does not want to hear, does not want to see, Yao Yao feels her world has changed to be grey, she just wanted to leave this place, leaving this noisy world...

She turned her back and leaving the restaurant as fast as she can. Finally tears that she held dropping and wet her cheek.

Why every time she has determined to give up, Feng Chen Yi heartlessly came into her world, messing with her life?

Why giving up a man that had hurt her can be such difficult? Even now, even now when he has already had new girlfriend, when heard him brought up to reunite why she must be so flatter? And also hurt?

When she wanted to remember all the beautiful memories suddenly all the bad came out, she almost forget all the beautiful memory and remember all the bad ones.

Why...why...why...

At this moment, Yao Yao had too much, she had too much why, too much that she not understood, and also the most important that she wanted to ask...

If time really can turn back, could both of them back to the most beautiful moment they had before....

"Ruo Ting, you better know clearly what is our relationship!" inside the restaurant, Feng Chen Yi coldly said and then he left.

"Chen Yi..." Seeing at his figure that almost disappeared in front of her eyes Li Ruo Ting crying alone by herself.

After both of them got caught by Yao Yao, indeed they never had clear broke up, but she forcibly herself silently to stay at his side.

But...she really, she really loves Feng Chen Yi, so that even she does not have any status with him, she willingly crawling to his bed as his bed-mate.

"Have you seen my big sister?" Li Ruo Ting came back to the private room, today she is coming with her big sister. But unknown she even caught Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi kissing in the corridor not far from toilet.

"Miss Li, your big sister is in next private room."

"Next private room?" she wiped dried her tear, she knocking the door of the private room: "Sis..."

When she opened the door that moment: "Uh, I am sorry."

She saw Yu Ao Tian and Li Mei Yun is kissing, this scenery is piercing for Li Ruo Ting.

"Ruo Ting." Li Mei Yun hurried loosens up her hand that wrapped into Yu Ao Tian's waist: "What happen to you?"

I... I...

Seeing her little sister eyes that wet with tear, she helplessly smiled at Yu Ao Tian: "Today I asked my little sister to accompany me for relieving my boredom, but now...it seems that I must comfort her."

"En, go busy on your thing."

"Well, I take my leave, Ao Tian."

When both of Li's sister left, Yu Ao Tian looked at his watch, Little thing only went to toilet, half hour must be too long even only going to toilet? Why haven't she back? He picks up his mobile phone and phoned her: "Hey, where are you?"

"I am feeling unwell. I want to be alone. You go back first, can you?"

Yao Yao trying to act as if she is alright, but Yu Ao Tian able to sense the loophole of Yao Yao, her crying voice: "Where are you?"

"You now..."

"I don't want to repeat three times!" suddenly his voice stern, his expression extremely scary.

Helplessly, Yao Yao better to tell the truth: "I am at the park near the restaurant."

After he hung the phone call, Yu Ao Tian is rushing to leave; he quickly paid the

bill and leaving the restaurant...

"Second Young Master, please get into car." The luxurious car stopped right in front of the main entrance of the restaurant when Feng Chen Yi walking out, the driver hurried opened the door for him.

Waiting for Feng Chen Yi to get into the car, Lisa who sat at the passenger back seat hand over document to Feng Chen Yi: "General Manager Feng, the thing that you asked to check, the result has already out. The others seven VIP Gold Card holders are belong to the Financial Secretary Chang Jiang Jun, The head senate Tang Ying Jie, Chairman of Bao Lai Group (Bolly Group) Fu Wen Bo, the deputy prime minister Zeng Kai Rui, Lan Du Guo group chairman Xia Yu and the last one is the CEO of Berson Group, Yu Ao Tian. CEO Yu has two VIP Gold cards with him."

Flipping one by one the pages that contain the data, most of the people in this data, he has met even not really know them. Some of them he even ever had work collaboration.

"Other than Yu Ao Tian, the rest five people in this list check who are ever in touch with Luo Yao Yao!"

"Yes. But General Manager Feng, why excluded Yu Ao Tian?" Lisa not understood so she asked him.

"I understand very well the types of woman who with Yu Ao Tian, he will never interested with little girl!" everyone who mingle in this society, whether the woman beside Yu Ao Tian or even his bed-mate, more or less he has ever heard before, all of them are mature women or sexy ones while Yao Yao is far from this criteria. "Start the engine."

"Yes, Second Young Master." The car is slowly moving.

Feng Chen Yi leaned his head to the car's window, the glass surface touch his cold good looking face. And then, it reflects his grieved and heart broken through his eyes.

Suddenly, the petit figure in the dark night caught his eyes: "Lao Zhang stop the car!"

The car stopped at the road side.

Lao Zhang and Lisa are strangely glancing at him: "Young Master?"

"General Manager Feng?"

Feng Chen Yi looked that petit figure, he really wants to rush and take her away, forever! Hide her forever! And then...

When he recalled what had happened just now, he understood very well Yao Yao character, if now he showed up, she would go further from him. "Start..." He waved his hand, at the moment that luxurious car left....

Someone who has tall figure showed up and come closer to that petit figure!

"You come..." Yao Yao raised her head up, when her eyes meet with Yu Ao Tian, spontaneously she down her head, murmured: "I am sorry." After that thing happened, seeing Yu Ao Tian, her heart is suddenly feeling wrong and guilty. Her conscience as his lover showed. If later he asked her, what should she say? Meeting Ex-boyfriend? Being kissed forcibly? Or...make up random lies?

"Let's go."

"Hah?" She surprised, the time when she raise her head up to see Yu Ao Tian again, he has already left few steps. He... after all is not asking anything.

Her undulate heart which as if fallen to the ground, at the moment she really thankful, grateful for Yu Ao Tian consideration. Never thought, this bossy, rotten bastard man can be so consider to other too.

"Aiyooo."

Yu Ao Tian who has been walking far away suddenly stunned with her voice, he looked at his back, she looked as if little girl who just able to walk and showing stiff smiled: "Feet sprain?"

"En..." her feet has sprained since she left the restaurant when she in rushed and forgot.

"Still can walk?"

"Can." Yao Yao stood up from the ground and slowly walking toward Yu Ao Tian. "Aiya." She cannot walk in balance so that she fell to ground again.

"Huh..." at this moment, Yu Ao Tian takes a deep breath, he stretched out his

hand from his pocket and carry her as if carry little girl in his embrace.

"Wait, I still can walk by myself. I really can walk." She said.

Yu Ao Tian frowned: "Stop moving."

"You let me down and then I stopped move."

"If I let you down, walk by yourself until the parking lot, how long should I wait for you?"

"But..." her face turned red, she grim head down, softly said: "You shouldn't carry me in this way. Being seen by other.... It is so embarrassing."

Indeed, nineteen year old girl being carried like little kid indeed such embarrassing. But...she only 150cm something moreover with her thirteen or fourteen baby face while Yu Ao Tian is 190cm of something with his handsome and mature appearance, this scenery looks so loveable.

"This is much better compare to leave you walking by yourself."

This is true. Yao Yao unhappy frowned, but because she is afraid being seen, she hides her face in Yu Ao Tian's chest...

"Big Sis, why don't you leave?" at the parking lot, Li Mei Yun footsteps stopped, from far away when she just drove her car: "Just now it was... seems like Yu Ao Tian's car."

"It's so normal."

"But beside him seems... there was little girl."

"Hah? Sis, are you sure that brother in law at your back...." Li Ruo Ting who spoke half suddenly: "But this is also so normal, brother in law have many women at outside, don't tell me you don't know, sis?"

#### **Azzuro Notes:**

If some of you read the novel in Chinese, I believe you might find so many resources about this novel. To say, I have found few resources for this novel with many differences in Total Chapters and also Chapters title but don't worry, the contained are still same from one resources to others. Some of the resources have less than 600 chapters and other about 800++ chapters.

When I carefully checked it, I found the huge differences between the resources more or less because the shorten total chapters contained more words in every chapters. Perhaps some of you also asking why the title chapters might different from your reading, perhaps because we have read in different resources since every resources have different title from one to other.

#### **Chapter 84**

## **Everything is too late**

"Yes. Outside Yu Ao Tian has so many women with him but he never brings any of them out or appears in public!" Li Mei Yun is believed on Yu Ao Tian's person.

"So you mean? Could it be, that person must be Mo Xue Tong, that bitches."

Every time brings up the topic about Mo Xue Tong, Li Mei Yun could feel herself so itchy, but she assured that girl was not Mo Xue Tong! She took out her phone and dialed number: "Hello? Help me to check out about the women who in contact with Yu Ao Tian recently." She hung the phone called; her beautiful eyes flashed jealousy....

Arrived at the villa, Yu Ao Tian put down Yao Yao on the sofa inside the living room while he is directly heading to the bathroom.

"Bao Bei, do you want taking bath with me?" Before he entered the bathroom, he did not forget to tease her.

It makes Yao Yao face burned hot and white. "No need. You go by yourself." After said, she laying at the sofa and stared blankly in living room...

"I don't care with whom you are, I also not bother what have you did with him. Just immediately! Now! You...back to my side!"

Just immediately! Now! You...back to my side!"

Her ears feel burn hot when she recalled Feng Chen Yi's words, she angry clenched: "Why must I remember that matter again?" when she was in the park she has told herself that she must forget all the things, on the way she back to home beside Yu Ao Tian, she even not dares to think about him but now...

Once she sat down alone, her mind filled with Feng Chen Yi.

"Must think how to distract myself. Yes, distract myself." Stood up, with one

of her foot she walking inside, trying to find something to do.

Oops! She not careful hit herself in dining table and messing files of document: "This is... is it document that brought by Yu Ao Tian? Damn!" she hurried tidy up the papers in ordered.

"This must be the first page, this the second, the third, the fourth. The..." not right! This document... how can be like this?

She is attracted by the document, she carefully read the document contain, from the first page, second page until the last page, suddenly her expression changed, her small face white, so pale.

She wish her analyzing is wrong, because she read the document in fast pace. But it still not right! It's worse!

"Yu Ao Tian! Yu Ao Tian!" She put back the document, not bother with her injured leg, she rushing toward the bathroom, once the door opened...

"Aiyoo..." her leg hit something, "Bamn" a sound that she felt down and half of her body entered the bathroom.

"Hehe, Bao Bei, didn't you say that you not want to take bath with me, in very short time you have forced to rush into, you even not undress. Aiya, aiya." Yu Ao Tian devilish smiled, grabbed one of Yao Yao's leg and let her get into the bathroom.

"I am sorry! Sorry! I don't so it on purpose. I am sorry."

"Little thing, you really brazen ah." Yu Ao Tian face changed.

Rotten bastard, I have apologized with him but still poured by water!

"Bao Bei, is it fun?"

"Not fun at all. You let me go. I really not do it on purpose."

"Oh, since you are not on purpose, well, I forgive you."

"Uh, You..." all her body is wet.

"Didn't you tell me to let you go? Little thing... later on in the future you must undress yourself before taking bath, didn't your mom teach you? And still, do you have habit taking bath without undress yourself?"

"No, I am not coming because want to take bath." She is trying to escape.

"Bao Bei, you come in, we soak in bathtub together." Yu Ao Tian caught her.

"I don't want. I don't want to soak in bathtub."

"En? You entered bathroom not thinking to bath? Aiya, you little dirty kitten."

After struggling inside the bathroom, finally Yao Yao had her bath after forcing Yu Ao Tian to get out from the bathroom because she has wet all over her body.

\*\*

"Hello, Ao Tian." After he disposed the employee, straightly he phoned Yu Ao Tian. "The person who responsible the work contract, I have fired him."

"En."

"Others... this work contract loophole, who realized it?" Long Ye has huge interesting because Yu Ao Tian has sent this work contract early in the morning, he had read carefully the work contract but he didn't realized the loophole or any problem regarding the work contract, until he re-read it for more than three times finally he found it. No wonder the business department is not realized it.

"Luo Yao Yao who found it."

"Hah, that Xiao Meng Li. She really knows many things; finally the talented young maiden makes her appearance. Oh ya, how about this work contract?"

"Just sign it, beside... my main goal isn't this work contract." After he said, Yu Ao Tian hung the phone call...

"Today afternoon, Ao Mei Group president director, Zhao Zhi Cheng and the General Manager of Berson Group, Long Ye have come to sign work agreement, this work contract once again to highlight that Berson Group is joining and taking share in entertainment industry. This must be green light, the financial expert who started from two years ago, who becomes one of the dominant and powerful Business Group is Berson, besides Berson Group has kept it pace closer to Feng Group."

Yao Yao is sitting in front of the television, watching the news that reported Long Ye is signing work contract with Ao Mei Group, her face showed suspicious: "Didn't Yu Ao Tian knew about the loophole of the work contract? Why he still

signed the contract with Ao Mei Group? If Ao Mei group really changed their work contract contains, still this mean there is no sincerity, not worth to be business partner. He... what does his purpose?"

In Ao Mei group meeting room...

"General Manager Long, congratz for our work contract." After the work contract signed, Ao Mei Group President Director passionately greeting Long Ye.

"Hm, hope we have great partnership. Oh yeah, actually our CEO is also coming here." Long Ye plastered his face with smile, but his eyes flashed as if he wanted to bite the person to death.

"Oh? Is CEO Yu also coming? Well, I shall go to see him, shall I?"

"He He, as you know our CEO Yu does not like to show in front of crowded."

"Oh, he is really low-profile, so low profile."

"HeHe, now he is in your office room. Let's go."

"Let's go."

Zhao Zhi Cheng and Long Ye are heading to Zhi's own office room. When they just arrived, he saw few men in black suit stood in front of his office, dumbfounded: "Does CEO Yu going out always take so many men with him?"

"Yes. President Director Zhao as you know, there are too many people who wish for CEO Yu death, so how can he not bring that few men as bodyguard when he is going out?"

"HaHaHa, General Manager Long you have good sense of humor, CEO Yu is someone outstanding who dares to wish him die? Isn't it? Ha Ha Ha."

After hearing Zhao Zhi Cheng hypocritical laugh, Long Ye narrowed his eyes, pulled the office room's door opened...

Looking further, the office room seems to be battlefield for undoubtedly.

Yu Ao Tian wore black suit and sat on the Zhao Zhi Cheng's seat in his office, while behind Yu Ao Tian is Han Li Shang, Mo Xue Tong and Long Qi, three of them standing. While outside the office room there still few men in black suit guarding. It could say that, all of them have prepared for today occasion. As long

as someone go inside alone that person might feel the petrified atmosphere which can make the person faint immediately.

"Yu...CEO Yu, Vice CEO Han, all of you are coming?" Zhao Zhi Cheng footsteps weaken when he stepped inside his room.

Fortunately beside him is Long Ye who quickly helped to hold, if not perhaps he might be kneeling on the ground.

"President Director Zhao, looking at your age, you don't need to be helped when walking, right? Why today..." Long Ye laughing voice piercing.

He wiped his cold sweat in his forehead: "Ha, Ha Ha, just not balance, a moment not balance."

"Oh... so that. How if I free my hand?"

"En En, Thank you, thank you." Zhao Zhi Cheng said thank you but his eyes adversely looking at Yu Ao Tian: "That, CEO Yu... I hope we have great collaboration."

"Very good, great collaboration." Yu Ao Tian used pair of his hand to support his cheek on the desk. He smiled deviously: "If the collaboration not happy, how can I come here by myself? The most important is...President Director Zhao, as long as you happy it will do."

"Ha, He He."

Seeing that Zhao Zhi Cheng treachery expression, Yu Ao Tian narrowed his eyes, showing his sinister smiling while stroking the chair handle: "To be honest, President Director Zhao your office room really comfortable. I love to sit in this position and unwilling to get up, what do you think?"

"Yu, CEO Yu, you stop joking with me, in this business environment who does not know that your CEO office room in Berson Group is one of the most glamour and splendid in this entire China, about my office room, how can it be compared?"

"Aiya, there is time when get used to eat abalone, sometimes need to eat vegetarian also not bad, am I right?" his pair of eyes flashed coldness.

At this moment suddenly two of his men grab hold of Zhao Zhi Cheng's hand.

"Yu...CEO Yu, You...what do you intending to?" Zhao Zhi Cheng is shocked with sudden attack, his face white pale.

"What I intend to do? Ha, I am Yu Ao Tian from the start like to eat by myself, 60/40 business, how can I do that kind of business? So that...if you vanish from this world, that, Ao Mei will be mine, what do you think?"

Looking at Yu Ao Tian facial expression, no one dares to say he is joking, he is genuine to do so.

But, inside the room with that strange atmosphere cannot perjure oneself, even Zhao Zhi Cheng not dares to doubt: "Yu...CEO Yu, if I die, this company also not belongs to you! After all based on your 40% stocks it is impossible. Besides, it's impossible that you don't know who is my backup? He is Deputy Prime Minister, Zeng Kai Rui."

"You are right. Aiya, so what if yours backup is that old thing, current Deputy Prime Minister, Zeng Kai Rui?" Yu Ao Tian intentionally showed his deep thought expression: "Ha, if he knew that the working collaboration that we had signed something feign business contract, would he understanding, my reason...why I must kill you?" After he said, his face showed merciless expression and as cold as ice.

Zhao Zhi Cheng only can feel his sweat streaming down more and more, he never thought that Yu Ao Tian who not even in his thirties could be such scary and frightening. "Since you have known there was problem in the business contract, why do you still want to sign it?"

"Why?" He smiled sneaky, slowly he walking in front of Zhao Zhi Cheng, suddenly his hand pulled Zhi Cheng's hair, his ghastly face gradually approaching him: "It's because you are Zeng Kai Rui's confidant!"

Looking closely Yu Ao Tian's pair of eyes that flashed with hatred, finally Zhao Zhi Cheng understood what going on: "so it's between you and Deputy Prime Minister! Yu Ao Tian, since it is your personal grudges, you also don't need to go against the money, right? You are so immature."

"Ckckckck, Zhao Zhi Cheng, do you really think yourself that high, cih." He said with pity sight.

One of the black men hit Zhao Zhi Cheng until unconscious.

"Put him in sack and bring him out from back door." Long Ye gave command.

After all the Xiao Di leaving the office room, Han Li Shang who walking side by side with Yu Ao Tian: "Ao Tian, finally we have settled one of them, why are you still not so unhappy?"

#### **Chapter 85**

### **Get Hit**

The expressionless Yu Ao Tian gazing outside scenery from the high floor through the glass window, he forced himself to smile, helplessly took long breathe: "I have spent two years but yet I just settled only one person."

"Ao Tian, there is no such rush, do it slowly." Mo Xue Tong patting his shoulder.

At other side is Long Ye who joined patting his shoulder: "That's right, don't rush, do it slowly. All of us still so young, although it takes time and energy we will be able to bring down that Zeng Kai Rui and takes his dog life."

"Ha, let's go." After said, all of them are leaving Ao Mei group...

When night comes, Yao Yao who sat in front of television, not even realizing the presence of Yu Ao Tian.

"Bao Bei, in this way you can be in dangerous, if the person who entering is not me but bad person, what would you do?" Yu Ao Tian giggles, sitting beside her and pulled her into his embrace.

Yao Yao wanted to avoid him, make a move and coldly stood up in front of him: "Today afternoon, when I watched the news I saw Berson Group and Ao Mei Group signing the business contract."

"Oh, and then?" Yu Ao Tian crossed his leg, calmly asking her.

"I also watched other afternoon news, it was about..." she lowered her head: "The Chairman of Ao Mei group was suicide by jumping from building."

"En, and then?"

Her head slowly lift up, she clenched and clear her throat: "Zhang Zhi Yuan... did you kill him, didn't you?"

"I killed him."

Thump! Her heart pounding hard, she never thought that Yu Ao Tian could be this calm when answered her question. "Why? Why did you do it? At the beginning I was curious, you have already known the contained of the work contract is feigned but still you signed it. But after I watched the news about Zhang Zhi Yuan suicide, finally I understood why you still signed that contract even it is feigned!"

"Ha, so what do you think my reason is?"

"When you signed that business contract, you will have 40% of Ao Mei's stock, while 60% belong to Zhang Zhi Yuan. And then, if you showed the fraud of the business contract, not only you are free from the accusation about Zhang Zhi Yuan's suicide but the stock of Ao Mei would drop. During the time you can freely to buy all the stock of Ao Mei with the cheapest price, beside that, the Berson Group won't get any bad effect moreover it able to raise the stock of Berson Group. Only one person death, you may earn at least hundred thousand millions. Am I right?!"

After listened to every each sentences of Yao Yao. Yu Ao Tian really did not know whether to say Zhang Zhi Yuan was too stupid or Yao Yao who is so smart!

"So it's between you and Deputy Prime Minister! Yu Ao Tian, since it is your personal grudges, you also don't need to go against the money, right? You are so immature."

That's right! He indeed have deep grudge with Deputy Prime Minister, he even dares to gamble and ruin his own business. Perhaps because of the death of Zhang Zhi Yuan everyone might think that Yu Ao Tian could be sacrificed anything because of his grudge, but no one even knows that his motive had seen through by little girl!

Hah, only this time he really hopes that this little thing can give him stupid smile, maybe...it would be better if she able to have same thought as Zhang Zhi Yuan.

"Bao Bei, you even thought that by one person death, I could earn thousand of million, it so worth, isn't it?"

"You are too over! Yu Ao Tian, how can you have this kind of thought? Life is priceless don't you understand? You are cold blood beast how can...."

"Pa" suddenly her face got slapped very hard. She hasn't reacted while her long hair is merciless grabbed by the man.

Yu Ao Tian slowly closer his face to her small face, sternly said: "Little Thing, although these few days I have spoiled you so much, thinking that you are so smart. But, it better for you to use your smart brain in right place, don't forget about your status!" after said, he swayed her away...

Yao Yao fell to floor, her corner of mouth bleeding with fresh blood.

Her small hand touched her face, dumbstruck looking at the man who sat in sofa, her body is trembling! At this moment, she finally remembered...

This man who surrounded with domineering aura has another status; he is the underworld emperor, isn't he?

"Yu...Yu Ao Tian, I asked you, if... I never told you...about fraud of the business contract, would you...kill him?"

His eyes flashed looked at her, smiled: "Aiya, that's right, I almost forget you are also one of the person who has gave big contribution, if not because you who said that business contract had problem, perhaps...I didn't have reason to kill him!"

Her crystal bright eyes cannot hold her tears anymore; she never thought her good intention could kill other person! She used her effort to climb up, she "Woah..." she crying so miserably, the entire villa echoing her voice....

After she left, the cold expression in Yu Ao Tian face changed to be helpless, he inhale deep breath and raised his head to look the surrounding.

He really does not know his lies could give such big hit for Yao Yao.

Perhaps, for little girl who only nineteen year old, facing with this sudden strike indeed quite hard to deal with. But, God has given her premature reality but also wisdom, if she stills keep her innocent and naively seeing this world, living in this world, soon or later one day...she might get killed by this society!

"Little Thing, slowly you will understand about this world's cruelest things..."

Half hour later, he slowly took up his phone: "Mei Yun, where are you?"

"Why? Ao Tian, your tone...little bit different, do you have bad mood?"

"I asked where you are."

"At home."

"Wait for me.' After said he hung the phone and he left...

\*\*

Boom bum. Da da

At other quiet corner of street, one of the luxurious cars turned on a deafening sound of music. The good looking man is drinking glass by glass wine while beside him there are two sexy women sitting beside him and tightly embraced by him.

"Young Master Feng, you are drinking wine by yourself, why you drink such exasperating." One of the women took his wine from his hand, while her finger caress his chest.

"That's right. As I said Chen Yi, inside car there are women and also me, your best buddy who accompany you, it is so meaningless to play by myself alone." One of the good looking man who sat at other side said, he has black eyes and also good looking trait in his face. He is trying to joke while holding a glass of red wine.

Feng Chen Yi said nothing, he took the wine and gulped it.

"Young Master Feng..." before one of the women opened her mouth, Feng Chen Yi eyes flashed warned her, she immediately shut her mouth up.

"Chen Yi, you looked little bit weird since last night, what was happened?" one of the red hair man patted him, he waved her hand to the women who sat beside Feng Chen Yi to leave them from car.

"Nothing." He said coldly.

"I don't...have any meaning." The red hair man helplessly looked outside through the window. At this moment, not far from their car there is little girl who crying at the other side road.

"Uh, looked quite beautiful but seems little bit idiot."

"Zi Xuan, you said whom?"

"You see by yourself." Ou Yang Zi Xuan pointed to outside the window.

When Feng Chen Yi raised his head: "Yao Yao!"

"Uh, do you know that girl?"

His eyes flashed, his cold eyes and expression suddenly showed faint smile: "Zi Xuan, I want you to help me!"

#### **Chapter 86**

"Let me go, who are you, let me go." Yao Yao is dragged by Ou Yang Zi Xuan to the car. Once she got into the car, she saw inside the car was Feng Chen Yi: "Is you who asked this red hair to drag me here?"

"Chen Yi, I guard the door."

"En, thank you, Zi Xuan."

Just pretend she is not asking anything, after she heard the short conversation between Feng Chen Yi and the red hair, she understood this man is asked by Feng Chen Yi. Just now she thought she met scoundrel.

After Ou Yang Zi Xuan left, Feng Chen Yi looked at Yao Yao, smiled: "My beloved Yao Yao, why are you walking alone in the street in this late of night time, don't you know it so dangerous? Are you crying while walking? Impossible... yesterday when I said about your "fiancé" perhaps he is more bastard than me, did you find the evidence about him?"

Why must he act like this? Why Feng Chen Yi must hurt her in such way? "Have you done? If done I will take my leave."

"Come here."

Again and again she is commanding by this kind of attitude, either Yu Ao Tian or Feng Chen Yi. She has felt enough for them! Turned her back, when she wanted to open the car's door...

"Didn't you hear I asked you to come here!" His voice tone higher, Feng Chen Yi pulled her back.

"Aw." Cold sweat dripping, she felt pain in her leg so that she groaned.

Feng Chen Yi realized something wrong with her: "You sprained your leg?"

"None of your business!"

"When were you sprained your leg?" He looked so anxious in front of Yao Yao,

his hand gently stroke her injured leg.

"I have said, it none of your business!"

"Luo Yao..." he tried to control his trembling body, Feng Chen Yi helplessly furrowed his brow, carefully to examine her injured leg.

"You, what are you doing?"

"How could you sprain your leg?" He gently touched her leg.

"Aww, it hurt, hurt."

"Since it hurt why don't you have rest at home?" Feng Chen Yi took first aid box from the car dashboard: "Fortunately inside the car there is first aid." He lifts her leg, put into his lap and gently applied the medicine.

The scenery, it took back the past years memory, that time when she injured her leg, he would nag her about her ignorance and carefully applied the medicine. She never thought after years, he still like the olden him, haha.

"Thank..thank you." Her eyes showed pitiful and hurt, she took closer look to that good looking face that showed faint smile.

"Well. Next time..." at the moment he raise his head, Feng Chen Yi spotted Yao Yao's left face there is five finger imprinted on her cheek. "Brush" at the moment his expression changed coldly: "Your face injured...did he do it?"

Her heart feel tighten, Yao Yao touched her own face: "No! Thank...thank you. You have applied medicine, I...I take my leave."

"Luo Yao Yao!" He embedded his finger nails to her wrist: "Tell me! Did he hit you or not?"

"No, No, really no."

"Perhaps, you can lie to anybody but not me. From the first time we together, we have spent about three years together, do you think I will believe on your lies?" He pulled her...

At the moment she has entered the familiar warm and gentleness, just realizing, within these two years actually she really, she really depended too much toward him, too much. Her tears falling down, at this moment she really cannot refuse his embrace. Perhaps she got too much pressure from Yu Ao Tian, she cannot denial. At the time she signed that lover contract, she should prepare herself to face Yu Ao Tian. After all, a person who can sit on Mafia's emperor throne must be someone not good, facing either men or women, but now he also have businessman status, seeing how merciless Yu Ao Tian towards other. She hurt.

And then...

That man is really hard to read for her, actually she really helpless. Moreover she does not have any reason to understand him, he used mafia method to settle this kind of matter. Of course! This kind of method is not acceptable for her, because of her one moment of her intelligent, she made others...get killed!

"Yao Yao." Looking at her wet face, he gently said: "He, who is he?"

Cannot say... cannot say... this path was her choice, she should alone walking in this path! "Don't ask, please?"

How could he not ask! His cold-iced hand gently caress her red burn face, his eyes flashed unspoken bitter, he knew, she must be bullied, but his heart is even hurt!

When that good looking face come closer and wanted to kissed her suddenly she remember...

"Little Thing, although these few days I have spoiled you so much, thinking that you are so smart. But, it better for you to use your smart brain in right place, don't forget about your status!"

"Don't forget your status!"

Yu Ao Tian's words as if cursed that burned her ears, when both of their lips touched, suddenly Yao Yao opened her eyes, pushed him away.

At the moment the warm atmosphere inside the car turned be cold, Feng Chen Yi said: "Yao Yao, at this time you even thought about him!"

In front of Feng Chen Yi, she as if the transparent glass, only at one glanced, only at one movement, he could know what she thinking of. She really does not know how to answer his question.

Even her relationship with Yu Ao Tian only as contract lover, which not involve love but she really cannot betray him. If not because of him, her grandpa perhaps won't live until today. If not because of him, perhaps she had sold and dirty by stranger. If not because of him...when working in night club, perhaps her condition...unimaginable.

"I...will never betray him." She looked down, she not dares to look at Feng Chen Yi because she afraid to see herself-pity in his eyes, why? Why she felt as if she really sorry to Feng Chen Yi, what happen actually?

"Yao Yao, tell me, do you really like this kind of man treatment, don't you?"

She raised her head, in front of her there is familiar face but yet it so stranger for her, there is such fear feeling toward him.

"If you say nothing it means you are admitting? Since this is the case..." he curled his lips up, he laughing so scary while pressed on her wrist.

"No...No... don't!"

One of his hand is trying to strip her, while her eyes glared him as if throwing a dagger. That white skin of body unstopped moving, she panic, put all her strength to fight with him but her strength isn't match to him.

"Feng Chen Yi, you let me go! Let me go!"

#### **Chapter 87 - 88**

Feng Chen Yi intended to violate Yao Yao inside the car because he envied and jealous with the man who is protected by Yao Yao.

No matter how Feng Chen Yi asked about the man, Yao Yao mouth close so tight. She not even says any words referring to Yu Ao Tian's identity. She only can cry, begging Feng Chen Yi to let her go, after while, Feng Chen Yi heart soften.

"Luo Yao Yao, I asked you once again, are you willing or not to come back to my side?" Feng Chen Yi asked.

Silence...

The atmosphere in the car is still strange.

At this moment she really afraid to hear this question, she afraid not to think the consequence and said...I am willing!

**Endure!** Endure!

Still same answered; this path is the path that decided by her so she must walk until the end!

"I am sorry, I can't...do it." After she said, she left the car.

"Damn!" Feng Chen Yi hit the car's window. He never thought she could be that persistent toward that man, at least he did not see her hesitation when answered his question.

Running faster to the car...

"Chen Yi, what is going on?" Ou Yang Zi Xuan alarmed—his face confused.

He not cares with his buddy question, Feng Chen Yi eyes followed that petit figure that has left...

"Luo Yao Yao!"

The familiar voice broke the silent night, Yao Yao stopped and has cried as if human's river.

At other seconds...

"Since this moment... I , Feng Chen Yi if see you cry, I will make you crying louder; if I see people bullied you, I will be the first person who bullied you; if you are happy, I will be the person who stole your happiness; as long as you unhappy, I will make your life miserable; forever I will be the most wicked and bad man in your life, being your daily nightmares!" since I cannot hold on your love, so...I rather become the most hatred person in your life!

Turned back, Feng Chen Yi, words by words as if turned be a snowy winter that gives chill to her heart. But... for Yao Yao perhaps this is the best ending.

She wiped dry her tears, slowly turned: "If is so, you must prove it to me." She gave him faint smile.

Chen Yi, perhaps you will never know, hate you are more difficult compare to love you, remember you are easier compare to forget you. Really, If you really able to make me hate you, perhaps this is for me... actually is kind of ending (give up)!

The melancholic tears are floating in the air and slowly dropped on the ground as if another blooming flower withered in such way, one by one. One's wish it better that the flowers never bloom again, forever dying...

Under the bright sky of silent night, the man and woman who loving each other denied their love, this kind of love which cannot together, a painful love, how many people ever experienced this kind pain in their heart?

\*\*

Three days later, Berson Group, Finance Department...

"Everyone, let me introduce new colleague, Luo Yao Yao, let's welcome her." Said the vice manager of Finance Department, Wilson who passionately introduced Yao Yao to others colleagues.

It was yesterday, Yao Yao suddenly got phone called from Berson's Human Resources Department, today in the early of morning she coming to report. No need to ask, this all must be Yu Ao Tian "Reward".

"Hello everyone!" She smiled sweetly to her new colleagues.

"Little Luo (Xiao Luo), you are teamed with supervisor Sun." Wilson said. He is waved his hand to the woman in her thirties slowly walking closer to her, "Sun Li, later Yao Yao will be teamed with you."

"Yes, Manager Wilson." Sun Li nodding, she turned to look at Yao Yao: "Hello, Little Luo, if you have something that you not understand feel free to ask me."

"I understand Supervisor Sun."

"Come." Sun Li took Yao Yao to her seat: "This is your place. Well, for these few days you better take good look these documents, if you have problem you can ask me or you also free to ask others colleagues. I go to do my work."

Seeing lots of the thick documents in her table, she nodded and smiled politely: "Alright. You go to busy Supervisor Sun." she tidied up and carefully to read all the documents in her table.

From all the time since the morning until go home there are lots of colleagues that greeted her, she has dreamt this kind of feeling long time ago, so long, this just too dreamy for her.

"Bai Ling! Bai Ling! Here, here." During lunch time, she asked Bai Ling to have lunch with her in cafeteria on the second day.

Bai Ling happily seeing Yao Yao who is standing in front of her: "Yao Yao, you tell me, how can you go to Financial Department after leaving Service Department?"

Ugh...

"Actually because..." what kind of reason should she give her.

"Oh, I know! It must Manager Long who recommended you, isn't he?"

"Yeah! That's right! It was him."

"See, just like what I said, both of you having something amiss? Why do you still lying at me? Humph!"

Sweating, whatsoever, since Bai Ling thought on that way just let her to keep

her thinking that way? Yao Yao smiled, she eating while reading some documents.

"Yao Yao, what are you doing? Why are you working such hard to this point? You are having lunch but still working?"

"Well, I just think this document content really interesting, I think I can read it while eating." This few documents all are described several information concerning about the domestic financiers, this information are so important for Yao Yao who just back to China.

"Oh." Whatsoever, Bai Ling is not understood what kind of world that Yao Yao said, helplessly she rolled her eyes, she tilted her head to one side: "Uh..."

"What happen? Bai Ling?" Yao Yao asked when she saw her friend seems not focusing on her.

"Yao Yao! Yao Yao! That was the elevator handsome man, hurried take a look."

Following the Bai Ling's finger that pointed...

She saw Yu Ao Tian who smiled slowly walking to the cafeteria.

It could be say, since that day happen, Yu Ao Tian never came to her place, so that she seems as concubine that put into cold palace and slowly would be forgotten and put in the corner.

But now suddenly she meets Yu Ao Tian, she felt little bit strange, she also did not know whether it because Feng Chen Yi's matter last time or... she felt as if doing wrong. She panic and using the document to cover her face, she afraid to be seen by Yu Ao Tian.

"Yao Yao, there is also Long Qi, let's we call him to come here and have lunch together."

"Ah? No...need..." Before Yao Yao can't stop, Bai Ling has rushed, Oh my God... she really does not want to die this early.

"Hi." Bai Ling smiled in front of Yu Ao Tian.

Paused for moment, all the people who are eating in cafeteria looked at her. Perhaps because not many people who know the real status of Yu Ao Tian, most of the people just looked at them.

"All of you are having lunch in here? Do you want to have lunch together?"

Facing with the sudden "appearance" of Bai Ling, Yu Ao Tian just furrowed his brows, his good looking face flashed cold expression.

"CEO Yu? This place?" Beside Yu Ao Tian there is a man who in forties called him.

Yao Yao who sat not far is glancing, that middle age man is...

She quickly opened one of the folder, carefully examined the photo inside the document, Xia Yu, The Chairman of Lan Du group, it is him! Since Yu Ao Tian is coming together with him, it means that... both of them are talking about business? What would happen with Bai Ling appearance? What a bad luck!

"He He, CEO Xia, this is one of the most capable employee in my company." He introduced some men that surrounded them. After said, Yu Ao Tian eyes are gleaming coldly.

Long Ye who stood beside hurried to take Bai Ling far away. But who knows...

"Handsome man, is he your friend? Well, let's we have lunch together. Come, come." Bai Ling excited looked at Xia Yu hastily her food bumped into Xia Yu.

Everyone still looked at her while she is apologizing, "I am so sorry, sorry..."

"Oh My God." Xia Yu exclaimed unhappily, the atmosphere is extremely no good. He is clean freak and now his body is dirtied by food, angrily he said: "Little Miss, what are you doing? How can you do be like this?"

"Chairman Xia, please calm down, later I will ask someone to bring you new suite, this employee, we will deal with her later." Said Long Ye calmly.

But Xia Yu is hard to please: "Whatever, CEO Yu, General Manager Long Ye, today regarding the business contract...."

"Hello Mr. Xia." Suddenly Yao Yao stood up in front of Xia Yu and greeted him.

Xia Yu stared blankly: "You, who?"

"Ha Ha, my name is Luo Yao Yao, when I was studying in England as exchanged student, I had read so many interviewed and also articles about you, never thought today I have honor to meet you in person, really lucky. Regarding about

your writing (The Financial Analysis), that book, I had read it more than three times, there are few point which you pointed out which really useful when I doing my thesis, I got many praised for that. If there is an opportunity, I really have high expectation to learn more from you, learning more about the financial analysis, I think... this will be great help for my work." Yao Yao talked as if she is core fans who admired him so much which so different with her little rabbit innocent aura.

Xia Yu looked at her closely after heard what she said, suddenly his mood changed, from angry to happy, he laughed: "Really? I never thought little girl like you are interested with Financial Analysis, haha, did the book sold in England too?"

### 89

Another mystery about Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao relationship regarding years ago will reveal slowly but the reality is not as expected by Yu Ao Tian...

### **Chapter 89**

#### **Smart reaction**

How could she know whether the book sold in England or not, she never go to England before!

"There were, of course there were. I even bought it with my classmate."

"Hahahaha, aiya, I never thought to meet my hard core fans. Hahahaha." Xia Yu happily smiling while looked at Yu Ao Tian's direction.

He nodded, his black eyes gazed at Yao Yao who standing in front of them: "CEO Xia, Let we have our lunch, later—my secretary will take new suit for you."

"Ok. It's Alright."

After seeing Xia Yu left, Yu Ao Tian expression changed: "Long Ye!"

"Ok, I know how to settle the matter."

Although both of those two persons are not saying much about the detail, Yao Yao has sort of premonition, when no one paid attention toward her, she hurried blocked Yu Ao Tian.

"En?"

She showed her pity eyes, begging at him, she quickly shakes her head, hoping Yu Ao Tian will change his mind.

But...

He narrowed his eyes, expressionless swayed her hands, hurried he walked to the private room.

Doom! She only able to beg Long Ye: "Long... General Manager Long."

"Xiao Meng Li, don't beg me. Whatever Yu Ao Tian has decided he never changed it. I go to work." Unknown to hers, Long Ye didn't even mention about chance, he is simply leaving with Long Qi.

What should I do...seeing Yu Ao Tian he must.... Would he lay off Bai Ling?

"Yao Yao, was the elevator handsome man is our Berson group's CEO?" after leaving the cafeteria, the trouble maker Bai Ling just sensed. "Did you have known him before?"

"Actually...I did know him recently."

"Oh heaven, as rumor said that our CEO is someone good looking, really handsome, but I never thought he is extremely handsome. I always thought that good looking man was PR's staff. I even wanted to cry."

The person who wanted to cry must be she who worrying because Bai Ling is going to be fired soon but still she thought about good looking men. "Bai Ling, if you are fi..."

"Oh yeah, Yao Yao, do you know that man who named Xia Yu? Moreover, it seems you ever told me that you were studying at Japan, how could it be changed to England?"

How to explain! She furrowed her brow: "Actually, I was read his information in the document. It was written about all interviewed and also articles regarding him. He likes England that place so much, so I thought to get closer the distance with him by saying that I have ever study in England."

"Oh, how could his expression changed from anger to happy after listened to you?" Bai Ling is curious asking her. She feels Yao Yao is so amazing.

"Ah, it just my luck. From his data, I tried to analyzing him, I think he must be someone who likes to hear other people compliment about himself. Moreover every time he got interviewed he liked to bring up his book, he seems to acknowledgement his writing so much. But at same time I did analyzed that his book not really welcomed by others. Thus..."

"Thus, you are only the crazy who said like his book, you even said to flatter him, aren't you?"

"En."

"Woah! Yao Yao you are super herb, you able to see and predict someone in very short time, you are so awesome." Bai Ling looked at her with worship expression.

But...

If she really that awesome how could she never able read or see through Yu Ao Tian!

"Bai Ling, I asked you, what will you do if you are stop working?"

"Resigned? Why must I resign, I came from country side, it not easy for me to come and work in Berson Group, of course I should work for the rest of my life time, even this work is such tiring I never thought to change to other job. Well, Yao Yao, I go to work. Bye bye."

"Bye...bye..." she helplessly waving her hand to Bai Ling, she really does not know how to help Bai Ling: "Huh..."

"CEO Yu, hope both of us have a great collaboration."

"Great collaboration." After lunch time, Berson Group and Lan Du Group are signing work contract. Xia Yu is happily leaving Berson Group.

"Ha, Xiao Meng Li is awesome, only by her few words, Xia Yu flattered overly. Ao Tian, you must send Xiao Meng Li into PR Department."

After Long Ye done, Yu Ao Tian coldly said: "To spin a cocoon around oneself<sup>1</sup>]!"

"Ugh, there must be no big deal, mustn't it? Rumor still rumor, Xia Yu only met Xiao Meng Li one time, won't he thought much about her, right? Huh... but, he had brought up about Xiao Meng Li for the entire time when had lunch. Ah, it seems that Xiao Meng Li in danger." Long Ye is talking while walking with Yu Ao Tian, both of them are heading to CEO's room.

When he arrived at his office room, his footstep stopped, ominously said: "Xue Tong, if this afternoon Luo Yao Yao is coming to search for me, you told her today I am so busy, I don't have time for the whole afternoon."

"Yes." Mo Xue Tong nodded, mysteriously she pointed at CEO's office room: "Z is inside waiting for you."

"Z? Ao Tian, why are you asking Z to come here?"

Z is a member of international detective which is mysterious organization, each member of this organization is worked exclusively only for one employment,

while Z exclusive employer is Yu Ao Tian.

At the normal situation, they would not ask Z to check on things, so that Long Ye is so curious what matter Yu Ao Tian wanted Z to check?

Yu Ao Tian said nothing; he just pushed open his office room.

"Hi, Mr. Yu, Mr. Long, long time no see." Sitting on sofa, Z dressed in black cloak, wearing sun glasses and mask, his voice even used voice changes, it make people cannot guess about his/her gender even the appearance, until today Yu Ao Tian also does not know Z real identity.

"The information?" cut off all the nonsenses, Yu Ao Tian dragged his chair, directly spoke to the point.

Z slowly handed over the document to Yu Ao Tian: "Her mother named Deng Hui Hong an unemployment, she doing odds job to support the living. Her grandfather is called Luo Chang, when he was young he worked in military, got injury so retire from his job, he depended on retirement fund. His father named Luo Tian Ming was... Deputy Prime Minister, Zeng Kai Rui's secretary. He also was one of his confidants."

"Ao Tian, are you checking on Xiao Meng Li?" finally Long Ye understood the important of Yao Yao for Yu Ao Tian, since he especially asked Z to check on her, the most important is...

"So Xiao Meng Li's father was Zeng Kai Rui secretary." He is murmured and Long Ye looked at Yu Ao Tian's side.

At the moment his face is showed darken expression, but suddenly it changed brighter. "Z, one year ago when I asked you to check on all the confidents of Zeng Kai Rui, why I didn't heard you reported Luo Tian Ming, this name?"

"Oh, Mr. Yu, don't be angry, you know how I am Z doing thing. A year ago when you asked me to check on all the confidants data I didn't included Luo Tian Ming because... Luo Tian Ming had already passed away 13 years ago caused by car accident, so that I didn't put his name. If not because you asked me to check on this little girl data, perhaps I never know for my whole life if 13 years ago there was other Zeng Kai Rui's confidant who named Luo Tian Ming."

### Note:

1] 作 zuo 茧 jian 自 Zi 缚 Fu: to spin a cocoon around oneself (idiom), enmeshed in a trap of one's own devising.

#### **Chapter 90**

### The Shocking news

After listened to Z explanation, Long Ye expression changed: "Ao Tian, you always persistent to check on Xiao Meng Li because you have sensed perhaps she might Luo Tian Ming's daughter?"

"Not because that." Yu Ao Tian expressionless shook his head, actually if not because the scar on Yao Yao's left shoulder, he would never wanted to ask Z to check Yao Yao, the result is far from what he expected because her father also one of Zeng Kai Rui's confidants, is this what called as justice (when the truth is revealed)?

"This is too coincide, is this called not alone but in pairs (it's not only the case)?" Long Ye helplessly smiled.

Even Yu Ao Tian thought this is really too coincide, too coincide!

"When I was six I got car accident, there are too many things that forgotten."

He remembered what Yao Yao ever told him before, she is 19 year old, when she was six it just right was 13 years ago, did Luo Tian Ming killed in that car accident?

He back to his sensed, Yu Ao Tian deep black eyes looked at Z who in front of him: "Regarding about Luo Yao Yao information which is kept secretly by the government, is there any way to check on it?"

"HaHa, Mr. Yu, I afraid this matter I could not help, but... perhaps there is someone who able to "open"."

"En?" Yu Ao Tian coldly said.

Z stretched his/her body, slowly said: "Before talking about this person, I would like to say other thing. Currently in this world there are only five people

who have IQ above 200. Luo Yao Yao who you asked me to check is included one of them. And then... I have evidence that actually they must be six!"

"Ah!" Yu Ao Tian curled up his lips: "I think, you better go on to the main point."

"Well, alright. Actually, I am quite curious with all these people who have high IQ, about 14 years ago there were six people. But 2 years ago, when I check on the data, I realized his data was deleted. Really curious, when I realized the data was deleted from Japan's IP, same year, the Japan recorded... Mr. Yu it was your data!" after said, Z used his hand to prop his chin: "I am gossiping, just wanted to know whether that "secret person" actually is same person or not."

"Well, the result?" Yu Ao Tian grinned, while Long Ye who standing beside him looked so gloomy.

Z shrugged: "The result, I was so disappointed, the Japanese recorded you are actually was born in Japan, even your IQ is an average, it seems that the person who deleted the data also hide the others six people data."

"Haha, Z, we have worked for such long time, you must know my character more or less?"

"Ok, I am sorry. Last sentences..." Z slowly stood up, gently patting Yu Ao Tian's shoulder: "perhaps I audacious make a guessing about you, your record in Japan... it must be fake? Since there was someone able to check it from Japan that very secret and confidential data from China Government server, moreover this person able to delete all the data. Actually, if this person really wanted to know about Luo Yao Yao it is not hard thing, regarding who is the person, Mr. Yu, you must have known better than me?"

"Z!" His eyes flashed, Yu Ao Tian grabbed his collar shirt, smiled: "I never know that you are so boring, you even dare to check on me?"

"Ha, Mr. Yu, in this world, two years ago you was the underworld Emperor in Japan, two years later you are Berson Group CEO, but actually within our detective group you are always...been mystery for us."

"Since it is mystery, it must be mystery forever. But once it known, it is not good either for me or for you, what do you...think?"

Z clearly knows the feeling being grabbed by Yu Ao Tian: "I understood, Mr. Yu. If there is nothing, I will take your leave."

Waiting until Z gone, Long Ye pissed off: "Hah, Z really quite good, since he could check on you. But, Ao Tian, why didn't you ask him to check Luo Tian Ming and that matters whether it had relation or not!"

Yu Ao Tian narrowed his eyes: "The matter about Luo Tian Ming I will go to ask his wife. About his daughter...." Stood up, slowly opened his computer, faster get online and preparing to hack into the country data

Long Ye is trying to stop Yu Ao Tian to hack China government server: "Ao Tian, are you deciding to check on Xiao Meng Li's data by yourself?" He shook his head: "This is not the time yet!"

Seeing how Long Ye begging on him, Yu Ao Tian immediately stopped his action and close his computer.

"Ao Tian, I really curious about Xiao Meng Li's identity and her secret but if you...." Long Ye stopped because it not usual to see composed and calm Yu Ao Tian acted this impulsive!

"Nothing." Yu Ao Tian avoided Long Ye question, took deep breath, he looked outside the window but his mind is floating nowhere.

While....

"Miss Mo, is CEO Yu in his office?"

"I am sorry, CEO Yu will have meeting this afternoon."

"Miss Mo, have CEO Yu done with his meeting?"

"I am sorry, CEO Yu is meeting with client."

"Miss Mo..."

For the entire afternoon, Yao Yao had visited CEO office room but she could not meet Yu Ao Tian, she really did not whether he really that busy or just avoided her. Frustrated!

"Hello Little Miss." During the got work off time, when she just stepped out from the Berson's lobby she was stopped by beautiful woman. "You are?"

"HaHa, I am Chairman Xia's secretary. Our Chairman Xia is asking you to meet him." After said, the beautiful woman pointed at the Cadillac that parked at street side.

She followed the beautiful secretary to the car's side, Xia Yu is opened the car window: "Get into car and let's we have talk."

Ah? Get into car to have talk? Didn't this Xia Yu really thought she must his real hard core Fan? "Xia...Chairman Xia, I am in hurry to go home, if you have an important thing to say, just say it in here."

"HaHa, if I really have an important thing to say, I wanted to talk with you while having coffee with me." Xia Yu smiled.

Yao Yao helplessly got into the car. "Chairman Xia, why are you looking for me?"

"What is your name?"

"Luo Yao Yao."

"Oh, what a cute name, your name just as cute as your person. I called you Yao Yao, is it okay?" Xia Yu is middle age man who aged almost fifty but his appearance only looked alike someone in his thirties, as additional he has good features and has elegant aura. He has aura which make people easy to get close to him.

"En."

"Where are you living? I will send you off."

Ah, she lives in... high class estate: "No need, Chairman Xia, thank you for your kindness, I can go home by myself."

#### 91 - 93

I feel so sad for Yao Yao whenever the lover topic bring up. She is cheerful girl with huge potential on her. She must be someone who do something BIG but not as lover.

She can lost anything but not her family and also her pride as person. Lover status always be stabbed knife in her heart. If not because she cares more her family, she perhaps die rather than be lover.

Again, this Chapter quite tearing for me when reading the part of, Yao Yao begging Yu Ao Tian to let her study and work as if she has nothing to wish for...

# Chapter 91-93

"Yao Yao, you don't need be that nervous, I am not bad person. To say, you are at same age with my daughter, so that I feel so familiar when I saw you from first time. If you willing, can you have dinner with me?"

"Ah?" Didn't you say that have something to talk about? How could it change to be dinner? "No, No, No...Chairman Xia, this is really cannot, cannot."

No matter how Yao Yao trying to refuse, this Xia Yu really not easy to deal with, finally he still brought her to five stars restaurant to have dinner. Moreover Xia Yu asked all the people to leave only left both of him and her, two persons.

"Yao Yao, are you single?" Xia Yu asked, one of his hands is holding wine and another hand touch Yao Yao's shoulder.

She is not comfortable with him so she stammered: "I, I have boyfriend."

"En? What is your boyfriend job?"

His job? How can she know it! It is only a lie. "Same like me, we are white collar workers."

"White collar worker, does it quite difficult? In today's society the life pressure quite pressing, does he able to support you? I starting to think, a little girl like you... must looking for man who able to protect you." Xia Yu elegantly moving his wine glass, while his other hand has moved to her waist: "Yao Yao, I really like you, do you understand?"

Not understand, also does not want to understand.

Although she has met him about two hours, even this man not give negative vibe but because of the way he spoke and gestures, how could he say something like this? Does he really expect Yao Yao to be his lover?

What is going on, why every man in this world cannot satisfy only with one woman?

"Chairman Xia, thank you for your deep affection, but currently I am so satisfied with my boyfriend, I also hope you to understand!"

"Yao Yao? Did I misunderstand something?" Xia Yu felt unhappy.

Yao Yao dumbstruck, what was called as misunderstand something?

"You..."

"Yao Yao!" another man called her.

Yao Yao and Xia Yu looked at the voice direction: "Long Qi."

"Are you? Berson's manager?"

"Aiya, Chairman Xia, today this afternoon we had lunch together, he he. Oh yeah, how can you together with my girlfriend?"

After Xia Yu heard, his hand that touches Yao Yao is removed: "Is Yao Yao your girlfriend?"

"Yes."

"En, En." Yao Yao hurried nodding her head.

"Well, I won't bother both of you. I take my leave." Basically during the time he knows Yu Ao Tian he also understand that Long Qi is one of Yu Ao Tian's confidants, although he is stupid, he would not dare to touch Yu Ao Tian's men, otherwise he wants to die. After he said, he walked away with his cold face.

Yao Yao relieved: "Long Qi, how can you be here?"

"Yu Ao Tian asked me to follow you."

"Ah?" Did Yu Ao Tian have guessed this thing would be happened?"

"Well, it seems the rumor about Xiao Yu as women killer is true." Long Qi murmured.

It feels that Xia Yu is recidivist, his appearance and his person really contradictive. "Long Qi, Thank you for today, let's we go."

"En, oh yeah, if Yu Ao Tian asked you, you must say that because Xia Yu had paw you so that I show up to help you. You must say like that."

Looking at Long Qi nervous expression, she furrowed her brow: "Why? Why must say too much difference with reality?"

"Of course, Ao Tian said, you must in your lame state so that I could come to

help. But... looking that old man touched you, I just feel unhappy!" Long Qi also did not know how to tell her, he just felt uncomfortable when saw it.

"En, I understood. In this way, I must thank you lot." Of course, she must thank Yu Ao Tian too, although he asked Long Qi to show up if she looked deprived, but Yao Yao understood the reason of Yu Ao Tian. He wanted her to taste the flavor from her act, makes her grow and wiser, he really strict!

"Long Qi..." suddenly her footstep stopped.

"What? Flat Chest."

"That... You... do you think that I am... really suitable to be others lover?" toward this matter she always doubt herself, why after she graduated from high school, meeting every man, one by one of them were asking her to be their lover? To hers this is kind of humiliation.

Looking at Yao Yao who looked so pity, Long Qi did not has heart to tease her as normal day he do, slowly said: "It's not about you suit or not as lover but this society is kind of like this. no matter rich men or not, every man tends to think to have lover, as additional you are... having that little bit good looks as woman, so that most of them paid more attention to you."

"So that? Based on your explanation, this is not my mistake, is it?"

"Of course not, this only because they are blind, after all how they are looking flat chest to be their lover!" He showed his devilish smiled.

Although every time she talked to Long Qi he likes to tease her but it does not matter for her, after she heard what Long Qi said, she feels much better.

"Get in car." Both of them walked to the car that parked at street side, when Long Qi opened the back seat's door...

"Yu Ao Tian?" Yao Yao shocked gazing at Long Qi, she also looked at the expressionless Yu Ao Tian who sat on car, ha, this is really called as travel far away looking for something. "Just in time I am looking for you, Yu Ao Tian, can you..."

"Get in car first." Yu Ao Tian cut off her words, his face dim.

Uh, his expression...seems not good, this kind of feeling, kind of feeling. She

crept sitting beside Yu Ao Tian.

The car slowly moving, inside the car the atmosphere deathly stillness, Long Qi left after he sent them to the villa...

She followed Yu Ao Tian to the villa, she wanted to open her mouth but swallow it later. Not, not, this is my opportunity, if not now there won't be any.

"Yu Ao Tian! Regarding..."

"If you wanted to talk about that little girl, I have nothing to say!" He coldly sitting on sofa, he not even glanced at her.

"But!" powerless, Yao Yao stood in front of him, "But Bai Ling not really made big mistake!"

"And, if not because of me to solve the matter today... oh yeah, to say, you haven't reward me." Hearing what Yao Yao said, Yu Ao Tian lips curled upward, slowly his face closer to hers: "What reward do you want?"

"Reward? Uh... no need, you give me an opportunity to work, I really thank you so much."

Looking at her innocent face and sweet smile, at the moment his eyes dim: "Little Thing! Are you really pretending to be fool or you are really stupid!"

What...what? Regarding to Yu Ao Tian, his cold-hot character Yao Yao never able to read him or react toward him.

"I have warned you, don't used you smart little brain in wrong place, still not remember?" He pulled her to his embrace, "Oh yeah, you were helping that little girl to clean the mess. But, wrong still wrong, if we are not know each other, perhaps I may commend you, still she can be fired. Do you think... how this thing to be solved?"

*"……"* 

She trembling when she looked Yu Ao Tian eyes flashed. So she just sat still in Yu Ao Tian's lap. She sat obediently while thinking Yu Ao Tian words...

Yu Ao Tian was right although the matter seems be solved, but the person who solved it was her not Bai Ling. So that no matter how she tried to help still it was still Bai Ling mistake.

"Let's talking about you." Yu Ao Tian said.

"Me?" what a hell did she do? Did having dinner with Xia Yu was her fault?

"Long, Long Qi said that was not my fault. It was..."

"It seems Long Qi treated you not bad, he even comforting you but what he did...actually harm you." Yu Ao Tian suddenly touched her small face.

"Yao Yao, didn't you understand my intention?"

"The meat that close to mouth, but no one can eat it, alike two years ago, he able to see through her!"

"I think you are not suitable to go for working, it better you stay at home and focus yourself to be lover, at least you are only become my lover who serve me alone!" Yu Ao Tian said to Yao Yao.

"I don't want..." Yao Yao protested.

Her face hurt because pinched by Yu Ao Tian but her heart even more hurt when heard what Yu Ao Tian said. She really hates her status as lover!

"Yu Ao Tian! You think... what was happened today with Xia Yu not because me who is working at Berson, if I don't work in Berson how could he invited me for dinner?" pa! She got slapped from Yu Ao Tian.

"Little Thing, I really don't know how to say you." He cold eyes looked disappointed: "You better understand about your status! If you are only my employee, because of the company sacrifice yourself, I will reward you, if you climb into Xia Yu's bed, I would even promote you. But, you are..." he narrowed his eyes: "You are my lover, Yu Ao Tian's lover! Not mentioned if you offended him even you hit him, I not bother. It only a small business, losing that one, I don't care."

"But I do care! You can look me as your lover, everyone in this world can see me as lover but I don't want make myself to be lover, because... lover for me...." Yao Yao cannot hold her tears anymore.

"Little Thing, better you wipe your tear!" after said, he pulled her long hair.

"Ah!" she screamed because he is hurting her.

"Let me ask you, did you the one who signed the lover's contract? Answer me!"

"Yes..." she stopped crying and trembling nodded her head.

"So why are you crying? This is only the first step, you must know how the end. Your main work is focusing how to be the good lover for me, Yu Ao Tian! I see... tomorrow you do not need to go to work, and about university? You also no need to go to university." He loosened his grabbed and hugged her.

Yao Yao hurried hugged his neck: "No, I beg you, I want to study, I want to work. I begging you..." she could compromise with her status but she must stubborn and persistent for her last hope...

Having good education and working!

"Regarding about the love contract..." Yu Ao Tian glanced, "proved it to me!"

"How?"

Here another series how Yao Yao got violate again by Yu Ao Tian. She is forced to do "warming"

Every time she did it, Yu Ao Tian would comment on how she did it. This time, Yu Ao Tian is quite happy for Yao Yao improvement in doing "Warming" service.

After teasing her for long time, finally he released her and preparing to leave.

"I take my leave." He said to Yao Yao who stare blankly. He only walked two steps suddenly he turned his back: "You not sending me?"

Yao Yao obediently stood up and followed his back until the front door: "Take... take care, bye bye."

"Hah? Only like this?" he asked but his expression has changed much better.

Only like this?

So what must she do as lover? Did she progress? Did he mean she can go to work and also go to university?

She did not know, she just stupidly looking at Yu Ao Tian who leaving....

"Supervisor Sun, all these document, I have read it." Less than two days, Yao Yao has read all of the documents which given by Sun Li.

"Hah? So fast? Well... you can randomly to do something, now I am so busy, later still need to attend monthly meeting, this time I can't do much for you."

"Oh, you go busy, if you have something to do just call me." Sun Li is busy with her work so ignore her, so she only can sit silently in her seat.

Now, everyone in Finance Department is looking so busy, only Yao Yao who seems have nothing to do. So that no matter who asked for her help she will be so willingly to help, at least she can do something to busy herself.

"Xiao Luo, Xiao Luo, do you have thing to do?"

She turned to look the person called her name: "Nothing, what do you want me to help?" Yao Yao happily asked.

"I need your help, come, help me to photocopy all these documents."

"Alright." She followed that person to photocopy, she seriously and carefully to do her job: "I have seen that for these two days our department seems to be busy, why?"

""Oh, it because this afternoon we will have meeting, as I heard, the General Manager will also join the meeting. This is the time for everyone to show off, of course everyone work hard. The most important is, out finance department got few hundred million fund two days ago, this opportunity must be have good result, so everyone is so busy."

"Oh.." she can understand it. The basic job of Berson Finance Department is responsible to the client money, after that using the money to do investment and earn the percentage as bonus. The trust fund is large amount of investment; it could more than few billion. No wonder everyone is working so hard.

"Now are we photocopying all the fund analysis that made by the finance department regarding to the investment project?"

"Yes. This time all of us decide to do investment in stocks."

"Oh." Yao Yao understood nodding her head, while her eyes reading the main contain about the report. Stocks A is Bao Li Hua. Huh, this stock seems so

familiar for her, it seems she has read somewhere?

"Ok, Thank you, Xiao Luo."

"It's okay." She back to her own seat in her office room, she still curious so Yao Yao opened her computer and browsing everything about Bao Li Hua Stock A.

While doing her browsing and analyzing, she thought it safer to invest in Bao Li Hua Stock B.

#### **Chapter 94**

# Audacious - breakthrough - Meeting

Without she realized, Yao Yao has took some notes about the stocks that she analyses.

"Xiao Luo, all the managers are done with their analysis, but how can you still do Bao Li Hua stocks analysis?" one of colleagues who passed Yao Yao's desk asked, continue: "Aiya, Bao Hua Li stocks B it impossible, currently it dropped significantly, it not an option to do the investment, even wanted to invest for short investment but still there must need about three months to get the result."

What?

After she heard what her colleague told her, Yao Tao face turned green: "Are you talking about short investment?"

"That's right."

Doom! Since that's the matter they must not invest on Bao Hua Li stock A, it would compensate for the loss deathly!

"Manager? Where is Wilson, the Vice Manager?"

"Didn't you hear what I said before, everyone is in meeting room."

"Well, where is Sun supervisor?" Yao Yao Stood up, looking around for Sun Lin in her office room.

"Sun Supervisor also joined."

"Are all have gone? Sister Zhang (Zhang Jie), help me, can you go to the meeting room, inform either Sun supervisor or Wilson vice Manager that they must not invest on Bao Li Hua stocks A. or else you can make phone call."

"Xiao Luo, are you okay?" Sister Zhang unbelievable looking at Yao Yao:

"Manager Lin has already approved Bao Li Hua stocks, you said not to buy and then they would not buy? Moreover, all of them are in meeting so no one will switch on the phone, I don't want to take the risk. If you want to go... you go by yourself.

Berson Meeting Room, Croom

Regarding the company meeting room it is divided into three types, the A, B and C. The C room can accommodate hundreds of people and also have small interactive multimedia hall. In the middle of the room there is another rounded table which has sub-regional director seat, Finance Manager, the supervisor level managers and others are group leader, secretaries, assistants and others.

"CEO Yu, General Manager Long, Wang General Director, this is the report regarding to the Bao Li Hua stocks investment analysis, please take a look." The Finance Manager Lin Ya Cheng said, his personal secretary distribute the document to the three people.

Yu Ao Tian read the document contain, suddenly his face expression changed. Everyone included the Long General Manager, Wang General Director and others never thought that Yu Ao Tian, their CEO would come and join the monthly meeting.

"Bao Li Hua stocks A?" Yu Ao Tian coldly said.

Lin Ya Cheng carefully examining his expression but he cannot find any satisfaction expression from Yu Ao Tian and then he replied: "Yes. It is."

Bamn!

Yu Ao Tian expressionless slammed the document in the table.

Everyone who gathered in the meeting room shocked and all of them still waiting how their Finance Manager explained to their CEO.

"Secretary Mo." Yu Ao Tian turned his back and called Mo Xue Tong.

She nodded, she has prepared other document for Yu Ao Tian and hand it over to him.

"Hey, you guys make guess, what did secretary Mo hand over to CEO Yu?" some of the employees made circles gossiping.

At the moment Yu Ao Tian is starting to open the document that he received from secretary Mo, suddenly someone "infiltrate" the meeting room, everyone looked at the person direction even Yu Ao Tian.

"Xiao Luo, why are you here?" asked Sun Li shocked when seeing Yao Yao entering the meeting room.

"I..." everyone still looked at her included Yu Ao Tian, because of their eyesight; she almost forgot her main purpose to come. How can Yu Ao Tian also in here? Didn't they say only Long Ye who is coming?

"Supervisor Sun, doesn't she is your team member? Didn't she know that what are we doing in here? Simply to say come to make trouble! Hurried deal with her!" Lin Ya Chen angrily said to Sun Li and looked at Yu Ao Tian: "I am sorry, I am sorry, CEO Yu, General Manager Long and Wang General Director."

"Xiao Luo hurry gets out! Get out hurried!" Sun Li suddenly dragged Yao Yao to leave the room.

At this moment, Long Ye glanced at Yu Ao Tian, his lips curved upward: "Wait, Xiao Meng...hem...you dare to infiltrate the meeting room, you must have good reason to do so, mustn't you?"

Sun Li stopped, looking at Long Ye, and also looking at Yao Yao: "General Manager Long is asking you, hurried answer!"

She gained herself, Yao Yao hurried nodding.

"Well, what's matter?"

"It is...." She wanted to speak, but when her eyes met Yu Ao Tian's eyes she lower her head, her body is trembling: "No...Nothing. I... am sorry, disturb, disturbing all of you."

"Well, you the new comer, what you do you want to do? You just come few days or do you want to resign?"

Yao Yao clenched, stammered: "I, I..." she took deep breath, made a fist: "Cannot, cannot buy Bao Li Hua stock A."

At the moment, Yao Yao voice is soften, but the colleagues who sat not far from her: "Xiao Luo, are you crazy? Do you want to trouble us?"

"What did she said, can you say it to me once again?" Long Ye smiled.

Sun Li glared at Yao Yao, worried: "She said, she said cannot buy Bao Li Hua stocks A."

An instant everyone face expression changed, to unknown they have worked so hard in order to analysis about this stocks and got the result, even the CEO hasn't read it, but she is only small employee how dare she came and said such words?

"Well, you newbie, no need to come to work, simply go to HRD to make report!" Lin Ya Cheng disappointed.

"Manager Lin, I understand... perhaps this is not my part to speak up, but... this amount of money really cannot invest to Bao Li Hua stock A as short investment." Toward Yao Yao this job is not an easy job she can have but asking her do nothing in order to stay for this job, she really cannot do it.

"What do you understand? You are only a newbie, what is your right to say..."

"Why?" Long Ye cut Lin Ya Cheng's words.

For Yao Yao the warmness of Long Ye way of speaking it encourage her to stubborn: "Because, Bao Li Hua stocks A is not suitable to make short investment, the reason..." she walked to the in front of the white board, she took one of the pen marker, she wrote down all the reason and also make a circle for the important point. "This is the reason. So that..." when she spotted Yu Ao Tian eyesight, suddenly she lost her confident.

### Chapter 95-96

Will he be angry? But, she is part of this Finance Department, won't he be angry, right?

But, everything still unpredictable, perhaps he will favor Bao Li Hua Stock A more, if this the case, did I do something wrong again? Aiya, what should I do?

Heart is beating faster, all her focus goes to Yu Ao Tian, she does not care with anyone eyesight.

"So, according to your argue; which stocks investment is more suitable to be invested by this funds?" Yu Ao Tian asked coldly.

Everyone who in there, all of them dumbfounded, they wonder why their CEO really consider this newbie opinion?

"It suitable to invest...suitable to invest on..." she so anxious, raise her head, looking eyes to eyes with Yu Ao Tian, she faster said: "Chang Hong stock A!"

"Are you a blunder? That is junk stock!" Everyone is coldly humph her.

Lin Ya Cheng even pissed off, said: "Xiao Luo, according to your analysis I don't want to retort. Because I think perhaps you might have better idea, but Chang Hong stock A is junk stocks that list in market trend, how dare you put that amount of fund invest into that kind of stock?"

"It not like that, I really not speak nonsense."

"Still dare to say not nonsense? This is company, not your theme park. It cannot do based on your unconstraint bold imagination; this company really cannot undertake your risk!"

"It right, Xiao Luo, you are too childish."

"No, it's not...." Meeting with this few mouths, Yao Yao felt as if arguing with thousand mouths. But she is really not saying because her impulsiveness.

When everyone is speaking in meeting room, suddenly Yu Ao Tian stood up.

At this moment, his bossy aura shut all the mouth up, all their eyes is unable to

offset from his spot.

"well, just invest on Chang Hong stocks A, dismiss..." no one even react but after Yu Ao Tian spoke everyone kept silent, while Yu Ao Tian, General Manager Long and Mo Xue Tong are already walking out from the meeting room.

For such long time, everyone comes to their senses: "Buy...Buy... Chang Hong Stocks A? Yu, did CEO Yu say?"

"It seems, yes."

"This is not the newbie like you that can take the responsible.... Aiya, just do your work." At this moment the General Director only can smile to Yao Yao.

He is man in his thirties, have good facial feature, his body well build and when he wearing his black suit he looks so mature and elegant.

Who..is he?"

After Yao Yao gained herself, the man has left.

"Good bye, General Director Wang."

"Good bye, General Director Wang."

So that he is the regional General Director.

Wait! Did Yu Ao Tian say that buying Chang Hong Stock A?

"Yu Ao Tian, it's you have good eyesight, Xiao Meng Li only in Finance Department for few days but her senses is become so sharp. It quite feared." After leaving the meeting room, Long Ye praised.

"Ah." Yu Ao Tian humph coldly, but he smiled: "It's not because I purposely sent her to Finance Department, she just wanted to work, and the Finance Department just lacking of human resources so when I saw there are emptied position, just put her to there."

"Uh...I thought it was because of you... That Xiao Meng Li really has talent in doing investment."

"It not because she is talented in investment." Suddenly Yu Ao Tian stopped.

"So?"

His good looking face smiles, his eyes flashed: "The people who have IQ above 200, no matter what they do, they have high sensitivity compare to the average people, at least ten times."

"Ah, because of this you must be understood her more but, since Xiao Meng Li really have many positive traits, why don't you make her stay beside us and used her?"

The footstep stopped, Yu Ao Tian silent for moment, smiled devilish: "Now she is really innocent and naïve, keep her at my side only asking for trouble."

About this... Long Ye have little bit understanding toward Yu Ao Tian who always cherish the talented people so that he will keep the talented Yao Yao at his side.

"Ao Tian, this report...do you still want?" at his back, Mo Xue Tong hand over the document that was opened by Yu Ao Tian but haven't read.

He took the document, slowly opened it...

The contains of the report is exactly similar with what Yao Yao explained before, it was about Chang Hong stocks A! "Help me to destroy it!"

For the entire afternoon the Finance Department atmosphere is terrible bad, everyone looked at Yao Yao with "demon personifying pestilence" sight.

Everyone is talking about her, either in her in front or at her back. During this time, Yao Yao decided to close her ears, pretending hear nothing.

"Xiao Luo, I am at your side, don't listen to their gibberish." Said one of her colleague, Xia Ren Liang.

Since the first day Yao Yao working other than Supervisor Sun, the first person that Yao Yao knows is Xia Ren Liang. He only at his twenties, he has bright smile that able to bring warm feeling to other. During this time he takes care Yao Yao as if big brother, "Thank You."

Finally the working time is ended; Yao Yao is prepared to go home. When she just walked out from the lobby, suddenly the car slowly stopped at her in front. Xia Ren Liang handsome face showed up from the car's window, "Xiao Luo, where are you living? Let me give you a ride."

```
"No need, Xia Ren Ling, thank you."
```

"I am in the other side of street, quickly come." It was Yu Ao Tian phone called, without waiting for her to speak, he has hung the call already.

She looked her surrounded and spotted a Bugatti parked not far. Hurried she get in to the car, "Hurry! Start the engine hurry!" Yao Yao looked panic when she has already sat down in the car.

"What happen?" Yu Ao Tian asked.

Yao Yao just scared to be spotted by her colleague if she gets into same car with Yu Ao Tian, while this man really bad. He even has time to tease her, "So this is your first words after seeing me for first time after long time?"

Aiya, what you expected? Or else you want to hear me to say, I really want to straggle you to death? Or you want me to give you welcoming kiss? Aiya... I never can do it! (this how Yao Yao think when Yu Ao Tian asked her)

Said nothing, Yao Yao just silent inside the car.

Because Yao Yao said nothing, not even showed any interesting expression. Yu Ao Tian won't stop to tease her. He wide opened the car window so that everyone who passing by can see through to his Bugatti.

He knows that Yao Yao afraid to be seen by people during with him, so that he gave her another mental shock by caressing her when people passing during the red light.

Yu Ao Tian really good in tormenting people either physically or mentally. This time he not abuse her in physically like he used to do but more to give Yao Yao mental shocking. After while, finally he stopped, "Well, let's have dinner." He said.

<sup>&</sup>quot;Well, see you tomorrow." Xia Ren Liang leaving after say good bye.

<sup>&</sup>quot;Let's the yesterday, now you are in my..." (phone ring tone)

<sup>&</sup>quot;Hello?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Are we eating in here?" she doubted.

<sup>&</sup>quot;Dislike?"

She really dislikes because last time when she came here to eat with Yu Ao Tian, everyone treated him as if the Emperor coming to visit. Moreover she hates the eyesight of everyone who looked at her when she walking with Yu Ao Tian.

"Can we...eat in more ordinary place?" She asked.

"En."

"If.. you are not get used, forget it." Afraid made Yu Ao Tian pissed off, she hurried said something.

To the unknown, Yu Ao Tian not angry he even riding the car to crowded night market.

What happen to him tonight, he seems little bit strange? Perhaps this afternoon matter not really pissed him off? Must be alarmed! This Yu Ao Tian looks not too normal, perhaps in others second he might....

"What do you want?" when Yu Ao Tian took off his suit and also untie his necktie, Yao Yao spontaneously asked, "This is still in street."

"Little Thing, sometimes I really wonder how your brain works?" Yu Ao Tian said.

"So, this..." Yao Yao pointed at the suit that has been took off and also the untie necktie. It so normal for her to think perhaps Yu Ao Tian is thinking to violate her because Yu Ao Tian is not human, he is beast, he even dares to violate her anywhere he likes.

"Don't you think it weird to wear suit in crowded night market?" Yu Ao Tian asked.

Finally Yao Yao who is still sitting inside car can little bit rest assured. At least, Yu Ao Tian won't do something. An instant, Yao Yao could see the elegant Yu Ao Tian as CEO turned be little street rascal after he took off his "business attire".

She followed Yu Ao Tian heading to the crowded night market, this time it seems he is trying to change the way of his walking style, every steps looked as if he walked like the hooligan, "Aren't you tired yourself by walking like this?"

"Tired? Long time ago I did walk in this way."

"Long time ago? Long time ago when you were still the underworld Emperor?"

At least the first time she met Yu Ao Tian he had already become the underworld Emperor but this feeling is different because she could feel that, the today Yu Ao Tian is not different compare to the street hooligan or any normal ordinary men, his aura.

"The longer time before."

The longer time before? That's right, it impossible for him to be the underworld Emperor since he born, perhaps after he experienced many things, or perhaps, the olden Yu Ao Tian was different with Feng Chen Yi—-he might born in an ordinary family or even worse?

If the case...

Yu Ao Tian must be someone who more complicated to what she able to think of, because he has experienced many things and even have attained such great strength to be the today him!

Looking at Yu Ao Tian who walking far from the eyesight, she really curious what kind of commoner Yu Ao Tian could be? She has seen him as underworld Emperor and also him as Businessman!

"You sit here, waiting for me. I will go to buy something to eat." Picking on of the little food stall, Yu Ao Tian rushed in front to buy food.

"Hey, Little Sister, Little Sister." At this time suddenly some high schooler who sat next to her called. "Just now, the man who come with you, is he your big brother or your uncle?"

"Ah?" She quite surprised being called Little Sister by the high schoolers, she really does not know to laugh happily or smile bitterly. "He... he is my uncle."

"Woah, see just like my guessed. That mature man must be in thirty."

"But he looked so young, I even thought he perhaps this Little Sister's brother. But... Big Uncle! So adorable, I am kind of Uncles-complex, cannot resist, cannot resist!"

Oh my? What is inside today high schooler's brain, Yu Ao Tian is someone who older by few years compare to them but they are? "My uncle has already have wife."

"What? Has already had wife?"

Perhaps in this way, these Little Sisters would give up?

"Oh My God, no wonder that big uncle looked so adorable, so he has already have wife. Just like people said that, a man who has already had wife always obtained charm. Oh yeah, Little Sister, how is your uncle relationship with your aunty?"

If they are in bad term, do you guys want to get involve? Oh my actually what situation is happening here.

"Your friend?" at this moment suddenly Yu Ao Tian appeared with two set of food in his hands, seeing one of the little girl sat on his seat so he just took the seat beside Yao Yao.

"Uh, they are..."

Without waiting Yao Yao to explain, one of the little girls suddenly spoke: "Big uncle, we don't know your niece but your niece is so lovely, so all of us wanted to be friend with her."

"En?" Big uncle? Niece? Yu Ao Tian wanted to know what Little Thing said to the group of little girls! He looked at Yao Yao and then naturally he smiled: "I do think my niece is so lovely, so that, every night I will be so exhausted because of her. She is...Bao Bei." The domineering Yu Ao Tian's lips pressed on her cheek.

"Uh." And then he looked at that little girls group.

"How can you do this?" Yao Yao pushed away Yu Ao Tian.

"Ah, so why you told them that I am your big uncle?"

"That because..." she lower her head, silently took one portion of food with soft voice: "All of them are still so young, if one of them are seduced by you, their future might be so miserable."

#### **Chapter 97 - 100**

After both of them done eating, they are strolling in the night market. When they are passing the cotton candy stall, suddenly Yao Yao stopped her steps.

"Want to eat?"

"En, En." She excited nodding her head.

"Boss, give me one." The pink colored cotton candy is given to Yao Yao and she looked like a little excited little girl, smiling.

Actually at home she got so many branded bags, outfits but she not even glanced at those stuffs, instead of those, only this simple cotton candy able to make her smile that happily. Perhaps this is called as the simple happiness that kid has.

"Want to eat?" Both of them walking to the side of little river not far from the night market, Yao Yao found one big rock as sitting place, she stood in front of Yu Ao Tian with alacrity, swaying her cotton candy asking him.

"Huh, you eat by yourself." If he still were little boy perhaps he would take one bite, but he has reached to this age already, it feel like silly big man if he takes one bite.

Yao Yao rolled her eyes, suddenly she took little bit of her cotton candy and put into Yu Ao Tian's mouth: "HiHi... it is sweet right?"

"En, it's sweet." Yu Ao Tian said, looking at Yao Yao.

"Hehe.." Yao Yao showed him "stupid smile", she enjoyed her cotton candy while walking.

"Really looked like dirty little kitty." Yu Ao Tian helplessly smiling at the way Yao Yao eating her cotton candy. Not long after, he suddenly pulled her and kissed her lips.

Yao Yao acted strangely when Yu Ao Tian kissed her, so he turned his back and not far from them, he could see few men come closer toward them. Slowly he released Yao Yao.

"Yu... Yu Ao Tian, quick, faster we run!"

When Yu Ao Tian looked at them, few men have surrounded both of them. Yao Yao did not know what these men wanted to do with Yu Ao Tian.

"You leave first." Yu Ao Tian looked so composed.

"Cannot! Want to leave then we must leave together!" She not even bothers to throw her favorite cotton candy to the ground, hurried she held Yu Ao Tian's hand: "Run!"

Her expression is so nervous while her small hand is shaking as cold as ice, Yao Yao tried to suppress her fear. On this circumstance, she is not left Yu Ao Tian alone but even held his hand and asked to run together. Uh...after experienced many things, This little thing really not learn anything about facing and lifesurvival in this mundane world, but this still it gives him a warm feeling.

When all the men are too close with them, Yu Ao Tian held her as if embrace little kid.

"Yu Ao Tian, you?"

"Little Thing, close your eyes and then hugged me tightly."

She closed her eyes and hugged him tightly as what he said, not dare to refuse. The fight is started and Yu Ao Tian still in his composed self, he even said: "Aiya, Zhao Zhi Chen's son really too stingy too sent these men to kill me?" Yu Ao Tian even laughing while fighting.

"Yu Big Boss, we all know that you are "eat" both of White and Black, but since you know that we are sent and paid by other people, only to help. Sorry to offend!" after said, that group of people keep on attacking.

"Oh?" Yu Ao Tian even showed his devilish smiled, some of the men fight with bare hand, and some are used knives! But Yu Ao Tian expression still same, he enjoyed playing with them.

"Big Boss, what to do? Yu Ao Tian seems too awesome compare to rumor."

Said one of the man that got hit by Yu Ao Tian.

"We keep attacking him and focus on that little girl, you guys must use every opportunity!" Someone gave the command and hinting someone to use knife to Yao Yao.

When Yu Ao Tian saw that man, he really unhappy so he kicked him and took the knife and then cut his hand off. There are lot of men came to fight with Yu Ao Tian but other side perhaps the lose party because one by one the Xiao Di asked their Big Boss, "Big Boss what should we do?"

The ground is covered by fresh blood, Yu Ao Tian knew that Yao Yao must be scared, so when Yao Yao raised her head to see, at sudden Yu Ao Tian said, "Bao Bei, keep on closing your eyes, not allowed to open!"

The fight still continued until...

"Yu, Big Boss Yu, be able to see you... really..really...honor for me." Finally that man died whiles the others men that left all run after they saw the scenes.

"Hu..."

When Yu Ao Tian wanted to finish the man that left, suddenly he heard Yao Yao sobbing sound. He turned around and looked at that small face. At that moment... he saw an expression like-death on Yao Yao, gently touched: "Didn't I tell you to close your eyes?"

"You, your neck is bleeding. I am sorry. It all my faults to be burden for you." Yao Yao tried to wipe her tears and see him with guilty eyesight to his wound.

The snow white color shirt is contaminated with fresh blood while there is some wound in his body which shocking her.

"Ah, Bao Bei, this time is called as unexpected incident, I thought you are cursing me this time by pointing at my nose." Looking at that anxious face, Yu Ao Tian even has mood to joke.

"That time was different with this time." She raised her head, trying to control herself and stop crying, slowly said: "The underworld is solved by the underworld rules, while the business world must be solved with the business rules. That time when you used that underworld rules to solve the business, so that I...."

He is so happy this little thing able to accept that happened today, but...

"Little thing, remember!" his big hand caressed her small face: "There is still another color, it is called grey!"

No! In her world there is no such color called grey, for her white is white and black is black. She has accepted Yu Ao Tian as the underworld Emperor and also the Yu Ao Tian who is CEO in business world but when this two are mixed, she really cannot accept it.

Death silent...

Yu Ao Tian knew that Little Thing cannot accept this kind of reality, but he is a man with grey color so that he must teach Little Thing to learn and accept it slowly, all of him.

Not long after that suddenly Yao Yao heard cars engine sound. It is Yu Ao Tian's men who come. Everyone looked nervous and anxious when get down from the car.

"Ao Tian!" Han Li Shang even rushed toward Yu Ao Tian with anxious expression.

"We are always watch Zhao Zhi Chen's son attentively, but still they able to make way to loopholes. I am sorry." Han Li Shang felt guilty.

"It is okay, Li Shang." Yu Ao Tian laughed.

"You have injured?"

"What? Yu Ao Tian got injured?" Long Ye showed unbelievable expression.

"I still thought all the blood in Yu Ao Tian's body was those men's, Ao Tian, based on your strength, how could you be injured?" Long Qi did not understand asked.

"It must be you!" Han Li Shang angrily pointed at Yao Yao.

She has met Han Li Shang few times but this is first time for her to see the anger Han Li Shang. If she looked him closely, Han Li Shang seems to have same age with Yu Ao Tian or even older but his aura is filled with coldness. His good looking face seems not to have other expression other than coldness. He is so scary. "You, what are you saying?"

Han Li Shang continued, "Yu Ao Tian injured because of you, right?"

She just silent, not dares to see that cold face. She knew the injured in Yu Ao Tian's body was because of her so she cannot do anything.

"Li Shang, you are scared Yao Yao." Long Qi said.

"Li Shang, stopped it." Yu Ao Tian said.

Han Li Shang is angry but because Yu Ao Tian has gave his commend he better to obey and left.

"Flat Chest, are you okay?" Long Qi asked her.

"I am okay." She swaying her head and tried to smile. She spotted Mo Xue Tong who also showed same eyesight toward her.

"Flat chest, you don't need to think too much about Han Li Shang and Mo Xue Tong, both of them not have bad intention, they just care about Yu Ao Tian, so that they acted that way."

Mo Xue Tong and Long Ye accompanied Yu Ao Tian in one car while Long Qi with Yao Yao in another car.

After sometime the frustrated Yao Yao who intimidated by Han Li Shang eyesight, she finally gained herself back asked: "Secretary Mo and that..."

"He is Han Li Shang, the vice CEO of Berson Group."

Ah? So he is the Vice CEO of Berson Group? For these few days Yao Yao had heard about Vice CEO Han, everyone said he is the demon Vice CEO. The rumor said even Yu Ao Tian has give him face. Today met him, the Vice CEO Han is more dangerous and scarier compare to the rumor. "Oh, so that Vice CEO Han and Secretary Mo, both of them are the good friend of Yu Ao Tian?"

"En, not only them but also me and my older brother. Han Li Shang is the first person who knew Yu Ao Tian, my older brother and I were the second who knew Yu Ao Tian. All of us went to Japan and at there we met Mo Xue Tong. Since then all of us are family."

A family? No wonder Secretary Mo and Vice CEO Han could look her with that eyesight, if the one who injured was Mom, perhaps she could act more than that. But...

"Did Yu Ao Tian come to Japan from China?"

"Yes. 12 years ago, Yu Ao Tian came to Japan with us."

"It not right... as what I heard, Yu Ao Tian is an orphan in Japan?" whatever, everyone said it, Yu Ao Tian's mom wandered to Japan and she was single parent. She died after gave birth.

"Cih, all of that was Yu Ao Tian... ugh."Long Qi suddenly stopped and hurried said: "You, you better ask Yu Ao Tian by yourself if you want to know. But, I still need to remind you that Yu Ao Tian hates to be asked about his past."

This things she perfectly understood, because not everyone willing to talk about their past but the nervous expression of Long Qi, did all of it has relation to Yu Ao Tian's secrets? Anyway who would purposely to compile his own background and also fabric himself as an orphan?

Actually what secret and also reason for Yu Ao Tian to purposely doing it?

"Flat Chest, to be honest since Yu Ao Tian have controlled the Japanese Underworld, he never got injured anymore, today he got injured because of protecting you actually quite surprising."

She shocked: "Ah, no wonder Vice CEO Han could act like that. What to do? All was my faults. It was me who burden Yu Ao Tian."

"It's okay, by seeing Yu Ao Tian expression just now, as long as he is not angry, everything is okay. But, I still curious, what both of you doing before got attacked? Moreover he is protecting you."

"En? What was so strange of it?"

"Ha Ha, perhaps you are not know Yu Ao Tian, he is someone who see his brothers more than anything while women are lighter than anything. It could be said that brothers are as important as his hand while women is similar to shirt for him. I never seen Yu Ao Tian protected girl until got injured before."

Long Qi words made Yao Yao confused, she really did not know with kind of mood she must understood his words. Whatever, the today Yu Ao Tian indeed different with the olden Yu Ao Tian, but...

The wound that Yu Ao Tian got today because of her so he could not fight

them to the utmost, perhaps because of this matter Yu Ao Tian might furious. When that time comes, she maybe does not know the reason why she cries. It still better to act carefully when facing him!

The car moving to the top hills in remote area, on the top hill there is four storey villa which comparable to the palace. From far away it looked alike castle, when get closer few steps there are so many men who guarded with gun.

"Long Qi. Where is it?" Yao Yao nervously asking.

"The other place of Yu Ao Tian's."

"Ah? This, does all of these belong to him?"

"That's right, it so normal. Yu Ao Tian gave... Ao Tian still has so many others villa like this." Long Qi almost told her that Yu Ao Tian also gave villa to Li Mei Yun.

The car moving to the in front of the villa main gate, there are countless Yu Long's men who standing. Especially when Long Qi got out from the car, "Xiao Long Xian Sheng (younger Mr. Long)." All of them are line up and bowing to him.

Don't underestimate Long Qi who is youngest in Yu Ao Tian side, his position in Yu Long is one of the highest.

Faster walking into the villa, inside also has many men. It not hard to realize their shocking expression when knew Yu Ao Tian got injured from the Yu Long's men.

When Yao Yao arrived, she spotted Mo Xue Tong is applying medicine to Yu Ao Tian.

"What are you crying for?" Yu Ao Tian asked Yao Yao after he asked all the men leaving the room.

"It must... it must be so hurt, right? I am sorry. I must listen to you since the beginning, so that..."

"humph? If that time you are run, indeed I won't get injured." But... she might same as all the women in his eyes, no difference. "come." He called her.

He stopped Mo Xue Tong who is still applying medicine and replaced her with Yao Yao, asking this little thing to continue what Mo Xue Tong did.

Not long after that, suddenly Li Mei Yun is coming in rush. When one of Yu Ao Tian's men is informed Yu Ao Tian and he is really unhappy because Li Mei Yun came without notice. She came because she was worrying him after knew he got injured.

The reason why he unhappy because there was Yao Yao with him now, moreover he didn't have mood to meet Li Mei Yun. Others than that, Yao Yao focus easily got distract when seeing Li Mei Yun and he hates it so much.

When Li Mei Yun arrived, she spotted Yao Yao who is applying medicine to Yu Ao Tian and asked who she is. Yao Yao excitement suddenly dim because she remembered she is Yu Ao Tian's lover furthermore she is hard core fan for Li Mei Yun and at same time she also third party in Li Mei Yun – Yu Ao Tian relationship. This reality makes her so sad.

Yu Ao Tian realized the changes of Yao Yao. Moreover when she being asked by Li Mei Yun about herself, she stammered, "I am Long Qi's girl friend." This answered is more than enough for Yu Ao Tian to piss off with Yao Yao but he is even angrier to Li Mei Yun so that he asked Li Mei Yun to leave. He asked Yao Yao to go home first and then he deal with Li Mei Yun.

Yu Ao Tian anger to Li Mei Yun besides her unnoticed coming, make Yao Yao sad but the strongest reason is she asking people to stalk on him. After get warned, Li Mei Yun finally left the place.

Mean while...

Yao Yao is still crying when she arrived at home. But when her villa bell ringing, she suddenly stopped crying and hurried to open the door. The person who rang the bell is Yu Ao Tian, Yao Yao quite surprised when she saw him standing in front the door.

"Why are you here?" She asked.

"Of course I come to see you and also to give Li Mei Yun's concert ticket." He smiled deviously.

"Little thing are crying again?"

Yao Yao not answered him immediately.

"You little thing, since the day I looked for Lover, you must understand very well that I perhaps have girlfriend."

That's right Yao Yao must be prepared this kind of situation but she never know that she is the third wheel on Li Mei Yun's relationship. Yao Yao protested to Yu Ao Tian: "I never thought that you are also this kind of man!"

"Also?" Yu Ao Tian eyes looked at her, "Is the any others? Your Ex?"

Every time she got reminded about Feng Chen Yi she would feel something weird. She little bit scared, trembling and also feel guilty to Yu Ao Tian moreover when she remembered about the restaurant incident.

Of course he knew, this is unforgettable thing in his life. Two years ago she called him Big Brother, she also told him about his Ex-boyfriend who cheated on her. "Little thing you must adapt faster to your status, don't you think so? Every man is like this."

Rotten bastard! In this world there must be a man that loyal!

"Yu Ao Tian, if one day... I able to pay back your money, can you rescind and free me as your lover?"

"Cannot!" His eyes gleaming coldly, "Little Thing, other than I get bored with you, or else you don't ever think to leave me forever!"

She knew that Yu Ao Tian won't easy compromise her so she... "Can, can you promise me... you accompany Li Me Yin often? You shall not say anything about our relationship in front of her, please? I beg you."

#### Irritated! Irritated!

Yu Ao Tian really wanted to strangle this little thing to death because this is the first time he meets someone like her who consider other than herself. There is no woman who trying to put themselves to others woman shoes (especially Yu Ao Tian harem). She even pushed him to Li Mei Yun.

"Fine, I promise you. But, you keep in mind! This is your begging, don't be regret later on!" he left the villa.

"I won't be regret!" she murmured. Actually three years... how long it would be?

### **Chapter 101-103**

The next day early in the morning.

Everyone in Finance Department is gossiping: "Doom, this afternoon it's time to suspend the trading on stock market, since the sum of fund that invest into Chang Hong stock A does not have any improvement after all, what to do?"

"Everyone does not to be anxious, after all we had decided to invest on Bao Li Hua stock A, if something happened, I believe CEO won't blame us." Sun Li encouraged her team.

But she has two meaning words which pointed on Yao Yao.

"Since I entered Berson, working in Finance Department there's no time we fail in investment, if now we really failed, this is simply shame for our Finance Department!"

"That's right! Every time in Berson, during the annual meeting, our Financial Department performance always is the best. But because someone acted smart perhaps this may stop and become or burden."

Everyone is gossiping about the investment stock that they made and at the same time they are harass Yao Yao verbally. But only one person who stood at Yao Yao side in Finance Department, the person is Xia Ren Liang.

Since Xia Ren Liang is the only one who support and comfort Yao Yao when others colleague talk bad about her, Xia Ren Liang automatically becomes the foe for others.

During lunch break...

"Yao Yao, Yao Yao."

Someone is calling Yao Yao and that person is Bai Ling. Yao Yao quite surprised to meet Bai Ling because she thought Bai Ling may get fired after last time incident. When Yao Yao asked Bai Ling what she did for past days since she didn't spot her in elevator (her post). Bai Ling replied Yao Yao that she was

having holiday because Long Qi gave her few days off.

It good to know that Yu Ao Tian not fire Bai Ling but even curious about Yu Ao Tian reason, whatever, Yao Yao does not want to think too much about that person since he is someone so moody and cannot be read.

Yao Yao introduced Xia Ren Liang to Bai Ling and then three of them having lunch together in cafeteria.

After lunch break, Bai Ling back to her post while Yao Yao and Xia Ren Liang back to Finance Department.

"It's doom! Doom! There is another hour before the stock market close. Chang Hong stock A has not improving at all." All of colleague in Finance Department looked so frustrated.

Yao Yao who also sitting in her room has cold sweat, she talking by herself: "Three minutes more! Only three minutes more and then it would change! Surely!"

"Yao Yao, what are you saying?" Xia Ren Liang asked curiously.

"Sstt." And then Yao Yao continue to count, 3 2 1!

"Oh my!"

"What is happened?"

"Hey everyone looked at the market trend! Chang Hong stock A... Chang Hong stock A... it raised to 100 point!" at the moment everyone who is in the room quickly go to check on their computer, while Yao Yao is crying happily.

"Ah, it seems this time I really no need to resign." Xia Ren Liang is joking.

"Thank you for believing me." Yao Yao smiled looked at him.

At the moment he sees her smiling face, Xia Ren Ling heart is beating faster and quickly he avert his eyes sight from Yao Yao to others place, "It... of course, hehehe."

"Awesome! It's really miraculous. It was poor stock before but at the moment it turned be the awesome stock. When the stock market trend stopped, Chang Hong stock A has raised to 1000 point, it is one of the miraculous things that

happen in stock market."

"Xiao Luo, Xiao Luo, do you think that next week the Chang Hong A stock will drop?" two or three colleagues came and asked Yao Yao.

She smiled and shook her head: "Chang Hong A Stock is raising too fast, there will many people who won't think it as poor stock anymore so most of the traders would keep or buy it. It there is no mishap, next week in the market, it will also raise to 1000 point."

"Still can be raised? How much it would be?"

"3000 points! It could reach to 3000 point."

"3000 points?" all the colleagues showed surprising expression: "Little Queen, Little Queen (awesome), you even able to count the numbers. If Chang Hong A stock really can reach 3000 points, how much Berson could earn?"

"Uh, at least will earn 2000 million."

"Aiya! 2000 million, it has reached more than our annual performance. It seems our department will surely get annual bonuses. Thank you Yao Yao. You are really God of Stock."

From the pestilence God to the God of Stock, everyone is thanking Yao Yao in Finance Department, but at the same time others sub group also watched her attentively. After all, she is newbie and the most important she is an outstanding newbie.

When everyone is enjoying the happy atmosphere, suddenly there is phone called from General Manager Long that informed everyone to join the celebration party held by Yu Ao Tian because of the gained in stock market.

The happy moment continued to discussing what kind of dresses they will wear when coming to the celebration party. They are not talking about the stock anymore because they are busy to discussing the dresses since there will be many important people coming to the celebration party such as Vice CEO Han Li Shang, General Manager Long Ye, Manager Long Qi, sub Regional General Director Wang, and of course the CEO Yu Ao Tian who are big catch for the ladies. Besides that, they also curious about their CEO girlfriend and guessing who will be the person?

"Yao Yao what will you wear when attending the celebration party?" Xia Ren Liang asked.

"I am not coming."

"Why? You are the one who takes biggest part."

If she can choose to be rewarded she would rather to wish Yu Ao Tian never come to her place for one year. This is the best reward for her.

Actually the main reason because tomorrow is weekend, the only day she can be free from Yu Ao Tian, free to be his lover.

"Saturday I have thing to do."

"Luo Yao Yao." Suddenly Manger Lin looked at Yao Yao.

"Manager Lin, what can I do for you?"

"This... the General Manager is especially said... you must come. He even asked me to tell you..." Manager Lin doubted and frowned, whispered to her: "If you are not coming you know the consequences later on!"

"Little Thing, if you are not coming, you know the consequences!" Although Manager Lin said it was said by the General Manager Long, actually she knew this was the message from Yu Ao Tian to her.

It not easy for her to have the only off day during Saturday! Whatever, at least the celebration party will be on evening so she may come to visit her grandpa during the afternoon.

"I understood Manager Lin. I will come." She helplessly said, very frustrated sitting on her seat.

"Yao Yao, do you want me to pick you up on Saturday?"

"Ah? Thank you Xia Ren Liang... I can go by myself."

"Oh."

\*\*

"Mom! Grandpa! "On Saturday Yao Yao is coming to the hospital. This is the

first day off given by Yu Ao Tian for her as Lover, no matter what she feels, still this is one of her free day today.

"My Treasure Beloved, Yao Yao. It is true that you looked so different after dating."

"Mom, why are suddenly you bring up this topic?"

"Ha Ha, see my beloved granddaughter her face already turned red."

"Grandpa, Mom, what happen to both of you?"

"We are so satisfied with your boyfriend."

Did Yu Ao Tian come?

"Yao Yao, initially mom, thought you are... ah you scared me for such long time. This time when met your boyfriend, mom really rest assured. But still mom will pay back this amount of money to your boyfriend." After said both her mom and grandpa showed guilty expression.

"Oh yeah, Yao Yao, although you are quite busy with your work in office but still you need to spend time with your boyfriend."

"That right. He is really one of good man. You cannot always focus on your works, right?"

Listened to what her mom and grandpa said she almost faint.

But something is incorrect, she is surely said to her mom that she stayed on company dorm but actually she is staying with Yu Ao Tian, how could she not spending enough time with him? Something is strange here...

"Mom, Grandpa, could you tell me... what were my boyfriend said to both of you?"

"HeHe, Chen Yi said..."

Chen...Yi! Feng ... Chen Yi came here?

Teng! As if one big stone is pressed on her heart. How could her family meet Feng Chen Yi and why he came to meet her family?

From her mom and Grandpa, she knew that Feng Chen Yi has coming few times and fakes to be her boyfriend. Actually since her mom accepted the money

given by Yao Yao, she always afraid Yao Yao perhaps became other people mistress or lover so when Feng Chen Yi came to visit, admitted as Yao Yao boyfriend, her mom and grandpa finally rest assured. Every time Feng Chen Yi came he would sit for 1-2 hours, chatting with her mom or her grandpa. That's why both of her mom and Grandpa has very positive impression of Feng Chen Yi. So that's how thing happen, perhaps....in her life only Feng Chen Yi the man that set in her family mind. But, mom is wrong about one things, Feng Chen Yi is not as good as she thought.

This is so bad since thing turned be so complicated, he told her that he wanted to be her nemesis but why must he came to visit her grandpa and her mom? Now her mom and grandpa thought that Feng Chen Yi would be their future son in law/ future grandson in law. What should she do to clear all this mess?

"Yao Yao! Yao Yao! Yao Yao!

She heard someone called her name when walking out, she gained herself back, searching: "Xia, Xia Ren Liang? Why are you in hospital?"

"My mother is sick, so I come here to visit her, and you?"

"He He, I come to see my grandpa."

"What a coincidence?" Xia Ren Liang smiled: "Just good, now are five past few minutes, I am going to CEO Yu celebration party, how about we go together?"

"Well, then I trouble you." Yao Yao go with Xia Ren Liang.

She tied the seat belt, she looked at Xia Ren Liang who wear leisure navy blue suit that fit his body perfectly...

If she did not mistaken, he is wearing the newest design of Armani for this season, at least it priced thousand dollar. She also spotted his shoes which is Bottega Veneta.

She counted from head to toe at least priced about 25 thousand dollar, he is clearly only Finance Department employees but how could he effort so many branded stuffs? "You..."

"Yes, Yao Yao?"

Ah~

Whatever, that is his business, I should not ask. "Nothing, let's go."

Meanwhile...

"Ao Tian?" In front of the hospital, Mo Xue Tong puzzled when Yu Ao Tian suddenly stopped his footsteps. She followed his eyesight, seeing Yao Yao get into other man's car.

"Xue Tong, that man is..."

"Xia Ren Liang!" Mo Xue Tong coldly answered.

Yu Ao Tian feels familiar with this name: "Hm, it seems I ever heard somewhere."

"He is..." Mo Xue Tong whispered to Yu Ao Tian's ear.

After he heard, his lips curled upward: "So he is! Interesting." Turned his back, Yu Ao Tian and Mo Xue Tong heading into Yao Yao's grandpa patient room.

"Aunty Luo, Grandpa Luo, Hello." Mo Xue Tong entered the room.

Mother Luo and Grandpa Luo quite surprising when seeing her: "You are?"

"HeHe, Aunty Luo, I am Yao Yao's friend. This is my boyfriend, Yu Ao Tian.'

"Aunty Luo, Grandpa Luo, hello." Yu Ao Tian elegantly greets the elders.

When mother Luo meet Yu Ao Tian, her heart shaking, this man... really scary!

He looked at least twenty seven or eight, he having deep pitch black eyes that hard to read. Lucky he is not Yao Yao's boyfriend, or else... she as mother must be lived in worries and fears! "Hello, how are you?"

After, all of them are exchanging the courtesy (Yu Ao Tian + Mo Xue Tong with Mother Luo + Grandpa Luo). Mo Xue Tong immediately goes to the depth conversation to Mother Luo about fourteen years ago car accident that involved Luo Tian Ming, Luo Yao Yao's father who also died in that car accident.

Both Mother and Grandpa Luo facial expression changed when they were asking about that car accident. Although Mo Xue Tong and Yu Ao Tian were not clearly stated their purposed instead they are made up the story by saying Luo Tian Ming was Mo Xue Tong savior in fourteen years ago car accident.

Mother Luo excused herself and stopped the conversation by excused that she

is sick so not really comfortable to continue the conversation. Finally Yu Ao Tian and Mo Xue Tong left the hospital. Even mother Luo did not want to tell detailed about fourteen years car accident but Yu Ao Tian has able to make guess. The answer that he searched for fourteen years will be known soon or later. It does not matter what the way he will used, the soft or hard, only time matter.

### **Chapter 104 – 106**

The car that takes Yao Yao to Yu Ao Tian celebration party is moving fast. While the person who is driving the car is Xia Ren Liang who glanced at Yao Yao, his lips curled up and make faint smiled.

"You, what are you laughing for?"

"HeHe, I think, today must be so many ladies who put heavy makeup and also wearing splendid gown, but you?" when he said this, Xia Ren Liang looked at ordinary Yao Yao.

"So what's?"

"Yao Yao, this time is one of good opportunity to get closer to the top management, why didn't you dressing more beautiful little bit?"

Huh...

She really does not know how to tell Xia Ren Liang, there are not many top management people that she knows, moreover, even she does know them, she also not necessary to makeup so beautifully, right? "There is no necessary for?"

"HaHa, you are indeed different." Xia Ren Liang is laughing.

"What do you say?"

"Nothing, we are arrived." The car stopped, it has beautiful scene of seashore along the way to the villa.

Not far from there is Yu Ao Tian private villa which as splendid as palace.

When they entered Yu Ao Tian's palace, it just as Xia Ren Liang described, all the ladies are using thick makeup and also wearing glamour gown and also branded stuffs.

"Xiao Luo, how can you come with Xiao Xia? Are both of you..." Sun Li said to them when she spotted both of them and walked toward Yao Yao and Xia Ren Liang, smiled.

Yao Yao hurried to explain: "No, no, we just coming by coincidence."

"Oh, so that it, I thought both of you are dating." After Sun Li said, she left both of them, after looking at Yao Yao's face who turned as red as tomatoes.

"Quickly see, quickly see. CEO Yu, General Manager Long, all of them is coming." Said someone and all the crowded go out to see.

Yu Ao Tian is wearing silver ash color suit, walking with Mo Xue Tong who wears white long gown, slowly walking inside.

"Does CEO Yu dating with Secretary Mo?" one of the female colleagues asked with despair mood, although Secretary Mo and CEO Yu is one of the best looking couple in the company but still woman is difficult to accept the reality of the man they adore?

"You speak nonsense? This only etiquette, if they really have something, both of them won't be so blatant holding hand to hand appeared in front of everyone."

"Oh... It's surprised me."

Behind them, they are Long Ye and Wang. Seeing these two first class men, the Financial Department ladies can be considered as lucky for this rare chance.

"Why Vice CEO Han does not come?" The group of Han Li Shang "Fans" seems to be so disappointed because not seeing their idol coming.

"Vice CEO Han is seldom coming to this kind of occasion."

"Oh, that's right. He is such cold person."

"Hello CEO Yu, General Manager Long, General Director Wang." Everyone is greeting these men.

Yu Ao Tian smiled elegantly: "This is personal gathering, everyone relaxes don't to be so formal like in office, just having your fun."

"Yao Yao, do you like domineering man like CEO Yu?" Xia Ren Liang who is standing next to Yao Yao suddenly asked.

"Dislike." Yao Yao answered him immediately since she understands Yu Ao Tian's moody characters.

"Why? He is mature man and also able to give sense of security, does girl like this types of man, handsome and rich?"

"No...he, he is someone too deep, cannot be read. I can feel afraid if with him."

"How is about the General Manager Long Ye? He is type warm and gentle man?"

"Gentle man indeed good man, but...." Long Ye gentleness is only his appearance because inside him, he is cold man. "He also not the types I like."

"Then how's about Vice CEO Han?"

Sweating, the more Xia Ren Liang said more she feared. If he keeps on comparing this type with that types, Long Qi sunshine boy character is better than, at least he is someone simpler than them.

"Xiao Luo, Xiao Xia, two of you stopped chatting there, comes here and let's joining the game." Not far from Yao Yao and Xia Ren Liang, one of the colleagues called them.

"Yao Yao, are you come?" Xia Ren Liang asked.

"You go. I just... let it pass."

"If you don't go then I also not go."

"Don't be like this, whatever, better we go together." Smiled, she and Xia Ren Liang walking to the group of those people.....

"CEO Yu, don't you think that little girl eyes kind of scary (refer to Yao Yao investment decision)? I think to nurture (educated) her." Said Wang Han who eyesight locked and following on Yao Yao and Xia Ren Liang direction.

"General Director Wang, when I was acquiring Berson, your decision was taking big part, I always believe on your eyesight. But...that little girl, just let her pass."

"Oh? Honestly, it quite rare for me to bump into someone talented who have good instinct and sensitive, if really let it pass, what such pity?"

"Ha Ha, General Director Wang, I think it much better for you not to waste your time." Long Ye has quick respond, and continued: "As I know Yao Yao still in

school, soon she will go to school."

"Ah? So that's it. Really such pity." Wang Han little bit sad, shook his head. "CEO Yu, General Manager Long, both of you continue yours chat, Manager Lin and I are going to find somewhere to sit."

"En."

When Wang Han left, Long Ye takes a good look to preoccupied Yu Ao Tian, followed his eyesight, Long Ye smiled mischievously: "Aiya, Aiya, Xiao Meng Li really popular, she just came to office for two days, she has already had suitor."

"Ah." Yu Ao Tian sneered, his eyesight flashed: "If she knows that man real status, perhaps she may cry."

"En?" at the sudden, Long Ye narrowed his eyes, looked further and feel something interesting might happen to Yao Yao and that man.

"OOOO, This time Xiao Luo lose, Xiao Luo you choose, truth or dare?" Few of the colleagues are playing truth or dare game.

Yao Yao awkwardly smiled: "I choose saying the truth."

"Well." One the people asked: "Xiao Luo, you are 19 year old, if I asked you about your first night with whom, it little bit early for you so; who is your first person kissed you?"

Sweat... she can't say Yu Ao Tian, can she? It better for them to ask her whom will she give her first night. "I... better I choose dare."

"Oh? It seems that you won't say that person's name. Alright, since it is your wish to have the dare...." After they discussed: "Yao Yao, you must get CEO Yu's necktie."

Yao Yao dumbfounded when they asked her to ask necktie from Yu Ao Tian. The person who besides her, Xia Ren Liang sensed something is fishy for their request, hurried say: "You guys asking Yao Yao to get CEO Yu's necktie, don't all of you wish her to get scold?"

"Xiao Xia, you are too protective to Xiao Luo. This is Xiao Luo decision to choose dare, moreover this is only a game, CEO Yu won't get angry, okay?"

"That's right. She can choose to say the truth."

"All of you are seniors, didn't you guys remember last time when playing this game, and one of the employees was scolded by CEO Yu?" Xia Ren Liang sternly said.

Yao Yao afraid there would be clash among the seniors with Xia Ren Liang. "It's okay, it's okay, I will accomplish the mission."

"Yao Yao!"

"It is okay, Xia Ren Liang. Don't be worry." After said, she hurried walking to Yu Ao Tian.

Paused for moment, everyone eyes is locked on Yao Yao, some of them also impatience, they are waiting her to get scolded.

When her footsteps getting closer to him, her heart beat, *dong dong dong*. She looked surrounded and with soft voice: "Yu, Yu Ao Tian, Yu Ao Tian."

"En?" Yu Ao Tian slowly turned and looked at her mysterious act, impatiently frowned: "Come here to speak."

Her anxious eyesight looked at Long Ye, she standing in front of Yu Ao Tian: "Please...give me your necktie."

"Qie." Long Ye who standing beside almost spitted his wine when he heard her request: "Xiao Meng Li, are you playing truth and dare?"

"Yes."

"Why didn't you choose saying the truth?"

"It because... because they are asking me, who is first person I kissed." After said, she showed difficulty expression.

"Aiya, aiya, Ao Tian, you see how pity our Xiao Meng Li, you help her."

At the moment Long Ye said, Yu Ao Tian grinned at her: "Little Thing, if you wanted the necktie, you untie it by yourself."

"Hah?"

"Xiao Meng Li, what you Hah for? Yu Ao Tian has compromised you, faster untie it. To let you knows if there is other person who came and asked him, perhaps already got slapped from Yu Ao Tian."

Seeing the Long Ye excited expression and the devilish Yu Ao Tian, Yao Yao only can glare two of them.

Both of them are always working together to bully her. She would never forget the first time both of them bullied he in elevator. Rotten bastard!

Helplessly she twitching her mouth, gathering her courage, her shaking hand is untied Yu Ao Tian's necktie....

At sudden, all of the colleagues who are taking part on this game dumbstruck. "What is going on? Yu, CEO Yu afterall he does not angry? This is too miraculous."

"The most important is... it is Xiao Luo who untied the necktie by herself. I really curious what Xiao Luo said to the CEO Yu so that he not angry."

"I do also want to know." Most of the ladies are guessing.

Xiao Ren Liang who is silent during this time puzzled, although he has worked in Berson for some times, more or less he had ever heard about Yu Ao Tian personality, Luo Yao Yao isn't someone of his types, moreover Yu Ao Tian never had scandal dating with females employees in office. But why...

Xia Ren Liang not understood.

Soon, Yao Yao brought the necktie: "Mission accomplish."

"Ah? Ha, Xiao Luo, you... you are awesome. What did you say to CEO Yu so that he gave you his necktie?"

"Ugh, I told him that we are playing truth or dare game, I hope he could help me, so that he asked me to get it by myself."

"Is it such easy?"

"En, just that easy..." of course, the actually matter isn't as simple as you guys thought.

After played some rounds, this time Xia Ren Liang got punished. "Ha, no need to ask, seeing Xiao Xia, this time he must choose saying the truth."

"Sister Li, still you are the one who knows me better."

"Of course." Sister Li rolled her eyes: "Faster we ask whether Xiao Xia likes Xiao

Luo or not?"

"Good! Good question." Everyone said in union.

They made both Yao Yao and Xia Ren Liang face as red as tomatoes.

"Answer! Answer! Answer!"

"You guys are so high, may I join?" suddenly a deep heavy voice asked.

Everyone looked at the person who spoke: "Yu, CEO Yu. General Manager Long?" after seeing Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye came.

"No need to be nervous, we just little bit boring, can we join you guys play together?"

"Of course... of course can." But they are stammered, they know that rare for Yu Ao Tian to join with the "ordinary" employees. This might their honor but also can be their misfortune.

Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye joined them while Yao Yao face showed as if she wailing at funeral. Frustrating! Why both of them must come and join this game.

"Alright, continue to the question, Xiao Xia, hurry say, do you like Yao Yao or not?" everyone asked.

Dealing with this kind of question, Yao Yao face blushed moreover Yu Ao Tian also at there it makes her more uncomfortable, she glanced Yu Ao Tian few times.

"I pass, I decide to take dare." Xia Ren Liang is trying to control himself from the pressure given by everyone. So that he choose to take another mission. When he accomplished the mission, the game is starting again.

"Ha! CEO Yu, you lose." Everyone is so excited. At the same time, other colleagues got attracted with the crowd surrounded Yu Ao Tian.

"CEO Yu, what is your choice, truth or dare?"

He acted as if have deep thought, elegantly smiled: "Saying truth."

Everyone eyes flashing, the female colleagues gathered and asked: "CEO Yu, do you have girlfriend?"

"Have." Yu Ao Tian answered it without hesitation.

Most of the people are showed despair expression, as expected, the talented and outstanding man like Yu Ao Tian indeed already have girlfriend, although it must be normal matter.

But Yao Yao face is extremely worst, she clearly knows that Yu Ao Tian has already have girlfriend but facing with this reality she quite awkward, feel little bit uncomfortable.

The next round, "CEO Yu, you are lose again, still choose saying truth?"

## **107 - 110**

Happy Birthday to me

Here my birthday present for all of you guys. I will have more chapters to post today. I hope you guys like my present

# **Chapter 107 – 110**

Ah~ CEO Yu, you lost again. Another truth?

"Yes."

"Well... what the thing you wanted to  $do^{*}$  now?"

He curled up his lips, elegantly stroking his hair, his black deep eyes looked toward Yao Yao who is not far from him: "Currently what I wanted to "do\*]" is.... Yao Yao..."

"Uh." Everyone who heard it, their face turned be green.

But Yao Yao has already get used with this rotten bastard, Yu Ao Tian. The way of his vague speaking, she really wanted to tell everyone, please don't be trick by this elegant Yu Ao Tian, he is actually bad person, very dangerous man. She even knew, the word that he said not as simple as joking!

She expertly tied back Yu Ao Tian's necktie.

"En? Luo Yao Yao, you looked so young but very expertly tying the necktie." Yu Ao Tian not bothered to say few words, so that everyone gets back to their senses.

Indeed, based on Luo Yao Yao age, she must not that expert to tie the necktie like man.

"Ha Ha, CEO Yu, it is because of my uncle. I have uncle who said girl must be learnt something like this, although I really and... extremely that my uncle... way of speaking, yet I don't have any option, whatever he is elder." Yao Yao used this way of speaking to provoke Yu Ao Tian.

Again he showed up his devilish smiled: "What? But why I feel you love him so much? Or else, why you learn what he told you?"

Rotten bastard! How could Yu Ao Tian have good response? Why every time Yao Yao argue with him, she always turned be the loser?"

Pissed off!

But again it is true that, since the day Yu Ao Tian asked her to learn how tying necktie, she really seriously learn it.

"Luo Yao Yao, you sit beside me."

"Ah?" She hasn't agreed but he has pulled her to sit with him.

Yao Yao must be more alarmed when Yu Ao Tian is asking her to sit beside him because...

He even dares to violate and teasing her body during the party. Yao Yao feel uncomfortable so she whispered: "Today is my day off."

Yu Ao Tian really a man with thousand ways to make her cannot say anything, "Well, just thought that your boss is harassed you." He spoke such easy

When Yao Yao is focusing with Yu Ao Tian, suddenly...

"Xiao Luo, this time you lose!"

"Hah?" Hurried she gain herself.

"What Ah, you are losing Xiao Luo, what do you want choose, dare or truth?"

She hesitated, smiled: "Truth."

"Ok, you tell us who the man that you ever loved most, it could be the current one or the past. The important, it must be "love between man and woman" that kind of relationship, just don't tell us like father or uncle, these things."

What happen to these people? Why they are asking the question that she does not want to answer? The name that she can't mention, it's only Feng Chen Yi, no matter in the past, or... currently.

"Ah, still... dare." She really admitted defeat!

"Bao Bei, you can say your Ex-boyfriend, if not because of him, I really cannot meet you. I really want to know him, really want to thank him, thank him for leaving you." Yu Ao Tian whispered to her.

She furrowed her brow, if Feng Chen Yi really someone who is not has anything (status, position) but he is someone. Although she tells these people, no one will believe her, right?

"I have forgotten his name."

"En? You still someone fickle." Yu Ao Tian eyes flashed – gleamed coldly, at one glance he knew that Yao Yao lied.

"Well, if you are really choosing dare, now you must pick one person to kiss."

What bloodly hell they are playing? If she picked Yu Ao Tian, it must be much convenient but everyone must know her relationship with him; if she chooses another person, Yu Ao Tian might killed her later moreover she embarrassed.

Oh Heaven! This is only game but why these people play such big?

"Faster Xiao Luo, you can choose Xiao Xia, he is someone who always protect you." Everyone encouraged Yao Yao to choose Xia Ren Liang. She really wanted to go die immediately!

At this moment, she looked at Yu Ao Tian who sitting beside her with plead eyesight, and then glanced at Long Ye.

Long Ye smiled: "Everyone, today CEO Yu has prepared fireworks for you guys, perhaps it would be start, so let we stop here."

"Really? Let's we wait for the fireworks." Everyone attention had sent away, finally Yao Yao can relieve....

The fireworks are lighted, peng peng peng.

It is really one beautiful firework. When everyone looked at the fireworks suddenly Long Ye stood up in the stage and said: "Thank you for everyone hard work, so that Berson Group has succeeded working with Feng Group."

"Feng Group?" Yao Yao confused when she heard about Long Ye speech.

At her besides, Xia Ren Liang is laughing: "Yao Yao, don't tell me that you did not know if this investment actually funded by Feng Group's General Mananger, Feng Chen Yi to our Berson Group."

"Hah?" She really did not know, if the investment fund was actually Feng Chen Yi's. Actually, what's other coincidence that could be happen in this world?

At this moment there are many females colleagues who looked at Yao Yao when Long Ye mentioned about the one who has huge distribution.

"The person who had huge distribute must be Yao Yao, right?"

"Yes, Yes."

"So what should we do to thank her?"

Everyone looked each other and suddenly lift her up...

"You guys?" Yao Yao who is standing beside Xia Ren Liang suddenly being lift up by some female colleagues to the edge of swimming pool.

Spontaneously, at the other second, they have already thrown her to swimming pool. Everyone still laughing but when some saw something odd with Yao Yao, her expression is panic...

"Does she cannot swim?"

"My God, this time they play such big (get trouble)!"

"Ao Tian, Xiao Meng Li, she seems cannot swimming." Long Ye said to Yu Ao Tian who is not far from him.

He said nothing, rushing go to the swimming pool.

But when he prepared to jump, Xia Ren Liang has gone faster one step before him.

"Hah, that little brat looked panic too." Long Ye laughed patting at Yu Ao Tian's shoulder.

He coldly looking at the edge of the swimming pool, his eyesight locked on the man and woman who has already go up.

"Yao Yao? Yao Yao, are you alright?" Xia Ren Liang panic, he patted on her back.

At this moment some of the female colleagues surrounded her: "quickly, quickly, Xiao Xia you do CPR. This is the rare opportunity."

"That's right. That's right!"

Everyone is trying to persuade him, he clenched and angrily: "You guys shut up!"

"Qie, what are you angry for, we are trying to help you!"

"Do I need you guys to help me? If not because of you guys, Yao Yao would not drown in swimming pool. I can understand how you these people are actually jealous on her!" The gentle Xia Ren Liang obviously pissed off.

These females glared on him.

"Huk, huk, Xia Ren Liang, I, I am okay." Yao Yao said weakly.

At this moment, hurried he put on his suit to Yao Yao: "Yao Yao, I send you off."

"It is okay, I can go home by myself."

"I send you off!" Xia Ren Liang stubbornly said.

But... she really does not want to let Xia Ren Liang to know where she stays, whatever, just go to Mom's place. "En, sorry to trouble you!"

Xia Ren Liang smiled warmly and then he helped Yao Yao to stand up....

"Hem, Hem, did you guys see that suit which Xia Ren Liang used?" one of the colleagues pointed at Xia Ren Liang when he has heading to exit way.

"What brand?"

"I spotted the Armani's sew."

"Impossible..." said the other colleagues, "I do also spotted that his car actually one of the luxurious ones."

"Hm, it seems so."

"Huh, whatsoever, I could say that car must be rented while the suit must be the fake one." Said one of the female colleagues who unhappy.

"Ah, no matter real or fake, don't you guys actually think that he is actually Gao Shuai (高帅)<sup>2]</sup>?

"What is so good to be Gao shuai? There are lots Gao Shuai. But in today's world only another Fu words that attract."

"Xiao Qiao, you are so materialistic."

"Of course, only being realistic then life can go on." This girl who called Xiao Qiao smiled...

"Heh, Ao Tian, it seems that little brat loves Xiao Meng Li." Seeing how Xia Ren Liang anger toward those females, Long Ye had seen it. The important part is, Xia Ren Liang is showed it too obvious, as a man he clearly understood it.

Yu Ao Tian narrowed his eyes, he left the place....

"ring" ring" suddenly his phone ringing: "Hello?" he accepted the phone call when he is standing at exit way, where Yao Yao and Xia Ren Liang had passed before.

"CEO Yu, do you have time? Let's we chat." It is phone called by Feng Chen Yi.

Yu Ao Tian eyes flashed, devilish answered: "Half hour later meet."

"Ao Tian? Who is calling?" Long Ye who is standing beside him, curiously asked.

"Feng Chen Yi, he seems to have urgency to meet me, you go with me."

"How is about Xiao Meng Li?"

His eyes gleaming coldly: "She has her own way of thinking." After said he and Long Ye left...

\*\*

The thick tea fragrances spreading inside the private room of Tea House, Feng Chen Yi wears suit in navy-colored.

Besides him there is Ou Yang Zi Xuan who keeps on looking his watch: "Chen Yi, it almost the time." At the moment he said, Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye are already walking inside.

"Yu Big Boss!"

"En? Zi Xuan, do you also here?" Yu Ao Tian smiled to Ou Yang Zi Xuan.

"Today I am especially coming here to meet you. Hehe." Ou Yang Zi Xuan is the hard core fan of Yu Ao Tian, even his family is one of the richest family, list in top ten, but since he was kid he has been admiring the underworld life, so that he is so idolized Yu Ao Tian.

"CEO Yu, please have seat." Feng Chen Yi coldly said.

Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye are sitting face to face with Feng Chen Yi. "General

Manager Feng, why are you looking for me?"

"First, I represent Feng Group to thank you for earning sum amount of money. After this, I believed my elder brother will not have any way to stop our work collaboration." After said, Feng Chen Yi poured hot tea for Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye.

"The most important is, your elder brother must be felt the "danger"?"

Feng Chen Yi eyes flashed, slowly he lift his head up, looking Yu Ao Tian, eye to eye: "Didn't this the result CEO Yu want?"

He smiled say nothing, lift up the tea cup, sipped it: "General Manager Feng, today you looking for me is not to thank me, this simple right?"

"Hah." Feng Chen Yi cold smiled, he put down his cup, coldly said: "Recently I heard that CEO Yu has signed work collaboration with Lan Du Group. If it can..." pair of his eyes gleaming cold: "I hope you can let me to have that contract. As the exchange...I will give you the Feng's piece of land which won in Ao Ma, how's about it?"

"Ha ha." Yu Ao Tian smiled: "My work collaboration with Lan Du only price about 8 Billion, while your piece of land at least worth 15 billion, I really wanted to know, what makes General Manager Feng... wanted to do this deficit business?" after said he looked directly into Feng Chen Yi's eyes.

Before Feng Chen Yi says something, Ou Yang Zi Xuan who sat beside him said: "Big Boss Yu, Feng Chen Yi doing this all because that Xia Yu touched his Ex-Chick<sup>3</sup>], so that...

"Zi Xuan!" Feng Chen Yi roared, Ou Yang Zi Xuan immediately shut his mouth up.

But, Ou Yang Zi Xuan really said the truth.

It was because yesterday...

"General Manager Feng, you have asked me to check about those five people, the private detective has done with it. One of them was the chairman of Lan Du Group who also have contacted with Miss Yao Yao." Lisa handed over the report.

Feng Chen Yi saw the photo that attached on the report document where Xia

Yu and Yao Yao had dinner and also the photo Yao Yao hugged by him. Moreover the rumor that spread on their circle. Paused, suddenly he pissed off: "Lisa, hurried to check on what business/work contract that Xia Yu have recently."

"Uh..." Lisa has followed Feng Chen Yi for almost two years, at least she knows more or less about her boss temperament: "Actually, General Manager Feng, I don't think this photo explain anything. Moreover, it only once, you just..."

Cut Lisa words, or perhaps the photo really didn't mean anything but the current Feng Chen Yi had already lost his control and showed as if wanted to kill immediately rather than make another check!

"Lisa, I asked you to check then go to do what I asked you!"

"Understood, General Manager Feng, I immediately checked it."

So here the result....

"CEO Yu, since you can make good calculating about this business, I think, you must be not refused my offer, right?" Feng Chen Yi stubbornly, it obviously that Feng Chen Yi really wanted this work collaboration between Yu Ao Tian with Xia Yu.

:Ha." Yu Ao Tian humph, sneered: "Indeed, I cannot to refuse this offer, what such good offer. And about yours piece of land... I think you don't need to give me anymore." After said, Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye left the Tea House.

"Ha, really never thought that Feng Chen Yi really has lovesickness. Just because of her Ex-girlfriend he even dared to bleed (take high risk).

Not long before, Yu Ao Tian ever heard from Li Mei Yun about Feng Chen Yi's lovesickness, that time he still doubted about the information but now, after he witness by himself, indeed Feng Chen Yi has lovesickness.

"Oh yeah, Ao Tian, as I could recall, that piece of land mentioned by Feng Chen Yi is the land that you always wanted? Why didn't you do the exchange, why are you doing this disadvantageous business?"

Long Ye curiously asked but Yu Ao Tian suddenly stopped his footstep: "I don't think it disadvantageous."

"Hah?" Long Ye still not understood.

"This time just take it as favor to have good turn. Although Feng Chen Yi not showed up, I still would do it. Just borrow his strength to cut that Xia Yu into pieces, it has saved my time up. Furthermore, I still "earn"!

Finally this time Long Ye understood how much Yu Ao Tian "use his heart" but...

"Ao Tian, I really not understand, after all are you really cares about Xiao Meng Li become Xia Yu's Lover?"

"I have care about it so much!" He coldly said but his eyes flared...

While another hand....

After Yu Ao Tian left, Ou Yang Zi Xuan sat face to face with Feng Chen Yi: "Big Boss Yu really interesting. But, I think it not worth for you to fight with the Xia's because of a girl, moreover she is your Ex. If you really like the innocent and naïve ones, I could introduce many for you."

Once Feng Chen Yi lifted up his head, Ou Yang Zi Xuan saw how dissatisfaction his face, he even coldly said: "There is thing that cannot be removed, the inside won't be identical."

"Ugh..." whatever Ou Yang Zi Xuan really cannot understand how Feng Chen Yi viewed this world.

Ring Ring Ring

The phone suddenly ringing, Ou Yang Zi Xuan picked the phone call. After he heard the report from that side, suddenly he smiled happily: "Not bad, have done well, so just let it."

Hung the phone call, he rushed saying to Feng Chen Yi: "Chen Yi, I have important present for you."

"Hah?"

"You hurry back to yours apartment, I have put your present in your home. When you home you will know it."

Although he did not know what Ou Yang Zi Xuan done, Feng Chen Yi still goes to his own apartment. The apartment that is only has single bed room and bathroom.

Opened his apartment room, he walks inside the room helplessly. Suddenly his pair of eyes gleaming when he spotted something in his bed, he is walking toward it. He saw something moves, he even spotted that is girl.

Furrowed his brows, he loosen the quilt that wrapped the girl. At instant, his face shocked: "Yao Yao!"

When he saw Yao Yao tied and also her mouth stuffed with white cloth. Feng Chen Yi hurried to help her loosen the rope and also unstuffed her mouth.

"Woah..." at that moment Yao Yao is looked alike little rabbit that got shock, she tightly hugged Feng Chen Yi's neck.

Frown he felt there something strange, when she hugged him, he smelled faint drug fragrance from her body, touching her wet dress: "Yao Yao, why your clothe wet..."

He suddenly saw Yao Yao has kneeled and forced her lips to Feng Chen Yi's lips, she even pressed hard and tried to intertwined her tongue with his, while her hands are busying to hug and caress Feng Chen Yi and even trying to put off his clothes.

Feng Chen Yi pushed her.

He looked at her closely, her white eyes little bit red, her tears streaming down as if expecting something, not need to guess, she has been drugged! "Damn, Zi Xuan that rotten bastard!"

"Chen Yi, I feel so bad." She begged him, suddenly she pulled him to the bed, his body fall on hers, fasted she stripped herself.

"Yao Yao!"

The current Yao Yao cannot see the disgusted Feng Chen Yi that she hates so much, she even not realized her brazen attitude.

After she stripped her outer clothes, she pulled Feng Chen Yi's hand to touch her, "Ah." She moaned from her beautiful lips.

"Damn." Because of Yao Yao provocation, his body is reacting. Because she takes the initiative, his hands also caress her body.

"En..." she enjoying it, she closed her eyes and her body also moves, still

caressing...

Feng Chen Yi breath become not stable, he almost lost his control because he has already on her top, pressing her body, excited to help her to "antidote" her...

"Chen Yi, it is bad... Chen Yi..." She still moves, she longing him to dim and put out the flame in hers body.

This scene has pierce deep onto Feng Chen Yi, he made fist and finally he let off beast in himself.

"Chen Yi, I want... I feel unbearable, faster give me."

"Yao Yao, this is your request!" the man is...

Yao Yao excited hugging Feng Chen Yi who has already on hers top, gently said: "Chen Yi... I Love You..."

#### Note:

- \*] (The word 干 Gan, which used by the employees are real meaning of working while the Yu Ao Tian used the word for other mean, 干 for "fuck" or "sexual activity")
- 2] 高 Gao 帅 Shuai: This word is come from three characters Gao Fu Shuai which actually describing the rich generation Gao = tall, Fu = wealth, and shuai = handsome / good looking.

in here they just mention about Gao Shuai which means the poor good looking man with high posture.

3]  $\exists ma$   $\Rightarrow zi$ : Babe, Chick. slang word that commonly used in underworld, quite harsh and impolite to call girl.

1	1	1	_	1	1	Λ
Ŧ	Ŧ	_		_	_	4

## Chapter 111 - 114

The Next day, Morning

The sun shines penetrate into the room through the window, radiating the white color of double bed. \*\* Girl is sleeping soundly in man's embraces.

The eyes that still closed blinking few times, the girl slowly opens her eyes, close and trying to open, and close. The soft white little face stiffen when she opened wide her eyes looking at man that she hugged.

Yu Ao Tian?

No, no... this person skin is whiter than Yu Ao Tian. So... who? What's happened? Actually what was happened?

Her memory about yesterday is blurred, Xia Ren Liang sent her off to in front of the door and then left, but at the time she wanted to open the door using key, suddenly there was something hit at her back and made her faint, after that... in her memory then left this current moment!

Did Xia Ren Liang hit her until unconscious yesterday? No, Xia Ren Liang isn't someone like that, impossible! Her body stiffens when raised her head, a diamond earring shines brilliantly, piercing into her eyesight.

Feng...Chen Yi?" hurried she pushed away that man who embraces her, she even jumped on the bed. How could be... Feng Chen Yi?

At this moment, Feng Chen Yi wake up because her dreadful scream, slowly he opens his eyes, when he sees Yao Yao at the floor, he smiled coldly: "You wake quite early."

At this world, other than her family members, it only left Feng Chen Yi that she trust, both of them are together for almost three years, he does not have any "responsible" to be always respected her, but now...

"Feng Chen Yi... you are too over, I never thought that you able to do such dirty thing. Now you are simply not more than rotten bastard!"

"Deep inside your heart, didn't I have been that rotten bastard?" He smiled

and then sat on the bed, waved his hand toward hers: "Yesterday feel not bad, I still wanted to feel it once more time."

Rotten bastard! Rotten bastard! Rotten bastard! Yao Yao rushed to the other bed side, raised her hand and directly hit into Feng Chen Yi's face.

But at that moment, Feng Chen Yi has already blocked her hand, using his strength to sway it away, she felt into the bed.

"Ha, my beloved Yao Yao, you are looking so devastating to climb up into men's bed but why not mine?"

Seeing at his piercing smiling face, Yao Yao dumbfounded, listened to what Feng Chen Yi said, she really did not know... did something had happened between both of them last night?

"How much that man gives you? Well, I paid you double, you come here to be my bed-mate. How is about it?"

What is Feng Chen Yi talking about? Didn't he think too much with his words? "Feng Chen Yi, you are so strange. When you were still with me, you did with Li Ruo Ting. When you are now with Li Ruo Ting, again you come to find me as your bed-mate, do you really enjoy your life as Casanova?"

"I slept with Li Ruo Ting because...." Angrily he roared, his deep eyes gleaming coldly: "Do you love that man?"

Not love! For her the relationship between her and Yu Ao Tian is not more than contract but...

"Yes." She can't say the truth in front of Feng Chen Yi, she prefers to make him believe that she really loves that man, but she would never want to tell him that she did everything because of money, so they together.

"Yao Yao, I asked you one more time, do you love him?" His cold hand grabbed her neck.

Yao Yao can feel this moment Feng Chen Yi has changed to be dangerous, his cold eyesight: "Yes, I love him, no matter how many times you asked me the answer still same!"

Did he misunderstand something?

"Chen Yi...I love you, Chen Yi, I really love you..."

She was influenced by the drug but yesterday he could feel the sincerity on her eyes when she said she loved him, that eyesight so real.

Because of that, when the arrow almost shot, he chose to rein the horse at the edge of precipice (immediately stop), it was because the feeling he had for her, two years ago with her still same, he really cannot ruin the beauty.

But at this moment...

"Since you are loves him that much..." One of Feng Chen Yi's hand still in her neck, and the other hand takes the mobile phone in bedside, lying down on her side and take their photo using mobile phone camera.

"Feng Chen Yi, what are you doing?" Yao Yao refused and trying to grab the mobile phone from him.

Feng Chen Yi sat down, but his hand pressed on her, control her: "You guess, if I take this photo to media, which man will still want you?"

Cannot...cannot, Feng Chen Yi did not know that she is with one of the most dangerous man. Once the photo spread, she really does not know what can be done by Yu Ao Tian.

"Feng Chen Yi, you enough, what do you want?"

"Yao Yao, I have said before, I will be worst man in your life. I want to see you crying, I want to witness you get the bad treatment from others man."

Really? Did Feng Chen Yi really turned be that wicked man? No.. she is not believe it.

"You won't, you will not do it."

"Hah, why won't I? This is the best chance to torture you."

"If you are really wanted to torture me, why did you come to visit my family for few times? If you really want to torture me, why you waste your time to accompany them? Chen Yi... please don't be like this?" she will never forget her mom expression when talking about Feng Chen Yi that day, mom is experienced person, what she saw must be right, if Feng ChenYi not that good, how could be mom moved?

Seeing Yao Yao tears, Feng Chen Yi dumbfounded, but the other second, he curled his lips: "Do you want to know why? Because, I understand you very well, you are care your family the most, if I don't act nice to your family how can I make you remember about me forever? Thus I want to torture you in day and night, make you can't feel peace with your current man. The most important is... you know how your mom grateful to me because I paid your grandpa medical fee. Although the money was his, why don't I become that good man?"

The grateful heart is torn into pieces, does Feng Chen Yi really such man? He changed, he really changed. Hah, but this not bad also, at least she does not need to hold that heavy and guilty feeling anymore. "If this is the real causes, thank you to tell me everything. You are indeed made me to hate you already!"

#### Just this moment!

Feng Chen Yi suddenly feels does he go crazy, since he tell her these things? But actually when he knew Yao Yao's grandpa needed money for the medical fee, he remembered the day when Yao Yao came to find him to borrow money.

He is someone who never regrets with everything that he done, but now, this matter has turned be one of the most regretful things in his life, he unwillingly to face his regret. So that, he hopes Yao Yao can hate him, at least in this way he would not feel so painful!

"Click" the sound of door is opened using the key. Feng Chen Yi looked at Yao Yao's eyes: "Don't go out!" hurried he covered her head with quilt.

"Chen Yi." At this time, a middle age man about fifty years something come in, while at his back there still someone followed him who also has same aura with him. This man looks about thirties something.

Both of them are sitting on sofa elegantly while both of them spread the aura alike the aristocrat, bright and brilliant.

The two visitors are Feng Chen Yi's father and also his older brother. Their purposed to come and visit Feng Chen Yi are because they wanted to talk about Feng Chen Yi collaboration with Yu Ao Tian. Actually this collaboration got huge objection from his older brother while his father only wanted to see the result from these two big groups collaboration.

Of course, when come to visit Feng Chen Yi, his father, Feng Xiao reasoned that he missed his son who has been long time staying outside. He wishes Feng Chen Yi to come home often, if could he want Feng Chen Yi to live at their main mansion, together with them.

While his older brother, Feng Chen Rui has another intention to follow Feng Xiao come to visit Feng Chen Yi. He just wanted to know the hell his younger brother intending to do with him after he found out the collaboration between Berson Group with Feng Group.

After the Fengs done with their conversation, before leaving Feng Chen Rui spotted Yao Yao at Feng Chen Yi's bed. Feng Chen Rui commented about Feng Chen Yi's habit and also his taste of woman while Feng Xiao who also looked at Yao Yao because of Feng Chen Rui said nothing except to warn his youngest son to be careful when playing. Feng Xiao never cares about his sons women outside Feng's mansion as long as those are not influence the business of Feng Group and also the harmony at Feng's mansion.

\*\*

Get insulted and caught red-handed by the Feng Xiao and Feng Chen Rui in very shameful situation, awkwardly Yao Yao leaving Feng Chen Yi's apartment. She back to Yu Ao Tian's place.

"Yu... Ao Tian..."

When she seeing Yu Ao Tian who is sitting on sofa with cold expression. Luo Yao Yao can't stop to trembling and also she avoided Yu Ao Tian's eyes.

He... when did he come? What should I tell him about yesterday and my absence at home? Her heart is pounding, dong dong dong. In order to suppress her fear, she forced herself to smile: "You, come?"

"En? Bao Bei, seeing I am in here why do you look so anxious?" Yu Ao Tian stood up, slowly he walking toward her, bending little bit when he has already in front of her, taking the key that fell down: "See, you even not pick up the key which falling in the floor, and still want me to pick it up for you?"

"Trou...trouble you." Hurried she took the key from Yu Ao Tian's hand, anxiously she biting her lips: "You, when do you come?"

"Yesterday night." He smiled devilishly.

Yao Yao feared: "You have seat..... all night?"

"Yes, I have waited for you since last night. Oh yeah, you not back for the entire night... where were you?"

"I, I, last night I was at my mom's house. I am sorry, make you waited me for the entire night."

"Ha ha, you must accompany your mom often, Bao Bei, you really no need to apology to me."

Raised head, he smiled, at this moment, she really feel sorry for him, she feels sorry for Yu Ao Tian. It was because she slept with Feng Chen Yi one night and now she lied to Yu Ao Tian. But she... really did not know how to explain herself about last night.

"Bao Bei, come." Yu Ao Tian held her hand and brings her to the garden which also has swimming pool, still holding her and softly whispered to her ear: "I remember, you cannot swim, right?"

"En."

"Heh..." his dark black eyes gleaming coldly, narrowed his eyes, said: "I really hope in the next life you can swim!" after said, he did not wait for Yao Yao to react but Yu Ao Tian immediately lift her up and throw her into the swimming pool.

"Help... help me...Yu... uh... help me." She relentless moved in the middle of swimming pool, she begging him, looking at the man who standing near the swimming pool until her eyed feel not seeing anything.

Yu Ao Tian untied his necktie from his neck, one of his hand put into his pocket, sneered: "Bao Bei, I forgot to tell you that, last night... I have ordered man to check you in your mom's house, but your mom said... you did not come!"

The smile of Lucifer, his eyes has intention to kill, again she taste the danger of this man.

She thought that he believed on her, she thought she could lie to this man. Wrong... wrong... the one who lied is the stupid.

At that moment when she entered the house, that man has already had intention to kill her. But he just too good in hide it.

Actually how deep is this man? How danger he is? Why she still so patient to find little bit light on this man? Or just that light is hiding too deep...

"Bao Bei, you rest assured, at the moment your Grandpa and your Mom will come to accompany you." After said, he turned his back and walking to leave.

Yao Yao still struggling in the middle of swimming pool, he... what did he say? Grand pa, Mom? No! No!

"Don't, uh..." looking at the figure that walked further, her body is slowly become heavier and heavier, slowly she is drowning.

Her tears mixed with the swimming pool water, tears by tears dropping as if bubbles.

You cannot, cannot, Yu Ao Tian, don't kill my grandpa and mother, I can't let my problem to drag my grandpa and mom to hell with me!

She struggling very hard, trying to make her head stay up: "Yu, Yu Ao Tian! I am still... I am still virgin. I didn't... I didn't do....hu. Anything that sorry toward you. I am not...."

"Yao Yao...Yao Yao..." in the darkness, she heard a familiar voice calling her name.

Opened her eyes, she sees her grandpa and mom. "Grandpa, Mom, where are we?"

"Hm, did all of us killed by Yu Ao Tian, and now... we are in heaven."

"No! Grandpa, Mom!" she conscious, she raised and sat, Yao Yao feared when she saw unfamiliar place, the light that illuminate her body.

She saw middle age woman is doing something like body check at her body lower part: "what are you doing?"

"Miss, please don't move, Mr. Yu is asking us to have proper check for your body."

Mr. Yu... Yu Ao Tian? It means that she hasn't died?

"What are you checking on?"

"Mr. Yu has made an order to check whether you are still virgin or not. Besides you were drowning before and got safe, so you shall have proper care."

"Ba Dump" she did not have strength to move, she opened her eyes to see the ceiling, her tears are just smoothly drops down.

It feels s good to live, so that, the scare of passing that death gate, kind of terrifying feeling.

Yu Ao Tian is really someone who too dangerous, very dangerous. The daily him is so different, did he pretending?

No, ugh, thinking carefully about the death of Ao Mei Chairman, thinking about the murders, the person who easily takes other lives must someone who has demon heart.

The daily him is actually also the real him, the murder of him also the real of him. But, she has thought this man too simple, the real person of him must be deeper compare to the normal people that she meets in her daily life, he even more complicated. Even Feng Chen Yi is cannot be compare to him, not even 10% of Yu Ao Tian, the complicated.

"He, Yu Ao Tian, impossible you do not know about his background, you are currently have work collaboration with him, it same as lead the wolf into the house!" Even Feng Chen Yi's father who has experienced so many things fear Yu Ao Tian and give three back steps, it can clearly be seen that he is extremely scaring.

Wait!

Didn't Feng Chen Yi and Yu Ao Tian have work collaboration? Although he said that he not fear of Yu Ao Tian, but... did he really ever seen Yu Ao Tian real self?

"Well, Little Miss, the check up already done. I have prepared to give the result report to Mr. Yu." Said that middle aged woman who is dressed Yao Yao new clothes. Turned and left.

"Wait, Auntie, Yu... does Yu Ao Tian at outside?"

"En, Mr. Yu is there."

After the middle age woman said, Yao Yao quickly get down from the bed: "Auntie, can you bring me with you to see Yu Ao Tian?"

"Alright." After said, she and the auntie are walking out together from the room.

Quietly she sitting down at the stairs in living room, her eyes looking at the familiar surrounding but her eyes even locked on Yu Ao Tian, that man. Even the outside is covered by forest, but the top of hill is where the villa built.

"Mr. Yu, the check up result has done."

Yu Ao Tian who sat on the sofa, swept his eyesight to the middle aged woman, coldly said: "How's?"

"That little girl is virgin, there is no signed for violating or abrasion."

"Fiuh..." Yao Yao who is not far from there finally can feel relieved, it seem that her last words during her struggling in pool that changed the last decision of Yu Ao Tian.

If during that time she did not believe on herself and not said that words perhaps she has already in heaven, and also Grandpa and mom... uh!

"En, understood, you can leave."

"Yes." The middle aged woman has sent off by the maid.

Yu Ao Tian glanced: "Bao Bei, you don't need to hide at my back, if there is something you want to tell me, come here."

She still afraid, her body is trembling in front of Yu Ao Tian: "Yu, Mr. Yu, I..."

"En? Usually you call me Yu Ao Tian, am I right? Why today you change the way you addressing me?" he used very soft, gentle and slowly way of tone spoke with her.

Yao Yao even felt the way of his speaking is more terrifying, it brings any danger in each word. "Yu, Mr. Yu, I, I understood that I was lack of understanding, I beg you, a great people forget small offenses, and still you..." Ba Dump! Suddenly Yao Yao kneeling on the floor: "But, but please let go my family."

"Oh, ya, I almost forget." He waved his fingers.

The men who are standing outside the living room, hurried come to his side: "Big Boss Yu."

"Tell those men who are in hospital that waited for command to dismiss and leave."

"Yes."

After she heard the conversation between Yu Ao Tian and his Xiao Di, Yao Yao really cannot imagine what she would be if the result of her body checking isn't virgin, what would be her grand pa and mother.

"Thank you, thank you, Mr. Yu to be generous."

"Come, Bao Bei, faster come here, don't kneel anymore."

She bowed down her head to the lowest and she stood up with her trembling body.

"Come here."

Chicken gut...

She lift up her head and sees Yu Ao Tian devilish smiles, hurry she bows down her head again while her body stiffen, walking toward him.

"Sit down."

She sat down right beside Yu Ao Tian as commanded.

One of his hands pulled her into his embrace and makes her sit on his lap, smiled: "Where did you go spending the night with Xia Ren Liang?"

"No!" Yao Yao answered him firmly, she indistinct feeling say that if she told him that she was with Xia Ren Liang yesterday it would harm Xia Ren Liang.

"Well, you— where and with whom were you for the entire night?" his eyesight as if able to pierce.

At the moment Yao Yao not dares to look at his eyes, she cannot tell him that she was with Feng Chen Yi for the entire night, this could harm him, now no matter what she said with whom she was, it meant she is harming that person, Yu Ao Tian is demon, she is also demoness!

"I am sorry. This morning... I had lied to you. But...I really did not know what happened to me last night." Deathly silent! Deatly silent! This man knew the loopholes, Yao Yao trying to act calmly and be composed because this is the only way for her to escape.

"Last night, I was afraid you misunderstood my relationship between Xia Ren Liang, I asked him to drive me to my mom's place but when I was taking my keys to open the door, suddenly I hit by someone. When I was awake, I realized I have been already in small street side."

No wonder, as Yao Yao who has 205 IQ. If she really telling lie to an ordinary person that person won't find out any loopholes. But unfortunately... Yu Ao Tian IQ is higher by 5 point compare to hers, so that, he knew there was a loophole on her statement. Either the real or the fake!

"Bao Bei, since there was someone hit you, why didn't you say the truth, otherwise, how this morning incident would be happened, you say... right?"

"I am sorry. I, I afraid you worried about me, so I lied to you. I am sorry." After Yao Yao said, her head bowed down even lower again.

"Ckckckck" Yu Ao Tian helplessly patting Yao Yao's head, suddenly his big hand grabbed her head.

"Argh!"

"Bao Bei, it seems that you are not learn to be obediently, you know that I hate people lied to me the most."

Yao Yao once again saw the demon side of Yu Ao Tian, she also knew that he found out loopholes in her statement: "During the time when I arrived at home, knowing that you had waited for me for the entire night, I tried to explain to you but I afraid you not believe on me after I said I really did not know what was happened to me last night. So that, I lied to you. This time, I really am telling you the truth."

He released her, Yu Ao Tian smiling while caressing that face which filled with fright: "Good, good girl should not telling lie, understand?"

"Under, understand."

### **Chapter 115 – 118**

As punishment, Yu Ao Tian is asking Yao Yao to perform the "usual" things that lover should do after he asked his men left the living room.

After some times...

"Yao Yao?"

This voice belongs to...

She stopped; her eyes moisten, holding her tears to fall down. She does not dare to turn her back to see the person, she not dare to confirm if the person is... Xia Ren Liang.

"Bao Bei, why are you stopping? Don't you want to show off to your suitor how good your lascivious skills?"

Why? Why Yu Ao Tian must act like this? The anger filled Yao Yao eyes, when she wanted to raise her head, Yu Ao Tian pressed hard down her head.

"Uh." She not even have chance to say anything.

"You are Yao Yao's colleagues, right?" Yu Ao Tian is smiling devilishly to the dumbstruck man. That man is Xia Ren Liang.

"CEO Yu, you and Yao Yao..."

"Oh? It seems that Yao Yao hasn't told you that she is my lover, this matter?"

Paused, Xia Ren Liang felt his eyes numb; he never thought that naïve and innocent girl like Yao Yao could be Yu Ao Tian's lover!

"CEO yu, did you asking people to kidnap me only to let me see this thing? Or do you want to tell me, the girl that I pursue is belong to whom, that girl? If this is what you mean, perhaps you are doing more than it required (superfluous). I am Xia Ren Liang once I fall in love with one person, it won't be easy for me to change."

Seeing the firm and stubborn Xia Ren Liang statement, Yao Yao could feel her body shaking, cannot! Cannot! Xia Ren Liang, you shall not speak that way to Yu Ao Tian, he can kill you!

"Ha Ha, this brat, your feeling toward my girl is quite deep ah. I really wonder how your father will react when he heard what you say."

"What is the connection with my father?" Xia Ren Liang not understood so he asked.

Yu Ao Tian eyes flashed, but he not answered Xiao Ren Liang question immediately, slowly his eyes swept on Yao Yao: "Bao Bei, you see, how big your charm, both of father and son fell for you, what should we do?"

What did Yu Ao Tian meant? What father and son? Xia Ren Liang? Xia Ren Liang's father? Is he...

"Yu Ao Tian, what did you mean?"

"En? It seems that Yao Yao hasn't told you about your father, Xia Yu who also asked her to be his lover."

After Yu Ao Tian said, at sudden Yao Yao expression is turned white pale.

Seeing Xia Ren Liang eyes which showed that he not believed: "I, my father looking... looking Yao Yao as lover?" perhaps everything just too sudden for Xia Ren Liang so that he looked blockhead.

"Aiya, both of father and son really have same taste. If said that both of you are not father and son, I am not dare not to believe. Is it? Bao Bei?"

She is patiently to endure all the humiliation that gave by Yu Ao Tian.

Then, Yao Yao hurried to bathroom, at the time she feels Xia Ren Liang has gained himself, her face has wet with her tears...

"I am so sorry, Xia Ren Liang, thank you that you are always believed on me and also taking care of me. I am sorry, I am sorry..."

And then, Yao Yao not paid attention when her tears falling down, Xia Ren Liang eyes also has already wet.

"Send off Young Master Xia."

"Yes."

After Xia Ren Liang has left with the men in black suit from the villa, Yu Ao Tian slowly pick up his mobile phone: "General Manager Feng."

"CEO Yu. What's matter?"

"Ha Ha, last night the thing that I promised you... I want to change the plan!"

Feng Chen Yi who is in another phone call frowned, another seconds, he coldly laughed: "CEO Yu, if you think that I can't do the thing perfectly, perhaps you can do it by yourself. But, killing someone with other people knife is more convenient, don't you should be happy?"

Feng Chen Yi understood the way of Yu Ao Tian settle things, when Yu Ao Tian said that he did not want that piece of land as exchanged for Xia Yu work collaboration but directly given to him, that moment he had guessed that Yu Ao Tian is using him to cut Xia Yu into pieces."

"Chen Yi, more I know you more I realized that I have huge expectation to be your best friend." When Yu Ao Tian said this, he is extremely excited, he loves this kind strong opponent like Feng Chen Yi lots!

"Ha Ha, thank you for the compliment. It seems this time I must work harder in order to do your part too. In order to taking care that Xia Yu."

"Well then, I trouble you..."

When Yu Ao Tian hung his phone called, Yao Yao has rushed back from the bathroom, her eyes is moisten with tears, angrily: "Yu Ao Tian! Why you must act like this? I always remember my status as your lover every time, but why must you using this kind of way?"

"Bao Bei, perhaps you have misunderstood something, this matter does not have any relationship with you.'

"So why did you..." Xia Ren Liang, he was warning Xia Ren Liang, wasn't he?

"But, I don't have anything with him!"

"Hah, don't tell me that you heard nothing what did he said before? If I don't lend my hand, Bao Bei, later the person who hurt must be you!"

"CEO Yu, did you asking people to kidnap me only to let me see this things? Or do you want to tell me, the girl that I pursue is belong to whom, that girl? If this you mean, perhaps you are doing more than it required (superfluous). I am Xia Ren Liang once I fall in love with one person, it won't be easy for me to change."

If this matter didn't bring up to surface, Xia Ren Liang must say this to herself, afraid what could she do when that time comes?"

Will she politely to refuse him or directly telling him that she is actually Yu Ao Tian's lover? If waiting to that day comes, perhaps the person who hurt most must be him?

"I understood what you mean. Sorry..." her emotions has not fully recovered, although she understood Yu Ao Tian intentions, but... he solves it too extreme, she unable to ward off.

"Bao Bei, I really am happy because slowly you have accepted your status as lover, if later someone alike Xia Ren Liang appeared, I might... not simply to let the person knows this thing, understood?" His pair of black eyes gleaming coldly, he spoke so softly no rush but possesses deterrence, whoever heard it must already have big picture about what terrifying things would happen for "the next".

"Under... understood."

"Very good. Since today you move and stay with me."

Staying with him? "No, I stay there quite good, cannot..." when her eyes meet Yu Ao Tian's eyes, her heart shaken, "I, I understand. But if, if Li Mei Yun comes what should I do?"

"Ha, Bao Bei, you are really like to think about other." But who would think about her? "I have another place with Li Mei Yun, normally she would not staying here with me, if you have objection, when she comes here... you just act as my maid."

Maid? It is also good. Yao Yao immediately nodding her head: "Okay."

"Pa, Pa" Yu Ao Tian clasped his hand, all the people who is leaving the living is returned one by one: "Angel, ask someone to help her tour this house."

"Yes, Master." The girl who called Angel looked alike in her twenties, she has very beautiful face shape, she really has extremely hot sexy body shape inside her maid-uniform, especially her slender fingers: "Yang Liu, you go with Miss Luo."

"Yes, Housekeeper Angel."

Unconsciously Yao Yao took a glanced from her beside, she realized that all of the maid in this house are having beautiful face and also young, does here is...Yu Ao Tian's harem?"

"Miss Luo, this is the Master room, in the future you are sleeping in here."

She is looking surrounding, it is really splendid and glamour room, it looked so warm with the romantic European-style double bed, perhaps this is one of the most beautiful room she ever seen in her life, but...

"Yang, Miss Yang."

"Ha Ha, Miss Luo you are too courteous, you can call me Yang Liu." This girl has very warm and has soft voice, she also has pair of big puppy eyes.

"Yang Liu, you can call me Yao Yao. I want to ask you, is here has any other room? I want to sleep at another place."

"Yao Yao, aren't you Master's lover? Sleeping with Master is something so normal."

"Ugh..." how can she know? But no wonder, it perhaps because just now incident, even the idiot might find out. She awkwardly laughing, lower little bit her head.

Yang Liu seems to realized that she had hurt Yao Yao, hurried she said: "You don't think too much, I don't mean anything. Even I have been only working here for few months, I had met so many girls that coming here to find Master, most of them are trying to climb into Master's bed, included some of the maid who are working inside this house also have this kind of thought. But you are the first person who is especially brought by Master to here, so this must be kind of honor."

"What? Ha, perhaps. It cannot be denied there are many aspects and quality in

Yu Ao Tian which able to attract women and fulfill every woman's dream. But for her, this is not an honor.

"Yao Yao, if you really does not want to accompany Master, I can tell you that, Master only stays here for three or four days every week."

"Ah?" it lit her expectation; she happily pulled Yang Liu's hand: "Is it true?"

"En, Master will always goes to Miss Li's place every week, so that..."

Ha, it right, there still Li Mei Yun, Yu Ao Tian still needs to accompany Li Mei Yun, this is too good, so this way she won't have any trouble staying in here. "Thank you Yang Liu for let me know."

"Ha Ha, you are really weird ones, everyone is obviously wanted to have little longer time with Master, but you... besides that you are not even care and bother when Master spend time with Li Mei Yun."

Cih, Yang Liu does not know her special relationship with Yu Ao Tian. Actually if she knows, she might think that Yao Yao climbed Yu Ao Tian's bed because of money, other than that there still many complicated relationship which not shows up in surface.

"This is Master's study room, Yao Yao, you should remember, no matter what happen you are not allowed to enter the room." Said Yang Liu by pointing at the room's door, she seriously said.

"Why?"

"I also don't know. Perhaps Master hates woman to participate in his business. Of course, Miss Mo is exception."

Is Mo Xue Tong? Last time she heard Long Qi ever mentioned about few of their relationship, the relationship that cannot be replaced by anything. Believe that Mo Xue Tong has an important place in Yu Ao Tian's eyes.

After Yang Liu brought her touring the house, Yao Yao has familiarized herself with the villa environment and the rooms. When she back to living room again, Yu Ao Tian has already left, moreover he won't be coming during the night. This is merely big good news for her!

The brand new week is coming, early in the morning Yao Yao has arrived in the

office and stupidly standing in front of the Finance Department but not get in.

"Xiao Luo, we are almost in work hour, why are you stupidly standing outside?" the colleagues who passing her said with strange eyesight.

"Ah? I just want to take fresh air, refresh myself for moment, only a moment and then..." actually she is trying to {avoid first day lunar year but cannot avoid 15<sup>th</sup> day of lunar year} (cannot escape or unavoidable things), but after the yesterday incident she really does not know how to face Xia Ren Liang.

\*\*

"Xiao Luo, why Xiao Xia not coming?"

"Ah? I, I don't know."

"Speak honestly, last Saturday both of you were together, Monday he is not coming, what was happen, confess!" few of the gossipers colleagues curiously asking.

She frowned, does not know how to explain to them. During this time...

"Everyone! I have something to announce." Sun Li walking to in front of people: "Today I got news that Xiao Xia resign, later Ai Mi Li will take Xiao Xia position."

"What? Xiao Xia resigns? Why he resign when everything is okay? Is it..."

"Hey, Xiao Luo, didn't it because he had confessed to you but got rejection so that... he resigned?" some of the colleagues surrounded are guessing.

Yao Yao acted as if she not heard whatever they said and immersed on her own world, not to mention about Xia Ren Liang whether he is second generation of rich people or not, but even if he really a simple man, experiencing that kind of situation he perhaps resign, did she the reason he lost his job? Actually the person who must resign is her.

For the entire afternoon the situation was so tense, until the lunch time.

"Yao Yao, what happen to you? You look sick, do you have trouble with your job, just tell me okay?" Bai Ling anxiously asked her.

Yao Yao helplessly shook her head: "If it is work matters, I must feel much

better."

"Does it..."

"Hey, you guys watch in the television, is that person Xiao Xia?" said someone not far from them. Yao Yao and Bai Ling followed to watch.

"Today the ranked four domestic enterprise, chairman of Lan Du group, Mr. Xia Yu officially makes press conference to announce the CEO position is handed over to his eldest son, Xia Ren Liang. As reported his eldest son had graduated from Harvard University, holding Master degree in Business Management, Financial Management, a multiple degrees whether it can lead Lan Du to higher level or not. Could he able to make Lan Du at same level with Feng Group or Berson Group? Next is the complete report...."

"Hey, Yao Yao, is he Xia Ren Liang who is always having lunch with us, a colleague that...in same department with you?" Bai Ling showed her surprised face asking her. Her mouth not even can close.

"En, it is him." Yao Yao helplessly nodded.

"Wo Kao (sounded like fucking damn)! Hiding second generation! If I knew earlier I should win his favor." Bai Ling is regretful.

Not only her, most of the females in Finance Department are regretful. If all of them know earlier that Xia Ren Liang is second generation, they will win his favor.

"Xiao Luo, Xiao Luo, I asked you, do you know that Xia Ren Liang is second generation, this matter?" her colleagues in Finance Department are excited asking her.

She awkwardly smiled: "I, I know it just now."

"Ah? On Saturday both of you were together, on Monday Xia Ren Liang suddenly resigned and took CEO position in Lan Du group, maybe..." when spoke half, some of the female colleagues secretly laughing.

"Stop it, you guys stopped to upset Xiao Luo, perhaps Xiao Luo... has already regretted by now? Hahahaha"

Regret? What should she regret for? Did they think Xia Ren Liang is trying to

woo her and then because she ignore Xia Ren Liang and reject him, so that Xia Ren Liang angry and then he get back to his original identity?

Ha, they really have good imagination.

"Bai Ling, I feel full, I take my leave." At the moment when Yao Yao stood up, in front of her there is familiar figure that suddenly blocked her vision line: "Xia, Xia Ren Liang."

### Thump thump thump

Her heart beat so fast, she really does not know with what kind of expression she must face Xia Ren Liang, she is avoiding his eyesight and lower her head.

"Aiya, Xiao Xia?" few of the females colleagues in Finance Department were stunned when spotted him, they paused, their eyes flashed, showing wicked smiled: "You guys make a guess, what kind of revenge Xiao Xia will pay to Xiao Luo?"

"He he he, so that Gao Shuai has already changed to be Gao Fu Shuai, if it was me, perhaps I will cry until my tears dry. Perhaps, Xiao Luo might have this kind of mood? Or else why must she look that nervous?"

"Yao Yao, I am apologizing to you. Actually last Saturday I wanted to tell you but that time I felt that I not suitable for you, so that I have decided to use this status to say to you..." Xia Ren Liang ignored all the eyesight of the surrounding, one of his hand in his pants pocket, with deep emotion he walking closer toward Yao Yao in front, slowly said: "I, love you."

1	1	Q
4	4	J

# Chapter 119

In flashed, those people who are waiting for best part of show to come suddenly feel as if they are slapped. But Yao Yao knows this is the purposed of Xia Ren Liang.

He does not need to be... He does not need to be like this Xia Ren Liang, although all the colleagues are misunderstood their relationship, but if this words are heard by Yu Ao Tian, what would be the risk?

"Yao Yao, do you have time? I want to have chat with you." Xia Ren Liang whispered to hers ear.

Her heart is trembling, anxiously made a fist: "I am sorry, I... I don't..."

"CEO Xia."

Suddenly Yu Ao Tian voice heard, Yao Yao raise her head but immediately bow down. How can he be here, did he hear what Xia Ren Liang say?"

"CEO Yu." Everyone greet Yu Ao Tian on the moment they saw him.

"CEO Yu, Hello." Xia Ren Liang stretched his hand as the polite gesture.

"Ha Ha, today I watched the news, congratulation CEO Xia, finally you took the CEO position from your father." Yu Ao Tian politely shook Xia Ren Liang's hand.

"I should thank Berson "educated" me. I have worked in Berson for two years and I have learned so many things. Thank you to CEO Yu who had given me this opportunity. Others... I want to have chat with your "employee" privately, don't know will you... "Let her go"?"

Yu Ao Tian deep eyes swept into Yao Yao who is bow down, smiled: "I believe that my "employee" know the boundaries, so that, it is not something that I can decide. Not say anymore, I must go to my office room."

"CEO Yu takes your leave."

After Yu Ao Tian left, that intimidation atmosphere finally broke, his image had engraved so deep inside her heart. Something that called feared and shivering.

"Yao Yao, give me 5 minutes can you?"

"No..." at the moment Xia Ren Liang pleads to her, she helplessly nodded her head: "Fine." They also left the cafeteria...

"Yao Yao, regarding yesterday matter..."

"Could you not bring it up? Whatever Yu Ao Tian said was true, I am his woman."

"No! I believe on my own eyes, just now when we were in cafeteria...."

"Thank you, you helped me out from embarrassment."

"Ha Ha, Yao Yao you are mistaken, I was not helping you out from embarrassment but I was telling the truth. Indeed that was the thing I wanted to tell you regarding, although you are Yu Ao Tian's woman, even though you love him. But those things would not affect me or stopped me to love you. I will never give up, never!"

Xia Ren Liang stubbornness is something Yao Yao predicted, she thought this man might give up after he knew everything about her, he must hate her but thing isn't that simple.

This is so regrettable... she cannot give him anything, no matter her feeling or even one comfort word.

"Xia Ren Liang, did you resign because that matter?"

"No, it not that, my father's company suddenly have urgent problem, our company in crisis and also because of his sickness, so that I need to take CEO position in Lan Du group and help him to pass this crisis."

"Well, you must work hard."

"En, you too, I take my leave."

"Good bye."

"Good bye...Yao Yao..."

When parting, Xia Ren Liang wanted to give her hug, but she merciless refused, his eyes filled with confusion, he felt sentimental toward Yao Yao gesture. However...

Xia Ren Liang does not know this hug perhaps will give him ill-fated and also danger, her lover, Yu Ao Tian is someone dangerous and scary more than demon!

There is no guarantee whether both of them able to meet each other in the future, but knowing Xia Ren Liang for few days, he had given her unforgettable memory and support. This friendship, if there is a chance she will pay him back!

Without she realized the work time is ended, Yao Yao back to Yu Ao Tian's villa.

"I want to meet Yu Ao Tian! Why all of you not let me in?" suddenly there is woman voice that screaming from outside.

Yao Yao is slowly walking...

"Miss Luo." Angel who is standing in the front inner gate greets her politely.

The woman who is standing in front of the outer gate, emotionally looking at Yao Yao and grabbed on her, hysterical asked: "Who is she? Why can she enter Yu Ao Tian's villa deliberately?"

"Miss Zhao, this is..."

"I am a maid that employed by Mr. Yu." Angel word has cut, hurried Yao Yao made excuses for her own self. Her instinct tell her that, this woman is someone who has complicated relationship with Yu Ao Tian, she does not want to get dragged in their relationship.

"Are you Yu Ao Tian's maid?" that woman narrowed her eyes, but after she took good look of Yao Yao, she is not hesitate and then released her: "Humph, Yu Ao Tian won't change his taste so fast!"

Yao Yao hurried get into the villa.

"Yao Yao, are you okay?" Yang Liu concerned, asking her.

"It is okay."

For almost one hour, the woman is still making noise outside. But right after one hour later, the villa back to quiet.

Unknown the matter but she felt that the woman at outside looked so pity, if not because she loves Yu Ao Tian that deeply, would she really able to degrade

```
herself to that point?
```

"Master."

"Master."

During the dinner time, Yu Ao Tian has already at home, hurried Yao Yao put down her bowl and chopstick: "Yu, Mr. Yu..."

"Ha, Bao Bei, you addressed as if we are stranger." His face does not have any expression, directly sitting: "Eat." Take the chopstick.

Yao Yao hurried opened her mouth: "I had spoken only five minutes with Xia Ren Liang, it was simple conversation, nothing important."

"Why are you telling me this?" he put one dish on Yao Yao's bowl: "Come and eat."

He..., doesn't he have objection? Will he sink her again in the pool? She feels so anxious takes her chopstick...

"Ao Tian! I am Qing Kong, I know you are there, can you meet me?"

That woman again, didn't she have left? Lift her head up, she glanced at Yu Ao Tian expression.

As seen, he clasped his hand: "Angel, what happen at outside?"

"Replied to Master, that is Miss Zhao, today she has come one time, but I didn't let her in, but now she comes back again."

"Ask her to come in."

"Yes."

"Bao Bei..."

"I, I have done with my meal, I back to my room." Without waiting for Yu Ao Tian speaks, Yao Yao hurried leaving the dining room.

Ha, he really rare to meet such understandable girl. He satisfied smiling, slowly leaving the dining room.

"Ao Tian!" Zhao Qing Kong meets him, her tears streaming down and hurried rush toward him.

To unknown, she is stopped by Angel.

"You are only a maid, this is none of your business!" Zhao Qing Kong unhappy roared, she turned to look at Yu Ao Tian: "Ao Tian."

He sits down at sofa as if not seen anything, coldly said: "Zhao Qing Kong, why are you looking for me?"

"Ao Tian, I know that now we are not... but.." she gently touching her abdomen part, smiling: "I have pregnant your baby."

After she spoke, Yao Yao who just went to second floor suddenly stopped her footstep, secretly peek on living room from second floor, wanting to know what is happening...

Zhao Qing Kong							

# Chapter 120

"Abort it." Yu Ao Tian answered as if a knife that stabbed into Zhao Qing Kong's heart and also pierce into Yao Yao's.

How could he so calm when he said that? Inside that woman's stomach there is his baby!

"Ao Tian, what are you talking? Our baby is already four months, you see, you see." Zhao Qing Kong excitedly to take out the sonographic scans picture: "This is your baby, how can you be so heartless!"

Yu Ao Tian swept his glanced to that sonographic scans picture, his lip curled up, heartlessly he took that picture and stomped it to the floor: "Qing Kong, you must know very well our relationship, and also you know that I never wanted to have any baby from any woman, the most important is..." his deep eyes gleaming, one of his hand grabbed her jaw: "You are my enemy's daughter!"

"My father? Ao Tian, did my father die because of...you?"

Zhao Qing Kong? Does she is the daughter of CEO Zhao Zhi Cheng? Yao Yao heart is tightened, so the reason Yu Ao Tian killed Zhao Zhi Cheng not because business matter, but because both of them.... has grudged, did Yu Ao Tian really killed Zhao Zhi Cheng because of grudge?

"Didn't your elder brother tell you?" he loosens up his hand, he sneering.

When Zhao Qing Kong heard all of this, at sudden she is crying as river, kneeling in front of Yu Ao Tian: "Ao Tian, Ao Tian, I really don't know what the grudges you have with my father, but did all the things we spent together, all was fake?

"Ha, do you think if you are not Zhao Zhi Cheng's daughter, I would like you?"

### Thump!

This words as if bolt during clear sky that thundered to Zhao Qing Kong and made her dream turned into pieces: "You, did you together with me because... you wanted to revenge to my father? How could you like this... how could you,

but inside my stomach is your baby... it is innocent!"

"No, this baby still has it value, at least it can accompany your father in hell." He clasped his hand.

At the moment, Angel has been moving toward, she pulled Zhao Qing Kong up from her kneeling position, only with one punch.

"No!"

The fresh blood is slowly dripping down. Zhao Qing Kong face has turned as white as paper touched her abdomen: "Why? Ao Tian, even though you hate my father, but this baby... it has your blood, Ao Tian..."

"Ha, if I really want baby I can have it from any other woman but why must I let my enemy's daughter to bear it? Since you are like kids so much, I will let you... to have no right become mother!" after said, his coldly said: "Angel, search someone to take out her ovum! So that, she will be lost her ability to pregnant."

"Yes."

"Ao Tian! No! Don't! Ao Tian!" inside that glamour and splendid villa, there is woman who begging but not get any replied except the coldness in that place.

At the first time she had decided to be with Yu Ao Tian, she had understood, though she still trying her luck to bear Yu Ao Tian's child, but this man is heartless, he even not let this child to born, moreover child from his enemy's daughter!

Stood up, at the moment when he lift up his head, he spotted Yao Yao who dumbstruck standing in second floor.

When she felt the cold, suddenly her pair of leg weakens, trying to move to her room.

What did she see, what did she hear? Why must she felt curious with Yu Ao Tian reaction when that woman said she pregnant? Now when she knew the answered, did she satisfy?

It scary... terrifying...

Little life suddenly vanished only by single words of Yu Ao Tian, because of him a normal woman suddenly losing her right to pregnant and be mother.

How could he be this heartless? How could he be this cold blood? Although she is his enemy's daughter, why must he be so heartless and merciless until this step?

She covered herself in quilt, Yao Yao is shivering all over her body, this kind of fear is coming from the bottom of her heart, human have blood, but she feels Yu Ao Tian is even scarier than before.

"Bao Bei."

She felt suffocating, hurried she used the quilt to cover her head: "I am sorry, I am so sorry, I, I am so tired, I want... to sleep. Can I?"

He knew that Little Thing must be so scare after she witness it, so that he had expected her to go to her room immediately before but still she seen it.

"Are you really tired? Bao Bei, I hate girl who tell lie."

Her body which is covered by quilt suddenly uncovered by Yu Ao Tian, she afraid to see at his eyes: "I... I.." her brain emptied, in her eyes she only sees a demon in front of her.

"Bao Bei, do you really scare of me?" Yu Ao Tian is kneeling in bed, slowly stretched his hand, when he touch Little Thing's body who is shivering and having cold sweat, finally he realized that Little Thing really shocked so much.

"I... I don't know you and Zhao Zhi Cheng... had grudged. But, but his daughter is innocent, moreover the baby that she bear also innocent. You, you had killed Zhao Zhi Cheng, why must you...." She still trembling but those tears that alike crystal bead streaming down, she even not understands what she said.

"Ha, do you really think that his daughter innocent? Why I think... all his family must be died!" when Yu Ao Tian said it, his eyes is flashing hatred, a kind of hate that had been penetrating into his bone.

She does not know what kind of hate that makes Yu Ao Tian able to kill someone moreover to kill the entire family?

"Besides that, I never asked his daughter to pregnant, it was her fault to secretly bear that baby, so that I gave her punishment to lose her right to be mother."

"But, but, but being pregnant isn't one person responsible. If you are not... if you are not, how could she pregnant?"

"Aiyo, Little Thing you are quite understood this kind of things. Do you ever thought to... give it try by yourself?" he said devilishly.

Yao Yao almost frighten to death, she gathered her courage: "No, I don't want to try it."

"Hm, I see you are curious about my\*\*, you must have think about it before, right? Rest assured, I will be so patience toward you, trying to satisfy you during the process." After said, Yu Ao Tian is lying in the bed besides Yao Yao while grabbed her body to his top.

"No, I don't want." She is panic.

At the moment, Yu Ao Tian frowned: "Bao Bei, you..."

"Ah?" she saw he showed awkward expression, Yao Yao dumbfounded: "What, What?"

Slowly he stands up, his eyes looked at Yao Yao, his hand touching...

"Ha Ha, Bao Bei, you... you don't pee on me!"

My God...

How could she pee?

Her face blushed red, faster she moved from Yu Ao Tian's body, she touched the body lower part, it really wet, and then she looking at the floor in her room, all is wet.

Did she really pee after she saw Yu Ao Tian treated that woman? Why she not even feel it before, so embarrassing!

Yao Yao hurried go to bathroom, when she standing in front of the wash basin, she glanced at Yu Ao Tian who also cleaning his pant: "You, you stop, I wash by myself."

Note: Character detail can be check on the index section

# 

This is another sweet and funny moment between Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao
Won't say too much so, take your time to enjoy this chapter

Hi Girl			

### **Chapter 121**

"Although you don't want to wash yours, but at least you must wash mine "who wet" by you." Said Yu Ao Tian with helpless expression and looking at her.

"You, why don't you ask Angel to help you?"

"Aiya, Bao Bei, you are already 19 years old but still pee on your pant, it is more than embarrassed that I knew it, do you still want Angel and others know it too?"

Looking at Yu Ao Tian's devil face, Yao Yao face even blushing, she felt so sad but wipe dry her tears and turned: "Who should be blame? If not you who did that kind of thing, would I be scared to this point?" her eyes sharply looked into Yu Ao Tian who is laughing her, she made fist with her hand, shouted: "You mother fuck what are you laughing for?"

He stopped, his face dark looked at Yao Yao: "Little Thing, what did you say? I not hear you, can you say it once again?"

At the moment, Yao Yao felt that she has said something that she mustn't say: "I, I did not say anything."

"Uh." Yu Ao Tian helplessly shaking his head, although he hates to hear Little Thing speaking dirty words, but now at least she has already back to her own self, not that scared him, this is more than enough.

```
"Yu Ao Tian."
```

"En?"

"Zhao Zhi Chen... actually what grudge... did both of you had?"

When he heard Yao Yao questioned, Yu Ao Tian face expression changed: "You will know latter!" yeah, later...

Yu Ao Tian backs to his teasing mode, he walked closer to Yao Yao: "Little Thing, do you want to take bath with me?"

Finally Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao are taking bath together and then both of them

sleeping at one bed. Before go to bed, Yu Ao Tian stripped himself left with his boxer with him. Yao Yao panic, asking him why he must almost naked when both of them are going to sleep.

Yu Ao Tian said that is his habit.

Later in the middle at night...

"Yu...Yu Ao Tian! Yu Ao Tian! Yu Ao Tian!"

"What?" He really hates it because not easy for him to fall asleep. "Do you want to have night chat?"

"No, not that. I am sorry, I am sorry to wake you up. I just wanted to know whether Angel and others have sleep or not?"

This Little Thing perhaps has sickness.

"How a hell I know whether they sleep or not?"

"That.. That... do you know where they put tampon (Sanitary napkin)?"

He is not abnormal or weirdo why must he knows where those women put that thing?

"Little Thing, aren't you?" suddenly he fully wakes up, Yu Ao Tian furrowed his brow, hurried he turned on the room light, at the moment sees the quilt...

"Damn!" when he saw that snow white quilt has red trace.

"I am sorry, it comes earlier, so that I ...." She looked alike helpless little lamb and speechless.

He cannot do anything except shaking his head: "What to do?"

"I, I am not dare to move... you go, can you go to Angel's place to borrow few?"

Borrow? Uh, he is Yu Ao Tian, how can he borrow that thing from woman? How can be shameless he is, so that he should borrow that thing?

"You wait for me, I will go to buy it for you." After he said, he is helplessly to wear his clothes, engine his car and go to the nearest minimart...

"Sir, total is 59 Yuan." Inside the minimart, the storekeeper is passionately

smiling at him.

He touched his pocket, but on half way, he finally realized that he does not bring his wallet. Because his wallet is in his others clothes. Damn, this is so troublesome.

"I'm sorry Miss, I forget to bring my money, later..."

"CEO Yu."

Familiar voice, he turned to see: "Chen Yi."

"Coincide." Feng Chen Yi is walking to in front of him, and then his eyes are glancing at the thing in cashier: "You...hahaha." He is awkwardly laughing at him.

"Just in time, Chen Yi, I forget to bring my money, perhaps I need to trouble you and borrow little bit."

"It is okay, CEO Yu, I helped you to pay. You may go first."

"Okay." After said, Yu Ao Tian is hurried to leave the place.

When he arrived at the villa, he tossed the thing that he bought to Yao Yao.

She takes look...

"This, this... isn't sanitary napkin! This is not the one I want to use!"

"Little Thing, you try to shout at me!" He really does not know how to choose the sanitary napkin. The problem is... inside the minimart there were lot of people, after he took one of the sanitary napkin and went to cashier to settle the payment it was so embarrassing already! The most important part was.... It was his first time in his life time to borrow money, if Feng Chen Yi saw he bought sanitary napkin later with what face he must talk business with him in the future, since his face has lost.

"You try to use it, later you just looking for Angel to help you."

"But, but... ah~ fine. Thank...you." Mumbling for some times, Yao Yao finally went to Yang Liu to borrow the sanitary napkin.

It had exhausted him, both of them have changed to another new room. This time Yu Ao Tian is smarter, he gave Yao Yao another different room so both of them sleep separately. He just afraid if this Little Thing would troublesome him

again, he really afraid to lose control, have bad mood and suddenly straggle her to death...

Yao Yao who is having single room, she dumfounded looking at the room's ceiling, she feels that... tonight Yu Ao Tian not really that scary.

Washing the clothes, buying the stuff, moreover the time when both of them still in apartment, he had made her meal. This man really knows to do many things while he is little bit different from Yu Ao Tian in her imagine.

No! It is indeed another side of him, he just...

Unknown he is heartless, cold blood which can be appeared every time, his demonic-self too dangerous. No one knows when the thoughtful and considerate self of him gone, anyway, be with this man should not use too much feeling because no one knows when the days someone... unconsciously die in his hands!

### **Chapter 122**

"Xiao Luo, yesterday we heard that Xia Ren Liang came to the cafeteria and confessed so the result? What is the result? Are both of you decided together?"

Xia Ren Liang is hidden second generation; this news had spread entire company only in half hour, now many people are concerned about their relationship progressed.

"Ha Ha." Yao Yao awkwardly smiled, she tried to avoid the topic: "We, we..."

"Hey, faster watch the Television!" suddenly someone said, pointed at the Television which reported about Lan Du Group. "Make it louder!"

"It is reported that not long ago Lan Du group has work collaboration with Feng Group for the Nan Sha project as the material supplier. Day before yesterday Feng Group's employees had made evaluation of Lan Du Group supplies regarding the steel reinforcement steel, the cement and also other materials which resulted it were grade B material. After this news been issued out, Lan Du Group which always known as first class supplier with A grade material quality immediately fall in crisis. In today market trend, Lan Du Group stocks has already dropped by 200 points, if there is no changes in Lan Du Group for the next ten days, it will be predicted Lan Du Group might go bankrupt."

"Impossible? How can it be so serious, this time Lan Du Group might doom."

"That's right it is creditability crisis, very serious. To known that Lan Du Group progress until today because they are relying on creditability and trust."

All the colleagues are talking about this matters, suddenly Yao Yao remembered what Xia Ren Liang told her yesterday, did he accept this position because of this matter?

"Oh yeah, who is the representative from Feng Group?"

"It seems their General Manager Feng Chen Yi."

"Uh, This time Lan Du Group must be doom. The General Manager of Feng Group is well-known as perfectionist, it afraid that, this time Lan Du Group perhaps really go bankrupt."

So the person who responsible for this project is Feng Chen Yi, how could it be so coincided?

Yao Yao who felt so curious, browsing internet to search all the information regarding Lan Du Group matters, from the track record of Lan Du Group previous business it could be say that Lan Du Group is one of company which has high and strongest creditability, and also because of this, Lan Du Group within this ten years progressing as one of the best three companies which has high creditability in China. Later on after Berson appearance, the position of Lan Du Group is in fourth, How Feng Chen Yi able to make Lan Du Group as company that lack of creditability?

Yao Yao who has not much work during the afternoon suddenly busy to focus on everything about Lan Du Group and also busying herself to search all the information.

"Xiao Luo, Xiao Luo."

"Ah? Supervisor Sun, what can I help you?" she closed the internet and faster walking in front of Sun Li's desk.

"You hand over this document to General Manager Feng's assistant."

She took the document from Sun Li, dumbfounded: "General Manager Feng? Is he... General Manager from Feng Group?"

"Yes, that is him, go!"

Oh My, why must she go there, but still better because it just hand over to his assistant, if directly hand over to him, beat her until death, she really does not want to go.

She goes by Taxi to Feng Group, she straightly goes to the General Manager's office, The assistant of Feng Chen Yi...

Feng Chen Yi's assistant, but where is his assistant office?

Helplessly, she asked the help of Feng Chen Yi's secretary: "Miss Lisa, Hello."

"You... are Miss Luo! Are you looking for General Manager Feng? Faster get inside, General Manager is in his office." After said, Lisa is rushing to open Feng Chen Yi's office room door.

She hurried to explain: "No. No, Miss Lisa, I, I come to find General Manager's assistant."

"Ah? Are you looking for Veblen?"

"Yes, that is him. I come here as Berson Group representative to hand over document to Veblen."

"Oh, so that is. Veblen isn't in his office, you give the document to me. Later when he back I will give it to him."

"En, alright, thank you." Yao Yao is so happy and gave the document to Lisa.

Just now when she opened her drawer wanted to put the document inside, another document fell down from her desk. "Oh my bad!"

"Miss Lisa let me help you."

"No need Miss Luo, how can I let you do." To be uncertain whether this little girl in front of her will be the future wife of Feng's group, how can Lisa dare to trouble this important person to pick up her stuffs."

"It is okay." Yao Yao passionately, she bent her body and picking up the papers, suddenly...

She spotted a photo, "This is..." she picked it up, it is the photo where she had dinner with Xia Yu.

"Ah? Miss Luo, this..." Lisa panic took the photo, awkwardly smiled: "Thank, Thank you. If you don't have anything, please go back, go back."

How could Lisa have her photo with Xia Yu?

No, this wasn't doing by Lisa, but...

"Miss Lisa, I want to meet Feng Chen Yi!"

"Hah?" Lisa knew something big would happen after seeing Yao Yao expression: "Please... please wait for moment."

Hurried she goes into General Manager office room and explained everything

to Feng Chen Yi and then she takes Yao Yao to meet Feng Chen Yi.

"General Manager Feng, Miss Luo, both of you have chat, I... I take my leave."

At the moment Lisa leaving and closed the door, Yao Yao expression has changed, she rushing to stand in front of Feng Chen Yi's desk: "Feng Chen Yi, what do you think, asking someone to stalk me?"

After he heard what Yao Yao question, Feng Chen Yi looks so calm and relax, leaning to his chair, smiled: "My beloved Yao Yao, you really so impulsive every times you meet me."

"Feng Chen Yi, I don't have time to talk bullshit with you. I want the answer, why you ask people to stalk on me?"

"You are not telling me about the man, of course I must go check by myself."

"You go check on yourself?" what he meant...

Did he think that she has relationship with Xia Yu? "So this is your reason suddenly you have work collaboration with Lan Du Group?"

After searching for the entire afternoon, actually Yao Yao knew that Feng Group never had work collaboration with Lan Du Group before, moreover the representative and the one who responsible for the project is Feng Chen Yi, this even makes her more curious, there is no reason for Feng Chen Yi to have work collaboration with Lan Du Group, but after she saw the photo on Lisa's place, she understood.

Feng Chen Yi says nothing but smiling.

She made fist with her hand: "Feng Chen Yi, if you are really because of that photo troubled Lan Du Group, I can tell you that I only had simple dinner with Xia Yu, and that only one time!"

"So what?"

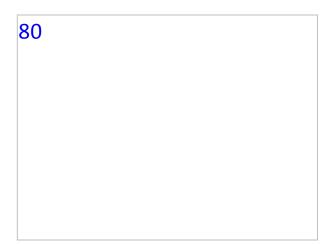
"Do you think it necessary because of a photograph you put so much effort throughout the company to deal with other people's company?"

"Ha, Yao Yao, you are wrong." Feng Chen Yi stood up, his hand pinched at her jaw, coldly said: "It not only because that one time meal so that I want to deal with him..."

Looking at that pair of cold eyes, Yao Yao furrowed: "so, so what is the matter?"

"You remember." Whispered on her ear: "As long there is man who get in touch with you, I will attack (deal) with them!" his voice have chills vibe, after he said, he bites gently her ear.

#### 123 - 124



### Chapter 123 - 124

Yao Yao pushed Feng Chen Yi away, "Feng Chen Yi, you are so bossy, now we don't have any relation. It is my freedom to whoever I am with now!"

"Well let me tell you. Whoever am I deal with, it also...my freedom!" Feng Chen Yi sat back to his seat.

She looked at that man who standing just now in front her carefully. She can't help herself to recall all good memories during the time they were still together. That time, this man also this bossy and domineering, very arrogant, in order to eradicate his opponent he can fight with all cost, she never thought that after two years his bossy and domineering characters even worst!

"I hate you... Feng Chen Yi... I hate you. I realized that I hate you more and more! Don't you realize that your bossy-self, unreasonable excuses can cost for other people's life? If not because last time you made me stay at your home..."

Shut up! I can't say it, cannot say it. Yao Yao suddenly closed her mouth tightly.

But Feng Chen Yi has already sensed something fishy, his eyes gleaming coldly: "So what if I made you to stay at my home?" standing up, he faster walking toward Yao Yao: "That man hit you again? Did he?"

If he really did hit her, perhaps it much... better.

Until now she really not dares to tell about that day— if she really had

something with Feng Chen Yi, what would happen to her grandpa and mother. "No! He didn't hit me! He just angry, I just don't want to make him angry! At least I don't want to make him angry because of you!"

"You!" Feng Chen Yi hand suddenly grabbed Yao Yao's neck, but at next moment, he laughed coldly, slowly loosen up his hand from her neck: "Aiya, I feel little bit disappointed, I thought...after went through that night that man might come to find his meal!"

Feng Chen Yi... what are you talking about? Did you catch me because you were waiting for Yu Ao Tian?

"Feng Chen Yi, you are really rotten bastard!" her eyes showed how disappointed she is, she laughed ironically: "Fine, you want to see how I get hurt, right? Let me tell you that, whatever you did and will do to Lan Du Group, it won't hurt me. Good! Bye!" after she said, she left.

After heard so much noise "Bump bamp", Lisa who sat outside the General Manager room shook her head: "Doom, it seems that General Manager Feng mood will be terrible bad today, perhaps not long after this, he might come to vent his anger to me."

Yao Yao who run out from the General Manager room, standing in front of the elevator with no expression.

It is so obvious both of them had already broke up, he was the person who ruin everything, but why since the beginning until now, as if all was her fault, as if she owed him so much?

Two years ago should she keep silent when he was cheating, and then waiting him to dump her so that things would not as complicated as now? Ah, Feng Chen Yi why are you so bossy?

"Back to my side... Yao Yao back to my side..." because Feng Chen Yi few words she has got headache for long time, but now after she rethink, he able to say something like that perhaps he just displeased and wanted to revenge on her because two years ago she dumped him?

"Ding"

The elevator stopped, when she entering the elevator...

One of the persons who standing inside the elevator, catch her eyesight, is he? Feng Chen Yi elder brother's Feng Chen Rui.

It so obvious, Feng Chen Rui also recognized Yao Yao: "It's you."

"Ha. Hello." Awkwardly she smiled and get into the elevator.

"Are you coming to find my little brother?"

"No, I didn't come to meet him. I came to hand over document."

"Oh, so that it. How can you know my little brother?"

How can I know him? Didn't he say that she is the person who climbing into his younger brother's bed, but why now he talking as if she is introducing "properly" (alike family meeting) herself to his family?

"Just like how General Manger Feng said before."

"En?" Feng Chen Rui eyes flashed: "Ha ha, other woman might explain something, but you are quite straight forward. Aiya, my little brother is kind of that person, there are many rumors about him outside, if you are really like my little brother, I can help you."

Feng Chen Yi elder brother... why he is so enthusiast? Yao Yao dumbfounded for moment and forcing herself to give stiff-smile: "Thank you for your good intention, but I don't need it."

"Don't you want to be with Feng Chen Yi?"

Don't want! There is no slightest in my mind to be with him!

"Now... I don't want."

Why? Yao Yao thought that Feng Chen Rui kind odds, although he is Feng Chen Yi elder brother, there is no necessary for him to get involved into his younger brother private life, right? Moreover, doesn't he feel his attitude too offhand, speaking to slutty girl? Normally as elder brother he must advice his younger brother to stay away from slutty girl?

"I, I don't deserved man like General Manager Feng."

"Ding"

"The elevator is opened. I take my leave."

Looking at Yao Yao who hurried leaving, Feng Chen Rui laughed: "Interesting, she protect that brat, Feng Chen Yi to this far."

"CEO Feng, who is that girl?" at his side is his personal assistant who is asking.

"Ha, She is Feng Chen Yi's woman. Help me to check on her, I feel that she can be used by us!"

\*\*

"Nan Lu! Nan Lu!" Directly go back to the villa after work, Yao Yao did not even have her meal but already run inside her bedroom. On her way, she waved to Nan Lu.

"What happen, Yao Yao?"

"You help me do something, please guard the room for the moment, if Yu Ao Tian go home, you just knocking the door, can you?"

"Ah? Yao Yao, do you intend to betray Master..." Nan Lu showed shocking expression.

She hurried shook her head: "No, No, No, you are wrong. I just want to look for some books." You good little girl (negative), after went through last time incident how dare she does something that sorry to Yu Ao Tian, moreover she even still at his home.

"Uh, looking for book does not mean betray Master."

It true that reading the book is not betraying Yu Ao Tian, but the problem is... the book that she wanted to read cannot know by Yu Ao Tian. "Nan Lu, you help me, is it okay?"

"Okay."

"Thank You." Excited she hugged Nan Lu, she hurried get into the room, she took few books and sat on the sofa.

About two hours...

"knock Knock Knock" there is knocking sound.

"Oh my, Yesterday Yu Ao Tian just came, why today he must come again, still thought that he perhaps would not come.

"Yao Yao immediately hide the book under the bed, she messed the quilt and hurried covered herself as if she just wake up.

Not long after that, the bedroom's door opened, Yu Ao Tian slowly walking inside the room: "Bao Bei, why you sleep so early?"

"En?" she pretending as if she just wake up from her sleep, gently rubbing her eyes: "You, are you back? My stomach little bit hurt, so I want to lie down, just unknowing I fell asleep."

"I heard Angel said that you haven't had your dinner, does it really that hurt?" Yu Ao Tian walked to the bed side, he puts his hand under the quilt.

Yao Yao little bit surprised: "You, what you want to do?"

He helplessly shook his head, he sat on the bed. He pulled her into his embraces and put his hands inside her clothes to her abdomen area...

"Don't, I still having that." She nervously said.

Yu Ao Tian just smiling without saying anything, he inserted his warm hand, gently he caressed: "This way, do you feel better by lit bit?"

So that he wanted...

She becomes little bit relax, she can feel his warm big hand in her abdomen area, at that moment suddenly her heart fill with little bit warmness.

Just that moment, she really not afraid of Yu Ao Tian, this is first time for the man strangely gives her feeling to depend on. But she also knows that, this man also has mood swing...

"Thank You, Thank You. I, I feel much better."

"Aiya, I just realized that I might God doctor, I have gently stroked your stomach and then you have felt better." He smiled and lowered his head and kissed her lips.

"No!" She blocked him with her hand, Yao Yao refused and pushed away Yu Ao Tian.

The beautiful and lovely atmosphere suddenly turned to be cold and froze; she could sense the coldness from Yu Ao Tian and also the changes of his expression.

Damn! She shouldn't refuse his kiss, but... if she really accepted his kiss because his little kindness, she feels...

Still she does not like being kissed by him!

"I, I hungry, want to go eat something." After said, she jumped out from the bed and nervously heading to the door.

"Stay still." The cold eyes swept on her leg, Yu Ao Tian said, "Bao Bei, why aren't you taking your shoes off when went to bed?"

Oh My!

Just now she was sitting in sofa when suddenly she got the news that Yu Ao Tian coming so she forgot to take off her shoes and immediately went to bed. "I..."

"Bao Bei, the thing that I hate the most, you must know it very well, do I need to remind you again?"

Deadmeat! It seems this time she makes Yu Ao Tian angry again.

"I am so sorry, sorry lying to you. My stomach not hurt anymore."

"So?"

"So..." she gathered her courage, walking and taking out all the book that hidden under the bed: "I, I afraid you seen all these books, so that... I lied."

Yu Ao Tian took few books from her, at one glanced: "[construction and quality of material], [The public relationship application during the crisis and how to handle], [what kind of material that fit the construction and building], Aiya, I see, should I send you to work at Lan Du Group?" he threw all the books to Yao Yao's face.

She paused for moment, she can feel her face burning hot and hurt. This man really has strong analysis sense. At once glanced he has already knew that she telling lies, at one glanced he also found out that all these books used by her to help Xia Ren Liang.

The scary Yu Ao Tian is not only fame of his heartless and merciless but also his willful instinct and also his analysis to sense loophole and the sensitiveness.

"I am sorry, Yu Ao Tian, I am sorry, I... I really don't want to lie to you. I really feel so grateful for all your kindness, but..." after she said half, her dresses collar was grabbed by Yu Ao Tian, she could feel the danger on his eyes and it makes her sweating.

"Little Thing, so that you know I have treat you good just now, so why you are so brazen... to lie to me?"

"Yu... Yu Ao Tian, I am sorry, so sorry. I know I did wrong, I beg you to forgive me, can you?"

"Bao Bei, you don't need to be so fear on me, rest assure, I won't kill you."

"It not...I just want to admit my wrong, not really fear you will kill me." When someone really treats you well, and the other person lied, who would not be angry, no matter what the reason she lied, this time Yu Ao Tian really sincere to treat her good, but she...

"I know that I did wrong, I am sorry, I am sorry." She really felt remorseful so that she crying.

After Yu Ao Tian venting his anger, he asked her to stand up. And then asked her: "Why are you helping Xia Ren Liang?"

"That time, when I suggested choosing Chang Hong Stock A, everyone was pushed me aside. Only Xia Ren Liang who stayed at by side and supported on me, I could feel that he really thought me as his friend so that he support me, his act really so sincere. I have owed him too much, I just want to pay back all his kindness." Of course, the main reason why Lan Du Group in crisis was because of her but she cannot tell Yu Ao Tian.

"Believe on me, I know what should I do and should not do. I also know my status, so that although I help Xia Ren Liang, I won't meet him again, can I?"

Seeing her pledging and also her begging expression, Yu Ao Tian really feel himself fail to teach her, she has already be in such situation but why this Little Thing still keeps her innocent and naïve characters just alike the first time he met her, she not even contaminated, not even one bit...

"Bao Bei, you really know to be grateful, but... why I don't see you to be grateful toward me?"

"That because...." At sudden, Yao Yao perplexed, if she recalled the person who save her grandpa life is Yu Ao Tian, he is her savior. But she innocently afraid that he would never yield for her sincere heart to pay him so she does not know how to repay him.

She cannot give him the answer, cannot answer what Yu Ao Tian asked, she only lower her head.

Another second, Yu Ao Tian has kissed her lips.

"Uh" actually she wanted to refuse but at the time she wanted to stop, suddenly she remembered so that she let him to kiss her.

There is no reaction from her toward Yu Ao Tian hot and passionately kissed. It makes him even angrier...

Suddenly the door knocked by one of the maid, informed that Li Mei Yun is coming to visit. Yao Yao shocked but Yu Ao Tian sneered: "It is good Li Mei Yun is coming, so that she will show you how to "serve" man."

What is Yu Ao Tian thinking when he asked the maid to escort Li Mei Yun comes in to this room when she also here with Yu Ao Tian.

Yao Yao is nervous and also anxious. She wants to leave but Yu Ao Tian not let her to go. Things worst when Li Mei Yun spotted Yao Yao at Master room which also Yu Ao Tian room.

"Why she is here?" Li Mei Yun asked Yu Ao Tian.

"She is my new maid and apparently also your hard core fans." Yu Ao Tian smiled alike sinister, looking at Yao Yao who not dare to look at Li Mei Yun.

"Yes, I am new maid, Miss Li." Yao Yao said.

As usual Li Mei Yun acts so slutty when she meets Yu Ao Tian so this time there is no exception. Worst thing come when Yu Ao Tian let Yao Yao to see how Li Mei Yun "serve" him even Li Mei Yun not really agreed with Yao Yao presence moreover she is doing something "private" with Yu Ao Tian.

After while, Yao Yao cannot bear to see what Yu Ao Tian and Li Mei Yun do inside the bedroom. She left immediately without care what the consequence would be.

"Ao Tian, I see she might hurt." Li Mei Yun said when looking at Yao Yao back, leaving two of them only.

"Do you think she really hurt to see us?"

"Isn't she?"

"Ha..." Yu Ao Tian sneered, he raise, helplessly shook his head: "She pity on you so that she is leaving."

"What do you mean?" Li Mei Yun is not understood, she hesitated: "Ao Tian, why are you stopped? Don't you need me anymore?"

"Today I don't have any interest, you help yourself out." After said, he took his clothes and left.

Seeing Yu Ao Tian who lost his interest on her, Li Mei Yun feels get humiliation. Both of them almost together for two years, her position cannot be compared to his others one night stand women, he never lost his interest toward her before, and now...

Does it because that little girl?

She might able to understand Yu Ao Tian who looks something new and fresh, but she never thought that girl present actually interfere their feeling (Li Mei Yun and Yu Ao Tian), Li Mei Yun suddenly feels that her position is disturbed and unsecure. She rolled her eyes and then hugged Yu Ao Tian: "Ao Tian, I want to move and stay in here."

"En?"

"Of course, if you are afraid I might disturb you and that little girl, just forget it."

"Not disturbing. Come and stay here."

"Really? Ao Tian, I really love you." At the moment, Li Mei Yun expression changed to be so happy, it seems that Little Girl is nothing, or else how can Yu Ao Tian let her stay in here?

Actually Li Mei Yun just not paying attention to... this moment Yu Ao Tian is smiling deviously.

"Huh u huh u..." Yao Yao who is running from the room crying in the stair.

Nan Lu who is passing by, slowly approaching her, come closer to her side, comforting and patting her back: "There is no way, being lover must bear this pain and hurt. Who ask you to love that kind of man?"

"It not, Nan Lu." She tried to control herself, and then smiled: "I just feel... Li Mei Yun is so pity."

"Hah?" Nan Lu bulleyes, she sat beside her: "What are you talking Yao Yao? Now you are pitying other woman, it must you that being pitied?"

"me pity? How can I pity? It obvious that she loves him so much but it is me who shamelessly enter other people relationship, how can I be called as pity?"

"You, how can you have this kind of thought? Feeling is selfish, isn't it? You are too kind ah!"

Seeing how perplex Nan Lu expression, she really does not know how to tell Nan Lu, she and Yu Ao Tian really don't have any officially relationship. Feeling indeed selfish, but if there is no love feeling, and all of this thing only a game then Li Mei Yun is the only who need to be pitied.

"Nan Lu, thank you to comfort me, but you not understood my situation right now."

"Perhaps." Nan Lu gently smiled to her, she used her hand wipe her tears dry.

#### **Chapter 125**

The next day...

"Hi, Little Girl, you are back."

Yao Yao just back to villa after work, she sees Li Mei Yun sitting in living room sofa, at the morning when she went to office she has tried to avoid meeting Li Mei Yun, but she never thought that Li Mei Yun would be at home during this time!

"Miss Li, you... how?"

"He, He, since today I move and staying in here, so please taking care of me."

What? Yu Ao Tian asked her to stay at here? What did he think?

"Oh yeah, let me introduce, she is Xiao Zhen, the maid that work with me for long time. Later in the future she will live with us." Li Mei Yun is smiling while pointing at girl who stands beside her.

"Xiao Luo, how are you." Xiao Zhen is nodding her head.

Seeing from her age, this Xiao Zhen must be in her thirties, Yao Yao forced to smile: "Hello, Miss Zhen."

"Xiao Luo, I want to clean my Miss and Mr. Yu Ao Tian bedroom, can you help me?"

"Ah? Me..."

"Xiao Zhen, Yao Yao is also newbie in here, how about if I go to help you." Nan Lu who standing beside Yao Yao, speak behalf of her.

But Xiao Zhen didn't have intention to let Yao Yao that easily: "I still want Yao Yao to help me cleaning the room, I think there won't be any problem, right Xiao Luo?"

"No, hehe, there is no problem."

"Yao Yao!" just to know that Yao Yao not only Nan Lu best friend but also she is not maid in this house, today's, she is the one of Master's concubine (person that personally brought by Yu Ao Tian) why must she live alike maid? There is no reason for it.

"It is okay Nan Lu, I, I must do it." Yao Yao smiled and acted alright in front of Nan Lu who mood is down. She followed at Xiao Zhen back and heading to Yu Ao Tian's room.

"Xiao Luo, please changes the bed cover, and also sweeps the floor. My Miss likes clean and also wipes the window."

"En, okay." She rolled her sleeves and started to work.

While Yao Yao working and cleaning the room, Xiao Zhen is sitting in the sofa alike big boss, pointing this and that, give her order: "Xiao Luo, it not like that, the floor must be swept cleanly, you must kneel when mopping the floor."

"Hah? Alright." Yao Yao still smiling, she keeps on cleaning and mopping very careful and attentive. While Xiao Zhen is enjoying herself without helping Yao Yao, but she also gives a difficult time for Yao Yao.

At this moment, Nan Lu is passing by, when she looked inside the room, she rushed: "Xiao Zhen, didn't you say that both of you working together, why it turned out to be Yao Yao who do all the thing while you are sitting here!"

"Ah, I forgot to tell you, I am personal maid of my Miss, no one can order me except my Miss, so that I don't need to do all the things."

"So what is your right to ask and give order to Yao Yao?"

After she heard what Nan Lu said, Xiao Zhen shrugged her shoulder: "There is no one can do about it, later this room will be my Miss and Mr. Yu Ao Tian's room. Of course it needs to be clean."

"You think that your words are counted? Especially cleaning? What is your right..."

Nan Lu mood turned out to be more and more unpleasant worse. Seeing both of persons in front of her would fight, Yao Yao hurried dragged Nan Lu to other

side, she said: "Nan Lu thank you but let it be. Don't argue with Xiao Zhen."

"Yao Yao! Do you know your status? The death camel compare to the big horse, why must you do as that maid ordered?"

"Let it be, Nan Lu. Actually I can tell you that secretly, now I feel quite...okay." After said, Yao Yao face looked so happy.

Nan Lu really not understood how Yao Yao thought on something: "Yao Yao, under this big sky, which girl does not like to be Mistress / Madam but choose to be maid?"

"He He, you will not understand." It true that Nan Lu would not understand her, she prefers her status as maid to lover, at least by this way she can forget herself for while as Yu Ao Tian's lover. On this way she feels so happy, besides... she has sensed that Xiao Zhen trying to trouble her.

"Whatsoever, do what you want." Nan Lu really angry.

She hurried pinched Nan Lu's cheek: "My beloved Nan Lu, thank you for helping me, but... believes on me, I am not dummies. I know what should I do and know what I should not do. The current me, I am really happy."

"Cih!" she is teased by Yao Yao, Nan Lu really not understand and how to say Yao Yao so she helplessly smiled to her: "I go to do my work."

"Bye Bye." She bid far away to Nan Lu, and then Yao Yao keeps on working and do the labor work.

After half hour...

"Master."

From outside the room there is footsteps sound, Xiao Zhen who is sitting leisurely in the sofa suddenly grabbed the rag from Yao Yao's hand and then kneeling down to the floor.

```
"Bao..."
```

"Mr. Yu."

Yu Ao Tian eyes coldly swept on the maid who is kneeled on the floor, furrowed his brow: "You are?"

"Mr. Yu, I am the maid who brought by Miss Li. My name..."

"Oh, understood." Yu Ao Tian not interested to listen on her, but he smiled to Yao Yao who dumbfounded in her place: "What are you doing?"

"[..."

"Mr. Yu, Xiao Luo asked me to clean the room. Xiao Luo, you go to busy yourself, not need to supervise me."

Supervise? So now her status is supervising? Ah.... Yao Yao helplessly takes deep breath. She really see how Xiao Zhen "use her heart", but she really not care about it. Anyway, she really does not need or crave of praise from anyone.

Yu Ao Tian who stood at beside, his expression has already changed, his cold eyes is sweeping on that Xiao Zhen: "I don't ask you! Understand!"

"Uh... I am sorry, Yu, Mr. Yu." Xiao Zhen is trembling and continued to mop the floor.

At this moment, Yao Yao followed Yu Ao Tian who walking fast to outside of the room.

Yu Ao Tian looked at her: "Bao Bei, is there something you want to say?"

"Can we have talk inside the room?"

Yu Ao Tian takes Yao Yao to another room, once they entered, he immediately hugged her: "Bao Bei, what do you want to say?"

She can feel Yu Ao Tian hugged her, frowned: "Did you ask Li Mei Yun to stay here?"

"Dislike? If you are dislike her in here... I can immediately ask her to leave!"

What is Yu Ao Tian talking about? How can he ask Li Mei Yun to leave? She tried to free herself from his hug, coldly said: "Ask me to leave. I want to get back to my own place."

"Ah, you can't." He hurried declined her idea, he sat on sofa, smiled: "Bao Bei, you only have two options, you beg me to make Li Mei Yun leave or both of you are staying here! Choose."

Yao Yao and Nan Lu						

#### **Chapter 126**

"Yu Ao Tian, don't you are too much? She is your girl friend, you must like her but why you wanted she left?"

Facing with Yao Yao doubtless, Yu Ao Tian really wants to laugh but he says nothing. He is so patience waiting her to give the answer.

At sudden Yao Yao realized on something.

Yu Ao Tian could say something like this perhaps this is no relation with his relationship with Li Mei Yun, but he simply wanted to test on her "genuinely" as lover, this side of her?

He really wanted to change someone inside and outside, he really wants to see someone to slowly sink into depravity, seeing someone slowly being corrupted during the process.

Too scary, Yu Ao Tian is simply to say as strong and hard to conquer.

Yao Yao realized that slowly by slowly she is able to read Yu Ao Tian little bit.

Silent for some time, she purposely murmured and showed her complicated expression: "Still, better I stay together with Li Mei Yun. I take my leave."

Facing with man like Yu Ao Tian there is no need to confront him directly, if go head to head with him, it would only ask to get injure. On contrary... pretending to be vulnerable perhaps will able to avoid more harm. When think about this, Yao Yao turned to leave and an instantly she feels calmer....

"Hah." Yu Ao Tian looked at the room's door that already closed, he helplessly smiled: "Really cunning Little Thing!"

It should say that, Yao Yao performance is suppressed from his expectation today, if she simply pissed off and said "Li Mei Yun stay." Perhaps it would anger Yu Ao Tian, but she prefers to take the role as "Pig eating tiger", this is one of the safety roles. Although Yu Ao Tian wanted to anger but he just cannot.

But too bad... she meets Yu Ao Tian! Everything she thought and every decision she made cannot escape from Yu Ao Tian's eyes. It only depends on Yu Ao Tian mood whether he wanted to disclose or not.

All the maids who had served Yu Ao Tian and Li Mei Yun dinner gone to have their own dinner, Yao Yao also followed them to the maid's room.

"Hey, hey, hey, do you guys know in this world what kind of woman that deserve to death?" few of the maids are grouping in dining table, Xiao Zhen spoke up to the group.

"What kind of woman?" Everyone asked curiously.

"Of course the... professional Xiao San (third wheels) who like to seduce man, this kind of woman later or sooner, her entire family will die because get thunder!"

At this moment, Yao Yao kept silent, she really did not know whether Xiao Zhen said to let her hear or not, but if Li Mei Yun does not know her relationship with Yu Ao Tian then Xiao zhen won't know it.

This kind of conversation hurt her so much, moreover the words regarding family! She anxiously put down her chopstick.

Nan Lu sensed something not good so she busying pulled Yao Yao, whispered: "Yao Yao, if this time you are leaving it means you are admitting what they said."

That's right. Nan Lu said not wrong, calm down, calm down.

"Ha, sit here and relax to watch the show." Nan Lu smiled, she added some dish to Yao Yao's bowl: "Eat more meat."

En? What did Nan Lu mean? Feel ease ... good show to see?

Still in doubt, suddenly there is maid who stood up angrily: "Hey, Xiao Zhen,

what do you mean? As I know, your Miss is the professional third wheels? I have been working here for more than two years, during that time our real Madam is the real girl friend of Master."

"That's right, I also remember this thing, but we just not really know why our Master broke up with his girlfriend, I thought all was related to your Miss, everyone had made the guess. Now you are speaking this... simply haul over the coals of your own Miss, aren't you?

"Ugh..." being attacked on two directions, Xiao Zhen can't stay still: "I. I just say something randomly."

"Nan Lu, what is going on?" Yao Yao confused seeing Nan Lu laughing happily.

She blinked her eyes: "Go out, I tell you."

Yao Yao puts down her chopstick and followed Nan Lu to garden...

"He He, just now the maids that attacking Xiao Zhen, both of them were other people's lover before, so that they must be so angry after heard what Xiao Zhen said." Both of them are sitting in long bench in the garden while looking at star in the sky, seeing to the night sky while chatting.

"Oh, that is." No wonder when she came into this villa with lover status no one said anything.

"So how is about Li Mei Yun?"

"This matter, I ever heard my sister told me..."

That time, Yu Ao Tian met Li Mei Yun on the ribbon-cutting ceremony and since then, they had encountered many times. But during that time, Master has been dating with other woman, the earlier they said who was his real girlfriend, while Li Mei Yun was in waiting-list lover, perhaps it was about / within a month, Yu Ao Tian has broke up with his girlfriend, so that Li Mei Yun replaced her.

"So that is the thing!" After heard Nan Lu explained, after Yao Yao listened to it, suddenly the shining super star that she adores turned to be dull and dim.

"So, because of it, I really not understand why you said Li Mei Yun is so pity, the most important thing is... that time Li Mei Yun had done something like scheming so that Master and his girlfriend broke up, but... our Master previous

girlfriend was dummy, she was easily to get jealous, so that even Li Mei Yun not really used high scheme still she would be broke up with Master."

He he, no matter during that time whether Li Mei Yun was third wheels or not, no matter whether she really did something under-handed alike scheming or not toward Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend, all of those had already passed, now, she is Yu Ao Tian real girlfriend, while Yao Yao indeed is Yu Ao Tian's lover, no matter what, she cannot be the one who calls the kettle black. "If this how you said…"

"En." Nan Lu titled her head to look at Yao Yao who gazing at sky.

She smiled, takes deep breathe, slowly said: "Yu Ao Tian... really perverse!"

At the moment, Nan Lu eyes are wide-open, she thought Yao Yao would talk bad about Li Mei Yun, or hate Li Mei Yun, but now...she hates Yu Ao Tian!

Without choice, Nan Lu looked at the shadow who standing inside the second floor room of villa, secretly murmured: "Big Boss Yu, this time you really bring the "Treasure"... indeed so unique ones."

"Nan Lu, what are you talking?"

"Nothing." Sweetly she smiled and suddenly she kissed Yao Yao cheek.

"Ugh?"

"I like you, Yao Yao, let's we be friend!"

"Ah?" Yao Yao pouted her mouth: "So only by this time you thought me as your friend, I have thought you as my friend since the first day I saw you, humph, I am angry!"

"HaHa, Yao Yao, don't be angry la. Actually from the first time I have thought you as my friend just..."

"Okay la, I just teasing you, Nan Lu. I am so happy that you wanted to be my friend. I also like you, Nan Lu." She sweetly smiled at Nan Lu, finally both of them become fellow good sister.

Yao Yao suddenly feels her heart is filled with warmness, at least she has friend like Nan Lu in this cold Villa...

Kiao Qiao				

## **Chapter 128**

"Hah." Villa second floor, a pair eyes is looking at two petit figures, Yu Ao Tian smiled: "So Nan Lu also able to be controlled, still...Little Thing is awesome."

"Ao Tian, what are you doing?"

"It is nothing! Mei Yun, I still have work to do, you have your rest earlier." After said, he left Li Mei Yin inside the room.

"My beloved Lu Lu, today you accompany me sleep ah?" in the third floor room, in front the door, Yao Yao coquettishly pulling Nan Lu's hand.

She cannot do anything: "Yao Yao, how can you act this coquettish? Alright, alright, I will accompany you."

"HeHe, you are really good."

Both of good sisters are sleeping together, when both of them sleep soundly...

Nan Lu opened her eyes when she felt someone entering the room and the person is Yu Ao Tian. He asked her to leave the room so that he can sleep together with Yao Yao. Before Nan Lu left the room, she request to Yu Ao Tian for not telling Yao Yao her true identity because she does not want to lose Yao Yao as her friend.

The next morning when Yao Yao still half awake, she called Nan Lu "Beloved". Someone replied back on her but it is Yu Ao Tian. When she realized a person who lying beside her is Yu Ao Tian, suddenly Xiao Zhen is knocking her room, asked her to wake up and start to work. Yao Yao is in panic, afraid Xiao Zhen will come in to her room to wake her up since Yao Yao cannot leave her bed because hugged by Yu Ao Tian. While Xiao Zhen keep on knocking and shouting from in front of her room, Yu Ao Tian who feel irritating with Xiao Zhen, suddenly shouted at her from inside the room.

Xiao Zhen surprised when she heard Yu Ao Tian's voice from Yao Yao's room so that she left as fast as she can.

Yao Yao still confused and little bit hazy because she is not fully awake. She

asked Yu Ao Tian where Nan Lu is. He answered her that he has kicked her out from the room so he can sleep with Yao Yao.

"How can you like this?" ah~ whatever, as long as Yu Ao Tian not hurt Nan Lu then everything is fine.

"Li Mei Yun, why didn't you accompany her?"

"Bao Bei, at this time, I don't want to hear you talking about her, go sleep." Yu Ao Tian cuddles Yao Yao.

Yao Yao not satisfied but he is Yu Ao Tian so just let he be. Secretly she glanced at her clock...

It is five o'clock in the morning, why Xiao Zhen had called her wake up so early?

Ah! Xiao Zhen! She must already know that Yu Ao Tian is in her room, if she really not a fool, then she already can guess her relationship with Yu Ao Tian.

What should do....

She glared at Yu Ao Tian, all because this rotten bastard, why he enjoying himself so much by being Casanova? No! Must collect the news from Feng Chen Yi\*! He is also someone professional in this field.

\*Yao Yao means that she perhaps can learn from FCY or collect information what good as playboy.

"Miss, Miss." The clock only show six in the morning, Xiao Zhen cannot stay still and rushing into Li Mei Yun's room. "It is bad, it is bad."

"What is going on, what is bad?" Li Mei Yun who is not patience open her eyes.

"Mr. Yu... Mr. Yu is in that Little Girl's room."

"What?" after hear the news, Li Mei Yun has fully wake up: "Do you know when Yu Ao Tian go there?"

"I was calling that slut girl at five o'clock. Mr. Yu has already at her room, perhaps... Mr. Yu is spending night at there."

"Damn!" when she staying at Crystal Villa (Villa where LMY stayed before), Yu Ao Tian always comes to her place three times a week, but now when she moved to here, living under same villa with Yu Ao Tian, he even...go to accompany that

Little Girl.

"This must be stopped, she cannot let this thing continue, afraid later or sooner, Yu Ao Tian will seduce by that Little Girl."

"Miss, if compare the beauty, that cheap Little Girl can't compete with you. I thought Mr. Yu just feel she is something new, refreshing so he playing with her. If you really hate her so much, I can help you to get rid of her, hah, she only 19 years old little girl, she can't be good enough to fight with you. What do you think?"

"Heh, so, I never thought that kind of Little Girl as my opponent, but... she is eyesore in front of my eyes! I should think the way to kick her out from this villa!" Li Mei Yun sneered.

\*\*

The news of Lan Du Group who had lost it credibility have been almost three days, but the PR of Lan Du Group still say nothing and choosing to avoid the media. To view from the public relation opinion, the creditability crisis of Lan Du Group is extremely give negative impact, if this keep on continuing, Lang Du Group will go bankrupt in matter on time.

The Finance Department of Berson Group.

"Ok, it done!" Yao Yao has been so busy for the entire morning to write reports, it almost afternoon and she is so happy. She is standing not far from her colleague, "Xiao Qiao, do you have time? I have something to ask for your help, can you go out for the moment?"

Xiao Qiao looked at Yao Yao: "Xiao Luo, why are you asking me to go out?"

"Uhm, this, I want... you to help me on something." She smiled.

"What?"

"I want you to hand over this to Xia Ren Liang." She said by giving the document to Xiao Qiao.

Xiao Qiao eyes coldly swept Yao Yao: "Business plan? You go to hand over to Xia Ren Liang by yourself, why must me?"

If she really can do it by herself why must she ask Xiao Qiao to do it, moreover

she can't let other to do it. For her, only Xiao Qiao is the best candidate to do this.

When first time she joined the Finance Department she had heard the rumor about Xia Ren Liang who has good impression about Xiao Qiao, but unfortunately Xiao Qiao is a type of girl who weight money more compare to personality (Materialistic girl). So that, there is no progressed between their relationship.

Today, Xia Ren Liang is back to his own status, Xiao Qiao is girl who loves money, she might be used this opportunity to get close to him. "Xiao Qiao, you perhaps have heard regarding my relationship with Xia Ren Liang, to be honest, I have already have boyfriend, my boyfriend was extremely angry when he knew about this matter, he does not want me to have contact with Xia Ren Liang, but Xia Ren Liang ever helped me before, seeing his situation, I tried to make business plan for him so that he can go out from the crisis." After she said, Yao Yao rolled her eyes: "If this business plan is sent by the most beautiful lady from Finance Department, according to Xia Ren Liang character, he must be moved, right?"

"En? I understood what you mean, Xiao Luo. You just want to give me credit for your hard work, am I right?"

Yao Yao nodding her head.

Unknown, Xiao Qiao coldly said: "Hah, Xia Ren Liang understands very well what kind of woman I am, he can come to Berson to work and he hate materialistic woman like me, do you think by asking to hand over this business plan, he will be moved? Childish!"

Seeing Xiao Qiao wanted to leave, Yao Yao hurried stop her: "Xiao Qiao, perhaps you misunderstanding my meaning. The things that I pointed not about love feeling." She smiled: "You must understand Xia Ren Liang very well compare to me, based on his gentle character, if you help him, he won't treat you unfairly. To say this is no cost trading, at most you just doing simple errands, but if it is me...I won't refuse it." Yao Yao gave the business plan to Xiao Qiao and left.

Looking at the petit figure who is disappeared, suddenly Xiao Qiao can feel that Yao Yao is pig who eats tiger (appear to be weak but actually strong), first

impression that given by this little girl is, she looks so innocent, adorable, but at this time she looked so cunning. Especially her pair of big eyes that able to read others heart, inside her eyes there flashing sly luster, still cannot judge the book from the cover.

"Xiao Luo, I decided to help you!"

When heard the voice from her back, Yao Yao stopped her footstep, turned and gave her big smile.

At this moment she really is proving herself as winner and keeps progressing to be mature...

"This afternoon, Lan Du Group who has avoided media for three days, now is having their press conference."

"CEO Xia, please clarify why Feng Group is using B grade material for Nan Sha project?" The reporter asked during Lan Du Group press conference in Television.

Xia Ren Liang gently smiles, he took the microphone while giving his answer: "If someone understands about architecture must know that the Feng group's project in Nan Sha is five string lute irrigating storey house. So that, their building must use a softer material in order to ensure the highest quality. When our representative realized the architecture diagram for the Nan Sha project, at the first time we are prepared A grade material but changed to B grade material because it more suitable.

"May I ask CEO Xia, did Lan Du Group has negotiated with Feng Group before regarding the Nan Sha project?"

"There is thing not to be say like that. So far there is no urgency. Lan Du Group had promised to deliver the material within three days, but when realized the project of General Manager Feng not suitable to use Grade A material, it has been realized on the second day, and then we still wanted to keep our promise, and also we need to change the material that suitable to be used for Nan Sha project within three days, so that, we were too busy and forgot to inform General Manager Feng, this is really Lan Du Group mistake."

"CEO Xia, did Lan Du Group ever change A grade material to B grade material

before without noticing other party?"

"HaHa, our Lan Du Group always work based on creditability and trust, if there is need to use Grade B material then we will change it. When there really need to use Grade A material we will also used Grade A. just to let know, the different cost between Grade B and Grade A material only by one percentage point so for this little amount of money, we don't want to gamble on our company creditability and also trust."

When Xia Ren Liang is patiently answered all the questioned asked by the reporters, the host (person who take charge of the press conference) simply said: "Alright, all the media friends, our CEO Xia has answered all your questions. To summary, regarding about the replacement of the material indeed is misunderstanding, if there really who need to be responsible, we only can say it must be our Lan Du Group's employees, actually if really wanted to use material Grade A it not something must, simply to say this might get bigger harm to Feng Group's project, at the time perhaps Feng Group side might having trust and creditability problem too. Okay, today we are ended until here. Thank you for media friends."

The television turn off, Long Ye who is inside recreation room of Berson Group is playing billiard ball: "Uhm, not in." he shrugged his shoulder and smiled devilish to Yu Ao Tian: "The crisis in Lan Du Group only last for three days, I thought they are going to announce bankruptcy, but who knows that their PR department really good in handling the matters. You say, Xia Yu that old fox really because responsible for Feng Chen Yi project and then he changed the material?"

"Bamn"

Yu Ao Tian hits one billiard ball. "Hehe, everyone is doing the business, Xia Yu, his way on doing business, don't you know it? If he not pissed off Feng Chen Yi perhaps Feng Chen Yi would closed one of his eyes, but he..."

"But he made Feng Chen Yi that strong opponent anger. Ha Ha" Long Ye continued what Yu Ao Tian wanted to say, keep on continuing: "But, Feng Chen Yi that brat quite merciless, he even thought this kind of way to control his opponent. Unfortunately... unfortunately..." he shook his head.

"Unfortunately what?"

"HeHe, unfortunately Feng Chen Yi met stronger opponent. Just afraid after today, Lan Du Group reputation will boast as one most responsible companies, besides that, they won't go bankrupt but their stocks will be raised. To be honest, Ao Tian, I really wanted to pay high and dig the person who solved Lan Du Group crisis, come to work at Berson."

"Hah. No need. The person who solve Lan Du Group crisis currently is working in our company."

"Uh?" Long Ye dumbfounded, faster he looked at Yu Ao Tian: "Did Lan Du Group crisis solution have relation with Xiao Meng Li?"

"It's indeed her!"

"Impossible..." Long Ye frowned, excited he walked toward Yu Ao Tian: "Actually what Xiao Meng Li study? Why she knows everything, she even understands about PR job in solving problems?"

### **Chapter 128**

Facing with Long Ye questions, Yu Ao Tian isn't immediately answered him, he silent for moment and then slowly said: "Law!"

At the moment, Long Ye smile disappeared from his face...

"Wo Kao, in internet there are lots evaluation regarding Lan Du Group, their stocks also rise, Lan Du Group stock has been raising to the normal." Inside Finance Department everyone is discussing about this matters.

Yao Yao who sitting in her place smiling, while her eyes locked at Xiao Qiao who sat not far from her.

Xiao Qiao also smiled back to Yao Yao.

Actually, in this world the people who is easiest to be used are those who love money, and also the most cannot dependable are people who love money, when she decided to choose Xiao Qiao she sure 100% that Xiao Qiao would take happily this opportunity and gladly to accept this way out.

"Xiao Luo, good bye."

"Sister Li, sister Zhang, good bye." She has put her resignation letter to Berson group HRD, bid her good bye to all her colleagues when they standing in bus stop after working time ended.

"Let yesterday as nothing, now you are in front of my eyes..." suddenly her phone ringing.

"Hello?"

"You come to my apartment!" the person who called her is Feng Chen Yi cold voice.

Yao Yao frowned: "Why, why are you looking for me?"

"If you are not coming, I will try another way to reverse the current situation!"

Rotten bastard! Yao Yao understood what Feng Chen Yi meant, she impatiently said: "I understood, understood!" she hurried hung the phone call, she stopped taxi and straightly go to Feng Chen Yi' apartment.

"Oh it is you." She just arrived in front of Feng Chen Yi's apartment, a man with red hair stood in front of her and blocked her way.

She looked carefully to that red hair man who has playboy appearance, she tried to remember where she ever met this man before. Oh, that's right! He is Feng Chen Yi's friend, it seems his name is Ou Yang Zi Xuan.

"Hello."

"Hello your fart." Ou Yang Zi Xuan coldly looked at Yao Yao: "All because of you, I almost break off (friendship) with Feng Chen Yi."

"Ah?" what is that to do with her?

"Speak, you quickly reconciled with Feng Chen Yi, at least to save my energy and not wasting both my time (to scheme you) and my drug you (lust drug), kidnapping, but at last I finally ended up in terrible bad."

What was Ou Yang Zi Xuan said? Drug? Kidnap? Kidnap? Yao Yao thought about something, panic asked: "That night was you who kidnapped me?"

"That's right, I have used all my effort to send you off to Feng Chen Yi's bed, but who knows that brat not grateful to me he even scolded me, all because of you!"

So that night she lost the memory because she was drugged, even Yao Yao is a fool she also knew what drug he meant, but she didn't know that...

That night, she didn't know what happen between her and Feng Chen Yi. Whatsoever, everything is not important now.

"You are deserved!"

"Eh? You are little girl but have sarcastic mouth!" Ou Yang Zi Xuan glared at Yao Yao.

She coldly rolled her eyes: "stay out, I want to enter the elevator."

"I don't want to stay out from your way, except, you reconciled with Feng

Chen Yi."

How can in this earth there are another person who more scoundrel compare to Long Qi?

"Stay away or not? If you are not stay away then I will leave."

"Uh..." Ou Yang Zi Xuan thinks carefully, this little girl can show up in here must because she wanted to meet with Feng Chen Yi, if she really leaving, afraid that he won't forgive me.

"Whatever, you follow me or not to look for him."

She glared Ou Yang Zi Xuan, stepping inside the elevator, but at the moment the elevator door closed, her cold expression changed and showed little bit guilty.

"Feng Chen Yi, why didn't you tell me if you didn't do it!"

Feng Chen Yi you are too much, I never thought that you would to this to me. Now you are simply a rotten bastard!"

Think carefully, she never asked Feng Chen Yi whether he did it or not, but she straightly swearing on him.

That guy does not like to explain himself to others, moreover she had cursed him...

"Bad, I have mistaken Feng Chen Yi for long time..." she hit her head hardly, if that time she could little bit calm perhaps she won't mistaken Feng Chen Yi, but... once she meets Feng Chen Yi she never could be calm down.

Should I ask for forgiveness?

Forget it, if I apologizing, based on his character he must say me many not nice thing, and finally both of us must arguing again.

Yao Yao initially can guess this tragic scene: "Oh, still better to do something to makeup with him later."

"Dong."

The elevator stopped, she directly goes to Feng Chen Yi's house Knocking sound.

The apartment's door open, Feng Chen Yi coldly opened the door with automatic button: "Come in."

"Say in here whatever you want to say."

"Come in!"

Pei! Can he use little bit gentle and soft voice to ask her coming in to his house? Such bossy, everyday he also uses that kind of facial nerve paralysis expression. She remembered first time she met him, his facial nerve paralysis expression even worst, Yao Yao would never forget that scene...

That time she was 13 years old while he only 16 years old.

Her first day came to School in Japan, that time she must went to report herself in school administration department, but that day she was late. The main gate had already closed, so she decided to climb the wall.

Six years ago her height less than 150cm, climbing to the wall was harder compare to scale the sky. "Hey cha..." finally she able to climb over the wall, she straddled over the wall, her eyes looked down.

As seen, there was man with tall figure lying on the grass ground. That time, the 13 years old Yao Yao was attracted by this man outer appearance.

"Hey, you little girl cannot straddle over the wall." The school security was trying pulled her.

Damn! Just because seeing good looking guy, if she got caught then she would be deadmeat, Yao Yao who panic hurried jumped, but who knew that she fell down.

Thump

She fell onto that man's top, she was so close with that man. She slumped and completely forgot that she still pressed on that man.

Suddenly the man opened his eyes, he has brilliant pair of eyes, but when he blinking his eyes, it emitting cold vibes, suddenly Yao Yao imagination gone, simply to say she afraid of the man's cold eyesight.

"I am sorry."

She hurried to stand up from that man's body, but without she knew the man grabbed her waist, an instant... that man... used his strength to...

"Dong"

All her body was hit into the tree behind them.

"Pain..." she gently stroking her back head, angrily and glared at the man: "Hey, senior, I have apologized to you, why you pushed me so hard?"

That man said nothing, slowly stood up, he expressionless left her.

However, the most impressed Yao Yao was... this man never looked at her from the start to the end, he has cold aura and vibes.

That man who dressed in high school uniform was called Feng Chen Yi. That was the first time they met, that time he gave her feeling as handsome man, cold, have facial nerve paralysis and...hatred!

Until today, that good time had passed for six years, that hatred senior now is turned to be her Ex-boyfriend, that year he was mature but now he even be mature. While others, there is nothing changed.

She followed Feng Chen Yi get inside the room; she faster walked in front of him: "I only have one hour, if you have words to say, hurried!"

Feng Chen Yi lifts up his head and swept Yao Yao with cold gazed: "Did the Lan Du Group draft speech statement wrote by you?"

How.. can Feng Chen Yi knows? Yao Yao surprised and dumbfounded.

Still that words, Feng Chen Yi always believed and convinced she has miraculous ability. So that when Lan Du Group holding press conference, he already made a guess that draft speech statement was made by Yao Yao.

"Didn't you say you are not care? Why did you help?"

She frowned, sighed, calmly said: "Feng Chen Yi, I really don't have any relation with Xia Yu. But... his son ever helped me before. So that I..."

"Hah, Yao Yao, you are too awesome, you even climbed up both the old and the young?"

What? Feng Chen Yi what did he says? She saw his face that mocking her, Yao

Yao pissed off: "Feng Chen Yi, you are rotten bastard!"

"That is right. I am rotten bastard. But..." suddenly he grabbed Yao Yao's waist, force to embraces her: "At least I know who my real opponent is. How about you? You even joined other to fight me!"

It was not that, it was not that. That draft of speech won't affect Feng Group business, when she decided to help Xia Ren Liang she had carefully thought about Feng Group's side. She lift up her head, looked at the man who still hold her tightly, she moved: "Let me free, Feng Chen Yi."

"You want me to free you?" Feng Chen Yi pinched her jaw, his lips curved upward: "HeHe, I want to keep this posture for the entire night, what do you think?"

What is he thinking? Does he not think to let me go home tonight? Then Yu Ao Tian...

No! No! She really does not want to experience that deathly situation anymore.

"Feng Chen Yi, are you crazy? Let me go!"

Feng Chen Yi silent, but Yao Yao who still in his embraces turned be panic, she even feels suffocating.

"Feng Chen Yi... let go!" she almost crazy, if earlier she knew he would act like this she must not coming!

"Are you so in hurry to leave?"

"Hah!" finally he gave her responsed and Yao Yao nodding.

"Well, kiss me, kiss me and then I will let you go!"

"You..." Feng Chen Yi you are real rotten bastard! Yao Yao furrowed her brow with complicatedness expression, she knows Feng Chen Yi character very well, if she does not do as he asks, perhaps she cannot go home tonight.

Her body stiffens, Yao Yao bites her lips, slowly lift up her head, stand on her tiptoe, her lips comes closer to his...

#### 129 - 130



## **Chapter 129 – 130**

"Pounding" "pounding"

Yao Yao heart beats so fast, she even cannot gasps her breath, although she hates, but even she hates, but still could not cover deep inside her heart that she still loves him. It clearly she has told herself, decided to stop love him, but because Ou Yang Zi Xuan who ravel the misunderstanding, she felt little bit guilty and trying to find excuses for herself to start over with Feng Chen Yi.

Feeling, this kind of thing is really scary, once it tainted as if addicted to drug and difficult to quit and it will be very hard! Cannot help she closed her eyes, the atmosphere inside the house freeze.

That cold expression of Feng Chen Yi suddenly faded away, he hugs tightly her body into his embraces slowly turned to cuddle her, at the moment he almost touches her lips, he also slowly closes his eyes.

But just in moment, suddenly Yao Yao stopped...

No, cannot, she cannot do this, although she wanted to go home and then she needed to kiss Feng Chen Yi, but for Yu Ao Tian this is kind of betrayal attitude.

She had promised Yu Ao Tian she would not betray him, although there are no loves between them and again it does not mean she can betray him, and today...

What did she do?

Just now at the moment Feng Chen Yi wanted to kiss her, she clearly knew and felt that she wasn't compromised him but... it was involving feeling and she wanted it...

Why? Yao Yao what did you think? You have love Feng Chen Yi to the stage you cannot control yourself anymore, forget your rational mind? She felt guilty looked down, her eyes showed desire but also puzzled.

"Kiss me, does it so hard?"

Suddenly raised her head, facing Feng Chen Yi cold pair of eyes, she took deep breathe: "Sorry, I am sorry."

"Why are you saying sorry to me?"

That's right why she must say sorry to Feng Chen Yi? What is she sorry for him?

In mess, now Yao Yao really cannot separate her status, actually she is Yu Ao Tian's lover or still Feng Chen Yi's girlfriend? Both of them had already broke up for more than 2 years, why every time, she felt as if she turned back to 2 years ago?

She must wake up!

She bites her lips, her facial expression stern, she pushes away Feng Chen Yi, without wait for his reaction, she hurried run away, she wants leaving that place run straightly to the front door.

"Stay still! Luo Yao Yao, you stop!"

She didn't want to hear anything now. She only wanted to leave.

Feng Chen Yi made fist, hurried to chase after her...

At this time...

"ding dong ding dong"

"Chen Yi, are you at home?"

Li Ruo Ting voice comes from outside the front door, pierce into Yao Yao's ears, she panic and her eyes looked at Feng Chen Yi.

Yao Yao looked alike little white rabbit that got shock, she rushed into wardrobe near bed, and then she hides inside.

At this time, Feng Chen Yi has already opened the front door.

"Chen Yi, so you are at home."

"Ruo Ting, why you come?" he asked while his eyes are looking at the wardrobe.

Li Ruo Ting smiles sweetly and hugging onto Feng Chen Yi's back: "Chen Yi, do you still angry with me? I have reflected myself, you don't angry to me, okay?"

So Feng Chen Yi and Li Ruo Ting quarreled, ah, together with this kind of bossy and domineering man, who can stay long? Yao Yao who is hiding inside the wardrobe can see clearly both of the man and woman.

Seeing Feng Chen Yi cold eyes are looking at Li Ruo Ting: "Oh? Did you really reflect on yourself?"

"En En."

"Well, prove it to me."

"Prove?" Li Ruo Ting does not understand what Feng Chen Yi means, but she immediately turned to her coquettish self, smiled and passionately cuddling Feng Chen Yi and then plasters her lips to his...

This moment, Yao Yao who is hiding inside the wardrobe, he face turned dark, she feels the space becomes narrow and also no oxygen.

It feels uncomfortable, suffocating, painful ...

She feels hurt and fists her hands, her nail embedded into her palm, one by one bead of tears falling down from her eyes.

Strange, didn't they already break up? But why now she feels she got back to 2 years ago, the time when she caught Feng Chen Yi with Li Ruo Ting, the pain still feels same.

"Ruo Ting, you are so aggressive." Feng Chen Yi ended the kiss.

"Is this bad?"

"HeHe" his cold eyes gazing at wardrobe, coldly said: "This is much better compare to someone!"

"Hah? Chen Yi, what... you mean?"

"Nothing, Ruo Ting, today I have important thing need to do, you back first, I will contact you in other day."

"Hah? Whatever, okay, I wait for your call."

Sending off Li Ruo Ting who showed disappointed expression, Feng Chen Yi rushed to wardrobe, hurried he opened the wardrobe' door...

Yao Yao crying face is clearly penetrating into his eyes: "What are you crying for?"

He said that words coldly, she bites her lips, there still tears trace in her eyes, slowly said: "Doesn't this what you want?" one step jumped out from the wardrobe, she emotionally hit his chest said: "You did it, you indeed did it, Feng Chen Yi, you clearly know that I ...." Suddenly she stopped.

Feng Chen Yi caught her wrist:"Understand about you what?"

Glared!

Her heart pounding, her vision blurred looking at Feng Chen Yi's face, did she... what she wanted to say? What to say...

"You clearly know that I still love you, why you still kissed Li Ruo Ting in front of me?"

"Yao Yao, tell me, you love me, I want you to say that you love me!" Feng Chen Yi who is calmed suddenly emotional, after he finished his sentences, his lips pressed her lips in domineering way.

"No! Don't! Feng Chen Yi, don't kiss me with your lips that kissed by other woman!"

"Pa"

Feng Chen Yi gets slapped on his face.

His mood changed cold at sudden.

Silent for moment, she swallowed her saliva, trying control herself: "Feng Chen Yi, I love you. But... it was 2 years ago. Now...I don't love you anymore! Leave behind only hatred! This, do this what you want?" she turned back, but her tears still flowing.

Yao Yao understand very well how fake her words, if she really does not love Feng Chen Yi anymore why must she has objection when she saw Li Ruo Ting kissed Feng Chen Yi? If she really not loves him anymore how could she not able to control herself every time they meet and it is affecting her mood? If she really not loves him anymore why must she panic when she heard Li Ruo Ting's voice and hide inside the wardrobe?

This things, didn't because she diffident? More she is trying to pretend not loves him, more clearly she showed him that she actually loves him so much.

Ha. It was not the first time she spotted man and woman kissing, moreover the kissing scene was happening two years ago, but when she saw Yu Ao Tian passionately kissing with Li Mei Yun, she felt awkward and guilty towards Li Mei Yun.

But, when she saw Feng Chen Yi accepted Li Ruo Ting kissed, her heart is so hurt, it feels as if torn into pieces.

This thing, even she wanted to escape, she really can't escape from, she only can bit by bit, using her hard work to conceal...

"Peng"

The sound of door being smashed by Yao Yao...

Inside the big apartment only left Feng Chen Yi alone, at this time his eyes showed regretful, "Actually what did I do?"

He has thought to protect her, but every time they meet it becomes kind of hurting each other, furthermore the ending always...

She hurt, he even hurt!

"Ring Ring Ring"

Slowly he control himself, pick up his phone: "Hello."

"General Manager Feng, as you know, Lan Du Group is in process to turn back their position, should we takes the second plan, or directly make Lan Du Group go bankrupt?"

"No need..." there is not important anymore, although Lan Du Group bankrupt, Yao Yao will stubbornly comes to help them to solve, at the last, it will

become he and her battlefield...

Yu Ao Tian's Villa.

"It clearly decided to apologizing to him because blame him wrongly but at last it turned to be battlefield, perhaps this is what called as fate. Uh!" Yao Yao sighed. Before she opened the door, she used her strength to pat her face with both of her hands, do not let Yu Ao Tian found out, do not let Yu Ao Tian found out.

She forces herself to smile, she pushed open the villa door, and then...

Inside the living room there are strange atmosphere, it gives her chills.

As seen, all the maids who are inside the living room showing stern facial expression, while Li Mei Yun also looks so strict sitting on the sofa, while in front of her standing Nan Lu.

"What is going on?" Yao Yao secretly asked to one of the maid near her, with very low voice.

"Today Miss Li Mei Yun is losing her bracelet, and then that bracelet found inside Nan Lu's room."

What? Did she mean Nan Lu steal thing? Impossible! Nan Lu is impossible stealing.

"Nan Lu, according to you how we solve this matter, should we make report to police?" Xiao Zhen is angrily asking her.

Nan Lu head looking down, she says nothing.

"Do you think it solve with silent? Well, I will make report to police."

"Wait!" Yao Yao faster walking beside Nan Lu.

Xiao Zhen glanced: "Ha, you, what do you want?"

"You say Nan Lu stealing something, where the evidence?" Yao Yao held Nan Lu's hand, coldly asking Xiao Zhen who standing in front of her.

"The stolen item was found inside her room, still needs other evidence? Just to let you know that bracelet is the most treasure by my Miss."

Her eyes glanced at Li Mei Yun who still keeps quiet, she frowned, she didn't

know whether Xiao Zhen had made report to Li Mei Yun or not about this morning incident, it's feel so awkward.

"So that means, you are not witnessing by your own eyes, seeing Nan Lu stole the thing?"

"You... what do you mean? Xiao Luo!"

"Hah, very simple, I would like to ask who is so stupid to steal thing and hide it in her own room? Since the stolen item was found in Nan Lu's room, but it does not mean must be Nan Lu who stole that item. It likely, if the stolen item is in your hand, then I can say you are stealing it, can't I?" Yao Yao rolled her eyes and looked at everyone who dumfounded after hearing what she said.

Xiao Zhen eyes meets Li Mei Yun's eyes, she understands that she cannot win over Yao Yao.

"Miss Zhen, I want to ask you, who was the first person found this item?"

"It was me."

"Well, I would like to ask all of you, who saw Nan Lu stealing this bracelet?"

Everyone is looking each other, most of them are shaking their head means no one.

"This is so simple, this is called as not verified evidence, Miss Zhen even you make report to the police, the police won't process your report, the most important..." She glancing at the bracelet in Xiao Zhen's hands, helplessly laughed: "The bracelet is imprinted your finger print."

"Hah? This." Xiao Zhen panic looked at the bracelet in her hands.

Yao Yao keeps laughing: "Well, others finger print might have disappeared, furthermore this case won't be process by police."

Xiao Zhen feels as if she being fooled, she paused for moment and then roared: "Xiao Luo, you are this villa maid, this is none your business, right?"

"Yes, I am indeed this house maid. But, I can't see Nan Lu being accused wrongly, right?"

"I am not accusing her wrongly, the bracelet was found out in her room. That

means she is the thief!"

This Xiao Zhen, actually she understands law or not? The law does not recognize such importune debate methods! Yao Yao helplessly frowned: "Miss Zhen..."

"Let it be, Yao Yao." This time, Nan Lu who keeps quiet for long time suddenly spoke, she pulled Yao Yao hands, whispered: "It is so obviously that she trying to set the trap for me, whatever you say is useless, later the problem will be solved."

What Nan Lu means?

But why Xiao Zhen is setting up trap for Nan Lu?

"See, Xiao Luo, you see that Nan Lu understood herself very well." Xiao Zhen confidently walking to her side, smile sweetly, with low voice: "Yesterday, did you sleep with Mr. Yu?"

"Shocked!"

Yao Yao heart tightens, she nervously glancing at Li Mei Yun who is not far from her, she whispered: "No!"

"Still want to deny? Rest assured, I won't tell my Miss, anyway, Mr. Yu goes to many women's place, my Miss has known it and closed one eyes. But, you are so young but so wild, Mr. Yu is older by 8 years from you, right? What is your purpose? Because he handsome? Because his capability? Or because his money?"

"No! No! I don't..." Let it be, even there is nothing between us, it indeed that I sleep with him (*Yao Yao means real sleeping together in one bed not sleep as having sex*). Explain too much, there is useless. But why suddenly Xiao Zhen asked?

Unlikely...

"Miss Zhen, although you hate me but why you are accused Nan Lu?"

"Ha, I just want to help my Miss venting anger, who asked her to be your best friend?"

As expected Nan Lu was entrapped, she never thought that she would be

burden for Nan Lu. Slowly she looked at Nan Lu who expressionless, she whispered: "I, I am sorry."

"Sst, don't say sorry Yao Yao, now, you need to keep silent too. Now!"

"But, what will happen to you?"

Nan Lu faintly smiled: "reassured, I, nothing will happen to me."

Why Nan Lu so confident? But if Xiao Zhen really have heart to entrap her, she must difficult to get away?

"Hah, Nan Lu, you are looked so calm. This, Luo Yao Yao, if you want to protect Nan Lu, you must leave this house immediately. If you leave, I can ask mercy from my Miss to forgive you, on this way, everything will be only misunderstanding, how about it?"

Leaving this house? There are many times she thinks to leave this house, okay? But will Yu Ao Tian let her to do so? "Zhen..."

"Sst." When Yao Yao wanted to speak, Nan Lu smiled, she closed her mouth but gesturing something in her hand.

So she just keeps silent as she asked to by Nan Lu.

"Well, no matter what you say, Xiao Luo, the stolen item has found inside Nan Lu's room, if Nan Lu doesn't say anything then I will go to report to police!" Xiao Zhen has already back to her normal voice, she turned to look at Li Mei Yun: "Miss, report to police?"

"Do as you like." Li Mei Yun expressionless said.

Xiao Zhen is glancing at Nan Lu and also Yao Yao, slowly walking to the telephone.

And then... at this moment...

#### 131 - 132

Shoc	ked			

### **Chapter 131 - 132**

"Peng"

Suddenly the villa's door opened. Mo Xue Tong rushed to inside.

"Miss Mo." All the maid saw Mo Xue Tong immediately gave deep bow (90degree bowing) while their eyes open-wide.

She gazed at Nan Lu, and coldly her eyes swept to Li Mei Yun: "What is going on?"

"Miss Mo, Hello, this maid has stolen my Miss..."

"Pa"

When all of people not yet reacting, Mo Xue Tong has presented Xiao Zhen with slap: "I don't talk to you!"

So cool...

Yao Yao who standing aside dumbstruck, Mo Xue Tong really cool, simply to say she gives feeling woman with man spirit.

"Miss Mo, there is time that Xiao Zhen not really good in speaking, but at least she is maid that I brought to here with me, even you wanted to hit dog, you must see the master, right?" Li Mei Yun who is keeping silent for this time spoke.

Mo Xue Tong eyes flashed coldly, slowly she walked in front of her: "Miss Li, now I can speak clearly to you, if you cannot learn well how to teach your maid, well I can make suggestion to Yu Ao Tian to change his girlfriend!" after said, she sneered, her finger pointed to Nan Lu who standing not far: "She is my little

sister, in the future, please take care of her. I take my leave!"

"Miss Mo, have a safe trip." All the maids are bowing to Mo Xue Tong when she left.

Seeing Li Mei Yun expression that keep on changing, nervous to anxious, she has notice Mo Xue Tong as her toughest love rival, and today, Mo Xue Tong even dared to spoke that way to her, this time she has no choice but to suffer in silence.

"Xiao Zhen, go back to my room."

"Miss, how about Nan Lu?"

Her pair of eyes flashed, she gritting her teeth: "Didn't you hear what Miss Mo says? She is Miss Mo little sister. So that, this matter just let it." After she said, Li Mei Yun went to second floor with Xiao Zhen.

"Ha, Nan Lu, Nan Lu, have you already know that Miss Mo will come to help you?" They are also followed to leave after that two person gone, finally the living room atmosphere back to the normal, Yao Yao excitedly asked Nan Lu.

She smiled, nodded: "Yes. When Xiao Zhen said that I stole the bracelet, I have already known that she trying to trap me, so that I gave phone call to Miss Mo."

No wonder Nan Lu looked so calm. "Oh yeah, is Miss Mo really your elder sister, but why you address her as Miss Mo?"

"Did you know her in Japan?"

"Yao Yao, is there a problem?"

"HeHe, actually I ever studied in Japan, I just back not long ago."

"Ah?" once Nan Lu heard, she little bit shocked: "So that you ever stayed in Japan, perhaps you ever heard about... Yu Long Group?"

"I ever heard it, I also know that Yu Ao Tian is Yu Long Group's Big Boss." Yao Yao said, sweetly smiled.

Nan Lu who standing beside her extremely shocked, Yu Ao Tian has hide his identity as Mafia since two years ago when he backed to China, even Li Mei Yun does not know his real identity, but never thought Yao Yao knows all about him.

"Yao Yao, since you have knew Big Boss Yu real identity, aren't you afraid of him?"

"How can I not afraid of him? But..." she smiled, she sighed: "Get used, so not that scared anymore." The most important that, even she afraid there is no use because she has signed the lover contract agreement with Yu Ao Tian, no choice.

"Yao Yao... I want to tell you my secret." Suddenly Nan Ma showed worries expression.

Yao Yao blinking her big eyes: "What secret? What kind of secret?"

"If, if I do also Yu Long's people, will you... want to be friend with me?"

"Ah? Nan Lu, so you are also Yu Long's people?"

Yao Yao surprised, Nan Lu hurried said: "I, I just say for example."

"HiHi, I just teasing you, Nan Lu. For me, I have admitted you as my best friend, so that, no matter what is your status I really not care." She calmly said, hugged Nan Lu.

This time, all the heavy stone and burden seems lift up from Nan Lu heart, she is afraid if Yao Yao knows about her Mafia background and be afraid of her, she might ignore her. It seems she has underestimated Yao Yao "power of acceptable". At same time, she really curious of Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao relation.

"Thank You, Yao Yao."

"What to thanks, if really need to say thank you it must me because I can meet friend like you in here. Oh yeah, Nan Lu, I can sense that Miss Li seems to be afraid of Miss Mo, why?"

"HeHe, not only Li Mei Yun but normally all Big Boss Yu's women afraid of Miss Mo. After all, Big Boss Yu treats Miss Mo differently." After said, Nan Lu suddenly felt as if she said something wrong: "Uh, Yao Yao please don't feel get offense, I mean nothing, it does not mean that Big Boss Yu likes..."

"You rest assured. Nan Lu, I will never get jealous." She rolled her eyes, she mysteriously blinking her eyes toward Nan Lu: "Let me tell my secret too, actually... I not even love Yu Ao Tian, not even one bit!"

"What?" Nan Lu dumbstruck, the person who dares to say this perhaps only

Yao Yao. But another second, her pair of eyes flashed, she felt there is footstep from the front door.

"Really, so that Nan Lu I told you, everything regarding Yu Ao Tian, I really won't get...uh" she only spoke half, Yao Yao mouth closed by Nan Lu's hand.

Nan Lu... what wrong with her? She confused to see Nan Lu nervous expression, frowned, cold sweat falling down: "Nan Lu why you close my mouth? I haven't done with my words. Humph, you say how could I not get jealous? If I not jealous it is strange! Seeing those women with Yu Ao Tian, I really pissed off. Think carefully, you say why I must love this kind of man? He really not loyal, really makes me pissed off!"

"Uh." Nan Lu really cannot think how the hell Yao Yao brain works this fast, she even cannot differentiate which ones is sincere from her heart and not, or is she has already knew the person who standing in front of door... is Yu Ao Tian?

"Bao Bei!"

Yu, Big Boss Yu." Nan Lu nervous looked at door direction.

Yao Yao who backed the door suddenly her face turned dark, hehehehe, so Yu Ao Tian is really standing in front of door...

She turned, gave him dry-smile: "Yu, Yu Ao Tian, You, when you back?"

"When I back, didn't you already know it?" Yu Ao Tian smiled deviously, slowly walking toward her.

Her body is shaking, her small hand is made fist, when Yu Ao Tian stopped in front of her, her heart as if stop beating.

"Bao Bei, you... really smart!" after said, Yu Ao Tian caressed her face, turned his back and get into his room.

Yao Yao, whole person relief and limped on her bed: "Scared me... really scare me to death!"

While Nan Lu who always besides looking at Yao Yao who body is trembling, and she back and gain herself...

#### **Chapter 133**

Nan Lu seems vaguely figure out the relationship between two people; at the same time also know...

Yao Yao is types of person who takes role as pig eats tiger. This kind of person is safest to stay beside Big Boss Yu!

"Plak"

Inside Li Mei Yun's room, Xiao Zhen gets slapped.

"Miss..."

"Don't call me Miss, I don't have idiot maid like you! You dared to do this cheap trap, makes that Little Girl sensed that I have already knew her relationship with Yu Ao Tian, you ruin my entire plan!"

Li Mei Yun is extremely pissed off with Xiao Zhen. She venting all her anger toward Xiao Zhen, although Xiao Zhen tried to explain her attitude but Li Mei Yun does not care. She only wanted the result and this time she failed not only to Yao Yao but also Mo Xue Tong.

When Li Mei Yun is still "teaching" her maid and got informed that Yu Ao Tian have already at home but he went to Yao Yao's room. Her anger exploded and not long after that, her room knocked by Yu Ao Tian. Seeing Yu Ao Tian coming to her room after visiting Yao Yao's room, Li Mei Yun expression little bit dim. But still she must sweetly welcoming Yu Ao Tian.

Xiao Zhen takes her leave and let both of them alone inside the room. When Yu Ao Tian and Li Mei Yun inside the room, they did the usual night "exercise" but this time, Yu Ao Tian pained Li Mei Yun so much.

She begged Yu Ao Tian to stop because her body cannot endure anymore but Yu Ao Tian not care because he remembered Yao Yao conversation just now about...

"You rest assured. Nan Lu, I will never get jealous."

So the bad impact of Yao Yao words are fell to Li Mei Yun. But at same time, it disturbing Yao Yao and makes her get insomnia. The main problem is Yu Ao Tian and Li Mei Yun doing their night exercise in quite long period and so noisy. Li Mei Yun kept on Moaning for the entire night and her voice is super loud. So, finally at 1 AM Yao Yao could have her sleep.

\*\*

The next morning...

Yao Yao who just goes out from her room with dark circle around her under eyes meets Li Mei Yun who has already sat on sofa inside living room: "Good morning Miss Li."

"Going for work?" Li Mei Yun asked with smiling face.

Yao Yao nodding her head, awkwardly she looked at Li Mei Yun's eyes, sweating! She recalled last night moaned... only by listened and little bit YY (imagination), he face already blushed, really awkward!

"You really not easy, on morning you are going to office and after go home you also need to work in here at night. Does Long Qi okay with this?"

"It's okay, he, he supported me so much."

"Uh. You are so lucky. If Ao Tian let me to have more job to do it will be good. But, I do understand Ao Tian because he really loves and adores me."

Seeing that "happy" face of Li Mei Yun, Yao Yao feels little bit odds, does Li Mei Yun is type of person who likes to show off her happiness?

"He He, Miss Li, it is good to know you happy, I go for work."

"En, takecare." Both of girls had done by exchanging their courtesy, Li Mei Yun eyes flashed, last night was "happiness" or "bitterness", perhaps only herself that know it. Just now she just acting in front of Yao Yao, she wanted to show her that she lives so happily with Yu Ao Tian, that is her main purpose.

Yao Yao arrived at office. When she arrived and wanted to sit in her seat, suddenly one of her colleagues informed her that she was called by General Regional Director, Mr. Wang.

Since the Chang Hong stock incident there are many of her colleagues envied

of Yao Yao so when she left her office room to meet Mr, Wang, someone her colleagues are gossiping about her.

\*\*

"Little Girl."

"Hah?" Yao Yao is startled by someone voice, she turned and saw, "Li, Miss Li."

"What are you thinking of keep on standing in front of the door? Why not come in?" Li Mei Yun smiles sweetly, slowly pushed open the villa door.

"Oh, nothing. I'm thinking about my work in office." Yao Yao followed Li Mei Yun walking inside the villa.

"Ahahaha, I don't know if you Little Girl also workaholic. You still think about your work after go home. Oh yeah, tomorrow is Saturday, you do you have time? Accompany me to go for shopping."

"Hah?" suddenly her footsteps stopped, Yao Yao frowned: "I am so sorry Miss Li Mei Yun. Tomorrow I have thing to do." She really have thing to do, every Saturday it is time for her to visit her mother and also her grandpa and at same time it is her private time for herself.

"How is about Sunday? You won't have thing to do on Sunday, right?"

"I am sorry Miss Li, Sunday I must be in here working."

"Hey, Xiao Luo, my Miss because she likes you so that she especially looks for you to accompany her go shopping, you are only maid so don't be someone who does not know how to appreciate someone kindness." Xiao Zhen who is standing beside angrily said.

To be honest, if this is happen long ago, perhaps she still will be able to go out with her idol happily, but now... she does not want to have any relation with any others Yu Ao Tian's women!

"Xiao Zhen, you shut up!"

Yes... Miss Li."

"He He, Little Girl, if this Sunday you really must working in here, well just think me as Madam of this house, can I? You just take it as accompany the Madam, so this is also part of your job."

"Miss Li..."

"Don't reject me." Li Mei Yun does not give any opportunity for Yao Yao to reject her, gently she blinking her eyes but it also signaling Xiao Zhen to leave.

Yao Yao is thinking the way how to have less contact with Li Mei Yun...

Saturday, in hospital.

Yao Yao visited her grandpa in hospital and also her mom. When she arrived at the hospital her mom told her that woman who named Mo Xue Tong and her boyfriend Yu Ao Tian were coming visited them not long ago. When Yao Yao heard it from her mom she was extremely angry.

Moreover when her mom said both of them were asking about 14 years old incident that related to Luo Tian Ming, her father. The anger Yao Yao was trying to phone Yu Ao Tian but he not pick up his phone so Yao Yao looking for Long Qi who immediately told her that all of them were in Tian Shang Ren Jian (kind of place alike night club / bar).

She rushed to look for Yu Ao Tian in Tian Shang Ren Jian but being stopped by the guards who wore suit in black. She tried to enter that place even she telling them that she is Yu Ao Tian's lover no one believed on her, she shouting alike crazy but they were ignoring her as long as she stayed outside.

Fortunately Long Qi passed, so Long Qi helped her to meet Yu Ao Tian who is sitting on the third floor inside private room of Tian Shang Ren Jian. Seeing Yao Yao coming to find him, Yu Ao Tian face looked so fierce and dark. He never thought Yao Yao would come to find him in this kind of place.

"Why are you here?" Yu Ao Tian asked.

"You think I happily coming to see you in this kind of place. I come here because I have something important to say." Yao Yao said with her anger tone.

"Hey you, little girl! How can you speak like that to Big Boss Yu?" One of hostess who is sitting beside Yu Ao Tian Said.

Her pair of cold eyes looked at them, shouted: "I am his lover, all of you go out! Go out!" Yao Yao voice is becoming louder and louder.

This is the first time for Yu Ao Tian to hear Yao Yao admitting herself as his lover in front of many people. He even feels something about her mood today.

Two beautiful women are looking each other and then they looked at expressionless Yu Ao Tian. They see there is no response from Yu Ao Tian so they are laughing: "Hahahahaha, you are Yu Ao Tian's lover? Little Girl, if you said that you are Yu Ao Tian's little sister perhaps we still can believe on you. Humph, but how can you fake to be his lover? We will let Yu Ao Tian comes to give you lesson!" after said, one of tall women waved her hand.

At the moment her hand was grabbed by Long Qi: "Hey, you woman, do you want me to cut off your hand?"

"Xiao, Mr. Xiao Long." That woman is terrified with Long Qi's murderous aura.

He coldly swayed that woman's hand: "I count to three, get lost, 3, 2,..."

Before counted till 1, everyone has gone so the room only left Yu Ao Tian, Long Qi and Yao Yao, three of them inside.

"Thank You, Long Qi..."

"It's okay." Long Qi smiled and then he left.

The private room suddenly deathly silent, the atmosphere is suffocating but Yao Yao has tried to control herself, slowly said: "Yu Ao Tian, I want to ask you..."

Without waiting her, Yu Ao Tian has strangle her: "Little Thing, your gut is getting bigger day by day, without my permission you even dare to come here to find me!"

"Yu, Yu Ao Tian, I can come here... to find you, because I have my urgency. Or else... you think I really willing to come here... to find you, a man like you?"

"What kind of man I am?" Yu Ao Tian is filled with murderous aura still holding at her neck: "What kind of man I am?"

"Yu Ao Tian! have free your hand." Yao Yao is difficult to breath, her small face has changed white pale.

Yu Ao Tian narrowed his eyes and loosens his hand.

"Why were you and Mo Xue Tong come to hospital?"

At this moment, Yu Ao Tian understood the reason Yao Yao came to find him. "Heh, how to say you are my lover, I want to see your family, can't I?"

"Can. You can come and see my family, but why were you asked Mo Xue Tong to fake as your girlfriend, moreover you asked Mo Xue Tong to fake as my best friend in front of my mother, lied to her. Although this kind of thing is not giving harm to anyone, but..." she made fist on her hand: "why did you ask Mo Xue Tong to lie that my father was her savior?"

"That was Mo Xue Tong's matter."

The way of Yu Ao Tian replied her, means the coming of Mo Xue Tong wasn't ask by him? Well! "Yu Ao Tian, 12 years ago you went to Japan, in Japan you just got acquainted with Mo Xue Tong, I would like to ask you during that time Mo Xue Tong who live in Japan how could she know about my father? Moreover how could she be saved by my father 14 years ago from the burning down of Hua Mei Villa?"

During the time when Long Ye told Yu Ao Tian about Yao Yao IQ that reach more than 200, he had already known that, Little Thing is someone very smart, at this moment she has exposed her intelligent, she talked straight to the point. "Heh, Little Thing, you have said this much, what actually you want to tell me?"

"Whatever I wanted to say to you, you know it very well inside your heart." When she was in hospital, listened to her mom when talking about Mo Xue Tong, Yao Yao had lost her memory because car accident so she can't recall all the memory of 14 years ago about the Hua Mei villa case. She never dared to ask her mom about it because it was related to her father death and that matter always becomes her mom wounds.

After she left the hospital, the first thing she done was browsing all the information regarding Hua Mei villa case, but it was so bad! There was no clue that founded in internet.

Her father was government officer, since she could not find anything about this case, she realized the important of the case itself, so that...

This case must be protected by the government.

And then...

Since Yu Ao Tian asked Mo Xue Tong to find her mother and asked about this case, this mean...

"Yu Ao Tian, I thought... the real victim in that case must be you, right?"

"Little Thing, you better to put use your brain in right place or else it would killed you!"

"Huh." Yao Yao showed him faint smiled. This faint smiled pierce for Yu Ao Tian's eyes, it makes him even angrier: "Little Thing, are you scheming me?"

"No. I am not. I didn't do anything!" she said with weak voice.

Yu Ao Tian really wanted to kill Yao Yao but suddenly his eyes locked at that scar in Yao Yao's left shoulder.

Taking the opportunity Yao Yao said, "Before I coming here, I have thought, perhaps, when Hua Mei villa in fire it was my dad who saved you? But... it seems... after looking at your reaction, perhaps I have made wrong analysis!"

She never wanted to check on Yu Ao Tian, she is trying to find something from this man about the case, even little bit because she does not want this case become alike snowball.

"Yu Ao Tian, since when you know that I am Luo Tian Ming's daughter?"

Yu Ao Tian quiet, his mind has flowing to the others world.

"During the time I agreed to sign the lover contract agreement? You open your mouth and say that I scheming on you, didn't you who..."

He slapped her.

Her small face is hurt and burn hot, but she not cares, continued: "you dare to say that you never have intention to scheme on me? I have been curious for long time, I was only mistaken you as Host 2 years ago, but why you are not willingly to let me go? Moreover, I am not type of woman that able to attract someone like you, Yu Ao Tian must be types alike Li Mei Yun? So that during the time you asked me to be your lover, you must already know that I am Luo Tian Ming's daughter, right?"

## **134**

Ah~ this chapters are too depressing to start up the beginning of year. In this chapter we clear about one red line between Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao. She is Daughter of Luo Tian Ming who was Zeng Kai Rui's ex-secretary and also Yu Ao Tian's enemy.

# **Chapter 134**

After Yu Ao Tian listened to Yao Yao's questions, his face turned to be so dark. He never thought that Little Thing would come with this kind of conclusion, but, her explanations are reasonable.

"Little Thing you are making good guessed, I made you as my slutty lover because you are Luo Tian Ming's daughter. Are you satisfied to get this answer?"

Very satisfied! She could think her grandpa sickness unintentionally trapped and designed by Yu Ao Tian so she could jump in!

Actually even her grandpa isn't sick, she still will be Yu Ao Tian's meal!

"Yu Ao Tian, since today onwards I will work hard to be your slutty lover, fulfill whatever you ask! But, I don't want you to touch my family!"

Another slap is given by Yu Ao Tian: "Little Thing, you should be so grateful that I don't kill you, there is no qualification for you have to order me!"

Her nose bleeding but she just wiped it, her small hand is grabbing Yu Ao Tian's shirt collar: "That is right! I don't have any qualification. I am not more that little ant in front of your eyes, but Yu Ao Tian, I still want to warn you, if you dare to touch my family, you give your try or you must also kill me too or else... I will come to find and kill you!"

For the 19 years old Yao Yao, the way of living that she choose is following the flow and not hurt anyone, not to think all unhappy things as long as she enjoying her daily life. Because she knows, everyone has their youth period (blooming period), during her youth if she can act dummy so she can little bit be dummy, or when muddle headed. Later if she really entering the society, when she wants to be dummy or muddle head she can't do it anymore. That's why, although she knows there are people want to hurt her, if it still forgivable then she might forgive and forget about it, open and close one eyes. And then...

As long no one stepped into her limit!

While her limit is her family!

"You kill me? You little brat, I really want to know with what you able to kill me?" Yu Ao Tian took out his knife and pointed to her neck.

"Well, how about we give a try!" inside the private room the atmosphere is freezing cold.

"Hah, very expected eyesight!" Yu Ao Tian continued: "Damn, I have raised thankless wretch!"

Yao Yao left, leaving Yu Ao Tian inside the private room.

From the first time they met, Yu Ao Tian has already knew that a pair of Yao Yao's eyes are not belong to this kind of world, he hopes to see vicious eyesight in that eyes even one bit, so that she able to survive in this cruel society. But he never thought that eyesight which he expected shining from her pair of her eyes on the moment she felt hostile by him.

Slowly Yu Ao Tian sat on sofa, he looked to his pair of hand: "Cannot do it, hahahaha, I am Yu Ao Tian also have minute cannot do it!" he laughing helplessly alone. For Yu Ao Tian there is no one in this world that he cannot kill, there only the way he chooses how to end people's life, but just now... he really cannot kill Yao Yao!

"Ao, Ao Tian." the door opened by Long Qi who looked guilty.

His expression cold: "You tell all the things regarding me to Yao Yao?"

"I did tell her about 12 years ago you went to Japan.... It was me who told her. I am sorry, Ao Tian. That time I really didn't know that Yao Yao is Luo Tian Ming's daughter." Long Qi finally found out about Yao Yao from his older brother and Yu Ao Tian conversation, eavesdropped and then he rushed into the room.

Yu Ao Tian still in silence, Long Qi feels guilty, and then slowly walking in front of him: "Ao Tian... why didn't you tell Yao Yao, you also knew it recently if she is Luo Tian Ming's daughter."

"There is meaningless now!" Yu Ao Tian continued: "If Luo Tian Ming really has relation with that fire, the results still same, this point... you must know it!"

Long Qi paused and his heart trembled: "Ao Tian, even though Yao Yao is Luo Tian Ming's daughter, but don't you still have other thing that tie with her?"

"It is not important anymore. Not important!" Yu Ao Tian sighed, sat down to the sofa.

\*\*

Inside the dim study room, Yao Yao nervously looked her computer, she keeps on browsing the information regarding Hua Mei Villa case: "Nothing! Even the overseas websites don't have the information!"

Logically, if the government wants to avoid the case it will be blocked all the domestic sites reports but how the overseas site can also do not have, the case even not recorded, it is such mysterious. Or...

"Yao Yao..."

Suddenly the study room door opened, Yao Yao nervously looked at the door: "Nan Lu."

"Yao Yao, is it you? Are you crazy? How can you running into here? I have told you before, Master prohibited anyone to get into his study room."

"I understand. I understand Nan Lu. But the internet cannot access into overseas sites, it's only Yu Ao Tian's computer that able to access the overseas sites. I have very important thing that I need to check.

"You are not allowed to do it." Nan Lu anxious while her eyes keeps looking on corridor, hurried she closed the study room door, rushed in front of Yao Yao: "Hurry, we leave, if master back, both of us will be in trouble."

"I know. Wait for me, I will shut it down."

But during this time...

"Master."

"Master."

There is footstep from corridor that coming near to study room, Nan Lu face white pale while looking eye to eye with Yao Yao, the atmosphere inside the study room suddenly changed to be depressing....

Yu Ao Tian heading to his study room once he home, he has habit to turn on his computer and when his hand moving the mouse, suddenly his hand stopped in mid-air...

"Maid!"

"Master, do you need something?" Angel walked inside and asked.

He narrowed his eyes, coldly said: "Today who is entered my study room?"

"In reply to the Master, in this house no one dares to enter Master's study room, except those who seek death!"

Just to know, Yu Ao Tian has very sharp memory. He even knows where the last time he put his mouse, but today his mouse place had changed.

He looked around his room, and then he smiled deviously: "Oh ya, it seems there is someone seeking for death!" after said, his eyes locked on his book shelf.

Angel understood and then rushed into, when she opened: "Nan Lu? And also Miss... Luo?"

Yao Yao thought she won't be found out by Yu Ao Tian but...

The sensitiveness and Yu Ao Tian observation ability are too strong, strong to the level of scary...

Angel has pulled Nan Lu long hair while Yao Yao gets out by herself.

"Miss Angel, don't! Please let Nan Lu go!"

"Nan Lu, when you were coming to this place from the first time I have told you what thing you can do and cannot do!" Angel ignored Yao Yao pleading, coldly asking Nan Lu.

"Yes. Angel I remembered all you have told me."

"Since you remember, why are you still daring to enter into Master's room?" after said, Angel punched Nan Lu abdomen.

"No!" when Angel wanted to send the second punch, Yao Yao hurried catch her hand: "Miss Angel, it was me..."

"Yao Yao!" Nan Lu stopped her, shaking her head and looking at Yu Ao Tian who sat on his chair, she understands very well his Big Boss character even Yao Yao is trying to stop, Yu Ao Tian won't stop the punishment.

"Miss Angel, it was me! It was me who enter Yu Ao Tian's study room. And Nan Lu has tried to stop me, it simply nothing to do with her."

It seems that Nan Lu not really knows Yao Yao very well, Yao Yao is trying to put all the blame on herself.

Angel does not care what Yao Yao said, she swayed her away and then slapped Nan Lu's face.

"Please don't hit her Miss Angel, I have told you that it was me, if you want to give punishment just punish me okay!"

No matter how Yao Yao plead, Angel does not have intention to stop.

She really not bearable to see anymore, she hurried looked at Yu Ao Tian: "Let her go, okay? She does not have thing to do with all of this."

Yu Ao Tian ignored her.

"Yu Ao Tian! I beg you, I begging you! Go straight to me if you have problem, okay?" No matter how she begging, no one cares.

She feels helpless to see Nan Lu gets hit. Her tear suddenly is flowing down.

How can Yu Ao Tian act in this way? How can he be so heartless until this point? Does he mean to kill chicken and let the monkey to see it, he purposely to hit Nan Lu only to hurt her? But Nan Lu is his subordinate! How can he do this to his loyal subordinate?

Unreasonable! Unreasonable! World where Yu Ao Tian lives, she will never understand.

Yao Yao cannot bear to see anymore and then she left the study room...

About 10 minutes later.

"Miss Mo."

"Miss Mo." The maids are standing in second floor corridor bowing to Mo Xue Tong.

She walked faster heading to Yu Ao Tian's study room, when she arrived in front of the study room, she coldly glanced at Yao Yao who sobbing and pushed the door open: "Ao Tian."

## 135 - 136

Anyone curious about Yu Long's group? One of the most scary and powerful Mafias group in Japan and also rose fame in China. Here Nan Lu would explain little bit about Yu Long which stunned Yao Yao

# **Chapter 135 - 136**

"Xue Tong?" the appearance of Mo Xue Tong quite surprising for Yu Ao Tian, but when he looked at that petit figures who standing in front of the door, immediately he understood: "Angel stop!"

"Yes, Master." Angel stopped, not far from her, Yao Yao feels little bit relieved.

"Angel, what is Nan Lu fault?"

"Miss Mo, Nan Lu entered Master's study room."

"I understood." After Mo Xue Tong understood the situation, coldly she looked at Yu Ao Tian: "Nan Lu is my subordinate, as the rule, I must get the punishment too!" after she said, she gives herself a heavy slapped.

"Miss...Mo." Nan Lu shocked.

In front of the door, Yao Yao even more shocked and open wide her mouth.

Yu Ao Tian hurried rushed into her in front: "Xue Tong, are you crazy?" he looks at her face that she hit by herself.

"Forget it, Angel takes Nan Lu to have treatment!"

"Yes. Master." Angel took Nan Lu out from study room.

Yao Yao hurried to follow, before she leaving, she even glanced inside the study room...

At this moment she can feel the warmness and the concern showed by Yu Ao Tian toward Mo Xue Tong. She doubted herself whether this warm man and that heartless man are still the same person that she knows or not? She can feel that Mo Xue Tong placed very important in Yu Ao Tian's life, a place that no one can replace.

"Nan Lu, I am sorry. It is me who cause you in trouble." Inside the room, Yao Yao applies the medicine to Nan Lu.

"Yao Yao, you don't act like this, this wound really nothing for me, long time ago when I was still in Japan, I had injured from countless wounds."

"Nan... thank you Nan Lu." Other than thank you, she really does not know what to say. She really should not make any movement inside "House".

"Miss Angel is little bit harsh." Nan Lu can see Yao Yao looked guilty so she joking.

"Is Miss Angel also Yu Long's people?"

"Hehe, how can you know?"

"I saw her skill little bit different from other ordinary people."

"En, Sis Angel is also Yu Long's people, but she is under Mr. Han supervision."

"Mr. Han? Han Li Shang?"

"Yes."

She feels she gonna faint, it really is having this kind of "subordinate" and then having same kind "supervisor", Miss Angel coldness and Mr. Han simply are same types of people.

"I thought all of you are under Yu Ao Tian supervision."

"It true that all of us are Big Boss Yu subordinate, all the people in Yu Long are belongs to Big Boss Yu. But because the members are too many so that it divided into groups. The first group is belongs to Da Long Xian Sheng/ Mr. Big Long (Long Ye), the second group is belongs to Miss Mo, the third group is belongs to Mr. Small Long (Long Qi)."

"En? Why there is no Han Li Shang's group?"

Mr. Han ah....." Nan Lu turns over her body and gives faint smile: "He is supervising the entire Jing Ying group, to be blunt it is assassin group."

"Assassin?" Woah, it sound so similar alike in dramas, she thought killer occupation is something fantasy, never expected that it really exist and now beside her.

"Miss Angel, is ki..."

"Sst. This is secret. To let you know Big Boss Yu has too many enemies. So that every place where he appears there will be some of Yu Long's men."

"Oh, he did too many bad things so that he has so many enemies."

"Yao Yao, it is not like that. Everyone who gets involved in Jiang Hu (Underworld) does not have freedom ah...." When Nan Lu spoke she took deep breathe, she looking at the ceiling, said: "You must know, actually Big Boss Yu carries too many burden that most of us the ordinary man won't ever can endure and responsible. Although he is not finding trouble to other, still... other people will come and seek his trouble."

This principle she understood, perhaps this is the reason when you are in top the loner you become. When the status is higher than more difficult it becomes. But she really cannot accept the method and the way Yu Ao Tian solving problems.

Forget it! Yu Ao Tian's world... she won't ever understand of it.

Knocking!

When both of these fellow sisters are chatting, there is knocking sound from outside the room: "Miss Mo."

"Nan Lu, how is your wound?"

"Miss Mo, I am okay. But how you..." Nan Lu hurried kneeling: "I am so sorry. I troubled you."

"Nan Lu, stand up." She hurried support her to get up, coldly gazing on Yao Yao: "although you were the person who called me, but! If this happen next time, I will surely...kill you!" after she said, Mo Xue Tong left.

But Yao Yao called her to help Nan Lu so that she hurried called Mo Xue Tong to come, and this word...

\*\*

The Next Morning.

Inside the high-end department store, Li Mei Yun is wearing mask and sunglasses to the VIP passage through direct access of the VIP hall shopping mall.

This passage is especially design for the important shopper, inside there are lots of branded stuffs and the newest products displayed.

"Miss Li, welcome." One of the salesgirls is welcoming Li Mei Yun passionately.

Xiao Zhen and Yao Yao sat on the same sofa while waiting patiently Li Mei Yun in fitting room.

"Are these dresses beautiful?" Xiao Zhen asked.

She answered her by nodding her head: "En. Very beautiful."

"Humph, to let you know in here the dresses cost more than thousand dollar, of course beautiful!" Xiao Zhen eyes rolled, both of her hand enveloped her chest looking at Yao Yao's dress: "what brand that you wear?"

"Ti Tan Hua (buying in street)"

"Real or fake (are you sure)? Didn't you sleep with Mr. Yu, impossible even this small thing, you get nothing? So what is your purpose?"

She has been out since early in the morning with Li Mei Yun and Xiao Zhen but both of them keep on insisting her to go with them.

"To be honest, Xiao Luo, Mr. Yu has slept with many women behind my Miss. Those who slept with Mr. Yu at least would get 10 thousand for "night fee", do you really not get any even cents?"

"Miss Zhen, since you know my relationship with Yu Ao Tian, why didn't you tell your Miss?" Yao Yao really not understand, if Xiao Zhen really feels bad for her Miss why didn't she tell Li Mei Yu? Moreover she looked too suspicious because Xiao Zhen loves to gossip Yao Yao-self as Xiao San but does not look alike she cares about Li Mei Yun.

"Will it benefit for me if I tell her? If Mr. Yu knows that I am the person who says it, I might get trouble. Moreover, if my Miss knows about you sleeping with Mr. Yu, doing that dirty thing, don't you afraid being joke for my Miss? Humph, being slept but not even gets branded things, you say, didn't you do for nothing?"

Listened to the way Xiao Zhen spoke, Yao Yao cannot endure anymore: "Miss Zhen, what do you mean? Inside your heart, sleeping with man only for having branded things, if it is, you must be really not worth!"

"You! Fine! As what you say, you sleep with Mr. Yu not for money so for what?

Because you worship him and then you sleep with Mr. Yu? If yes, I only can feel that you are so wretched, being third wheel, simply to say shameless!"

Yao Yao really angry toward Xiao Zhen but after she thought for some times, she just let it go. It is useless to waste her saliva talking with someone like her.

Not long after that Li Mei Yun has done choosing her clothes, when she wanted to settle the payment, Xiao Zhen pulled Yao Yao, faster pointed at cashier: "Have you seen that card in Miss Li Mei Yun's hand?"

Card... didn't that card which given by Yu Ao Tian to her before? Why Xiao Zhen asked her to see at that card?

"Let me tell you, that card was given by Mr. Yu to my Miss. It says that the card has more than billions. It is limitless VIP gold card. Forget it, perhaps you are not understood what I say. When will you can reach to my Miss level, but seeing you like this, I think you won't ever can be like her!" after Xiao Zhen showed off she glanced at Yao Yao.

But Xiao Zhen didn't know that card was given to Yao Yao before by Yu Ao Tian but Yao Yao had refused it.

After they done with shopping, Li Mei Yun and Xiao Zhen still do not stop. They wanted to continue to go to Karaoke and drink with Yao Yao. Li Mei Yun takes them to one of most famous entertainment place where many famous people like to visit. She reasoned that she wanted to meet her friend so Yao Yao cannot refuse her.

Li Mei Yun brought both Xiao Zhen and Yao Yao to entertainment place and which already booked by Li Mei Yun's friend, the private room. Because it still noon so the people is relative few. The rooms in this place are designed uniquely because beside karaoke, bars there also bedrooms inside and also decorate beautifully.

When Yao Yao gets inside she could see there are about 7 or 8 men inside the private room with thick cigarette smell and also many alcohol drinks left.

"Hey, Ming Hui, it only noon, but you had play night life?" Li Mei Yun sat beside on that man.

At one glanced Yao Yao has recognized this man is one of Sha Lang (Sharon)

band member, the lead singer, Ming Hui. Others than him, few of the men seem to be other fellow member. Sha Lang band is two stars group band, Yao Yao knew it when she just back to China, watching the entertainment news. Every week there might news about their singer lead, Ming Jui who slept with their fans, whatever really not good news.

"Sis Mei Yun, you must know that I can't leave alcohol, right? Hey, give Sister Mei Yun a glass!" Ming Hui asked other man to pour drink for Li Mei Yun.

To unknown, Li Mei Yun refused strictly: "Ming Hui, earlier I have cut it off!"

"Oh, okay, since you served\* that Yu Ao Tian!"

It means since Li Mei Yun enslaved and also being Yu Ao Tian prostitute. The sentence has very negative meaning.

"Can you not speak that unpleasant? What do you mean by served? Li Mei Yun's face dark. But her eyes showed bitterness and glanced at Yao Yao.

At sudden Ming Hui said: "Okay, I am wronged. I am sorry sister Li Mei Yun."

But Ming Hui knows very well about Li Mei Yun past. Although she born in wealthy family but she has rebel character. She started to touch alcohol and smoke since her high school. And then, she entered the entertainment business and became the rebel queen in showbiz, this image attached her for sometimes until she met Yu Ao Tian, to followed whatever he asked her to do.

"Hurried, let me hear my new song." Li Mei Yun said while looking at Xiao Zhen and Yao Yao continued: "Both of you looking for the empty seat to sit down."

"Yes, Miss." Xiao Zhen swept her glanced to all the people inside the room, when her eyes looked at man who has "good" appearance she sat at his besides.

"Little girl, you also find place to sit, ah forget it, come let sit here."

"No, Miss Li, I..."

"Come here." Li Mei Yun dragged Yao Yao to sit beside Ming Hui: "Let me introduce this is Min Hui and she is my fan, called..."

"My name is Luo Yao Yao, Miss Li."

"Oh, I am sorry. I forgot to ask your name."

"It's okay."

"Little girl, how old are you?" it oblivious Ming Hui eyes flashed when looking at Yao Yao.

"10...19."

"Uh. You are not underage right? You looked so young. Do you know me?"

Yao Yao nodding: "Watching from... television."

"hahaha, did you ever hear my songs?"

"Never." Staying in this kind of place simply is tormenting, she hates smoke, she also dislikes Ming Hui.

"Now, you try to listen, give me your comment." Ming Hui clasping his fingers.

The music is slowly flowing inside the private room: "Your music is not bad."

"Thank you sister Li."

"Don't mention it."

"I take my leave."

Finally can leave! Yao Yao sighed, heaven knows that she really tortured when listened to the music.

"Sister Li since you coming, sit bit longer ah."

Oh my, Yao Yao signaling Li Mei Yun to hurry leave. But Li Mei Yun acted as if she sees nothing: "Alright. Anyway, it is still early. I sit here little bit longer."

Frustrated!

Li Mei Yun is talking with man while Xiao Zhen is playing with few men and Yao Yao sitting silently doing nothing.

"Yao Yao, don't only sit, accompany me to have drink." Ming Hui is trying to have conversation.

"I am sorry, I have allergic toward alcohol. I cannot drink." To be honest since the incident with Young Master Cong, Yao Yao had learned to be smarter. She will use allergic as excuse so that she won't force to drink.

"Oh." Ming Hui frowned but still asked: "Smoke?"

"I can't."

"Uh. You cannot do all, how about dance?"

"Really sorry, I also cannot dance."

Ming Hui always have confident toward his appearance, but for this time, Yao Yao toward him is extremely cold, it obvious he almost lost his patience: "Well, let me teach you dancing, come!"

"No..." without waiting her to reject, he has pulled her to dance pole.

"Ming Hui, dance dirty dance ah!" some of people are shouting to encourage.

But Yao Yao really does not want to dance with Ming Hui. That man keeps on insisting and later when his hand touched on Yao Yao, she slapped him. Ming Hui pissed off,

"You M\*F\*, Little girl, it is clearly you are the one who come and seduce me, now you dare to slap me?"

"How I seduce on you?"

"Humph, don't deny, a girl like you, I have met many before. Rest assured, I know that you wanted to climb in to my bed and then show off with your friend. I granted your wish!"

Does this person who called Ming Hui mental? What can be showed off if she sleep with him?

"I asked you once again, let me go or not!" Yao Yao showed her strong attitude, her lips curved upward, coldly said: "Well, I will report to police."

## 137 - 140

This chapter is too bad because Li Mei Yun has set other trap for Yao Yao. Without Li Mei Yun, Yao Yao has already become prior trouble to attract men and now, Li Mei Yun. By this incident, Li Mei Yun has declared her fight with Yao Yao...

# **Chapter 137 - 140**

When Yao Yao takes out her phone and intended to make phone call to police, suddenly her phone smashed by Ming Hui. She is taking to another room with big bed by Ming Hui and followed by few men.

"What are you guys want to do?"

"You make guess! Little Girl you are seducing us to bed, all of us are normal men, of course we wanted to grant your wish. You relax, when things done I won't treat you miserably." After said, Ming Hui is intending to kiss Yao Yao.

"No! You let me go, what you guys do are called as raping, don't all of you afraid of jail?"

"Humph! Rape? Who will have the evidence? Moreover, in this world there are too many things that can be solved with money. You are sending yourself off to the door, although we go to police, we can say that you are seducing us."

It is too outrageous, although they have money but how can they be brazen to this stage? This must be master-mind behind all of this. Li Mei Yun?

When Yao Yao caught by few men, Xiao Zhen and Li Mei Yun are happily leaving the entertainment place and go home, wishing for Yao Yao bad luck. Xiao Zhen even praised Li Mei Yun for her plan to strike Yao Yao down.

Meanwhile...

Yao Yao super angry and still fight with those men. Have no alternative, she coldly said: "I am Yu Ao Tian's woman! If you have guts to touch me, let we see!"

"It is obviously you are the one who coming to meet us and also seduced us. If you have guts to tell Yu Ao Tian, it only an empty talk. When the time comes, I believe based on Yu Ao Tian nature he does not want to be put green hat (cuckold), right?"

Finally Yao Yao understood about Li Mei Yun scheme. She can put all the blame to all these men while Yao Yao might be the one dumped by Yu Ao Tian if he knows this matter. But Li Mei Yun has mistaken one thing. She does not know

the real Yu Ao Tian, problem is simple if Yao Yao really get dumped but after that Yu Ao Tian might kill all her family. She cannot let this thing happen. She must find the way to out...

When Yao Yao is trying to escape herself from these few men...

Feng Chen Yi and Ou Yang Zi Xuan apparently are passing by. At the beginning Ou Yang Zi Xuan is showing off his new place that recently gave by his father to Feng Chen Yi. When both of them are still in their conversation, suddenly Feng Chen Yi heard something and asked Ou Yang Zi Xuan did he hear something alike someone asking help.

After while, both of they are found out the source of noise coming from. They spotted Ming Hui and his friends are trying to do something with a girl. Ou Yang Zi Xuan and Feng Chen Yi even stopped and said hello to Ming Hui and his fellows. But...

Looking carefully, Ou Yang Zi Xuan recognized Yao Yao.

"Chen Yi, aren't you going to save her?" Ou Yang Zi Xuan asked Feng Chen Yi who keeps walking and ignored Yao Yao until...

"Chen Yi... I beg... please help me." The miserable sound from Yao Yao's voice echoing to Feng Chen Yi' ears.

"Damn!" hurried he back to that room and save Yao Yao. Ming Hui and his fellow friends looked shocked when they saw Feng Chen Yi coming back to save Yao Yao and even hit him.

"Young Master... Feng." Ming Hui still dumfounded being hit by Feng Chen Yi.

Still hug Yao Yao into his embraces Feng Chen Yi said: "Zi Xuan, the rest you deal with them! In shortly, I don't want to see this few men anymore!" hurried he takes Yao Yao to another private room.

"Young Master Ou Yang, what did Young Master Feng mean?"

"It is on surface meaning, what can it be other? As you guys know that Feng Chen Yi never played something alike underworld thing but..." Ou Yang Zi Xun punched Ming Hui once and looked so excitedly smiling: "I am playing underworld things!"

"Ou... Yang Young Master, let us go, please let us go." Few of men are kneeling and kowtowing in front of him.

Ou Yang Zi Xuan pointing at them: "It is not me who wanted to mess with you guys, but all of you had heard that Feng Chen Yi did not want to see you. All of you begging to Feng Chen Yi! But, I have good intention to inform you guys, that little girl, she was his...EX... Girl... Friend!"

At the moment all of the men are dumbstruck. Before they dared to touch Yao Yao, Li Mei Yun had promised them, nothing would happen even Yu Ao Tian won't get involved to this matter but...Li Mei Yun didn't tell them about she was Feng Chen Yi's ex-girlfriend. This time they are not even turned to be dead-meat, mince-meat, but also doom for them!

Ou Yang Zi Xuan commanded his men to take all those men who still kneeling and kowtowing through behind door.

While this time, Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi are arguing inside other the private room. Every time both of them meet, they always quarrel and hurting each other and this time no exception. The matter actually so simple...

Yao Yao: "Why didn't you help me immediately but instead after I begged you?"

Feng Chen Yi: "Is begging me is too difficult for you?"

Yao Yao: "You are so bossy, do you think world is revolving around you? You are really bossy, too domineering. It stills same alike two years ago when I was still your girlfriend. You tried to control me and now after we broke up you still so busy doing to control me!"

Feng Chen Yi: "How can you be here?"

Yao Yao: "None of your business!"

Their fight is starting from arguing and almost ended by Yao Yao get violating by Feng Chen Yi.

"Chen Yi, stopped. You cannot do this."

"What? Are you scared? What are you scared for? Scared that man would know? It is okay, he won't know it! Although he knows... you can back to my

sides!"

Yao Yao quivering: "He will know it, he will know it obviously, because until now... both of us, we are haven't do it!"

At the moment, Feng Chen Yi cold smiled turned to be rigid. Taking this as good opportunity, Yao Yao pushed him away.

"You and that man aren't done it?" Feng Chen Yi really cannot express what kind of mood he has now, he really does not know whether he feels so happy because knowing Yao Yao still virgin or because Yao Yao does not have any relationship with that man.

"He and I..." suddenly she stopped, she still expressionless looking at Feng Chen Yi, but the moment she wanted to explain her relation with Yu Ao Tian she really does not know how to say so, "He respects me, he is someone different with you, he won't do it to me!"

"Luo Yao Yao!"

Yao Yao quickly leaving that place. She really does not know whether it right or not to tell Feng Chen Yi that she still virgin, but if she didn't say that, seeing the way Feng Chen Yi looked at her just now, he won't stop.

\*\*

Villa...

She is standing in front of the front door...

She really does not want to see Li Mei Yun's face, she does not want to matter that exposed to her, and moreover, she does not want to see this house!

She is opened the door.

"Little Girl! Little Girl, you are back." The first person who rushed in front her is Li Mei Yun, her nervous expression is still weighing on Yao Yao: "You... all must be blamed on me, all must be blamed on me! I really should not pick my phone, I have heard from Xiao Zhen, she was not taking care of you, I have given her severe punishment. Waiting you back to home, you are not... I still..."

Did she think Yao Yao suicide?

Enough, when things already in this mess, Li Mei Yun put all the blame into Xiao Zhen, what kind of Madam she is? How could Xiao Zhen act this reckless?

But after this thing happened, Yao Yao who feels so guilty toward Li Mei Yun finally could rest assured, this count as make even for both of them!

"Hahaha, Miss Li, don't be worry, I am fine." Yao Yao smiled brightly.

Li Mei Yun dumbfounded: "Are you okay, didn't they do something to you?"

"Yeah, don't you know that I was saved by good person, that person helped me. Oh, the person even borrowed me his suit. Hahahaha!" She sweetly smiled to her: "Miss Li, if there is nothing you want to talk to me, I want to get into my room for changing my clothes."

"Wait!" Li Mei Yun looked at that suit, she really not dare to think that Yao Yao has that good luck!

"Heheheheehe, since everything is okay, this matter... would tell Yu Ao Tian? Or else he would think that I might be friends with "neither one thing nor the other"?"

Of course she won't say, she still afraid Yu Ao Tian will know about Feng Chen Yi!

"Alright, I won't tell Mr. Yu. But Miss Li..." her eyes gleaming and sneered: "I hope this is the last time!" after said, she hurried to third floor.

"Yao Yao what is happen?"

"Go inside room, we talk."

In the third floor, Nan Lu hurries enter in to Yao Yao's room. Once she gets inside, quickly she takes off the suit.

Nan Lu shocked when she saw Yao Yao dress that tear off, her expression changed: "Yao Yao, did you?"

"Li Mei Yun perhaps already known about my relation with Yu Ao Tian."

"Do you mean... she asked you to go out this early in the morning and... find people to..." Nan Lu extremely angry: "Now I will call Big Boss Yu, I will tell him all of these things!"

"Don't! Nan Lu!"

"Why not say? Li Mei Yun really too overboard! Early I have told you this woman isn't good thing, she quite merciless when dealing with this!"

"Nan Lu...." Helplessly she smiled: "Actually if we can put ourselves and view from her side, if you were Li Mei Yun, your beloved man has lover outside what will you do? Moreover this lover even showed up in front your eyes every day."

"But you dislike Big Boss Yu? You don't have intention to fight over!"

"All are same, Li Mei Yu does not know. She only fantasizing I am as lover who wanted to take her man, her love rival, although she really despicable but all because love. Anyway, I am okay, experienced this thing, I felt not owing her anything. This sound good too." Nan Lu really confused to hear her explanation.

But Nan Lu cannot do anything, because she believes everyone is selfish. She cannot deny Li Mei Yun's point of view, she thought Li Mei Yun done thing very beautiful but when she looked at Yao Yao, she feel Li Mei Yun not less than wicked shameless B\*

"Ah~ forget it, as long as you alright. But the hickey on your neck...."

"Hickey?" she faster rushing into her bathroom, she sees the hickey that imprinted on her neck.

This... Ming Hui did it? No although that man was rough but he not even did anything to her, this must Feng Chen Yi...

If this hickey is remained here, I am in trouble!

"Tutttututuutuuut"

"What is going on? Why Ming Hui does not pick his phone?" inside the room, Li Mei Yun is panic, calling Ming Hui phone but he not picks it.

"Miss, it seems that slutty little girl really have quite good luck, on that situation she still able to go home safe and soundly. You say, what will happen if she tell Mr. Yu? But, it seems she has promised you not to tell him."

"It is only you who believe that she won't tell!" Li Mei Yun glared at Xiao Zhen: "Anyway she seems to be okay, she must take this advantage to act alike spoiled child to Yu Ao Tian!"

"Perhaps, if Mr. Yu asking for explanation it would give us trouble."

### **Chapter 141 – 143**

Seeing Yao Yao went home safe and soundly, Li Mei Yun and Xiao Zhen aren't stop right there. Both of them are afraid Yao Yao made report to Yu Ao Tian regarding the incident that happened to Yao Yao with Ming Hui and his fellows.

"Miss, you don't need to be so worry, perhaps in minutes young master Ming Hui will call you back." Xiao Zhen comfort Li Mei Yun and she spoke to herself: "That slutty little girl had slept with Mr. Yu, she must not virgin anymore so whether she got rape or not no one really can check it out, right?"

"En?" Li Mei Yun eyes rolled, "Xiao Zhen, what did you say?"

"No, Nothing, I just talking to myself. Only talking to myself."

"Xiao Zhen, you say one more time what did you say before."

"Miss, when that little girl went home I spotted there was hickey on her neck, moreover her clothes was torn-off, that time inside the room there were many men, she said that she wasn't raped, I really not believed on her. Who would be busy-doing came to save her. Of course, Miss this just my assumption."

"No, Xiao Zhen, this is not simple assumption, this... real thing. She must be raped by that group of men!" after said, Li Mei Yun lips curled up, she smiled happily....

"Master."

At ten o'clock, night time.

Yu Ao Tian went home. Once Li Mei Yun heard the maid greet Yu Ao Tian, she rushed to his side who is apparently sitting in sofa. Smiled she called, "Ao Tian, you come back."

"En." Yu Ao Tian ignored her. He took one newspaper and read it.

"Have you had your dinner?"

"I had."

"Oh, Ao Tian... I... I have something to say... to you." Li Mei Yun showed her anxious expression in front of him.

"What?"

"That, can you go to room with me?"

Yu Ao Tian frowned, coldly said: "If you have words, say it in here."

"Uh.... this..." Li Mei Yun mumbling while her eyes looked at everywhere.

He is clearly impatience; he put down his newspapers, stood up: "Mei Yun, if you really don't want to say it, you really don't need to force yourself."

"No! Ao Tian. Actually... this matter is regarding to that little girl."

"En?" finally it attracted Yu Ao Tian's attention, he curved his lips up: "What about her?"

"Today, I brought her went out."

"En."

"And then... and then... we met Ming Hui and his fellow band mates, that little girl said that she liked Ming Hui, both of them had good conversation..." until here, Li Mei Yun as if got chocked, her eyes already red.

Yu Ao Tian looked so dark: "and then?"

"And then... and then... I was out to received the phone call, Ming Hui and his fellow friends took that little girl... hu..." Li Mei Yun looked so sad, crying, looks very guilty, lower her head down: "I am sorry Ao Tian, it was my fault, I really didn't think that Ming Hui and his fellow friends..."

"Where Yao Yao is?" Yu Ao Tian didn't want to hear any shit Li Mei Yun wanted to continue, he just wanted to see Yao Yao.

"She is, she is in her room."

After Li Mei Yun replied, Yu Ao Tian has already rushed to Yao Yao's room.

He pushed that room door, inside is so dark, no light, Yu Ao Tian turned on the light.

Yao Yao who is lying down suddenly changed her position into sitting: "You...

you come home."

"Why are you sleeping this early?"

"I feel uncomfortable, so I want to take rest." This is their first time having conversation after their last confrontation, Yao Yao face looked so nervous, her eyes is avoiding his eyes.

And then, the nervous expression of Yu Ao Tian suddenly turned be so gentle and warm, he walked slowly to her bedside, his eyes looked at her neck plastered with hansaplast: "What happen to your neck?"

She feels that her heart will jump out, but she stills pretend to be so composed: "Get scratched."

"Scratched?" an instant, Yu Ao Tian tear-off the hansaplast, it is hickey imprinted in her neck.

Yao Yao hold her breathe, nervously looked at him.

Did Li Mei Yun tell Yu Ao Tian? or else how could he found out?

The atmosphere inside the room is suffocating, Yu Ao Tian's narrowed his eyes: "Little Thing, for this such long time, why don't you learn to be little bit obedience!" when he entered this room, when looking at Yao Yao, he was so sure that she is alright or else, based on her character, she might crying so how could she sleep so soundly? But he also sure enough for 100% this little thing would make excuse or tell lie to him!

Suddenly Yu Ao Tian takes up his phone, she is so curious what he wants to do but when she heard... he spoke and made commend through the phone call: "Stop the medication of Luo Chang!"

"No!" Yao Yao grabbed the phone from Yu Ao Tian, immediately she hung up, although she had paid her grandpa operation fee but the medication fee is paid and supported by Yu Ao Tian, if they stopped her grandpa medication, she really does not know what will happen then!

```
"Yu Ao Tian, what you..."
```

<sup>&</sup>quot;What did you do with those men?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Nothing!"

"Did they touch you?"

"They, he just kissed me."

"En?" the meat that sent in front their mouth, but they not even took a bite?" Yu Ao Tian eyes rolled, he sneered: "You say. Would I believe it?"

"Yes! They were trying to rape me. But I was lucky because few of security guards were there to help me. If you are not believed on me, just ask people to come and check on me!" Yao Yao turned the topic to checking her body.

But whatever she said had already predicted by Yu Ao Tian! "No need to have body check, I believed on you. But, I remembered you ever told me that you idolized Li Mei Yun, but how could you also fan of those second stars singer?"

What Yu Ao Tian intending to tell her? Looking at his eyesight, Yao Yao has something alike bad omen, did Li Mei Yun told him that she idolized Ming Hui, so that she...

"It was not me, it was them..."

Ah~ forget it, there is so useless to tell him, Yu Ao Tian loves Li Mei Yun, how would he believed on her? Moreover regarding to her father's matter, he must be thought her seeking for excuses.

"Just think as what you want, if you think that I was the person who came and seduced them, well, just think as you wish. Whatever, it was you who asked me to learn to be slut bitch lover? Well, I was trying to learn to be, just as you wish!" Actually she just peeved with Yu Ao Tian so she spoke like that.

He fisted, but at moment, he sneered: "Good! Very good! I really think you must learn to be the slutty. Well, you can make your debut as slut's maid!" his expression is so cold, "Starting tomorrow, you are Li Mei Yun's personal maid, after you go off from work, you must serve her!"

"Yu... No! You know me very well that I and her... why you must do this? Just take me back to where I used to stay. I don't want stay in here. Just blame me for everything as my fault and I begging you, let me go and send me back to where I lived before!" she really does not want to have any involvement with Li Mei Yun, does not want, if things keep on continuing, later or sooner Li Mei Yun will make her to take action, when the times come, she afraid she will be the second Li Mei

Yun, she just does not want to be...

"You don't have option!" he left her room.

"Ao Tian." Li Mei Yun is standing in corridor still with tearing eyes.

He smiled deviously in front of her, his hand caressed her face: "Mei Yun, you don't need to be guilty. But..." his pair of eyes hinted something: "You really should thank... thanks those few security guards who helped Luo Yao Yao!"

"What... are you mean?"Li Mei Yun could feel that her heart nervous to the point would jump out.

"What I mean, don't you understand it?" Yu Ao Tian smiled even scarier and purposely said: "I still have thing to settle, I go out!"

"Oh, Okay. Be careful." Her eyes is still looking at Yu Ao Tian who has already walked far, anxiously, Li Mei Yun goes back to her own room.

"Miss, what happened? Why you looked not good?"

"It is bad! Xiao Zhen, I think Yu Ao Tian knew it was me who did it." If she isn't make wrong guess, that little thing told Yu Ao Tian she was helped by few security guards, so that Yu Ao Tian would tell her to thank those few security guards. He was so scary when he said it.

"Miss, if it was true, Mr. Yu must be so pissed off toward you, but he didn't show any sign?"

"Uh..."

"I think that little girl isn't someone important to Mr. Yu. Although Mr. Yu knew this matter, he not even reacted. Miss, instead sad, you must be happy."

After heard Xiao Zhen words, Li Mei Yun is trying to "digest", it seems what she told quite logical, if that little girl really important for Yu Ao Tian, why he looked not care toward this matter?

"Ah, as expected, that little girl wasn't make report to Yu Ao Tian, furthermore she really someone not important for him, I do also won't let this person become torn in my flesh!"

Inside the darkness, a car is moving so fast to Berson: "Long Ye, now you take

few men to bring Ming Hui and his fellow friends to Yu Long."

Long Ye who is in other side of phone: "He seem is second star singer, how he offended you?"

"I told you to bring him here, just do as I said!"

"Understood, understood." Long Ye helplessly shook his head when hung up the phone call, but not long after that, he phoned: "Ao Tian, those men who you called to bring, all of them are in Feng Chen Yi's hand."

"En? With him? Okay, I understand." Yu Ao Tian drove his car to Berson parking lot, and then he took out his phone: "Chen Yi."

"CEO Yu, what can I do for you in late of night?"

"Oh, it nothing really important, I want to take few men from you."

"Few men?" Feng Chen Yi coldly asked: "Ming Hui and his fellow friends, are they?"

"Yes."

"I am so sorry CEO Yu, although those few men are yours men, I really can't help you!" Feng Chen Yi is hard-line his words.

But Yu Ao Tian really got his meaning: "Chen Yi, those few men aren't my men. If I don't make wrong guessing, both of us have same intention toward them. I know you are not touch things in underworld, so it better off to take those men to my place, at least... I will give you very satisfactory result!"

"En." Feng Chen Yi answered Yu Ao Tian, he understood Yu Ao Tian intention, but still he so curious how Ming Hui and his fellow friends, second star singer, offended and provoked Yu Ao Tian, a living demon!

"Okay. I will send them to you, this time, I really need to bother you CEO Yu."

"Same – same."

After half hour, Feng Chen Yi has sent Ming Hui and his fellow friends to Yu Long.

Few men are kneeling with bleeding all over their body while Yu Ao Tian who sat on his throne, frowned: "Are they?"

"Ao Tian, they are those men who you looking for." Long Ye smiled helplessly.

Yu Ao Tian moves one step to see and measuring, all of their hands are already chopped, their tongue has been cut apart, their eyes already dig out, even the muscle has been sliced.

"Aiya." He sighed, little bit disappointed shook his head: "This time Feng Chen Yi absolutely pitiless, he doesn't leave some place for me, how can I "play"?"

"Big boss Yu, how about this person?" some of men in black who pressed on Ming Hui asked.

He looked unhappy, waving his hand: "Just find somewhere and bury him alive."

"Yes. Big Boss Yu!"

"Huhuhu!" those men who kneeling in the floor cannot say anything because they tongue had cut off so they just can huhuhuhu but it is so obvious all of them are begging forgiveness.

But based on Yu Ao Tian heartless and merciless characters, he hasn't had opportunity to torture them so he is really in bad mood moreover hearing their huhuhuhu sound begging for forgiveness...

"Forget it, I have other idea."

Those few men in blacks stopped and listened to Yu Ao Tian new command.

He sat back to his seat, one of his hand supports his chin, smiling deviously: "Take one big tub with boiling water, and then... put them inside. Just drown them slowly until they die!"

"Uh, Ao Tian, are you thinking to boil vegetable?" beside him is Long Ye who laughing.

He shrugged his shoulder: "Can't do anything, who asked that Little Brat, Feng Chen Yi had done without left any place for me."

"To be honest, Ao Tian, I really don't understand how these men offended Feng Chen Yi, a person who never has contact underworld things, but he absolutely quite merciless, he must have big hatred toward them, mustn't him?" Yu Ao Tian looked at those few men, helplessly said: "Who knows..."

"Hu! Huhu..." inside secluded big hall, Ming Hui and his fellow friends are begging miserable. They must never think that in their life, two highest status men, one is because his EX-girlfriend, he tainted his hand with underworld things and the other is underworld emperor, ended their life in this kind of way.

When Li Mei Yun looked for them, they knew very well, Yu Ao Tian is someone they are not effort to offend, but they really didn't know... Yu Ao Tian has other status as Underworld Emperor!

### **Chapter 144 – 145**

If they knew, they would not dare to touch Yao Yao, even they beaten to death. Of course, until now, Li Mei Yun still does not know the other status of Yu Ao Tian....

"Xiao Luo, the hickey that imprinted in your neck really sexy ah."

"Xiao Luo who was imprinted that hickey?"

"Woah, Xiao Luo I never know that you this young is learning to be bad girl."

Since morning some of Yao Yao fellow colleagues are asking about her hickey. Actually no matter how she hides it, everyone could make their own guess. Even her best friend, Bai Ling also teased her.

"Good morning, Long Qi!" Yao Yao greeted Long Qi when she met him in front of his office room.

"Flat Chest, what are you doing in here?"

Oh my, why Long Qi can't speak properly? This is in front of service Department, the way of his speaking, what will those fellow colleagues think if they heard what he said?

"I, I have something to do."

"Oh, Bye Bye."

"Bye..." she wanted to bid good bye but suddenly Yao Yao remember something, she pulled Long Qi: "Do you have time?"

"Ugh?" Long Qi rolled his eyes, smiled: "What? Do you want to date with me?"

"It's not. I have something to ask you. Can you give me few minutes?"

"Asking me few things? Come to my office room." Long Qi leads Yao Yao to his office room in service department. "Sit down."

When Yao Yao sits down, her expression has changed to stern: "Long Qi, I want

to ask you... how many things you know regarding to Yu Ao Tian?"

"En? What do you want to know? Why don't you ask Yu Ao Tian directly?"

Everyone knows that asking Yu Ao Tian directly is mean suicide, moreover these things are something that he never wanted to bring up: "It is not like you don't know last time I had argued with him inside Tian Shang Ren Jian, now he ignored me." As additional yesterday matter, both of them are in cold war now. "Long Qi, do you know the case about Hua Mei villa? Yu Ao Tian... does he have grudge toward my father?"

"How that is possible!" Long Qi denied Yao Yao hesitation: "I know when Yu Ao Tian was little he lived in Hua Mei villa, moreover, he was the victim of that fire case, but that things actually was incident, he does not have anything alike hatred or grudge toward your father."

"Ah? He does not hate my father? But why last time he came to hospital with Mo Tong Xue, met my family and asked them about this matter?"

"Aiya, about that matter, I have heard it. Yu Ao Tian was doubted about that case, perhaps it was something had connection with your father but later on he had checked it. It was really purely incident. It was really nothing to do with your father."

"Is it all about it?" after she listened to Long Qi she feels much better, but still...

"But, last Saturday why were Yu Ao Tian expression showed as if... those things were my father fault?"

"Flat chest, you not really know Yu Ao Tian, Yu Ao Tian is type of person who dislikes explained himself or things toward anyone. He hates people digging and asking about his past, moreover last Saturday was your fault because you straightly barging inside the room. He must be so angry that time. You ought to take a break he really won't harm you family." Long Qi reassuring Yao Yao and looked so serious to his words.

For Yao Yao it is something important, if Yu Ao Tian really angry toward her because she barging into the room, she could feel little bit relieved.

"Hehehehe, Thank you Long Qi. Oh yeah, was my father the person who

trustworthy to supervise Hua Mei Villa case?"

"Uh... didn't you know it?"

She helplessly smile, lower her head: "When I was at 6 I had car accident, since that, I could not remember about my past, moreover... every time I asked or brought up about my father, my mother will cry. So that, I really not dare to ask her..."

"Oh, I understand. Your father was the person who trustworthy with that case."

"My dad trustworthy that case..." Yao Yao still feel something not right: "The fire in villa, if my dad was the person who trustworthy about that case, what Yu Ao Tian doubted about my father?"

"Well, Flat Chest, don't think too much. Whatever it is, that matter really didn't have connection with your father."

Seeing Long Qi expression, Yao Yao does not dare to ask for further, although she could feel something wrong or things seems not in right place.

Her father was the person who trustworthy to take care of that case, he wasn't the person who burned that villa, so there must be no reason for Yu Ao Tian to doubt her father, right? Although, Long Qi has stubborn admitted it was purely incident.

Whatever, she can't search and find anything regarding this case in internet, she can't ask it to Yu Ao Tian, Long Qi said nothing to worry, perhaps this is the best way. Or did she really want to hear something different?

"En, thank you Long Qi. You continue you work. I go back to work."

"Go, quickly go. Humph, I just realized you, flat chest is quite Mo Ji\*."

\*]墨 Mo 迹 Ji: in dictionary it stated mo ji is inks marks, original calligraphy or painting of the famous person. so I don't really understand what this word function in the sentence.

"Huh, this matter is so important for me, Yu Ao Tian is merciless, if really my family offended him before, it would be so troublesome. Well, I take my leave!" Yao Yao Smile cheerfully toward Long Qi and also waving her hands to him.

But after she left his office, Long Qi face expression changed, that smiled disappeared and replaced with guilty: "I am sorry Yao Yao, it really not my intention to lie. But...if this case really has something to do with your father, no matter how hard you try to stop Yu Ao Tian it really useless. I really want you to be happy, you..." he looked so heartbreaking, the only thing that he really wishes for... the truth won't come out too fast!

The finance department...

"Today at 4 o'clock our subsidiary company in French, their CEO will come here to check on our Finance Department, now I come to arrange all of your works."

"Xiao Li, you are responsible to arrange the meeting room."

"Xiao Liu, you are responsible to prepare all the documents."

"Xiao Luo, you directly copies all these blueprint and matrices into three, four sets our department three dimensional model. This is one of the most important things, you should do it carefully, understand?"

Yao Yao took that blueprint and matrices, she nodding her head: "Alright, Leader Sun, I will accomplish this work seriously."

"Very good, everyone gets move." Team Leader Sun gave her command. Some the employees inside the room are starting to do their own works.

Yao Yao hurried do her works, she even not taking her lunch and when she done with her work, time has showed, 3:55.

"Ok, everything is done."

When Yao Yao sees her job already accomplished, she re-checked again her works and also checked the meeting room seats. She is curious why Team leader Sun asked her to prepare only three or four sets? She hesitated and furrowed her brows, faster she looked for Sun Li: "Sun, Team leader Sun, how many people will be coming to check out Finance Department, why you asked me to prepare..."

"Team Leader Sun, CEO Mu from subsidiary company is coming." Someone reported.

Sun Li ignored Yao Yao, hurried she asking few of her subordinates to gather in

meeting room: "Faster, Faster, comrade!" those people have already stood up in front the meeting room.

This time the person who in charge from Berson Group to receive the subsidiary company is Regional Director, Wang Han, The Finance Department manager, Lin and also Wilson. The rest 30 person are team from French Subsidiary Company.

"Director Wang, Manager Lin, CEO Mu, welcome." Sun Li is guiding them, while some female colleagues are standing in front the door way and bowing respectably.

Yao Yao took a glance at the subsidiary company CEO, she is Chinese, her age is about thirties something, he has elegant aura and also looked so professional.

Everyone is getting into their own seat, the finance department colleagues are distributing all the documents to everyone and the meeting is starting.

"Well, after this we will distribute our finance department matrices, perhaps after everyone sees our matrices, can have better understanding about our finance department." Manager Lin spoke very fluent English.

Sun Li who stood up in front of the door rushed Yao Yao: "Quickly, Xiao Luo, take out all the matrices copies."

"Yes." She delivered it to CEO Mu first and then gives it others three sets to the other French fellow who sat near the CEO.

"En?" those who don't get their matrices copies, looked at Yao Yao.

Manager Lin frowned, hurried glared to Yao Yao: "Continue to distribute ah!"

"Distribute? No more ah, all are only four sets."

"What! My God..."

Looking at Manager Lin expression Yao Yao knows something bad will happen to her soon.

After the meeting is ended, all the employees who are responsible toward the meeting are gathered in director's room.

"What did you do? This time the subsidiary company from French are brought

30 people, how could you guys only made 4 sets of matrices copies? Who was the person responsible to it?" inside the office room, the atmosphere is so gloomy, Director Wang and also CEO Mu are inside the room too. Manager Lin is directly asking to his subordinates.

"Manager Lin, the person who responsible to the matrices was me." Yao Yao felt guilty raised her hand.

Manager Lin walked to in front of her: "Xiao Luo, you have come to finance department almost one month, although you haven't do big mistake and if not because Director Wang, you almost make our finance department lost face!"

"I am sorry. I am sorry Manager Lin, Director Wang and also CEO Mu, I am really sorry."

"Huh, I just left Berson for one year, what is going on with Berson? This company even gave job to this kind of little girl! Director Wang tell me, is it Berson Group has declined in their standard or is it only common for one or two stench fish to get inside here?" Mu Yue was vice Regional Director before, because the establishment of the subsidiary company in French she was sent to there.

She is someone very strict and also sharp tongue, one year ago everyone thought Mu Yue was demoted to the overseas.

"Xiao Mu, you are not changed even little bit, although Yao Yao did mistake, but there is nothing to do with her competency and skill." Wang Han gave faint smile, looked Yao Yao with gentle eyesight: "Xiao Luo, how could you make mistake with the matrices copies?"

This is her second times meeting Director Wang, the first impression that she got from Wang Han when she met him first time was someone gentle, elegant, and also type of encouraging superior, just alike now.

"Director Wang, it was... Team Leader Sun asked me to do so."

"Oh? Team Leader Sun, what is going on here?"

Sun Li shook her head: "It was not Director Wang! I never told Xiao Luo to do so! Xiao Luo how could you put all blames to me? That time, I was so clearly said to you to make 30 copies!"

"That's right! All of us can be witness!" few of the employees pointed at Yao Yao.

What is going on? Do all of them have problem with their ears? She is so sure that Sun Li really asked her to make three or four copies!

"Do all of you really sure that Team Leader Sun really asked to do 30 but not 3 or 4?"

"Of course we sure about it!" everyone pointed their fingers to Yao Yao, but another minutes, one of the female employee who stays closest to Yao Yao whispered: "Xiao Luo, I advise you, it better for you to give up, CEO Mu is Team Leader Sun's cousin sister. Do you understand now?"

"Xiao Luo, last time I owed you favor, now I return the favor. I have good intention to remind you, lately there is someone who is trying to deal with you, moreover this person has quite big backup who you can't afford to offend, if I were you, I would resign immediately..."

Suddenly Yao Yao recalled her conversation with Xiao Qiao. So the person Xiao Qiao referred is Team Leader Sun and her backup is CEO from subsidiary company. No wonder CEO Mu really not give face but why Team Leader Sun did it to her?

"Heh, Director Wang, put the blame to the superior, tarnish the superior reputation, I think this must related to employees characters, don't you think so?" Mu Yue enveloped her in front body with her hand and mocking with laughing.

"HeHe, perhaps Xiao Luo really heard mistaken, this time just take it as first warn."

"First warn? Director Wang, you are too favor this small employee, I think if CEO Yu knows about this matter, he will immediately fire this employee, right? After all, our CEO Yu does not like careless employees, doesn't he?"

"HeHe, Xiao Mu, although one year ago you was the vice Regional Director, but still this finance department is under my supervision, you should know, your current position is the CEO of our subsidiary company in French, so that all the subordinates under my supervision is no one you can touch!" at the moment, Director Wang expression changed to be super gloomy.

"Well." Mu Yue stood up and coldly said: "Well, how about we take this matter to CEO Yu. I think when CEO Yu knows about this matter, the person who get punish not only this employee, but I afraid all the finance department staff will be suffered it too."

"Wait! CEO Mu." Yao Yao called Mu Yue, she also turned to look at Director Wang: "Thank you for your supervision and also caring, Director Wang. I am willing to... resign."

"Humph, at least you are quite sensible, Xiao Luo." Sun Li whispered to Xiao Luo while she looked coldly toward Sun Li and also CEO Mu, she only can shake her head.

#### 146

### **Chapter 146**

"Xiao Qiao, do you know why Team Leader Sun is trying to confront me?"

"It is so simple. Not long ago, you have helped the company to earn huge amount of money, Director Wang always has mind to promote you as Team Leader. Sun Li is afraid you might threaten her position so that she alliance with CEO Mu to scheme you. Xiao Luo, I know you are someone who smart and talented, but in this society what you need is backup and support, in today's world if you don't have it, you are surely to get bullied."

After leaving Berson, Yao Yao met Xiao Qiao, finally she understood Sun Li's reason.

#### Ahahaha...

Long time ago when she was a student, she always believe as long as she has capability and skill she will success, but now when she is introduced to the society she realized all her thought are too naïve and day-dreaming, in today's life if there is no backup, with talent it will only give other people reason to attack herself.

She really does not want to leave in this way, at least she does not want to leave with this kind of image, but CEO Mu was deliberately made things difficult to Director Wang, after listened to CEO Mu who said that, all the staffs in finance department would also get involved, she really does not have other solution than resign.

"This still not counted as big obstacles entering the society, first obstacle was Manager Zhang and now she is facing with Team Leader Sun and CEO Mu, does this society really as black as other people said?"

So far, Yao Yao never really doubted and lost her confident, but...

"Argh!" she took long breathe, on the moment she raised her head, her eyes little bit blurry looked at her in front view: "How can I run to Berson parking lot?"

When she is in Berson Parking lot, her eyes spotted Yu Ao Tian's Bugatti. Who is sitting inside his car?

She quite curious so she slowly walking close to that car to see...

Inside is Yu Ao Tian, but why he is leaning forward inside his own car? Ah forget him, it not my business!

She coldly gave him supercilious look and then turned away, but... Long Qi said everything only misunderstanding, so why she must act as enemy toward him?

Can't avoid, last Sunday matter, the way she speaking with Yu Ao Tian because she was pissed off with him about Saturday matter.

Well, this is still inside the company, perhaps she must speak something to him, there must nothing happen right? She walked toward the car's window and knocking the glass window: "Yu Ao Tian! Yu Ao Tian, what happen to you, Yu Ao Tian?"

Long time, finally Yu Ao Tian response the glass window is slowly going down, he forces himself to raise his head looked up from the window.

Yao Yao looked his face carefully: "What happen to you, why your face so red?" she stretches out her hand and touched his forehead, so hot!

"Yu Ao Tian you are having fever, faster go to have rest."

"It is okay, I just need to rest for while."

"It is not the matter of rest, you must hurry to take a medicine, if you let it will be more severe, ah forget it. Let me send you back to home." Yao Yao opened the driver's seat: "Do you have strength to move and sit at back?"

He used all his strength to move from the driver seat to the passenger seat, Yao Yao started the car engine and not long after that she drives the car.

"How is your condition?"

"It's okay..."

Stills okay? Looking how obediently and quiet, she knows he must be so suffer, he really have time to save his face, what kind of man he is?

Without choice, Yao Yao drives the car to their old villa because it is nearer

compare to current villa she lives. Others than it nearer, inside the villa also have medicine box with many kinds of drugs.

"Come, get down from the car." Yao Yao supported Yu Ao Tian to enter the villa; "Yu Ao Tian, have you eaten your dinner?" She asked while covered him with quilt.

"Not yet."

"Well, you sleep for moment, I will cook congee for you, after you have your meal then you can take the medicine, understand?" She is talking alike someone who taking care her own child.

If not because Yu Ao Tian is really sick, he really wanted to teach this Little Thing who is the adult and child between them.

Almost 1 hour, Yao Yao served the congee to bowl and brought it inside to Yu Ao Tian's room: "Come and take your meal."

He looked at the bowl filled with congee: "Do you think that I still have strength to hold the bowl?"

"Huh, come, I feed you, wake up." She sees Yu Ao Tian not moving, she little bit worried: "Wake up ah, you lie down how I can feed you ah."

"Use your mouth to feed me!"

Uh... does Yu Ao Tian have healed from his sickness? This word is really fits his style ah.

Yao Yao despised him and frowned, stretch out her hand and touch his forehead, this time it is still hot...

"You hurry wake up! Is it okay to wake up? Wake up...." She tried to speak soft to higher tone, but Yu Ao Tian not gave her reaction.

"Do whatever you like. It up to you, eat or not! Not my business!" she wanted to leave, but suddenly Yu Ao Tian pulled her wrist. "Uh." Don't underestimate this man, although he is having fever but his strength quite strong. "What do you want?"

"Use mouth, feed me!"

Bastard! If I know the end will be like this, I would not help you.

She must not save this bad man and let him die because of fever. She is afraid if not doing as his desire. She could not leave this place forever, perhaps?

Helpless, Yao Yao sits down in the bedside, feed him used her mouth...

This is not the first time she kissed him or touching his lips but this is her first time to have initiative to take first step touching his lips. Actually she feels so embarrassing.

Little bit hesitates but finally she feed him too. Her heart is beating hard when her lips touched his lips. Somehow inside the room the atmosphere feels so awkward.

After she done feeding Yu Ao Tian, his pair of hands already hooked to her waist, so bossy and domineering hugging onto her.

She is trying to free herself but suddenly...

"Yu... Yu Ao Tian, you are... having fever." Yao Yao Staggered because Yu Ao Tian suddenly pressed his body to Yao Yao.

He acted as if not hear what Yao Yao said and suddenly he is trying to strip Yao Yao, "No, Please don't..."

"Yu Ao Tian, stop!"

She is going to be crazy, really going to be crazy.

"Call me Yu Ao Tian!" he lifts his head up, his eyes not focus but his expression looked so serious.

It does not matter how to address him, but between her and Yu Ao Tian, their relationship are quite strange, this time calling his name is sound so awkward. Yao Yao keeps silent and avoid him.

"Not call?" he deviously smiled, his hand slides into her undergarment...

At sudden Yao Yao body reacting, she is trembling: "Please don't... stop... stop..." she is trying to stop his hand.

"If you want me to stop, what should you do?"

She gazed at Yu Ao Tian, shyly she begged: "I am begging you... Ao Tian...

please stop."

You damn little thing! How can she look this cute? Yu Ao Tian has been conquered by her pureness, her cuteness. Simply to say she looked alike the pure angel, to be honest he really want to bully and tease her but seeing her sobbing and also the way she begging, he stopped.

"Bao Bei, I want you! I really can't wait for you anymore!" He looked so domineering while Yao Yao looked alike little white rabbit that afraid of him. She afraid something will happen between them. She closed her eyes, surrender but for quite long time Yu Ao Tian does not do anything. Her heart beating so fast, took glanced to that man, once she glanced, Yu Ao Tian has already faint out.

Ah~ lucky.

Yao Yao sighed, she tried to push away Yu Ao Tian's body which pressed on her body, hurried to dress herself properly: "Too dangerous, that's really too dangerous."

If this situation does not happen when Yu Ao Tian has fever perhaps something had already happened between them, but...

But if he really does not have fever, will he also lost control of himself?

No matter what, she must not get too close with him, because she never know when he will turned be scary and also dangerous.

Yao Yao turned and want to leave, she has already in front of the door but suddenly she glances to Yu Ao Tian who is lying down in bed, "Frustrated!" she turned back, carefully she covered Yu Ao Tian's body with quilt.

"Yu Ao Tian, I have done to my utmost duty. If you really have little bit heart and consideration, later in the future you must not bully me." She murmured, feed him medicine.

Although feeding him medicine little bit inhumane, but still the medicine will melt inside his mouth.

#### **Chapter 147**

Early in morning, a ray of the sunshine radiating on the large bed, Yu Ao Tian eyes blinking and his Adam apple moving, he opened his eyes: "Uh..." he clicking his neck because his head little bit hurt. Moreover he could feel the bitter taste in his mouth.

He gulped his saliva, to clear the bitter taste, "Little Thing?"

When he sees Yao Yao who sleep by leaning forward her head to the bedside, suddenly he feels at loss, but so quickly he remembered about yesterday matter...

He remembered clearly that he was trying to force Yao Yao because of his impulsiveness, he was lost control of himself, did it because his fever? So that he really could not control himself.

He laughed stupidly to himself, he really wanted to know whether something had happened or not yesterday.

His eyesight locked at Yao Yao who is sleeping so soundly, he laughed again, no need to ask, it so clear that nothing happened yesterday, he was not "succeed" or else how could this little thing sleep this soundly besides him.

Yu Ao Tian lightly moves his hands and feet, suddenly touching something fall down from his forehead before, it is small white towel.

He used his hand to touch that towel, it still wet. Did little thing take care of him for the entire night? Ha, he always treat her as child, he never know that she also can show her mature side.

A charming smiled embellish his face, he gets down from bed, gently hold Yao Yao in his embraces and moves her to bed.

"Humph..." she looked not happy and frowned, opened half her eyes: "Hate!"

fiercely despise Yu Ao Tian but immediately she closes her eyes again.

"Huh..." he just praised little thing who has mature side but now she gets back to her old-self, that childish little girl. Yu Ao Tian helplessly shaking his head, but the smile still there in his face with doting eyesight.

After long time, the sun has rise highly, Yao Yao just wakes up. "Ah..." she is stretching her body, when she raised her hand, her fist touched Yu Ao Tian's face: "Ah?" she took a look.

Yu Ao Tian who is lying beside Yao Yao is smiling deviously: "Wake up?"

"How can I sleep beside you?"

"Bao Bei, you really sleep very similar to pig, don't you remember that I have moved you to bed?"

"Uh. I don't know. Oh yeah, how is your fever?" Yao Yao touched his forehead, took a deep breath: "Feel much better."

Seeing her who looks so innocent, pure, Yu Ao Tian for once again mesmerizing with her pureness, strangely he have thought to protect her innocent, pureness and naïve self.

"I remembered last Saturday someone little thing was trying to kill me, but only at one blink, that someone little thing has saved me, ah."

"Yu Ao Tian!"

"En? It seems that yesterday this wasn't the way you call my name, do I need to help you recalling your memory?" after said, one of his hands grabbed her waist and pulled her closer to him.

"No! No! Don't need. We reconciled, Ao Tian!"

"Ah!"

"You, what are you laughing at? I do really sincerely about it."

Perhaps Yao Yao does not know, there are lot of women who begging to him, also many women who trying to get his favor by doing many scheming, but someone like Yao Yao who directly and straight forwardly said, "we reconciled", this is his first time!

Does she think that both of them are having children fight? Say break off and then break off or reconcile and then reconcile? Damn! But, He seems really can be consoled by little thing in this way.

"Why you want to reconcile with me?"

"I, I have heard from Long Qi, actually you have checked about my father and you have verified those matter. There is no grudge between my father and you, as this being the case, it means that you won't harm my family. Last Saturday I was too impulsive, I am sorry..."

What did Long Qi say to her? Yu Ao Tian keeps quiet for moment but actually he can predict what Long Qi said.

To be honest, Yu Ao Tian is someone who not patience with women, but Long Qi compared to him is few times impatience.

But recently, Yu Ao Tian realized that Long Qi for these few days seem to be so considered thoroughly to coax Yao Yao, this is not Long Qi who he has known!

Whatever it is, he really does not want to expose Long Qi lies, at any rate ... he really does not want to ruin this picturesque moment.

## **Chapter 148 - 150**

"Little Thing, do you know what time now?"

"What time?"

"12 o'clock in the afternoon."

"O."

But she does not have intention to wake up from her bed, Yu Ao Tian curiously asked: "Today, don't you go for working or do you ask work leave from office?"

"No need to ask permission." Yao Yao face turned to be gloomy, she backed him, softly said: "I, I have resigned."

"En?" this is really something refreshing, before she has done many things in order to be able working but why now suddenly she took initiative to resign?

"Why? Are you really wanted to focus to be my lover?"

"No, going for working is meaningless, I don't want to go anymore." Actually this is best opportunity to tell Yu Ao Tian about yesterday matter but she is someone who dislikes complain or make small report.

"Oh... so that..."

"My, I feel little bit hungry, I go to cook, do you want to eat?"

"En, you cook." When he sees Yao Yao leaving the room, Yu Ao Tian pair of eyes flashed, slowly he takes his phone from bedside: "Long Ye, you go to check why Yao Yao resign."

"Ok, I will give you the answer later."

One hour later, Yu Ao Tian who has stayed quite long inside bedroom are wondering why Yao Yao haven't call him to eat, he wears shirt and going downstairs: "Bao Bei, how many dishes you make? It has been one hour but... Bao Bei, what happen?" his feet just entered the kitchen and saw Yao Yao bend

down in floor, hurried he rushed to help her stand up. "Get burn?"

"No... I'm fine." Her eyes corner has tears and she really looks so cute for Yu Ao Tian

She feels little bit guilty: "I have burned... the congee."

"Hah." Yu Ao Tian does not restrain himself, he straightforwardly laughing hard, because her condition is really too cute. "The congee has burned just leave it, what are you crying for?"

"I really useless, even cooking the congee can get burn..."

"You say, a person like you, it is only me, Feng Chen Yi who wants you!"

"What do you mean Feng Chen Yi?"

"You even cook the congee over-cooked and burn, what else you can do? Aiya, it seems that in the future when I married you, I really need to pay more maids to help you."

That year, because her lacking in cooking she was teased by Feng Chen Yi, so she promised herself she ought to rouse to vigorous action. But who knows... she still same as she used to be, she cooked ten times congee, seven times failed and three times succeed. Yesterday when she cooked the congee for Yu Ao Tian, it was considered as the succeed one, three from ten.

"It is okay, you can't cook, let me cook for you."

"Ah?" Yao Yao blinking her big with moisten eyes because of tears, she seems not to ensure Yu Ao Tian's words, but when she sees Yu Ao Tian smiling eyes, her heart is strangely beating faster, "Thump Thump Thump".

"It will be done in moment, just wait for me."

"I, I want to learn from you, can I?"

"Of course you can."

Yao Yao is standing beside Yu Ao Tian, she sees how skillful he used the knife, simply to say she is stunned to see his skill. Actually this isn't her first time for her to taste food that make by Yu Ao Tian, but this is her first time she takes closer look at Yu Ao Tian who is cooking.

When she was at school, most of male classmate would come closer to those classmates who able to cook, furthermore for the male classmate who can cook were more welcoming by female classmate but she never have faith about man actually really can cook, but now she really witness the real and live example, she really believed it now.

Yu Ao Tian looks so good looking when he is cooking, really handsome, of course he also looks handsome although he is not cooking. Actually if she thinks carefully this man really have many strong points, really many. But...half-hearted, his moody character is really his lacking!

Whatever! Now looking at him again, he is not really that handsome.

"Ding Dong" (Door bell sound)

"Bao Bei, it seems there is guest coming, you go to open the door."

"Oh." Who will be? She has been long time not staying in here, today is her first time stay and someone has coming. Yao Yao is so curious when she walking to open the door, at the moment she open the door...

She is dumbstruck. How can... how can Director Wang, CEO Mu, and also Team Leader Sun coming here?

Outside the door those three people also dumfounded.

Sun Li frowned: "Aiyo, Xiao Luo, you really have your way ah, you even dare come to CEO's house to make small report."

"Huh, I have faith that CEO Yu won't favor anyone." Mu Yue coldly said, she stride over and walking inside the house, followed by Sun Li.

Yao Yao feels so awkward seeing both of them who has been walking inside the house, and then her eyes looked at Director Wang, she awkwardly smiles at him: "Hello Director Wang."

"Hello."

"Oh yeah, why are... are you coming to CEO Yu's place?" actually it must be Director Wang who is asking her why she is in CEO's house.

"Hehe, General Manager Long is asking me to come here, I also not really sure why I called to here, but I have faith... something good will happen." Director Wang elegantly smiled, one of his hand stroking Yao Yao's head and then he walking inside the room heading to the living room.

"Where is CEO Yu?" When Mu Yue is inside the living room, there is no trace of Yu Ao tian's shadow and her eyes is looking for Yu Ao Tian to all corners.

Yao Yao awkwardly pointed at kitchen direction: "Yu, CEO Yu... he is in kitchen."

Mu Yue is coldly glancing at Yao Yao, she brings Sun Li with her to kitchen...

"Hello CEO Yu."

"Yu, CEO Yu, how are you!" when Sun Li sees Yu Ao Tian's back, she can't stop herself to gulping her saliva, the main point Yu Ao Tian is someone belongs to cold and cool types of man. Moreover when seeing him wearing this kind of faintly discernible dress that exposed his muscle, he looks so charming.

"I am cooking, both of you wait for me in living room." Yu Ao Tian coldly said while busying with his some stuffs in his hand, he not even looked at them.

"Alright, CEO Yu."

"Yes, CEO Yu." Sun Li feels chill and her eyes meet Mu Yue's eyes and then both of them walking back to living room: "Sis, I always have feeling that CEO Yu is someone scary."

"Nonsense, he is only twenty seven but he has to manage one big company, he absolutely has dragon inside him (someone awesome), if he does not have domineering and intimidating aura, how can he be?"

"Ah? So CEO Yu is twenty years old? I thought he is someone in his thirties." Sun Li does not mean Yu Ao Tian old but more to his aura that he showed, he has mature aura inside him, somewhat he really not look someone in his twenties. Even Mu Yue who is in her thirties could not compare to Yu Ao Tian.

"This is very normal. I have ever met Feng's Group General Manager, Feng Chen Yi. That brat this year is twenty two but he looked so senior, Li Li you must know, either CEO Yu or General Manager Feng, if both of them are not give domineering aura vibes, they won't stand in today society."

"En, I understood." Both of this sister cousins are talking while walking to the

living room.

At the same time, Yao Yao also having conversation with Director Wang.

Mu Yue coughed one time: "Ehm." She is coldly standing up in front of Yao Yao.

And at this time, Yao Yao is hurried standing up: "Mu... CEO Mu, please have sit."

"Huh." Director Wang sighed, helplessly gazed at Mu Yue. "Come here, Little girl, you sit beside me."

"No, no need, Director Wang, all of you have chat, I will go to help Yu... CEO Yu."

"Xiao Luo, you really good at butter up, you are? I advice you better to give up this thought. No one knows who will be able to climb at CEO Yu's bed but for sure the person won't be you, you really not see yourself clearly, you have baby face, how can it attract CEO Yu?" Sun Li really said something so harsh.

Both of them at least have been colleagues for half month, during that time she hasn't sensed Sun Li is someone like this, or perhaps because she has joined to society for quite long time so she has so many sides.

"Sun Li, you don't need to talk much shit with this kind of person." in front of other people, this cousin sister always showed their boss-subordinate relationship.

"Oh, I understand, CEO Mu."

Both of them are really spoken poorly about her, they have made her to resign from her job but why they haven't satisfied? Yao Yao biting her lips, make fist from her hand.

At this time, Yu Ao Tian is walking out from kitchen, gentle and softly said: "Bao Bei, the food is done, come to have your meal."

"Ah?" both of Sun Li and Mu Yue looking each other, both of them really want to know who is Bao Bei, addressed by Yu Ao Tian? Is there any other person inside this house?

"Oh, under... understand." Yao Yao awkwardly walking toward the dining

room, she can feel the surprised of Sun Li and Mu Yue expression from her back.

Mu Yue and Sun Li can see Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao, face to face from the living room to dining room. They got shock.

It is only Director Wang who smiles brightly without thinking anything.

"Is it taste good?" Yu Ao Tian puts the Chicken drumstick to her bowl.

"En, taste so good!" she nodded, her mouth is filled with food, but she isn't flattering Yu Ao Tian but because it really taste good.

"Bao Bei, you eat slowly." Yu Ao Tian helplessly wipes her mouth, he gently touched her nose tip: "You be careful don't get choke!"

"Oh, it is okay."

From the living room to dining room, both of their "loving affection" have pierced into Mu Yue and Sun Li eyes.

But can't avoid Yu Ao Tian domineering aura that dominating the atmosphere...

The business world has business world etiquette, the company internal department has their own etiquette, as CEO in one company someone must have CEO aura, so that seeing Yu Ao Tian who is eating in dining room while his subordinate who is waiting inside the living room, this really something unimaginable prestige!

After half hour, all the food which served to the table has been wiping clean by Yao Yao, she almost licking the plate until clean.

For once again Yu Ao Tian really admires Yao Yao eating ability, if he really poor little bit, perhaps he really cannot support this little thing!

After he cleans everything, finally he walks to inside the living room: "All of you are waiting for long time." He coldly said.

Mu Yue awkwardly smiled: "No, No, No, CEO Yu, this we ought to do." Her eyes not dare to look at Yao Yao who is standing beside Yu Ao Tian.

"Oh, yeah, I would like to introduce, this is my girlfriend Luo Yao Yao." Yu Ao Tian puts his hand on Yao Yao's shoulder, he smiles warmly to Yao Yao.

Does Yu Ao Tian... do it purposely?

Although she looked little bit awkward, but inside her heart actually she is... feel the opposite, she feels so sweet! After all just now Sun Li was jeered her, as the result Yu Ao Tian paid her back hardly in instant —-at "one hard slaps".

Secretly feel happy, Yao Yao took glance toward Mu Yue and Sun Li expression, both of them are lowering their head, while their body are trembling.

"CEO Mu, yesterday when you arrived, but it turned that my body felt little bit uncomfortable so I not joined to your welcoming party." Yu Ao Tian embraces Yao Yao and sat down in sofa.

Mu Yue awkwardly smiled: "CEO Yu, you really too courteous, there is no sense for you to welcome me."

"Hah, how is France?

"Hm, it is quite good."

"En, just so in right time. This time do you get interested to France for our vacation, Bao Bei?" Yu Ao Tian smiling sweetly to Yao Yao.

Her head looking down shyly, "Do as you please..." somewhat the room atmosphere is filling with so strange and weird air.

This kind of feeling not only she felt it but also Mu Yue and Sun Li.

At the moment they knew Yao Yao is Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend, their first reaction is —- deadmeat, no one's understand why Yu Ao Tian is talking all-around but not to the point.

Actually Mu Yue can't bear it anymore, her straightforward nature, directly opened her mouth: "Yu, CEO Yu, have you heard about yesterday matter?"

"Yesterday matter?" Yu Ao Tian furrowed his brows, coldly asked: "What did happen yesterday?"

"It was something that regarding to... to your girlfriend."

"Yao Yao? What was it?" Yu Ao Tian acted as if he does not know what is going on and stare at Yao Yao.

To be honest, Yao Yao really not believed if Yu Ao Tian does not know anything,

otherwise how could he gather these three persons who were involved in yesterday matter?

"Well, it is, CEO Yu."

"It is better I say it." Seeing how Mu Yue dillydallies, Wang Han directly spoke up: "Yesterday when we were in meeting room, Team Leader Sun has ordered Xiao Luo to prepare the blueprints and matrices copies. But the result, Xiao Luo only prepared four sets, actually it must be prepared 30 copies. Hence, Xiao Mu was insisting to fire Xiao Luo."

"CEO Yu, no... it was not, actually..."

"CEO Mu, you don't need to explain." Yu Ao Tian is completely not give Mu Yue opportunity to speak up, he coldly said: "I think you solve the problem very good, it was Yao Yao fault, so she must be fired."

After listened to Yu Ao Tian, Sun Li took long breathe, but somewhat Mu Yue felt even nervous.

"No, CEO Yu, actually... actually after I have thought about this matter carefully, I do think it wasn't fully Yao Yao fault. It was Sun Li who gave command to Yao Yao to do it, so she must take the responsible too."

"Oh? Regarding to CEO Mu... how should this problem to be solved?"

"That, how about not fire Yao Yao but instead we give both of them demerit. Can they, CEO Yu?"

"Of course cannot!" Yu Ao Tian looked dark: "CEO Mu, you must know me that I always differentiating very clear between reward and punishment, I hate the careless employee, this time if giving both of them demerit what is use of warning? I think, it better come to the first idea to fire Yao Yao, and about Xiao Sun..."

Sun Li feels her heart tighten, she panic keep on looking at her cousin sister, non-stop signaling SOS from her eyesight.

Mu Yue also cannot do much and frowned, hurried said: "CEO Yu, how about to demote one level for both of them. What do you think?"

"Demoted by one level..." Yu Ao Tian is acting pretending he is in difficult

position and looked at Wang Han: "Director Wang, what do you think?"

"To demote by one level is acceptable. Sun Li will be ordinary staff after she demoted but Xiao Luo is already ordinary staff before, if she gets demoted she will be super ordinary employee, but what will we do about it?"

"Well, how about to promote Yao Yao at one level and then after one month we demote her, can this do?"

#### HaH!

If not because Yao Yao forcing herself not to laugh, maybe she has already laughing until her vein comes out, simply to say Yu Ao Tian really so cunning, she never meet someone like him who able to use his power to support his bad and evil nature!

First he is trying to force CEO Mu to show her diffident, and then force her to suggest the punishment for Sun Li, and also suggest Yao Yao to get promote by one level, after one month demote her?

Hah, this Yu Ao Tian really good in calculating, he surely does know that one month later she must back to study at school, doesn't he?

"Yu, CEO Yu, I accept my punishment from you, but Xiao Luo just joining the Finance department less than one month, how can you promote her to be Team Leader?" Sun Li is questioning Yu Ao Tian decision. She really not afraid to demote but she just afraid if Yao Yao become her supervisor because she had done something to Yao Yao before, anyone must take revenge.

"Well promote to two levels."

"CEO Yu!"

"Three level!" at the moment, Yu Ao Tian eyes is gleaming dangerously, his domineering aura is intimidating both Sun Li and Mu Yue so they cannot say anything.

They are afraid if they keep on speaking, Yao Yao position may promote more than General Manager levels.

"I, I understand, CEO Yu, if there is nothing to be said, I will take..."

"Hm, CEO Mu, don't rush to leave. I heard you have done very well in France

subsidiary company, I have decided to keep you working at there for 4 years.

"Ah? Yu..."

"Well, both of you can go now." Yu Ao Tian really does not give Mu Yue opportunity to speak.

Her face is dark when taking Sun Li out together with her from Yu Ao Tian's villa.

"Cousin sister, actually at the beginning CEO Yu not mentioned about my matter, why did you tell him?"

"You are foolish. Do you think based on your position CEO Yu would personally ask you to come? If I really pretended to be fool, the result must be more severe!" no matter what to say Mu Yue is also one of the top level management, she has ever accessed Yu Ao Tian work environment before, so she really understood how Yu Ao Tian solved things.

"You ah, when CEO Yu wanted to promote Xiao Luo one level I didn't dare to speak up but see what did you do? Now, Xiao Luo is promoted to be Manager, I really want to know how your days in Finance Department later!"

"I really not believe, CEO Yu will promote Xiao Luo as Manager."

"Hah, CEO Yu is someone keep his words, you will see whether CEO Yu dare or not! Moreover, I can guarantee, no one dares to complain."

"Impossible. Does CEO Yu that scary?" from just now when she met Yu Ao Tian, Sun Li only could feel the domineering vibes from Yu Ao Tian that intimidating, but after she heard what her sister cousin said, she really can feel Yu Ao Tian is scarier person. "Forget it, I don't burden you sister cousin is good enough."

"Do you think you aren't burdening me? CEO Yu always killing people without trace, he keeps me 4 years just waiting to demote me by three levels, I am more severe than you!"

"Ah? Sister cousin, this time I really sorry to you." Sun Li not even can cry, she thought she have quite big backup, but now when she knew...her backup is nothing compare to Yao Yao... not even comparable to Yao Yao's fart!

After Mu Yue and Sun Li left, Yu Ao Tian free Yao Yao: "Director Wang, how is the capability of the current Finance Manager?"

"So so, he is only substitute manager, if you ask Xiao Luo to replace him, I think it will be thorny problem. But you can promote him to be new manager and then let Yao Yao to be vice manager, I think this is much better."

"En, just do it."

"Ah?" Yao Yao who is silent suddenly open wide her eyes, looked at Yu Ao Tian and showed unbelievable toward him: "what do you mean? I thought you are kidding just now."

"Did you think I am kidding?"

Nonsense, who would think he is kidding, it only because two words, she has got promoted from ordinary staff to vice manager, wouldn't the employees protest?

"Don't like this, this will attract other dissatisfaction."

"HaHa, little girl, CEO Yu has enormous words weight, if whatever he said not counted, it would be the real problem." Director Wang Han stood up: "CEO Yu, this matter, let me to settle it. I take my leave."

"En."

"Director Wang... Director Wang..." Yao Yao is trying to stop Wang Han, but he has already left.

"Yu Ao Tian, do you think this is best solution?"

Yu Ao Tian coldly looked at her, one of his hand support his head and leaning backward on sofa.

"Why don't you say something ah?" Yao Yao is so curious and squat in front of him.

"Little Thing, if later you dare to call my name, I will strangle you to death!"

"Oh... Ao Tian, well do you think I have capability to take vice manager position?"

"Hehe, just give it a try." Whatever he not really care about Yao Yao capability,

he didn't fire Sun Li because he wanted to see how Yao Yao will act when she become Sun Li's boss!

"Give it a try?" Yu Ao Tian said it so easily, just forget it, whatever she will back to school soon, just take it as practice.

"Oh yeah, just now... thank you."

He smiled deviously, one of his hand raised her chin: "Little Thing, later if you meet this kind of problem, you can tell me directly."

"I can't do it." Yao Yao expressionless.

"Can't do it?"

"If you ask me to make small report or complains, sorry I can't do it. Both of it is no good, neither for me nor for you."

"Ao Tian, that person is bullied me."

"Ao Tian you must help me to take and make the decision."

Long time ago, those women who were stayed beside him like to make small report or complain. So, it already comes to be habit. For long time, finally he feels so annoying and irritating with those women.

But now...

He meets girl who won't do that small report or complain, inside his heart it has something that he can't describe. Perhaps because of this, he never feel boring when he with this little thing.

"Bao Bei, stand up." Yu Ao Tian is already stood up, he pulled her to sit beside him.

Yao Yao spotted him to take the TV remote.

"Uh Oh it really feels good." Suddenly there is an erotic sound from the television when he turned the TV on.

Yao Yao is shocked when her eyes looked at television, her face turned red at sudden. She hurried to go since the remote is with Yu Ao Tian.

She is going to be crazy if she hears it because Yu Ao Tian purposely makes the volume louder.

Actually Yu Ao Tian just likes to play frank with her, teasing her when he is in his good mood. But sometimes, Yu Ao Tian also can lost his control when he playing with Yao Yao. But somewhat there are something strange between them, no matter how Yu Ao Tian wants Yao Yao to be his, he won't really force her to do and patiently waiting for her to do it willingly with him. He never behaves in this way before toward any woman in his life.

And even when he almost at his limit, he still prefer to endure rather than break his promise to Yao Yao, he won't do it if she not ask for. So, that Yao Yao has faith in him although he sometimes goes overboard with his teasing.

# Chapter 151 - 154

"I like you." Yao Yao said softly to Yu Ao Tian, sweetly and smile at him.

At the moment Yu Ao Tian stunned but another second his expression changed, he smiled helplessly to her: "A Like that similar to liking big brother, is it you mean?"

"Fn."

He has already known that she would give him this answer. But there is a time he really thought she meant real, as predicted she... is only a little girl!

"Didn't you tell Nan Lu that you dislike me? But now why you like me?"

It seems that time he heard her conversation with Nan Lu.

"It was last time matter. You had cooked for me, you also helped me to wash the pant which wet with pee. So I like you. But still if you do something bad, I will hate you too."

"Little thing, after I listen to your words..." suddenly Yu Ao Tian pinched her chin: "I realized, you really takes me as your servant!"

"No, it is not like that." For the naïve Yao Yao, she really appreciates everyone who treated her well, although Yu Ao Tian had hurt her for many times.

And then...

Actually there is something that Yao Yao does not know, actually Yu Ao Tian is clean-freak, not to mention washing pant, even washing clothes he won't do it, furthermore cooking, most of time he only cooks for himself.

But now without he realised, he really does all those things.

Is it because the scar?

His deep black eyes are staring at her shoulder, he removed his hand from her chin and his lips gently kissed on her scar...

"Uh?" Yao Yao dumbfounded, on this moment she can see Yu Ao Tian's pair of eyes is shiny brightly, every times he looked at her shoulder's scar, he would shown that kind of eyes expression, why his eyesight looks so different? Ao Tian, you...

# "Let forget everything that happened yesterday, now you are in my..." (Phone Ringtone)

When she is thinking the answer for her own question, suddenly her mobile phone is ringing. She hurried to pick it up: "Hello?"

"Yao Yao..."

It is Yao Yao's mom phone call. She could feel something wrong in her mom's voice: "Mom, what happen?"

"I, I am fine, you, do you have time now? Come to hospital."

"I have! I will go there immediately!" is her mom crying? What is going on? She hung up the phone call, nervously she took one of her clothes from her wardrobe.

"Bao Bei, what happen?"

"Hospital, something is happened in hospital, I ... I need to go there."

"I will drive you to there."

At the beginning Yao Yao is refused because she remembered that Yu Ao Tian ever came to visit her family in hospital with Mo Xue Tong. She afraid her mother and grandfather will know her relationship with Yu Ao Tian. But, Yu Ao Tian promised her he would only drive her to the hospital and not meet her family.

"Where are my clothes?" Yu Ao Tian asked Yao Yao when he could not find his clothes.

"Yesterday all your body was sweating so I put your clothes to laundry. It seems only the shirts that already dry."

"It is okay, don't I have any clothes in your place?" Yu Ao Tian opened the wardrobe.

"That suit does not belong to you." Yao Yao said when she looked Yu Ao Tian is already opened the wardrobe.

"Humph! Whose suit is it?"

"You listen to me, do you still remember two years ago incident when I met you in Host Bar, the day I running from you?"

*"En!"* 

"I was running from you. My body only covered by quilt. I had jumped from second floor. During that time, by my good luck there was good person who helped me and gave that suit to me. So I didn't run naked."

If not Yao Yao said about this matter, he almost forgot that two years ago he had torn-off her clothes before she was running. He never thought this little thing has guts to be naked and run away from him rather than stayed beside him.

When Yu Ao Tian's eyes spotted at the suit's brand, his eyes gleaming... this suit was belonging to him!

"Bao Bei, do you know the suit owner?"

"Ah?" Yao Yao didn't see the person because that time she was panic and only thinking to escape. So she really didn't know the person. She really hopes that one day she could meet the person and thank him personally. "I don't know because I didn't see his face."

"Hah! Perhaps you will meet him soon!" Said Yu Ao Tian who is already known the suit owner.

"Let's go to the hospital."

Yao Yao is going to hospital with Yu Ao Tian but he just drove her to the hospital in front. She is worried something and along the way to hospital she looked so anxious. She is afraid her grandpa sickness gets worse.

Her mother is strong woman, so what kind of matter that makes her mother crying? Does her grandpa sickness worsen?

Pei Pei! Her grandpa is good person so the heaven will protect him.

When she arrived at hospital, she is rushing to her grandpa's room. She tried to control herself before she enters the room: "Mom... You..."

At the moment she entered the room, her eyes spotted Li Mei Yun who sits in the sofa while Xiao Zhen is standing beside her.

They... why they in hospital?

Strangely her body quivering, Yao Yao nervously gulping her saliva, trying to be composed: "Miss Li, why are you coming here?"

Li Mei Yun smiles sweetly, her eyes looked at Mother Luo: "Aunty, this matter should you or me who say it?"

"What... what's matter?"" Yao Yao has bad premonition and she is having cold sweat now.

"I will say it. Miss Li, my father in law condition not really well, can we have talk at outside?" Mother Luo spoke with begging intonation.

But Li Mei Yun does not have that intention: "I don't think it necessary. Will going to outside better than speaking in here? Just afraid, there will be more people know about it, is it?"

"Daughter in law, it is okay. I trust Yao Yao, just say it in here." Said grandpa Luo who is lying down in his bed.

"Father..." Mother Luo almost got chocked when she saw her father in law firm attitude. She also not dragged it anymore. She is slowly walking to Yao Yao in front.

Yao Yao is trembling when her mother walking closer to her.

"Yao Yao, this Miss Li... she said..." Mother Luo looked at Li Mei Yun: "She said that you are "support" by her boyfriend to be... lover, is it true?"

"Doomed" she could feel her heart tighten.

Actually on the moment she had spotted Li Mei Yun inside this room she has already known something bad would be happened, but when she heard this matter directly from her mother, she still helplessly to face it, it is not only she lost her face but she really worries about Luo's Family.

Li Mei Yun ah... Li Mei Yun ah... this time your movement is really merciless!

Li Mei Yun is sitting in sofa laughed: "Little girl, you say, usually how good am I to you? First time when I saw you in Ao Tian's house, I have been thought you as my little sister but you? You even dare to seduce my man in front of my own eyes!"

"That's right, Xiao Luo, in conscience, that day I have caught you red handed with Mr. Yu in bed, I thought you might reflect on yourself, so I didn't tell my Miss. But who knows that you are really such shameless?"

Stop it! Don't say anymore!

She has made self-preparation when she had decided to be Yu Ao Tian's lover.

But, hadn't Li Mei Yun revenged on her before? Didn't it enough? Must she tell everything in front of her mother and also her Grandpa ruined her family and then she will be satisfied?

"Miss Li!" Grandpa Luo is changing his position to sitting position.

"Father?"

"Daughter in law, I am okay." He waved his hand, coldly glared at Li Mei Yun: "You watch out your mouth, I am Luo Chang is soldier for two generations, I have strict teaching toward Yao Yao, I trust my Yao Yao won't do something like that!"

"Hah, old man, I don't care how you teach your granddaughter. But in fact your granddaughter is really my boyfriend's lover otherwise where those money come from, for doing the operation and medication fees?"

"This is all paid by my granddaughter's boyfriend. He is not the person you mentioned, that Yu Ao Tian!"

"Boyfriend?" Xiao Zhen and Li Mei Yun stunned to hear it.

Yao Yao knows something will get worsen!

"Aiya, little girl you are really awesome, you even dares to betray Mr. Yu and even have other boyfriend at outside! Hahahaha!" Xiao Zhen word is piercing.

Li Mei Yun also laughed: "Xiao Zhen, that is matter between Yu Ao Tian and

Xiao Luo, I don't want to mingle with their business. But... old man." Her eyes flashed: "You can ask clearly to your granddaughter, actually her boyfriend who paid the medical fee or my boyfriend!"

"Yao Yao, tell this woman, who is paying the medication fees!" Grandpa Luo roared.

At this moment, she really wanted to say the person was Feng Chen Yi but the reality was not. If she really mentioned about Feng Chen Yi, the matter will get bigger. But if she really speaks honestly how pain her grandpa heart will be?

Yao Yao who head is bow-down finally lift her head up slowly, with red eyes: "Grand pa... I am sorry... all the medication fee... is paid by her boyfriend."

"Yao Yao, what are you talking?" Grandpa Luo felt as if got thunder in sunny day.

Xiao Zhen and Li Mei Yun are scoffing: "Hah, old man, what do you want to say?"

"Oh yeah, just keep your gibberish about your second or third generation which serving the nation, as for me, your family teaching is like this. You teach your granddaughter very well to be third wheel in other people relationship, simply to say... too good!"

"Shut up!" Yao Yao pissed off, she rushed in front of Li Mei Yun: "What do you want? Haven't you reached your goal already? You have succeed to insult and ashamed my family, make me cannot lift up my head in front of many people. What do you want still to do? Are you want to ruin my family and then satisfied?"

"Luo Yao Yao, you dare to be Yu Ao Tian's lover, why must you afraid? You have already done all the shameless things, why must be afraid I mess with you? When I treat you good, didn't you feel guilty toward me? If I was you, I really afraid I will bump myself to car and go die!"

"Is it? Li Mei Yun..." cannot say! If mother knows she almost got rape, she will be so sad, cannot!

"Li Mei Yun, you dare to say that you were never become Yu Ao Tian's lover?"

"Hey, it was Mr. Yu who chasing my Miss, okay? She is not like you, because of money you climbed to Mr. Yu's bed, you can go and check, all the list of Mr. Yu's ex-girlfriend, did all of them like you? If not because you slutty bitch who keep bothering Mr. Yu, do you think he wants you?"

"Enough! Enough!" Mother Luo finally spoke up.

"Grandpa, are you okay?"

Her grandpa is touching his chest and waving his hand: "Yao Yao, Grandpa understood, it really grandpa fault, I am sorry. Yao Yao tell grandpa, is it because of grandpa?"

"It is not grandpa. Really not. I... I have been together with Yu Ao Tian from the beginning, grandpa, it is me who sorry to you. It is me who embarrassed our family, there is nothing to do with you." She really does not want her grandpa found out the real reason why she still together with Yu Ao Tian or else her grandpa will...be depressed!

"See, the truth is revealed, Luo Yao Yao is as predicted as someone who is shameless." This time, Li Mei Yun keeps adding oil to fire.

Grandpa Luo tears are streaming down: "Yao Yao, you are growing up, what kind of girl you are, I know it. Go, tell them you are not that kind of person! Go and say it!"

"Grandpa..."

"Aiya, things have been at to this point, if I were you I would prefer to face if, still trying to find excuse to protect your granddaughter, Ah~ the Luo's, the senior is really something while the young become lover, really shameless."

The maid of Li's really spoke too bad and hurt the Luo's old man heart and dignity. He is gritting his teeth: "Miss Li, I am terrible old man and lives at this age, never do something harmless to something against consciences. I have faith to my granddaughter she would never do something bad. If you want to blame just blame me who is burdensome my granddaughter, I can swear that whatever my granddaughter did all because of me, she becomes your boyfriend's lover because my sickness. But all is not matter anymore!" after Grandpa Luo said, he suddenly pulled the IV from his hand: "If I die, I won't be

her burden anymore!" he hurried rushing to the window.

"Grand pa!"

"Father!" luckily that mother Luo and Yao Yao grabbed him.

"Keep on acting, continuing your acting, really get my nerve, crying and making commotion, I thought it only women could do that but never thought old man also can, really let me to watch big show."

Maybe Li Mei Yun thought that her grandpa is acting but Yao Yao knows very well her grandpa character, so she not dares to tell him. "Grandpa, don't, this is nothing to do with you."

"Miss Li! Miss Li!" Mother Luo emotion is stirring up and kneeling in front of Li Mei Yun. She hugged her pair of legs: "I beg you, we have cornered to this point, just let us off. My father in law cannot be upset more than this. If Yao Yao really did wrong, it must be my fault as mother. I beg you, don't make things more complicated, I beg you!"

"Let me off! I told you to let off!" Li Mei Yun shouted, raised her hand and slapped Mother Luo.

"Mom!" Yao Yao is trying to control her grandpa and seeing her mom got slapped by Li Mei Yun, she felt her heart as if being pierced by something, it hurt.

Her grandpa wanted to suicide, her mother is slapped by Li Mei Yun, all of this must be her responsibility but why her family must go through with all of this?

Guilty, pain, as if there is one big rock pressed on her, her tears flowing down, plead: "Miss Li, do you really want to force my family to death and then you will be happy?"

"This is what you seek, Luo Yao Yao!"

# **Chapter 155 – 157**

"Right, this is my fault. But what advantage will you get with all the mess? Li Mei Yun, everyone doing things has their own reasoning; don't you just want me to leave Yu Ao Tian? Well, you leave first, this matter I will go to settle it for you. But if something happen to my grandpa, I will bring you down with me!" at the moment Luo Yao Yao eyes is gleaming dangerously.

"Luo Yao Yao, are you trying to scare, you just third wheels, you are the real vixen, when the time comes just see who will bring down who, we still don't know yet!" Xiao Zhen puts her hand into her hips, scolding and swearing Yao.

"Me? I am Luo Yao Yao, first I don't have money, second I am not famous, someone who with bare feet won't be afraid not wearing shoes, if you continuous all this ruckus, we will see who will be brought down, your Miss or me!"

```
"Luo..."

"Xiao Zhen, we leave!"

"Miss..."
```

"Move!" coldly she said, Li Mei Yun walked faster. Xiao Zhen followed at her back...

The room that have ruckus before suddenly turned be deathly silent, "Grandpa..." Yao Yao slowly let go her hand from her grandpa, she move closer to window: "If you still so stubborn to blame yourself, you are forcing me to die in here, I will die to let you see!"

```
"Yao Yao!"
```

"Grandpa, everything isn't as what you think, your granddaughter also not as

<sup>&</sup>quot;Yao Yao!" Grandpa Luo and Mother Luo are looking at her.

awesome as you think. My relationship with Feng Chen Yi wasn't fake but it was two years ago. We have already broken up. I afraid you would sad so faking him as my boyfriend and then the truth is... after I broke up with Feng Chen Yi, I have dated Yu Ao Tian!"

I am sorry, grandpa, you always taught me not to tell lie, but you also ever told me that we can lies to save others.

I know, you always love me no matter how big mistake I did, you would never blame me, so I really can't tell you the truth.

"Yao Yao! You don't need to make yourself difficult."

"I am not. Grandpa, I like Yu Ao Tian, I love him!"

"Are you sure? Yao Yao!"

"I am sure."

"Yao Yao! Even though you like him but why must become lover? Does he also love you? If he really loves you how would he ask you to be his lover?"

"I know, grandpa... I will resolve this problem. I will."

"Father, you calm down, this time is because Yao Yao not mature enough." Mother Luo is calming grandpa Luo so that he will forget to suicide. But he still wanted to stop the medication process so they won't spend Yu Ao Tian's money.

"Mom, you help me to convince grandpa for continuing his medication, okay?"

"Yao Yao, we pay back all Yu Ao Tian's money."

"Mom, it is useless, Yu Ao Tian and I bind with contract. Although you pay back his money, I am still his lover." Yao Yao is telling truth in front of her mother.

"Yao Yao, I am sorry. It is our Luo family... burden you." Mother Luo really felt guilty.

"Mom, what are you talking? I am part of Luo family, everything regarding about Luo's it is my responsible. But I ..." she stretched out her hand and touched her mother's face: "I am sorry, mom, it because me you got hurt."

"It is okay... I am okay Yao Yao. Mom is not afraid. But you... you must understand to protect yourself, you know?" After say, Mother Luo face is

already wet by tears, both of mother and daughter are crying together, both of them feel helpless...

"Miss, I really not understand, why are you leaving? That slutty girl if she really wanted to make commendations, don't you able publicized your relationship with Mr. Yu? This is one of big step to make you being known publicly by all people as Mr. Yu's girlfriend. This also won't make Mr. Yu angry."

Actually Li Mei Yun also has huge hope for publicized her relationship with Yu Ao Tian, but he had refused it before. These days she doubted: "Do you really think that I don't want to use that slut little girl makes commendation? But, using this kind of method for publicized my relationship with Yu Ao Tian, all those media and also the internet, all of them will dig out my past who was once ever became lover. When that day comes... I have ruined my image and career. This will be big loss."

"Oh, That's right too..." Xiao Zhen agreed and nodded, she is trying to gossip with Li Mei Yun: "Oh yeah, Miss, you see thay slutty little girl really grows not same with her Mother and Grandpa, perhaps she also "wild child" too?"

If Xiao Zhen not brought up the topic, Li Mei Yun also not paid attention: "Xiao Zhen, you really gossiper, that is her family matters, none of my business, okay?"

"HeHe, I just am curious." Both of the madam and the maid are gossiping while walking out from hospital. When they are in front of second floor stairs, they see Yu Ao Tian is sitting down at the hospital's hall.

"Miss, that is Mr. Yu."

"Sst, I have seen him."

"Oh, it seems that both of Mr. Yu and that slutty little girl were together last night."

That's why because Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao were not went home yesterday, Li Mei Yun came to here and made scene, actually she has tried to strike Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian relationship with Ming Hui's case but only at one blink of her eyes, both of them are get closer again!

"Miss, what to do?"

"Haha, what to do? Just do the plan ahead!" Li Mei Yun narrowed her eyes, she walking together with Xiao Zhen.

\*\*

"Mom, I take my leave first, about Grandpa..."

"You reassure; don't you understand your grandpa? He won't angry for long time. I will try to talk with your grandpa to continue this medication."

"En."

"Yao Yao, about you..."

Her mother hasn't opened her mouth, Yao Yao has forced herself to smiled: "You reassured, I promised you, I will be okay!" this matter happened one time is more than enough, but... if comes to second times, she has warned Li Mei Yun not to do this kind of thing but if she really not reflect, makes her family not peace, this revenge must be collected!

Stills a same word, for Yao Yao her family is the most important.

Leaving the room, she heading to second floor and meet Li Mei Yun with Xiao Zhen who are still standing there. She made fist with her hand and her eyesight locked on them, who knows...

"Slutty girl, is your grandpa already death?"

Her footsteps stopped, she back and gave Xiao Zhen one slap: "If your mouth only can speak these kinds of words, better shut up!"

"You dare to slap me?" Xiao Zhen didn't show her weakness.

Li Mei Yun pulled her: "Xiao Zhen, wait." Her eyes coldly looked at Yao Yao: "Didn't you say that you are settling the matter? How to do?"

As for your wish, I will ask to break up with Yu Ao Tian, but whether he wants or not to break up with me, it is his matter."

"Hah. Do you mean that you are not giving up of Yu Ao Tian?"

It is not that I am not giving up on Yu Ao Tian but how if Yu Ao Tian who does not want to giving up on me? Yu Ao Tian such bossy and domineering man, he won't stop if he hasn't reached his goal?

"Miss Li, in my past I ever met third wheels, so that I really hate them just like you do. But, during that time, when I hate her, I did self-introspection, she made me understood actually what kind of man that stayed beside me!"

Why must she choose to break up with Feng Chen Yi at the moment she found out he slept with other woman and why didn't she just give him another chance?

Simply because when it happened one times than it would happen to hundred times too, so she heart-steel to give up on this love because after the first Ruo Ting there might be the second Ruo Ting, the third Ruo Ting, when the times really happen, what should she do? Should she continue to break up with Feng Chen Yi? And then should she reconcile with him again after that? Repeating the same story again and again?

She cannot deny, until this moment, she still loves Feng Chen Yi, there few times she really wants to be little bit impulsive and reconcile with him, but, whenever she thought about Ruo Ting, she really can't help herself to walkout from that nightmare.

"Luo Yao Yao, what do you want to say? Do you mean that is my fault or Yu Ao Tian fault?"

"No, I don't mean it. I admitted I have wronged but didn't you have revenged on me? Did it not enough?"

"So you have known about the truth, ha, Luo Yao Yao, you are really a schemer, since you have found out about it why didn't you come and ask me? You are really unexpected as naïve as I thought. Well, since you is not willing to leave Yu Ao Tian, I will continue come to find your family and talk about this matter."

What Li Mei Yun wants? Didn't I have told her that I will ask break up with Yu Ao Tian? What does she still want?

Seeing Li Mei Yun is going to leave, she hurried pulled her wrist: "Miss Li, actually what do you want from me?"

"Hey, Luo Yao Yao, what are you doing, hurry let go my Miss." Xiao Zhen suddenly raised her voice, her expression looked panic and worried.

In the chaos situation, Yao Yao really does not pay attention to her

surrounding, she still pulled Li Mei Yun unwilling to let her go.

But on this moment...

Li Mei Yun's body is falling backward, falling downstairs.

"Miss!"

"Argh..." Suddenly Yao Yao felt herself is covered with cold air, her pair of big eyes is stared at Li Mei Yun who is rolling down, no, she is not pushing Li Mei Yun, but why...

Her eyes is nervously looking at Li Mei Yun who has already been downstairs, people are looking for the crowd.

Yu...Ao Tian, how can he still be here...

Not long after the chaos, finally she regained herself, no wonder Li Mei Yun and her maid were waiting for her, no wonder Xiao Zhen raised her voice and gave that worry and panic expression, so that they were planning!

Rethink, if suddenly she run to Yu Ao Tian and ask for break up, based on Yu Ao Tian's nature he must have been predicting the reason, at that moment the one who doomed must be Li Mei Yun, and at other side... if she acted alike unreasonable girl, Yu Ao Tian must give up on her, right?

Actually this is not bad to think this way, but... this time if Yao Yao really wants to leave Yu Ao Tian directly, she really not happy, first time Li Mei Yun had scheme her, the second time Li Mei Yun had come to make her family not in peace, now this is her third time, she really not happy about this!"

"Miss! Miss!"

"Mei Yun." Yu Ao Tian rushed and carried Li Mei Yun who has already fallen.

"Mr. Yu."

"Ao Tian... How... can.. you... be... here?" She spoke weakly.

Yu Ao Tian silent, he slowly helped her up and coldly stared at Yao Yao.

"I didn't push her!" Yao Yao coldly said while walking downstairs: "It was her who falling by herself!" she looked firm with her word, saying it to Yu Ao Tian.

"Xiao Luo, how could you speak in this way? I have been there, it was clearly

you who pushed my Miss!"

"I didn't push her! It was herself falling down!"

"Why my Miss wanted to fall by herself?"

"Because she wanted to scheme me, put blame on me!"

"Put blame on you? Ha..." Xiao Zhen laughing sarcastically and with tearing eyes said: "My Miss is pregnant for 2 months, so in order to lay blame on you she must fall down from stairs?"

What! Pregnant! Impossible, Xiao Zhen must be telling lie! It must be absolutely impossible, how can Li Mei Yun gamble with her own child!

"Doom! Miss!" Xiao Zhen panic looking at Li Mei Yun.

"Xiao Zhen... what happen?" Li Mei Yun expressionless looked at Xiao Zhen.

She biting her lips, quivering pointed at Li Mei Yun's body: "Bleed...bleeding."

After Yu Ao Tian heard it, he hurried to take a look, he says nothing but hurried to carry Li Mei Yun to the emergency room.

"Impossible, this must be scheme, absolutely is!" outside the emergency room, Yao Yao expressionless standing there, she really wanted to see what other show and acting Li Mei Yun played.

"Xiao Luo, at this point you even said this kind of words!" Xiao Zhen despised Yao Yao.

"Me!"

"Shut up!" Yu Ao Tian who standing not far from there coldly said, his eyesight looked at Yao Yao: "I have seen it!"

"So what if you saw it, things that you see with eyes won't mean the real!"

Yu Ao Tian hurried showed his hands: "So how about her bleeding?"

"Fake! It must be planned by her before! Everything has been planned before!"

"Luo Yao Yao!" moved ahead one step, Yu Ao Tian raised his hand, mid in the air almost slapped her: "How can you be this stupid?"

"It's me stupid or you?"

"You!" Yu Ao Tian is still raising his hand...

"Mr. Yu." Suddenly the expressionless doctor walked out from the emergency room, he gave the report to Yu Ao Tian: "Sorry, Miss Li's child... can't be saved."

"See, is it fake?" Yu Ao Tian threw that report paper to Yao Yao's face.

Fake, it must be fake! Yao Yao is losing herself control; she hurried grabbing the doctor's shirt collar: "Said, how much money did you received from Li Mei Yun, so that you telling lies!"

"Miss, what are you means?" The doctor said while hinting to Yu Ao Tian: "Mr. Yu, this..."

He sneered, his eyes gleaming, he grabbed Yao Yao: "I really feel so disappointed toward you!"

"Yu Ao Tian, why don't you believe on me?"

"Give me reason why must me?"

Reason....

That's right... what kind of reason? When it talking about feeling, Yu Ao Tian does not have any feeling toward her so why he must believe on her, he feels unhappy because he hasn't got her, if see from that incident, it was real that Yu Ao Tian had witness by himself, wasn't him?

Why must she want Yu Ao Tian believed on her? Why?

Yao Yao finally gained herself and back to her logic, she showed confused expression looking at Yu Ao Tian, she really not understood herself why must she want Yu Ao Tian to believe on her.

"You wait for me in here, don't go anywhere!" Yu Ao Tian frees her and go inside the emergency room.

"Ha." Xiao Zhen who standing not far from there is scoffing, rolled her eyes: "You get what you ask for!"

"Mei Yun."

"Ao Tian... I... huhuhu..." Li Mei Yun is crying helplessly.

Yu Ao Tian is walking to the bedside, coldly said: "Why are you coming to

hospital!"

"I... I came for doing pregnancy test!"

"Speak honestly!" Yu Ao Tian eyes flashing, his big hand pinched her chin.

"Uh, hurt." Strangely Li Mei Yun quivering, she never thought that Yu Ao Tian could be this heartless to the point he is not caring to the child, once he opened his mouth, he is asking her why she came to hospital?

"I really came here to do pregnancy test."

"That's right, Mr. Yu, my Miss..."

Yu Ao Tian raised his hand and slapped Xiao Zhen: "You don't have right to speak in here! Get lost!"

"I am sorry Mr. Yu."

After Xiao Zhen leaving, the air inside emergency room is really suffocating, Li Mei Yun's heart is shivering, she could feel that Yu Ao Tian mood would explode, does he angry because of that slutty bitch who pushed her down? Or because... others thing? If she thought this way, Li Mei Yun purposely spoke with guilty tone: "Ao Tian..."

"Mei Yun, since you are not having intention to speak honestly, I will leave." Coldly he said and get ready to leave.

"Ao Tian, I... I really coming here to have pregnancy test, but after I done with it, I came to visit...Luo Yao Yao's grandpa."

"Humph? Went to visit, or went to provoke?" Yu Ao Tian narrowed his eyes, his lips curved up.

"I... I am sorry, Ao Tian, I am wronged."

He has predicted that Yao Yao would not be such lost control if she didn't get any provocation, but this time he really feels so disappointed toward Yao Yao.

"Mei Yun... you take care, I will come to see you again in few days." He left the room, hugged Li Mei Yun for while and his attitude looked so warm.

"Hu...Ao Tian, but our baby..." Li Mei Yun suffered, she crying in Yu Ao Tian's embrace,

"You rest assured, I will settle it."

After Li Mei Yun listened to Yu Ao Tian, her lips curved upward, make a faint smile. But she is not paying attention to Yu Ao Tian's eyes that hiding something...

"How could it happen? How? Li Mei Yun was taking her own baby to gamble, if she knew she pregnant from the beginning, she must taking good her child properly, mustn't her? On this way she must be able to make her position stronger." Standing in front of the room, Yao Yao murmured to herself, she really not understood why Li Mei Yun took huge gamble only to set her up.

At moment, she really suspicious whether she really pushed her down or not, but to rethink it, she dares and certain she wasn't!

"Huh, shameless thing, being third wheels is already shameless and now being the third wheel who harmed my Miss until she miscarriage, you will strike by thunder soon or later!" Xiao Zhen is cursing her.

Furrowed her brow, Yao Yao pissed off, biting her lips, but say nothing.

Not long after that, Yu Ao Tian gets out from the room.

"Mr. Yu.'

As if not seeing Xiao Zhen, he directly looked at Yao Yao: "Starting tomorrow, you are not allowed to go for working, 24 hours to take care Mei Yun until she discharged."

What? Yu Ao Tian still dares to ask her taking care Li Mei Yun? So who will be responsibility if something happen to Li Mei Yun? Based on her poisonous nature, will she let her off easily?

"I refused."

"You don't have right to refuse, don't forget about your status!"

"You don't need to remind me, Yu Ao Tian, I know very well my status. If you are really hate me because I killed your child, you can give up on me!"

"Give up on you? Hah... doesn't it too generous for you?" he scoffed, his cold face get close to her: "What kind of thing is more interesting as punishment except tormenting you slowly by slowly?"

Demon! Yu Ao Tian is simply a demon, that time he wasn't fire Sun Li and even promoted Yao Yao only to see how she will go and tortured Sun Li?

This man is so dangerous and scary, he will do thing to the limit so he will achieve the ultimate satisfaction!

"You don't need to look me with your innocent eyesight, actually I have ordered you to take care Li Mei Yun before? Now I just make it for you to take care of her completely, you must grateful because my merciful toward you!" after said, he smiled deviously and leaving the hospital.

Yao Yao is extremely pissed off: "Yu Ao Tian... I hate you! I hate you!" her shouting sound is echoed along the corridor, her eyes is filled with grief tears. She feels as if her heart is pierced with something, so hurt!

Hah, why must her heart fell hurt? Is it because Yu Ao Tian not believes on her? She never care with other people opinions before, so why she must care now?

Again, last time it was so obviously, both of them were interacting and having conversation like friend, but only in blinked of eyes, he turned be her foe again. This feeling really...mess!

## **Chapter 158 - 160**

The coming days, Yao Yao is treated as personal maid who is kept by them to serve Li Mei Yun. Li Mei Yun is created all kinds of difficulties for her. In order to stand for herself, she really does not know how to fight back.

"Slutty girl, didn't you hear what doctor say? My Miss cannot eat and drink cold, you even buy the cold things do you want to kill my Miss and then feel satisfied with it?" Xiao Zhen is angrily cursing.

Yao Yao coldly answered: "I will go to buy the new ones." She turned and left the room, she standing stupidly in front of the room's door.

Huh, really not understand, why she must taking care that woman who almost make her grandpa suicide, but she more not understand, where the loopholes and she even got this punishment? "Argh!" she threw the food, so angry and almost exploded.

"Miss, I really not understand, why not chase out that slutty girl."

Inside the room, suddenly take notice of Xiao Zhen's voice, Yao Yao who is crouching in front of the door, crying but her ears caught...

"Yu Ao Tian's thought, I will never could understand it. I thought with this, that little girl may go away, but..." Li Mei Yun sighed.

"Huh, it is pity the baby in your stomach."

"It is not pity, hah, I will never can give birth to this child."

"Why?"

"Ao Tian... he will never allow all the women beside him to bear his child, if there is child, must be abort it. So that he must force me to do it too and perhaps I might brawl with him. It better ended like this." Li Mei Yun touching her stomach, her eyes gleam sadness.

"HeHe, no matter what, Miss. Everything goes as planned, that slutty girl has

created trouble for herself, makes Mr.Yu unhappy."

"Aha, she is stupid, she really does not understand to grab Yu Ao Tian's heart, but this is good, at least I know that girl is unimportant for Yu Ao Tian, he just wanted to play with her!"

At this moment, when Yao Yao listens to the conversation coming from inside the room, finally all her questions are solved...

It really wasn't her who pushed Li Mei Yun, as predicted it was her who did by herself.

The stone that pressed in her heart break down, she feels relieved...

Not to mention, although Yao Yao is understand thoroughly about Li Mei Yun but she really feel sorry toward the baby.

"HaHaHaHa, no matter how heartless Yu Ao Tian, at least he told two right things...

First thing... Yu Ao Tian had ever told her very early about Li Mei Yun who is her idol in her heart, everything about her only an image that created by the management.

The others... she is indeed stupid!

"Hello." Taking out her phone with expressionless face, she slowly said: "Nan Lu, have time, I need... you help me to do..."

"Buying things take so long, really useless!" Yao Yao carried thing when she came back to the room, Xiao Zhen scolded her again.

She keeps silent, her eyesight sweeping at Li Mei Yun: "Miss Li, you have stayed here for 4 days, the doctor said that you can discharge, why not leave?"

"Oh yeah? Why did I not remember what the doctor said? Moreover, this is none of your business, okay?"

"Oh, I just simply want to ask." She shrugged and smiled sweetly: "if you don't have any order, I want to go out for moment."

"Get lost!"

Turned her back, Yao Yao is faster leaving the hospital. She took this

opportunity to hail cab and go to Feng's group.

"Miss Lisa..."

Outside the General Manager Office room, Lisa lifts up her head to take glance: "Aiya, It is you Miss Luo, do you come to send document or meet the General Manager Feng?"

Yao Yao awkwardly smiled: "This time, private matter. I come to meet General Manager Feng for something."

"Oh, our General Manager Feng..." Lisa glancing to the office room, these two days General Manager Feng mood is obliviously easy to be affected with Miss Luo coming so will it be any changes then? Does she the future Boss's wife? Perhaps nothing will be happened if taking her to his office room, right?

"Lisa, does General Manager Feng busy? If he really busy..."

"No, he is not busy. Come and follow me." Lisa escort Yao Yao to the office room.

When she entered the room, inside there are seven or eight managers who dressed in suit and directly looked to the door.

Feng Chen Yi who sat down in his seat spotted Yao Yao, his pair of eyes gleaming, when he wanted to speak...

He heard one of his employees shouted: "Who is this little girl? Unexpectedly come to interrupt the meeting in General Manager's office! Quickly get lost!"

Meeting? Is Feng Chen Yi in the middle of meeting? Yao Yao thought she must be get in trouble now, lower her head, with soft voice asked: "Miss Lisa, General Manager Feng is having meeting, why are you bringing me here?"

"It is okay, your coming to find General Manager Feng must be urgent, if I asked you to leave, I will be doomed!"

But now why she feels the person who doomed must be her? "I am sorry, I am sorry, sorry to disturb."

"Simply to say you don't have etiquette!"

"I am sorry." Yao Yao non-stop for apologizing, she turned and

wanted to leave.

"Lisa!" Feng Chen Yi sees Lisa with cold eyesight.

She got the hinted and nodded her head, she stopped Yao Yao, smiled sweetly to all the people inside the room: "Everyone, sorry to disturb, today meeting is dismissed."

"General Manager Feng, please don't be angry, this little girl just doesn't know about the etiquette, won't you just stop the meeting because of her, will you?" that person who roared at Yao Yao just now is one of the managers, he looked at Feng Chen Yi with smiling face.

Then he frowned and looked at Lisa.

"Manager Yu, you are fired." Lisa is smiling sweetly and gesture "please get out" to him.

That manager is confused: "What this means?"

"Manager Yu, don't you understand? You are fired, please leave! If you are not leaving, I will call the security guard!" Lisa spoke with firm attitude.

The others people are leaving quickly from Feng Chen Yi's office room after they witness the situation, so that Manager Yu also left.

"General Manager Feng, I take my leave." Lisa bowed, smiling to Yao Yao and then she left the office room.

She helplessly sighed, walking slowly in front to his desk: "Feng Chen Yi, you are fired that manager, will this...."

"He is my employee, I like to fire him and then I just did it, there is none your business!"

Fist!

Didn't she know the reason Feng Chen Yi fire that manager? But why must he act this bossy?

Ah! Forget it! Endure it, endure it, today is coming to beg him, please don't fight with him. "Oh."

"Suddenly coming here, what do you want?" Feng Chen Yi coldly asked.

"I, I come to ask help from you." Yao Yao is forcing herself to smile and she really hopes he gives face to her.

Feng Chen Yi cold face looked helpless: "What kind of help?"

"I, I want... I come to find you... want to borrow your credit card." Feng Chen Yi will let her borrow, right? He is so generous, he must let her to borrow it, right?

"Card? What kind of card?"

Uh? Is it because she not clearly mentioned it? "That unlimited Gold VIP Card."

"En?" Feng Chen Yi eyes rolled, stood up, he walked to in front of Yao Yao: "If I not mistaken didn't that man have given you that card? Why are you borrowing it from me?"

What should be said? Her eyes rolled, she keeps on smiling: "Borrow me ah, only 1 day, after one day, I will give it back to you, can I?"

"Ha, actually I don't mind, you know very well I don't mind. But... that kind of valuable thing, why must I let you to borrow it? You are not my girl friend, you are only my ex-girlfriend!"

Listened to his heartless question, Yao Yao strangely feel unhappy...

"Chen Yi, if one day we are break up, then I need help from you, will you help me?"

"Stupid, we won't break up!"

"Aiya, I just said if."

"There is no if. Because whether we are or not together, I will always prioritize your matter first!"

Because of his words, she weirdly felt so touched, but never thought she really remember what he said, this brat speaks and do are completely two matters!

"I come to find you only to borrow your card, nothing else."

"So what." Feng Chen Yi's body is leaning to his chair, both of his hand are hugged on her waist: "You pay little "Deposit", I will give you the card."

"Deposit? Forget it!" she break free Feng Chen Yi hand: "just think I never came." Her face is dark and running out from the office room.

Really regret, she must not come to borrow the card from the start, she must be crazy to think that he will surely let her to borrow his card!

Yao Yao is pissed off rushed out, she going out while cursing, but when she turned to the corridor corner, her footstep stopped...

Feng Chen Yi's side really no hope, should she go to Yu Ao Tian? Cannot! Cannot! Surely Yu Ao Tian will find out her motives. "Aiya, frustrated!"

The most hatred is Feng Chen Yi, it only a card! Why must he care so much? Why must he make thing so difficult for her? As the result both of them always have fight every times meet, really bored!

Her small hand inserted to her pocket, she wanted to take pace but her body suddenly froze.

Uh!

What is it inside the pocket?

"Feng Chen Yi you are bastard!" she laughed bitterly, because she touched something weird from inside her pocket, it is.... A real card!

That damn man since when he put it?

Her mind recalled the memory when she was inside the office room, she remembered the sudden when Feng Chen Yi hugged her, so he had put it during that time.

"Bastard! Bastard! Feng Chen Yi you are simply bastard! Ah..." smiled with tears, Yao Yao looked at that card with bright eyesight.

"Hu..." calm down, calm down, she can feel her heart thumping hard and fast.

He body is leaning to the wall, she keeps quiet for moment, and takes out her phone...

"What's matter?"

After listened to the familiar voice from the other phone side, she coldly asked: "The pin?"

"Your birthday!"

A short word coldly said but strangely it gives... unlimited warmness for Yao

Yao. "Feng..."

"Tutututttut." The phone call is hung up.

"Hah." She helplessly shook her head, one big tear flowing down from her eyes corner...

"uh, I am sorry." Perhaps because she is too happy, When Yao Yao is intending to leave Feng's group she bumped to someone.

"Hey, use your eyes while you are walking, you dare to bump into our Vice CEO Feng!"

When Yao Yao lifts up her head, she spotted Feng Chen Rui: "Oh it's you! Are you coming to find my little brother?"

Oh, Feng Chen Yi's older brother. "I have something to do in here, not really looking for General Manager Feng."

"Oh? I knew it."

Knew it? What are you knew it? Yao Yao showed her curious expression.

"I have got the information that you ever dated my little brother when both of you in Japan, right?" Feng Chen Rui had asked his subordinate to check on Yao Yao, the result little bit surprising. But, by the coincidence his confidant was Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao school mates, so that he knew this secret.

"Oh, we were dated before."

"HaHa, little girl, you don't need to tell lie to me, I also knew that it was my little brother who cheated on you, so that both of you break up, right? Aiya, my little brother is little bit useless, he even not cherish when he had one good girlfriend like you, if you have time, let's we have chat, okay?"

"Vice CEO Feng, it is my first time to meet type of older brother like you, someone who talked bad about his own little brother? As what I know, General Manager Feng strength and capability are acknowledged by everyone, if talking about being useless, I don't think General Manager Feng is included as one of those people."

Yao Yao smiled sweetly, pouted her mouth showed her guilty: "Pardon me, I never like to talk much with the useless person. Vice CEO Feng, I don't connote

on you, I take my leave."

Humph, dare to speak badly about Feng Chen Yi! Seek death! Yao Yao rolled her eyes, fasten her steps and disappeared from Feng Chen Rui's in front.

"Vice CEO Feng, that little girl..."

"Good talker, really cunning! No wonder she able to conquer that brat, Feng Chen Yi!" Feng Chen Rui fisted her hand until his vein appeared; he really not expected that little girl could be so protective to Feng Chen Yi!

In front of the hospital entrance...

"Nan Lu, I am sorry to make you wait too long." After leaving Feng's group, Yao Yao hurried to go to shopping mall, faster to choose few clothes, and rushed to the hospital.

She reunited with Nan Lu in front of the hospital and nodded her head: "It's okay, let we hurry!"

"Okay!" both of they are calming down, they are heading to Li Mei Yun's room with sweet smile.

In front of the room entrance, Xiao Zhen looked gloomy after she saw Yao Yao appeared. She came to shout at her again: "You slutty bitch, where are you going?"

"Zhen... sister Zhen, I ..."

"Hey, Xiao Zhen, you better to see clearly, although Master is asking Yao Yao to take care your Miss, but just now, Master was looking for Yao Yao...

"Nan Lu!" Yao Yao nervously stopped Nan Lu, appeared to be guilty: "Sister Zhen, sorry, I will immediately go to look Miss Li. Nan Lu, I troubled you, you wait me for moment ah." After said, she gave all the clothes to Nan Lu.

Xiao Zhen took a glance, big and small bags, all are branded things, all the things are priced more than hundred thousand dollar, did this little slut go for shopping? What is going on?

"Miss Li, do you feel comfortable with it?" Yao Yao has already come back not pouring tea but now she is massaging Li Mei Yun.

"Use more strength; you want to kill me?"

"Oh, I am sorry, Miss Li."

"Get lost, I don't need you to take care of me, really not understand how you massage me!"

"I am sorry." Yao Yao showed her guilty expression, lower her head, but at the moment she turned... a card falls down.

This time, her face expression changed, nervously she took the card and put it inside her pocket and leaving Li Mei Yun's room.

"Xiao Zhen... you, just now, did you see it?"

"I have seen it Miss, that card is..."

"Unlimited VIP gold card! It is Yu Ao Tian's card!" when Yao Yao took the card, Li Mei Yun thought she was mistaken with what she saw. Since Xiao Zhen also saw it, this means she is not mistaken.

"How could Yu Ao Tian gave that card to that slutty girl?"

"Ah, so that..."

"Xiao Zhen, what?"

"Miss, just now... just now that little girl brought so many things when came here, Nan Lu was also with her, that time it seems Nan Lu said, it was Mr. Yu who asked her to going out."

"Yu Ao Tian called her? Went out? And then buying things for her? And... and also gave the card to her?" Li Mei Yun really cannot cope with this reality, she is throwing everything to the floor. "Yu Ao Tian said that he was busy for these few days, so that he could not come to see me, but... hah, but... he took that little girl going out!"

"Miss, you calm down, calm down."

"How can you ask me to calm down? I have planned this and that, even I don't care about my body, all because I want to get rid that little girl, but the result? The result I am staying at hospital alone, and both of them are having sweet dating? Hu...." When she said it, Li Mei Yun is already breaking in tears until no

voice.

"Xiao Zhen, perhaps there is misunderstanding in here?"

"Miss, how about if I go to check, trying to find out what that little girl say, see what is going on."

Li Mei Yun has already had no energy to speak, she waved her hands. Xiao Zhen hurried rushing out from the room...

"Yao Yao, Master really loves you, he bought you many things." Walking in the corridor, Nan Lu is looking so envious with the small and big bags.

"HaHa, Nan Lu you know I don't really care about these things."

"I know, of course I know it, or else Master won't give you that card, but why you are still wear this poor clothes? I know you are trying to help Master to save up money, but... when Li Mei Yun got that card she was showing off, every times I thought about it, I do really angry!"

"Forget it, actually I am the third wheel in Li Mei Yun and Yu Ao Tian relationship, knowing this I feel sorry to her, I just hope she won't come to trouble my family."

"Hm, that's right. But, Master is believed on you, Li Mei Yun does not have her baby, Master have forgiven you."

"HaHa." She faintly smiled.

This moment...

Let all yesterday...

Yao Yao mobile phone is ringing. "Hello?" suddenly her face showed sweet smiling expression, she spoke gently: "Ao Tian, it's you."

"En, I have back to hospital."

"Cannot, now I can't leave! I ought to take care Miss Li."

"I know you are not blaming me, but... I really pity Miss Li. How about tomorrow I come to accompany you?"

"En, bye bye, muah muah."

Seeing Yao Yao ended her phone call, Nan Lu who is standing beside her showed sour expression: "Aiyo, sour me to death, my teeth almost falling."

"Hate you, Nan Lu."

"Yao Yao, I see, your relationship and Master are progressing very well, just thank to Li Mei Yun."

"What are you talking?"

"I think, if Li Mei Yun is not persistent staying in hospital, you won't have this opportunity to be lovely-dovely with Master? Hahahaha, if she keeps on staying...perhaps you may marry with Master, already?"

"Sst, Nan Lu be careful, what if Li Mei Yun heard it?"

"Uh, I know." Nan Lu smiled, but her eyes are looking at other side. "Yao Yao, Xiao Zhen has left."

As precaution, Yao Yao run to check at the corner to ensure, after she ensured that Xiao Zhen already left, she gave all the things to Nan Lu: "Help me to return all these things."

"En, I understand."

"Other!" Her expression cold, "Do you find that woman?"

"Found, she is on the way, but... you sure that she will help you."

"Ha..." She narrowed her eyes and smiled confidently: "I am so sure she will come to help me. Because it is nothing more interesting to witness own enemy in hardship!"

Inside the room.

Xiao Zhen's face is black. "Miss..."

"What you got?"

"I have been eavesdropping the conversation between Nan Lu and that b\*. Miss..." Xiao Zhen is crying, she reported all what she heard to Li Mei Yun.

No doubt, after Li Mei Yun heard it, she goes crazy as if get thunder during the sunny day. "Phone! Give my phone!"

"Miss, what are you doing?"

"Give me my phone!" she pissed off until her body shivering.

Xiao Zhen gave the phone to her.

Li Mei Yun dialed Yu Ao Tian's number.

"Hello..."

It is Yu Ao Tian cold voice when received the phone call, she feebly to press her anger, forcing to smile: "Ao... Ao Tian, do you have time? Last time you have promised me to come to see me, but you haven't come even one time."

"I am busy!"

"Busy? What you busy are?"

"Do you think that I should make report to you about my company's matters?"

"No... Ao Tian, I, I don't mean it. He, hehe." Li Mei Yun bites her lips, still keep her smiling face: "Don't you really not have time even a minute to see me?"

"Let's talk later!"

"When will you come? Do you really busy? Since you are so busy, do you have time to eat?" hah, but you have time to accompany that B\*, and even keeps on dating with her! Li Mei Yun really wanted to ask but she knows well Yu Ao Tian's character, he hates woman that easy to get jealous. If still want to ask, it only embarrassed herself.

## **Chapter 161**

"Mei Yun! If you are keep on provoking me, better we ended everything!"

"Ao Tian, Ao Tian, this, I have heal from my sickness, can I go to find you?"

**Tututututtt** 

The phone called directly being hung up!

Li Mei Yun discontentedly she called back: "Ao Tian, I beg you, can you give me little bit of time? You know that I love you, can you give me a little bit of your love?"

"Li Mei Yun! This time you felt down, did your brain also get hurt and turn be stupid? You must know that what kind of woman I hate the most?"

"I know, I know you hate woman who likes to stick to you, but I really miss you. Can't I miss you? Or..." she tried her best not to expose her jealousy, pretend to be so pity: "That little girl, these two days really not understand her, because you are dote her, she is causing problem for me, Ao Tian, can you come here?"

"I dote her? Well, I dote her." Yu Ao Tian frowned from the other side phone call: "Mei Yun, you have talked this much, didn't all because you want to meet me? I granted your wish now!" the phone hung up.

Finally Li Mei Yun got the satisfied answer: "Quickly, Xiao Zhen, give me my makeup tools."

"Miss, will it work to lie and make Mr. Yu comes here?"

"Useless. Yu Ao Tian will angry." Li Mei Yun knows very well what she has done but she really angry to Yao Yao, so...

"But, Ao Tian is more dislike girl who likes to show off, if not that B\* showing off, we also won't know what Yu Ao Tian doing for these few days."

Seeing Li Mei Yun happy face, Xiao Zhen immediately asked: "Ha, I understand Miss, when Mr. Yu comes, he will vent his anger toward that B\*"

"Heh." Li Mei Yun humphed, she does her makeup...

At same time, outside the room.

"Yao Yao, it seems that Li Mei Yun has got to the trap."

"Uh." She took deep breathe, helplessly smiles.

"Kring Kring Kring." Nan Lu phone is ringing, she hurried pick it up: "Hello? Miss Xu, I am at 16<sup>th</sup> floor VIP room. You come here." She hung her phone called, hurried looked at Yao Yao: "Miss Xu is here."

"Go, let's we wait her in front of the elevator."

In front of the elevator, not long after the phone call, a woman who looked so beautiful walked out front the elevator.

She has height about 170cm something, very propositional body posture, Yao Yao does not need to ask, at one glanced she could make a guess, woman in front her is Xu Qing. As expectedly, she is types of Yu Ao Tian's woman.

"Miss Xu, how are you. My name is Luo Yao Yao."

"You are Luo Yao Yao?" Xu Qing sees Yao Yao with curious eyesight, measuring her from head to toe, has Yu Ao Tian taste changed? "Say, why ask me to help?"

"I believe Nan Lu has told you everything, now I need your help." Yao Yao gives her faint smile.

"Need my help? Why must I help you?"

"Hehe, Miss Xu, if you are not intended to help me, I believe... you won't come here today, am I right?"

Yao Yao said straightforwardly, very composed, suddenly Xu Qing realized she shouldn't look her as little girl but as woman!

"Tell me the reason why must you ask me to help?"

"Because the enemy's enemy is friend, moreover the woman who is inside the patience room was the person who took your boyfriend before, don't you want to revenge?"

"Hah, little girl, you are right, if not because Li Mei Yun, I still have faith that Yu Ao Tian stills together with me. This matter, I decided to help you." After said, Xu Qing faster her steps heading to Li Mei Yun's room, once she pushed the door

open...

"Ao Tian! you..." when Li Mei Yun spotted Xu Qing instead of Yu Ao Tian, she frowned: "Why are you here?"

"Aiya, I have heard that you are sick, so I come to pay a visit la. Li Mei Yun ah, I never thought the retribution came this fast?"

"Retribution? What retribution?"

"Heh, I have heard recently Yu Ao Tian has new lover."

"So what?" Li Mei Yun laughed: "that time, I could make you left, and now I still have that capability to chase away all the women from Yu Ao Tian's side!"

"Li Mei Yun, as what I heard, that person is Yu Ao Tian's lover, her status is higher than yours!"

"What does Xu Qing means?" Yao Yao who is eavesdrop from outside, curiously frowned.

"I also knew it when I found Xu Qing, that time, Li Mei Yun wasn't Master's lover. She just luckily knew Master. In order to break Master and Xu Qing relationship, she was telling lie as Master's lover, so she able to chase away Xu Qing. Moreover... Xu Qing said, Master never looked for Lover before."

"Hah? So...what I am?" Yao Yao blinking her eyes, she thought that Yu Ao Tian likes to have many lovers, never expected!"

"So that, when I told her your relationship with Master to Xu Qing, she didn't trust me. But, when I was in Japan, following Master, I never saw Master had lover, Yao Yao, you are the first lover of Master."

First? Should she open a bottle of Champagne to celebrate it?

To be honest, there are so many times she curious about Yu Ao Tian reason to keep herself beside him, first time she thought because her meeting in Host Bar, where she mistaken Yu Ao Tian as Host, later she thought about her father case, but the result there's nothing between her father with Yu Ao Tian. after she thought for few times, maybe because she is unwillingly to give herself to him so that nothing happen between them, his strong desires and domineering self most of time cause mischief, so that he keeps me to his side? Maybe this is the

reason...

Suddenly another footstep is coming nearer.

Yao Yao and Nan Lu who are eavesdropped turned to see.

When they see, Yu Ao Tian and Mo Xue Tong are already standing at their back, suddenly the atmosphere simply changed to freezing.

### **Chapter 162 - 163**

Nan Lu quickly lowers her head, Yao Yao also. Both of them naturally give the way for them to get inside.

Yu Ao Tian acted as if not seeing them, when he wanted to enter the room, suddenly there are women roaring voice from inside...

"Li Mei Yun, you dare to say that today you become Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend is not because you are scheming?"

"So what? It was obviously you gone crazy by ypurself and made Yu Ao Tian angry, that was what you seek for!"

"Hah, if that time wasn't you who made the phone call, saying that you were Yu Ao Tian's lover, do you think that would I doubt him?"

"So that's why I say you stupid lo."

"Li Mei Yun, soon or later you will get the retribution!"

Hearing the chaos from inside the room, Yu Ao Tian who is standing at outside his face expression is black, once he pushed open the door...

By coincidence Yu Ao Tian witness Li Mei Yun slaps Xu Qing!

"Ao Tian?" Li Mei Yun dumbfounded, completely understand she makes wrong moves.

"Mei Yun, you are looked so mess, really ugly!" Yu Ao Tian disappointed shaking his head.

"Ao Tian, you listen to me, thing isn't like you think. It is her! she is coming to provoke me." Li Mei Yun forcing herself to smile, faster she walking in front of Yu Ao Tian: "Ao Tian, you must trust me." When she wanted to hug Yu Ao Tian, he heartless pushed her away.

"Ao...Tian?" Li Mei Yun upset staring at him, her eyes locked on Yao Yao and Nan Lu who are standing at door way.

Both of them are immediately exposing their laugh, only to make Li Mei Yun angrier.

"I know! I know! It must be you, it is you who do it, isn't it?" just as expected, Li Mei Yun goes crazy and rushed to Yao Yao in front.

"Miss.. Miss Li, I don't know this woman." Yao Yao showed her innocent face.

"Stop to deny! You such S\* B\*, you really schemer!" after said, Li Mei Yun raised her hand high.

On the moment her hand is almost landed to Yao Yao, hurried Yu Ao Tian stopped her: "Are you crazy enough?"

"Ao Tian! You listen to me, this little thing is keeping show off in front of me these few days, saying that you bought her many things. moreover today you are calling her, right? I was not purposely opened my room door to hear your conversation with her."

This time Yao Yao is smarter, she not denied also not admitted, she just obedience hiding at beside.

"What? Is it really happened?" Yu Ao Tian pretended to be surprised, he lips curved upward, smile.

"That's true, Mr. Yu. I can be the witness!"

When heard Xiao Zhen opened her mouth, pair of Yu Ao Tian eyes are gleaming coldly, beside him is Mo Tong Xue who already grabbed Xiao Zhen's neck: "Here is no place for you to take part, shut up!"

"Uh, I, I am sorry." Xiao Zhen keeps quiet.

"Mei Yun, so what was my conversation with Yao Yao?"

"I don't really remember, but I remembered tomorrow you have scheduled with her, right?"

"En, so that." Yu Ao Tian narrowed his eyes, turned and looked at Yao Yao: "Bao Bei, don't forget tomorrow we have appointment."

Uh, Yu Ao Tian is really good in control his emotion. "Oh, okay." Since he not revealed her lies, so she just keeps the flow, Li Mei Yun is going to explode!

Hurried explode, no need to restrain!

"Ao Tian? What are you talking? She is the person who makes me lost my baby, why are you so doting her? Why?" as expected, Li Mei Yun can't restrain herself, she exploded.

"All go out!" at the moment, Yu Ao Tian expression froze, all the people are out from the room.

After the fuss finally the room death silent, Li Mei Yun is trembling: "Ao, Ao Tian, do you still love me?"

"Love, of course I love you."

But when listened to his words, she seems to get the most satisfaction answer and she moves one step and hug Yu Ao Tian.

But in another moment...

"You are looking for people to\*\* Yao Yao, you even dare to scheme her as your miscarriage reason for the child that you should not bear, you lay all the blame to her so that she pissed off and provoke me. I don't even blame you, so that... I really love you, Mei Yun."

Li Mei Yun's body is trembling, slowly she loosen up her hands from Yu Ao Tian.

When she sees his cold expression, her head as if gonna exploded: "Ao, Ao Tian, you... you have known? Why are you still... hu hu."

At sudden, Yu Ao Tian expressionless pinched her chin, moved so close so that her face meets his face: "Because she is too naïve. If she not sees everything clearly, how will she grow up?"

As the result she feels pain, Li Mei Yun tears is streaming down: "Thus, you are used me to train her?"

"This is what you seek for!"

At this moment, Li Mei Yun finally realized herself not more than tool, a tool to help someone to grow up. "Is it me who seek for? Hah, since when started? Since I begged you to let me stay with you in your house, since that time?"

"Or else you think why I let you in?" Yu Ao Tian smiling face looked so weird.

Finally she understood why he agreed to her so easily to let her stayed at the villa, also understood why she was asked to act and pretend didn't know his relationship with that little girl, so that the reason why he never exposed herself.

Li Mei Yun has scheme to her utmost, she scheme here and there, as the result she is not more than laughing stock: "Ao Tian, do you... do you loves that little girl?" tears, wet her face, she really does not want to admit it, but she really never thought Yao Yao as her rival, now she must to accept the reality, like or dislike.

And then...

Yu Ao Tian laughed at himself because he does not know how he feels toward that little thing!

"Ao Tian, you are too cruel, really too cruel, why must you tell me all of these, since you want to teach that little girl to be smarter, you can tell her to keep learning, do you think she is learning to be smarter?"

"Ah." Yu Ao Tian helplessly shaking his head, silent for moment, scoffed: "I and her, these days, we never contacted. You say... does she learn to be smarter?"

After he said, at the sudden Li Mei Yun face changed: "I, I was scheme by her! Ha, hahahaha, Ao Tian, Ao Tian, I just found out that you like woman who loves to scheme!"

"No, I only love her to be able scheming!" free his hand from Li Mei Yun, Yu Ao Tian sneered.

Her white skin is imprinted five fingers, however her face is more covered with unwillingness expression. Because she can accept the reality she lost to that little girl based on her condition which is better than Yao Yao.

"Ao Tian, what do you like from her, what makes you like her?"

"None of your business." After said, he is coldly leaving the room.

Li Mei Yun can't accept it, her red eyes looked at him: "Ao Tian, soon or later, one day you will regret about that little girl, she isn't not as good as you thought!"

"Thank You, Miss Xu." In hospital corridor, Yao Yao smiles.

Xu Qing accepts her shaking hand: "It is me who should say thank you to witness this big show. But..." her eyes rolled: "Why are you so brazen to bid good bye to me, don't you afraid Yu Ao Tian would find out, everything actually is planned by you?"

She planned? Huh, stills no one knows who is the real schemer, but Yao Yao can certain one thing, everything that happened today have been predicted by Yu Ao Tian before? When she thinks, up to here, suddenly her eyes catch Yu Ao Tian who is walking closer...

Looking the surrounded, Yu Ao Tian acted as if he sees nothing and directly bring Mo Xue Tong with him, he even acted as if Yao Yao does not exit there, passed her. Entered to the elevator, he pressed the button to 28<sup>th</sup> floor.

"Ao Tian, not go back?" Mo Xue Tong curiously asked him.

"Since we are in hospital, of course we should pay visit to Luo Chang." Yu Ao Tian smiled while tidying his suit.

"Oh ya, Ao Tian, Z has sent news. It is regarding few data and information about Luo Yao Yao, year when she born and also the year when she went to Japan, all are kept secretly by the government!"

"Oh? Interesting, it seems the government have something about Luo Yao Yao so her information is locked." Yu Ao Tian can feel the reason why the government locked the information about Luo Yao Yao is no relation to her parent but more because of Luo Yao Yao herself so that her parent identity also being kept secretly.

"There is also one thing, Ao Tian. Z also checked on others who is possible to have relationship with Luo family, Luo Yao Yao still has uncle (from mother side). Currently he stays in Canada. I have asked people to bring him back."

"You did very well, Xue Tong." Yu Ao Tian smiled satisfied, when just out from the elevator...

"Kring Kring" suddenly the phone is ringing. "Hello?"

"CEO Yu, I am Feng Chen Yi, I have business to talk with you, do you have time?"

Deep black eyes are sweeping in front of the Luo Chang's patience room, he smiles deviously, he moved back, entering the elevator, pushed the button to 1: "I have, half hour meet."

"Okay."

\*\*

Inside the luxurious private room, Feng Chen Yi who sat in front of Yu Ao Tian hand over document: "CEO Yu, a few days later my brother will throw out new property project, I hope Berson can take this project. As for the profit, it will satisfy you."

"Hah, since Feng Chen Rui is the one who responsible for the project he must already get good the internal bidder?"

"For this, CEO Yu can rest assured. I can come to find you, absolutely..."

Let the yesterday as memory, now you and I...

Feng Chen Yi phone is ringing while he is in the middle of conversation with Yu Ao Tian.

Yu Ao Tian confound, he feels the ringtone is so familiarized.

"General Manager Feng, your phone." Lisa handed over the phone to Feng Chen Yi.

"Pardon me." He smiled little bit guilty toward Yu Ao Tian, he received the phone call: "Hello?"

"Feng Chen Yi, do you have time?" it is Luo Yao Yao's voice from the phone.

That cold face suddenly changed little bit gentle: "What's matter?"

"I have done with your card, now I want to give it back to you, have time?"

"En?" he casted a glance at Yu Ao Tian who is beside of him, little bit hesitate, slowly said: "I am in Xi Ya restaurant, you come here." He hung up the phone call."

"Chen Yi, since you are busy, I take..."

Yu Ao Tian preparing to stand up, Feng Chen Yi hurried hinting him it is okay, shook his head: "It is okay CEO Yu, she still needs time to arrive here. Let's we

keep on discussing."

"Vice CEO Feng, I got the news that Yu Ao Tian and your little brother are having conversation in this restaurant." One of luxurious black car is slowly stopping in front of the main entrance of the Xi Ya Restaurant.

Through the car window, Feng Chen Rui narrowed his cold eyes: "Hah, Feng Chen Yi that little brat really support the outsider, now he even dares to collaborate openly with Yu Ao Tian to fight with me!" After said, he tidied up his necktie and faster gets down from his car.

This time....

A light piercing to the pair eyes of Feng Chen Rui, frowned, he unhappily looked at the taxi which slowly stopped in front of the restaurant main entrance.

He sees it is Luo Yao Yao who is getting down from the taxi.

"Humph? So coincide?" Feng Chen Rui eyes rolled, he faster his footsteps to in front: "Little girl, we meet again!"

She paid the Taxi fee, looked at the voice direction: "Uh, hello." How can meet Feng Chen Yi big brother in here, do Feng Chen Yi and his older brother have appointment?

"Looking for Chen Yi? Let we go to meet him, he has made appointment to eat in here."

"Oh... alright." Although Yao Yao is trying to avoid, but this time she really can't avoid him so she just go with flow, following Feng Chen Rui entering the restaurant.

"Go, book one empty private room." Feng Chen Rui whispered to his personal assistant.

Get instruct, that personal assistant secretly leaving.

Not long after that, Feng Chen Rui brings Yao Yao to one empty private room.

"Feng, Vice CEO Feng, where is Feng Chen Yi?" Yao Yao is curiously asking Feng Chen Rui.

He elegantly smiling, he pulled one of the chair: "Just have seat first. Perhaps

Chen Yi hasn't arrived."

Uh... just now when she in phone with Feng Chen Yi, he said *I am in Xi Ya restaurant"* but not saying that they meet in Xi Ya restaurant, what is going on?

Seeing Feng Chen Rui is smiling toward her, she suspects him but still sit down.

"Little girl, have you reconciled with my little brother?"

She glanced at Feng Chen Rui, hurried avoiding to meet his eyes, coldly said: "Both of us are only ordinary friend, that kind of relationship."

"Oh? So that is. Haha, you are so beautiful, my little brother not chasing you to start again, he is really stupid." Feng Chen Rui showed pity expression toward Yao Yao.

"Vice CEO Feng, I still better to look for Feng Chen Yi at outside." Yao Yao is standing up wanted to leave, she really feels not comfortable to be with Feng Chen Rui, and despite he is his older brother.

"Aiya, little girl, why are you so in rush, does you dislike to have conversation with me?"

That's right, because dislike to speak with you! "No, not that, Vice CEO Feng you are think too much, I feel little bit hot inside the room."

"Oh ya? Go and set the temperature lower." Feng Chen Rui spoke to his personal assistant.

Yao Yao helplessly sits back.

"Little girl, what do you like from my little brother so that you dated him before?"

What I like from Feng Chen Yi?

That brat is so bossy and also has quite stiff face and actually I also don't know what I like from him?

Six years ago, after two months since the first time she met him school during in Japan...

1	6	4
4	. •	



This chapter is about six years ago memories when Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi were still in Japan and how they got closer to each other.

# Chapter 164

Meow Meow! Outside the student council area, a group of boys were chasing a cat.

It saw by Yao Yao who was passing by. With righteous expression she rushed to there: "Hey, you guys stopped!"

"Aiya, Junior High little sister, looks so kawai." Few of the boys got interested with Yao Yao.

There was nothing she afraid for the group of Japanese Seniors since she rushed from the student council room. "I warn you guys don't bully it!"

"How about we bully you, is it okay?"

"You guys... you dare! This is student council area, who dare to touch me give a try?"

"Oh? Let's we give a try." After said, two of the senior grabbed her arms.

"Help me! Help..."

One of the Senior was covered her mouth, seeing the two boys were taller one by one compare to her, made her helplessly couldn't kick them.

And then in the most crisis situation, black shadows appeared, foot kicks one of the senior's butts who grabbed Yao Yao, those few boys looked at their back...

The bright shiny diamond earring caught to their eyes, few of the seniors panic: "Feng, Feng Chen Yi?" all of them were scared and running away.

Yao Yao looked at him with admiring eyesight, awesome, his appearance able to make those seniors running away, who was this senior and why all of them afraid of him?

This moment, she was too curious about this handsome and cold senior but in same time she also had changed some views about him.

"Thank you, thank you for helping me. Senior."

Another second...

"No need to thank me, I am not coming to help you."

"Uh..." Yao Yao felt as if her chin dropping down.

Meow, meow, at this moment, that white little cat which was saved by Feng Chen Yi was dawdling in Feng Chen Yi's calf.

He slowly lifting the cat up, his cold face smiled: "Hungry?"

Meow, meow, meow.

Yao Yao finally knew actually she was thinking too much, he was coming simply only to saved the cat, huhuhuhuhu so embarrassing. "Senior, is this cat yours?"

His dark eyes were looking at Yao Yao big moist eyes, Feng Chen Yi coldly said: "This is the stray cat that I pet, for moment it stays in school."

"Woah, Senior you are so compassionate." For this moment, the 13 years Yao Yao was finally had totally changed her view toward Feng Chen Yi: "Can you let me to hug it?"

Seeing her expecting expression, Feng Chen Yi frowned; he moved the cat from his hand to hers.

No one knows, the cute cat suddenly turned become super saiya when it handed to Yao Yao. It lifted it left uppercut directly scratched Yao Yao's face.

Feng Chen Yi who was besides her looked dumbstruck, Yao Yao also, one seconds, two seconds, three seconds... "woah!" she crying out loud.

"Hey, don't cry, don't cry." Feng Chen Yi seems to change be another person, didn't know how to coax her and really didn't not know what to do, he was trying to coax her until he laughing hard by himself.

"Hu... what are you laughing for? Hu..." Yao Yao wiped her tears and curiously asking him.

At that time she didn't get the answer from Feng Chen Yi, later when both of them were dating, Feng Chen Yi told her the reason why was he laughing last time. The way she was crying too dumb, but also cute, very similar alike the new born baby, it was called as the compassion moved the thousand years of iceberg.

And then...

He could come and chase away those seniors not only because the cat but also Yao Yao.

Feng Chen Yi isn't type of hero who will come and rescue other people, if that day changed to be other people, he would not bother himself. It could be seen, Feng Chen Yi during that time already has something special toward Yao Yao.

Later on, he brought Yao Yao went to his private apartment near the school, applied some medication for the wounds.

"Thank you." She thanked him while looked her reflection in mirror, her tears was flowing down wet her face.

"Doesn't know would it leave scar or not..."

"The wound quite deep, of course it will leave scar." Feng Chen Yi was teasing her.

Yao Yao who scared: "Woah!" she was crying louder.

Feng Chen Yi could not do anything: "Why are you crying again?"

"My face has turned be ugly, later who will dare to marry me? Hu..."

"You are only 13 years old how can you thinks to get married?" Feng Chen Yi could not resist to showing his smiling face, but also show little bit difficulty: "How about, if you really can't marry in the future, I will force myself to marry you, is it okay?"

"Are you sure?"

"I am sure. Alright, stop to crying." Feng Chen Yi gently rubbing her forehead, that cold face showed mesmerizing smile.

Yao Yao knew what he said only to coaxing her, but the 13 years old her, it was the first time her heart beating that fast and also in that time, she found out that the cold face senior actually has his gentle and warm side too.

Only to find out the warm man who gentle is not always can catch an attention but the cold man who suddenly turned to be gentle and warm, that kind of man really can touch others heart...

### **Chapter 165 – 167**

Back to the present time.

Although that incident not the main reason why both of them finally dating, but because that incident, it made their relationship got closer to each other. At least, Feng Chen Yi image in her heart was totally changed.

"Vice CEO Feng, the thing about Feng Chen Yi and I dating have been our passed. I don't remember it anymore." Yao Yao is beating around the bush, not really care.

"Haha, so that it is." Feng Chen Rui pair of eyes flashed, he lifts the tea pot and pours the tea to his own cup, sip it: "Little girl, since you are not reconciling with my little brother, well I will not beating around the bush. To be honest, I really like you. Do you want to be my lover?"

Yao Yao looked so dumbfounded to Feng Chen Rui who sitting in front her, she really wanted to ask something...

Big uncle, how old are you so that you want me to be your lover? The most important is, she ever became his younger brother girl friend before. With moisten eyes: "Vice CEO Feng, what do you mean?"

"I don't have any particular mean, I have said it. I like you. Moreover I don't mind you as my little brother ex-girlfriend."

He not minds? But she mind! What! Does Feng Chen Rui want to embarrass his younger brother?

"Little girl, you mention the price."

"Uh... Vice CEO Feng what you mean is as long as I become your lover, you will give me money?" the way of Yao Yao speaking now sound more gentle, a pair of moisten eyes gleaming with innocent looked.

"Of course. Just to let you know, our Vice CEO Feng never treated any girl unfairly." This is Feng Chen Rui's personal assistant who is speaking.

Yao Yao silent for moment and then speaking with little bit difficulty tone: "So if I looked for you, ask any amount of money you will give it to me?"

"As long as you mention still in grasp, all I can give."

"I, I am not greedy, I just want... want your VIP gold card, can I?" Since Feng Chen Rui is the eldest in Feng family, even Feng Chen Yi has VIP gold card, so that must be impossible if Feng Chen Rui does not have, right?

"Little girl, you still dare to say you are not greedy?" that assistant roared unsatisfied to Yao Yao.

Yao Yao pouted her mouth: "If cannot just forget it. You are stingier than Feng Chen Yi..."

"Aiya, I don't say that I won't give you." Feng Chen Rui glared at his assistant: "Aaron, not speak if you are not ask to, better you shut up your mouth!"

"I am sorry, Vice CEO Feng."

Feng Chen Rui takes out his wallet, he smiles toward Yao Yao and put the VIP gold card to the table: "Little Girl, since now you are my lover."

"Oh, alright." Yao Yao is happily to take that card.

"You wait for me in here, I will come back soon." Feng Chen Rui stands up and he brings his assistant out with him.

"Vice CEO Feng, aren't you serious to give your card to that little girl, are you?"

"So what, she does not know the pin? But that girl who ever been "pet" by that brat Feng Chen Yi really is having good stomach (greedy), once open her mouth is already asking gold card." Feng Chen Rui is despised and shaking his head. He also ever have some women with him, but every time the spending always has it limit, especially about the VIP gold card, not many women know about that card, this kind of greedy girl alike Yao Yao, she is the first one he ever met.

"Vice CEO Feng, this is the room." Aaron pointed at one of private room.

Feng Chen Rui smiling, he directly opens the door. "Aiyo, Chen Yi you are also eating in here? Oh with CEO Yu too. You are know for sure that your big brother always want to know CEO Yu. Both of you are eating together but not call me?"

"Now eating is also not late." Feng Chen Yi is standing up and coldly introduced: "CEO Yu, this is my older brother, Feng Chen Rui."

"CEO Yu, it's an honor to meet you." Feng Chen Rui is walking in front of Yu Ao Tian, politely stretch out his hand.

"Same same." Yu Ao Tian smirks, he is shaking his hand.

"Oh yeah, Chen Yi, regarding about the project which I want to launch, father has interested to give it to Ao Bo. As you know, the CEO of Ao Bo is our father's best friend." Feng Chen Rui is mentioning about the project which discussed by Feng Chen Yi and Yu Ao Tian just now.

"But Father also said in business there is no father and son, moreover friendship, of course whoever can bring us more profit, we will give it to those."

"Is it? But this project is responsible by me, whatever, other than Ao Bo, if other company dares to get involved... I will be surely fought all out to that company!" after said, Feng Chen Rui, eyes is hinting to Yu Ao Tian.

Yu Ao Tian is someone eat soft not hard, since Feng Chen Rui dares to declare the war, it means he is in his death waiting list now!

"Vice CEO Feng, if I were you, at least I will wait until I can sit steady in CEO position and then dare to make this kind of announcement." His eyes looking at Feng Chen Yi: "Chen Yi, your suggestion, I will try my best to do it!"

"En? CEO Yu, are you agree?" Feng Chen Yi acting curiously asked.

"Of course! But, I can agree to it this fast just thank to your big brother."

"This is absolutely! Big brother just expected you are so awesome."

After Feng Chen Rui heard the short conversation between Feng Chen Yi and Yu Ao Tian, he feels sour, anger he made fist with his hand. He never thought that Yu Ao Tian has fearless style to this point, no wonder he is underworld emperor! "CEO Yu, you really are clapping hand with my little brother (team up), I afraid not long after this, my younger brother will address you as his big brother."

"Anyway I don't mind to have younger brother alike Feng Chen Yi." Yu Ao Tian smile deviously.

That really pissed off Feng Chen Rui. Take another topic, he looked at Feng Chen Yi: "Oh, big brother is dating new girlfriend, I want to introduce her to you. She is in other room."

Feng Chen Yi cold face can feel something, and then he thought of Yao Yao...

"CEO Yu, do you want to join us?"

"I don't have any interest with Vice CEO Feng's girlfriend. If there is nothing to discuss, I take my leave first."

"Take care, CEO Yu."

After Yu Ao Tian leaving, Feng Chen Rui and Feng Chen Yi go to the other room.

When he sees Yao Yao inside the room, he really not surprised: "Big brother, is she the new girlfriend that you want to introduce to me?"

"Yes. But after I think for while, both of you are not stranger, right?"

Feng Chen Yi narrowed his eyes, his looked at Yao Yao.

While Yao Yao is curiously frowned: "What new girlfriend? Chen Yi, what are you talking about?"

"Oh, my big brother, he said that he is dating new girlfriend and asked me to see."

"En? This place other than me no other ah?" Yao Yao is smiling to those two brothers: "Vice CEO Feng, don't you mean that your new girlfriend is me, right? Ahahaha."

"Little girl, what do you means? Just now you have agreed to be my girlfriend?"

"Did I? When it happened?"

"Hey, little girl, just now you were accepting Vice CEO's VIP gold card." Aaron said.

Yao Yao showed her curious expression and takes out the gold card: "Do you mean this one?"

"Yes!"

"Oh yeah, Chen Yi, your big brother was so weird, he strangely gave me this card. But he did not give me the pin, you say, what he intended to?"

"En, did he?" Feng Chen Yi plays along with Yao Yao, he takes the VIP gold card, put his hand on Yao Yao's shoulder: "My beloved, since it is given by big brother to you, you must thank big brother, mustn't you?"

"Oh, Thank You, Vice CEO Feng."

This moment, Feng Chen Rui face is as black as charcoal, just now he had already being stricken by Feng Chen Yi and Yu Ao Tian, he almost exploded because of furious, and now when he is trying to use Yao Yao to anger Feng Chen Yi, no one knows this little girl not saying anything but betray on him, she even joins Feng Chen Yi to anger him!

"We leave first!"

"Wait, Big brother. This card pin... is it stills same?" Feng Chen Yi is swaying the Gold card in his hand.

"Yes."

"My beloved, hurry uses this card to buy a house, just afraid if tomorrow Big brother would be changed the pin, you won't be able to buy it anymore."

"Oh, but... I want to buy two houses."

"You even can buy ten houses, anyway it is unlimited."

"Bamn!" the sound of door slammed to open, Feng Chen Rui can't listen anymore to Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao conversation, he brings his personal assistant along with him.

"Kekekekeke" Yao Yao laughing deviously with her small mouth.

Feng Chen Yi really understands this little demoness character, when she wants to be naïve she can be such naïve and pure but when she in her evil mode she can be most evil than anyone can be. "Humph, still laughing."

"Why?" Yao Yao curiously looked at Feng Chen Yi whose face filled with criticize expression.

"Don't you know what kind of man is my big brother!"

How can she know? When they were still dating, he never told her about his family. "I only know, he is the nasty person who talking bad about you."

They have broken up but she still same like before.

During the time when they still dating, no matters how big they fought, having cold war, but as long as there was person who dared to talk bad about Feng Chen Yi she would be the one who immediately fought with that person, life and death.

It also same with him...

"Anyway, if you see Feng Chen Rui in the future, just avoid him, understand?"

"I always do that every time I met him."

"So, how could today you go together with him?"

"It was him, he said that he coming here to have meal with you, I just..." can this blame on her, both of the two brothers are appearing in same restaurant, it must be naturally she thought both of them are scheduled to meet.

"You say, do you stupid or not? I have called you to come here, of course I must be already in here."

Yucks? He said her stupid? Yao Yao is not satisfied, she glared at him: "You are the dummy ones." Her eyes spotted Feng Chen Yi's arms still around her shoulders, subconsciously she swaying away his hand...

But he is even braver to pull her into his embraces.

"Hey, let go!"

"Have you eaten?" he lowers his head, his eyes is shining with warmness, if someone not be careful perhaps will fall into it.

"Thump! Thump!" it feels alike the first time when her heart beating because of him, hurried her eyes looked into his: "haven't"

"Let's eat together."

"No...I must go home immediately. You, let me go."

"That man really watching you so tight or perhaps, he can't live without you?" Feng Chen Yi eyesight is back to his normal cold eyesight. Finally he lets her go.

"Feng Chen Yi, this card I give it back to you, together with your older brother's card too."

Feng Chen Yi only takes his older brother's card and left his: "Mine card for you."

"I don't want! Give back to you!"

"Don't you like to spend man's money?"

What did Feng Chen Yi means? "I have my own job, others than my grandpa medication fees, I never spent any cent!" Damn...why I told all the things.

She is speaking as flowing water, Yao Yao is trying to deny but it really hard to do it.

Feng Chen Yi makes fist with his hand, he has guessed it that Yao Yao might because of her family, his vein is clearly showing in his skin surface, coldly said: "So that your grandpa medication fee does not need paid by him anymore, and then, break up with him immediately!"

Break up? Can it be that easy?

#### **Chapter 168**

This is no difference with burning the bridge after used it? When she needs Yu Ao Tian's help she will come to find him, when she does not need he anymore and then break up with him? She lowered her head: "I like him and I won't break up with him."

"Luo Yao Yao, do you dare to swear that you really love him?" Feng Chen Yi lifted her hands.

She is shivering, endured the pain, lifted up her head and looked at him, nodding confidently: "I swear, I...uh."

The bossy Feng Chen Yi kissed her, all her words are swallowed back, he does not want to hear, he does not want to hear from her mouth how she loves that man!

"Feng Chen Yi, I love you."

"Feng Chen Yi, let's us break up."

That time when she said that she loves him, heaven knew how happy he was, despite he not showing any expression, and then when she said that she wanted to break up with him, he thought he would not sad, thought his heart wouldn't in pain, but the fact wasn't that, again he showed an expressionless face as if nothing happened.

When he didn't lose then he didn't know how much he loves her, if he didn't lose her he didn't know how to cherish her.

After two years he met her again, to start over not only because of Yao Yao to Feng Chen Yi but there stills... because his loves toward her. Unfortunately, he seems to miss the opportunity.

"Uh!" her soft lips are greedy tasted by the man she uses all her strength to

struggle. But the man is stronger, she is weakling, she not match for him. She used her strength to bite him who is trying to pry open her mouth and intertwined with her tongue.

"Uh." Frustrated, finally Feng Chen Yi let her go.

"Feng Chen Yi, why every times we meet you always makes things to be difficult?" Unable to ending and then it becomes resentment, moreover... why she must feel so guilty toward Yu Ao Tian?

"I have said before, I will try my best to be bastard in front of you. So what, did you feel guilty toward that man?" When Feng Chen Yi said it his pair of eyes is showed cold smiles in his face.

"You are too much! Feng Chen Yi, you are too much, I hate you!" She pissed off and leaving him, running away from the restaurant...

Her heart thumps, her heart hurt, happiness, grievance, love, hate, like, dislike. These all are the feeling she feels after she knows Feng Chen Yi.

It maybe because of this, she can't forget about that man, likes him with tears, feeling grief with smiles, a kind of feeling that engraved in heart how can it be so easy to forget about it?

His kindness, his bad, all are imprinted in her heart, Feng Chen Yi is a man that she loves but also she hates, that man...

"This...."

Outside the restaurant main entrance, the car is suddenly stopped because it almost bumps into Yao Yao.

"I am sorry, sorry," She is distracted because that matter and keeps on apologizing, but when her eyes glances at the car plate number...

Impossible, how... can be so coincide?

"Miss Luo, CEO Yu asked you to get in car." Mo Xue Tong who sat at the passenger seat gets down from the car.

Her heart is thumping, beat so fast. She slowly gets inside the car.

"Why are you here?" besides her, Yu Ao Tian is looking at her, asking.

She nervous: "I come to meet my friend, why are you in here?" "Business talk."

The car moves, inside the car is deathly silent perhaps the only thing can be heard is the breathing sound inside it because of the quietness.

At this time, a pair of warm hands is holding her small cold hands.

Heart sink, she thought to move her hands but after she recalled the moment when she was with Feng Chen Yi in restaurant... suddenly she feels she is knowing her place.

Because of Li Mei Yun, she hates Yu Ao Tian but after she calmed down, thinking carefully she knew it wasn't his fault.

She could not calm herself last time, she is too impulsive and made Yu Ao Tian pissed off, moreover...her lover status, everything is opened up.

Because the matters regarding to Li Mei Yun wasn't Yu Ao Tian fault, compare to what happened just now between she and Feng Chen Yi is just pale into insignificance by comparison.

Does not understand why, she has too many vague and ambiguous contact with Feng Chen Yi, but now suddenly today she feels guilty toward Yu Ao Tian.

I am sorry... Yu Ao Tian.

She murmured, it showed her inner words of deep inside her heart, Yao Yao turned her head and looked outside the window...

Not long after that, the car stopped at the destination place, Mo Xue Tong waiting and then gets down with them.

Their footsteps are fast going inside the villa, at this by coincide they see Li Mei Yun is packing her stuffs.

### **Chapter 169 - 170**

In the silent night, three of them are looking for all corners, Yu Ao Tian as if not seen Li Mei Yun, he faster his footsteps and goes inside the villa.

At this time, Yao Yao hurried to give way for Li Mei Yun and when they are passing each other, their eyesight exchanged, and when Li Mei Yun is passing right beside her...

"This thing will not stop in here! I will make your life sufferer than mine!"

The woman threatens is echoing in Yao Yao's ears, she really wanted to ask something...

Did Li Mei Yun know how she loss?

She is always trying to show that she never expecting or care about Yu Ao Tian, but her heart is petty minded about that. She thought she understood her own man, and thought that man loves her, but when she is crazily trying to dominate Yu Ao Tian's love for only to herself, she has already not understood him anymore and even lost him forever.

Li Mei Yun is not lost to Yao Yao, she really lost to her own heart that loves Yu Ao Tian. Although in the future she is trying to revenge to her, but that man won't look at her anymore.

This because...

When together with Yu Ao Tian and not makes one's heart involved with love, it still can get other things, but once fall in love with him, it means lose everything. Ha, this man is destined not to have any woman in his life because they are something alike material thing for him!

Against Li Mei Yun provocation, Yao Yao keeps silent, slowly she walking inside the villa...

Because Li Mei Yu has left, Angel helps Yao Yao to move back to Master's room due to Yu Ao Tian order. After the dinner, she knocks the Master's room door.

The cold silent room, Yu Ao Tian is leaning to the bed head while reading the magazine, on other side she is moving her feet to get into the bed, covered herself with quilt and lie down.

There is no eye contact between them, no conversation, both of them just silent inside the room.

Yu Ao Tian turned off the light, the room is falling into darkness.

She just wanted to close her eyes and sleep, suddenly one big hand is touching her hand closer, lips is kissed hotly...

Inside the darkness of the night, this sudden kiss surprised Yao Yao, she does not know to react, she is stunned doing nothing and let the man kissed her, let him to taste the sweetness of her lips.

His light cologne fragrance from his body is spread and breath by her, the smell of it is gradually gives a sense of loss to her mind inside the silent night.

Strange, really strange, although she is already get used to be kissed by Yu Ao Tian, but why this kiss seems to be different to the others kissed that she ever had, as if Yu Ao Tian wanted to tell her something.

Is it apologizing?

Absolutely not, someone alike Yu Ao Tian won't understand others people feeling, he is so bossy and domineering how can he lower his head? This must be she who is misunderstanding her feeling, must be!

"Bao Bei..." his deep voice, his lips moves but still pressed on her lips.

As the kissing becomes hotter, he is become infatuated with the kissing her lips, between the breathing, it spit warm airs to her face that makes her numbs. Her steady breathing gradually turns to ups and downs.

Under his guidance of his proficient skills in kissing, his tongue pries to her mouth. Yu Ao Tian mouth curved upwards showing his faint smiles. The atmosphere inside the room turned to be so ambiguous.

Suddenly, his big hand is holding her small hand with ten fingers intertwined

together. While the other hand is supporting her waist, turned over the body and pressed her down.

She awkwardly alike dragonfly touches the water lightly (having contact), her lips touched into his mouth, but for Yu Ao Tian this is not more than kind of invisible teasing. His steady breathing is gradually unsteady, as if one of vague scenery.

Cannot endure it anymore! Difficult to endure, she can't keep the pace, her brain is fell into chaos, she can't help herself but to circle around her hands to his neck.

He kissed her and she gives response to his kissing. After while, the kissing is ended and Yao Yao can feel her face burn red. She believes if Yu Ao Tian turned on the light, he might laugh at her burning red face.

She is lying down beside of Yu Ao Tian and he stills holding her hand tightly and pulled her to his embraces, cuddling her and won't let her go.

To be honest he never tried to kiss any woman that can give him butterflies sensation moreover kissing actually disgusting thing for him. He kissed not many women in his life, but now he really afraid that he only wants Yao Yao!

In the death of night...

Both of them do not have any other contact and the only thing is both of them still holding hands, tightly.

Unknowingly why, Yao Yao feels so weird tonight, moreover when she certain... Yu Ao Tian also weird as well this time.

He, tonight she can feel his aura is quite different and seems to be changed...

\*\*

Three days later.

Last time because she needed to taking care of Li Mei Yun in hospital, Yao Yao had taken four days work leave, at the fifth day when she came back to work Wang Han has praised about her talent and capability, promoting and give her three days time as trainee manager. Despite to the lower management staffs gossip, they can't speak much toward Wang Han's views and also no one dares

to speak words.

Regarding Sun Li, she also didn't bring up Yao Yao relationship with Yu Ao Tian. Because all of the employees know, gossiping about their CEO is strictly prohibited and something not honorable in workplace. And also only those who seek death will do it.

"Little Girl, you will back to school soon, right?" inside the Regional Director's office room, Wang Han is gently asking her.

"En."

"It is really regretful. Just waiting for your winter holiday to come back working at Berson, I promised you, the manager position is always keeping for you."

"Director Wang, thank you. But this manager position..." indeed is too subtle and ineffable. Yao Yao awkwardly lowering her head.

"HaHa, this manager position of course come up to its name. You must think that I promoted you completely because of CEO Yu, aren't you?"

"Isn't it?"

"As for me, I have told this matter to CEO Yu long time ago, that time General Manager Long had consideration, saying you are still trainee staff so that he refused. The most important... your relationship and CEO Yu, I have known it for long time ago."

Yao Yao felt little bit unexpected when she listened to Wang Han: "You had... known it?"

He elegantly smiled, helplessly and shook his head: "Didn't you the person who responsible in high level management elevator before, Miss Elevator?"

"Yes."

"There was one time, you and CEO Yu inside the elevator... suddenly when the elevator's door opened, all the people who were waiting for the elevator looked at CEO Yu, and then all of them were pretending not see anything and then left. Well, among those people, I was there."

Uh...

It was the day when she wanted to shoot and took evidence of Yu Ao Tian's crime, at the last she was the person got forced kiss from Yu Ao Tian. Maybe that time?

Faint\*, Director Wang has very sharp memory! Not to mention Director Wang indeed someone who is a person that able to maintained the talent, no wonder he is famous as one from four greats upper management in Berson Group.

\*have an equal meaning like hit the head to wall

Yao Yao is shyly smiling, she politely standing up and bowing to Director Wang: "Regardless of everything, it is my honor to meet and know you in here. Director Wang, I take my leave."

"En, Little Girl, if we have chance then we will meet again."

"Good bye." Leaving the Director office room, Yao Yao hurries to take out her phone: "What time you get off work?"

"5:10, meet in parking area." It is Yu Ao Tian clear voice from the phone.

#### **171**



I try to slow down my pace in translating this chapter because I want to enjoy and let you to share same feeling for this sweet moments. As you guys know, this novel is having such "Bipolar" and "Roller coaster" story plots. One moment this story can be so sweet as if will make "toothache" but another moment this story will give so many heartache and pain as if bitter pills.

I won't put too much spoiler or too further spoiler about this story because the I hope you guys can enjoy the best parts of this novel.

Well, Enjoy your time to read

# **Chapter 171**

The question is how could he know the reason she phoned him and would ask him to meet? After she thinks for while she really admired him, why every times he could guess whatever she thought? Frustrated!

After she got into the parking area, Yu Ao Tian is already inside the car: "Bao Bei, where are we going?"

She opened the car's door, sitting beside the driver seat, sweetly smiling: "Go to Department Store."

"Hah?" Yu Ao Tian frowned, just to let know he is not someone who will go and accompany woman to shopping especially department store, most of time he straightly gave his women card and asked them to go shopping by themselves.

But, since both of them have lover relationship, this is also the first time she takes an initiative to ask him to go to department store. At the moment he thinks deeply, finally he smiles: "Do you look happy today?"

"Yes. I am so happy today." Yao Yao nodded happily, she ties on the safety belt, excitedly fist her hand: "Let's go!"

Along her voice, the engine is started, the car is moving as fast as flying arrow...

Two of them, one is walking in front and the other is walking at behind, just now when they arrived at the main entrance, suddenly Yao Yao stopped her footstep.

Yu Ao Tian curiously turned and asked her: "Bao Bei, what things that you interested on?" he is getting ready himself to take out his wallet.

Who knows, she mysteriously smiles, at this moment she makes such exaggerating expression, boldly said: "Come, I have 1000 dollar budget for you, you can pick anything you want!"

"???" Looks at Yao Yao who is acting out of line, Yu Ao Tian dumbfounded for moment and then smile deviously: "Get rich?"

Her big eyes are looking right and left, when she certain there are not many

people around, she purposely showed off an envelope from her pocket, she takes out money papers from that thick envelope: "Hehehehe, I got my salary... today!"

He forgets that today is the paid salary day, Yu Ao Tian bends his body so that his height at same level with Yao Yao's height, looking at the money in her hand: "That much."

"Of course, I have 8000 dollar salary per month, as additional I got promoted and have become the trainee manager for three days which got 2000 dollar additional payment. So that, I have 10,000 dollar!" this is her first salary that paid "cash" more than thousand dollars so she is so excited and happy. "Oh yeah, how much salary you got?"

"Me? I don't have salary."

"You don't have? Uh, it is right ah, all money in the company is belongs to you." She got few thousand dollars this month, while she really does not know how much Yu Ao Tian got. Huh, this is the best part to be boss.

"Well, you hurry chooses your present."

When he sees Yao Yao urging him, Yu Ao Tian rolled his eyes: "Bao Bei, you got so much money from your salary, you only budget me 1000 dollars present?"

"Huh, so how much money you want for your present?" Yao Yao does not understand so she furrowed her brows, but again when she thought about Yu Ao Tian status, perhaps 1000 dollars doesn't mean much compare to his money, as if 1000 dollars can't buy anything.

She feels little bit complex and pouted her mouth, endure her heart pain and takes out 15 papers of 100 dollars from her envelope: "This 1500 dollar, is it enough?"

"It is only 1500?"

Looking at Yu Ao Tian who showed belittles expression toward her money, Yao Yao bitter her heart, stomped her feet: "2000! You cannot have more than this anymore."

"Humph, Bao Bei, I thought you will give me at least half from your salary."

"How it is possible? I still need to give my mother 5000 for living expenses, I will back to school soon, at least I need 2000 as my own living expenses."

"How about the rest 1000?"

"The rest 1000 dollars is for buying present for Nan Lu, Long Qi, Bai Ling, Director Wang! After all they have been taking care of me for long this time."

After Yu Ao Tian listened to her, he slowly raised up, smiling satisfied: "It seems you this Little Thing still have heart. Well, if 2000 dollar then 2000 it be!"

Cih, what is 2000 dollars then 2000 dollars it be, he talked as if Yao Yao really burdensome him! Just to let him know, the additional 1000 dollars actually is coming from her saving og last month living expenses.

"What should I buy?" Yu Ao Tian eyes is flashing and looking around, finally his eyes spotted at one watch shop: "Bao Bei, come here." His steps are so fast heading to the watch shop.

Yao Yao also following him tightly at his back.

Inside the watch shop the salesgirls are welcoming Yu Ao Tian warmly when he gets inside, their eyes flashing brightly, deathly locked on his watch in his wrist. Whispering each others: "Hey, have you seen, have you seen, that good looking man's wrist... he wears Patek Philippe & Co\* watch"

\* Patek Philippe & Co is brand from Switzerland which has more than 175 years expertise in making Swiss high quality watchmaking.

"Kao, impossible, but it seems real oh. So wealthy, so rich, and also good looking, it seems Gao Fu Shuai." Few of the salesgirls are hurried to approach in front of him: "Mr, welcome, may I know what brand of watch that you are looking for, perhaps we can introduce some for you."

He elegantly smiles, glances at Yao Yao who stands behind of him: "Bao Bei, help me to choose the watch."

"Ah? Me? Help you... choose the watch?" watch is something alike symbol that represent of man status, she only can send him watch that cost at least 2000 dollars, can he wear it when he going out?

"Didn't you say that you just get your salary and wanted to give me a present?

Do you want me to choose by myself?"

Uh, does he serious? "But, but don't you already have your own watch?" moreover, inside his accessories shelf in house, there are lots of expensive watches that cost hundred thousand dollars?

Yu Ao Tian lifts his arm, very fast he hit and broke his watch, and then...

Only by one hit it broke!

Hundred thousand of Patek Philippe & Co watch is broken into pieces in floor.

Yao Yao is dumbstruck looking at him with big wide eyes and open mouth. When looking at surrounded all the employees are also looking dumbstruck.

"Now, I don't have anymore." Yu Ao Tian is swaying his hand in front of her.

Later, she really wanted to say something but her mouth just open-wide but no voice comes out, hundred thousand watch ah, hundred thousand watch ah, only like this it gone? Yu Ao Tian, are you dummy?

"Hurry chooses one watch for me!" after said, he impatiently looking for chair to have seat.

"I... I go to choose." Her body moves alike robot to the displayed glass of the watches.

Those salesgirls finally regained their sense, immediately followed at Yao Yao's back: "Little Sister, is he your big brother?"

Ah? Big brother?

#### **Chapter 172**

Indeed, every times she is going out with Yu Ao Tian, both of them are never holding hand, most of time they are always walking one in front and one following at back, as additional both of them don't have couple aura, so most of people who see them always mistook he as big brother while she is his younger sister?

"Yes, he is my cousin brother. Hahaha."

"Woah, your cousin brother is cherishing you so much ah."

"Cherish?" Yao Yao glances coldly to Yu Ao Tian who sits not far from there, really not understand what the salesgirls intended to say.

"Yes ah. Your cousin brother has smashed his watch into pieces only to receive your good intention, buying him a new watch, if that is not because he cherishing on you, what you called it?"

This is called...cherish?

"Chen Yi, happy birthday. This is present for you."

"Mobile phone?"

She recalled Feng Chen Yi 18<sup>th</sup> birthday that year, Yao Yao had saved up her scholarship money and bought him three stars mobile phone cost about 2000 dollars.

"En, everyone is using Iphone now days, but I don't have that much money so I only can buy you three stars grade of mobile phone. But at least this mobile phone is better off compare to your current mobile phone which you used. Hehehe."

"It seems, Ha!"

He smiled happily. But who knows that after he got the new mobile phone,

immediately he threw his current mobile phone to river.

"Hey, why do you throw your mobile phone?"

"If I don't throw the old ones, how can I focus to used the new mobile phone that you gave me?"

That time Yao Yao saw Feng Chen Yi throwing his old mobile phone really so wasting, but she also touched with what did he said. And then... when she was birthday, he gave her a present, but during that time she still didn't know he is second generation young master of wealthy family.

Then, not long after that she found out the real status of Feng Chen Yi, and also finally she knew that the mobile phone which threw to river last time was Vertu brand, it priced... 45 thousand dollars!

She gained back herself, she glances at Yu Ao Tian for moment, he, does he really expecting her present?

No!

It must absolutely because he has too many watches at his house so he won't feel anything although he broke one watch, or two. It isn't like what the salesgirls told her such as he cherished her, absolutely no!

"Hahhaahaha." She awkwardly laughed at the salesgirls.

"Miss, we don't have Patek Philippe & Co watch brand, how about if you take look this Vacheron Constantin watches, this brand also good."

"No, thank you for your recommendation, I just want... to buy watch that cost about 2000 dollars."

Stunned for moment, that passionately salesgirls suddenly feels as if she is entered to the ice house.

"I have done. Let's we go." Yao Yao takes one watch, excitedly walking toward Yu Ao Tian.

His devious eyesight is sweeping at thing in Yao Yao's hand, slowly stretched out his hand, showing his wrist...

Huh, what Yu Ao Tian doing? Does he mean asking her to help him to put on

the watch? This bossy man, can't he put it by himself?

Although she not really happy, but still she obediently puts that watch on his wrist. Because she not sure what will happen if she refused him.

"I really like it." Yu Ao Tian looking at the watch which already in his wrist, it only an ordinary man's watch but he smiles such brilliant.

That scenery in front of her eyes, as if is oozing in the deep rippling ocean and her heart as if radiance by cast a spell by him.

"Thump" "Thump"

Her heart strangely beating faster, is he really like that ordinary watch? Maybe...

This is just part of flirting and courtesy!

"Stretch out your hand."

"Ah?" regained the sense, Yao Yao who dumbfounded, what does he want to do? She is curious about stretching out the hand.

Who knows another moment...

Yu Ao Tian put lady's watch onto her wrist.

"This is?"

"Let's go." He does not give Yao Yao an opportunity to speak, he stands up and get ready to walk out from the store.

"Cih, I thought I meet one big customer, who knows that little girl only bought 2000 dollars watch." The salesgirls who greeted Yao Yao before, she lowers her head with grief, talking and complains to her colleague.

"Why are you sighing? When that little girl is busying chooses watches, that man secretly bought her one...Breguet watch which priced 84thousand dollars!"

"Ah? Are you sure?" that salesgirls gained her sense back, immediately she showed her starry-eyed infatuation sight: "Too cute, I also want to have that kind of cute cousin brother, she seems not caring but actually in reality his is so impressive and touching in doing many things. I really want to sob!"

"Hey, Yu Ao Tian! Wrong. Ao Tian, what do you mean?" Yao Yao chasing him

after, her face showed doubting expression in front of him who put the watch to her wrist.

One of his hand is in his pocket, smiled deviously, said: "You help me to keep this watch, if you dare to take it off, I will... strangle you to death!" as information, this is his first time to take an initiative to purchase present for woman, despite this "woman" in front of his eyes is not more than a little girl.

"This reason, this really..." asked someone does not have way to refuse. Yao Yao is helplessly pouting her mouth, her eyesight sweeping at the watch in her wrist which priced hundred and thousand dollars, aiya, at the moment she feels her wrist is feel so heavy.

"Hahahaha, rewarded." After she done shopping, Yao Yao comes back to the parking area, she sits down beside the driver seat, happily to see all the things that she bought.

At her besides is Yu Ao Tian who helplessly shaking his head: "Rewarded? Is this the things that you give others as reward?" those big and small bags are things that she bought for others. The most important, just now she is obviously passing lots of luxurious shops but she not even glanced at those shop, is it because her age too young or she just does not craving for material things?

### **Chapter 173**

"Damn!" suddenly Yao Yao face expression changed.

"What happen?"

"I, I, my money... where is my money?" she nervously checking on her body and also her bag, she is so certain that she put her money in her pocket, why her pocket is empty now? Did it...

"My money... it seems being stolen."

Just now Yu Ao Tian was walking at her back, based on his high sensitiveness, impossible for him that he didn't know about the thief, and then... in the midway Yao Yao went to toilet one times, only that time Yu Ao Tian didn't follow her. "Stolen just let it be stolen."

"What does you mean by stolen and let it be stolen? That is my salary! That also my next month living expenses, and also money that I wanted to give to my mother! How can you say that easy?"

At the moment, Yu Ao Tian face changed gloomy: "You dare to shout at me?"

"Huh." She realized that she shouldn't vent her anger to Yu Ao Tian, she feels so guilty, lower her head: "I am sorry, I don't have intention to shout at you." Her tears flowing down, wet her face. But still this is her first salary with huge amount that she ever got, but at sudden it feels vanish alike bubble.

Suddenly, Yu Ao Tian takes out bucks of money and handed in front of Yao Yao's eyes.

"En?" hurried she wiped her tears, she curiously looked at him: "What are you doing?"

"Your living expense and also the money for your money. Is it enough?"

She is staring at bucks of money, she guess it must be more than ten thousand, but she knows that is Yu Ao Tian's money and that isn't her money that she lost: "It is not same." She pushed away the money, her head still lowers.

"What is not same, you just need to think this as your lost money."

"If this is thing, you are the one who less the money?"

He realized this Little Thing is so hard to communicate, "I don't care about this little money!"

"But I care!" suddenly she opened the car door.

Yu Ao Tian is almost wanted to get angry, but when he sees her face that wet by tears, he suppressed his anger.

"I know you have money, I also know that you are not care about this sum of money, but not same is not same, your money is also cents by cents you earn it, it isn't comes around like big wind. So that I really cannot take it. Forget it... stolen and let it be stolen. At least I have already bought all the present for everyone." Yao Yao only can use this kind of excuse in order to comfort herself and make herself in peace.

"Since you are not care about it anymore, why are you still crying?"

"My tears flowing down by itself, can't stop even wipe it, what can I do?"

After heard to her voice that has raised few octaves, Yu Ao Tian feels his nerve and his forehead veins is throbbing, she is so obviously care about her money but why doesn't she want to take his money? This is really... stubborn little girl!

"M\*F!" Yu Ao Tian is angry beating his car steering wheel, he left Yao Yao alone inside that black car, with scary expression he left.

After about half hour...

Where is Yu Ao Tian? Does he get angry and go away? Should she also go to follow him or not, but how about this car? Yao Yao has gained herself back from pain after losing her money, she is in her dilemma whether to stay or not, should she left or should she go home by herself.

Less than one hour, Yu Ao Tian finally comes back to inside car.

"You..." not waiting Yao Yao to speak and ask, he only showed his cold eyesight and throw an envelope to her body.

"This, this..." this is the money that she lost, not mistaken, it is!

Quickly she opened the envelope, she counts the money inside, 6980 dollars, not less even a cent, he... just now he suddenly left her, did he help her to find the losing money?

Her eyesight is not only flashing an excitement but also surprised, she hurried look at Yu Ao Tian: "Thank, thank you. Thank you." Words are not even can represent her excitement and also her moods, she hugs him and unstoppable to say thank you to him.

He has busy for half hour, he even asked hundred Yu Long's members only to find out the thief. That time Yu Ao Tian really pissed off, since when the Japanese Underworld Emperor, the first mafia group, Yu Long group was doing all out only to catch little thief? If this being told to outside, perhaps will be the biggest laughing stock, won't it?

But when Yu Ao Tian sees her smiling face, he has already back to himself, all his anger and also his dissatisfaction finally vanished without any trace, moreover he even thought everything he did more than worth. Hah, since when He, Yu Ao Tian has mood and quite big patience to coax little girl?

### 174 - 176

The wavy and bigger storm are coming...

To be honest I dislike the chapters because Yao Yao will experience something more than she ever received. But after few chapters, the old acquaintances will show and of course her best friend. If the previous chapters so sweet, this chapters is alike bitter pill.

Her pain is not because Yu Ao Tian treatment and also his heartless attitude as usual but more to Yao Yao who seems to lose to her heart. she afraid to become the woman who lets Yu Ao Tian to stay inside her heart, yet Feng Chen Yi position has removed...

## **Chapter 174 – 176**

After thinking about it, his lips curved upwards smile alike sinister...

"Do you only thank me this simple?"

"Well, how about I treat you meal, is it okay?"

"Meal? Little Thing, I have helped you to find your 7000 dollars, do you think only by treating meal then everything is settled?"

"So... so what do you want? How about, I share half of the money, is it okay?" she loosens her hands from Yu Ao Tian, takes out her money.

Her hands are stopped by Yu Ao Tian: "Little Thing, you don't play fool with me?"

"Uh?" without waiting for Yao Yao reaction, suddenly he has already pulled her body closer and pair of lips landed in her little mouth...

"Vice CEO Feng, Vice CEO Feng, quickly see! Quickly see!" In the dim parking area, Feng Chen Rui's assistant, Aaron hurried to point at sport car that not far from their car.

Feng Chen Rui takes a glance: "That is..." inside the car, the scenery of man and woman are kissing caught by his eyes, his eyes is become more focus after he saw the male and female lead!

"No wonder that little girl didn't move by my money, not even because she reconciles with Feng Chen Yi but because she has already had the gold owner. Yu Ao Tian!" his eyes rolled: "Does not know whether that little brat Feng Chen Yi knows that his Ex-girlfriend is Yu Ao Tian's woman now?"

"Vice CEO Feng, I guessed your little brother does not know about this matter. Moreover... there is also a possibility CEO Yu does not know that little girl is your little brother ex-girlfriend!"

"Fn?"

Aaron smiled mysteriously: "As the rumor spread, all the women who have relationship with Yu Ao Tian are virgin. While I was checking about this little girl

before, her classmate said this little girl never slept with your little brother. This is matching with the base requirement as Yu Ao Tian's woman. As additional you know best about your little brother character, aren't you?"

Of course more or less Feng Chen Rui understands about Feng Chen Yi, due to his playboy character he is impossible to keep vague relationship with his Exgirlfriend except he stills unable to forget her feeling and love. Moreover his domineering character, the girl that he likes even she has already had boyfriend, he will fight for it. But now, he is having collaboration with Yu Ao Tian, maybe he does not know this matters yet!

When thinking about this, Feng Chen Rui smirks: "That little girl is Yu Ao Tian's woman and also having affair with Feng Chen Yi. Furthermore both of the men do not know their existence of each others. Interesting, this is so interesting. Hahahahaha. At one glances she looked alike underage but she can play with two most influential business men, high player!"

"Vice CEO Feng, do we need to do something?"

Feng Chen Rui narrowed his eyes: "No, no need to do anything. I want to witness both of them slowly by slowly become best friends but at last both of them are fall for same girl. Once I thought about their expression when knowing each other, I want to see their expression, very expected. Hahahaha..."

The small space is filled with ambiguous atmosphere and also feeling suffocating, the man big hand is sliding inside the woman's lower part of dresses.

"Uh!" little mouth is let out moaning sound, she wanted to reject. What does Yu Ao Tian want? This is still in parking area, there will be people passing by.

But who is Yu Ao Tian, no one can command him. He only stops if he wanted to. So, little teasing in parking area is more than enough for Yao Yao to get embarrassed. After sometime finally he stopped when...

"I, I feel hungry." Suddenly she burst out these words, this is one of the lame excuses, as if this bossy and domineering man will care whether she hungry or not?

"Let's go to eat." After said, he is starting the engine.

Really strange, why Yu Ao Tian looks little bit difference than before?

She is glancing and peeking at the man who sits beside her, so obviously he has black heart, still same domineering and bossy, but... somewhat the feeling is so difference and seem to be changed, at least in old days he won't care and ignore her whether she hungry or not, as long as he accomplished his goals.

Moreover the olden him would not help her to find her money that stolen, after all, a busy person like him, only by half hour he could earn more than million dollars, not to mention why he must look for the 7000 dollars?

Huh, does it because she thought too much or Yu Ao Tian really changing little by little? No matter what it is...

Yao Yao clearly understands her feeling toward Yu Ao Tian for these days when they are living together, she is no longer that fearful anymore...

"So full. Today I paid the bill." Inside the restaurant, Yao Yao has wiped eat clean all the dishes.

For once again Yu Ao Tian really admires the eating ability of Yao Yao. "I have settled the bill."

"Huh... okay then. So we... wait, I, I want to go to toilet."

Oh my God, is this little thing talented to have high metabolism? Why every times after they finish eating... he helplessly waving his hands, even he does not want to say more.

Yao Yao hurries running to the toilet, after she done. Walking out from the toilet suddenly one big hand is hugged her from back.

"Ah!" Yao Yao is shocked so she screaming, suddenly when she turned her back... one stranger's face is caught by her eyes: "You, who are you?"

"Wife, what happen to you?" the man nervously caressing her little face.

Wife? "Mr. you, you are mistaken."

"Mistaken?" that man is angry, he is holding on her: "Luo Yao Yao, what does you mean?"

He... after all he knows her name? Actually who is this man? "You let me go! I don't know you, you hurry let me go, or else I will scream."

"You are so cruel! Luo Yao Yao, you are so cruel. If you have guts just scream, you scream! Oh yeah, I know that I have no money, so that you are looked down at me. I also know that your grandpa is sick and need money, I can't help you. But how can you be this heartless?"

This man not only knows her name but he also know that her grandpa sickness... this matter? Actually what is going on in here? Who is he?

"You go closer to Yu Ao Tian, I am okay, you want to con his money I am fine. I know that I am so useless, I can't help you. But why must you act as if you do not know me?"

"Let me go! Let me go. I really do not know who you are, actually who are you?" she never con on Yu Ao Tian's money, never!

"Oh, I know, Luo Yao Yao, you are falling in love to Yu Ao Tian, aren't you? So that, you want to discard me, you want to forget your past, all everything and stay together with him? Isn't it?"

The man words more she hears more she feels muddle headed, moreover the man is talking with anger tone while his eyes gleaming dangerously, at this moment, she really doubted herself did she have lost her memory, or perhaps this man really someone she knows?

"Yao Yao, Yu Ao Tian won't fall in love with you. If he knows you have done the virginity restoration, he will kill you. Yao Yao, hurry leave him, didn't you say that after he paid all your grandpa medication fee you will break up with him?"

"You, actually who are you?" suddenly she feels her body tense: "No! No! You are spouting nonsense, I never done such thing before, you talked nonsense!"

"I spouted nonsense? You keep on pretending, you just go to pretending. You MF I mustn't trust you. Did Yu Ao Tian fool by your innocent look? Hahaha, so that the dummy not only me, but also Yu Ao Tian! I asked you one more time, will you break up with him?"

What is actually happened?

How can there is man that know herself very well and suddenly show up in here, although he said such unrealistic words, but his expression is too convincing, actually what is going on? "Enough! Mr. if you keep on speaking I will make report to police!" Yao Yao used all her strength to push away that man.

"Well, you go to make report to police. Go! I will go to find Yu Ao Tian, telling him, he is the bastard who wear green hat, humph, it obviously your first time was with me, he even thought you as his treasure, he just dummy!" after said the man is turning and wanted to leave Yao Yao.

"Wait!" she tried to grab the man's wrist...

Cannot! This man should not meet Yu Ao Tian, he is telling lie, but somewhat she felt as if she has amnesia, forgetting on something, furthermore how about Yu Ao Tian?

Based on Yu Ao Tian character, if he really trusts this man's words, really thought that she had done virginity restore, he would be heartlessly to settle this matter.

Moreover something alike virginity restoring is something can't be proven, no matter she explains or say whatever it would be only an excuse.

Actually who, who want to harm her? Since the master mind able to make this detail about herself, plotting this lies.

"Yao Yao, will you decide to break up with Yu Ao Tian? It is okay, although for this life time I can't give you life alike Yu Ao Tian, the rich man like him, and also can't give you life as Madam. As additional I would never to mention whatever happened between you and him, is it okay? Yao Yao, is it okay?" after said, the man is crying and trying to pull Yao Yao into his embrace.

An empty eye from corner is glancing to corridor. As seen, Yu Ao Tian is coldly standing there, moreover his eyes is gleaming with killing intention.

#### Deadmeat!

Why... everything turned be like this? Since when, Yu Ao Tian has been there? Did he hear everything?

Without she realized her body is shivering, Yao Yao seems shocked and forget pushed away the man who is still hugging her. At another seconds, finally she gained herself, she hurried to push away that man.

"Ao..." she is chasing him and trying to explain, but Yu Ao Tian has been already disappeared.

Her heart is quivering, she has bad premonition about this.

"Yao Yao! Yao Yao where are you going?" the man is chasing her, grabbed her hand.

She turned, crazily hit that man: "Actually what do you want? Do you have grudge toward me, so you are trying to force me to death and then you feel happy? Do you know what you do is not only harm me but also harm yourself! You will regret later on, you will!" she really does not want to waste her time to speak with this man and she hurried left him and faster chasing Yu Ao Tian.

The darkness in night, a pair of empty eyes is looking for Yu Ao Tian's figure, blocking in front of his car. Yao Yao hurried to go close, pair of her hands are knocking the car window: "Ao Tian, listen to my explanation"

"Sst." Yu Ao Tian smiling deviously, his finger is touched her small mouth: "No need to explain. Come, let's we go home!"

No, cannot go home!

The current Yu Ao Tian is so scary... really scary... as if she sinks into the deep dark pool, so scary.

Although his face is smiling, his mouth said that he didn't care, moreover she so certain this Yu Ao Tian is extremely pissed off!

She has living with this man for sometimes, she even knows Yu Ao Tian is intending to kill from his expression.

At this moment, she really wish to hear Yu Ao Tian shouting or roaring toward her, or even just slapped her at least she knows the matters not really serious.

"I beg you, Ao Tian, you give me a chance to explain?"

"Get in!" he coldly said two words, but his aura is showing his anger and slowly turned be so chilling.

"I beg you..." no matter how Yao Yao is crying and begging, her lips, her body all are shivering. She is really afraid of him.

Suddenly she hears Yu Ao Tian laughing sound from beside her, she hasn't reacted...

The car has moved, she not even have time to open the door, the car has already moving and leaving her. She falls to the ground...

"Aiya, what is happen?"

"I don't know, that little girl seems hit by car?" some of people who are passing by talking. When some of them seeing her bleeding: "hurry, call 120."

She tried to use all the strength to stand up from the ground, the fresh blood is dripping from her forehead, blurring her vision.

Soulless with wounds are everywhere in her body, the blood still dripping from her forehead. Suddenly she feels weird. Why she does not feel pain? Moreover she does not cry? Stills...

Does she forget that she must cry because pain?

Forcing herself to stand up, her body is wobbling and moving forward.

Those people who see her, shocked: "Little sister, we have already made phone call to 120, you wait here for the ambulance."

Useless, useless, now everything is useless.

She waving her hands to those good people, her mouth curved upward in rigid. The blood is streaming down from her forehead, wet her face, her tears and blood is mixed.

That petite figure slowly disappeared from people visions. Suddenly she feels it will be better if she directly die, unfortunately... her back is carrying too much responsible and others lives, no matter how she not dares to go home, unwilling to facing Yu Ao Tian, but she knows, she must facing all those storm and blood rain herself...

She standing in quite dim place, Yao Yao stopped taxi.

But her face has blood trace, all over her body is wounded, no taxi dares to stop.

Must go home?

This place at least few tens Li (distance measurement) from Yu Ao Tian's villa, at this time suddenly a Bugatti car is stopped not far from herself.

She narrowed her eyes to look at that car, she sees the car plate, this car must be... Yu Ao Tain! Yu Ao Tian is come back to pick her up!

Her white pale face slowly smiles, she hurried go to the car. But when she gets inside the car, the man who driving...

That man has skin alike white jade, he has very good looking appearance with black hair and also a fair of shining eyes.

This man has very complicated aura, as if he is melancholy young master that standing under the cherry trees, but also as if a prince who looked standing inside his castle with sad expression.

It is so obviously he gives different vibes with Yu Ao Tian, but why she still mistaken him as Yu Ao Tian? Moreover that man eyes his pair black eyes somehow really similar with Yu Ao Tian's, does this because she mistaken of him?

"Sorry, I am sorry, I am mistaken. Wrong person." stunned for while, Yao Yao hurried apologizing, hurried she wanted to get down from the car. She really is afraid shocked this man because she thought for while, in the silent of darkness, suddenly there is a girl who gets in car moreover her body is stained with blood, what kind of scenery it is.

"Should I send you to hospital?" that man suddenly opened his mouth, his voice is so soft and warm, very match with his appearance.

"Thank you, no need." She refused.

"You must hard to stop the car with your condition." The man took out his tissue from his pocket, gave her.

Yao Yao received it and wiped the blood in her forehead...

"Ouw." It touched her wounded forehead.

"Hehe." Let me help you, the man come closer to her: "let me help you." He takes the tissue and slowly also carefully wiped Yao Yao's forehead.

Really strange, this is her first time meet this man but somehow she does not

feel him as stranger.

"Thank you."

"Where are you going? I drive you."

"No, I am so presumptuous to get into your car, I am feel embarrassing for this."

"It is okay, but it can say that perhaps I might take you away." The man is suddenly joking with her.

She smiled faintly, she can feel he is friendly: "I want to go...to Ao Lan street."

Yu Ao Tian's villa is located in mountain which is near to Ao Lan street, all the entire mountain is belong to him so not any car can get into there so the best for her is going to Ao Lan street, the nearest street.

On the way...

"Miss..."

"Yes."

"We, did we ever meet before?" the man suddenly asked.

To be honest, she also wanted to ask him before, but due to her forgetful nature such as not easy to remember people's face, although they ever met perhaps she might forget it already.

"Maybe no, I just come back to China."

"Oh? Where did you come from before?"

"Japan."

"HaHa." The man laughed, his eyes gleaming: "Well, perhaps we ever met before in Japan."

"Hm?" what did he mean?

"I was staying in Japan; two years ago I came back."

"How's coincidence?" Yao Yao felt little bit excited, her leg even hit to the car's door.

"Be careful."

She has good conversation along the way to Yu Ao Tian's villa with that stranger man who not feels stranger for Yao Yao.

When she arrived...

The main door is opened. "Yao Yao? You, what happened?" the door is opened by Nan Lu, she is worried when looking at Yao Yao.

"I am fine, Nan Lu, did Yu Ao Tian already come back?"

"En, come back. But..." Nan Lu eyes are looking right and left, softly said: "Big Boss Yu mood is not good today, when he came back his face looked so cold."

She has predicted, slowly she is walking inside the living room.

Yu Ao Tian is sitting in sofa while reading the magazine.

"Ao..."

She not yet done with her words, as seen Yu Ao Tian eyes are gleaming and hinting, Angel with fast steps, heading her and pulled her wrist, twisted it and pushed her into kneeling position on the floor.

"Sister Angel, what are you doing?" Nan Lu obviously shocked with scenery in front of her.

"Nan Lu..." Yao Yao is kneeling down in the floor, she shaking her head looking to Nan Lu, hinting her not to say anything. "Ao Tian, you really not trust me?" despite she does not have reason for Yu Ao Tian to trust her...

He stopped to flip the magazine, he lifts his head up, coldly looked at her.

Yao Yao thought there is still a hope, so that she continued to say, but his deep dark eyes looked at Angel. And then...

Angel heartlessly slapped her face.

"Sister Angel!"

"Nan Lu!" one of Yao Yao's hand is touching her face that got slapped while another one to stop Nan Lu, she looked at Yu Ao Tian, he acting as if nothing happen and keeps on flipping the pages of magazine.

Should he act this way?

No! she must ask herself why must she lives in this such petty and low?

Oh yeah, he is the person who gave her grandpa medication fee, it is right that he ever treated her very good. But... he is so heartless too and again and again toward her.

Although that man really good in acting even she doubted herself, whether she really that girl who that man said, moreover what with Yu Ao Tian?

But no just no, must she need to explain to Yu Ao Tian? Does he willing to believe on her who own scheming heart and schemed his other women, will he? Why? Why must she really want Yu Ao Tian to trust her?

Is it because she afraid he will hurt her grandpa, her mother? Or...other than that, why must she in rush to explain everything to him?

She too petty and low, this kind of self-proving is too low! "Yu Ao Tian, don't you think that you..."

Another slap is sent from Angel.

She does not care from every pain because gets slap from Angel, she keeps on speaking: "Don't you too overreact? What is your right to ask Angel to slap me? Why must you slap me? Or because...

Get slapped!

"Did it because that man's words?"

Get another slapped!

"Enough! Yu Ao Tian, you speak..."

Another slapped!

"Yao Yao! Don't speak anything!" Nan Lu understood as long as Yu Ao Tian has given the command, other than he no ones can stop Angel, she tried to stopped Yao Yao, asked her to stop.

But Yao Yao just not pleasant! She is not happy being mistaken!

Yu Ao Tian phone is ringing.

"I understand."

He has very short conversation and then he left the villa without looking at Yao.

"Sister Angel, can you let Yao Yao go?" when she sees Yu Ao Tian has left, Nan Lu dared to open her mouth, begging Angel.

She does not say anything but coldly shaking her head, she still pressed down Yao Yao but do nothing.

"Sister Angel..."

"Forget it Nan Lu, sister Angel only listen to the command." Yao Yao forced herself to laugh, appeared toward Nan Lu expression.

"Yao Yao, actually what did happen? Aren't you just reconciling with Master? Why now...

"Fiuh..." she takes deep breath, her eyes not focus shaking her head: "I don't even know what actually is going on."

Suddenly there was a man who came and called her as his wife, his mouth kept on saying everything regarding to her, he even said that her first time was gave to him. He has forced her to no way to go.

All of these are too sudden; simply to say... she caught off guard!

In the dark of underground big hall, the air is filled with blood and also strange atmosphere. Until when Yu Ao Tian appeared, over a hundred men are bowing respectively to him: "Big Boss Yu."

In front of the Master's seat, a man is kneeling down, this man is the same person who was calling Yao Yao as his wife, his smirks: "Ha, so you are the person who called as Yu Ao Tian!"

"Is this the way you speak with our Big Boss Yu?" after said, one of the man in black suit punched him.

The man is vomiting blood: "Big Boss Yu? So other than Berson Group's CEO you have another identity as Underworld Boss? Interesting, hahahaha."

"Who is asking you?" Yu Ao Tian who is sitting in front of that man, coldly said.

That man stunned for moment: "What?"

"Our big boss Yu is asking you, who asked you to come!" after said, a man in black suit punched him again in his stomach.

"Who asked me to come? I don't understand what you are talking about."

"Not understand?" Yu Ao Tian is smiling while his hand is pouring tea from the teapot, takes one sip and the rest of tea is pouring to that man's body...

"Argh!"

The man in black suit takes out a small knife and heartlessly stabs it to that man's abdomen.

"Yao Yao is my girlfriend. She is my woman! So what if you have money, have status and also money? Didn't you just take a woman that I have used before? Yu Ao Tian, you just green turtle!"

After that man done with his words, all the Yu Long's Xiao Di looked so cold, just to let know, this man dares to speak like this actually only to seek for death.

All of them are quivering; their eyes are peeking secretly to Yu Ao Tian.

His good looking face is showing bright smile but all his men (subordinate / Xiao Di) know very well that Yu Ao Tian is spreading cold aura, all the people in the underground hall could feel scary atmosphere.

"Give you another chance, confess who is asking you to do so and then I will free you."

"I said, I said, the person who asked me is you, Yu Ao Tian! The person was you, Yu Ao Tian!"

"Little brat, don't want to live anymore? This word you even dare to say?" the man in black suit is stabbed one more time the knife.

"Uh." The man is hurt: "Haahahahha, since I have fallen into your hand, there is no way for me to live anymore. I love Yao Yao so much, I really do love her. Because of your money, that slutty girl does not want to recognise me anymore, so what is my purpose to live?"

"What is the evidence if she is your woman?" Yu Ao Tian titled his head, his body is slowly leaning to the chair.

"Her left shoulder has scar, his breast has one mole, the most mesmerizing places from her is her barren body, when \*\* it so\*\*, Big boss Yu, you must give try before?" the man smile so sarcastically, his eyes is containing provocation.

Yu Ao Tian standing up...

"Big Boss Yu, how to settle this man?" the man in black suit walking to his side and curiously asked him.

His eyes is filled with anger, smirk: "cure his wounds."

After heard what Yu Ao Tian said, that man despair eyes suddenly lit up with hopes. But Yu Ao Tian's men still silently to wait the last command from Yu Ao Tian.

"After that, catch all his family members, I want him to witness his family members to die in front of him, one by one!" that smiles vanished, it is only left that cold and unlimited darkness from the underworld emperor aura. Even people could feel that fear from deep inside of their heart, his domineering and scary aura.

"Yu...Yu Ao Tian, you dare... you dare to hurt my family. Don't you afraid catch by police?"

"Ha, little brat, it seems that you really not understand about our Yu Long group." The man in black suit is laughing. Only by seeing this man expression, they know that this man really not understand how scary Yu Ao Tian can be.

Yu Ao Tian perhaps can give perception as someone elegant, mesmerizing, the demonic charming, proud and aloof. But in Yu Ao Tian bone is engraved with darkness and also has dark blood in his veins, but inside himself there is something more terrible, scarier than the devil soul. Just according to him when talking to this man with demeanor tone, it seems that no matter this man is coming because recruited by someone but the end result this man will be ended worsen that death...

"Ask the Japan side to check on someone called Luo Yao Yao, that girl. Check how many boyfriend she ever dated before." Yu Ao Tian does not bother with the man in front of him, but he just directly commanding his men.

<sup>&</sup>quot;I understood, Big Boss Yu."

After he done, he is slowly walking out, he is leaving the dark place where the man is still kneeling down with despair...

"Why when things has already came to this point, big boss Yu still wanted to make a check about Luo Yao Yao's past?" the man that kneeling down not understand and talking to himself.

"Idiot, do you think our Big Boss Yu is three years old boy? Must he believe whatever you say? Simply to say you are dummy." The man in black suit is grabbed that man's hair and then one of his hand punching his stomach.

How you find about this chapters?

#### **177**

This chapter is give sense of sweetness for the last bitter chapters. I know this is only a novel and I have read it before (So I must know all the darkness and sweetness of this novel since I have decide to do the project) and I just don't know why it stills affect my mood when I translate it. I feel kind of frustration for Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao roller coaster relationship, from one episode to others...

This chapter little bit better at least the poor Yao Yao now having more person to share her feeling. She has Bai Ling in Berson but that girl little bit off and on most of time, she has Nan Lu in villa someone will help her but still the best part is having your best friend back to support you, to care and do something for you. And here Gong Xiao Man shows...

From all the supporting role, Gong Xiao Man is the best for me in this story, other than the lead of course. I like her character so much.

So enjoy your reading and free to speak up your mind

# **Chapter 177**

The man is enduring his pain in the floor, but there is puzzling eyesight in his eyes, he had said all the things to this point, normally to say—one normal man would feel angry as the first reaction, but what he saw, Yu Ao Tian was perfectly composed, at last he even asked people to go check on Luo Yao Yao's past, so whatever he did all these time is for what?

To be honest, this man was looking so excitedly just now, but heaven knows... the moment when he saw Yu Ao Tian walking inside the hall, his guts already decreased. If not because...

"Go, go and call back your Big Boss to come back, I, I have something to tell him!"

"Hah, on this time finally you feel the fear? But unfortunately everything is late now!" the man in black suit narrowed his eyes, waving his hand: "Go, do as what Big Boss Yu asked, catches all this fool family to here! Let he witness one by one his family member go to die!"

"No! No!" that man is begging, but the Yu Long's men are not bother with him.

"I said, did all of you guys feel Big Boss Yu today is little bit odd?" one of the men softly said to the others men beside him.

"Do you also feel it? I thought it only me who mistaken about it. Normally when that man said something derogating our Big Boss Yu, he must be acted to do something already but Big Boss Yu didn't, but..." talking to this point, one of the men spoke softly...

"Big Boss Yu was already pissed off to the extreme!"

Inside the car, Yu Ao Tian is expressionless driving his car, looking at outside...

"Yao Yao is my girlfriend. She is my woman! So what if you have money, have status and also money? Didn't you just take a woman that I have used before? Yu Ao Tian, you just green turtle!"

He stills could feel his ears burning hot for what that man said before, his

expression is so black, he makes fist and "Bamn" "Bamn" "Bamn" he hits on the car steering wheel.

Just as what those men in Yu Long said, Yu Ao Tian could show the most composed of himself because he is extremely pissed off.

Most of people who are angry could be shown, but Yu Ao Tian is the contrary ones, from the very earlier he has learnt to control his emotions, more he angrier more compose he is, but he also rare to piss off to the point of flaming. So that all his emotions are keep inside his heart.

His deep eyes are glancing to his wrist and then looking at the watch which bought by Yao Yao for him, both of his eyes are gleaming cold, just in minutes he takes off and throwing the watch to the car outside because he is angry.

Falling down sound, the sport car just crush that watches as if it means nothing and moving to the villa.

"Master."

Yu Ao Tian is walking straightly to the living room, Yao Yao is still pressed by Angel, kneeling to the floor.

Hurry he walked to her in front and then pulled her hair.

"Yu Ao Tian, what are you doing?" she feels pain and hurt, wanting to free herself from that heartless man.

"Master, Master I beg you don't hurt Yao Yao." At this time, Nan Lu hurried kneeling down in front of him.

"Get lost!" coldly he said, he even kicked Nan Lu to side.

"Nan Lu!" Yao Yao fears to see Nan Lu, at the other minutes, she is dragging ruthless by Yu Ao Tian to the room.

"Yu Ao Tian, what do you want?"

His eyes are flashing dangerously, he so rude to throw her in bed, Yao Yao hasn't react but at sudden her clothes are torn into pieces already...

Yu Ao Tian sees that black mole which so piercing into his eyes.

"Her left shoulder has scar, his breast has one mole, the most mesmerizing

places from her is her barren body, when \*\* it so\*\*, Big boss Yu, you must give try before?"

Both of them living together are not counted short period, but how can he not even know that she has mole in her breast area, but that man...

When Yu Ao Tian makes fist from his hand, his veins are showed up, at sudden he grabbed her neck...

"Uh." At sudden Yao Yao can feel she is breathless: "Ao, Yu Ao Tian, you can kill... me. But, why you must you choose to... trust that... man but not...me?"

He also have thought that man might ask by someone, he also does not want to trust what the man said, the things that he must do he has done it, under that circumstance, that man has deathly bite everything, moreover he even could point out all her body's secret.

"Kill you? Ha, dirty my hand." Yu Ao Tian sneered; he slowly loosens up his hand from her neck.

Dirty?

He said I am dirty?

After Yao Yao heard it, she feels her heart torn into pieces: "Do you clean? Yu Ao Tian, how many are women that you ever with?"

"What is your right to speak like this with me? At least, I will never denied all the women who ever with me before. But you...how?" when he said the last words, at sudden his voice tone is raised.

Yao Yao clearly can feel, at this moment he is extremely angry. "Hahahaha, you mean that I should admit that man as my boyfriend, I must say that in order to have medication fee for my grandpa treatment and then I get closer to you, should I do that damn virgin restoration, is it all what you want to hear? Do you really think I am..."

"sstt." His slender long finger touched her mouth: "Don't rushing to make the explanation. Perhaps the answer will come out soon, when the time comes, when the time comes...you still don't know whether your family will live or death!"

"No! Yu Ao Tian, you must not harm my family, no!" she is in hysteria state, standing up and then deathly grabbed Yu Ao Tian's wrist.

His eyes are looking at the hand which is grabbing his wrist, Yu Ao tian cold eyes: "Let go! Your dirty hand!" he said and then he raised his hand and slapped Yao Yao's face.

Yao Yao can feel herself almost faint her small hand is let off Yu Ao Tian's wrist.

Heartlessly he laughing and then he turned and leaving the room.

"Hu..." at the floor, Yao Yao tears flowing down, actually she really does not know the reason why must she crying, but one thing that she sure... this pain is nothing to do with her physical wounds.

"Yao Yao. Yao Yao!" Nan Lu secretly comes to the room, hurry she checks on Yao Yao wounds and then she pulled Yao Yao to her embraces.

"Nan Lu, hu... why to make Yu Ao Tian trust me can be this difficult? Why?"

"Why when I do feel that I able to get closer to him, he immediately push me away?"

"At one moment he able to do all the best for me, but the next moment he can push me and send me to hell, actually what is happened? I hate him, I hate him!"

"Yao Yao?" Nan Lu slowly loosens up her pair of hands. Her eyes looked at Yao Yao's eyes which filled with hurt and also hesitation: "You... impossible... are you falling in love...with Big Boss Yu, right?

Love?

No, impossible! Impossible! "how can I fall in love with him, it is absolutely impossible, he is types of dangerous man who is unpredictable, in this life time it is impossible for me to fall in love with him!"

Scary, it is so scary. Yao Yao panic lifted her head, actually she has already the imaginary for herself, if she really falls in love with Yu Ao Tian, she isn't an idiot who still wanting to jump to fire when she has eyes to see.

"Yao..." Nan Lu wanted to say, don't in rush to make denial, but she still helplessly to smile, she gently wipes her tears: "The world that Big Boss Yu live in, we will never understand it for our entire of life. No matter you love or not love

him, but still you are his woman, virtually (on common sense)...his responsibilities are so many, so many invincible pressure that he must bear. It is...difficult..."

After listened to Nan Lu, Yao Yao finally realized it is so hard to be Yu Ao Tian's lover, far from what she thought before, at this moment, she really wants... ended all this game!

Li's Mansion.

"Miss, you say will that man betray you?" inside the room, Xiao Zhen is nervously asked.

"Ha, just rest assured, I have faith in his acting skill, after all he has not cure able cancer in his body, he is absolutely won't afraid with death, he had already received much money from me, so how would he betray me. The most important is, I am the woman who being dumped so who will think too much about my scheming?" after said, Li Mei Yun slowly sitting in front of her makeup table, she takes eyebrow pencil to color her brows.

"Miss, you really awesome, you fight back by using the last time that slutty girl family said, and then you plotting one so that she can't deny. Moreover Mr. Yu is type of man who consider the innocent of his woman, this time she is dead meat."

"She is seeking for it! She dared to scheme me!" whenever she recalled that matters, Li Mei Yun is really pissed off, she never thought in her life that she would be schemed by that little girl who looked so naïve.

Her eyes rolled, looking at Xiao Zhen: "This time all the success is credited to you because of your detail, you even paid attention to the mole in her breast."

"Hahahaha, Miss you are flattering me. I just not carefully saw it before."

"Things that I cannot have, others don't even dare to dream it!" Li Mei Yun broke the eyebrow pencil, smirking...

Five days later.

"Mother, Father, both of you don't need to send me, hurry go back."

"Be careful, son."

"Grandpa, father, mother, I want to go to school."

"Good grandson, remember to come back during winter holiday."

"En, okay."

Outside the school gate, one by one the family are bid good bye. Every year there will be the scenery where parent come to bid good bye to their children who are going to University.

Yao Yao is carrying her school bag, envious seeing the scenery, she took long breathe: "Fiuh."

Actually, Yao Yao mother also want to come today, but she refused it, so that mother Luo does not come. Now she really regret to refused mother Luo coming, or else she won't be so envious to see others people. But... after she thought for while... her appearance which similar to ghost right now, perhaps asking her mother to come only to make she worries.

Since the day Yu Ao Tian left, he never back to the villa anymore. While Yao Yao turned to be lowest in the villa and she not only responsible to do house work but she also do help others maid too. Every day she needs to wake up at five and sleep at 12. She has five hours to sleep, her original weight is 80 pounds and now she lost about 10 pounds again, she lives alike slave.

Her eyes are seeing university entrance gate, she gives faint smile, she hopes after she back to school everything will be okay, no matter what, as long as she does not need to stay at that cold house, everything is alright.

"Uh?" suddenly, a pair of hand is closing Luo Yao Yao's eyes from back, her heart is tightened: "Who I am?"

Not long after that the laughing voice is coming from her back, Yao Yao mood is more tense than before: "Let off! Who are you?"

"Yao Yao?" that pair of hands loosens up.

She angrily turned back...

"Xiao... Xiao Man? How.. can you?" she is so surprised, Gong Xiao Man, the best person she ever had during her high school time, her best friend, the best part in her memory, she never thought she will appear in here.

And then, Gong Xiao Man face is filled with curiosity: "Yao Yao, how can your temperament turn be this big?" as she can recall in her memory, Luo Yao Yao is someone cute, innocent, clean, pure and also someone can handle well with many kinds of joke, but just now Yao Yao is obviously angry.

"I am sorry. I thought you are someone play prank." After the last time matter with that man, she really afraid if there is person suddenly hugged her from back, she can't manage this "surprise", so that when Gong Xiao Man surprised her, hard for her not to be panic.

"Before you are acted normal toward this kind of jokes, so that I love to give you surprise."

"You have surprised me already. Xiao Man, why are you coming here? Don't you also start your school?"

"That's right, so that..." Gong Xiao Man smiled: "I come to join the school."

"What... what you mean? Xiao Man! You said... you come to join and going to study in this university? But don't you..."

"Hihihihi, the power of money, this summer I have very good performance so my mom is touched by me and she spent amount of money to send me study in here." Gong Xiao Man pair of hands stick in her waist happily said.

"So this means, later we will be classmates, right?"

"Yeah, hehehehe."

"Great, Xiao Man, this is too great, Xiao Man." Yao Yao is happily to hug Xiao Man's neck, these few days bad mood seems to be dismissed for moment when she meets Xiao Man.

"Okay la, Yao Yao, hurry we join the opening ceremony for the new student."

### **178**

I will always support you,
I will always come to help you,
Share your joy and your sadness,
Cause we are friend,
Best friend who are thinking each other,
Helping each other,
We even facing the most fearful things together

I am so glad that Gong Xiao Man finally showed up in this chapters. She back right on the moment Yao Yao really need someone to share her feeling.

# Chapter 178

"En." Both of them are holding hands while walking, together they walking to the aula.

Just in this moment...

"Hey, hey, that is Qi Lian Ao Yun sunbae (senior)! Yes it is Qi Lian Ao Yun's car." At the entrance all of the girls suddenly stopped their footsteps; excitedly they pointed at a bugatti that moving slowing entering the University parking lot.

Yao Yao and Gong Xiao Man also looked at...

"That car is..."

"What Yao Yao?"

When the car is stopped at the school parking lot, a good looking man gets down from the car.

"Ah... Qi Lian sunbae."

"Woah, so handsome..." no matter the new student or the old student, when Qi Lan sunbae exposed his beautiful good looking features, they looked alike eye bull.

Gong Xiao Man is dragging Yao Yao's hand to in front: "Yao Yao, Yao Yao, Qi Lian sunbae is so handsome. Oh My God, I come to study in here is the best decision, I must check his data, does he have girlfriend or not. What to do, my heart is thumping hard." She is speaking so excitedly while looking at Qi Lian and also Yao Yao who standing beside her.

While Yao Yao only gives her faint smile.

"Yao Yao, do you also think that sunbae is exceptionally handsome?"

"Yes." Her eyes staring at Qi Lian sunbae who is not far from them, never thought only in five days both of them are meet again, really coincides.

Yes, this Qi Lian sunbae was the same person who drove Yao Yao to Ao Lan street five days ago, the melancholic prince!

"Say something Yao Yao, this is really the best university in China, education establishment is stylish." Walking to the inner aula Gong Xiao Man is looking left and right.

"Yes, the next four years, we will live in here, really looking forward for it."

"Hahahaha, the thing that I looking forward for most still... Qi Lian sunbae! Hehehehe." Gong Xiao Man talking while gulping her saliva.

"Xiao Man, perhaps he is already have girlfriend."

"So what? I can fight over for him! Just you don't come to fight with me for Qi Lian sunbae."

Now she does not have heart to fight for man? "Oh yeah, Xiao Man, I have thing to tell you... be careful!" her eyes caught a car is approaching rapidly toward their direction, unconsciously she pulled Xiao Man's arm.

Black Rolls-Royce moving and passing their sides...

"Since there is someone dares to drive the car inside to the university, that person inside the car must be the university board of directors? Oh yeah, Yao Yao what did you want to say? Yao Yao? Why your face turned pale?"

Not mistaken! Not mistaken! The person who sits inside the car is Yu Ao Tian, this time she is not mistaken. Why Yu Ao Tian coming today? What is his purpose?

"Yao Yao? Yao Yao?"

"Ah?" she regained herself, she smiles at loss: "Xiao Man, faster, the welcoming ceremony will start, we must go faster!"

"Oh, let's we run!"

"En."

Inside the big aula, there are total of thousands student who are sitting in orderly seat, the first row sitting position are those people who are the board of directors. The second row is for the student committee. The following rows are for the new students and also the old students.

"Now, let's we welcome the head of student council, Qi Lian Ao Yun, proudly

to go up to the stage and give the speech." Said the MC

"Qi Lian sunbae! That is Qi Lian sunbae."

"Every year during this time, this is the closest distance we can have, really lucky." The girls are gulping their saliva, staring at Qi Lian Ao Yun who is giving his speech.

"Woah, so his name is Qi Lian Ao Yun, moreover he is head of student council. Yao Yao, what to do, I really like him more and more." Gong Xiao Man soulless, she pulled Yao Yao's hand nervously and little bit shivering.

"Xiao Man, are you serious?" Yao Yao smiled. Of course, that man who she accidentally met actually is her sunbae, moreover he is the head of student council.

"Now after this, Qi Lian will give the time for the new student representative." Not long after Qi Lian Ao Yun done with his speech, the new student representative name is called out.

"Who is the new student representative? Really lucky, can get closer distance to Qi Lian sunbae."

"Really envy and jealous!"

Listen to all the whispering, Gong Xiao Man is smiling: "Humph, who will be, of course my Yao Yao!"

Just expected, Yao Yao is slowly standing up, she walking to the stage.

When Qi Lian Ao Yun sees her, his eyes gleaming brightly: "Ha Ha, never imagine we are meeting this fast. It seems that no need to be wasteful."

She speaks with low voice: "If Qi Lian sunbae afraid I am wasting, I can treat but you paid the bill."

"En? This is good idea. We meet after the school ceremony ended." After said Qi Lian Ao Yun gets down from the stage.

Yao Yao is so composed on stage, every time when school has new representative student "moment" she is always the person that chosen to do it, she could use the old speech with little bit modification. When Yao Yao is doing her speech everyone is crazily discussing about her. Since everyone is quite

surprised about Yao Yao's achievement. Moreover when they know her examination entrance scored which is perfect. The shocking thing is her IQ which is 205, very high ones. No wonder she got scholarship again.

"Now, after the representative of new student done with her speech, let's we welcome one of the board director Mr. Yu Ao Tian to hand over the scholarship to Luo Yao Yao."

Yao Yao is surprised to shock when she knew the person is Yu Ao Tian, her face turned paler and she almost fall down but somehow, Yu Ao Tian acted as if she is stranger to him moreover he acted as if this is the first time both of them meet.

After that, Yao Yao really does not know how she goes through all the ceremonial process until it ended.

"Xiao Man, I have thing to tell you." Yao Yao suddenly stopped her footsteps.

"What's matter, why your expression turned to be so serious?"

Must I tell Xiao Man? But Xiao Man is the best friend I have I can't hide it from Xiao Man. She bites her lips, slowly said: "Xiao Man, actually that board director Yu is..."

"Hey, Junior." Four men from upper class surrounded Yao Yao and Xiao Man unexpected.

Yao Yao nervously grabbing Xiao Man's hand: "Sunbae, what is matter?"

"Oh, not really matters, but sunbae only want to ask you whether you have boyfriend or not?"

Gong Xiao Man is glaring at those sunbaes who looked alike little scoundrel: "Our Yao Yao is already had boyfriend, sunbae you better give up!"

"This is not your business, I am not talking with you." One of the sunbae with yellow hair is hooked at Yao Yao's shoulders.

"Let me go! You let me go!"

"Hey, sunbae, I suggest you hurry let Yao Yao go, or else I will go to student council to make complain!"

"What a good chick, I like you." Another fat sunbae is targeted Gong Xiao Man.

"Hah, you like me? Don't you see yourself, do you match for me?"

"Hey, little chick, do you understand what are you talking?"

"Of course I understand very well."

"MF! You seek to get hit?" after said, that fatty sunbae has already raised his hand.

"Stop!" Yao Yao free herself from that Yellow hair sunbae, hurry she grabbed Gong Xiao Man from that fatty sunbae.

"Junior, you are mine, don't randomly run." The yellow hair sunbae is tightly embraces Yao Yao.

"Let me go, help..." when she wanted to shout, suddenly that Yellow hair sunbae has covered her mouth: "Junior, it useless. My name is Lu Chuan, you can find out about me very detail in this school, even though you are screaming until your voice cracking no one will dare come to help you."

Seeing Yao Yao in difficulty, Gong Xiao Man really wants to help but that fatty sunbae is blocking her way.

This sunbae who named Lu Chuan actually is the little scoundrel boss in this school, no students want to deal with him. So most of the student who is passing by only acted as if seen nothing. Yao Yao and Xiao Man almost fall in despair but when they see someone from the broad director passing by, Yao Yao screaming and asking for help. But what on earth, that person is Yu Ao Tian who accompany by Mo Xue Tong.

When the fatty senior looked at the group of people he said to the yellow hair sunbae, they might get in trouble with the board of director know what is happening. Lu Chuan (yellow hair sunbae) said to the fatty sunbae to act as if they are dating with their own girlfriends so no one will come to disturb them. He also threatens Yao Yao to shut up.

Yao Yao is trying to free herself from that Lu Chuan and rushing to Yu Ao Tian asking for help, Lu Chuan has cold sweating when sees Yao Yao free from him but his hope lit up when Yu Ao Tian ignored Yao Yao and keeps on walking forward. At sudden Yao Yao heart feels as if there is thousand of needle stabbing inside her heart. How can Yu Ao Tian act this cold?

Although her heart in pain but she still calling Yu Ao Tian's name, "Ao Tian! Ao Tian!"

"Ao Tian, are you serious not to help her?" Mo Xue Tong asking him when they have walked quite far.

He makes tight fist in his hand, his eyes gleaming dangerously: "Give this task to Yu Long, ask them to solve it."

"Yes!"

"Junior, it is useless, you see even the board director thought you and me are couple, you think who will come to help you?"

Listened to Lu Chuan, Yao Yao is pissed off and biting her lips, Yu Ao Tian I hate you! I hate you!

"Junior, let's we date, you rest assured, I will treat you good." Lu Chuan smirks. One of his hands holds up Yao Yao's chin and trying to kiss her.

Expressionless, no struggling, at this moment Yao Yao brain has flown to another world.

"Yao Yao?" under this circumstance, Gong Xiao Man, nervously shout at her.

But Yao Yao does not have reaction, as if she has shut herself from this world.

When Lu Chuan lips almost touched Yao Yao's lips...

"Let go your dirty hands!" it is cold and dangerous voice.

Lu Chun turned his back looking at...

"Qi Lian Ao Yun!" Damn, how can he be here.

"Aiyo, Lu Chuan, are you dally with girl? You have already gotten two punishment and warning, do you really want to quit from school so that you satisfied? Said a girl who is standing beside Qi Lian Ao Yun.

"Thank you to remind me. But, which of your eyes see that I am dallying junior." After said, Lu Chuan smiling and loosen up his hands, while that fatty sunbae also free Gong Xiao Man.

"Lu Chuan, you think that I am blind..."

"Forget it Xiao Ming." Qi Lian Ao Yun stopped Gu Xiao Ming, slowly he is walking in front of Lu Chuan: "I don't expect to see this next time, get lost!"

It is so obvious that Lu Chuan is scare with Qi Lian Ao Yun, when heard what he said the unhappy Lu Chuan angrily leaving.

"Thank you Qi Lian Ao Yun sunbae." Gong Xiao Man is completely forget about the nightmare just now, she looked Qi Lian Ao Yun with admiring look, heaven knows, how cool he was when he is talking to Lu Chuan.

"Don't mention it." Qi Lian Ao Yun gently smiles, his eyes locked at Yao Yao, helplessly he shook his head: "Why every times I meet you, you are always in mess state?"

"HaHa." She is forcing herself to laugh, actually today she really does not have any mood to treat Qi Lian Ao Yun meal: "Thank you, Qi Lian sunbae. I, want to go back to my dorm." After said, she dragged Xiao Man's hand leaving that place.

"Hey, Yao Yao, this is one good opportunity, Qi Lian sunbae helped us, we can take this opportunity to have chat with him?"

"Xiao Man, I have thing to tell you!" her eyes is moisten with tears.

Gong Xiao Man senses something weird, immediately her expression changed: "I know, let's we get back to dorm."

Arrived at the ladies dorm, two of their roommates haven't come. Once they get inside, she has cried: "Xiao Man..."

"Yao Yao, did you get shock by that Lu Chuan?"

"No, there is nothing to do with him. Xiao Man... you listen to me. But... listen until I have done, don't anger me!"

"Actually what is going on?" Gong Xiao Man is sitting at the bed edge beside Yao Yao's bed.

She tried to control her emotion, said: "Just now the board director who was passing by actually Yu Ao Tian."

"Just now I had heard you called his complete name, and now you are especially bringing up the topic, does this... Yu Ao Tian, is he that underworld emperor in Japan, that Yu Ao Tian?" just now Gong Xiao Man was little bit

hesitated, she feels as if she ever saw that board director's face in somewhere, moreover she is too familiar with Yu Ao Tian, this name, she thought it must be coincidence but never thought... actually he is the same person.

"Right, he is that underworld emperor in Japan. Two years ago he came to China for expansion moreover he is the CEO of Berson Group one of the most successful company in China."

"Woah, he really is great. He is not only handsome, but now he even walking in two paths black and white. Oh yeah, Yao Yao, how can you know he very well?"

"Because..." she tried to hold on her tears, she smiles weakly, "I am his current lover now."

After heard, Gong Xiao Man face expression is changed: "Yao Yao, how can you turn to be like this? Who he is? He is Yu Long's big boss, he even a man that you are not effort to offend, you still dares to be his lover? Even you are now his lover, do you know what is heading in your future?"

"I know."

"So why are you still becoming his lover?"

"Xiao Man... I don't have any option..." Yao Yao told everything about her to Gong Xiao Man, how she becomes Yu Ao Tian's lover, everything.

"Why, Yao Yao, why suddenly everything turns to be like this, we are only not meeting for two months? All because of me... it is my fault, I must keep in touch with you from two months ago."

"It is not your fault Xiao Man, really nothing to do with you."

"I am sorry, I do really sorry, I wasn't there when you in your hardest time, I wasn't beside you, I am sorry." Gong Xiao Man feeling guilty and hugging Yao Yao, her eyes already wet with tears. "I am sorry, you even becoming Yu Ao Tian's lover, but why he just now..."

"This is the second matters I want to tell you..." Yao Yao told her everything that happened five days ago to Gong Xiao Man.

After Gong Xiao Man listened to it, she is extremely pissed off: "MF, who is actually lacking moral as human, after all this person even harm you? Yao Yao,

tell me what was going on within this two months when I wasn't with you, actually who did you offend?"

"I also didn't know..." still that words, everything just happened too fast.

"You better think carefully, actually who is scheming you. The person who dares to scheme your relationship with Yu Ao Tian must be someone who does not want to see you with Yu Ao Tian?"

That is right, Gong Xiao Man gets the point, there must be reason for everything that happened, moreover that man dared to say such things, but when seeing him, he seems to understand Yu Ao Tian so much and also knew what Yu Ao Tian cares but not about her who is together with Yu Ao Tian.

It was not that man main purpose but...Li Mei Yun!

"Yao Yao, have you thought about it?"

"No, I haven't." she knows Gong Xiao Man very well, due to Gong Xiao Man temperamental, if she knows that person is Li Mei Yun, she must go and troublesome her.

"I never thought, in this short period within two months there are lots thing happened. Rest assured... Yao Yao, I will definitely...help you." After said, Gong Xiao Man eyes are flares up, watery but have deep thought.

## 179 - 180



Out of Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian relationship that too Yo Yo, I like Gong Xiao Man interaction with Han Li Shang. she acts so fearless toward the second scarier in Berson and Yu Long group.

## **Chapter 179 -180**

#### Berson Group

"Miss, you don't have any appointment so you are not allowing getting in." Outside the main entrance, the receptionist and the security guard are blocking in front of Gong Xiao Man.

On the afternoon she has made an excuse to Yao Yao that she must go out to do something, so she directly come to Berson group, who knows... she not even can get into it.

"I have said just now, my boyfriend is working at your company, I come to find him."

"Miss, now is lunch time, you can find your boyfriend but, please tell us your boyfriend's name, so that we can verify it and you also can get in."

Kao, how can she know her boyfriend's name? Whatever that she is certain, if she directly say that she is coming to find Yu Ao Tian, there is no chance for her to get inside Berson in the future.

Helplessly her eyes are looking right and left.

Suddenly... in front of the main entrance there is tall body posture of man who is walking in from the company's building.

Gong Xiao Man eyes rolled: "Beloved! She moved faster and rushed to the man in front of her, she is extending both of her hands and grabbed at his hand, softly said: "Help me."

Few of the receptionists and also the security guards, their face turned green...

"Han, Han, Vice CEO Han."

Vice CEO Han? Wo Kao, so this handsome man is Berson group vice CEO?

Xiao Man eyes widen, she lifts her head up and see Han Li Shang, he has pair of cold eyes that not friendly, it almost makes Gong Xiao Man quivering because his icy eyesight, this man really iceberg, really scary...

Han Li Shang swept Gong Xiao Man with a glance, his cold eyes are looking at her who grabbing his hand, frowned and he pushes away her hand.

"Vice CEO Han, is she your girl friend?" the receptionist lady walking in front of Han Li Shang trying to find out by asking, just to let know there is no one in this company who is not afraid with Han Li Shang, the most important since all of them know Han Li Shang, this man never smiled even once.

"Don't know." After said, Han Li Shang not even take another glance to Gong Xiao Man, he is walking out from the company main entrance.

Kao!

Xiao Man furrowed her brows, how can this man such heartless? She just asking for help, can't he help her?

"Hey, my stomach has your baby, you want to deny it, I will keep on shouting and screaming in front of your company until you admitted!"

Suddenly, Han Li Shang stopped his footstep.

Hehe, she really not believes if this iceberg man not moved.

Just expected, the iceberg Han Li Shang is rushing in front of her, he pulled her aside, coldly said: "Little girl, what do you want?"

Little girl? Huh, he at least must be in his thirties, since he is calling me Little Girl, well...

"Da Shu (Big Uncle), you rest assured, I won't troublesome you, I just want you to help me get inside to the company. Is it okay?" Gong Xiao Man grinning.

She looking at Han Li Shang iceberg face, simply to say his face even blacker than charcoal, perhaps in his life time he never met little girl that looked alike rascal, moreover she even called him Big Uncle!

Grinding his teeth, Han Li Shang turned his back and walking toward the elevator. Xiao Man looked at few of receptionist ladies and smile to them, pretending herself as pregnant woman and then following at Han Li Shang back, entering the elevator.

"Woah...never thought that Vice CEO Han... her is also Casanova."

"Yeah, the most important is, he even youth killer, specialist in little girl. No wonder he never had any rumor with the beauties in our company, so the matter is..." this time few of the receptionist ladies are secretly laughing and gossiping.

"HeHe, Big Uncle, thank you." Inside the elevator, Gong Xiao Man extending her hand and patting at Han Li Shang's shoulder.

His eyes darken, suddenly he grabbed her wrist.

"Ouw." At the moment her wrist feels hurt and she unhappily frowning: "Big Uncle, are you trying to harass me?"

"!" he loosens up, Han Li Shang face is turned darker and gloomy.

"Hihihihi" Gong Xiao Man little mouth smiles, she secretly staring at Han Li Shang, slowly she moves closer to him: "Hm, Big Uncle. Since you have helped me to get inside the company, can you help me for another thing?"

"Don't be too over!"

"Aiya, you just help me ah." Gong Xiao Man is acting coquettishly, grabbing and swaying his wrist.

Facing with this circumstance, Han Li Shang only can frown: "Do you know that you are little girl? How can you act this impetuous?"

"Well you just think me as the careless little girl. Hihihihi."

"!" he swears, in his life time he does not want to meet this shameless little girl anymore! "Let off!"

"You don't help me, I won't let you off." After said, Gong Xiao Man in spite of not loosens up she even brazen by hugging onto his waist.

"Damn!" Han Li Shang non-stop to sway her away, but she just alike Koala bear that does not let off and loosen up.

And then, just right in this time... the elevator door suddenly opened, the person who is getting inside the elevator almost freeze to see Han Li Shang situation.

"Woah, Li Shang, you this brat really good ah, I don't even hear the news that you are dating little girlfriend." The person who getting inside the elevator is

Long Ye, he narrowed his eyes and smiling, he bends his body little bit lower and looking at Gong Xiao Man: "Little sister, how are you, I am Long Ye."

Wo Kao, is Berson group the place where all the handsome men gather? Another handsome man but seeing carefully this person who named Long Ye is not more handsome than the iceberg Big Uncle who standing beside her, really interesting. "Hello."

"Long Ye, are you blind? I don't even know her!" Han Li Shang glaring at Long Ye, and then he turned to look toward Gong Xiao Man.

The problem is, Long Ye really cannot see there is any relationship between Han Li Shang with the little girl, actually he just wanted to tease Han Li Shang, the most important that he really admires this little girl guts.

"Big Uncle, just now we are so intimate, but how can you suddenly react in another way?"

"Woah." Long Ye who standing near them really is laughing hard.

"Little Girl, if you dare to continue your gibberish, do you believe that I will throw you out from here?" It is so clearly that Han Li Shang will do so.

Gong Xiao Man unhappily pouting her mouth, humph, really a kind of Big Uncle who immune with teasing. Slowly she loosens up her hand that hugging on Han Li Shang's waist, turned and looked at Long Ye: "Long Ye Ge Ge (Brother Long Ye), can you help me?"

"What can I do for you?"

"I want to meet your...CEO Yu Ao Tian."

After Gong Xiao Man said, Long Ye and Han Li Shang are looking each others, Long Ye is showed his charming smiled: "Can, I do also want to meet our CEO, you go with me."

"Thank you." Gong Xiao Man really thankfully to Long Ye and she throwing dagger eyesight toward Han Li Shang, glaring at him for while: "See, see, both of you are man, but the difference is extremely far."

"You!"

Needless to doubt, from today onwards the iceberg lofty Han Li Shang is

completely stumbling to Gong Xiao Man this little girl's hand...

"CEO Yu." When they are arrived at CEO's office room.

Yu Ao Tian lifts his head up toward the expressionless Han Li Shang, he also looked at the smiling Long Ye and then the petite figure whom is standing between them which create a center of attention to his focus.

"Hello, CEO Yu. I am Luo Yao Yao's classmate, my name is Gong Xiao Man, I have things to tell you in privately."

After listened to three words, Luo Yao Yao, Yu Ao Tian expression turned dim: "Long Ye, Li Shang, both of you wait me at outside."

"Yes..."

Looking at Han Li Shang that going out from the office room, Gong Xiao Man is spitting her tongue as provocation to him.

This scenery is caught by Han Li Shang's eyes, if to be honest he really wanted to kill that little girl immediately!

"Speak up what do you want to say."

"CEO Yu." Gong Xiao Man expression turned cold: "I also just listened regarding you and Yao Yao matters. I have been classmate with Yao Yao for three years, what kind of girl she is, I understand her very well. Don't even mention that she ever slept with anyone, I dare to guarantee with my name, swearing, she even not randomly kissing mouth with..."

Suddenly Yu Ao Tian raised his hand, stopped Gong Xiao Man: "Directly to the point, the intention you are coming here."

Damn! That is not kidding Yu Ao Tian really underworld emperor, simply to say handling him is more difficult compare to that iceberg Big Uncle!

"You must treat Yao Yao well, or just free her. Regarding about her debt to you, I will try to pay it back to you."

"You can go now."

"Uh? What do you mean? Hey! Actually what do you want? money or do you want to treat Yao Yao well?" Gong Xiao Man does not have intention to leave,

she facing Yu Ao Tian face to face.

When their eyes are meeting each other, suddenly she can feel strange fear and scary atmosphere suppress on her: "Yu, Big Boss Yu, please give me chance to say words, today my coming is not for interfering the matter between both of you, I just purely hope to see my best friend can live happily. But now what I see in Yao Yao's face... all are sadness, sorrow. Pardon me to disturb." After said, she is walking out with sad expression from the CEO room.

Doomed, how can Yao Yao offending that scary man?

Although she only have short meeting with Yu Ao Tian, but if not Gong Xiao Man has little bit understanding regarding Yao Yao matters, perhaps she might pee in her pant in earlier.

He is Yu Ao Tian who name is so taboo (forbidden to call, an underworld Emperor) in Japan, it not like she does not know. Two years ago when she was in host bar the deep impression that she got from the first time saw Yu Ao Tian, he was handsome man, but this time after she met him again she really can feel that underworld emperor aura on him. The innocent Yao Yao is not suitable to have something with this man!

God really blind to put them together as couple, one is the person who live in heaven and the other one is the person who live in hell, how can both of them living together?

"Have you done?" Long Ye who sitting down in front of the office room, smiling to Gong Xiao Man.

She frowned, expressionless nodding her head: "Done."

"Humph, just move one inch your nose with touch the wall." Beside is Han Li Shang who coldly opened the door.

Really not understand, every times Gong Xiao Man sees Han Li Shang, she got nerved for him: "Not your business!"

"You!"

"You what you? Big Uncle, every day you showing that kind of dark expression will make you easy turn to be old and wrinkle. If you are doing nothing better

smiling, perhaps you may live little bit longer for couples of years. Good bye!" after said, Gong Xiao Man acted as if she is extremely happy, she happily jumping disappeared from Han Li Shang's vision.

"Li Shang, see, you seem not better than Ao Tian, you also meet a little girl that drives you crazy."

"You are still better to taking care your own matter, Long Ye!" he coldly said, with his darken face he walking to Yu Ao Tian's office room.

"Long Ye, was you who bringing Luo Yao Yao's classmate to here?"

"Ao Tian, this time wasn't me." After said, he narrowed his eyes and swept to Han Li Shang who standing beside him.

Yu Ao Tian is taking a glance suddenly his face is flashing a hint of astonishment...

Another second, he coldly said: "Bring that man to me."

"Yes." Stop smiling, Long Ye faster his step to go outside from the office room...

## 181 - 182

Can I say this is the sign of reconciliation between Yu Ao Tian and Luo Yao Yao? Ah~ I do speechless with Yao Yao and I even wordless to Yu Ao Tian...

# Chapter 181 – 182

"The Number that you are calling cannot be reached"

"How can't, why Xiao Man number can't be reached, just please nothing won't happen to her. Mr. driver, can you drive faster?" inside the Taxi, Yao Yao looks so worries, she is non-stopping to make phone call for Gong Xiao Man which so far can't be reached.

She didn't see Gong Xiao Man for the entire afternoon, therefore when she asking the others roommates no one knows where about she is, but she heard from the roommates, they said that she has collected the information about Berson Group and asking the address and then she just leaving school.

Once Yao Yao thought, Gong Xiao Man must definitely went to meet Yu Ao Tian, regarding to Gong Xiao Man's temperament, other than how scary Yu Ao Tian is, she does not know anything more about him, just afraid she speaks few words that it would anger Yu Ao Tian, she even does not know how she death. So that she hurries hailing Taxi and go to Berson Group.

About 10 minutes, she arrives at Berson Group, fortunately she has met the receptionist ladies for few times before, so that she does not need to waste much time and then get inside Berson Group.

Using elevator directly to the CEO's office: "Miss Mo, Miss Mo, is CEO Yu in his office?"

"Miss Luo, I am sorry, CEO Yu is busying to settle his business, please wait for a moment."

Xiao Man, nothing should happen to you. "Miss Mo, can you tell me, is there a girl who looks at same age with me that coming today..."

"Pa!"

There is sound of things being smashed from inside the office room. Another voice is also come along with that crushing sound. Won't it be... Xiao Man?

She does not wait for Mo Xue Tong to response, Yao Yao is rushing to go inside

the office room as if flying arrow, but when she enters the office room what her eyes see...

The floor is covered with fresh blood from the man's body that lying down there, the air is filled with blood smell. "Ah!..."

After one screaming sound, someone with pair of cold eyes and big hand is covering her mouth. "You woman, if you scream I will kill you!" Han Li Shang cold eyes with his big hand is giving sense of frightening sound which piercing into Yao Yao's ears.

"Ao Tian, I am sorry." Mo Xue Tong is standing in front of the office room, lower her head because feeling guilty.

As seen, Yu Ao Tian hand is holding a gun that covered with blood, expressionlessly he waved to Mo Xue Tong. After that she closed the door and hurried leaving the CEO's office room.

"Li Shang, you don't bully Xiao Meng Li, you see how pity she is, she almost breathless." Long Ye who is sitting in sofa talking with smile.

Han Li Shang slowly loosens up his hand which covers Yao Yao's mouth.

"Huh..." Long sighed, she nervously gulping her saliva, glancing to the iceberg Han Li Shang who at her back and then glancing to Long Ye who is sitting in sofa with smiling face.

Last is the expressionless Yu Ao Tian...

This... what is happened?

Her pair of legs strangely trembling, she has not regained from herself.

But, a man who almost breathless and no strength pulling Yu Ao Tian lower part of pants: "Yu, Big, Boss, forgive..."

Without wait for the man finished his words, an instantly pair of Yu Ao Tian's eyes are covered with killing intention, he raised his hand that holding gun, "peng peng" three times at once, fiercely hit that man's head.

As seen the man body is not moving and also no breathe anymore...

Just afraid she will scream again, one of Yao Yao hand is covering her own

mouth.

What have she seen? She has known that Yu Ao Tian is someone who has underworld background and she also knows that his pair of hands won't be clean but this is her first time to see Yu Ao Tian killed people. She never thought that he not even blinking when killing, even to the extend it seems as if it looks perfectly normal as doing the normal things, how can he be that easy to take others life?

The scare expression is suddenly meet Yu Ao Tian's face, the blood that covering his body, even his good looking face is also stain with red blood. The vague scenery when his mouth curved up little bit is looked so strange.

At sudden (in very instant)...

She could see the soul of devil in his body, things that able to give chills in everyone...

Yu Ao Tian loosens up his hand, shoot one time to the floor, the sound is echoing, he takes out his handkerchief and elegantly he wipes clean his face, slowly looks at Yao Yao direction: "Who ask you to come?" his eerie voice weirdly can make people heart to tremble.

"I... I come for find..."

"Ao Tian, it is bad!" without waiting she finished, Mo Xue Tong suddenly is pushing open the door and entered: "Officer Li is bringing few of his men to come here, it seems we are falling into trap."

Officer? Coming by himself? Falling to the trap?

Oh yeah, Yu Ao Tian just killed person, if now the officer is on the way coming and see this scenery, perhaps Yu Ao Tian... "Thump Thump" Yao Yao is nervously looked with her big eyes.

But why there is no expression in Yu Ao Tian's face: "Long Ye, settle this corpse."

"Yes!"

"Ao Tian, the blood stain in the floor and also the blood in your clothes, what to do, If now you want to clean it must be late." Han Li Shang face is totally

gloomy asking him.

He narrowed his eyes, when he is trying to speak...

He has seen Yao Yao rushing to his working desk, she has already pick up the cutter knife and cut her left wrist with deep cut for few times.

"Woman, you..." Han Li Shang is extremely surprised until his eye glaring bulleye.

In seconds, there are few peoples who suddenly rushing and get in into the office room, few men with leisure clothes are coming in: "CEO Yu, we have received the information..."

"Yu Ao Tian! If you are not speaking clearly to me, I will death in your office room!" Yao Yao right hand is holding the cutter knife, she stands right above the floor surface that already stained with blood, her face is showed anger expression.

"What is going on?" suddenly those few officers that barging into the room showed tense expression, they wanted to move in front.

Yao Yao is pointing the cutter knife to her own main artery (blood vessel): "Don't come near!"

"Miss, we are police officer, please you calm down."

"Today whoever coming is useless! Yu Ao Tian, you say, you say!" Yao Yao is crazily screaming, her tears are flowing down.

"What do you want me to say?" he is expressionless spoke.

"Say that you love me! Say you love me! Faster say it!"

"Yu, CEO Yu, this girl seems to have unstable emotions, you hurry say." Officer Li secretly walking toward Yu Ao Tian besides and softly said it to him.

But Yu Ao Tian is still with that expressionless face: "I count at three, give me that cutter knife. 3, 2, ..."

Officer Li never thought this is the heartless Yu Ao Tian, he is just as rumor spread, never thought today he has chance to witness it, matter is already come to this point but he still does not want to say that kind of words?

And then, when Yu Ao Tian counted until one, "pa pa" sound, Yao Yao who face is already wet with tears has thrown the cutter to the floor and then rushing to Yu Ao Tian embrace: "Hu..." she is crying so sadly.

"Office Li, suddenly you are coming to here, what is the matter?" Long Ye who suddenly appeared inside the room without no one knows, he smiles asking to Officer Li.

"Uh... I..." Officer Li's eyes is screening the office room, the blood trace in the floor, the stain in Yu Ao Tian's clothes, is that blood trace come from that little girl... did he receive wrong information? "Ah, don't mention it, I have received a report from informers, said that CEO Yu... I think there must be someone playing mischievous prank."

"It seems really a mischievous prank, everyone knows that our CEO Yu is someone who always abide the law and good citizens, moreover officer Li you must know that our CEO is going to join the legislative selection, perhaps this one of the way that did by the competitor to our CEO Yu."

"There is the possibility, oh yeah, General Manager Long Ye, what is about this circumstances?" Officer Li eyes are looking at Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao who are not far from his vision sight, secretly asking.

"Aiya, still those women who dumped by CEO Yu, going crazy, we are not weird with this situation. Let's we leave, Officer Li, I escort you to our cafeteria, sitting for while."

"No need, no need, General Manager Long. I must hurry go back to office. So just leave it like this." officer Li smiles at Long Ye, politely nodding his head toward Yu Ao Tian and take his men leaving.

After officer Li leaving, Long Ye expression turned to be cold, hurry he close the office room.

"Xiao Meng Li, are you okay?"

She slowly loosens up Yu Ao Tian pair of arms, forcing to smile at Long Ye: "I am okay." Her eyes can see there still no expression from Yu Ao Tian. "My best friend, Xiao Man, did she come here to find you?"

"She has left before."

Left? "When did she left, but why now..." kring, suddenly the mobile phone notify message tone is ringing, she hurried to take a look, it is from Gong Xiao Man. "Huh..." she sighed one long deep breathe, she faintly smile: "I am sorry to disturb, Xiao Man has already at school, I take my leave." She turned her body and walking to the door way.

"Xiao Meng Li, your wounds..." Long Ye wants to stop Yao Yao but she is already leaving, he just can helplessly looking toward Yu Ao Tian: "Ao Tian, really not care about her? She is because of you, so that..."

To be honest, when Yao Yao decided to do that thing, Long Ye really worried about her but he more admired to that little girl guts. It was so obliviously she feared when entering the room, it was so clear she has chicken-gut, but she able to make faster decision in the very chaos circumstance in order to solve the matter, furthermore there was no trace of she being feared and using the trick of injuring herself to gain Officer Li's trust, actually how big courage that keep inside that little girl so that she able to do such thing?

"Ao Tian." for once again the office room door is opened, Mo Xue Tong is coldly said: "Luo Yao Yao is fainted."

After heard it, finally Yu Ao Tian mood is exploding, he just a like an arrow that flies out from his office room.

He carrying Yao Yao, does not care with others people eyesight, does not care with others people thoughts, he just carrying her and rushing to the hospital.

Needless to say, in this moment...

Facing with many critical things, the composed and calm Yu Ao Tian finally... he is revealed the most panic expression of his sides.

### **Chapter 183**

"Yao Yao, what is your ambition?"

"Of course I want to be well-known lawyer."

"Oh, lawyer is so awesome, lawyer can make the black turn to be white, changes the white to black, it just exactly alike Mysterious ruler that able to dictate everyone."

"It not, lawyer must be someone who uphold justice!"

Lawyer is one of the job that worthy for greatest admiration, it indeed can change something rotten to something magical, makes the black to white, make the bad into good, turn the good to be bad. But as for Yao Yao, the words lawyer meaning is the embodiment of justice.

But today...

She had betrayed her principle, seeing Yu Ao Tian killing other person, she even using herself and her little brain to successfully make him escaped from law.

I am sorry, Themis\*

\*泰Tai 美 Mei 丝Si: Themis is is an ancient Greek Titaness. She is described as "of good counsel", and is the personification of divine order, law, natural law and custom. Themis means "divine law" rather than human ordinance, literally "that which is put in place", from the Greek verb títhēmi (τίθημι), meaning "to put" (source:Wikipedia)

In the western world, the goddess of the law is holding sword in her right hand and her left hand is holding scale, she is called as Themis. The goddess expression is describing dignified, respectful and serene, should not take unfair advantage.

Sometimes, the goddess sculpture is image by using blindfolded which means

the law without distinction. Peaceful world, as if the world filled with righteousness, the law is govern with fairness, while the sharp sword means the law is providing to reveal the bright side and cut off the darkness, to support the justice.

"I am sorry!" suddenly a pair of Yao Yao eyes are opened, her eyes is seeing wide white color.

Where is this?

Slowly she raises her wounded right hand, it has already covered by gauze. Is here hospital?

She dumbfounded in the bed, she trying to recall just now dream...

Huh, so she is dreaming about Themis.

But when she was hearing the news that officer Li rushed to upstairs, her sudden reaction was she did not want something bad happened to Yu Ao Tian, when the officer Li left the room she didn't even felt little bit guilty of betraying law, moreover when she knew that Yu Ao Tian has been completely safe, she even took long breathe for him.

How could she have this kind of thought in her heart? It was so clearly when first time she enrolled in law faculty, she wanted to be impartial and fair but now she...

"Awake?"

Following the sound that comes from the patient bed near the window, she can see the piercing sun light that illuminating Yu Ao Tian's body, his tall and slender figure are so dazzling in eyes.

"What happened to me?" she weakly trying to change into sit position, she is trying to recall her memory that just now she still inside Yu Ao Tian's company.

"You have anemia, fainted at my company."

Was he sent her to hospital by himself? "Thank You."

"Don't say thank to me!"

When Yao Yao heard this shouting sound with guilty feeling, Yao Yao

dumbfounded. Did she get into trouble again?

Suddenly, Yu Ao Tian takes faster step, rushing in front of her and he pulled her petite body into his embrace: "Next time, don't do any foolish things anymore!"

It seems that she really gets into trouble again? "I am sorry."

Listen to Yao Yao apologizing voice, Yu Ao Tian even hugging her more tighter, he realized that she is such skinny and so weak, very vulnerable just if he hugs her little bit tighter perhaps it might broken her bones, this is really makes other feeling heartbroken.

"You are not sorry me! You are sorry yourself and your body. If you are like this, I will... feel heartbroken (because he dear her so much)! Do you understand?"

#### Thump Thump

Heart is thumping faster, "heartbroken" this word she never heard it before from Yu Ao Tian's mouth but why today she... has the feeling that her heart is rushing faster? It is so obviously he speaks very simple words, it not different to the courtesy words such as how are you.

Perhaps he is too less to speak this kind of words? Still thought, this time she gets into trouble again because of she is acting smart. If not it is really better.

"Yu Ao Tian, can you not that easy to take others life for the next time, can't you?"

"You are too young, you are not understand about the strong eat the weak. In this current world, if you are not "eat" people, you are waiting others to "eat" you!"

It seemed that Nan Lu ever told her, wasn't it? Yu Ao Tian point of view are different compare to an ordinary people, he has too many responsible and burden at his back which can't be carried by any ordinary people, place there is no one can enter. It seems that his world forever can't be understood by her.

Slowly he loosens up his hands that hugging Yao Yao, his deep black eyes suddenly looked at her lips.

When she realized his eyesight, her heart is thumping, faster and faster, and

then she bow lower her head, so she afraid... Yu Ao Tian will kiss her.

And then, he really kisses her lips. But this kiss feels so warm, gentle which won't make people to avoid it, she can't help and stuck in the middle of it....

"Am I coming at wrong time?"

Outside the doorway, suddenly heard Long Ye's voice, Yao Yao bowed lower and push away Yu Ao Tian, she feels so embarrassed.

"Since you know you are coming at wrong time, why are you still come in?" Yu Ao Tian word sounded as if he little bit displeased.

"I just coming to visit Xiao Meng Li, just can't to turn my head and walk away, right?" Long Ye speaking while bringing the bouquet of flower to Yao Yao in front: "Do you like it?"

"Like it. Thank you."

"Hehe." Long Ye smiles warmly, he puts the bouquet of fresh flower beside, softly he pinched her nose: "Xiao Meng Li, today you are so brave." After said, he kissed Yao Yao's forehead without waiting for her reaction.

Uh...?

She is panic to move her body keeps moving, she looked so nervously looking at Yu Ao Tian who is not far from her bed.

Long Ye can see her nervous, gently said: "Xiao Meng Li, don't be afraid. Yu Ao Tian won't be jealous, if he really jealous, it means that...you are the winner!"

What does Long Ye means? Why Yu Ao Tian jealous and then she is the winner? Do these two matters have correlations?

She doubted and takes a glance toward Yu Ao Tian.

At this moment, his expression is showing helplessly and also smiling face, as if what was Long Ye said is right that Yu Ao Tian won't be jealous, but after she thinks for while about her relationship with Yu Ao Tian, there is no reason for Yu Ao Tian to get jealous.

That is right, relationship, what kind of relationship she has with Yu Ao Tian?

There is time, Yu Ao Tian kindness is more alike big brother that dearly his

younger sister, that kind of feeling, but there is also a time, both of them are not more than strangers.

But at different times, both of them can do many things that exceed brother and sister relationship, but sometimes they can act worst than strangers. Whatever it is, this kind of strange relationship isn't involved the relationship between man and woman emotions (love feeling between man and woman), this point she knows it very well, she believes Yu Ao Tian also clear with this!

Finally night comes.

"Yao Yao."

"Xiao Man, how can you come?"

"Nonsense, my best friend is admitted to hospital, how can I not come? What do you think I am..." she is speaking while walking to the room, Gong Xiao Man just realized that Yu Ao Tian is sitting on the sofa, her expression suddenly turned to be rigid: "Yu, CEO Yu, you are also here..."

Yu Ao Tian looked at her with elegant smiles, raised his body and walking to the bed side, softly and gently he kisses Yao Yao's forehead: "I go out for while, if there is something just phone me."

"En."

### **Chapter 184**

After seeing Yu Ao tian leaving, Xiao Man excitedly sitting beside Yao Yao's bed: "Hey, Hey, my beloved, just now I thought my eyes got problems, as I seen that Yu Ao Tian isn't treat you bad ah."

"Hehehehe." Not bad? Huh, Xiao Man you just see one sided, not both of sides.

"But Yao Yao, I don't know whether this is something I must say or not." Gong Xiao Man little bit hesitated and also pouting her mouth helplessly.

"Just speak up your mind."

"Hm, I just feel that Yu Ao Tian really not suitable for you, although he has money, he also good looking, but you must be cleared about his background. Today when I looked for him, having little bit conversation with him, I could feel that he is really someone so complicated compare to others people that I never met in my life, moreover he is someone that not coming from same world with ours, he does really alike someone lives in his own world, to be honest tens of Feng Chen Yi can't be compared to one complicated Yu Ao Tian."

About this Yao Yao has known it from the very first time, Feng Chen Yi is born in rich wealth family, at least he will possesses that Big Young Master temperamental, but from inside and outside he is counted as "simple" and "clean", but Yu Ao Tian is someone different, his background is coming from underworld, it means that he will have more and more "Story" behind himself. Furthermore he has personality that not easy to be read by others people, very deep and certainly he is more complex.

"Xiao Man, thank you to remind me. But I have contract with Yu Ao Tian, I have already get involved and deeper, so that I just need to wait for three years to end up."

"I am understood, whatever you just don't fall in love with him. He is really not

a man that you can depend yourself onto."

Hahaha, she really knows this point.

In this world she can love any man, but solely she really not afford to fall in love with Yu Ao Tian, and she also not dares to love him!

"That is right! That is right, my beloved, I have checked on Qi Lian sunbae background." After listened this, Gong Xiao Man is excitedly smiling: "This year he is 22 years old, he is in third semesters, He spent his junior and senior high in Japan. Two years ago he came back to China, currently he does not have girlfriend, and his private life is so discipline, he does not have any scandalous around him."

Very normal, since that day when Qi Lian Ao Yun drove her home, she could feel that man must be have very good private life.

"But the weird thing is his background."

"What does with his background?"

"How to say, from the higher class sunbaes, Qi Lian sunbae must be come from the wealthy family, must be very rich at least he might as rich as Feng Chen Yi, because we can see from the car that he drives. But no one knows about his family background or where does he come, logically he must be someone has much money, the second rich generation, but after I checked in detail the family with Qi Lian surname, there is no rich family with that surname, don't you think it is strange?"

"What is so strange about it, perhaps his father is hidden rich person, moreover whether he has money or not, this is not important, the most important is what kind of person he is."

"Of course there are huge difference between have money or not. Yao Yao, you guess, who is the wealthiest family in this country?"

No need to make a guess, it definitely .... "Feng's household right?"

"Bingo, Feng family's Feng Xiao, Feng Chen Yi, Feng Chen Rui, gather three of them father and sons, they are combined as the first rank, your Ex-boyfriend is the first rank, whatever you must looking for someone who has exceeded at least your Ex-boyfriend, don't you think so?"

Faint, Xiao Man is going to be crazy? She hurries to cover Xiao Man's mouth: "Sst, you speak in low voice, do think Yu Ao Tian is death?"

"Actually if we rank it based on the business, Berson Group and Feng Group are equally worthy to put in first rank, moreover if rank based on individual, Yu Ao Tian with those father and sons are different 9 trillion thus he rank second, logically if you really wanted to piss off Feng Chen Yi but you are Yu Ao Tian's lover...Uh..." Gong Xiao Man suddenly feels that she has talked things that mustn't be said, hurried she apologizing: "I am sorry, I am sorry Yao Yao, I mean, I just hope that if you can find man that is more than Feng Chen Yi to piss him off, I really don't mean others."

Ahaha, Yao Yao knows Gong Xiao Man very well, she is someone who speaks faster than using her brain, she has straightforward character, moreover she is so clear with her status which is too risky.

"Well based on your thought, the person that suit me must be Qi Lian sunbae?"

"That is right, that is right, that is my real intention!"

"Ha, so must I betray Yu Ao Tian and starting to chase Qi Lian sunbae, mustn't I?"

"That is also possible!"

"You go die, Xiao Man!" if Yu Ao Tian knows, he might peel her skin?

"To be honest, Xiao Man, didn't you call me not to fight you over Qi Lian sunbae? But why now you are changing your mind and even becoming matchmaker between me and Qi Lian sunbae?"

"Me ah? That time I was kidding. Qi Lian sunbae really does not suit with me!"

Actually this is Xiao Man real character, don't look see like to admire whoever but most of it, she really joking. She is not type of girl that careless, when still in Japan there were lots of men chasing Xiao Man, among them also there were handsome men but none of them that able to attract Xiao Man, so far until today she never dated anyone because she is so conservative girl.

"Oh yeah, Xiao Man, I remembered something." Yao Yao suddenly remembered on something, it is one of important thing, seriously she asked: "Did you make Vice CEO Han angry?"

"That iceberg Big Uncle? How can you know?"

"Today when he came to find Yu Ao Tian talking about something, and then he was looked so furious and sternly asking me to tell you... if next time you dare to provoke him, he won't be polite toward you."

"Qie...." Gong Xiao Man pair of hands is enveloping her in front body, she rolled her eyes: "I really want to see what did his meant by won't polite toward me."

"Xiao Man, you are so brave, to be honest, every times I see Vice CEO Han, I will be so careful and fear of him."

"Why must you fear him? He just paper tiger, if you thicken your face toward him, he really can't do anything toward you. Whatever I am kind of person everything I want only face that I don't want."

"Still you are awesome, Xiao Man..." Yao Yao admired her and gave her thumbs up.

During this time... the door is knocked.

"Come in."

The door is opened, Qi Lian Ao Yun is holding bouquet of flower and coming in.

"Qi Lian sunbae?" how can he come? At the moment Yao Yao looked at Gong Xiao Man.

As seen she is smiling deviously, no need to ask, she must the person who tell Qi Lian sunbae the matter about she being hospitalized.

"I take my leave, Yao Yao, Qi Lian sunbae."

Faint, does Xiao Man seriously to match her with Qi Lian sunbae? Doesn't she not clear about Yao Yao status, although she has status as Yu Ao Tian's lover, she does not have right to find another man as boyfriend? Cold sweat...

"Take care." Qi Lian Ao Yun smile brightly after Gong Xiao Man leaving, his face

looked helplessly and turned to see Yao Yao who is lying down at bed: "Why every times I meet you, your circumstances always getting worse and worse?"

"....." this... really true!

"Qi Lian sunbae, really troublesome you, you are especially coming to visit me, it seems that I owed you one meal again."

"Aiya, if this been said, my wallet will get thinner." Qi Lian Ao Yun pretended to act helplessly and pouted his mouth.

# **Chapter 185**

Teasing her so she smiles, just realized that Qi Lian sunbae also someone humorist. "Qi Lian sunbae, the student council must be so busy right?"

"Still okay. Do you interest to join the student council?"

"Ah? Can I?" when she was in Senior high school, the student council is like place where all the wealthy and rich younger generation children gather, no matter how good her study, she still didn't have right to join, it quite sadly every times think about it.

"Of course, in few days there will be member election of the student council, I can be the person who recommend you."

"Really? So thankful, Qi Lian sunbae. It seems that I owed you another meal again."

In brief both of them are having simple conversation for while and then Qi Lian Ao Yun left, when he just walked to the elevator, just in time the door is opened....

Yu Ao Tian is slowly walking out to his in front. "How can you be here?"

There is no smiling face of Qi Lian Ao Yun, both of his hands are inserted to his pocket, when Yu Ao Tian wanted to do body check, coldly Qi Lian Ao Yun said: "Come to visit classmate." And then gets into the elevator and the door closed...

Yao Yao stayed two days in hospital before she discharge, while her dorm room that should stay for four persons suddenly change to single room, actually at the beginning she refused because on this way she can't be at same room with Gong Xiao Man, but Yu Ao Tian gave her two options, one she must moved back to villa or she must stay at the single room, without any hesitation she choose to stay at the single room.

After dinner, she quite boring and climb to her bed, seriously she plays the IQ games. "So stressful, why I can't pass the last obstacles... ah!" suddenly something heavy presses on her body, shocked with pale face she turned her back and when she glanced...

"How...how can you get in?"

"Of course by walking in order to get in." the person who pressed her body is Yu Ao Tian.

Can't she know that he come in by walking? "This is girl dormitory moreover... moreover I have locked the door!"

"Humph? Your room is given by me, of course I have the key. Moreover, I am this board director for this school, don't you think it so easy for me to get in?"

He...he does... really good in using his power?

"Bao Bei, what games you are playing? You looked so focus even not realized my coming and when I get here?"

"IQ games." Yao Yao swaying the games in her hands, unhappily she is pouting her mouth: "But I can't pass the last obstacle, really stressful."

Yu Ao Tian who still pressed on her body looked at the games, helplessly he shook his head: "This, this, this, just like this will pass. Just relay on your IQ you playing IQ games?"

Yao Yao does according what he point out, just expectedly the games are clear up. "You...you... you..."

"En."

Her big eyes looked him with astonishment: "You, how much your IQ?"

"Just similar with ordinary people."

"You are lying! This IQ games is made by the Ka Luo Men group, the games in her hands are the games for IQ above 200! How much your IQ actually?"

"Just similar with the ordinary person." after said, he lower his head and kiss her sensitive part in neck.

Yao Yao glaring him, but continue to play.

But that soft lips seem not have intention to stop and gently kiss her again.

"Don't... kiss la, it is so itchy."

Yu Ao Tian curved up his lips and slid his hand to inside her dresses. His lips kiss her shoulder, give her the sensation of itchy and also numb.

Yu Ao Tian keeps on teasing her from kissing to touching, she really feels that she going to be crazy how can Yu Ao Tian be this mischief? And suddenly there is knocking sound from outside her room...

Yao Yao stops Yu Ao Tian and hint him toward door direction.

"Huh." Yu Ao Tian looked unhappy, sighed, he lets go Yao Yao.

"What to do? What to do? This is girl dorm, if they are seeing you come out from my room, I might..."

"You just pretended not in here, it settles right?"

"Girl dorm is closed at ten, now is already ten, if I am not inside the dorm it will be more troublesome! Faster! You hide inside the bathroom!"

Want him to hide inside the bathroom? He is Yu Ao Tian how can he be so pathetic? "Open the door and see who is the person, if she looks pretty just pulled her inside so we play 3P, by this way she won't report you."

"You rotten bastard!" how can Yu Ao Tian speaks like this?

"You little thing dare to scold me?" his eyes gleaming cold, his hand pinched her chin. But another second, he smiles deviously: "If you are not willing, you just stand at side as the "viewer", it is well do too."

"Why must I?" when Yao Yao said this she is already regretful.

"En? Bao Bei, so you just hope that I only play with you, if it is the matter, you must tell me earlier." After said, he still pressed on her body.

Yao Yao knows that she fail to his trap! "Stop to tease me." Again she hears the knocking sound from outside, she uses all her strength to push away Yu Ao Tian, hurried tidying her nightgown and run to in front of the door: "coming."

She opens the door, that person is her classmate: "Luo Yao Yao, this is your homework, thank you."

"Don't don't mention it."

"Are you okay? Why your face is so red? Are you having fever?"

"Ah? No, I am taking bath just now."

"Oh... well I take my leave."

"En, good bye." Takes long breathe, when she turned back to her room it has already empty. Where is Yu Ao Tian?"

After she locked her room, Yu Ao Tian is slowly out from the bathroom...

Humph, this unkind man, finally he also hides inside, right?

"Didn't you want to play with student? Why are you hiding?" Yao Yao mocking him.

Yu Ao Tian inserts his hands to his pocket: "Do you think that I really interest with you guys who the body haven't well develop, I don't have interest with it?"

Suddenly Yao Yao heart feels shivering, after seen some of Yu Ao Tian's women, this is not debatable fact, he indeed does not have interest with any little girl. "Since you don't have interest why are you keep on teasing me?" she pouted her mouth, she pull her quilt and cover her face.

Yu Ao Tian smiles, he pulls the quilt and lay down beside her: "What? Jealous?" his fingers touching gently at her nose tip.

Jealous? No, how could she jealous? "Of course not." She rolled her eyes and backed him purposely.

Yu Ao Tian hugging on her waist: "Bao Bei, tomorrow afternoon we go out."

"I don't have time!"

"Aiya, don't you still angry to me so that you don't want to go?"

"I have said, no. ah forget it, I will go." She does not want to seek trouble with this rotten bastard: "Where are you going?"

"En, do you know the reason why I want you to have single room?"

She shocks and looks at that sinister expression, it feels that he... he really does it for purpose?

Does this mean that for the convenient? It is easy him to get in and out, really too cunning!"

The next day morning, when Yao Yao wakes up from bed, Yu Ao Tian has left, after she had her breakfast she goes to student council.

# 186 - 188

I am bit annoyed with this chapter because Li Mei Yun is showing up. This little bit frustrated chapters. Again, Yu Ao Tian is acting alike bastard, damn him! there is time I really hope Yu Ao Tian to explain his attitude or whatever he would like to do, Yao Yao might has high IQ but she isn't "worm in his stomach", what hell he expect her to understand him!

No matter how Yao Yao is trying to deny, yes, she has fallen for Yu Ao Tian, even Gong Xiao Man knows it.

Gong Xiao Man and Han Li Shang perhaps can give us little bit entertain.....

# **Chapter 186 - 188**

One huge three-storey building that located separated with the university building which is located in the west area, it is gorgeous building with hall, the second floor is the room of teacher office and the student council office is at the end.

Opened the heavy wooden door, the glamour and antique decoration can be seen with her eyes, behind of one huge big desk, Qi Lian Ao Yun sitting and in front of him there are about ten candidates standing.

"I am sorry, Qi Lian president, Gu Vice president, I am late." Yao Yao is apologizing, quickly she standing among those people.

"It is okay, you just come in right time." Qi Lian Ao Yun smiles, his eyes is looking at Gu Xiao Ming who standing beside him.

"This time the student council has made list to recruit member, after doing the comparison and screening, we decided to choose Luo Yao Yao student to enter the student council." The announcement is ended, everyone is exposing dissatisfaction expression.

The one of the girl who standing in right row protested: "Why must choose her?"

This girl has 170 cm something of height, she has very beautiful face and match with her long hair.

"Feng Ke Xin, this is the decision that decided by the student council members, I don't need to give you explanation, right?"

"Vice president Gu, since choosing to announce it publicly, why didn't the result process also being published?"

"This..." Gu Xiao Ming feels things gat difficult looking at Qi Lian Ao Yun. The most important reason is, choosing Luo Yao Yao because of Qi Lian Ao Yun as the person who recommendation her, just that's it.

"It is because the achievement of Luo Yao Yao student so we choose her."

"So because her achievement and then she being chosen? As what I know, vice president Gu is also not as someone who has best grades among us." Feng Ke Xin said arrogantly, she smiles with provocation.

Yao Yao who standing not far from there is frowning, she does not expect to burdensome Qi Lian Ao Lian. "Forget it, I still..."

"Luo Yao Yao have more than excellent academic achievement, during her junior and senior high school she ever joined the student council and served on duties, while you Feng Ke Xin during your senior high school you just ever became Vice president of the student council. That's why we choose Luo Yao Yao student." Qi Lian Ao Yun said. He hands over Yao Yao's resume to Feng Ke Xin.

The problems are...

She never worked or served the positions that filled in that resume, how come at sudden she even worked as student council during her junior and senior high school?

Feng Ke Xin takes a glance at the resume, unhappily frowning: "Well, Qi Lian president, I see this Luo Yao Yao seems to have ability, if she can't perform well, I can substitute her?"

"Of course."

Put down the resume, Feng Ke Xin furrowed her brows, glaring with hate to Yao Yao and then walking out from the student council room...

"Qi Lian sunbae, why you have my resume?" when everyone has already left, Yao Yao looked at her own resume, just seen all the column is filled with words.

"hehehe, you little foolish, if didn't did it, who will agree?" Qi Lian Ao Yun is stretching out his hand and patting her head.

"Did this write by you?" seeing the detail of the resume, there is not only one column being modified but almost all the columns.

"Do you think ghost write it?"

"Uh...thank you, Qi Lian sunbae, it seems I ..."

"Yo!" Qi Lian Ao Yun hurried to stop her: "Please don't mention about treating meal, if you continue, I think my wallet gonna be empty."

"Ha." Yao Yao curved upward her mouth, bowing excitedly: "Thank you, Qi Lian sunbae. I will do my best and won't disappoint you!"

"Having good performance no need, just next time, do not let me to see you in such pitiful situations again." After said, Qi Lian Ao Yun shows his charming smiles, extend his hand and stroking Yao Yao's head and then he left.

Looking at his back slowly far away, Yao Yao stretches her own hand and strokes her head: "Qi Lian sunbae really a good man, no wonder there are many girls like him. Uh..." why she meet men, worse one to another?

"Yao Yao, CEO Yu is asking you out, you bring me with you is it okay?" inside the Taxi, Gong Xiao Man little bit worry asking her.

"Rest assured, Yu Ao Tian isn't such petty man." The most important is she must not alone with Yu Ao Tian. "You just think as to accompany me."

"Actually I am okay but the problem is...I do really afraid of CEO Yu." She recalled Yu Ao Tian eyesight last time, Gong Xiao Man could feel her hair stand until now, she had never seen person with such scary aura for her life time.

"I do afraid ah...."

When they are arrived at the bowling arena, Yu Ao Tian has been waiting them at earlier time.

"Yu, CEO Yu, I hope you won't be mind...me as the unwanted third guest come to join?" Gong Xiao Man nervously asked.

He is smiling and don't mind of it, he lowers his body, whispering to Yao Yao: "Bao Bei, you are so unwanted to stay alone with me?"

Uh...

To be honest she really does not want, moreover every times they are going out, Yu Ao Tian will make some distant toward her, asking Gong Xiao Man to come together with her as companion isn't this much better?"

"Yeah, hit all." Gong Xiao Man is happily watching all the Pin which knocked over by her, she dances excitedly.

Yao Yao touches her nose: "Watch me!" takes the bowling ball and hit to the pin, but only few falls down...

"Hahaha, Yao Yao you are big foolish."

"You are the big foolish, humph!"

Looking at two little girls that are noisy, Yu Ao Tian who is sitting not far from them, shaking his head, it seems that his little thing is look so lively if playing with same age friend.

His eyes looked at the other side of the bowling arena, his eyesight is suddenly cold and takes out his phone, speaking with stern voice: "Li Shang, use the shortest time to pick up Yao Yao from Ao Chen Bowling arena!"

"hey, hey, Yao Yao." Gong Xiao Man secretly tugging Yao Yao's arm: "CEO Yu really gentleman, he looks alike parent or guardian who brings us out to play, he does not even showing up his impatience expression, if other man perhaps has left us. You think should us ask him to play together."

This is true that Yu Ao Tian indeed looked alike gentleman, from how he acted toward Gong Xiao Man before, it has shown that he really gentleman. "Okay." She smiles and nodding her head, she rushes in front of Yu Ao Tian, waving at him: "Ao Tian, do you want to play with us?"

"You guys just play." Yu Ao Tian face is expressionless.

At this time, she smiles in front of him, grabbing his wrist: "Come on, don't just sitting."

"How troublesome you are! Let off!"

Looking at his expression that dislike her, Yao Yao not understand so she blinking her eyes, he, he isn't like this before, why his mood just swing? "Ao Tian, you... are you okay?"

"I asked you to let go, understand?" he yelled at her, looks impatience and sway away Yao Yao's hand that grabbing his wrist.

Everyone is looked at them, Yao Yao feels embarrassed and also pissed off and let off his hand: "You suddenly..."

"I ask you to shut up, if you want to play just play your games, don't come to disturb me or you just get lost!"

What? He is the person who asking her to go out, why he acted as if she is the

person who coming to disturb him? Yao Yao furrowed her brows, she is so angry and lifts her head up...

At this time...

A slap landed on her face.

When that hand landed on her hand, give her slap, she looked at the owner's hand...

What! how can Li Mei Yun in here?

As seen, in front of her is Li Mei Yun, her laughing is so provocative: "Ao Tian is asked you to get lost, understood?"

"Hey! You MF who are you, why you slap Yao Yao?" Gong Xiao Man who isn't far from there is rushing to in front and glaring at Li Mei Yun.

She suddenly grabbed Gong Xiao Man's hand, hinting that she should not say anything.

"Mei Yun, why are you here?" Yu Ao Tian smiles, his face shows gentle expression toward her.

Li Mei Yun tip toe and hooked his neck: "Of course because I miss you."

"You are really annoying, it was so clearly yesterday evening I had met you."

Yu Ao Tian and Li Mei Yun...reconciled?

She lifts her head up, looking with unbelievable expression toward Yu Ao Tian and Li Mei Yun, why? Why Yu Ao Tian still reconciled with Li Mei Yun, why he just not breaks up with Li Mei Yun?

Right! Perhaps, as lover she mustn't have this kind of thought, but this time... imaging he and Li Mei Yun making love, that scenery really pained her.

The mood swing of Yu Ao Tian toward her, was it because seeing Li Mei Yun coming so that he purposely acting to shoo her away? Is it to gain Li Mei Yun favor? Actually how much he loves Li Mei Yun? Since he loves her why he must look for her as his lover?

Suddenly she feels she cannot breathe, her chest feels suffocated, she really not understand whether she hates Li Mei Yun so much or because... she really

cares Yu Ao Tian is getting back with Li Mei Yun!

"Little girl." Li Mei Yun, lips curved up, she lowers her head and whispered at her: "do you think as lover you can be real girlfriend? Now, you must give up, you must more understand compare to me who Ao Tian loves. Oh, that's right, I tell you something...it was Yu Ao Tian who looking for me and asked me to sleep with him, I didn't take any initiatives."

Yu Ao Tian loves whom she knowing it better, this time she really does not need Li Mei Yun to especially come and remind her. Moreover, she never thought to change.

Don't cry! Don't cry! Cannot cry, Yao Yao cannot cry!

She makes fist, her nail embedded on her palm, if this time she is really crying it means proving on something, she really does not want to see and called them as "loving" couple!

She extended her hand, grabbing Gong Xiao Man and prepared to leave...

Li Mei Yun suddenly held her hand to stop.

What? Does one slap isn't enough?

"Next time don't come to disturb Ao Tian, understand?" Li Mei Yun is too understanding Yu Ao Tian's character, he could let her to give this little girl a slap it means she has lost his love, toward the girl that has lost the love, naturally she will all out to vent her anger!

"Hey, who is disturbing..."

Hearing Gong Xiao Man voice, Yao Yao afraid that she might burdensome by her, subconsciously she squeezed her hands. She smirks at Li Mei Yun: "Based on your ability, can I still come to disturb him?" after said, she swaying away Li Mei Yun's hand that held Gong Xiao Man's hand and without turn back she run out with piercing laugh from the bowling Arena.

"Yao Yao, Yao Yao, stop running!" when they are in front of the entrance, Gong Xiao Man who breathless grabbing her: "Actually... actually what is going on?"

"Hu...." Finally she cannot control her emotions, she falls apart in front of

Gong Xiao Man, she has told herself not to cry, not to cry but she really can't hold it anymore. The big beads of tears are falling down wet her face, she hugging on Xiao Man tightly: "That woman, that woman is Yu Ao Tian's real girlfriend, they... not long ago they have broke up, but I really don't know why they, why they are reconciled...huhu..."

Gong Xiao Man frowned: "Yao Yao? You... are you expecting both of them not reconciled?

"I don't wish!" Yao Yao answered certainly.

Gong Xiao Man slowly pushing Yao Yao, holding her hand and looking at her: "You... you fall in love at Yu Ao Tian?"

At sudden Yao Yao stops crying, she could feel her head will explode, no, impossible! Impossible! She is not falling in love with Yu Ao Tian, no! "I don't love her."

"So... why are you crying? Why are you care whether he reconcile or not with that woman?"

That's right...

Why? If not love, why must she care Yu Ao Tian reconciled with Li Mei Yun?

But... Xiao Man didn't know all bad things that Li Mei Yun ever did to her, she hates Li Mei Yun, and perhaps if today Yu Ao Tian is with anyone else, she would not care.

That's right, must be like this. If others women she won't care, she also won't cry, only Li Mei Yun as exception. Right, must be!

At sudden, when both of the girls are still in conversation, one big and tall posture block on Yao Yao in front.

"Hey, what are you... uh, big uncle?" Gong Xiao Man dumbfounded.

Yao Yao also surprised: "Vice CEO Han, you..."

"Shut up!" he speaks with cold tone, Han Li Shang faster brings them to other side of street.

Gong Xiao Man hurried to follow: "Big uncle, are you scoundrel? Faster let..."

His big hand has covered her mouth, his hand is holding Gong Xiao Man and taking her to beside where the car parked.

One sit on left and one sit at right, the two girls are sitting inside the car. He sits at driver seat and suddenly turned on the engine and shut the door...

"Hey, big uncle, you are kidnapping, do you know?"

"Shut up!" Han Li Shang voice tone is sound tough, cold and in strong command.

Now Gong Xiao Man focus is on Yao Yao, she also does not want to argue with him. "Yao Yao, no matter what, you must not feel sad because of man like him."

"I really never thought that Yu Ao Tian is type of kind man, even though you are his lover, how can he let other woman to bully you, really shameless! Moreover he is the person who comes to disturb you, but in order to coax his girlfriend to be happy he act as if he is innocent, simply to say really shameless!!!"

After experienced this kind of things, today finally Gong Xiao Man's view about Yu Ao Tian is perfectly changed, to say if a man treat his woman good they must accept his woman's good friend too, moreover no complain whenever accompany his woman, also even his woman only gives him smile it is more than happiness.

At least Gong Xiao Man seen Yu Ao Tian patience, that time she even has thought perhaps Yu Ao Tian must feel something towards Yao Yao? But now...

"If you don't know, stop to say gibberish!" suddenly, Han Li Shang who sits in driver seat spoke.

"You understand? It only you understand? Didn't you know how rotten bastard Yu Ao Tian just now?"

"You give a try to say again?" Han Li Shang coldly turned.

"I even can say ten times, Yu Ao Tian is rotten bastard! Hey! Looked at the car!" in front of them there are two cars with high speed coming nearer.

Han Li Shang faster to take a glance, he also using his hand to push Gong Xiao Man's chest, suddenly gas the pedal, he pushed Gong Xiao Man so she won't hit

her head.

But...

Where did he put his hand?

Gong Xiao Man roared, lower her head and looking at Han Li Shang's hand which touch her chest: "You..."

"Things that Yu Ao Tian carries on his back, it is not girls like you guys will understand." Han Li Shang's hand is still in Gong Xiao Man's chest.

"Ha, Ao Tian? Listen from the way you speak, you and he sound alike best friend. No wonder you are sided on him. Let me ask you, if Yao Yao is your little sister, she being bullied by man, you MF still speak with me about "Ao Tian carries something on his back"?"

"Little girl, you are girl, don't speak MF MF every times you are speaking!"

"Facing with scoundrel big uncle like you, if I don't speak little bit rash, can I match to you?"

Han Li Shang frowned, coldly said: "You say I am scoundrel?"

"If you are not scoundrel, why are you touching my chest?"

# **Chapter 189 – 190**

"Just now because..." Damn! This little girl how can her being so absurd to this point?

Gong Xiao Man is laughing with provocation, pair of her hands enveloped her in front chest: "Big Uncle, how it feels? Can say big or small? Compare to your girlfriend's how is mine?"

"You little girl, won't you feel ashamed to speak something like this?"

"En? Ashamed?" Gong Xiao Man pairs of eyes gleaming brightly, she straighten her body and slowly get closer to right in front of Han Li Shang's face: "Big uncle, you don't tell me that you are still virgin man, don't act so innocent?"

"YOU!!!"

Suddenly Yao Yao who is crying by this time, she is laughing hard, why she never discovered that cold Vice CEO Han also a normal human who also have someone that he cannot deal with? Simply to say Xiao Man is really awesome.

"Yao Yao."

"I am fine, Xiao Man." She is forcing herself to smile.

Problems...

Gong Xiao Man shows complexity in her expression and pointed at her forehead: "Your forehead..."

"En?" she touched her own forehead, a red blood stained on her finger after touched her forehead. "Perhaps because of Vice CEO Han was hurried and stepped the pedal gas and made the car bumped just now, it is okay."

"Yao Yao, you don't act to foolish? How can you don't feel anything after got hit and bleeding?" Gong Xiao Man really clueless to see Yao Yao.

Her heart just to ache, that's why she can't feel the pain in her forehead, perhaps?

"All because of you, big uncle, why didn't you protect Yao Yao just now?"

Han Li Shang eyes looked fierce, he makes fist by his hand, with low voice said: "Because I protected you just now!"

"Huh..." Gong Xiao Man hurried shut her mouth up, but strangely her heart beat faster...

\*\*

Seeing at Yao Yao who disappearing from bowling arena, actually Yu Ao Tian has desired to hug her tightly, but... the circumstances just not allowed him to do so!

He suppressed his emotion, he smiles deviously to Li Mei Yun, pair of hands held her waist: "Aiya, are you really jealous?"

"Of course. It all is because I love you."

"En? Well how about you prove it now?"

"In here?" Li Mei Yun looks at the surrounding of the bowling arena, it seems that after their short break, does Yu Ao Tian have thought to announce their relationship in public? Whenever she thought about this, the anger in her heart is vanished and she won't think anything, her lips just landed on his lips.

Yu Ao Tian expression is so cold, he lets Li Mei Yun to kiss him, and let everyone at there to see them...

Just in time!

"peng!" it is handgun sound.

"Ah!" everyone in bowling arena was shocked, panic and running to all corners.

"Ao Tian, what is going on?" Li Mei Yun is shocked and she hugged Yu Ao Tian tightly.

He narrowed his eyes, pulling Li Mei Yun hand and running out from the bowling arena, but this time, one man in black suit followed them tightly at their back.

"Ao Tian, we, why must we run?" Li Mei Yun puzzled, she does not understand

why, when the gunfire sounded scared everyone, he pulled her with him to go and run to outside.

"Ha." His lips curved up, he smirks: "Mei Yun, don't you like to be my girlfriend? Now I give you the opportunity to feel it!"

When they have run from the bowling arena and hiding among the trees in the woods, he pulled Li Mei Yun to hide with him behind tree, faster he takes out his own gun from his suit.

Li Mei Yun takes a glance, she dumbstruck not moving: "Ao, Ao Tian, you... how come you have gun?"

His pair of eyes gleaming dangerously, he heartless pulling Li Mei Yun long hair, makes her face gets closer to his, grinned: "I always forget to tell you that my background is from mafia!"

Mafia?

Simply to say Li Mei Yun not believes with what her ears heard that elegant Yu Ao Tian is someone who comes from mafia background?

No wonder Ming Hui could disappear, no wonder she not even could track that man, could he...

Too scary! Really too scary!

So that she is girlfriend of this dangerous man? But whatever it is, how many business men that have clean background? Moreover he is someone so awesome...

There is footstep sound from behind.

Yu Ao Tian eyes alert, roughly he covered Li Mei Yun's mouth, calmly he leaning at the tree.

The footstep is getting closer, when the man in black suit passing by the tree where Yu Ao Tian hiding, he curved his lips up, at sudden his gun has pointed at that man in black suit's head: "You have followed so far, really not easy for you."

Listened to the voice at his back, the man felt his heart tighten, trembling and put up his hands: "Yu, Yu, Big Boss Yu...I, I just... a subordinate, please... I beg you to let me off."

"Ha." He is sneering he pulled Li Mei Yun to his embrace, very composed: "Who subordinate are you?"

Although he speaks with very gentle voice, but all the people who live in underworld knows very well how scary Yu Ao Tian is? That man is so shocked and his legs are weakened: "I am... I am person who asked by big Boss Lei.

The man speaks sincerely because he knows Yu Ao Tian style of doing things, will the person who falls in his hand still be able to live without torturing? So that the man willing to confess honestly everything, only to keep his life safe from Yu Ao Tian.

But who is Yu Ao Tian will he believes easily, he asked his man to check the accuracy of the man in black suit words.

"Oh, that's right, the other person who comes with you before, had he got all the photos?"

All the sudden that man eyes wider, he really does not know that Yu Ao Tian really has high sensitiveness and good observant after all he has found out that he is not coming alone but come in two? Moreover that man already gone after investigating Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend since that is the person job.

And regarding him, he just someone to gamble with luck whether he able to kill Yu Ao Tian or not, after all the today Yu Ao Tian is someone who walks in two paths black and white, furthermore he is also joining legislative election, he thought Yu Ao Tian won't bring gun but who knows...

Yu Ao Tian is pretending to escape and run only to ensure something, he is purposely to attract that man to this secluded place only to ask him whom subordinate he is, investigating about the enemies which is his true intention.

Finally this man understood the games that Yu Ao Tian played.

This man really admires him! Being able to die in Yu Ao Tian's hand can be said as honor!

"Yes, Big Boss Yu!" Yu Ao Tian's man approved the man in black suit statement.

"Oh?" Yu Ao Tian eyes rolled, smiling and asked: "So, do you think which... girl

is my girlfriend?"

"The actress Li Mei Yun!"

"En." His lips curved up, he really satisfied, slowly he whispered to that man's ear, said: "Wrong..."

That man is dumbstruck, wrong? So that... that girl who was being driven out, is she his real girlfriend? He...Yu Ao Tian is really deserved to be called as underworld emperor. Think to this point, that man is smiling and slowly close his eyes, this time he failed with the mission, but he is so satisfied with Yu Ao Tian!

"Peng!"

From inside the wood there is gunfire sounded, the man shoot by Yu Ao Tian, the blood is flowing from his back head, he is lying on the ground...

"Ah!" Li Mei Yun who stands at beside, scared and covered her head.

Yu Ao Tian puts the gun at his suit again, smiles to her: "Mei Yun, this time you have done greatly, do you want a reward?"

Done greatly? Reward?

Understood! She finally understood!

She would not deny that she was lying to Yao Yao before, it wasn't Yu Ao Tian who looked for her but she was the person who took the initiative to approach Yu Ao Tian.

She stills thought that Yu Ao Tian might still love her so that he accepts her back, but this time... she finally understood, the reason why Yu Ao Tian accepted her was because to protect that little girl and makes her to be bait.

Just as expected he really loves that little girl!

Whenever she thought about this, she can't help herself not to be jealous, but the in front real matters... "Ao ... Ao Tian, what to do? What to do? If that person who named Big boss Lei come to find me, what must I do?"

Yu Ao Tian smiles, crouch and looked at Li Mei Yun who is sitting on the ground: "Don't be afraid Mei Yun, I will ask my men to protect you. This time you can make big announcement to the public, say that you are my girlfriend, finally

your wish is fulfilled. But..." his smiles disappeared, he pinched hard her chin: "If you dare to speak gibberish, I will be the first person to kill you!"

"Understood. I...understood!"

"En, this is good girl." Yu Ao Tian very satisfied, his hands caressing her face, and then another moment...

His face looks scary, he raised his hand, "Pa" he landed a slap to Li Mei Yun's face!

"Ao..." Li Mei Yun hasn't done with her words, this slap from Yu Ao Tian really hard. Her mouth corner is even bleeding.

"Hah, actually I want to cut off your hand, but your hand stills have value!" He sighed, one of his hands is inserted on his pocket's pant, another hand is taking out his phone: "Li Shang, where is Yao Yao?"

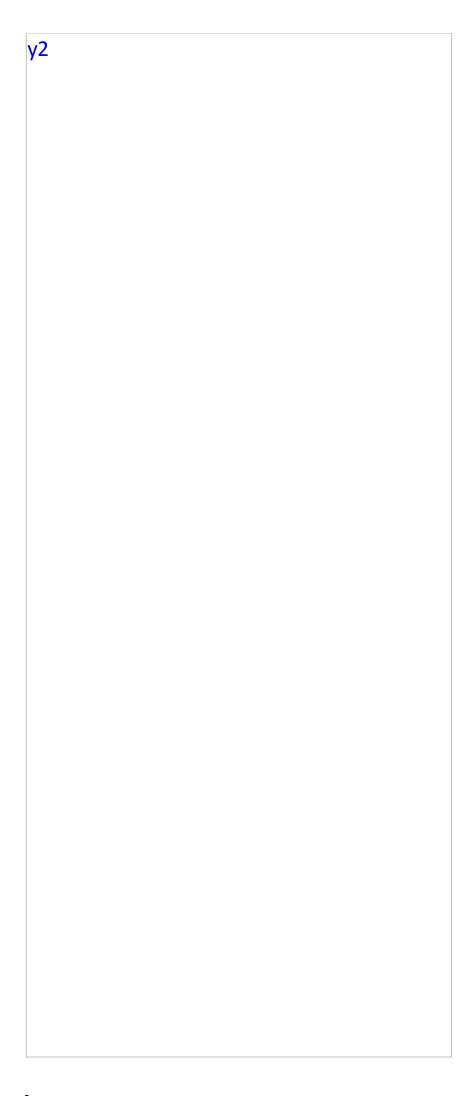
"She is already back to school with her classmate."

After listened to Han Li Shang report, Yu Ao Tian is pissed off, roared: "Who asked you to send her back?"

"It was her begging. Others..." Han Li Shang coldly said: "Ao Tian, I still wanted to advise you giving her up, do you think she has that capability to be your woman? Experienced this time, she might hate you so much, don't you think?"

Yu Ao Tian does not speak, his face dim, and tossing away his mobile phone!

Not to mention, Han Li Shang is the person who knows him the best, after experience this things, he is so sure that based on Yu Ao Tian's character, he won't explain anything to Yao Yao as additional Yu Ao Tian isn't a man that able to coax girl. And he just afraid...



"Breaking news, an actress Li Mei Yun makes an announcement that she is dating the CEO of Berson Group, Yu Ao Tian."

"As it reported, actress Li Mei Yun is finally making publicity about her boyfriend who is CEO of Berson group, Yu Ao Tian."

"The Berson Group CEO for the first time is bringing his girlfriend to attend business meeting, who is actually A's list actress, Li Mei Yun."

Televisions, no matter the electronic or newspapers, all of them are reporting about Yu Ao Tian and Li Mei Yun who are together, no matter where they are going, holding hands, their face are showing happiness expression.

"I really never thought that Li Mei Yun's boyfriend actually is Berson Group CEO. Both of them are so suitable for each other."

"That's right, not to mention Li Mei Yun as actress, she actually is heiress of Li group, so that no matter from status, family background, looks, all just well-match with CEO Yu," most of the fellow classmate are discussing about showbiz and gossips.

While Luo Yao Yao who is sitting at the very corner of the room, sitting and eating far from the television, she pretended as if not hearing anything.

"Yao Yao." Gong Xiao Man who is sitting beside her feels so worry to see her unhappy face.

They are using these opportunities to join the activity which accommodate by the student council in rural area, to take fresh air, first for Yao Yao second to avoid Yu Ao Tian, fortunately the student council agreed to let the member bringing friends so that Yao Yao brought Gong Xiao Man along with her.

"Rest assured, Xiao Man, I am okay." She is forcing herself to smile and keep on eating.

"You still dare to say okay, we have out for three days, I haven't seen you really happy. I asked you, did Yu Ao Tian phone you this few days?"

After that thing happened, Yu Ao Tian has phoned her but she just pretended not to hear it, during that time she just followed the student council to come to this rural area. "Only once."

"Wo Kao! What did Yu Ao Tian mean? Being his lover is too choking, although he does not have heart at least he understood his attitude was too much, after one call didn't answer and he stops calling? Really not good thing!"

To come as no surprise, Yu Ao Tian is this kind of person, he never wanted to beg anyone, he also dislike to coax girl, as additional his impatience character toward women, she didn't answer his phone call, she even running away to rural area, perhaps she really waiting herself to be dumped by him?

"Doesn't this quite good? At least he will take the initiative to dump me, so that we can breach the contract as earlier." Thinking about this, Yao Yao feels little bit happy, she really does not need to be his lover anymore.

"Is it really your thought, Yao Yao? Why I feel... you are not thinking this as one good thing?"

"Xiao Man, you are thinking too much. This matter actually not a clean break from the beginning to the end, because I still owed him money..."

"Is it really only about money matters?" Gong Xiao Man knows Yao Yao well, no matter how, she feels Yao Yao unhappiness not simply because owing money matters.

"Yes. It is really only about money matters."

"Oh, how if I make phone call to my mother and asking her to take out sum of money."

"Don't! This is not good." Yao Yao feels in difficulty grabbing Gong Xiao Man's arm: "Your mother is lodging under another person's roof (her living also relying on other person, in this case GXM's step father), you ask much money because of me, really too burdensome." Gong Xiao Man parent has divorced, she follows her mother, while her mother is remarried to wealthy man, but life is not that smooth.

"You are too underestimated my mother, how to say, my mother is also someone who is business owner too, this small amount of money won't be problem for her. You just think it as borrowing money from me, when you have money you can pay me back double, hehehe."

"Qie, Xiao Man, you really not do deficit business."

"Of course la!" Gong Xiao Man cheers up the atmosphere, Yao Yao finally smiles.

"Everyone, after dinner please gathering at the entrance, tonight we will explore the mountain." Gu Xiao Ming is clapping hand to everyone.

Not long after that, everyone has waited at the entrance doorway.

"Alright, this rural area path is little bit dangerous; every man is responsible for themselves and also protecting six girls." This time the student council member who are joining this activity total are 10 persons, bringing four friends so the total is 14 persons, 8 men and 6 girls. Actually the girls have already their own "protector" most of them.

"Dangerous? Vice president Gu, will there a ghost?" one of the petite girl asked and simply rushed to Qi Lian Ao Yun's side: "Qi Lian sunbae, you must protect me."

"Ghost? Impossible, Qi Lian sunbae, you must protect me too." Three of the girls are taking this as opportunity to surround Qi Lian Ao Yun.

The person who is standing not far, Gong Xiao Man is shrugging her shoulders and rolled her eyes: "Wo Kao, what era today's? Why every girl is so aggressive? This kind of thing must be man who takes initiatives, cih, I really despised all of you simply to say shameless girls! If really I can, I do want to say loudly, you MF... please give me a place!"

Yao Yao feels she wanted to vomit blood after listened to Gong Xiao Man.

At another second, Gong Xiao Man also rushes to Qi Lian Ao Yun sides, she even hooked his arm: "Qi Lian sunbae, I do also need your protection."

Hey, hey, Xiao Man, you are clearly not like Qi Lian sunbae why are you getting involved in group too? Helplessly there is undoubtedly glaring from somewhere not far, that pair of eyes are coldly looking at her.

This glaring is actually coming from Feng Ke Xin.

No need to doubt about her because she is also one of the student council member who joining this activity, for these past few days she also using this kind of eyesight to look at Yao Yao, she really makes other not comfortable.

"Feng Ke Xin junior, I will protect you." Two men are taking initiative to come closer to her sides.

Feng Ke Xin is coldly looking at them: "No need, only the pathetic need protection!" she takes big strides to in front.

"Haha, this is really the typical of Feng Ke Xin Junior characteristic which is so arrogant and act alike queen." Gu Xiao Ming is walking to Yao Yao side, smiles at her.

Indeed, Feng Ke Xin really has the arrogant character a like queen, it seems she is unfriendly. "Vice president Gu these few days are really hard for you."

"Stills okay, actually this is planned by Ao Yun, I am only the person who responsible to be the spokesperson on his behalf, perhaps you also can see that Ao Yun is someone who does not really like talking."

Qi Lian sunbae does not really like to speak? Ckckck... it seems this little bit true, at least when there are lot of people she really rare to see Qi Lian sunbae talking.

All of them 14 people are getting into mountain, the cold wind is blowing; some of girls are scared until pale and get closer to Qi Lian Ao Yun.

Yao Yao who join the second group also scared, ghost won't show up in here, right? Hu... earlier if she knows she won't come.

"The guts are extremely small. This way how can join the student council?"

At the back, it is Feng Ke Xin voice, she turned and asked: "Student Feng, do you not afraid?"

"Afraid? What is good to be afraid of? Only the stupid who believes ghost existence in this world!"

Feng Ke Xin really has severe Queen Syndrome.

Keep moving, Yao Yao is clearly heard the footstep behind her disappeared...

When turned back, where is Feng Ke Xin?

Looking at the darkness in all corners, is Feng Ke Xin being... caught by ghost?

"Hey... big..." when she turned back to her in front, the first group that moving

in front has disappeared too.

Suddenly her head feels empty, the darkness of the night has caught her heart, other than fears she really cannot feel anything. "I... am dead meat." Pair of her leg is trembling, she is trying to call: "Feng, Ke, Xin, student. Feng, Ke, Xin, student..." she does not know whether her loud voice will attract ghost or not?

"What are you calling for, I haven't dead?" a female voice heard.

Yao Yao is filled with hope: "Feng Ke Xin!" she is walking to the voice source, she running into the darkness. From the dim light of the moon her eyes are catching shadow that does not move. "Feng Ke Xin, is it you?"

"Nonsense!"

"Where are you going?" Yao Yao psychologically walking closer to Feng Ke Xin, but she does not know stepping on what suddenly she falling into one big black hole... "Ah~!!!"

"Hey!" fortunately, her wrist is being caught by Feng Ke Xin, so that Yao Yao does not fall too deep.

Her body still in mid air hanging, nervously she looking at her: "Feng, Feng Ke Xin, this... what is it?"

"It seems as hole that set by the hunter to trap the animals."

Did Feng Ke Xin look at this thing? "Trouble you, please help to pull me out from here."

"Pull you? Hah, for what?" from the dim moonlight, Feng Ke Xin mouth is curved up, showing her devilish smiles. "Didn't Qi Lian Ao Yun say that your ability quite strong? Well, must you know that the most basic self-rescue during in outdoor? As estimation it isn't too deep, you won't die if fall down, so let me see how capable you are." She suddenly loosened her hands...

"No!" a screaming sound torn the silent night...

"It is bad, Ao Yun, Luo Yao Yao and Feng Ke Xin are missing." The in front group realizing that there are two persons missing.

Once Qi Lian Ao Yun heard it, his white jade pale face suddenly dims: "Xiao Ming, what kind of vice president you are? How can you just found out Yao Yao

and Feng Ke Xin are missing?"

To be honest, this is the first time for Xiao Ming to witness Qi Lian Ao Yun pissed off, those women who are surrounding him, quite shocked by him.

"Sorry, Sorry Ao Yun, I was talking with Xiao San, so that I didn't notice the last group, thus..."

"Damn!" make fist, he glared all the women who are surrounded him: "All let go!"

Those women are immediately moving aside.

"Xiao Ming, this time you must go with all the men to protect the rest of the females and send them back to the village."

"How is about you?"

"I will go to look for Luo Yao Yao and Feng Ke Xin."

"Ao Yun, won't it be too dangerous if you go alone? How about I..."

"It is okay! I will give a code along the way, if I haven't back in the morning, bring the villagers to come and search me."

At that time, Gong Xiao Man is hurried coming closer: "Qi Lian sunbae, I also want to search for Yao Yao."

"Your mission now is get back to the village immediately, I can go to search her!" he carries a ransel bag and also torch at sudden he just disappeared very fast from everyone eyes...

Darkness inside the big hole, extend the hand won't see anything. Yao Yao is trying her best effort to stand up...

Dead meat, what should to do?

"Hu...hu.." there is wind blowing from the hole, it sounded almost similar to crying sound.

"In this world there is no ghost, there is no ghost, no ghost, no ghost." Yao Yao used both of her hands to cover her ears, her tears just burst out, more she is trying to comfort herself more she recalling the horror movie she ever watched.

Won't work, this is too scary!

Her body is curved round, shivering. In the middle of night the temperature in the mountain can be as low as 0, it not normal chills for body.

She feels useless while wiping her tears, she found out how can herself loves to cry? There is some times when she really does not want to cry but her tears just flowing down, really frustrating.

"Yao Yao! Yao Yao! Feng Ke Xin! Yao Yao..."

His voice? Her eyes is trying to look at slightest light from the moon, at sudden she inhale an air and at one breathe: "Qi Lian sunbae! Is you?"

"Yao Yao, it is me, you keep on talking, I will find you."

"Qi Lian sunbae, I am inside the big hole, can you see me?"

"Still haven't seen you, how about if you are singing, on this way the voice may take longer."

Ah? Singing? What song? Whatever, just sing randomly...

"Just forget about yesterday, now you are in front of me I want to love, please give me a chance..."

After one song is done, but Qi Lian sunbae hasn't found her, it is so clearly she could hear his voice is so near, but how could he take too long to find her? "Qi Lian sunbae, have you seen me?"

"Hehe, I have found you, but... I just want to listen to your singing until it ended."

The gentle and soft voice is coming from her top of head, and also the piercing light. She lifts her head up and looking at Qi Lian Ao Yun smiles, realized, it is Qi Lian sunbae who teasing her!

"Qi Lian sunbae, you are really!"

"Hehe, little foolish don't be angry, I will help you up immediately." Qi Lian sunbae is throwing a rope to the hole: "Grab the rope, I will pull you."

"Uh...my right hand..."

"Are you hurt?" Qi Lian Ao Yun voice is raises louder: "Wait for me." He ties the rope to one big tree, and then he slowly climb down.

His hand that holding torch is light up the hole and also Yao Yao, this place is filled with soil, but it quite clean, she just afraid of the human skeleton or skull, so that she is so afraid to make moves, it seems that she has been watching too much horror movies.

"Crying?" Qi Lian Ao Yun smile is so charming.

She feels embarrassed lowers her head, hurried she uses her hands to wipe her tears dry: "No!"

"No? Well, if no then no. Today you are one of the bravest little foolish." Qi Lian Ao Yun helplessly shaking his head, he gently pointed at her forehead using his finger. "How can you falling down in here?"

"Because... I carelessly falling down." Really don't know, although it was Feng Ke Xin who *not coming to help*, but she really does not blame on Feng Ke Xin, moreover she felt herself so useless.

"Come, circle your hand to my neck, I will carry you go up." Said Qi Lian Ao Yun, he rushed to back her.

But the problem is at least he must be 185cm, how to ask her to climb him? "Qi...Qi Lian sunbae, you are too tall."

Qi Lian Ao Yun bends his body.

"Huh, still too tall..."

"Still tall..."

"Still little bit taller."

This just simply is asking Qi Lian Ao Yun to crouch at the ground.

Cold sweat... actually no need go to that lower. She helplessly climbs at his back, when she touches him, she realized that her in front of chest only separate by thin clothes to his back, she could feel the warm of his back, this kind of feeling really embarrassing.

"Little foolish, are you 150cm something?" Qi Lian Ao Yun is effortless to stand up.

"Of course! If I not reached 150cm, does it mean dwarf?"

Listen to Yao Yao voice, Qi Lian Ao Yun really wants to turn his head to see this little foolish cute expression when talking.

When Qi Lian Ao Yun is step by step climbing up, suddenly the rope breaks off. Both of them are falling back to the ground inside the big hole.

"Yao Yao!" Qi Lian Ao Yun is anxious to pull Yao Yao into his embrace.

"Qi Lian sunbae! Qi Lian sunbae!"

"Are you okay?" His hand is touching her small face.

"You are so protect me, I am absolutely fine. But you..."

How can Qi Lian sunbae treat her very well? Again and again, he always protects her for not getting hurt, most of time she just masks herself, she does not know how to show her gratitude toward him.

"I am okay. It is good if you also okay." Qi Lian Ao Yun sighed, both of his hand are hugging her petite figure.

One second, two seconds...

Their position?

"thump, thump"

Yao Yao heart is running wild, only heaven knows that she feels so awkward now, she is pressed on Qi Lian sunbae's body.

"Qi.. Qi Lian sunbae?"

"En?"

She is awkwardly gulping: "We must..."

"Oh, yeah. This kind of position is little bit weird." Qi Lian Ao Yun hurried loosen up his hand that hugging her.

Yao Yao turned and flip over her body to his beside: "Oh my, the rope is break; it seems we can't go up now."

"That's right, all is because someone is too fat, makes the rope breaks."

She looked at Qi Lian Ao Yun, biting her lips: "Qi Lian sunbae..."

"Alright, I won't tease you. Rest assured, tomorrow morning there will be

people who come to rescue us."

Tomorrow morning? Does it mean...

Must she spend night in her with Qi Lian sunbae?

But being together with nice and kind man like Qi Lian sunbae must be no problem, right?

Yao Yao is look similar to little white rabbit that curved her body and shivering.

While beside her is Qi Lian Ao Yun who is laughing and take off his outer cloth and put it to her body.

Qi Lian Ao Yun only wears thin white shirt, from his shirt she able to see his muscles, never thought someone like Qi Lian Ao Yun could have kind of posture.

Actually from the way he climbed, could be guessed that he is someone doing exercise.

"Qi Lian sunbae, if you give me your cloth how about you?"

"I am a man, so that I able to resist cold."

Relying on the dim light from the torch, his beauty face, at sudden just reminded her with Yu Ao Tian, this is really weird, both of them are far different!

"People say little foolish won't easy get flu, but why you this little foolish catch flu?" He pulled her into his embrace.

"Thump" "Thump"

Her heart beat faster moreover her head is closer to Qi Lian Ao Yun's chest, but... so that she could listen who is making the sound clearly.

Never thought someone who looks so composed alike Qi Lian sunbae could be this nervous? Hehehe, really funny.

"That, Qi Lian sunbae, what is inside your bag?" Yao Yao pointed at ransel bag.

Qi Lian Ao Yun frowned: "Damn, I forget about this bag!" he loosens up Yao Yao, faster he grabbed the bag, opened the bag... "Uh, Little foolish, it seems that God is taking care of you too, see you have sleeping bag."

### 195 - 196

Hi everyone

Before I started this chapters, I would like to remind for those who intend to asking about the total chapters of this project or regarding the character detail, please refer to introduction and character detail in Index section. so that, please stop to keep asking the same questions over and over. I hope the understanding

And also about comments...

I do appreciate the comments either the encouraging or the critics but please comment in "proper" way. I don't mind if some people dislike the projects I picked on, but please no harsh, rude or improper words to put into comment box, I will surely delete it but again, no spamming (doing it repeatedly). If dislike my translation work, you free to leave and I fine since I do understand everyone has their own preferences in reading. If some find an error in my English, please to let me know (in proper way) and I will do the correction for better reading.

Well, Happy Chinese New Year 2016 (Monkey Year ohyeah)
Let's start...

## **Chapter 195 – 196**

Take out the sleeping bag, the warm instantly wrapped around her whole body: "Qi Lian sunbae, you also... together." When she asked him about this, she can feel her face is burn hot as if boil egg. This kind of invitation is no difference as if asking man to climb up to her-own bed really embarrassed.

"Hehe, you sleep. I am okay." Qi Lian Ao Yun is waving his hand, refused her.

But the problem is temperature during the night is getting colder, Qi Lian sunbae might frozen and catch cold, she make a fist, not doing bad thing why afraid ghost knocking door, both of them are having ordinary friendship between man and woman, although both of them are sleeping together it represent nothing, that's right! She certainly looked at him: "I believe you, Qi Lian sunbae!" she knows Qi Lian sunbae might understand with her words.

But...

Qi Lian Ao Yun really wanted to tell this little foolish, some of men may seems harmless but in fact all the men are shared same nature, all of them are actually beast by this way she only attract more dangerous toward herself. His mouth is curved upwards, showing his faint smiles: "I don't even believe myself, little foolish, good night." That soft voice deeply engrossed on her ears, Yao Yao hasn't reacted but suddenly his soft lips have touched her forehead...

Her heart strangely nervous, unexpectedly Qi Lian sunbae can...

She bites her lips, takes a glance toward Qi Lian Ao Yun who is sitting beside her, his expression is looked so composed, there is no strange movement. It seems this kiss on forehead might an ordinary good night kiss? It must be, just like that, she just thinks too much. "En, good night Qi Lian sunbae, if you feel cold, you must wake me up and change the position."

"Hehe." Although it getting colder, he does not willing to let this cute little girl be frozen, moreover to change position with her? Hah, simply to say she is really natural little foolish.

Realizing Yao Yao has slept, Qi Lian Ao Yun white jade cheek suddenly get hot

while his pair of eyes also gleaming with red eyesight, this is hinting of man\*\*

"Damn, this night will absolutely...tormenting!"

\*\*

"Qi Lian sunbae, Luo Yao Yao, are both of you okay?" early in the morning, the people are coming to rescue them out from the big hole.

"It is okay."

"Qi Lian sunbae, you face are looked not too good."

"Yes ah, do you catch a cold?" the women are looked so worries and considerate toward Qi Lian Ao Yun, surrounding him.

"Yao Yao, Yao Yao." Gong Xiao Man is standing beside Yao Yao, smile devilishly asked: "Single man and woman are spending night together. Moreover under this kind of circumstances, what did you do with Qi Lian sunbae?"

"Xiao Man... what are you thinking? Qi Lian sunbae is kind man."

"So nothing is happened?"

"Oh my, are you expecting something happened between me and Qi Lian sunbae?"

"Huh, not interesting."

Seeing Gong Xiao Man disappointed expression, Yao Yao helplessly shaking her head, it seems that Xiao Man not really understand her relationship with Yu Ao Tian.

"Xiao Ming, have you found Feng Ke Xin?" Qi Lian Ao Yun is asking the vice president.

"So far we haven't."

"Well, you are responsible to gather all the females, asking the other men to separately looking for Feng Ke Xin, if within one hour we haven't founded Feng Ke Xin, informed her family." Qi Lian Ao Yun gives an instruction, everyone is moving.

"Feng Ke Xin! Feng Ke Xin!" half hour has passed, but there is no sign of Feng Ke Xin, when Qi Lian Ao Yun almost gives up...

"Qi Lian sunbae, is that you?" not far suddenly there is female voice.

Following the voice, finally he found Feng Ke Xin under one big tree: "Are you hurt?"

Her body is leaning on one of the trunk, she licked her dry lips, she tries hard to point at her right shoulder: "I, it seems...I got bite by snake."

Without further explanation, after hearing what she said, Qi Lian Ao Yun is tearing her cloth collar.

"Hey, Qi Lian sunbae, you..."

"When you got the bite?"

"Perhaps about one hour ago. I was losing the way, so that I sat down under the tree, and then..." When Feng Ke Xin is trying to describe what was going on, her expression is looked obviously so awkward but she faster to turn into Queen mode on, only to conceal her shyness.

After all she is born from wealth family and also "well-breed" young lady, her cloth collar being torn by man who is not familiar somewhat she might feel little bit embarrassed.

"One hour ago... there still a time!" Qi Lian Ao Yun is talking to himself, his pair of eyes are gleaming coldness, lower his head, he sucks the poison from her right shoulder.

"Uh, Qi Lian...sunbae.." an instant, Feng Ke Xin face is burning red, but when she looks at Qi Lian Ao Yun handsome face, she can't help herself to fall into his charm, her heart is beating super fast...

\*\*

Airport.

"Yao Yao, you don't know, when Qi Lian sunbae knew you were missing he looked extremely pissed off." Gong Xiao Man is chatting beside Yao Yao.

"Uh, impossible, but Qi Lian sunbae is looks so..."

"So that, I especially telling you this matter. Just to let you know when gentle man is angry, they will give unforgettable impression."

Seeing Gong Xiao Man very gossipers, Yao Yao really does not know what to say her: "Xiao Man, you are especially telling me this matter, what are you intending?"

"HeHe, I suspect... perhaps Qi Lian sunbae might..."

"Woah! So handsome!"

"An entertainer?" few women who are walking ahead suddenly stopped, their eyes are looking at man who wear suit walking not far from the VIP passage.

He is wearing black spectacles, all his body is radiating cold aura, moreover there are few body guards who following at his back, somewhat it turned the atmosphere of the airport.

"What an entertainer, that is General Manager from Feng Group, Feng Chen Yi!"

Feng Chen Yi?

"Feng Chen Yi!" Gong Xiao Man and Yao Yao are exchanging their look. They are looking at the crowd, just expected...

"Wo Kao, after all we also can meet Feng Chen Yi at here!"

The one who surprised not only Gong Xiao Man, even Yao Yao also surprised, this world... how can it so small.

Feng Chen Yi who is walking through the VIP passage, seeing Yao Yao, he coldly raises his hand to stop the body guards: "I go to greet my friend, you guys just wait me in here."

"Yes, General Manager Feng."

"Hey, hey, you guys see that handsome man is walking toward here."

"So nervous." The women who are stopped actually secretly feel happy inside their heart.

And then, Feng Chen Yi footstep is stopped in front of Yao Yao: "How can you be here?"

"Hey, Feng Chen Yi, long time no see." Gong Xiao Man greeted him.

"Long time no see." His cold eyes are still looking at Yao Yao.

"I am joining the activity held by the student council."

"En? You are the one who always get rejected finally able to enter student council? Should I treat you meal."

What Feng Chen Yi mean? Oh ya, she got rejected several times during her Junior and Senior high school before when she wanted to enter the student council, does he still remember it?

"Hiks hiks...I got rejected again."

"What are you crying for? That place is filled with trash, they begging me to enter I also don't want to, if you are really wanted to join them, I will talk with the president."

"No need, I want to enter there, based on my strength."

"Ha, that place isn't look for strength but only looks at money, that's why I say that place is filled with trash!"

"I don't care with your meal."

"Well, how about you treat me a meal." Said Feng Chen Yi, he insert is hand into his pocket and smiles.

"Why must I treat you a meal?"

"This is what you owed me, do you forget?"

"Chen Yi, if one day I really can enter student council, you must treat me feast, okay?"

"Aiya, really does not know how long should I wait for?"

"What do you mean? Rest assured, you will be able to wait before you death."

All the old memories suddenly flowing inside her brain, Yao Yao is sneering to herself, how can this happen? Every times she meets Feng Chen Yi, if there is no new story and then all the old memories seems to come back, all the conversation between both of them, how can he remembers it so clearly, actually during that time, she never thought Feng Chen Yi would remember whatever she ever told him, but after these years, it is proving that she really wrong...

"You are thinner, what is going on for these days?" suddenly Feng Chen Yi expression changed, perhaps she less than half kg he might feel it! He extended his hand to caress her face...

Yao Yao is moved one step backward, avoid his hand...

At sudden the atmosphere turned so awkward.

Composed! "I am dieting of course get thinner." In front of Feng Chen Yi she really can't relax, because she afraid to show an expression that mustn't be seen by Feng Chen Yi, at last she afraid if not he being hurt then must be she who gets hurt.

"Didn't I ever tell you not need to diet? Be careful anemia." After said, Feng Chen Yi expression changed little bit in hurry: "I have urgent things need to settle. I will talk to you after I back." Politely he nodded to Gong Xiao Man and taking his body guards to leave.

"Am I...Am I mistaken on something?" after Feng Chen Yi left, Gong Xiao Man stroking her head.

"Xiao Man, what do you mean?"

"Uh..." this kind of feeling isn't wrong, not wrong, Gong Xiao Man had known Yao Yao since the Junior high school, that time Gong Xiao Man was in separately with Yao Yao, she was "light bulb (unwanted third guest)" in Feng Chen Yi – Yao Yao relationship, and then she could feel that...

These two persons every time they meet, both of them are so noisy but give kind of sweet feeling, the lively sweetheart, but no matter how she tried she would never entered and understood their world.

Just alike now, what Gong Xiao Man wanted to say, no matter how she really tries could not get into both of their world. Didn't both of them have break up for two years? But why she feels, Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi... seem never broke up? Both of them seems not changed even for little bit.

"Nothing." Gong Xiao Man is giving stiff smile, but her eyes can't help to see at Feng Chen Yi who is almost disappearing, and takes a glance at Yao Yao...

Are both of them still in love? But why don't they reconcile. At least, in Gong

Xiao Man's eyes Feng Chen Yi is more suitable for Yao Yao compare Yu Ao Tian. it seems that within these past two years there are many things happened with Yao Yao, really too many...

\*\*

Jiang Cheng group.

Yu Ao Tian is showing his devilish smile when coming out from the CEO office room, at his back is followed by Long Ye who is holding document, he smiled and said: "Ao Tian, we are succeed to dispose another one of Zeng Kai Rui's man, worth to celebrate it,"

"Just wait to dispose all of them, and then we talk about it." With his expressionless face, bringing Long Ye and Han Li Shang to the elevator.

When the elevator is stopped at 13<sup>th</sup> floor, there are two employees who holding document coming inside, both of them are looking at three persons inside the elevator, perhaps because they are not recognized their status.

At this time, one of employee who is holding the document, talking to his colleagues: "Hey, you know, they said the person who acquire our Jiang Cheng group is Yu Ao Tian from the Berson group, actually he was born from Mafia background when he in Japan."

"Ah? Are you sure?"

"I do also not believe but I have heard the news is true ah. And then, he was only a little scoundrel in the street before."

"Woah, impossible? Two years ago he acquired Berson, and now in very short time he able to put Berson in top place, and then after that he even acquired many companies, also acquire our Jiang Cheng Group, in fact he only a little scoundrel before? Impossible... if he used an illegal method ah?"

"Who knows ah."

Listened to these two employees conversation, suddenly Long Ye and Han Li Shang are fuming in rage.

Both of them are hate people discussing about Yu Ao Tian regarding whatever in Japan, because both of them know, Yu Ao Tian is depending on himself and

also his own strength to reach everything he had today.

The most important Yu Ao Tian background isn't little scoundrel, those rumors are make up by Yu Ao Tian himself, it was fake! Just like how he hides his high IQ, it just similar things!

Long Ye and Han Li Shang have made fist, just in time when both of them are going to give lesson to those employees, Yu Ao Tian has stopped them.

His face is showing smiling expression when looking at those two employees, one at left and one at right, slowly but not in rush he asked: "Are both of you... talking about me?"

"Yu...Yu...CEO Yu?" both of the employees are dumbstruck, everything regarding Yu Ao Tian is low profile so although he appears in Television, but how could they know Yu Ao Tian who has mafia background could attain this noble aura, he also have this elegant gestures?

These two employees are nervously looking at each others, hurried bowing: "Sorry, CEO Yu, really sorry, CEO Yu, this is our mistake who cannot see the high mountain, regarding to what we have talked before, you don't put in heart. Sorry, sorry, sorry."

When the elevator door is opened, Yu Ao Tian smiles elegantly: "It is okay." He shaking his head to gesture no problem, turned his back and left the elevator.

Both of the employees are dumbstruck, never expected Yu Ao Tian is not really that vicious as rumor spread moreover he is looking so magnanimous?

And then, after Yu Ao Tian left not long after that, his expression is changed to be darker, his pair of eyes are gleaming with killing intention, slowly raised his hand, Han Li Shang understood and left him...

"CEO Yu, congratulation to you acquiring this big pie, Jiang Cheng Group. It seems not long after this, Berson may progressing in many areas?" at the time when Yu Ao Tian walked out from Berson Group big building, there are lots of reporters coming to surrounded at in front.

At the front Mo Xue Tong and Long Qi are keep watching, while Long Ye is hurried watching from the back, protecting Yu Ao Tian so that he won't be disturbed by the reporters.

"CEO Yu, in short period do you have any acquiring plan?"

"Yes, CEO Yu, can you reveal little bit for us?"

Facing with question by question given by the reporters, although Yu Ao Tian does not give any answer he only narrowed his eyes and smiles elegantly. Most of the female reporters are mesmerizing with him.

At sudden he raised his hand, his eyes gleaming brightly, his mouth is curved upwards...

Another second...

"Peng!"

"Peng!"

Two times of sounds, there are two persons who jumping from Jiang Cheng building.

"Ah!" stunned for moment, people are breaking into chaos in that sites, the reporters are quickly shifting from Yu Ao Tian to two death bodies, surrounded it.

Yu Ao Tian has been got away and walking into his own car. After two minutes, Han Li Shang also gets into the car.

Yu Ao Tian who is sitting inside the car smiled: "Not bad, Li Shang, as what I have expected, it fit the time."

The car is moving slowly, when passing by those two bodies in the street, Yu Ao Tian not even glances. While those two persons who are ineffable death actually were the two persons who were badmouthing him inside the elevator, that two male employees!

The car has stopped in one of Yu Ao Tian's villa, Yu Ao Tian gets down alone from the car. Pushing to open the big door...

"Ao Tian Ge. I missed you." It is one beautiful lady running to welcome him.

Yu Ao Tian cold eyes swept at her: "Why are you in here?"

"Huh, did you forget Ao Tian Ge? You asking me to wait you in here."

These days he quite busy, but really he just doesn't have any impression. "Just

in time, now I need you!" his eyes gleamed, dragging that woman inside his villa to one of the room...

"Ao Tian Ge, hurt, really hurt..." in soft big bed, a woman is moaning because pain.

Yu Ao Tian isn't care and nonstop faster his pace, the blood stained is proved that woman is still virgin but he looked relentless and expressionless.

Perhaps because the pain the woman slowly moving her body, although she feels hurt but at same time she showed her happiness: "Uh... en... Ao Tian Ge, I really love..."

Yu Ao Tian covered her mouth, his expression is cold: "Don't say any love to me, you are not deserved!" he gets closer to the woman and pressed her down. Perhaps...

All women are only toys for him.

The woman is doubted, not understand why her precious first time isn't deserved for Yu Ao Tian's love? Her tears flowing down, wet her face.

When the woman crying face caught by Yu Ao Tian suddenly he remembered about Luo Yao Yao! "Yao Yao!" Damn! How can he suddenly call that little thing's name!

His face is puzzled, he tries to close his eyes but somewhat his brain filled more with Luo Yao Yao, even deeper.

He is faster his pace. The moaned voice is getting louder... and then... he not even feeling any satisfaction!

For this short period, although he and Li Mei Yun are officially couple and he also have others relationship with different women, but no matter how many times he vents his desires, still he does not gain the satisfaction.

All the women in his eyes are not more than tool for him to vent his desires, to warm his bed, even when doing\*\*, kissing just unnecessary for him. But... only kissing with Yao Yao, strange and weird he could feel that satisfaction he wanted, this is really damn weird!

"Ao Tian Ge, Yao Yao, is she the women that you love?" that woman not

understand looked at him.

Love? Apparently there are many people who asking him same question, but still a same answer, he does not understand... what is called as love!

His face is dimmer, faster he wears his clothes and takes out his mobile phone: "Li Shang, I want to request leave work for three days. These three days you manage the company."

"Ao Tian, you must know that, now the company..."

Without waiting Han Li Shang to finish his words, he directly hung up the phone. He takes up cheque and throwing it to that woman's body.

"Thank you, Ao Tian Ge." The woman is so happily to take the cheque and when she lifts her head up, he has left the villa...

### **197 – 198**

This is one of the most absurd chapters. Yu Ao Tian goes to University...

Yu Ao Tian coaxing Yao Yao, Yu Ao Tian versus Qi Lian Ao Yu...

This chapters also super long, take your time to read it

## **Chapter 197 – 198**

Inside the university class, the students are speaking English when waiting the class to start.

"Yao Yao, since the days we followed the student council activities until now, does Yu Ao Tian still not contacting you?" Gong Xiao Man and Yao Yao are sitting in the first row inside the class.

She shakes her head: "No." it can be counted that she has been so many days not contacting Yu Ao Tian, others than the called that she rejected, he does not call her anymore.

"Cih, he really is fickle man."

Actually this is out from Yao Yao expectation, Yu Ao Tian never had patience to coax girl, moreover both of them do not have feeling for each others, there is no reason for him to come and find her, right? "This is quite good Xiao Man. He and I are having three years contract, if both of us not contacting each others, perhaps when the time is arrived in three years, both of us may have clean break."

"If you really can think in such way, perhaps that may the best thing. Anyway from the first time I saw him, I always think he is not suitable for you."

"Hahahaha."

Bell is ringing. At sudden the class turned to be silent death. A man dressed in white shirt and black pants slowly walking to the class.

He has outstanding posture, his hair blonde and also white skin which really bright. Moreover the most attractive is his pair of blue eyes, unfortunately that man is wearing old-fashioned glasses which masked his good looking features. The only thing that left from him is only his noble aura and also his elegant gestures.

"Hey, Hey, you guys guess is he mix-blood?"

"He seems to be." Some of the students are discussing.

This male teacher seems not to hear and keep on speaking at the stage: "Good morning everyone, I your substitute teacher, you can call me teacher Qi." (Speaking in English)

Teacher Qi...

This teacher seems so gentle! Yao Yao is one of the persons who distant quite closer to the teacher, her eyes are staring at him, somewhat she feels this substitute teacher gives her a sense of familiar feeling.

"Now open your book and turn to page eight." Teacher Qi is mesmerizing; his low and deep voice filled the entire class.

This teacher seems to have special charm. Yao Yao lifts up her head and takes a glance to peek at teacher Qi, and just in this moment their eyes are meeting. Two people are looking each other; Teacher Qi curved upwards his mouth showing his charming smiles, she hurries avoiding his eyesight.

Huh... strange... this teacher somewhat... giving a weird feeling?

"Hey, Yao Yao. Don't you think if this teacher Qi takes off his spectacles perhaps he is one of best looking man in world?" Gong Xiao Man interrupted her thought.

She hurried hinting Gong Xiao Man to stop, afraid the teacher might hear her. Just in this moment...

Teacher Qi face is darker, he pointed at Yao Yao's seat, with stern voice: "You! Come to my office after class."

"Ah?" she raises her head, not really sure she blinking her eyes: "Why?" (Speak in English) she does not make any mistake, why must she being called to office after class?

"Do you think Teacher calling you to come to office needs a reason?" (He said in English)

What teacher is he, really absurd?

Not only Yao Yao who looked dumbstruck but all the students in the class also dumbfounded, they do not know this gentle and soft, elegant teacher could act so domineering?

There is no way to refuse, who asks him as teacher although Yao Yao is not willing still she needs to endure it.

During in the class, Yao Yao does not listen and she keeps her head lowers all the time. That teacher Qi seems to set himself to oppose Yao Yao by standing beside her during teaching in the class...

At sudden, when the class almost ended, one male student is throwing piece of paper to Yao Yao's table. She looked surprised...

Huh, is this for her?

Her eyes is looking at the male student who is throwing that piece of paper, she extending her hand to take it but that piece of paper is taken away by Teacher Qi...

She lifts her head up to look at teacher Qi who standing beside her, but he looked as if nothing happened, passing her and takes the textbook and continue teaching.

But that male student who is throwing that piece of paper is looked so awkward; he only can pray that teacher Qi isn't understand Chinese...

Finally the bell is ringing, teacher Qi is glaring at Yao Yao, she unhappily following at teacher Qi back and heading to teacher office room.

The door is opened, her eyes can see there is single office room with bed, can be rest inside, the office room can be used as office room and resting place.

Teacher Qi is locked his office room door, sitting at his seat: "Why are you staring at me during the class?" (He speaks in English)

Can she tell him that he looked so weird so that she stared at him? "You are teacher, if I don't see you who should I see?" (Yao Yao speaks in English)

"Ahem." Believes that teacher Qi does not think this little girl can be so good in talking, awkward he makes one times cough sound, he hurries to change the topic, he takes out that piece of paper and throw it in his desk: "Read it for me!" (He speaks in English)

Does he cannot read by himself? Does he... not understand Chinese? Yao Yao rolled her eyes, slowly she opens the paper and takes look...

#### Cold sweat!

The contain able to make one heart beat faster and also feel embarrassed so how can she read it for him, so whatever, anyway teacher Qi is not understanding Chinese, just make things up.

"This paper is written teacher Qi is so good in teaching." (Yao Yao speaks in English)

"What?" (He speaks in English) Teacher Qi blue eyes gleaming, his mouth is naturally curved up and smiles deviously.

This kind of smiling... somewhat is so familiar for her? "Yes!" (Yao Yao speaks in English), Yao Yao nodding her head as affirmative gesture.

But teacher Qi face is darker, he raises and waves his hands, pointed at the table, "Do you think that I don't understand Chinese?"

"Ugh..." after listened to his fluent Chinese, simply to say Yao Yao is more than dumbstruck now. This kind of feeling...how can teacher Qi speak fluent Chinese?

While that piece of paper actually is love letter for Yao Yao.

"You understand Chinese, why you asking me to read it for you?"

Seeing Yao Yao expression that showed little bit anger, teacher Qi frowned, when he wanted to open his mouth... but the other second, his throat feels tighten, immediately he backs to his gentle self just alike during the class, speaking in sincere and earnest: "Today's most of the boys are bad, little girl like you who is so naïve by all means don't be easy to believe on boys and dating with them, this will affect your studies, influence your future, you say?"

This point, she agrees, today's boys are indeed bad, Feng Chen Yi, Yu Ao Tian all of them are "good examples" as to be, is it?

"Thank you, Teacher Qi. I understand what should I do." It seems that teacher Qi is someone good, the today's teacher none of them are involving to the student private life? Moreover is talking with this kind of sincere and earnestly way of speaking.

"Well, you understand is good. In order to avoid being harassed by boys, you must come to report every times class ended."

"Ah? Every times class ended must make report?" the problem is there not only her who is being harassed by bad boy, how about the others girl? Does this teacher Qi really have that "kind" heart?

"No need, teacher Qi, this must be so troublesome for you, I can protect myself."

"I asked you to come then you must come! If you are not coming..." when he is speaking half in domineering tone, hurried he changed the topic, gently said: "Aiya, I really do it for sake of your goodness, don't you think so? Rest assured, I won't feel troublesome, alright, alright, you hurry go back to class."

She has not gained herself but she has already being dragged out from the office room by teacher Qi...

"So strange." Puzzled, dumbfounded she stills standing in front of the office room, why at this moment, she sensed the way of teacher Qi speaking is so similar with...Yu Ao Tian? Does she think too much?

For the entire morning, Yao Yao helplessly do as whatever teacher Qi asked her to do, go to report to him at his office room every times the class ended, although she not willing but she also does not have any options, she even having her lunch in his office room, this kind of feeling as if sitting in prison.

"Teacher Qi, afternoon I have no class, I don't need to come, right?"

Teacher Qi rolled his eyes, his back is leaning on his chair: "What? Do you not get used staying at my office room?"

Who will get used? Although her heart is not willing but still she is forcing herself to give him a smile: "HeHe, teacher Qi, this, I have appointment with my friend to go out playing this afternoon."

"You are not allowed to go!" Teacher Qi refused, he even speaks in commending tone: "If you want to get out to play I will bring you or else you must stay at here, if you are tired here is bed, you can sleep in here."

Hah? What is it ah, how could this teacher Qi is so bossy? Doesn't he only English teacher? "Teacher Qi, I am not your child, I just your student, I have my own freedom! Thank you for showing your consideration for this entire morning, I take my leave, good bye." She turned her back...

But suddenly teacher Qi grabbed her wrist.

She feels her wrist is little bit hurt, Yao Yao furrow her brows: "Qi...Teacher Qi, what are you doing, let me go!"

"Stay!" he speaks coldly with domineering tone.

Yao Yao trembling, more she looks at him more she feels strange of this familiar feeling during with him, dumbfounded for moment...

"Let me go!" she swaying her wrist, who knows...

In her panicking mode she hooks man's buttoned, three buttons are opened, and that strong chest is showing.

Awkwardly looking at that man's blue eyes, she suddenly gasped, is teacher Qi angry?

"Sorry, I am sorry... teacher Qi, I will immediately help you to button your shirt." Yao Yao panic, both of her hands are busying to button Teacher Qi's shirt.

More she panic more she could not button it, her hands are trembling, after all she is touching his hard chest, as if she is "doing" him.

Face, red as an apple, eyes is looking down, does not know where to look at.

She is so stupid, she cannot button his shirt.

Huh, something wrong in here, why doesn't Teacher Qi button himself with his own hands?

Her eyes looking at him, finally she realized that pair of eyes is staring at her!

Her heart be frightened, her hands trembling, her eyes are open wide, blinking and moisten, both of her hands grabbed by his big hands.

"You..." what does Teacher Qi want to do?

His good looking face is getting closer to her, she could smell his masculine fragrance, directly in her face, she feels so familiarized.

Her waist is hold by his other hand, the warmness from his palm as if transfer to her body.

"I, I said sorry, I really not do it on purpose..." Yao Yao is busying to give an

explanation, but inside her heart she feels the man expression in front of her having nothing to do with buttons!

Her beautiful features, her innocent eyesight with big eyes, trembling lips, this is so similar with little white rabbit who is standing beside as if asking the man to \*\*

His adam apple is moving, he bent over, he uses his lips to sealed her little mouth that seems wanted to say something.

"Huh." Yao Yao eyes are open bigger, she really can't believe the man in front of her eyes, Qi...what is teacher Qi doing?

His domineering kiss, his tongue is prying to enter mouth and open her teeth, get into inside, when she lets out her soft voice her mouth has take up by him.

Get fiddle, get suck, get tease, get probe.

Dizzy, his kissed has confused her.

Yao Yao wanted to say something, she wanted to push away this man, but all is futile: "Huhuhu." She looked alike cornered animal who is crying.

For long time, teacher Qi showed satisfaction expression and then left her lips...

"You are too much, I will go to university president to file a complaint, you are beast teacher!" Yao Yao is going crazy wanted to escape from that man.

Confronting with her reaction, the man is licking his lips, not in rush, he said: "It is you who seduced me."

"When did I seduce you!"

"So why did you undress me?"

"I have said it, I was careless! I want to meet the president! I want to file a complaint about you! You are rotten bastard! Bastard!" she glared at the man, her small face is fuming in rage.

He hates the most when this little thing is going crazy!

"Bao Bei, being kissed by your man, the president won't care, right?"

Bao Bei? My man?

At sudden her body is stiffen, she lifts her head up stupidly looking at Teacher Qi who is in front of her...

"You..." faster her little hand takes off that old-fashioned spectacle from that man!

Yu Ao Tian!

Although he change his hair color and eyes color, but this face won't be forget by her forever!

An earlier she must guess that teacher Qi is Yu Ao Tian, although he looks gentle and warm in surface, but sometimes he stills exposed his domineering and bossy characters when they are alone. So why she never thought that teacher Qi might same person as Yu Ao Tian?

Is it because Yu Ao Tian won't waste his time to coax her?

"Humph? Bao Bei, seeing me, are you surprised?" Yu Ao Tian smiles happily, he raises his hand to take off his fake hair and also his blue contact lens.

Hah, just expectedly his hair still black, it suit with his charming deep black eyes, owning domineering aura.

"I am so shock but not happy! Yu Ao Tian, do you think this is so funny? How it's feel toying me?" she sneered, she is looking left and right: "Ugh, doesn't Miss Li come together with you? Won't she suddenly rushing into here and give me a slap?"

"You better speak well-manner!" his smiles vanish, his face is darker. He never thought this little thing will give this kind of reaction when meeting him.

"Yu Ao Tian, don't you feel you are especially doing too over? After all, you are like Li Mei Yun so much, you must stay with her why are you coming to provoke me?"

He also wanted to know why he could come to university to search for her!

Yu Ao Tian is not lacking of women, he never lacking of women, he would prefer to spend his time for working, for his best friends, rather than wasting time for woman.

He Yu Ao Tian's woman, want to go shopping, he can just give money, but do

not asking him to accompany them; he Yu Ao Tian's woman, being alone, need him to accompany, don't think about it. As long as he needs woman, he would contact them.

This is his first time to take an initiative to coax little girl, who knows when he meets her, she gives him cold face, this just too irony!

"You are only my lover, whatever I do to you, you must endure it!"

Lover? That's right, she is his lover. Being someone lover how can she has so many complaints, but...

Pair of Yao Yao hands is pressing on her chest: "Yu Ao Tian, lover also is human. I did receive your money, but couldn't I have little self-respect? Do I must being your toy, played by you and then must I smile to you? I have enough, I have endured too much! I am not your pet, I am not your toy!"

"Pa" angry, Yao Yao raised her hand and at that moment her hand is landed on his face, Yu Ao Tian wanted to block her hand but his movement is slower, so that slap still landed on his face!

At that moment, there is no expression from Yu Ao Tian.

Yao Yao knows this time she must not provoke this beast, but...does not know why today she is not afraid of anything.

"The money that I owed you, I will pay you. From this onward, you are you! I am still me!"

Just expectedly she is never learn to be lover, never learn to be patience, never learn to ignore (close one eyes), never learn to welcome with smiling face, even if there is no feeling, playing in this game with this despicable role she really not willing. Moreover...his girlfriend is Li Mei Yun now.

She would not ever forget everything that happened in bowling arena, the smiling face of Li Mei Yun, right, she regretful about Li Mei Yun, but Li Mei Yun one time, second times, third times were setting trap for her, she really could not used her guilty feeling when facing Li Mei Yun.

Besides, she not believes, Yu Ao Tian that smart person did not know anything! She coldly turned her back, walking heading to the office room door. Suddenly Yu Ao Tian stopped her: "Little thing, do you think being Yu Ao Tian, my lover is something you want to be and you won't to be, is it?"

Her ears, she heard his voice as if magic charm, she can't help herself to fall into abyss, she just can feel herself to fall into deeper abyss.

She can feel the hot chest of that man at her back, her body is shivering: "I begging you, let me go."

"Let you go?" meeting her, he didn't know how long he waited for her, he was taking much effort and so hard to search for her within two years, when he hasn't got the answer, how could he let her go? His eyes gleaming dangerous, his curved up his lips, said: "Give your body to me, I let you go."

Her heart is trembling, she almost forget this bossy man hasn't obtain what he wanted, how would he let her go this easily?

"If I agreed to sleep with you, will you really let me go?"

"En."

Her small hands making into fist, she slowly turned back: "Okay, I agree."

Still can't endure, she thought that three years might pass in the blink of eyes, but being Yu Ao Tian's lover is something so difficult, he is too heartless, moreover his swaying moods, accompany to his sides, soon or later she might go crazy. It would be better... just ended this game, so that her life might go easier.

"Little thing, in order to escape from my sides, you are still breaking!" there is no satisfaction expression from Yu Ao Tian, instead, his good looking face is getting darker and dimmer: "Well, I grant your wish!" suddenly he pulled her into his embraces and heading to bed.

Very rough he torn her dresses, there is no slightly gentleness from his lips when kissing her white skin.

"Auw, hurt!" she can feel this man bites her body, she feels hurt and frowning.

"Hurt, later you will feel more hurt! All of this, you seek for it!" his hoarse voice bringing anger tone, there is no warmness in his eyes.

So scary...

This Yu Ao Tian, she never seen him before, simply to say he is not more than beast, why? Why he such angry? No matter how she fights him, at last she still bowing lower her head down to him, right?

Anyway, facing this kind of heartless and domineering man, since the beginning he wanted her, "bowing down head" what this mean?

"Argh!" that rough finger...

She feels in pain until her tears flowing down: "Don't... don't! stop it."

"Don't? Little thing, just now it was you who said wanted to give yourself to me? So... it is my matter how to treat your body!"

She feels hurt all over her body at sudden: "No, stop it, faster stop it!"

Listened to Yao Yao begging, Yu Ao Tian gritting his teeth, there is hatred eyesight in his eyes.

Why do you want to leave, this damn little thing why until now she still wanted to escape from him?

Just in this moment...

"Peng" a sound of office room opened from in front.

Yu Ao Tian eyesight cold, he covers Yao Yao's body with quilt. Turned back with anger expression looking at the door entrance, at the next second, he dumbfounded...

"Qi Lian...sunbae?" what to do? Why at this time suddenly Qi Lian sunbae rushing inside here? Yao Yao hurries wiping her tears, trying to say something but she really does not know what to say.

"I thought which scumbag, so that it is you, board Director Yu." When Qi Lian Ao Yun found out that the person inside the office room is Yu Ao Tian, at sudden he showed sarcasm smiling expression. "What? Board Director Yu feels outside is lacking women so come to university to hunt?"

Qi Lian sunbae? Stop! Don't continue anymore! Yu Ao Tian isn't someone easy to deal with as he thought! She must think a way to stop it.

"Qi Lian sunbae...I..."

"Board Director Yu, from what I see, you seem is raping? Aiya, so now you are hungry and hunting to rape female student?" Qi Lian sunbae smiles, both of his hand are enveloping his chest and slowly walking in front of him: "Or, because you have money, so that you can do whatever you want, but who knows surprisingly today you meet someone not care about your money. Thus, facing this kind of someone not buying at your account, you just directly come to force?"

Why today she feels there something strange between Qi Lian sunbae and Yu Ao Tian? That pair of melancholy eyes suddenly turned be hatred eyesight, this is not simply because this incident.

"You shut up!" suddenly Yu Ao Tian cold voice heard.

"Board Director Yu, you dare to do but afraid being said? Oh yeah, you are Yu Ao Tian who has status and power? Wanted to give me money to shut my mouth or wanted to ask people to kill me, death ends all one's trouble. What else you can do?"

"You!" Yu Ao Tian pulled Qi Lian Ao Yun's shirt collar, at sudden he raises his fist...

When he wanted to hit him, suddenly that fist stop in mid air.

Qi Lian Ao Yun smirks, his smiles bringing sarcasm, there is no slightest fear in him.

At other seconds, Yu Ao Tian loosen up his grabbing from his collar shirt, he turned and left...

Actually what is going on? This is the first time for Yao Yao to see someone dare to provoke and confront Yu Ao Tian directly. Since Yu Ao Tian backed her, she could not see Yu Ao Tian expression, but she could feel... Yu Ao Tian can't do anything toward Qi Lian sunbae, what is actually going on?

1	9	9	F	4

**Chapter 199** 

# Part 1 (One)

"Yao Yao, did he do something to you?" Qi Lian Ao Yun back to his normal self, nervously he rushed to the bed.

She stunned for seconds, stupidly shaking her head: "I am fine. Thank...thank you, Qi Lian sunbae..." how to ask? But... maybe Qi Lian sunbae just not really understanding Yu Ao Tian so that he was talking in that way just now, but Yu Ao Tian reaction was completely different from he used to be, so strange.

"Next time, if that scumbag comes to harass you, I won't let him off!" said Qi Lian Ao Yun, his pair of eyes gleaming dangerously, he pulled Yao Yao to his embrace.

But...

Qi Lian sunbae is mistaken one thing; this time wasn't Yu Ao Tian fault but her fault! It was her who took the initiatives! "Qi Lian sunbae, perhaps you..."

"You don't need to say anything, Yao Yao. You don't need to be afraid of him. He just depends on his status, money and power, soon or later there will be a day he will die in my hand!"

Her heart is shivering, this time she believes, Qi Lian sunbae must be known Yu Ao Tian before, besides that he must have deep hatred toward him, after all he has used "die" this word?

But someone heartless like Yu Ao Tian didn't do anything in front of Qi Lian sunbae after being mocked and insult, this is really not Yu Ao Tian characters?

"Yao Yao, when Qi Lian sunbae looked for me, it really scared me to death, what was happening?" since her dresses torn by Yu Ao Tian, Qi Lian Ao Yun is looking for Gong Xiao Man to bring her new dresses, also asked Gong Xiao Man to bring her strolling in garden to calm down and ease her mind.

```
"Yu Ao Tian came."
```

<sup>&</sup>quot;Ah? Yu Ao Tian came?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Teacher Qi is Yu Ao Tian."

"So that means, he is doing make over to be teacher Qi for getting closer to you?" Gong Xiao Man steps across Yao Yao by holding her wrist, talking to herself: "Humph, counted that he still had heart, at least he knew to come here for finding you."

Ah, she never thought for it. But the most important things that she never thought actually...

"Xiao Man, I feel I am so useless!"

That time when she signed that contract, she thought three years being lover wasn't hard thing to do, but after two months she could not put up with it anymore, finally she choosing to "compromise", but still she can't escape from his hand.

Being lover, she can't undergo herself to be lover, she wanted to leave Yu Ao Tian but could not passing the last obstacle, how can she be such useless?

"Yao Yao?" Gong Xiao Man glancing at Yao Yao who cuddling at herself, she just wanted to speak and comfort her...

Who knows, there is one car that suddenly stopped in front at them.

Before Gong Xiao Man could react...

"Uh!" Yao Yao has already kidnapped by few men in black suit who covered her mouth and forced her to get into the car.

"Hey, what you guys doing? Yao Yao! Yao Yao!" Gong Xiao Man wanted to move to in front to help but the car has been moving fast.

"What to do... what to do? Report to police! Report to police! Cannot, waiting police to come and save perhaps Yao Yao will be... oh yeah, find Yu Ao Tian! Find Yu Ao Tian." she trembling takes out her mobile phone but suddenly remembered that she does not have Yu Ao Tian's phone number, suddenly... her eyes caught a mobile phone in ground...

```
"This is?"
```

Berson Group.

```
"CEO Yu."
```

"CEO Yu." Every employee whoever sees Yu Ao Tian passing, they bowing with respect at him.

His face isn't showing any expression, but his body is radiating cold aura. He goes straightly to the CEO office room by the elevator...

"Ao Tian, didn't you take three days of work leave?" Han Li Shang is just in the middle of doing office work, standing up from his chair.

"My work leave is canceled." He said coldly.

Han Li Shang can feel that Yu Ao Tian is having bad mood, he moves from the CEO's seat.

Yu Ao Tian sits, but nonstop flipping the document in his table.

"Ao Tian? All of those documents had settled by me before."

"Damn!" Suddenly Yu Ao Tian smashed everything in his table.

Han Li Shang wanted to say something, immediately he gulped all his words back, he knows too well Yu Ao Tian's character, when he is in bad mood he could be colder than Han Li Shang, no matter what happened to him, he will keep it inside his heart, he won't share it with anyone. Because of this, he carries many things at his back also the pressured, forever only him who is secretly goes through it alone, everything.

## 199 B



Yao Yao is kidnapped by Yu Ao Tian's enemy...

Li Mei Yun punishment is getting near. This chapter is quite interesting.

## Chapter 199

### Part 2 (Two)

Suddenly the mobile phone is ringing, Yu Ao Tian eyes are looking at his mobile phone display screen, it is Yao Yao phone number, he rejected!

This time his mobile phone is ringing again, he rejected it again.

Not long after that his phone is ringing again, this time is from Long Qi. He not in mood to receive the phone call: "Speak!"

"Thing goes bad, Ao Tian, Yao Yao's friend is calling me, she said Yao Yao is being kidnapped! What to do?"

After he listened, Yu Ao Tian can feel his heart tighten, but another second, slowly he said: "There is none of my business." Heartlessly he hung up the phone called...

Inside the bumping car, both of Yao Yao hands are tied, her eyes and also her mouth covered with cloth.

Actually what these group of men intend to do? Why they kidnap her who does not have any money, she also such useless?

In unfamiliar road, Yao Yao is perfectly composed and calm; she does not cry or making fuss, she just sitting quietly inside the car.

Not long after that, the car is stopped.

Yao Yao in hale an air from her nose, she could smell soil, could it be there are in rural area?

Two men are dragging Yao Yao gets down from car, moving forward, when she passing at one place her nose smells something rusty. This place perhaps is steel mill or an abandoned warehouse?

"Big Boss Lei, the person is here!" a man voice is echoing, now she certain that she must be in abandoned warehouse.

An instant the cover is taking off from her eyes, her eyes catches a man with

long hair who looks at his forties, while behind that man there are lots of subordinates. Is that long hair man called as Big Boss Lei? Do all of them... mafias?

"Little girl, how old are you?" Big boss Lei spoke.

"Uh hu!" she frowned.

Man in black suit beside her tear off the cover that covered her mouth.

"I... I am 19 years old." Yao Yao nervously answered, her eyes takes glance at her surrounding, she wants to run away, but it seems this quite hard to do.

"Only 19 years old?" Big Boss Lei is measuring Yao Yao, his eyes rolled: "Bring that woman here!"

"Yes!" one of the men in black suit leaves, not long after that he dragging woman who being covered.

"Huhuhuhu." That woman looks restless, keep moving. That man uncovered her.

Once Yao Yao takes a look... Li Mei Yun?

"Miss Li, you said she is the real girlfriend of Yu Ao Tian?"

"Yes! She is the person! She is the real girlfriend of Yu Ao Tian, I just his fake girlfriend." Li Mei Yun is panic, nodding her head.

It seems that Big Boss Lei kidnapped her because Yu Ao Tian?

This isn't her first time to face such circumstances, last time she was also being kidnapped by Long Bang for same matters. So that she not even scared anymore.

"Little girl, is Miss Li telling truth? You are Yu Ao Tian's real girlfriend?"

She furrowed her brows; strive up her mouth, she even said: "Who is Yu Ao Tian?"

"You cheap are little girl, stop to tell lies. After all you dare to pretend not knowing about Yu Ao Tian? Big Boss Lei, you don't be tricked by her. She really is the girl who most beloved Yu Ao Tian." Li Mei Yun loses her self control, roaring.

Big Boss Lei rolled his eyes, coldly clapping his hands, one of man in black suit

bowing with respect to him and walked to his beside: "Big Boss Lei, what is your order?"

"Last time when you were in bowling area, didn't you say that beside Yu Ao Tian there was woman? Who was that person?"

Bowling area? Did it means, last time when they were in bowling area, she and Yu Ao Tian had been spying by them? Damn! She even said that she didn't know about Yu Ao Tian...

"Reply to Big Boss Lei, she was that girl!"

Dead meat!

Make a mistake! Make a mistake! She had chosen wrong method. Facing Cong Qing Rui she could deny about knowing Yu Ao Tian, but this Big Boss Lei even had evidence regarding her with Yu Ao Tian in his hands, so that she made wrong moves only to give herself a dead end!

Yao Yao furrows her brows, she looks at Li Mei Yun's side with the corner of her eyes, she can look that Li Mei Yun as if waiting to see bad thing happen to Yao Yao.

Really not understand, how mockery Li Mei Yun now, does she really wish her to die? Didn't she have already won over Yu Ao Tian, but why she must be this bitter to corner her and not let her off?

"Ah, Little girl, uncle is quite courteous toward you, after all you dare to lie with uncle?" Big Boss Lei stroking his grayish hair, while pair of his eyes is looking sharply.

"I really not telling lie! I do really not telling lie!" since it has been wronged, just continue to be wronged. Yao Yao does at all the cost she shaking her head, showing her grievance with teary eyes.

"Humph, my men had seen you together with Yu Ao Tian, are you still saying not telling lies? Guys, you take this little girl and \*\* her!" after said, two men are grabbing Yao Yao's hand at left and right.

"No, don't...hu... I don't, I am not telling lies to you, I really don't know... don't know Yu Ao Tian, I begging you, I begging you to let me off." Yao Yao crying while

kneeling in the ground begging.				

## 200 A

Happy Late Valentine day:3

Today I will post some chapters as my Valentine gift for all of you. I hope you guys like it

Here is the other chapters...

## Part 1 (One)

Big Boss Lei isn't someone muddle-head, even now when Yao Yao is showing up in front of him, he still doubt whether this 19 years old little girl really Yu Ao Tian's woman or not? Who does not know that Yu Ao Tian's women are so \*\*?

"Wait!" said Big Boss Lei.

Suddenly those two men are stopped their movement.

Big Boss Lei is lowering his head; one of his hands is taking out a photo of Yu Ao Tian and showing it to Yao Yao in front.

"Little girl, this photo..."

"Qi Ao!" without waiting for big Boss Lei, she excitedly staring at the photo: "He is Qi Ao, I know him, I know him."

"Qi Ao?" Big Boss Lei rolled his eyes: "This person in photo told you that his name is Qi Ao?"

"Yes. Big Boss Lei, he is the person I like. But... he has already had girlfriend."

Seeing Yao Yao at loss expression, Big Boss Lei smiled: "Hahahaha, he is Yu Ao Tian that I meant, little girl, you are being cheated, he isn't Qi Ao."

Of course she knows that he isn't Qi Ao, but the first lie has been said so that she only can cover it with another lies. "What? Did he lie to me about his name? Why... why he lied to me?"

"Lei! Big Boss Lei, this cheap little girl is acting. You don't be fooled by her." At besides Li Mei Yun senses the situation little bit odd, hurried she speaks.

"Why must I lie to Big Boss Lei? Moreover with Big Boss Lei intelligence how could he not knowing if I telling lie? If not believe, Big Boss Lei can make phone call to Qi Ao, asking him actually who is his girlfriend!"

Once Li Mei Yun listened, she is nervously shaking her head: "There is unnecessary to give Yu Ao Tian phone call, Ao Tian must sides this little girl and

say that I am his girlfriend, Big Boss Lei, you don't be fooled!"

"Enough! This is not market. Men! Take out these two women."

"Yes. Big Boss."

"Big Boss Lei, you don't get fool by this little girl, she is telling lies, she really telling lies." Li Mei Yun goes crazy and roaring but Big Boss Lei does not care about her, asking his few men to bring both of them to the secret room inside the warehouse.

"You little slut, you really have way!" Both of Li Mei Yun hands are tied but she is glaring at Yao Yao from her corner of eyes.

"Miss Li, you over and over again trying to cause me trouble, I have thought that you would not show up in front of me anymore, but the result turned in reverse, you have been reconciled and together with Yu Ao Tian moreover both of your relationship is better than before, it must be you who have way?"

"I can be honest to you Miss Li, I really don't have intention to get involved in your relationship with Yu Ao Tian, even now, I must not be in here!"

"Haahahaha, you must not be showed up in here?" Li Mei Yun sneered: "Do you think Yu Ao Tian really reconcile with me? Do you think everything that I told to Big Boss Lei only to get troubled for you?"

What does she mean? What does Li Mei Yun intend to say?

"This time Yu Ao Tian reconciled with me, really... he only wanted me to be shield for you as his girlfriend!" finally she said things that she is trying to avoid and say it, but Li Mei Yun really feels bitterness in her heart, she really hate this little girl who is in front of her. Just to know before this little girl showing up, she is really a happy person, although their relationship is under secretive conditions, but Yu Ao Tian never mistreating her, every few days she will staying happily in her house with Yu Ao Tian.

#### 200 B



To be honest, I do not really understand why Li Mei Yun choosing to live in such bitterness circumstances, She is coming form wealthy family that not lacking anything, very good and shining career as an actress. There are lots of men who like her, someone better than heartless Yu Ao Tian. She knew Yu Ao Tian has many women but again, she still choosing to stay at his side as "Lover", "Sleep-mates", she even accept the secretive relationship between them. When Yu Ao Tian lets her to make announcement to Media if both of them are having relationship, she is so happy until she knows Yu Ao Tian reason to make her as bait, in order to protect Yao Yao.

She not even detest. Loathe, or blaming Yu Ao Tian but instead thinking that Yao Yao as the third wheel vixen who come to breaking her relationship with Yu Ao Tian into pieces. she puts all the blame on Yao Yao...

### Part 2 (Two)

But in short time, after Yao Yao is showing up, he is getting lesser and lesser staying at that house, including his attitude toward her changed to be cold and hot, that time she had already made guessing Yu Ao Tian might have someone new, besides that his someone new isn't same with his others one night stand women.

"It is you! If not because of you, I might be together with Yu Ao Tian for long time, if not because of you, perhaps I have married with Yu Ao Tian, you are that third wheel who good in pretending to be innocent! Soon or later there is day, Ao Tian will see your true color, soon or later there will be a day, everyone will be able to see you true color."

Seeing Li Mei Yun whose eyes are filled with the hatred and anger in her eyesight, Yao Yao finally able to see clearly someone who truly deep in love with a man when talking with the third wheel, that kind of hate and also the insult speaking tone. Now she can slowly understand Li Mei Yun's feeling. She also understood why she kept on harming her over and over again.

Could it be, the sudden changes of Yu Ao Tian mood was not because Li Mei Yun coming in bowling arena, but more because he realized there were people taking photos?

Could it be, during that time he acted nicely toward Li Mei Yun, only to let those men to have his photos and let them to make report?

Could it be, at sudden he goes to high profile with Li Mei Yun, attending many events with Li Mei Yun, only to let people know that Li Mei Yun is his woman?

Ha, no wonder why Li Mei Yun could sell her out to Big Boss Lei, very reasonable, too reasonable.

"Miss Li, you listen to me, since things have been turned in this way, there is useless to blame at anyone, now if you do as what I tell you, I have way to

guarantee you and I to escape completely, regarding about the other matters, we can talk about it after we out from here, is it okay?" Yao Yao looked at Li Mei Yun with certainty.

She knows this little girl is smarter than an ordinary people, she thinks carefully and asked: "How?"

"Just..." she moves her body and she gets closer to Li Mei Yun's ear and whispering her plan...

Tight iron door is opened and two men in black suit come in: "Big Boss Lei called us to ask both of you, do both of you have calmed down?"

Li Mei Yun and Yao Yao look each other and hurried nodding their head.

## **201** A

What you think after seeing the picture?

## Part 1 (One)

"Very good." Those two men in black suit smiles, one stand at left and right side in front of these women, "Pa" a slap landed: "Well, both of you, who is actually Yu Ao Tian's real woman? Or both of you are real!" "Pa" another slap landed.

```
"No, don't..."

"Pa"

"Stop slapping, I... I say."
```

The person who is slapping Yao Yao stopped.

But the man who is slapping Li Mei Yun does not stop: "How about you? Big star Li."

"I also say, I say. Stop hitting me."

"Very good." Those two men are dragging back both of the women to warehouse.

Seeing Big Boss Lei, who can't help himself for not shaking his head: "Ckckckck, see two beauties are getting hit, both of you are too harsh. Beauties, have both of you think of it?"

Yao Yao nervously glancing at Li Mei Yun, hurried nodding her head: "Big Boss Lei, I said, I will tell you, I am Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend, I beg you to let me off, let me off."

"En? Little girl, do you mean that, before you was telling lie to me?"

"I am sorry, Big Boss Lei, I just want to protect myself. Please you consider of my sincere to admit to you, please let me off!"

"Ha." Big Boss Lei laughed, his eyes looking at Li Mei Yun: "Miss Li, do you still have thing to say?"

"Big Boss Lei, I have told you that she is Yu Ao Tian's real girlfriend, I only his fake girlfriend, what do you want me to say again?"

Li? Mei Yun! She...

Yao Yao's eyes bigger, she looking at Li Mei Yun who is beside her with unbelievable look.

"Miss Li, later I will say that I am Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend, you also must say you are Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend."

"Will it works?"

"There is! Since Big Boss Lei dares to kidnap both of us, he must already check what kind of person Yu Ao Tian is, Miss Li you have followed Yu Ao Tian for such long time, you must know how heartless he is. Since this is the case, let's us tell Big Boss Lei that we know that Yu Ao Tian would not come to rescue us so there is no point for him to kidnap us as chip bargain."

"Heh, no matter how to say Big Boss Lei is mafia, although there is no point to kidnap us, will he let us off easily?"

"I think he won't, but we can help Big Boss Lei, his main purpose is to get Yu Ao Tian, well, we just go as he flows, wait until Yu Ao Tian shows up to rescue us!"

"You? You dare to scheme Ao Tian?"

"Miss Li, this can't be called as scheming Yu Ao Tian, moreover...I have faith on Yu Ao Tian capability."

That is right, she believes as long as they can drag the time until Yu Ao Tian coming, he must have way to rescue them go out from here. She believes, she always believes on that man capability and his strength!

And then...

This still needs Li Mei Yun to be cooperative, or else only based on her words, Big Boss Lei won't wait until Yu Ao Tian to gather his men and coming to save them.

But now Li Mei Yun betrayed her, it was obvious that both of them are agreed to go out together, it clear they can...

Tear is flowing from her eyes, this is the first time she feels whatever Yu Ao Tian tells her finally to be proven!

Just expected the society is complex, being soft-hearted towards others people means being cruel to own-self!

"Well, I understand. Guys, bring this little girl, take "good care" of her, regarding Miss Li, you... can leave!"

"Thank you so much Big Boss Lei." Li Mei Yu smiles brightly, her eyes are staring at Yao Yao who she left, she clearly knows what is waiting in front of Yao Yao, although she can't get Yu Ao Tian, but at same time someone called Luo Yao Yao won't have Yu Ao Tian too!

After half hour...

"Big Boss Lei, Yu Ao Tian is coming." One of his Xiao Di hurried make a report.

"Does he do as what I asked?"

"In reply to Big Boss, I have checked outside the warehouse, indeed there is no Yu Ao Tian's men, moreover there are only five men with one woman he brings five subordinates with him, he is also do as what you asked, all of them are tied in rope."

## **201** B

1111111

**Chapter 201** 

# **Part 2 (Tw0)**

"Very good!" Big Boss Lei is smiling satisfied, he knows very well Yu Ao Tian strength, if he isn't being tied still does not know what the last result.

"Bring them here."

"Yes."

Not long after that, seeing Yu Ao Tian, Mo Xue Tong and others men tied up and brought to warehouse.

As Big Boss Lei seen, he can't help himself to smile, this time Yu Ao Tian is tied what could he do? "Aiya, The legendary underworld emperor from Japan as rumor, the leader of Yu Long group, Yu Ao Tian, the cruelest, killing without blinking, today finally I have chanced to meet, very resemble to the television which I watched, gentle, very handsome, I do really doubt about the rumor spread whether it is true or false? Or else the person who called as Yu Ao Tian might be someone else?"

Listened to Big Boss Lei provocation words, elegantly Yu Ao Tian smiles: "Haha, Big Boss Lei I don't know who is that someone you said as cruel person, but in front of you the person named Yu Ao Tian is only a decent businessman."

When he said this, he is radiating a noble and also elegant aura, there is no such aura of someone who has underworld background, the harsh and rude, totally different. No wonder Big Boss Lei can has suspicious feeling toward Yu Ao Tian in front of him.

"Oh? Did Qing Rui kill by you?" one of Big Boss Lei's hand is leaning at chair back, he grinned at him.

Yu Ao Tian is rolled his eyes, smiles deviously: "Does today Big Boss Lei aiming to take revenge?"

"To let you know, Qing Rui is my sworn brother, you killed him, me as his big brother can't let it off easily. Due to the rules, paid with money, or paid with... lives! Big Boss Yu, you choose!" "Of course paid with money, Big Boss Lei, how much money do you want?"

After listened to Yu Ao Tian answered, Big Boss Lei really doubt about the rumor that spread about Yu Ao Tian, are they boasting too much? He thought Yu Ao Tian might fight back toward him but never thought Yu Ao Tian would give such satisfaction answer? He is really someone afraid of death! "Very simple, I want 20 percent shares of your Berson Group!"

"Hahahaha!"

"Yu Ao Tian, what are you laughing for?"

He stopped laughing, but tiled his head: "Did Cong Qing Rui worth that much? Xue Tong, you count how much money worth for Cong Qing Rui."

"Chi Long group is ranked fourth in China, their Big Boss's live is worth 1.45 million."

"Oh? 1.45 million." Yu Ao Tian hesitated, coldly looked at Big Boss Lei: "I am Yu Ao Tian is not someone stingy, Big Boss Lei, I give you 200 million! How is it?"

"Humph! Yu Ao Tian, you think I am beggar? Who does not know that your Berson Group can earn few million in one day, you too underestimated me?" Big Boss Lei pissed off standing up from his chair: "You take look at this place is filled with whose men. You MF only take few men with you and also one woman, moreover all of them are tied, if I were you, I will be obedient."

"En?" Yu Ao Tian is curiously looking at the surrounding, at least inside the ware house there are hundred men. "Aiya, the situation is really not good for me, but what to do? Tong Xue?" He smiles deviously looking at his besides.

As seen, Mo Xue Tong is narrowed her eyes, faster she used the little knife that inserted in her ring, untied all the ropes and also cut off the rope that tied on Yu Ao Tian's body.

Without waiting for those men to react...

"Do not move!" Yu Ao Tian speaks calmly, somewhat there is gun in his hand, moreover that gun is precisely pointed at Big Boss Lei.

Big Boss lei?

Big Boss Lei does not know how awesome the woman besides Yu Ao Tian, he

thought she is only an ordinary woman. "Ha, Big Boss Yu, they said you are going for legislative election? You even bring gun with you?"

"En?" Yu Ao Tian is smiling and his eyes sweeping at gun in his hand: "What you want to say, Big Boss Lei."

"Perhaps there are not many people know about you during in Japan, but we are those who live in this world, could I not clear? If I spill everything about you, you think...you still have right to join the legislative election?"

"Oh, I have guessed you will say that, Big Boss Lei, you know, Cong Qing Rui that old thing, before he death he tried to threaten me in that way. So that...I had discard his Chi Long group. Now the Qing Hu group also known about my past, so that I only..." after said, he smiled devilishly.

"Yu Ao Tian, are you real stupid or pretend to be stupid? The disappearing of Chi Long group, you think the government didn't do the investigation about it? Now you are trying to discard my Qing Hu group, although the government sides are stupid, won't they don't know it is you who do it?"

## 202 A

## Part 1 (One)

"Aiya, that is right. What should do?" Yu Ao Tian pretending to be scared and shrugged his shoulders, but his deep eyes rolled, he smile eloquent and walking slowly toward Big Boss Lei: "As for me, you Big Boss Lei is so good to me, you even help me to think about the escape route."

"What do you mean?" Big Boss Lei face is darker, coldly staring at him.

The gun has pointed at Big Boss Lei's head, his expression is dimmer, his face is get closer to Big Boss Lei's ear, whispered, not in rush: "Two groups are fighting for kidnapping me, the result both of group is killing each others. If I said like that, the government sides might pity on me, don't you think so?"

"You MF!" after listened, Big Boss Lei is staring Yu Ao Tian with killing eyesight, no wonder he is so willing to be tied and also only brought five men with him, he takes few men, just as expected he had thought about the escaping: "Yu Ao Tian, you are too death-defying!"

"Ha, it is you who is not too death-defying!" after said...

"Peng peng peng" suddenly there is shooting sound. Big Boss Lei heart is tighten.

Yu Ao Tian is pretending to be scared: "Aiya, the other group is coming to kidnap me. Later we will watch killing scenes?"

"Big Boss Lei! What to do?" The Xiao Di who is standing in warehouse is waiting for Big Boss Lei command.

"Peng"

This time, Yu Ao Tian has let one shoot: "I have said everyone does not make any move, you guys even dare to speak! See, Big Boss Lei gets a shoot?"

"Yu Ao Tian, you..." Big Boss Lei expression show in pain while looking at his left shoulder, he has lived until this long, this is for his first time to meet

someone alike Yu Ao Tian who is so unpredictable, moreover his swaying mood character, simply to say really can't be read, really not knowing what he can do for the next.

Yu Ao Tian eyes turned to be cold, suddenly he pulled Big Boss Lei's long hair: "Where's my woman?"

"En?" Big Boss Lei rolled his eyes, seeing his fluster expression, suddenly he grinned and laughing: "HaHaHa, Yu Ao Tian you still think of your woman? I thought you can be so heartless not even care about your woman!"

"Cut off your nonsense!"

"Peng" another shoot, this time the shoot directly to Big Boss Lei's leg.

He growl in pain, but his face still showing sinister expression: "All of us are living in underworld, you must know, if the one's close to you being caught by your enemy, what kind of end it would be?"

In underworld, there are thousand years rules that never changed, once your beloved and someone precious to you being caught by the enemy, the male will be killed and the female will be \*\*. Although you wanted to rescue them, you only can get their corpse.

Today's Big Boss and whomever that mingle in underworld, most of their lover or their wife perhaps had been\*\* before, even Big Boss Lei's wife had experienced it before.

Yu Ao Tian because he too understand with this kind of world rules, so that he always walking alone in this path, even one day if he really can meet woman that able to move his heart, he must hide her deep so that no ones can find her.

And then, in order to change that destiny and fate, he has to hold the legal authority, to control everyone under his feet, taking a control of the world. Political power... it is the only way and also the most enormous he wants to achieve for now!

There is only shooting sound hear, his forehead vein has showed. At next minutes, his pairs of deep eyes are gloomy. There is only shooting sound heard from the back of warehouse room. When the bullet has been used up all, Big Boss Lei has been bathing in his own blood, but Yu Ao Tian is still pulled the



7	A	7	D
Z	U	Z	D

# Part 2 (Two)

"Big Boss Lei!" from inside the warehouse the Xiao Di is staring with big eyes, all of them are pointing their gun toward Yu Ao Tian.

"Ao Tian, be careful!" Mo Xue Tong can sense something not right with Yu Ao Tian attitude today, hurried she throwing another gun that filled with bullet and give it to him, and then she rushed in front of those Xiao Di, and facing them.

When all eyes are looking at Yu Ao Tian, he stills standing there without any movement.

Mo Xue Tong and others four men are clearly not match for this group of enemies: "Ao Tian!"

"Damn!" finally Yu Ao Tian gains himself back, faster he rushed into Mo Xue Tong sides, "pengpengpeng" three times shooting sound, he has solved those few men who fight Mo Xue Tong.

"Are you okay?" his deep eyes are looking at Mo Xue Tong's wrist that still bleeding.

She ripped her clothes and used it to stop the bleeding of her wound, quickly she shakes her head: "I am okay!"

Just in this time, Han Li Shang has brought men from Yu Long group into the warehouse, all the Qing Hu group men are obediently giving up.

An instant, the chaos changed to be deathly silent, Long Ye looked at Mo Xue Tong and rushed to her side: "You hurt?" he rushed alike an arrow, he nervously hold her hand.

"I, I am okay." It so obvious, when Long Ye touched Mo Xue Tong, she feels fear, she over reacted by swaying his hand.

"Ao Tian, how is to solve Qing Hu's men?" Han Li Shang walking to his in front, coldly asked.

"Killed all!" when Yu Ao Tian spilled out this two words, his eyes is filled with anger.

This attitude is simply different with Yu Ao Tian calm and compose attitude in the past, Han Li Shang wanted to know what actually happened before.

"That little girl, she seems... she seems to be\*\*." Mo Xue Tong softly said.

As seen, Yu Ao Tian's face seems to sink deeper. He makes fist of his hand and "creak" sound heard.

Listened to this, Long Qi expression changed to be so anxious.

"Yu, Big Boss Yu, Sister... sister in law is inside the warehouse secret room." One of the Xiao Di is trembling when reporting.

Yu Ao Tian is biting hard his lips, faster he rushing inside the secret room.

On the time when the door being opened, inside a naked woman is lying down, her body is filled with nasty hickeys, there are also blood stain left. When those people, whoever see the scene can't help to take deep breathe.

#### 203 A



I hope that I didn't hang you guys too long.

Some of you are leaving many cute comments before. I do really appreciate all the supports and critics ah~

You guys still awesome fellow readers, I still trying my best and thank you for every encouragement ^-^

I know some of you are detested Li Mei Yun, dislikes her very much and so do I See, I have mentioned that Li Mei Yun would get worst punishment, worst than death penalty. Yes, some of you are guessing right, the person who is raped indeed Li Mei Yun. She not even raped by one Xiao Di of Big Boss Lei but group of man. Her circumstances perhaps worsen that a prostitute who serving few men at one day. This is her ending, she isn't Yu Ao Tian's woman anymore, she loses her bright career as star and yeah... she has nothing and won't be able to harm Yao Yao anymore.

### Part 1 (One)

But...

Once Yu Ao Tian takes a glance he knows that person isn't Yao Yao!

"Mei Yun, Mei Yun!"

"Ao Tian? hu... Ao Tian!" She cries so miserable, her face is wet with her tears, her trembling body is grabbing Yu Ao Tian's hand: "Ao Tian, they...they are raping me!"

"I know. Where is Yao Yao? Where is she?"

Her tears are still flowing down, Li Mei Yun with unbelievable expression looking at his face: "Ao Tian, that cheap slut is intending to sell you out, after all you are still asking about her?"

"Now I am asking you! Where is Luo Yao Yao? Do you understand?!" Yu Ao Tian is extremely pissed off, one of his hand suddenly grabbing Li Mei Yun's neck, if not because her scheming, Luo Yao Yao won't be caught; now he even have heart to kill Li Mei Yun immediately!

"Ao Tian, you calm down!" beside him is Long Ye who is hurried to stop him, after all only Li Mei Yun who knows whereabouts Luo Yao Yao.

He is patting Yu Ao Tian shoulders, Yu Ao Tian is impatiently swaying away his hand that grabbing Li Mei Yun's neck, standing aside.

"Miss Li, if you know whereabouts Luo Yao Yao, please let us knows about her." Long Ye gently said, he even takes off his outer suit and put it on to Li Mei Yun's body.

At that moment she is gulped, Li Mei Yun pair of eyes is filled with murky gleam, her face is showing mocking to herself expression: "She, gone...safe and soundly... she had gone out!"

"Thanks to Big Boss Lei." Li Mei Yun smiling sweetly, her sharp eyes is looking

at Yao Yao as if it able to tear her apart, she is very clear what is heading toward Yao Yao, and then, although she won't get Yu Ao Tian, Luo Yao Yao is also won't ever be with Yu Ao Tian!

But at the time she almost leaving, Yao Yao expression turned to be cold: "Li Mei Yun, I never thought that you are someone who not value loyalty!"

"What are you talking about? I don't understand."

"Heh, don't understand? We are agreed each other, I would help you to take the blame admitting me as Yu Ao Tian's woman, you will help me to beg to Big Boss Lei, but you, just going away as if not knowing me? Li Mei Yun, you have already won over Qi Ao, moreover he loves you but not me, but why are you so bother to harm me?"

"Big Boss Lei, Big Boss Lei, I don't know what this little girl said. Please you believe on me, the person that Yu Ao Tian loves is her!" Li Mei Yun indeed does not know that Yao Yao would do something like this, after all what they have talked before it wasn't this.

"Qi Ao loves me? Ha, he loves me, why doesn't he tell me his real name? He loves me, but he is lovely-dovey with you, do you think big Boss Lei is stupid?"

"I have said before, that is because Yu Ao Tian used me as shield to protect you."

"Oh? Is it? At last is you who being the shield to protect me or me who is being used to protect you?" Luo Yao Yao frowned, quickly she looking at Big Boss Lei: "Big Boss Lei, you guys say what type of women that person who name Yu Ao Tian likes, all of you must be more understand compare to me."

"Enough! I really lazy to hear both of you women playing this kind of game, guys! Take away these two persons!"

"Yes."

"Wait! Big Boss Lei, are you really sure wanted to hold me in here?" Yao Yao looked so serious when talking with Big Boss Lei.

"Heh, Little girl, are you threatening me?"

"No, I just have words to tell you Big Boss Lei... can I?"

"Speak!"

Yao Yao eyes rolled and quickly she walked toward Big Boss Lei side, whispering something in his ear.

After that, Big Boss Lei face expression changed, at another moment, he rolled his eyes: "Little girl, you are useless to say this to me, as long as you can give me an evidence that you are not Yu Ao Tian's woman, I will let you go, how about it?"

"Of course I can!" Luo Yao Yao smiled confidently both of her hands enveloped her in front chest, with low voice she said: "I am still virgin." Things have already at this point so she does not care of anything more, it can be seen that in order to save her life, she could do anything. "Not believe, you can check it. But...I do not hope all of you still make other difficulty thing to me!"

After Big Boss Lei heard, hurried he asked his people to do checking to Yao Yao, moreover he ordered his subordinates not to touch Yao Yao. Not long after that the result is out, as expectedly it same as what she said.

"Hahahahaha, alright, little girl, you can go."

"Thank you Big Boss Lei."

"You should not let her go, Big Boss Lei, she really is Yu Ao Tian's woman!" until this moment, Li Mei Yun still not reluctant to spare Yao Yao.

Big Boss Lei quickly walking in front of her, he strangles her neck: "You MF bitch, how could Yu Ao Tian's woman still a virgin? After all you are still dared to tell me that little girl is Yu Ao Tian's woman? Do you think I am three years kid? For my life time I do hate those who are not value loyalty. Xiong Di Men (It means My brothers, usually using by the mafia, close friends or humble term used by men in public speech), aren't all of you always admire Li Mei Yun, today Me, Big Brother give her to all of you, "used as you pleasant"!"

"No..." at the last, Li Mei Yun really not understanding, how could until now Luo Yao Yao still virgin?

203	В	

# Part 2 (Two)

"To be honest, when I heard what Li Mei Yun said about Xiao Meng Li, my first reaction is... as if all of us are being toyed by Xiao Meng Li?" inside the sport car, Long Ye speaking with helplessly tone. He believes everyone also feel same as him.

If not because to save Luo Yao Yao, Yu Ao Tian would not put himself in danger, if not because of he thought Luo Yao Yao perhaps being\*\* he would not put Mo Xue Tong in danger and even let her to get hurt, as the result everyone is busy for nothing, at last Luo Yao Yao even freely and get out by herself, whenever think about it they really have superfluous feeling about it.

"Ha, I mustn't come to save her." Yu Ao Tian who keeps on silent finally able to show his smiling face. Actually he still angry to Yao Yao, he really does not want to think that little thing live or death, but somewhat he cannot to do so, as last... this is the result.

"But, you guys make a guess what did Xiao Meng Li told Big Boss Lei, that even made Big Boss Lei not dare to touch her even for little bit?" Long Ye looked at that iceberg Han Li Shang, waiting him to give he an answer.

One by one of them are shaking head. It seems only Yao Yao herself could give the answer.

Gentle eyesight from pair of eyes beside Yu Ao Tian, his hand is hooked at his shoulder: "Ao Tian, this time it seems you... finally found out a reliable woman."

"Ao Tian, that cheap slut is wanting to sell you out, she wanted to sell you, she wanted me to dragging the time until you come, in this way both of us could be saved, but if we do it, it means putting you in danger, I don't agree her way, so that I get into this circumstances!"

Li Mei Yun keeps on blaming Yao Yao, but she does not know Yu Ao Tian cares for. He wants his woman can fight, stand for herself and find her way to live.

He is a man, he really understands that as man he has responsible, but mafia world is too dark, too muddy and too dirty, if his woman is not able to take care

herself only can be blackmail object for him, by that time although he is Da Luo Shen Xian (High God Level) he unable to put his woman first and rescue her, at any rate only could expect this woman to keep herself save for short time. At least Yao Yao had made it! Of course, the most scary thing is that she even able to escape safe and soundly by herself.

"Yao Yao!" suddenly, Long Qi is so excited pointing outside the car window.

All of them are quickly to look at there, as seen there is petite figure who is sitting at the paddy field beside.

"Stop the car! Faster stop the car." Long Qi hurried said, the car is stopped at sudden. He is faster to open the car door, get down and almost rushing toward her.

"What do you want to do?" Long Ye is stopped his younger brother by grabbing his wrist.

"Go to Yao Yao."

What circumstances are we in? Long Ye frowned, at the moment he looked at Yu Ao Tian who is beside him: "This matter is not your turned to look for her, you better sit down inside the car obediently!"

"Qie!" Long Qi unhappily rolled his eyes...

## 204 A



I have missed Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao sweet moment. This couple will get along well if they can understand each others, be more transparent to each others. Aiya~ I have put too much expectation on this couple

### Part 1 (One)

Beside the golden of paddy field, the wind is blowing Yao Yao's long hair, at the same time her hand is swaying one of the grain grass while her tears had already dried.

Since she is leaving from that warehouse she is crying, crying, and just now she finally able to control herself and let go that grief feeling.

And then the most ridiculous is, she does not even know the reason for crying, did she cry because of Li Mei Yun? Or because of herself? Anyway no matter because of what, she is very certain that she has already changed because of Yu Ao Tian.

But why, when she was trying to be heartless to Li Mei Yun why her heart could feel so in pain.

Why! Why things could be turned like this, couldn't everyone just get along well?

She raises her hand, she uses her strength to mash the grass, make fist from her hand.

At this moment, Yu Ao Tian is quietly glready sitting beside her...

When she turned her head, her eyes caught one good looking face, Yao Yao turns to look faraway, faintly said: "Li Mei Yun... how is she?"

"She is okay, I came in time and had already saved her. I have called men to calm her down."

After heard this, Yu Ao Tian is clearly heard Yao Yao takes long breathe. It seems that his decision to telling lie indeed right.

But the most ridicule thing is, he always wanted to show this darkness of the society sides, but now, in this moment he even against his own will, creating one fake world for her!

"Actually, this time, it was me who entrapping Li Mei Yun."

"I know."

"You know?" Yao Yao, her expression is looked perplex, staring at him: "So, why you... why are you saying nothing? Not scold me? Don't you understand what I am saying, it is me who entrapped her. I have entrapped your woman, moreover... I am only your lover!"

"So What?"

So what? Yu Ao Tian how could you so relax? "If you are not love Li Mei Yun, why are you still together with her? Why?" Yao Yao makes fist and hit to Yu Ao Tian's chest.

At sudden, he stopped her by hold her wrist: "The reason I still with her, don't you know it?"

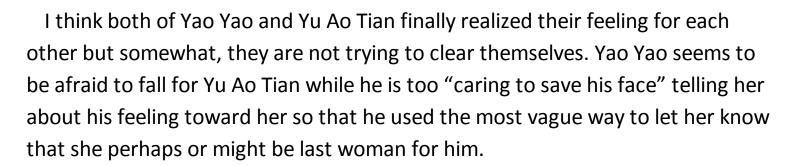
Because she knew it, so... so that she does not want to face it, this is too cruel for Li Mei Yun. "Yu Ao Tian, I can protect myself well. So that..."

"So that?" his pair of deep black eyes is gleaming darkness.

She is used all the strength to bit her lip: "So that, you are no need to find any scapegoat in order to protect me!"

"So you mean that I am doing more than it require (being superfluous)?"

#### 204 B



While Yao Yao is too slow to understand Yu Ao Tian meaning furthermore she even thought that perhaps Yu Ao Tian "paused" to seek new girlfriend for short time due to this incident.

### Part 2 (Two)

Lift her head up, her eyes looking at his cold pair eyes, Yu Ao Tian must be angry, right?

Actually must she say her apology and also thank you toward him?

During at the bowling arena, also during in the teacher's office room, all were because she too headstrong, so that she accused him wrongly. But...

She would rather not know the truth, would rather keep on hating Yu Ao Tian! Because she is already accepting her lowly status as lover, moreover she even has accepted and get used to heartless Yu Ao Tian. So that she does not want to break all these things. But...

This kind of manner seems to be vaguely changed, so... it is?

I can't! I mustn't! Yu Ao Tian is the man that she most not wanted to use her feeling to deal with!

"Yu Ao Tian, if later... you really meet the girl that you love, you just dump me, okay? I really do not want to be... like this." her tears flowing down, she has sickened enough with her status as lover, besides she never thought to be the real, and also never dreamt to be the real.

At sudden, she obviously can feel that Yu Ao Tian is loosen up his grabbing to her wrist, she bites her lips, no sound, but at same time she does not dare to look at Yu Ao Tian's face expression.

Because she afraid, she afraid herself will see something that she does not expect to see.

"Little thing, within the three years contract ended, I will never let you go, although I have woman that I like, I will make you stay beside me!"

As she heard, that voice sounded alike demon voice, she unhappily frowning, does not understand why Yu Ao Tian wanting to torment her in this way? Is this

giving him benefit?

"But, at least within this short time I won't meet any woman I like."

Faster she lifts her head up, looking at Yu Ao Tian smiling eyes, her face is filled with many emotions, within this short time? Three months? Half year? Or one year? No matter what it is, at least this, "So called" within short time she really does not need to live in sorrow. "Thank...uh."

Without waiting Yao Yao to react, his lips has already touched her lips, she gulped all her words.

This is because Yu Ao Tian really does not want to hear she thanked him this kind of words! He also does not wanted her to be happy because of this matter, showing her smiling face.

Perhaps, she does not say that words, "If later you meet the woman that you love, just dump me, okay?" perhaps he would answer her that he won't want to find any woman again!

Simply to say this word is too mocking for him!

#### 205 A

Long Ye and Mo Xue Tong
Han Li Shang and Gong Xiao Man
Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao
Long Qi and ... (make your guess)

These three men really useless when facing and dealing with love. Long Ye is warm person, cheerful and also good talker but somehow he could not melt Mo Xue Tong thousand years ice heart.

Han Li Shang is too cold and does not want to trouble himself with woman so that he is the one cleanest among them in term of "Womanizer" While Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao are really most frustrating couple, no need to mention, from the beginning until this far, they have "separated" few times and "reconciled" few times, so tiring and exhausting

Again, in this chapter finally all of you will find out what Yao Yao said to Big Boss Lei before she leaving. Thank you for being patiently to wait for the next chapter. I heart you guys, the feeling of waiting moreover when the story is hanging :p

## Part 1 (One)

There are countless women beside him that hardly to be dumped, but in front of his eyes this little girl is countless time wanted to flee and escape from his side. More he is trying to hold her tight more she uses all her strength to escape from him, thereby, slowly by slowly, slowly, it turned become he is struggling to chase after her while she is struggling to escape from him. This kind of feeling...

This is really called as damn frustrating!

"Huh, let's we leave the car for Yu Ao Tian, and moving other car, perhaps... he still has something to settle?" Long Ye is staring at the paddle field scenery, smiling mischief.

"I don't believe Ao Tian will have "wild battle" in this outdoor place, besides the flat chest is still virgin, as seen there is no any movement of Ao Tian that showed he might do?"

"There is not of your business! Get down!" Long Ye is shouting at his younger brother.

Long Qi unhappily gets down from the car, Han Li Shang and Mo Tong Xue also followed to get down from car.

Long Ye who is walking at the in front, purposely to get slower his footstep, walking to Mo Xue Tong besides: "Your wound..."

"I can deal it by myself." Mo Xue Tong not even gives Long Ye any chances to considerate herself, she even faster her footstep to in front.

"Why can you share little bit of your warmness toward Ao Tian for me? Or give me a chance to taking care of you." Seeing at Mo Xue Tong back which is slowly going further, Long Ye melancholic eyes filled with bereavement... "Bao Bei, you endure it little bit."

Anyone who listened to this kind of conversation, whoever that does not know might thought both of them...

But on surface it is!

Yu Ao Tian is applying medicine on Yao Yao.

She was slapped by Big Boss Lei subordinates few times, so her little face is swollen.

"Bao Bei, what is your secret that you told Big Boss Lei?"

"Secret?" Yao Yao is enduring the hurt of her face, carefully to recall all the things happened inside the warehouse.

"Oh, do you mean words that I said to Big Boss Lei before I left that place?"

Suddenly the hand which is applying medicine stopped, Yu Ao Tian is furrowed his eyebrows: "How many secret words that you tell him before?"

"Hehe, only one. I told him that my father is Luo Tian Ming."

Very obvious, after he heard Luo Tian Ming this name, Yu Ao Tian eyes filled with sorrow, but only a slight. "Oh? How could you think of it?"

"Didn't you tell me before, no matter how great the mafias they are still need money, no matter how great the businessman they are still need to consider the government's people, so that only those people who joined in governmental are the best. My father... although he had passed away. But seeing at Big Boss Lei age at least he might ever heard my father's name. Besides, my father was the current Prime Minister's secretary..."

# Part 2 (Two)

"Bao Bei, I have done applying the medicine." Yu Ao Tian cut her words off, and turned to keep the medicine box.

Yao Yao is unhappily glaring at him, obviously Yu Ao Tian knew what Yao Yao said to Big Boss Lei, as the result he showed impatience expression, really impolite! "Thank you. I will be back to school."

"Now is almost evening, there is no class anymore, isn't it? Go back at tomorrow."

"Cannot, at night there will be dorm-checking." But before these words finished, she feels as if she is talking nonsense, Yu Ao Tian is university board director, only by his random calling she might never go to school anymore, someone bossy like him how could he let her off so easily? "Forget it, I decided to stay here."

"Ha, your brain is moving quite fast. Go, change your dirty dresses."

"Oh." Yao Yao takes big stride, going inside the bedroom.

Her eyes swept this comfortable bedroom; she never thought that Yu Ao Tian would bring her to here.

Now they are staying at Yu Ao Tian's most ordinary yet simplest and smallest apartment.

After she is taking off her dresses, she just reacted: "After I taking off my dresses, what must I wear? "Yu Ao Tian! Yu Ao Tian!"

"What..."

When the bedroom door is opened, Yao Yao as if an arrow rushing to shut the door at let him stays outside: "I, what should I wear?"

"You open the door, I will take it for you."

"You tell me where you put it, I will take it by myself."

"Open the door!" outside the door, Yu Ao Tian is shouting loudly.

Yao Yao unhappily frowning, this rotten bastard, always be so bossy! Putting herself a quilt: "You come in."

When the door is opened, Yu Ao Tian eyes swept on petite figure who is hiding and covered her body until only her head is showing up, he smiles deviously: "Huh, you act as if I never seen you before? Really deceiving yourself."

That white face turned to be beet red, she is embarrassed, lowering her head and titled aside.

"Wear this."

One white shirt is tossing at her head, at the times when she gains herself, Yu Ao Tian has already left the room.

Wearing that shirt, she is standing in front of mirror and moving... "Yu Ao Tian," Yu Ao Tian!" she is running to living room: "Your shirt is too big."

Yu Ao Tian who is sitting in sofa raises his head, his eyes swept at Yao Yao who standing in front of him.

White shirt on her body looks as if long dresses, the bottom of the shirt is covered her thigh, tightly covered her little butt.

Although Yao Yao height only 150cm something, but she absolutely has hot body figure, exposing her slender beautiful legs really give particularly attracting atmosphere for people who see it.

From the top, her bra is faintly discernible through the shirt, that broad and big size of collar shirt is exposing her sexy collar bone. Moreover matching with her innocent face...

This is first time for Yu Ao Tian to feel little girl with innocent look can be seen so sexy! But pity...

This little thing who looks alike little girl not understands and she even restless, trying to swing the shirt long sleeves.

"Bao Bei, are you trying to seduce me?" Yu Ao Tian narrowed his eyes, not waiting her to react he has already pulled her to his embrace.

# Part 1 (One)

Only separating by thin material, her back is tightly stick with him, she even could feel his chest strong outline and also his chest temperature.

"You let me go." Feeling awkward and embarrassed she bites her lips, Yao Yao still pulling the shirt, so that her panty won't show up.

However she only taking cares the below but not taking care the upper.

Once the shirt pulled, that big collar shirt has down for few inches.

Due to Yu Ao Tian position, he is able to see her not so deep cleavages.

Damn! It is clearly there is nothing to be "seen" but somewhat he is already being seduced.

His adam apple is moving, Yu Ao Tian's mouth is curved upwards, provoking him: "Bao Bei, do we need to do something?"

The man is blowing hot breathe to her earlobe, drew ripple, that intoxicating low deep voice is whispered and turned the room atmosphere to be so awkward and ambiguous. "I, I am going to cook."

Cook? Hah, her cooking skill he has tried out before, besides that now he wants... "Now I want to eat you!" he circles his hands to her waist.

"Uh." Her face is burning hot, difficult to resist and frowning: "Don't..."

"Who asked you to wear this and seduce me?" his big hands unruly.

"This, this shirt is given by you."

"En? Still dare to talkback?" Yu Ao Tian rolled his eyes: "You can choose not to wear it."

Not wear? Doesn't it mean more dangerous?

When she feels his big hand is moving to her below part, faster she stopped him: "I, my that one is coming."

That burn hot eyes suddenly dim, his expression is clearly showing how

unhappy he is, but at another minute... "Aiya, you are really dampened the mood. But if I found out you are lying to me, Bao Bei, you must know the consequence?"

"Uh..." her heart is tighten, won't Yu Ao Tian remember last time her last period, right? "I, I don't lie to you."

"Are you sure? Bao Bei, so that within one month you can have twice that, really awesome."

Unexpectedly he remembered! Knowing her lies already get exposed, Yao Yao only can choose to keep silent.

Yu Ao Tian turned and changed her position, sneered: "It seems, I have idea to make real your lies. Ckckck, but what kind of way to make it become real?"

Lies become reality? Doesn't he really asking her to bleed? Other than that way, there is..." "Next time, I won't be dare to lie to you, you let me off this time, okay?"

"Well, don't you think something to make me happy?"

Makes him happy? Yao Yao looks in difficulty furrowing her eyebrow: "I, I know."

Yu Ao Tian smiles satisfied, but who knows...

"Can't see your dazing self, can't guess your face expression, when winds blowing, a dream..."

Suddenly Yao Yao is singing.

"What are you doing?"

"I am singing to coax you happy ah."

Seeing her difficulty expression on her small face, Yu Ao Tian really wanted to pull her and strangle her to death: "Little thing, are you pretending dumb?"

# Part 2 (Two)

He has grabbed her little hand and put it into his below part. "Ah!" Although it still touching his pant, but she has already felt "that manhood thing" arouse. She shocked with her little hand, feeling embarrassed she hurried hides her face, lowering her head.

"Use your hand."

"I, I can't!"

"Use your mouth then!" From the way of Yu Ao Tian speaking, he sounded impatience and rushing.

After all he is not an innocent man, an additional he hasn't able "to eat" this sexy little thing so that he is so certain later it would become more difficult for him to control his desires toward her.

"I, I understand." Yao Yao is biting her lips, from his body she climbs down, her hands are trembling...

Cannot! She really can't do it!

Although both of them are doing countless intimate things, but every times always Yu Ao Tian who is taking initiatives, now asking her to take an initiatives, she really can't do it.

"Uh." Yu Ao Tian let out single words proven he feels comfortable.

But Yao Yao is frighten turning to see him, but she really can't avoid the touching moreover Yu Ao Tian's big hand is guiding her to do.

Slowly, her hands feel numb: "Still, still need how long?"

As information, man most hatred is being asked by woman about this thing. Yu Ao Tian pulled her up to his big legs...

Feeling that manhood, she restless, keeps moving: "You, what do you want to do?"

"Aren't you in rush? This perhaps will make it be faster!" after said, Yu Ao Tian

puts her up higher, one of his hand is taking off her panties and tossed it aside.

"Don't! Don't!" Yao Yao is showing scared expression. Without her thin cloth (panties), she could feel that so...

"Don't recklessly make a move, careful... it will get inside."

Listening to Yu Ao Tian, she really not dare to make moves, something like this game isn't first time playing by them, so that she stills able to believe on Yu Ao Tian.

Slowly, Yu Ao Tian could control himself, she moves to and fro, anxiously breathing, her cold sweat even flowing down from her forehead.

"Wait. En..." this kind of touching, For Yu Ao Tian isn't something satisfying, but for Yao Yao it is something that she unimagined kinds of provocation. She clearly could feel her own reaction, embarrassed, she lowering her head down.

"En? Only by this you have already reacted? Do you want to move little bit closer? He speaks with deep low voice which so seducing.

"No need, don't want."

Seeing her anxious expression, Yu Ao Tian is smiling to himself, he counts, both of them have been together quite long little bit, but until today he hasn't done the last step. That time he never thought about it but now after he recalled his uncontrolled desires, he really big loser!

### 207 A

Can you guess?

Yu Ao Tian is growing attachment toward Yao Yao, now he is being so over protective.

Long Qi is going to study at University. This all thanks to Yu Ao Tian.

### Part 1 (One)

Dawn, a sky with a faint strand of sun illuminating at the soft bed, Yu Ao Tian is blinking his eyes, moving his long eyelashes, flipping his body as if wanting to cuddle on something, yet he found out beside him is empty.

At sudden he opens his eyes, where is little thing? He takes his shirt and walking to living room.

At sudden, the bathroom door is open, Yao Yao smiles sweetly: "You awake? I am going to school, bye bye."

"Wait!"

"What?"

His cold pair of eyes is measuring this little girl who is standing in front of him, she is wearing plain dresses, nothing is more than ordinary she ties her hair in ponytail style, on the other hand she looks more innocent, so cute, no wonder there are lot boys at university who write love letter to her! "Pony tail is too ugly. Untie it."

"It is okay, convenient."

Convenient? This is nothing with convenient! Yu Ao Tian face is darker, he straightforwardly untied her pony tail.

"Hey, what are you doing? It pained me!"

An instant the black hair fall scatter, finally on this way she won't have that so innocent look anymore, but...still this damn look really able to make one's self to be impulsive to bully her? "En, this is much better."

Yao Yao is unhappily rolled her eyes, before he never cares how she dressing, but why now he is starting to pay attention to this thing?

"I take my leave!" after said, she turned and left the room.

When Yu Ao Tian just wants to get into the bathroom, suddenly something

pop out in his mind... "Cannot!" hurried he takes out his mobile phone...

"Wo Kao, not mistaken, Ao Tian, I just have been dreaming to hit BOSS."

"Hit what BOSS ah, every day you are only knew playing games!"

"Ugh, what is happened?"

"Hehe, it is." After he gained himself, immediately Yu Ao Tian speaks so gentle: "You know that I always see you as my younger brother too, older brother me yesterday dreamt, I dreamt about many things in the past which we experienced together, after I have thought carefully...me as you're your older brother really feel guilty toward you."

Long Qi who is at the other sides of phone call, after he heard the speaking tone of Yu Ao Tian, he could feel his head almost to explode, an instant he not even feel sleepy anymore: "Hahahaha, Ao... Brother Ao Tian, did I... did I so mistake? Can you stop act like this... can't you? I... I do feel little bit afraid."

"What are you afraid of? I just speak honestly from deep inside my heart. You see, since the day you followed us, you are never going to school anymore, am I right?"

Yu Ao Tian has few of confides, others than Han Li Shang who gets high education, the rest of them are self-learning.

Once Long Qi heard, more he listen more he feels odd, rolled his eyes: "Brother Ao Tian, Don't...don't you have something to ask me to do? You rest assured, I won't avoid it even die for it!"

"En, I have your words I feel much assured, but, brother won't let you to suffer for hardship." He smiles, slowly said: "You see, now you are at same age with Yao Yao? Just in time, you are also at the age to go to university, I will... definitely send! YOU! TO! UNIVERSITY!"

"Ah? University, you killed me better, Ao Tian!" 2 years ago Yu Ao Tian was asking him to take security manager position, he has insisted himself to take the position, now asking him to go for study, simply to say it is suffering than death.

"I have made decision, you don't have any option!" at sudden, Yu Ao Tian face is dimmer, straightly he hung up the phone call...

207	B
-----	---

# Part 2 (Two)

"Ring.."

The bell is ringing, time to get into the class, start a new lesson, every times at this time, Yao Yao will be so excitedly, perhaps this is the scariest side of her as a top student (book worm)?

"My beloved, yesterday you..."

Seeing Gong Xiao Man who is slowly sitting at her sides, this time she gained herself: "Sorry, I am sorry Xiao Man, actually yesterday I was fine. But... but I didn't back to dorm, I forgot to tell you that I was fine."

"It is okay, as long as you are safe, it is okay." Gong Xiao Man takes long breathe, only heaven knows that she really not able to sleep yesterday.

"Fellow classmates, now, I would like to introduce the temporary student."

The homeroom teacher has already stood in front of the teaching stage, looking at all the students and then clapping his hands: "Come, come in."

All of the students are looking at the entrance door, as seen... a man with leisure clothes who looks unhappily lower his head coming inside the classroom.

"HeHe, this student is named Long Qi."

"Long Qi!" the person who sits on the in front row is Yao Yao, her eyes is opened wide glaring. By the time that man raises his head, her little face instantly dim, really is Long Qi...

"Come, Long Qi, introduced yourself to everyone."

Long Qi eyes swept the smiling face of the homeroom teacher, his eyesight is clearly showed... damn F your M introduce self!

If not because Yu Ao Tian has warned him not to fight with teachers, he really hates this kind of sissy-type teacher and wants to give him two punches.

"Hi everyone!" He is angry but no energy to speak.

The female students inside the class suddenly look alike blooming flowers:

```
"Very handsome boy."

"Really have character."
```

"Yes ah."

"Long Qi, you look for the empty seat and sit down." Said the homeroom teacher, most of the female students are initiatives to let him sit at their side empty seat.

Yao Yao is nervously, lowers her head, pretending not know him! Pretending not know him!

But who knows, Long Qi footstep is stopped at her sides: "Hey, flat chest, give me place to sit."

Hu.....

More she afraid of something more that something will happen, why Long Qi must call her in such way? The next four years beautiful university life seems be vanished.

Hopeless close her eyes, she not even dares to see other fellow students eyesight, stiffly she moves closer to Gong Xiao Man's side.

Long Qi, "peng" it is sound of his bag that he tossed at table, and directly sits down.

"Long Qi, you have good position as manager, why must you come to university?"

Geez, he also wanted to know why!

### 208 A

**Grammatical Check: Flay** 

### Part 1 (One)

After Yu Ao Tian hung up the phone call, Long Qi hurriedly changed his clothes and went to beg on Yu Ao Tian so that he would change his mind, but who knew...

Yu Ao Tian even said, "Today the boys at the university are really willful. Last time during class, there was a person who even dared to send a letter. That was a love letter." So that's why, he was thinking Long Qi could go there to chase away all those bad boys besides Yao Yao.

The problem is Long Qi really curses at MF Yu Ao Tian for asking him. At least, the university students are already 19 years old-something and that was only a love letter. Just so you know when Yu Ao Tian was 14 years old, he already slept with a girl, so who is wilder?

"Ao Tian is afraid of you becoming a red apricot tree that leans over the garden wall\* so he asked me to keep monitoring you!" (\*This means Yu Ao Tian is afraid Yao Yao might have an affair at school.)

Yao Yao glances left and right and with a very low voice asks, "Can't you speak with a lower tone?"

"Cut it off... If not because of you being so restless, why must I suffer this hardship?"

This is none of her business, how could she be restless? Yao Yao just wants to debate with Long Qi, who knew he already fell asleep on the table.

The bell rings, one study session has ended but Long Qi is still sleeping.

Yao Yao helplessly shakes her head, as expected he is too naughty and mischievous!

"Hey, hey, little brat!" At this time, few of the male students are surrounding Long Qi. They look so rude hitting the table.

"MF!" Suddenly Long Qi wakes up. "What?" he roared as he was pissed off at them.

"Who asks you to sit beside Luo Yao Yao?"

Isn't this none of her business? Yao Yao with an unbelievable expression, exchanges look with Gong Xiao Man, and then looks back at those men with a dumbfounded face.

"I sit beside whomever I like. Do I need to ask you guys' for permission? Cih, don't mention that I sit beside her. Even if I do \*\* with her, that is none of your business!"

Suddenly, all the focus and stares went to Yao Yao.

Her small face is red. MF, did Yu Ao Tian asked Long Qi to come and torment her? "Hahahaha, fellow classmates, Long Qi... actually he is my best friend."

"En? Best friend?" These few men are clearly feeling sour after hearing it, but it's Yao Yao who said it, so they don't know what to do. Unhappily, they glare at Long Qi. "Looking at Yao Yao's face, we will let you off this time. Next time, you better be well-mannered or you will suffer!"

"What? You guys, say it to me once again." Long Qi's face is darker and he stood up.

Seeing the situation is not good, Yao Yao pulls his sleeves. "Long Qi, forget it, I beg you."

Very unhappy, his fists were clenched tightly but he sits back to his seat expressionlessly, while those few men are leaving.

"Say, flat chest, just expected you are really restless. No wonder Ao Tian would call me to come here!"

Long Qi is smiling deviously, but his eyes are showing sarcasm towards her.

Heaven, who can give her a knife ah!

For the next study sessions, Long Qi spends the time lying down on the table. For Yao Yao, this is perhaps the best result she could have.

"Yao Yao, actually Long Qi isn't bad."

Gong Xiao Man smiles sweetly, she moves closer to Yao Yao. "Yesterday after you got kidnapped, I could not reach Yu Ao Tian's phone, so I called him. Once he heard you were kidnapped, he sounded quite in panic. Although today I have seen him, realizing he is a bit unruly, but I need to say that yesterday he was really worried about you. That wasn't fake."

"Long Qi indeed is very good, this point, I understood."

"He, the most important thing is, he and you quite match yo..."

Xiao Man this... why is she acting up again? Simply to say, she is going crazy!

"Ring..." (bell sound)

The bell of the last study session is ringing. But this time... Suddenly the Long Qi who was lying down like a corpse suddenly wakes up and straightens his posture. His eyes are even opened wide. Yao Yao who is beside him is quite surprised. "Long Qi, are you okay?"

"Sst, don't speak. On this study session, be quiet and wait for the teacher."

Does he still know this time is the last study session? But why for the last three study sessions, he was lying down on the table? The most strange thing is, why is he acting so contrary on this fourth study session?

While Yao Yao is still wondering about Long Qi, suddenly...

My translation pace will go slowly for this moment because I will super busy with my work. I will try my best to manage my time, trying to give all you daily translation up dates, but still I can't promise to post so often as I did before.

#### 208 B

**Grammatical Check: Flay** 

How's everyone doing?

Finally I am able to manage time to do the translation although my pace is slower than before. Also I should thank Obsidian for coming back to help me do Substitute Bride translation. Well, I am also looking for an Editor and Grammatical checker for my translation project. Please feel free to send me an email if you are interested.

This chapter still has sweet moments for Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao. Although the chapter is quite short, this is much better than nothing right? Also, I decided to post more than one post every Sunday (UTC+7GMT or Western Indonesian Time /WIB).

Alright, let's start.

#### Part 2 (Two)

'Teacher Qi' is slowly walking inside the the classroom. This time, finally she understands why Long Qi is... acting so strangely!

"Hello, everyone." (Speaking English)

"Hey, Yao Yao, he... he is...Yu Ao Tian, right?" Gong Xiao Man looks so nervous, holding her wrist.

Heh, he is indeed Yu Ao Tian, but the problem is, why must he come here again as the handsome English teacher? Doesn't he need to go to his office?

Half of this study session, Yao Yao couldn't concentrate. She lowers her head, because whenever she lifts her head, she will meet eye to eye with Yu Ao Tian. She completely can't avoid him.

"Who can translate the next page, the 6th page?" (Speaking in English)

After hearing Yu Ao Tian's question, Long Qi who is sitting in the front row rolls his eyes and quickly moves his book in front of Yao Yao.

Ugh? What is Long Qi doing? She stares blankly at him.

Long Qi is pretending to have an urgent facial expression and also furrows his eyes brows. "Teacher is asking you to do the translation, hurry translate it."

What?

She wasn't focused during the study session, so she doesn't know what Yu Ao Tian said. She also doesn't know whether he really asked her to answer the question or not.

Without glancing at Yu Ao Tian, she straightforwardly stands up.

Yu Ao Tian, who is standing in front of the teaching stage, frowns without a word.

As what she was told, Yao Yao does the translation according to what Long Qi

gave her, "These two years, I could not stop myself longing for you. These two years, I could not help myself to forget everything about you. Your figure is deeply engraved inside my heart. I love you, Ao..." She was translating until this point; suddenly she feels something is fishy. She turns and with an angry face, she looks at Long Qi. "What have you given me?"

"Hahahahaha." Long Qi couldn't stop himself his devious laugh. Even all the other students in the class also laugh.

Yao Yao really wants to find a big hole and jump in. Simply said, this is too embarrassing. How could Long Qi trick her?

"Everyone, stop laughing!" All of the sudden, Yu Ao Tian's shouting voice is heard inside the classroom. Everyone stops.

In front of the students, 'teacher Qi' is a gentle substitute teacher, but never thought he would look so scary when he's angry?

Long Qi understands, this time he got into trouble.

As seen, Yu Ao Tian walks as fast as an arrow in front of Yao Yao. He takes the book from her hand and at one glance, he sees a piece of paper inserted. On that piece of paper are the words translated by Yao Yao just now. "Long Qi, get out and stay outside!"

"You deserved it!" Yao Yao vents her anger.

"Geez. I know, always siding with flat chest!" Long Qi murmurs. He unhappily walks out from the classroom.

Just at this time....

Yu Ao Tian points his finger at Yao Yao and says, "You! Go to the very last row and stand up as punishment!"

"Why me too? Obviously, he's the one who tricked me."

Forget it, she better accept her standing punishment. Yao Yao helplessly goes to the very last row. Raising her head, she sees Long Qi standing at the back door outside the classroom and provoking her with his laughing through the window.

Rotten bastard! "Pei!" She glares at Long Qi angrily and she stands at the last row expressionless.

"Well, next, all will do self-study. Luo Yao Yao, you can sit at the back row for the moment."

Very good\*... This is the first time for her to be punished with standing up by a teacher since she was born. (\*with sarcasm meaning)

"Bao Bei, from today onwards, you will move back to stay at the house." All the students are seriously sitting to do self-study while Yu Ao Tian was roaming around and stopped besides her, whispering to her.

"I don't want to." It wasn't easy for her to escape from that big bird cage so why must she go back?

"Are you sure?" Yu Ao Tian fixes his glasses, looking around the classroom, and then he looks at Yao Yao again.

"I am sure!"

"Oh?" His lips curves up, slowly lifting his hand, and gently...

Inside the classroom, she...

### 208 C

This chapter is filled with steamy scenes...

Grammatical Checker: Flay

#### Part 3 (Three)

She could feel her heart tighten, Yao Yao is completely dumbstruck, and what is Yu Ao Tian doing? What is he thinking of doing in a classroom?

"Oh? Is there any question that Luo Yao Yao does not understand?"

Suddenly, Yu Ao Tian is saying these words. She is sweating. When did she ask a question that she doesn't understand?

At this moment, Yu Ao Tian is already beside Yao Yao, bending down his body. His pair of hands is wrapping around that petite body. However, he made it seem as if his eyes are seriously looking at the book on the table.

"You, what do you want to do?" She's afraid her fellow classmates would find something fishy so she hurriedly moves her body and asked with a low voice.

Yu Ao Tian's pair of eyes is gleaming. His head moves closer and almost sticking to her ear, he lightly said, "Make a guess."

His warm breath spreads to her ear, while one of his big hands slides down inside through the shirt collar...

He, what is he doing?

Although there's no other student sitting in the last row, but if a student turns around, that student might be able to see what they are doing. Simply to put, Yu Ao Tian is crazy!

She panics and stops his big hand. "Don't be like this!"

"Sst. Bao Bei, do you want to let your fellow classmates found out what we are doing?"

Rotten bastard, Yu Ao Tian really dares to do anything. She restlessly looks at her fellow classmates. If she keeps being stubborn with him, she's afraid his big hand will keep moving but if she lets him go, he will be more brazen and there is also a possibility that he doesn't have any intention at all to give up on this

interest.

Yao Yao only has this chance so she moves her small hands away.

But Yu Ao Tian is someone who won't give up if he hasn't reached his goal, how would he let her off this easy?

That hot big hand is caressing her neck and collar bone. His fingers are moving and teasing her.

Being teased by Yu Ao Tian, she feels so embarrassed but because she is so anxious, she even becomes more sensitive.

"Bao Bei, do you feel the thrill?"

"I..." When she lets out one word, immediately Yao Yao covers her mouth with her hands. No matter how low her voice is, she's afraid her classmate might turn around. Nervously, Yao Yao shakes her head, while her face is already beet red. Her breathing becomes heavier.

Yu Ao Tian is a weirdo, lustful demon! Inside the classroom, he dares to provoke her openly! Rotten bastard! Rotten bastard!

But she also blames herself for not being brave enough and not being able to control her response. Feeling so embarrassed, she covers her face with hands.

"Bao Bei, you are becoming more excited."

She knows that she could not keep pace with his teasing.

Cannot. This time she must endure. This time Yu Ao Tian is intending to make her compromise by teasing her, but she really does not want to go back to that bird cage!

All of the sudden, Yu Ao Tian is smiling deviously. Slowly, his lips move closer to her sensitive ear and suck it.

"Humph." She hurriedly covers her mouth. Her tears are flowing down.

But there is no hint that Yu Ao Tian will let her off easily.

Damn!

If he keeps on going, he will... "I'll go back to stay at home."

"Very good." He takes out his hand and suddenly kisses her forehead.

"Ring..."

At this time the bell is ringing, the study session has ended.

Looking at Yu Ao Tian's devil face, she starts to hate herself. If she could have only endured until the study session ended! Yu Ao Tian is a rotten bastard, a devil, a demon, and the domineering king of evil!

"Yao Yao, where is Yu Ao Tian?" During the afternoon rest time, Gong Xiao Man is curiously asking her.

"He has already gone back to his company."

"Oh, he seems quite free. Still coming everyday to see you even for just a moment?"

Heh, later on, he won't be coming because...

Today she is going back to the "Bird Cage" to stay there again. Huhhuhu...

7	<b>N</b> R	D
_	vu	

**Grammatical Check: Flay** 

Yao Yao is calling Long Qi ge ge, why?

Anyone curious?

Another funny and sweet chapter, we are also getting closer to Gong Xiao Man and Han Li Shang moment too.

### Part 4 (Four)

"Yao Yao, let's go to aula. In the moment we will have open study. You don't know what teacher would want us to do, right?"

"Yes."

Open study. It is the event that must be participated by the new first year students in order to make the new students improve themselves, and also to give chances for the students to have interaction with each other on specific subjects. It also allows teachers and students gathering and also the family to come for visit.

Inside the aula, there are many new students who are queuing to see their own study program for their open study session.

"Yao Yao, Yao Yao, look, I got the princess role in the Snow White story." Gong Xiao Man excitedly sways a piece of paper in her hand. "How about you? What did you get for your program?"

"Ha...hahahaha...Xiao Man, your fortune is quite good, but mine is... so awful." Her facial expression is of deep grievance as she hands over a piece of paper to Gong Xiao Man.

When Gong Xiao Man opens to see... "Ugh...female scoundrel in *Amaenaideyo*? Wo Kao! Hahahaha."

"Flat chest, what is this?" Long Qi takes out his hand inserted from his pocket and sloppily walks to her side.

"Aiya, is it because of the open study program? Yao Yao got the female scoundrel role that is why she is not happy about it."

"What's not to be happy about it?" He really wanted to get the scoundrel role, but too bad he only got the passerby role.

"You see, Yao Yao doesn't have the look of a female scoundrel. So she's afraid

perhaps she would not know how to look like a female scoundrel. If her acting is bad, then she would become a laughing stock."

After listening to Gong Xiao Man's words, Long Qi looks at Yao Yao from head to toe. "Ugh, indeed she doesn't even have any female scoundrel aura. Hey, flat chest, call me Ge Ge (brother), and I will teach you how to act as a female scoundrel. How about it?"

That's right. This is Long Qi who is an expert in this field. How could she forget about Long Qi who is a real mafia? Yao Yao does not care about face anymore and she happily calls, "Ge Ge, please teach me."

"Humph? Follow me..." Thereafter, Long Qi pulls Yao Yao's wrist and left...

Under Long Qi's private guidance, she is finally confident she can act a great female scoundrel role.

After school ended, Yao Yao goes straight back to the villa as promised earlier. This is under her agreement with Yu Ao Tian. This is a small condition that she begged for. She must stay in this small villa because she doesn't want to go back and stay at the house filled with many women, even if she misses Nan Lu.

Taking out the key, she unlocks the door. When she was pushing the door open, she suddenly stops.

It is still 2 o'clock in the afternoon. Yu Ao Tian should still be in the office. There shouldn't be anyone at home, and taking this chance... Should she practice the things she learned from Long Qi before?

I will post some more either tonight (GMT+7 Bangkok / Indonesian west time WIB) or tomorrow morning. So stay tune ;P

Grammatical checker: Flay

With misty eyes, her small face changes. "Bamn!" She kicked the door open. "Lao Niang is home!" She, carrying her bag, is walking sloppily to the living room. "MF, why is no one welcoming Lao Niang? Is every one MF already dead..."

There are footsteps rushing to the living room. The bag that she carries at her back is thrown "pa" to the floor. What... what is happening? Why... why are Yu Ao Tian, Vice CEO Han and also General Manager Long, all of...them here?

Dumbfounded, she stares at those three persons sitting down at the sofa. Her forehead is wet with sweat.

"Bao Bei, so whenever I am not at home, you act this way?" Yu Ao Tian frowned and then his lips curve upward with a sarcastic smile.

"No, I'm not. Listen to my explanation!" Too embarrassing! This is really too embarrassing. She rushes to Yu Ao Tian and the others in front. "Next week, our school will have an open study."

"En?"

"I... I got the female scoundrel role, so... so that..."

"Oh, so that's it. Xiao Meng Li, your acting is so good. Simply put, you have the talent to be a female scoundrel." Long Ye warmly smiles.

Feeling awkward, she lowers her head, glancing at Yu Ao Tian to see his expression.

"Is this taught by Long Qi?" He coldly asked.

Woah, Yu Ao Tian is too awesome! "How did you know?"

How long has he known Long Qi? How could he not know about Long Qi's

attitude in normal days? "The way you are speaking, simply to say, exactly resembles him. If not him, who would it be? Little Thing, I tell you, his teaching are all wrong. No need to learn!"

"But... but I had showed it to everyone, they all said my acting good."

"Bam." Yu Ao Tian used his strength to smash the table with the document held by his hand. "If I tell you 'don't learn', then don't learn!"

Seeing Yu Ao Tian's angry face, Yao Yao really doesn't know what he is angry for. It is clearly just acting.

"Xiao Meng Li, Ao Tian hates a little girl who speaks dirty words so you better do as you're told." Long Ye sees the atmosphere is not quite right, quickly he spoke up, his slitted eyes sweeping at Yu Ao Tian as he playfully said, "Whatever, during the time you have your performances, Ao Tian won't know, is it right?"

Hm... this is true, still General Manager Long is the cunning one. "Oh, I understand, I won't learn anymore. Oh yeah, today my classmates will come here to practice."

"What time?"

"This..."

"Ding dong." The doorbell is ringing.

Yu Ao Tian looks at Han Li Shang and also at Long Ye. "Let's go upstairs."

"Long Ye, both of you brothers are really not teaching good things to Yao Yao." When they are entering the study room, Yu Ao Tian sighs and then sits on his chair.

"Do we?" Long Ye pretends to play dumb. "Why do I feel that you are currently raising Xiao Meng Li as your daughter? Or am I mistaken on something?"

To be honest, no need for Long Ye to remind him. Earlier, he also has this kind of feeling. Being together with that little thing, he could feel he ages more years. Still same words, after witnessing the childish Yao Yao, he realizes in this life time he really doesn't want to have children.

"Say, Ao Tian, have you asked Xiao Meng Li what she said to Big Boss Lei? I am so curious," said Long Qi. He also glances at the iceberg Han Li Shang who is also

curious with it.

"I had. She said she is Luo Tian Ming's daughter to Big Boss Lei."

"It seems Xiao Meng Li has understood a little bit about this society. She has future, has prospects."

Suddenly, Han Li Shang is using his elbow to hit Long Ye, hinting him to look at Yu Ao Tian's cold eyes.

He curiously looks at Ao Tian, he sees Yu Ao Tian's face is so dark. He remembers Luo Tian Ming and Yu Ao Tian has a 'strange relationship'

"Ao Tian, that... Xiao Meng Li's uncle is brought back to China. He is investigated by Yu Long's men."

His pair of eyes gleams coldly, "The result?"

"Her uncle does not know anything regarding to Luo Tian Ming's matter, but her uncle has promised the Yu Long's men, he will ask Xiao Meng Li's mother."

"Asking that woman?" Yu Ao Tian scoffs, now he is unwilling at this time to talk about this matter.

"Continue working upstairs."

"En."

"The bid that was dropped by Feng Group, also about the land in Long Ma..."

"Ah!"

"Hahahahaha"

Downstairs, there are girls' laughing voices. It affected Han Li Shang who was discussing his report.

# Part 1 (One)

Yu Ao Tian looked distracted, frowned: "Damn!"

"You are looking for little girl as your lover, thus you must know this kind of things will happen." Han Li Shang coldly putting down document which he holding, his face looked so stern.

Just in this moment...

The door is opened, Long Qi is walking with big stride, come in: "Why the atmosphere feels weird? Don't we are preparing to kill people, right? Hehehe."

"Kill your dumbass, you just know killing ah!" Long Ye is taking up the document from the table and hit it to Long Qi's head.

"Long Qi, why are you coming too?" Yu Ao Tian is looking Long Qi with questionable expression.

"Now flat chest and I are classmate, okay? Of course I must come. The important is, these girls wanted to practice at Yao Yao's house, I have seen her difficult expression so that I told them to come to my house for practice."

So these groups of people are coming because of Long Qi? "This seems as not your house?"

"So what, I could not take them to our apartment, right?"

This is s true, the apartment where they are living in, so far the first person who ever come, only Yao Yao as outsider. Thought to this, Yu Ao Tian is helplessly patting him: "You go, tell them to be quiet."

"Oh." Long Qi is turned his back and left.

At the beginning Yu Ao Tian thought Long Qi went to downstairs, telling them to keep their voices lower, but who knows...

"Ah!" they heard Long Qi wildly shouting.

Inside the study room the atmosphere turned to be strange again, Long Ye is twitching his mouth, looked at iceberg Han Li Shang: "My younger brother is still

little boys, I have made my guess things would turn to be like this. Li Shang, you don't need to say anything."

To be say, since Lon Qi following Yu Ao Tian and others, he has controlled his childish-self, actually everyone knows that 19 years old boy must go through this kind of life, they know so they feel upset in their heart. Until today, finally Long Qi could find same age fellow friends, this is similar like fish meeting water.

"Forget it, today we called off the work, we are almost crazy better we let those kids off." Yu Ao Tian is helplessly smiling, he standing up, bringing Long Ye and Han Li Shang go out from room.

When they are at stairs, seeing Long Qi and group of girls making noise, simply to say they are looked more alike having party rather than practicing for performances.

"Uh..." few of girls are looking at stairs: "Yu...Board Director Yu."

Yao Yao is nervously opened wide her mouth, Yu, Yu Ao Tian how can he go down?

"Long Qi, why is board director Yu could be at your house?"

Help, Long Qi! She is using begging eyesight to look at Long Qi.

"Oh, board director Yu is my older brother's friend, they are talking about business at upstairs."

"Hello everyone." Yu Ao Tian is smiling elegantly.

"Hello Board Director Yu." All the girls are bowing with respect toward him, Yao Yao and Gong Xiao Man also mixed with the group, pretending not knowing about them.

"Long Qi, Long Qi, your older brother is so handsome."

"Oh yeah, who is that man standing beside your older brother?"

"Who ah, introduce him to us ah." The girls are whispering asked him.

As seen Gong Xiao Man's brows are tightly twisted together make one straight lines, with big strides she rushing directly in front of Han Li Shang: "Yo, scoundrel uncle, you are also in here."

"Scoundrel uncle?" the girls are dumbfounded, they are looking at Gong Xiao Man.

"That is right, all of you don't look from his handsome appearance, he is actually a scoundrel, last time he touch mine chest." Gong Xiao Man lets out heavy sighed.

Little girls are still little girls, as they heard, no matter how god looking he is, still gives scary feeling. Those who are admiring Han Li Shang at sudden changes to be fear of him.

"Little girl, you shut your mouth up!"

"Cut your nonsense, you dare to do not dare to admit?"

"You!" every times when Han Li Shang meets Gong Xiao Man, he feels as if he is going to be crazy.

This time, Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye are standing at his right and left side, together both of them whispering at same time: "You are stumbled with little girl, you must know something like this will happen."

This time three of them are at same boat, no one could say anyone.

# Part 2 (Two)

"Well, Long Qi, you guys go playing, we..."

"Board Director Yu, I have heard regarding about your Berson group's rumor, how about you telling us about your Berson Group? Is it okay?" one of the girls is suddenly cut off Long Ye's words and hooked her arm to Yu Ao Tian's "Yes, Board Director Yu, I do also want to listen."

"Me too." And then all the girls are surrounding Yu Ao Tian.

Seeing this scenery, Long Ye and Han Li Shang are looking each others, when both of them are intending to leave...

"Long Qi's older brother, you are also stay here, chatting together with us, okay?" stills he is being found out by these few girls and got "caught" by them.

Needless, they are not allowed to leave.

"Yao Yao, CEO Yu gets warm welcoming, don't you go there to look?" Gong Xiao Man with Yao Yao going to the quiet side.

She glances at sofa which crowded, faintly she smiles: "This is good, don't you think?" if Yu Ao Tian could fall for one of them, perhaps she could leave him easily.

"Hehe, if the male lead is changed to other person, would you still this calm?"

"En?" curiously she frowned: "Xiao Man, what do you mean?"

"Nothing, I just say if, if, the male lead change to be Qi Lian sunbae, or Long Qi or perhaps...Feng Chen Yi, will you bother with whom of the girl sitting together and chatting?"

Gong Xiao Man really has motives, asking about this question, the result is so obvious, of course...Feng Chen Yi.

Yao Yao is choosing to keep silent.

"You say nothing it is okay, but deep inside your heart you have got the answer already, the person is the one you love now."

Hahaha, love?

Perhaps, two years ago when she met Feng Chen Yi, she was avoiding that kind of love, but slowly she able to face it. But, she was able to feel it clearly, toward Feng Chen Yi it was love...somewhat... slowly by slowly, that love turned to be weakening. Perhaps, the weaken love due to the lessen chances meeting him, it would be good if it vanish?

"Yao Yao, you stay here for while." After said, Gong Xiao Man is rushing toward the villa's door: "Hey, Big Uncle, where are you going?"

Han Li Shang stopped his footstep, turned his head coldly looking at her: "Go home!"

"Huh? The feeling being ignored by others, your heart must be feeling sour, right?"

"Doesn't this all thanks to you? But, I never like being surrounded by people."

"Oh yeah? Well, are you only like being surrounded by me, aren't you?"

Seeing her baby face smiling deviously, Han Li Shang helplessly frowned: "You say this thing, why your face is not red?"

"Your face is not red, why must mine red? Big uncle, accompany me talking."

"Don't have time!"

"Well... how about if I shouted you are harassed me, you say, will they rushing out from living room?" Gong Xiao Man leaning her body to wall, she is laughing.

That iceberg Han Li Shang looks dimmer and keep silent: "What do you want to talk about?"

"Just talking how many girlfriend you ever had..."

"3 persons."

Geez, she even thought this big uncle perhaps never had girlfriend, seems he also normal person. "What had you ever done with your ex-girlfriends before?"

"Little girl, you and I are talking about this topic, is this good?"

"Do you have problem?" she is slowly walking in front of Han Li Shang, she smiles deviously asking him: "If you feel embarrassing to answer, I could tell you

mine."

"No need, I don't have any interest of it."

Gong Xiao Man is gathering her courage when asking this question, actually Gong Xiao Man isn't type of girl who looked on her surface, at least she is someone knows herself well, but in front of Han Li Shang this thousand years of iceberg, if she does not take first initiatives how could she melts him?

"If don't want to know, forget it, geez... I still don't want to let you know."

At others side...

Two years ago she didn't sure whether she would fall in love with Feng Chen Yi or not when she met him in Japan, so she never had any thought about loving Feng Chen Yi but fate say different things, she was dating him even when they are not couple anymore, she thought she might love him but somewhat after time passes, she could feel that she is not really love him that much as the first time and she thought it would be good if she stops love him.

That's why I say Feng Chen Yi's position might be replaced by Yu Ao Tian gradually in Yao Yao's heart.

# Part 3 (Three)

Yu Ao Tian is forcing himself to mingle with group of girls, but his eyes are looking at Yao Yao, frowned: "Well, time is getting late, don't all of you need to go home?"

Group of girls are unhappily but seeing the time, they really need to go back: "Well, Board Director Yu, Long Ye ge ge, we take our leave. Long Qi, we go home."

"En, bye bye."

The girls are leaving noisily, but one of the girls is patting Yao Yao: "Luo Yao Yao, we are going home. What are you staring blankly for?"

Oh... go home? This is place where she stays, if go, doesn't it mean that she needs to come back again? "Oh, okay..."

"Aiyo." At this time, no one knows where she has been before but suddenly Gong Xiao Man just shows up, she touches her stomach: "My stomach is aching, I need go to toilet, all of you go back first, Yao Yao stays here to accompany me."

"Oh. Well, we won't wait for you." All the girls are leaving.

Gong Xiao Man is smiling deviously, blinking her eyes few times, she really does not know whether Gong Xiao Man is helping her or giving her another problem, actually she leaving with group of girls, strolling for while, get home little bit late perhaps good things too.

"Ao Tian, we are also leaving too." Long Ye and Long Qi are leaving too.

"Me too." Han Li Shang who keeps sticking by Gong Xiao Man, he thought this just right time to bid good bye with Yu Ao Tian so he hurries to leave.

"CEO Yu, Yao Yao, I also take my leave too." Gong Xiao Man as seen, she is chasing after Han Li Shang, rushing to him.

"Why Xiao Man looks so in rush?" the low EQ Yao Yao toward human feeling isn't realized actually her good sister is already... blooming, starting her first love.

The noisy villa finally quiet down, the exhausting Yu Ao Tian is taking rest by

sitting and leaning himself to the sofa.

"Are you tired?"

"Of course, talking with group of girls, really to tiring."

Bullshit, if he really tired by must he act so gently? "You can choose not talking with them."

"Bao Bei, you are really heartless." Yu Ao Tian using his hand to support his head, devilish looking at Yao Yao who is standing in front of him.

"There is none my problem?"

"Humph, if they aren't your classmates, do you think I would be this patience accompanied them?"

"Chen Yi, if you are dislike to go out and playing with my classmates, you don't need to force yourself."

"Since I have chosen you, it means I must accept all of you, your circles, no matter how I dislike it, I will always accompany you."

Long time ago there was someone telling her, if there is a man who loves you, although how dislike and hate him toward your friends, he will be patiently to endure it; because he won't let you stuck in difficulty.

Days with Feng Chen Yi, indeed he did it.

She ever thought that she might never meet any man in her life time that could make her heart touching, but this time...

Her heart is thumping crazily after she heard what Yu Ao Tian told her.

#### 210 D

Here Gong Xiao Man's time

The luxurious sport car is starting the engine prepare leaving Yu Ao Tian's villa, but suddenly there is petite figure jump to the center of road.

A brake sound, Han Li Shang is braking immediately to stop the car, by this way, the car is not hitting the petite figure which suddenly showed up.

"Are you seeking for death?"

Needless to say, the person who dares to jump in front of Han Li Shang's car must be Gong Xiao Man, she is smiling mischievously, taking lead to herself, sitting to the front seat: "Big uncle, sent me to school, thank you."

He has been taking his lesson and gets used with Gong Xiao Man thick skin, afraid if he does not send her back to school, things will be more troublesome. Helplessly he chooses to keep silent, directly send her back to school.

The sport car is racing faster in street, from the car windows, Gong Xiao Man could not help herself to glance at that cold man.

"Why are you looking at me?" Han Li Shang is asking while keep looking at in front, he used cold tone.

"If you are not looking at me, how could you know that I am looking at you? Why are you looking at me? Perhaps... are you fallen for me?"

Just expected he must not speak.

"Hey, Big Uncle." Gong Xiao Man does not smile anymore but faintly said: "Are you also treating your ex-girlfriend this coldly?"

Quiet.

"I am asking you a question."

Still keep quiet.

Gong Xiao Man unhappily frowning: "Is it too difficult for you to talk to me?

Am I so hateful for you?" Said Gong Xiao Man, turned back her head to another side.

Han Li Shang eyes swept to the mirror, he could see sadness in her face, helplessly he moving his head: "I always am like this to anyone."

His words as if healing and bring life from the death, immediately Gong Xiao Man not angry anymore: "That because you are not loving them! I don't believe, when you are facing the person you really are in love, you still will be acted like this." At least she had ever witness the cold Feng Chen Yi treated Yao Yao.

It is proven, no matter what kinds of man they are, as long as they are falling in love deeply with the women, they won't expose any other sides of them in front of that woman.

"Perhaps." Han Li Shang grimly replied to her.

"Big uncle, you..." the new question has been at her edge of mouth, but Gong Xiao Man gulped it back. Actually she really wanted to ask him, what kind of woman Han Li Shang likes, but she knows, his answers will only gives her pain.

"Arrived." The car is stopped in front at school gate.

Gong Xiao Man eyes are looking at surrounded, suddenly she feels, why school must be this close from Yao Yao's house?

"Still not get down?"

"Why are you so in rush to chase me out?"

Helpless, Han Li Shang better keep silent, he turned his head to another sides.

Time is passing by one minutes, two minutes, both of them are keep silent inside the car, both of them are having their own thoughts.

When the sun sets, Gong Xiao Man takes deep breathe, sighed: "Hey, Big uncle."

Han Li Shang turns his head looking at her: "what?"

"Thank you for today, sending me back to school." After said, she smiles and slightly probe from her body, her lips is touching Han Li Shang's cold lips....

"You!"

Seeing his ugly facial expression for few seconds, Gong Xiao Man laughing: "Don't be angry, I always act like this every times I thank others." After said, she faster gets down from the car: "Big uncle, bye bye." But once she turned her back, at that moment...

Her smiling face is vanished, her small face is beet red but somewhat her eyes is filled with sadness.

What have I done, clearly... this is my...first kiss!

### 210 E

This chapter really freshly translated by me, hope you guys don't mind with my sloppy translation quality. I will back with edited version plus additional chapter, perhaps during my lunch time. (Just let me know the grammatical error and I will change it immediately)

#### Part 5 (Five)

The quiet hospital room suddenly raises noise.

"You hurry go, I don't know anything!" Mother Luo who always appears gently, at sudden she is showing her stubborn nature.

A man who is standing in front of her with difficult expression, said: "Sis..."

"Let me tell you once again, I don't know anything, later Yao Yao will come, I don't wish her to meet you!" after Mother Luo spoke, suddenly the door is pushed open.

Yao Yao is blinking her eyes few times she clearly can feel the strange atmosphere inside the room: "Uncle, you are coming back from Australia." Facing with uncle who she never seen since ten years ago, feels little bit stranger, but she stills politely calling him.

"Yao Yao is already this big." Uncle expression little bit awkward, he looks difficult and frowned: "I still have things to do, I take my leave. Sis, if you know something you must say, if not... you will put us to death!"

Listened to uncle words before he left, the atmosphere inside the room is getting out of the ordinary for Yao Yao: "Mom, actually... what is happening?"

"Nothing, your uncle if he isn't showing up, once he showed up things goes wrong!" Every times talking about this little brother, mother Luo really pissed off.

When Father Luo was alive, this little brother was getting in trouble everyday and all were depending to Father Luo solved problems made by him. At least after father Luo passed away, she could feel her little brother is mature little bit. Who knows, when family Luo was in the most difficult times he did racket to left, he also cheated their house and also money, running away to Australia.

"Yao Yao, quickly see your grandpa. He is missed you so much." Mother Luo is changing the topic.

"Mom... does grandpa still angry because of last time matter?" Yao Yao asked her mother with lower voice. This is her first time coming to hospital after Li Mei Yun came to make commotion last time, first time seeing her grandpa, she really worries of him.

"As you know your grandpa is someone stubborn, he must... but, you are still your grandpa precious little beloved, even though he is sad, but he stills love you, Yao Yao."

That is right, Grand pa is always this types of person, no matter how what mistakes she did, grandpa is angry in his mouth but in his heart he cares her. While mother is someone always spoil her.

Becoming Luo's daughter, this is the happiest thing...

"Sis, if you know something you must say, if not... you will put us to death!"

"You will put us to death!"

In point of fact what matter did uncle say to Mother? Moreover he was speaking with heavy and serious tone, he was mentioning something related to die!

Yesterday after she visited her grandpa, Yao Yao wanted to ask regarding about uncle but she knows too well her mother character, if her mother does not want to say there is useless to force her. Seems, she must come to find her uncle and ask him.

"Luo Yao Yao, do you want to practice or not, you hurry go to aula."

Today is weekend, and also the day for practicing in school. Every group is gathering in aula practicing and waiting for their turn, now it is the time for Amaenaideyo group to use the aula.

"Oh, I know, I will immediately go there." She puts behind the bad moods, she hurries running to aula.

Push open the door, everyone is gathering and making circle.

Yao Yao is curiously taking a look...

As seen, the person who surrounding by crowd is Feng Ke Xin.

"Ke Xin, are you telling truth, your older brother will coming?"

"Of course, I have begged him for long time. This time all of you will have good sight."

"So expecting."

Needless to say, until today, in the class Feng Ke Xin position as Princess won't be shaken. She uses her self-importance and also her Queen Syndrome nature as pressure; moreover there are no less people in the class who do not know about her background, so that everyone who is talking with her must use respectful tone.

"Well, start the practice." Feng Ke Xin acts as "Big Sister", clapping her hands, everyone—-walking toward the stage, practicing according to script.

"Hey, I heard you are Qing Niao Bang's big sister, aren't you?" one of the students is playing her role, practicing with Yao Yao.

"That's right, so what?" Yao Yao is focusing to practice, sloppily she replied.

At this time, that big sister is grabbing Yao Yao's collar shirt: "You are so arrogant, aren't you?"

"Heh, I have been always acting like this. So what? Is it matter for you?"

"Well, very well today, I want to see how awesome big sister from Qing Niao group!" after said that student who is acting, lift up her hand highly, she gives a slap to Yao Yao's face.

But this slap is so light so it won't hurt Yao Yao.

"You dare to slap me?"

According to the script, the next scene, two scoundrel groups must fight. But...

"Wait, stop for moment!" Feng Ke Xin suddenly speaks up.

### 211 A

**Grammatical check: Flay** 

#### Part 1 (One)

"Ke Xin, what's the matter?" The Director who is sitting in the audience seat asked.

Feng Ke Xin envelop her hands, unsatisfied and pouted her mouth. "Director, do you think this kind of acting could attract audience?"

"What do you mean?" Everyone is looking at Feng Ke Xin and same with the Director, all of them don't really understand what this Princess wants.

"Zhang Li Li, you act once more that slapping scene with Yao Yao."

"Undestood." That Zhang Li Li who plays as one of the big sisters, raises her hand and slaps Yao Yao's face.

"See Director, if you think this scene is OK, I think we do not need to act according to the script. When the open study starts, we continue to act; don't you think this is much better?" Feng Ke Xin curves her lips upward, jumps down from the stage, her pair of eyes arrogantly looking at everyone as if she is a queen.

Seeing her attitude, everyone finally understood.

Since school started, Feng Ke Xin and Yao Yao are the center of everyone's attention but somewhat her popularity was only limited to female students mostly. but in men's eyes secretly all of them agreed Luo Yao Yao is the most beautiful girl, an innocent flower for their school, the center of attention. Furthermore Feng Ke Xin likes to be the center of attention, that's why Feng Ke Xin dislikes Luo Yao Yao so much and finally the opportunity has come, so why does she not take it?

"Ke Xin, don't be angry. After thinking it more carefully, I also feel that scene is lacking on something." Said the Director who clearly doesn't dare to offend Feng Ke Xin, so the attitudechanged 360 degrees. "This time hit her for real!"

After listening to the Director, finally Feng Ke Xin smiles sweetly. she goes back

to the stage and when she passed Yao Yao, she curved her lips up, hinting she is provoking her...

Must Feng Ke Xin need to do so? Last time during the student council event, she had left her without any consideration; no wonder she does not care for her this time?

"Still not acting?" Feng Ke Xin impatiently urges and gives Zhang Li Li a hint with her eyesight.

Zhang Li Li smiles deviously, nodding her head. without waiting for Yao Yao to react, she raised her hand and slapped Yao Yao hard.

"No good! the actin skill not good. Luo Yao Yao, can you use your feeling? Now you are being slapped by the sister, you must show your emotions at least." Feng Ke Xin said directly, taking the role as the Director. "Start it all over again!"

"Okay, Ke Xin." Zhang Li Li is nodding her head. "Today, I want to see what Big Sister of Qing Niao Group can do." After saying this, she lifts her hands up and gives a hard slap.

Even the stupidest could see, Feng Ke Xin and Zhang Li Li are joining forces to mistreat Yao Yao. Of course, Yao Yao herself could feel it too. But if she stops playing the role in open study, she will definitely get a punishment from school. Not to mention for her to be elected as the most outstanding student, it will still be hard for her to get scholarship. She bites her lips hard. "You dare to slap me?" She puts her utmost to play the role.

"Still won't do! Zhang Li Li, this time your slapping is quite good but not your expression. Continue to act!" Two times of slapping still could not make Feng Ke Xin satisfied and get rid of her anger from Yao Yao. Once again, she makes things difficult for her.

Zhang Li Li look like a loyal dog, nodding her head. "OK, Ke Xin." She curves her lips up and whispered, "Luo Yao Yao, don't blame me. Who asked you to offend Ke Xin?" After saying so, she raises her hand up and slaps Yao Yao hard.

But before her hand lands...

#### 211 B

I giggles lot when reading you guys comments.

I could see now the readers shipping Yao Yao with three men, Feng Chen Yi, Yu Ao Tian and Long Qi. Why I didn't see anyone mention others guy such as Qi Lian?

Well, this chapter is quite dilemma. Yao Yao still cares about Feng Chen Yi, She also worries about Long Qi existence, roaming in school as Yu Ao Tian's spy but other sides, she also feeling guilty toward Yu Ao Tian.

#### Part 2 (Two)

"Cut!, wait. Now the script is changed.... Luo Yao Yao... you...slap...Zhang Li Li."

"What? Who let you to change the script?" Feng Ke Xin is angrily looking at the Director.

"It is me, asking the script to change!" It is cold voice which is speaking.

Yao Yao turned her head nervously, this voice is belongs to? Faster she looked at the Director...

as seen, that person is Feng Chen Yi who is sitting coldly besides the Director, he uses the coldest and also scariest eyesight to see everyone. People could feel the chilly atmosphere on the stage.

"Feng, General Manager Feng, why are you here?"

Seeing from his sitting position, he should be arrived for a while.

"Still not acting!" Feng Chen Yi impatiently urged them.

Everyone quickly looked at Feng Ke Xin, her small hands make fist, silent.

"Start, Luo Yao Yao, now you slap Zhang Li Li."

The Director is already giving his command, Yao Yao face isn't showing any wicked expression or happiness but more showing getting pressured expression.

Since the time she was studying in Japan thing always like this, as long as there was someone daring to bully Yao Yao, Feng Chen Yi would pay that person in double. As time goes, those students changed whenever seen Yao Yao.

Believes this time, Fen Chen Yi is using his power to change the script, right? Dealing with this, she really thankful, but...

Both of them aren't same as before, not as boy and girl friend, Feng Chen Yi is not necessary to protect her that way anymore.

It isn't easy for her to suppressed her feeling, she afraid because of this man

her feeling will slowly wavering again. Actually, she has calmed herself and she feels it quite good, at least every times she meets Yu Ao Tian she won't feel any guilty inside her heart.

Still flowing in her thought... by this way she can keep continuing her peaceful days, at least during the time until she ended her contract with Yu Ao Tian. But now it seems, things not as easy as she thought.

She is trying her utmost to avoid Feng Chen Yi's eyes, she lowers her head and lets out heavy sights, lifts highly her hands...

Seeing the situation Zhang Li Li, hurried she showed her shocking expression. When Yao Yao's hand landed on her face, it is only a lightly slap, very light ones...

An instant, the way of Zhang Li Li looked at Yao Yao changed, there is not only touching her feeling but also she felt a gratitude toward Yao Yao, after all... she has shown not good attitude to Yao Yao before, actually Yao Yao could use this opportunity to pay her back.

"Not good! Luo Yao Yao, you act without an emotion, continue! Use your strength." The Director give an command.

Yao Yao knows very well the way Feng Chen Yi does thing, if today she does not slap Zhang Li Li until she bleeding, perhaps that bossy Feng Chen Yi won't let her to stop slapping her?

"Feng Chen Yi!" helplessly, Yao Yao hurries get down from the stage, she rushing in front of Feng Chen Yi.

"You get lost, how dare you called my second brother name?" out from nowhere suddenly Feng Ke Xin grabbed Yao Yao's wrist, she used her strength to push down Yao Yao falls to ground.

Second brother? Feng Chen Yi is... Feng Ke Xin's second brother?

Sitting on the ground, her mouth is opened wide. How could she not realized that arrogant queen syndrome Feng Ke Xin and Bossy domineering Feng Chen Yi are sibling? It is so clearly both of this brother and sister are look so alike.

"Second brother, what are you planning?" Feng Ke Xin looking at Feng Chen Yi, she is difficulty to plan this kind of scene, who knows, the second brother who

she begged for such long time destroy her plan?

"Ke Xin, it is you, what are you planning? If I not thinking you as my younger sister, I will ask Yao Yao to give you a slap at your face!" Feng Chen Yi coldly stands up from his seat, he pushes her younger sister away and hurries walking in front of Yao Yao, helps her to stand up.

Feng Ke Xin takes peek...

"Second brother, do you.... Do You know Luo Yao Yao?"

Feng Chen Yi silent saying nothing, as he glancing at his younger sister with cold eyesight, one of his hand helps Yao Yao to stand up and then both of them are faster vanish from the aula...

## **211** C

Everyone is wondering what kind of storm will be heading. I can say, GUYS REST ASSURED, storm isn't here yet. Just prepare ah~

#### Part 3 (Three)

"Damn! Damn!" Feng Ke Xin is angrily kicking the stuffs in the shooting place, and the last she is targeting the Director: "Why did you do according to my second brother?"

"Ke Xin, don't you know General Manager Feng character? If today I offended him, how you expect me to mingle in showbiz?" This Director is supervisor who welcomed by school to do supervision. This is temporary supervisor for this session. But he is employed by Feng Entertainment company which is also Branch Company of Feng Group. How dare he come to offend Feng's?

"So you mean, you dare to offend me? That's right, my second brother is awesome, he has capability and power. I am only a student, so why would you give me a face?"

"Aiyo, Oh my Ke Xin, I don't have any mean. I beg both of you, you twos brother and sister let me go off. I am also not easy."

"That's right, Ke Xin." Few of fellow classmates also come: "You don't difficult Director. It was your brother fault, why didn't he side you as his younger sister but instead he sided to that cheap Yao Yao?"

"How hell I know? Today my biggest mistake, I must not satisfy your wish, I coaxed my second brother to come here! The result, things went wrong!" More Feng Ke Xin thought of it, more she gets angrier, her second brother who loves and dears her, today suddenly angered her because of Luo Yao Yao? Moreover he even scolded her in front of many people, now she really feels she doesn't have any face...

"Feng Chen Yi, you let go my hand! Please let go, let free my hand go! This is school!" in front of the Aula entrance, Yao Yao is swinging hard Feng Chen Yi's hand.

He frowned: "So what if in school? Do you afraid of people see I pull your

hand?"

Feng Chen Yi does not know, this school also has Yu Ao Tian's shares, no one can say when will suddenly he comes here. As additional, Long Qi also at school, once things heard by Yu Ao Tian, the last result isn't something she never wants to see. "I don't mean this." The most troublesome is, Yao Yao just knows Feng Chen Yi's character too well, what she does not expect he to do, at last he still will do the things even go crazier, so that most of time their interaction is shouting and anger.

Stuck between these two domineering men she really feels bitter. "Just now... thank you, Chen Yi."

"En?" Feng Chen Yi eyes glistening and rolled: "Your attitude today is quite surprising me."

Nonsense, now she only wants Feng Chen Yi left faster, whatever is good, just say it, her eyes flashed looking her surrounded. "If there is nothing to say, then I will be back to have my practice again."

"Wait." Feng Chen Yi paused for moment, he takes out white handkerchief from his pocket, when he wants to extend his hands and rub Yao Yao's face.

She is backward few steps.

This movement is flared up him!

At sudden his big hand grabbed her wrist, he uses forced to drag her toward him... "Your face is swollen." The white handkerchief gently touching her small face, so gentle and soft; that pair of eyes filled with warmness.

See carefully his handsome face, it recalled her old memories, heart beating faster and memories are flowing in her mind.

Just expected she still cannot forget how she hates and loves this man, if she does not cut off all ties with this feeling to the root, she won't ever to give up or put down this feeling.

Her eyes flashing right and left time to time, looking around and thinking whether Long Qi is joining today rehearsal or not, it is also ascertain whether he is coming to school or not?

Oh my! How could she think this way? If Long Qi really not coming, does she can act this vague with Feng Chen Yi?

Bastard, this kind of thought really despicable, and also too apologetic to Yu Ao Tian, doesn't it?

"Ao Tian, what are you looking at?"

Hallway, Yu Ao Tian is in standing position looking outside from window from far away he looked two figures in the field. "Is that... Feng Chen Yi, right?"

Long Ye followed his finger to take look at the direction pointed by Yu Ao Tian: "En, he is Feng Chen Yi. Why is he coming here? And also, who is the girl that facing him? Impossible he is also coming to seduce little female student? Hahahaha."

That little girl is backing at them so that they cannot see the girl appearance.

"If you are envy, you also can come and find one, so that you do not need everyday come to disturb Mo Xue Tong."

"Ugh... I am loyal person." This time Long Ye hurries changing the topic: "Say, Ao Tian, this few days you are wearing this broken watch, are you going crazy, you have so many beautiful watch but why not use it?"

Yu Ao Tian curved his lips up, his pair of eyes swept the watch in his wrist, this watch is the first present from Yao Yao when she got her first paid check, given to him.

That time, because he was extremely anger to Yao Yao, he threw the watch, later accidentally when he parked his car, he picked the watch up.

Towards thing that he ever lost and then found it again, Yu Ao Tian always cherish it more than before, same does with this thing, he found the best craftsman to repair this watch and he wears the watch again. "Well, you are free to think me as crazy person."

# Part 4 (Four)

"Aiya, Do we need to call Feng Chen Yi or not?"

Yu Ao Tian for once again swept his glance to the field... "Just in right time, I also want to see little thing in Aula, let's go!"

"En."

"Thanks...thank you. Let me do it by myself." Yao Yao hurries extended her free hand, grabbed that white handkerchief and using it rubbing her face, her eyes from time to time staring at Feng Chen Yi who keeps holding at her waist, she just hopes he will quickly let her go.

"My little sister is being spoiled at home. I hope you don't mind her." Said Feng Chen Yi, finally he loosen up his hand which holding Yao Yao's wrist, pair of his hand is inserted in his pocket.

Hu.....

Yao Yao lets out heavy sighed, in order to show she does not mind, she shaking her head: "I am okay."

"Believes me, after passes this time, she won't dare to make thing difficult for you anymore."

It seems that Feng Chen Yi does not really understand his younger sister, and also he does not understand himself. Both of these brother and sister are having an arrogant and also domineering aura, she is not believed if the person changed to be Feng Chen Yi, Feng Chen Yi will let off thing easily? Similar, Feng Ke Xi also this type of person. She afraid after this, others beginning is starting?

"So that time when you were showing up in airport, it was because to find your younger sister?"

"En, I had received the phone called from your school, said my younger sister suddenly disappeared when joining the student council event, thus I went there."

No wonder she would meet Feng Chen Yi at there? Sometimes fate works

really strange...

Her idol and most adore is Li Mei Yun, but Li Mei Yun was Yu Ao Tian girlfriend's.

Her deep in love Ex-boyfriend is Feng Chen Yi, but Feng Chen Yi is Yu Ao Tian's business partner.

Now who knows, Feng Chen Yi's younger sister is her classmate, she afraid in the future she will face kinds of confrontation.

Suddenly two people conversation turned be rigid, Yao Yao smiled awkwardly: "That, I go inside first."

"Yao...en, go."

Until seeing Yao Yao gets inside the aula, Feng Chen Yi handsome face is shown warm smile.

Actually, he still wants to say many things to Yao Yao, actually, when she was trying to avoid his enthusiasm, he really wanted to avenge to her.

But...

Time flies for such long, he slowly by slowly can accept the reality about he is only Yao Yao's ex-boyfriend, he also clearly can feel that, she must be scared, she scared with that man.

Think carefully, his extreme attitude won't hurt that man but only would hurt Yao Yao. He also knows that Yao Yao is very stubborn girl.

So that, Feng Chen Yi is not thinking too much and already slowly by slowly behave.

Who is the man that hides behind Yao Yao? Why he could not find out that man, but he has one goal, he could come up an idea to bring back Yao Yao to his side from that man! Damn!

"Chen Yi."

At sudden his head raises, Feng Chen Yi sees Yu Ao Tian who is slowly walking toward himself, hurries he changed his expression: "CEO Yu, what are you doing here?"

"The board director of the university is called me to attend the open study session. And how is about you? Why are you in here?"

"I come to see my younger sister. If there is nothing to say, CEO Yu, I take my leave first."

"En, be careful."

Seeing Feng Chen Yi is slowly by slowly leaving, Long Ye is helplessly shrugged his shoulder: "Oh that was his younger sister, not interesting. Say, did his younger sister also in this Aula?"

Just now they were from hallway seeing to field, they spotted Feng Chen Yi has an intimacy gesture with little girl who walking inside the Aula, no need to ask...

"It seems that Feng Chen Yi's little sister is Yao Yao's classmates? What such coincidences." After said both of them are walking inside the Aula...

Because of unpleasant incident, the atmosphere in Aula little bit odd. When Yao Yao comes back, Feng Ke Xin eyes filled with dissatisfaction.

"Forget it, let's called off the practice, director, I think must change players role." Said Feng Ke Xin. Bringing few of her fellow classmates going out to the Aula door.

But just at this time, Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye are coming...

"Board Director Yu."

"Board Director Yu, how are you?" the fellow classmates at Feng Ke Xin back are bowing respect to Yu Ao Tian.

He is smiling elegantly, his eyes swept the aula, everyone is wearing the costume, still doesn't know which one is Feng Chen Yi's little sister.

"Feng Ke Xin, let's go."

"En."

Feng Ke Xin? His deep dark eyes sweeping the little girl who is leaving, is her surname Feng? Does she Feng Chen Yi's little sister? But just now the little girl who hugged by Feng Chen Yi wasn't wear this costume.

"Hey, Board Director Yu is coming. Lets we go there to greet him." All the

female students look as if seeing precious baby when seeing Yu Ao Tian, crazily surrounded him.

But Yao Yao is shocking to the point she could not stop herself from trembling, she just comes in to the aula and now Yu Ao Tian also followed her come in? Logically, he might be seen her with Feng Chen Yi together before.

From far away her eyes flashing looked at Yu Ao Tian's face expression, nothing seems weird! His face doesn't seem angry. Perhaps...

Her eyes rolled, she lowers her head and measuring herself, looking at the costume that she wears....

Still better, she is wearing costume. But, costume that she wears only few wore by her fellow classmates, so that....

Yao Yao faster take off the costume she wears, controlling herself from panic.

"Board Director Yu, why are you here?" the Director is nervously walking in front of Yu Ao Tian.

"I only come to take a look."

"Oh. Unfortunately, we just done with our practice, should we let you..."

"No need. I still have thing to do, I will take my leave immediately." Yu Ao Tian glanced at Long Ye who is standing beside him.

He nodding his head, quietly he is walking toward Yao Yao's in front: "Xiao Meng Li, Yu Ao Tian is waiting you outside the school."

En? Does Yu Ao Tian come to school only to pick her up? "Long, General Manager Long, how is Ao Tian's mood today?"

"Hahahaha, you will know when you meet him; he could come here to find you, means his mood quite good. What are you nervous for? Or you... did you do something wrong to Yu Ao Tian?"

"No!" Yao Yao could feel she reacting too much, at sudden she gulped her saliva: "How do I dare to do something which wronged Yu Ao Tian, hahahaha." Inside her heart she says sorry for Yu Ao Tian, whether can this call as asking forgiveness?

She can ask herself, whether her attitude is counted as betray Yu Ao Tian or not. But somewhat her heart...

I will post another chapter after this. So stay tune....

### 212 A

**Grammatical check: Flay** 

#### Part 1 (One)

"Ke Xin, what's the matter?" The Director who is sitting in the audience seat asked.

Feng Ke Xin envelop her hands, unsatisfied and pouted her mouth. "Director, do you think this kind of acting could attract audience?"

"What do you mean?" Everyone is looking at Feng Ke Xin and same with the Director, all of them don't really understand what this Princess wants.

"Zhang Li Li, you act once more that slapping scene with Yao Yao."

"Undestood." That Zhang Li Li who plays as one of the big sisters, raises her hand and slaps Yao Yao's face.

"See Director, if you think this scene is OK, I think we do not need to act according to the script. When the open study starts, we continue to act; don't you think this is much better?" Feng Ke Xin curves her lips upward, jumps down from the stage, her pair of eyes arrogantly looking at everyone as if she is a queen.

Seeing her attitude, everyone finally understood.

Since school started, Feng Ke Xin and Yao Yao are the center of everyone's attention but somewhat her popularity was only limited to female students mostly. but in men's eyes secretly all of them agreed Luo Yao Yao is the most beautiful girl, an innocent flower for their school, the center of attention. Furthermore Feng Ke Xin likes to be the center of attention, that's why Feng Ke Xin dislikes Luo Yao Yao so much and finally the opportunity has come, so why does she not take it?

"Ke Xin, don't be angry. After thinking it more carefully, I also feel that scene is lacking on something." Said the Director who clearly doesn't dare to offend Feng Ke Xin, so the attitudechanged 360 degrees. "This time hit her for real!"

After listening to the Director, finally Feng Ke Xin smiles sweetly. she goes back

to the stage and when she passed Yao Yao, she curved her lips up, hinting she is provoking her...

Must Feng Ke Xin need to do so? Last time during the student council event, she had left her without any consideration; no wonder she does not care for her this time?

"Still not acting?" Feng Ke Xin impatiently urges and gives Zhang Li Li a hint with her eyesight.

Zhang Li Li smiles deviously, nodding her head. without waiting for Yao Yao to react, she raised her hand and slapped Yao Yao hard.

"No good! the actin skill not good. Luo Yao Yao, can you use your feeling? Now you are being slapped by the sister, you must show your emotions at least." Feng Ke Xin said directly, taking the role as the Director. "Start it all over again!"

"Okay, Ke Xin." Zhang Li Li is nodding her head. "Today, I want to see what Big Sister of Qing Niao Group can do." After saying this, she lifts her hands up and gives a hard slap.

Even the stupidest could see, Feng Ke Xin and Zhang Li Li are joining forces to mistreat Yao Yao. Of course, Yao Yao herself could feel it too. But if she stops playing the role in open study, she will definitely get a punishment from school. Not to mention for her to be elected as the most outstanding student, it will still be hard for her to get scholarship. She bites her lips hard. "You dare to slap me?" She puts her utmost to play the role.

"Still won't do! Zhang Li Li, this time your slapping is quite good but not your expression. Continue to act!" Two times of slapping still could not make Feng Ke Xin satisfied and get rid of her anger from Yao Yao. Once again, she makes things difficult for her.

Zhang Li Li look like a loyal dog, nodding her head. "OK, Ke Xin." She curves her lips up and whispered, "Luo Yao Yao, don't blame me. Who asked you to offend Ke Xin?" After saying so, she raises her hand up and slaps Yao Yao hard.

But before her hand lands...

# Part 2 (Two)

"Miss, we are arrived."

"Mr. Taxi, thank you." After she paid the taxi fee, Yao Yao is standing in front of two storey villa.

Rely on Yao Yao memories after her six years old due to the car incident, so that her memory about this house isn't so clear. But hearing from her mother, this is the place where they were lived before. Unfortunately since her father passed way, this house is cheated by her uncle.

Knocking...

The room door is opened; Yao Yao sees her uncle opened the door, politely smiles: "Uncle."

"You, why are you coming here?" Yao Yao's uncle is avoiding her eyesight.

"Uncle, can I get inside to have talked with you?" she really wanted to see the house which she ever lived before she turned six years, if she could, she really wanted to have this house, a house which filled with her father memories which had already forgotten by her.

"Speak up what you want to say!"

Yao Yao soulless lowers her head. "Uncle, I coming here in order to ask you something, last Saturday what was going on between you and my mother?"

"That is elders matter. It is none of your business, little girl like you. You leave!" said Yao Yao's uncle shut closed the door.

"Uncle!" Yao Yao extended her hand and blocking the door: "You say ah, perhaps I can help you asking something from mother's mouth?"

"I don't need your help, I still have guest who is here, you hurry go!"

Something is fishy, something is fishy, even though she has long time not seeing this uncle, but this time, she could see eyes filled with fear in his eyes, what he fears of?

Her moisten eyes rolled: "Well, uncle, I won't disturb you..."

After listened to her words, uncle lets out heavy sighed, grabbing this opportunity, Yao Yao is rushing to get inside to the house.

"Hey, you wild child, stay still!" a big hand is caught her wrist.

But Yao Yao sees an empty living room, there is no one there while the sofa are still covered by cloth. But her eyes spotted two cups of warm tea which stills fume hot smokes in the table, it seems, her uncle indeed having guest. But how could two guests disappear once she entered the house? "Uncle, didn't you say there are guests here, where are they?"

"There... there is none of your business! You hurry get lost!" uncle is pushing her away to leave.

Yao Yao is using her strength to sway away his hand: "Uncle, what is your right to ask me leave this place? This, this is my house! This is my father's house, my mother's house, understood!"

"You little wild child, now this is my house."

Just expected this uncle she never seen in this past ten years hasn't changed at all.

That time she was nine years old, mother Luo brought her to meet this uncle to have talked, but this heartless uncle was chasing out both of mother and daughter without any explanation, shamelessly he even dared to say this house belongs to him.

If not because her mother is kind person, this house would never being cheated by her uncle; if not because her mother loves this little brother so much, when her father passed away, all his belonging were heartlessly taken by this uncle. If not taken by him perhaps grand pa medical fee isn't problem!

"Uncle, actually the elder generation fight isn't something I can get involved. If you still say this house is belong to you, well, I will fight with you; if you wanted to talk about 13 years ago matter, I could not say anything, after all during that time I was still so young. But now..." her expression dim: "I don't care what is going on. Please you don't make my mother to get involved with trouble you made. I still remembered ten years ago you had said to cut all ties with my

mother, since we are not family anymore, I hope you will never show up in front of my mother..."

"Pa" uncle is gritting and slapping Yao Yao's face, he used strength when slapped her: "in your mouth you keep saying mother, mother, actually you are only wild child, what is your right to stop me to meet my own sister?"

Wild child! Wild child! She hates the most to hear these words!

# Part 3 (Three)

"Ha, well uncle." Yao Yao touched her face which being slapped, coldly she sneered: "You can try to continue looking for my mother, but if I see my mom have bad mood after seeing you, I guarantee, everything that you took from my family 13 years ago, I will take all back from you!"

"Hahahaha, little wild child, who you think you are? 13 years ago, your mother could not take anything from me, you think after 13 years passed, do you have way to take everything back?"

That's right, that time she was still so small, so that she only could open her eyes widely seeing this rotten bastard uncle took everything from Luo's family; seeing how hard her mother to earn money every day even her aging old grandpa also working to make living. But... after 13 years she has confident that she really has capability to take back everything belongs to Luo's family. Or else why must she learn about law? "Well, let's we wait and see, uncle. Be careful, you will sleep and stray in street at your current age!" she curved up her lips very despicable and with big strides she left the villa.

If she isn't forced to corner, if her uncle didn't step to her bottom line, she really unwillingly to deal things with her uncle.

"Damn little girl!" uncle is seeing Yao Yao who is far leaving, he gritting his teeth.

"You done well." Suddenly there is gentle voice from the living room.

Uncle is turned his back, hurries he bowing and nodding his head: "Long...Mr. Long, Yu, Mr. Yu."

As seen, Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye are slowly walking out from the bathroom to living room. They are arrived one step before Yao Yao, stopping Yao Yao's uncle not to disclosure any information to her, no matter how she asked. To be honest if not because Yu Ao Tian reaction fast, they might bump into Yao Yao who is suddenly rushing in living room, If they not take precaution moves to hide in bathroom, perhaps they would being found out by Yao Yao in here.

"Come here." Take a seat, Yu Ao Tian expressionless pointed at him.

Yao Yao's uncle is nervously walking in front of him: "Yu... Mr. Yu, are, are you still have other orders?"

His pair of eyes flashing, with his devious eyes looking at Long Ye who sits beside him.

As seen, Long Ye replied him by shrugging his shoulders, at one second, his eyesight turned to be cold, stands up and with one hand he grabbed uncle's arm, with strength he kicked his legs.

Yao Yao's uncle suddenly being pressed down, he knees fell in front of Yu Ao Tian, "Mr Yu, Mr. Long, what are you doing?"

"I forget to tell you, your mouth keeps on saying wild child, that person you called wild child, that little girl, now she is... Mr. Yu's woman!" said Long Ye.

Pair of Yu Ao Tian eyes dim, raises his hand, "pa" "pa" "pa" once he is starting to hit, he slapped him ten times.

Yao Yao's uncle is being slapped until bleeding, his teeth even lose one. Once Long Ye loosens up his hand, he already felt to floor.

"Yu, Mr. Yu...I am sorry, I don't know...my niece is...your girlfriend. That things still keep to ask or not?"

Long Ye looking at Yu Ao Tian expression, bend down his body, warmly said: "of course you still need to ask, if you can't get the answer, you know the consequences. Aiya, still, before Yao Yao leaving she even said that if you keep on looking for her mother, she will make you stray in the street, what to do?"

That's right, what to do. Now the one who is most in difficulties perhaps Yao Yao's uncle.

"Ao Tian, let's go."

"Wait." Yu Ao Tian who keeps silent this time suddenly speaks, he stands up, slowly he is walking toward the window, his body hides, glancing at outside the window, extended his hand....

# Part 4 (Four)

Long Ye takes peek, "Xiao Meng Li? Why she hasn't left?"

"That little thing has good observation ability, believes if she does not see what kind of guest his uncle "has", she won't leave."

"What should we do now?"

"Sst" Yu Ao Tian is smiling, he takes out his mobile phone from his pocket, clear his throat: "Where are you?"

"I still at my uncle's place."

"Little thing, didn't you tell me you only go there for half hour? Now you have spent more than half hour, why are you not coming home yet, do you want to get punishment from me?"

"But...I..."

"Don't but with me! Now immediately come back! If you haven't come back for half hour, be careful with the consequences!" after said, Yu Ao Tian hung up the phone called.

Long Ye who is hearing beside him, let out "ckckckc" sound and laughed deviously: "Ao Tian, you are... you are... really hahahahaha, you are really despicable person."

His deep dark eyes sweeping outside the window, as seen, Yao Yao is leaving from the villa. "She really clever, if not using little bit scheme, afraid we cannot hide anything from her."

This is indeed true. Long Ye always thinks if Yu Ao Tian little bit stupider than Yao Yao, perhaps they will fail in her hands and becoming her puppet. Taking an example from just now, after he gave Yao Yao's uncle punishment, he naively wanted to go out. If not because Yu Ao Tian has good observation and sensitiveness perhaps both of them already being exposed.

Perhaps this is called as fate, Yao Yao who has higher IQ compare from an average peopleso she meets a man who also has different intelligent with the

average men. If both of these two really get into confrontation, Long Ye really not dares to think what kind of scary result will be!

But...

Does Yu Ao Tian pay attention with Yao Yao's uncle words who keeps calling Yao Yao, "Little wild child, little wild child" this means?

Thinking about this, Long Ye can't help not looking at Yu Ao Tian...

#### 213 A

Sweet moment still there without knowing what kind of storm is lurking for Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian relationship.

Yao Yao is getting used to act spoiled with Yu Ao Tian as if he is not different with any normal men in her life despite of his complicated status in black and white paths. Both of them look more alike normal couple in front of Yu Ao Tian's friends.

#### Part 1 (One)

Walking in the street, YaoYao's head is filled with everything that happened in her uncle's villa.

Actually what kind of people that hiding inside her uncle's villa? Why when she showing up, they are hiding? If nothing to be hidden why they must avoid her? As seen, that two persons must be not willing to meet her, could they be people she knew?

"Humph, all blame Yu Ao Tian, urged! Urged! Urged! What he urging for! Perhaps if she stays little bit longer in front of the villa she might know who are that two people." Yao Yao is gritting her teeth together.

"Let's forget about yesterday, now I am in front of you, I want to love you, please..."

She is taking out her mobile phone, seeing the phone screen displayed: "Hello, Xiao Man, what's happened?"

"My beloved, after the open study session finished, it will be your birthday, we are agreed to throw you birthday party. You see whether you have time in middle night or not."

"Ah? That day when we have last session of open study, it is not my birthday, mine is the next day."

"You MF dummy, the open study session will be finished at 11 o'clock. Adding one hour, doesn't it become another new day?"

Oh yeah... that's right. "Okay."

"Good. We book to gather in 2 o'clock dawn at Barbie Bar. Oh yeah, you go to ask whether CEO Yu has time or not."

"Ah?" still she almost forgot about Yu Ao Tian. "Let's not talk whether he has time or not, I afraid whether he will call me out or not still is another problem."

Seeing she went to her uncle's place, he is darned stubborn and dangerous.

"So that I asked you to come with him together, on this way he won't have excuse to stop you. Moreover, this time whoever will participate on your birthday party are those we know, they won't sell you out, rest assured."

Still Xiao Man is clever. "Okay, I know." After she hung up the phone call, she is happily pushing open the villa door.

Yu Ao Tian sees her come back, frostily looked at her...

"I am sorry, I come back late." Yao Yao who has self-conscious, guilty smiles.

But she does not know, Yu Ao Tian won't blame her because this matter (coming home late), after all, he is... also "not clean".

"This time I forgive you, if there is next time, I will give you punishment!"

"I understand. That, Ao Tian..." put down her things, she is carefully sitting beside him.

This time when Yu Ao Tian sees her smiling face which implicated as not really a good thing, moreover calling him "Ao Tian" he knows this little thing must... "Don't say to me you have thing to beg from me?"

"Hehehehe."

"Bao Bei, do you think by smiling stupidly will help? Next time, before you want to beg me, at least you must..." pair of his hands enveloped her waist, pulling her into his embraces, she is facing him: "coaxing me happily first? You say?"

Seeing this man shown his devilish smiles, a shiver ran up Yao Yao spine, moving her body: "Actually, it is not big deal. I just want to... ask you, Wednesday night... do you have time?"

"Oh?" Yu Ao Tian ponder, his sexy lips is brushing against Yao Yao's ear: "Wednesday night, isn't day of your open study session?"

The warm breathe spreading in her ears, his intoxicating voice when whispering in her ear, it makes Yao Yao small face beet red, embarrassed: "I mean, after the end of the open study session, do have time or no."

"Let me think." His lips are sucking her earlobe.

Yao Yao moves her head, she is avoiding his lips: "Have you done thinking?"

"I am still thinking." His good looking face is grinning michievious; his big hands are restless...

This rotten man, he is not thinking but he is just intending to tease me! "No!" restless she moving her body.

### **213** B



The open study session is coming, Feng Chen Yi and Yu Ao Tian "by coincides" meeting at Yao Yao's university to attend and watching the school performances.

#### Part 2 (Two)

Suddenly Yu Ao Tian's mobile phone is ringing; it helps Yao Yao to free from Yu Ao Tian, while Yu Ao Tian is clearly not happy with that phone call.

"Hello?"

Taking the opportunity when Yu Ao Tian receives the phone call, Yao Yao frees herself from him.

"Bao Bei, something comes out at company, I need to go there."

"You go." Her eyes looking at Yu Ao Tian's back, suddenly Yao Yao remembered... "Oh yeah, just now..."

His footstep stopped, his face shows little bit regret expression with faint smiles, turned his head: "On Wednesday night I want to celebrate Xue Tong's birthday, so that... if Wednesday night you have appointment, you go by yourself."

Wednesday also is Mo Xue Tong's birthday. Really coincides. "En, I know." Yao Yao smiles while nodding her head, this is quite good too, Yu Ao Tian helps Mo Xue Tong to celebrate her birthday, she is free, very good, so good.

No matter how hard she acts as if she doesn't mind but her eyes can't lie, she stills dwindling with hope...

\*\*

The day of open study session.

China's first class university Aula can be said to be Asia's most luxurious decoration, this is not only a symbol of China as powerful country but also as symbol for the university prestige as the best university.

The aula which accommodated people are already packed, bustling from the senior students to the student parents has occupied it. Countless of the

reporters are also coming. Needless to say, their main attraction is not only the open study session but also the honourable guests.

"CEO Yu, comes! CEO Yu is coming! Faster!" someone said and all the reporters lens are heading towards the entrance.

As seen, Yu Ao Tian is wearing western-style suit with gray color, tag along, Han Li Shang is slowly walking in, that aura really similar with big star that is walking in red carpet.

"All reporters, all media fellows, all of you must know CEO Yu habit, please step backward." Yu Ao Tian's men are blocking all the reporters from getting closer.

Most of the reporters more or less know that Yu Ao Tian dislike his appearance being publicity, so that most of time they are only taking his back or side photos.

"Board Director Yu, please sit here." The Dean of the university stands up from the first row, welcoming Yu Ao Tian and let him to sit at the first row.

"Ao Tian, does Xiao Meng Li know you will come today?" takes his seat, Long Ye curiously asked.

"I didn't tell her that I will come here."

"So later when Xiao Meng Li sees you, she perhaps..."

"Woah! General Manager Feng! Unexpectedly General Manager Feng is also coming." Suddenly someone exclaimed surprisingly.

Yu Ao Tian rolled his eye to see...

As seen, Feng Chen Yi is walking in slowly, compare to Yu Ao Tian, the today's Feng Chen Yi seems little bit low-profile, he only takes Lisa with him.

"General Manager Feng, why do you have interested to join today open study session?" no reporters who will let this good opportunity to have little interaction with Feng Chen Yi, they are surrounding him.

He is smiling coldly, glancing at Lisa who is beside him, Lisa understood: "Everyone, our General Manager Feng's little sister is study in this university, so that General Manager Feng is purely coming here only to watch the performances, hoping all the media fellows won't ask any question related to the working matters."

In business world, Yu Ao Tian is counted as someone low profile but Feng Chen Yi are even more low profile thousand hundred times, basically he won't answer any question and rarely exposed his face in front of the camera or smiles.

"Say, we have been partnership with Feng Chen Yi for sometimes, right? But this kid seems not putting down his guard toward us." Long Ye who is sitting at the first row turned his head back, and then talking to Yu Ao Tian who is sitting beside him.

"Ha, Feng Chen Yi not really like "publicity" don't you guys feel that his character is little bit similar with Li Shang?"

Being said by Yu Ao Tian, they seem to feel Han Li Shang and Feng Chen Yi are somewhat similar. But compare to Han Li Shang he is smooth little bit. At least, Han Li Shang from time to time will only show his stern facial expression while Feng Chen Yi is still able occasionally gives a smile although everyone knows that is only "courtesy" smiles.

"To be honest, I always thought that Feng Chen Yi is more difficult to deal compare Feng Chen Rui. Ao Tian, if I were you, I prefer to choose Feng Chen Rui as my partner to deal with Feng Chen Yi." This is Long Ye personal thought, but he understands very well why Yu Ao Tian choosing Feng Chen Yi.

It is so easy to see, Yu Ao Tian admires and also certain toward Feng Chen Yi attitudes. To say, for the new generation in Business world, Feng Chen Yi is counted as bright star.

"Sst, Long Ye, Feng Chen Yi is coming." Han Li Shang hit Long Ye's arm, hinting him to shut up.

"CEO Yu, Vice CEO Han, General Manager Long." Feng Chen Yi is walking slowly in front of them, that cold good looking face is politely giving him courtesy smiles.

Yu Ao Tian stands up, shaking hand with him: "Chen Yi, are you coming to see your little sister?"

"En, CEO Yu, the performance is going to start, I won't disturb you." Said Feng Chen Yi and then he brings Lisa to sit at the second row...

"Every honor guests, every student parents, now the performance is officially

to start, the first performance is (Snow white)."

At sudden the room lights are dim, a girl with music narrated the story development with narrative voice. This time, the person who acting takes the role as snow white, Gong Xiao Man suddenly walking to the in front of stage...

#### 213 C

This is how I imaging Gong Xiao Man in snow white costume. Don't you think sh

Anyone miss Han Li Shang and Gong Xiao Man?

Han Li Shang, Yu Ao Tian, Long Ye and Mo Xue Tong are honorable guests that invited to join the open study session by the Dean of University. In this chapter Long Ye is still like to tease Han Li Shang by bringing up Gong Xiao Man as their chattering topic.

Also in this chapter Gong Xiao Man does her love confession to Han Li Shang in her own way...

#### Part 3 (Three)

"This little girl seems to be Xiao Meng Li's best friend, right? Said Long Ye, his smiling eyes is glancing at Han Li Shang who sits beside him.

His eyesight looks at in front, coldly said: "Long Ye, what do you mean to look at me by this time?"

"Oh. It is nothing. Just that time when we were leaving from Ao Tian's house, I had seen that little girl seem got to your car, right?"

"Ahem!"

"Li Shang, what are you nervous for? Did you do something that you mustn't do?"

After listened to Long Ye's sarcasm words, he furrowed his brows: "What could I do toward little girl? Do you think I was Ao Tian?"

Yu Ao Tian who is silently watching the performance, leaning at his chair suddenly got shoot ah, "Li Shang, if we count at least you are older by two years than me, this year you are 30, right? Hm, indeed you must have big gap with the 19 years old little girl."

"Ao Tian, do you mean that you not have any age gap with those girls?"

"Of course." Yu Ao Tian smiles shrugged his shoulders: "At least people will say me still in my twenties something, but if the person is you, people might say you are in your thirties something, am I wrong? Long Ye, later we go further from Li Shang, we are not same generation with him."

"Hihi, this cannot blame on me, Li Shang. It is you who provoke Ao Tian." besides Long Ye is watching good show he also keeps on fanning the flames.

"Are all of you done?" at this time, Mo Tong Xue who keeps quite suddenly speaks up because she can't endure anymore. Finally everyone is behaved, especially Long Ye.

"Snow white, do you have someone you like?" in the stage, those who taking role as seven dwarfs curiously asked.

Gong Xiao Man who is sitting on the floor and pondering for moment, she blinking her eyes and subconsciously her eyes looking at the first row, Han Li Shang: "I have someone I like, unfortunately, he dislikes me. He is even not willing to see me, he is not even glance at me."

"Huh..." it is so obviously, Gong Xiao Man isn't acting based on the script. It isn't totally from what the script supposed to be and her dialogue affects to the little dwarf's acting.

This time, Gong Xiao Man changes her dialogue: "Haha, but I willing to wait. Perhaps one year, two years, I believe later or sooner there will a day, his eyes will have me. But there is also possibility, that day never comes."

"So snow white, when the times arrive what will you do?"

Gong Xiao Man changes her bitter smiles expression with laughing euphoric, stands up: "When the time arrives, I will randomly married someone, but I still want to thank him because he let me to experience my heart racing, let me know what is...love!"

"The dialogue all isn't right, but it really gives difficulty to the little dwarfs who acting with her. Li Shang, that little girl is said for you, right?" It is not only Long Ye who can feel it, but others people also can feel same way, after all when Gong Xiao Man said her dialogue, her eyes keeps looking at Han Li Shang, her eyes looks so sincere.

"How can I know? That is her problem. Anyway I won't get interested with this moody little girl!" when Han Li Shang said his words he is so certain, perhaps, since the day when Gong Xiao Man kissed him, he thought Gong Xiao Man as frivolous and fickle little girl.

After this short dialogue, this (snow white) performance finally back to the original story track.

"Alright, after the snow white and seven dwarfs, performance will move to (sleeping beauty)."

### **213** D

**Chapter 213** 

# Part 4 (Four)

"En? Why hasn't seen Xiao Men Li performance in (Ci Dao Tian Shi), I almost fall asleep." Long Ye is impatiently yawning.

The stage once again in total darkness and suddenly there is new narration playing and the spotlight...

"Long time, long time ago, a beautiful queen was giving birth very cute and also beautiful princess, she invited many people and also fairies to join the celebration. But she didn't invite the evil witch, Ka La Bo Si (Kara Persia). This evil wicked bad and filled with jealousy witch, without invitation was coming...

"pa" the light moves, Feng Ke Xin played as the evil witches showing up: "I cursed you, princess when you at 18 years old you will die because of your finger punctured by needle!"

"Whosh..." those who plays as the fairies on the stage gasped, then the lilac (Ding Xiang) fairy offered her blessing: "That will not happen, princess won't die if her finger punctured by needle, but she will only silently sleeping. Until someone who loves princess (the true love of princess) coming and kiss her, princess will wake up!"

"Now, as a queen I give an edict, all the sewing machines must be burned until princess at 19 years old!"

When the queen done with her edict, the stage dim again, and then the light is spotted to the narrator...

"Year by year passing by, the princess is getting beautiful, cute until that year when she almost 19 years old...

"What is that?" the light is spotting at little girl who wearing princess costume. Her moisten eyes blinking, slowly she is sitting in front of sewing machine.

The audience who watching the performance stunned for while, when they see the person who is played as the princess.

"That little girl who is playing as princess, she's so beautiful."

"That's right, that's right, so cute, she looked alike western doll. Who knows her name?"

"Don't you know she is? She is chosen as flower school, first year student from A class, Luo Yao Yao. She is not only beautiful, she also has top student predicate, as folks said she is one of the best student who scores highest during the university entrance examination so that she enrolled into our school."

Because of Yao Yao appearance, it becomes magnet for everyone and caused little bit commotion. The audience's concentration shifting from the sleeping beauty performance to Yao Yao, herself. They are admiring appearance.

"Doesn't Xiao Meng Li act in (Ci Dao Tian Shi)? Why it changed to sleeping beauty? But this role indeed more suitable for her." Long Ye looks attentively.

But all those audience comments are flowing to Yu Ao Tian's ears, he really does not want to let that naive and innocent little thing shows up in front of public, but who knows that she even plays as the main role.

"Oh yeah, according to sleeping beauty story, later must be someone who kiss Yao Yao to wake her up, right?" Long Ye said.

At sudden Yu Ao Tian's face is turned dim and he keeps silent.

Long Ye is grinning happily, nudging Han Li Shang who is sitting beside him: "Hihihihihi... I really want to know... who is the misfortune person that taking a role to kiss Yao Yao, you make a guess later what will Yu Ao Tian do to that person..."

"Ah, beautiful princess!"

There is familiar voice from the stage, at sudden Long Ye's face is turned to be dark, silently he looked at the spotlight...

"Am I your true love?" as seen, Long Qi is wearing prince constume, he is acting in front of the audience.

"It seems that misfortune person is your younger brother." Han Li Shang expressionless scoffed.

"cough" Long Ye is almost being chocked by his own saliva, how can so coincide the person who acting to kiss Yao Yao is his younger brother?

He frowned, take a glance to Yu Ao Tian who sits beside him, his face is still dim there is no changes yet.

"Prince, hurry go awake your princess by kissing her." Said the Lilac fairy who is leading Long Qi to glass box where Yao Yao slept.

He stunned when seeing Yao Yao who is lying inside the box.

Yao Yao takes a peek to see Long Qi one glance and then she spits out her tongue and then grin at him.

This script changed one day before their open study session, she really fortunates to get this princess's role, but Long Qi was really misfortune to get this princes role. They only practice one time, but the practice session was done before Long Qi practiced well and he also practise faking to kiss Yao Yao.

"Hey, flat chest, do you really hope that I kiss you for real? Or fake kiss?" Long Qi grinning when speaking in her ear, he is acting to help her up from that glasses box.

"Of course according to the pratice session, don't you see Yu Ao Tian is sitting there as the audience."

"Oh, that's right. If I really kiss you, you guess will Yu Ao Tian goes crazy and rush to here?" thinking this scenery, Long Qi really feels so excited because he never seen Yu Ao Tian goes crazy expression before.

"Long Qi, you behave!" Yao Yao creased her forehead, her small hands grabbing Long Qi's wrist.

"Kao! Flat chest, you dare to threaten me?" Long Qi bitting hard his lips hard, because of the audiences he can only continuing his play as Prince, his handsome face is slowly getting closer to Yao Yao's face, closer and closer...

The audiences at sudden keep quiet, all the males are glaring at him if he really dares to kiss

Yao Yao, all the men perhaps will rush to the stage and give him punches.

At this time, Yao Yao half open her eyes, Long Qi won't play real, right? Don't ah! "Long Qi, you don't act crazy, take side! Taking the side is okay!"

"Today I won't to take side way, hurry shut your eyes, wait for me to kiss you!" after said, his lips have already gotten half closer to her lips.

Yao Yao heart is tightened; she even could feel Long Qi's nose spreading warmth breath...

And then just in this moment!

"Peng!Peng!"

#### 214 A

Finally I managed to post new chapter today. I have problem with my internet since afternoon because my internet went down.

I know you guys wonder what happen to Long Qi since he is getting so close with Yao Yao and intending to make Yu Ao Tian lost control and rushing to the stage. Well, without his knowing Long Qi isn't only provoking Yu Ao Tian but also Yao Yao's admirer especially male students.

#### Part 1 (One)

From the audience's side, from two different directions, two mobile phones are thrown to Long Qi's back head.

"MF, who threw it?" he loosens his hand which embraces Yao Yao's body, raging in fume looked at the audiences.

Yu Ao Tian pair of hands are enveloped his chest, his face is dim and glaring at Long Qi who is in stage. Long Ye who is sitting beside him helplessly sighed: "My mobile phone..."

From the other sides...

"General Manager Feng..." Lisa grimaced expression looking at Feng Chen Yi who is sitting beside her.

He coldly said: "Rest assured, I will pay you new mobile phone when we get back!"

"Hey, the person who playing the role as prince, your thought, your thought ended, you still dare to kiss Luo Yao Yao?"

"That's right!" from the audience's sites there are few males' unhappy voices.

Long Qi torn his costume, without any consideration he rushing to the audience: "My intention MF is whatever I want there is nothing to do with all of you!"

"Do you want to have fight?"

"Come over here!"

Actually it is smooth open study session at the beginning, but the next it turned to be fighting field. Yao Yao who acted sleep soundly suddenly gets up and sits in sitting position, seeing this chaotic scenery, simply to say she wants to cry. How can things turned out to be this?

Her eyes is spotting at the mobile phone which got inside her glass box, did this

mobile phone throw by Yu Ao Tian? And the others one...

Her suspicious eyes are looking to the audiences, finally her eyes spotted at Feng Chen Yi's seat. Did the others mobile phone belong to Feng Chen Yi?

"Vixen is vixen, actually the performance is going smoothly, because of her, the performance is turned out to be battle field caused of envy and jealously." Sleeping beauty performance is ended, at the backstage everyone is gossiping and feel dissatisfaction toward Yao Yao.

"That's right, you guys see, the Dean must question about this matter. At last we must being troubled by this vixen. What innocent school flower, simply to say she only a seducers.

Listened to all those piercing and scolding, Yao Yao is feeling unhappily, but she also could not do anything, after all she does not have strength anymore to deal so that she won't speak anything, only to worsen the situation.

"Luo Yao Yao, don't keep it inside your heart, all of they are only jealous toward you." Said Zhang Li Li to her after she handed over the towel, faintly smiled, and then left.

Doesn't Zhang Li Li also Feng Ke Xin's people? Why she acts?

Perhaps this is called as you not difficult others so in the future they might help you, if last time she really viciously hit Zhang Li Li, perhaps from the surface seems she was venting out her anger, but on this way actually she only adding her enemies list.

Changing her costume dress, Yao Yao is leaving the backstage which filled with many bad words about her. She is walking slowly to the school garden; she could feel this is first time for her to feel university atmosphere at night actually so peaceful.

"It is eleven past few minutes, perhaps the open study session is ended just now." She has set the time to meet Xiao Man at 2, it seems she still needs to think how to kill the time.

7	1	Л	
Z	ı	.4	D

# Part 2 (Two)

Doesn't know whether Yu Ao Tian has left or not?

How will he celebrate Mis Mo's birthday?

For Yu Ao Tian, as expectedly is Miss Mo someone special compares to others? Perhaps he never remembered the birthday any of women who ever with him before? Hahaha.

Silently she is sitting at the bench, she is staring blankly to the bulb light in the garden.

There slights and tiny footsteps coming from her back, Yao Yao furrows her eyebrows, when she wants to turn back...

One pair of big hands covered her mouth. "huf" who? Is kidnapper?

Her body is being dragged with powerful force, Yao Yao restive, her eyes swept the silence school, now the open study session is ended, everyone is leaving moreover this is school backyard, certainly there is no one in here.

"hhuhuhuhu"

Suddenly that person is forced her to enter the building of multimedia room, they are heading to the top floor roof. Suddenly the man's footsteps stopped.

The autumn wind is blowing her thin clothes and gives her chills, an additional the deathly silent night is extremely freaking scary. Why he brings her to the rooftop? Does he want to push her down?

"ah!" she is struggling to free herself from the tense atmosphere which enveloped her body.

At this time...

Finally, that hands loosen up. Yao Yao turned over her head and when she is prepared to scream... "Ugh, Feng Chen Yi?" why is he? At sudden she limp and sat on floor.

"Are you surprised?"

Surprised your fart? I am shocked, do you understand? "Why do you think? You are really shocked me!"

"Nothing, I just wanted to give you a surprised." Feng Chen Yi shows mesmerizing smile, he is slowly walking toward the roof railing side, jump and sitting on the top.

"Now you are really bad, after all you learn to be mischievous? I still have things to do, I take my leave."

"Stop!" at sudden Feng Chen Yi stopped her by grabbing her wrist.

"What?" She is curiously blinking her eyes.

Feng Chen Yi smiles again, but he keeps silent.

The autumn wind is blowing his black hair, in this middle of night she is alone with this charming man which evoke her old feeling.

Time is ticking flies away; Yao Yao appears to be impatience: "Actually what you..."

"Sst." He takes out his hand and his fingertip touch her mouth to stop her small mouth. There is faint scent from his fingertip which smells by her nose. At that moment, her mind is in chaos.

At sudden...

Feng Chen Yi jumps over the fence, with his strength he pressing down Yao Yao's body while her front is leaning to the fence and her back is wrapped to his well-build body.

"Feng Chen Yi, what do you want." Her back still leaning and pressed on Feng Chen Yi's chest, she can feel the warmth from his body.

But he still remaining silent, not let her go and also not speak anything.

The secluded rooftop for once again is felt into deathly silent, Yao Yao is slightly frowning, her body is stiffening since she afraid of something might happen between she and Feng Chen Yi.

What does Feng Chen Yi want to do?

Her facial expression is dimmer, restless.

At this moment...

#### Dong DongDong

The middle night clock is ringing. The dark night suddenly covered by bright light.

Yao Yao is surprised; subconsciously her eyes looked at the source of the lights.

As seen, the dark night sky is lightening by fireworks, and then the fireworks presenting words...

"Yao Yao, Happy Birthday", these words.

#### 214 C

This is the last part of Chapter 214. To be honest, I heart how Yao Yao feels about Feng Chen Yi. I also agreed with Julie whatever Feng Chen Yi done for Yao Yao, everything just too late, he had missed and dragged everything not for few days but two years.

My heart might touched for every sweet things he did for Yao Yao, I touched for his love which looks "so sincere" though there is motive at behind. Again, if miss one time will miss for one life. Hence, no matter what Feng Chen Yi does, he must accept he had missed her already since the day he cheating.

I have good news and bad news...

The sweet moments ended in this chapter. The storm finally is heading to Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao relationship. But, I will post single chapters onward so the chapters won't be chopped into few parts

# **Chapter 214**

### Part 3 (Three)

Her eyes are open bigger, her bright eyes suddenly covered by a layer of mist, she can't say anything to describe her mood for moment, she only can feel touching...

She remembered, when two of them met, that time Yao Yao was only 13 years old; when she was celebrating her 15<sup>th</sup> year old that day, both of them were officially boy and girl friend (dating).

That day scenery, Yao Yao won't ever forget for her entire life...

"Luo Yao Yao, come to the sport field for moment." She suddenly received Feng Chen Yi phone called.

"Senior Feng, what is matter?"

"I ask you to come, just come."

"Oh." She was so curiously when arrived at the empty sport field, she had waited for such long time but she didn't see Feng Chen Yi's shadow.

After that...

There were neon lights which flashing from the high building facing to the sport field, at the above is written something. But thing wasn't ended yet, there was a helicopter flying circling above the sport field with banner. The banner was written her birthday greeting messages.

When the helicopter was landed in the sport field, she could see Feng Chen Yi getting down from the Helicopter with a bouquet red rose in his hands.

She would never forget that moment forever, that day Feng Chen Yi was so similar alike Prince who she ever dreamt before, he was so good looking and also so dreamy which no one would look away from him.

"Happy Birthday" 99 roses were put into her hands.

Yao Yao took a glance, she was dumbstruck: "Senior Feng, why is rose..."

"Not understand?" Feng Chen Yi smiled was so charming, bend down his body, he used intoxicating voice whispered at her: "Date me, Yao Yao."

That moment, her heart felt as if exploded, simply to say it was thumping faster. She never thought Feng Chen Yi would fall for someone like her, someone so stupid, and could not do anything, little girl. But she had already secretly loved him for half year before...

"What is your answer? Yao Yao? Are you willing or not?"

"I..." her small face was blushing while the neon lights were illuminating her face gave such indiscernible feeling. With shy face, she nodded: "mm"

Hence, both of them were sitting in the helicopter and heading toward Bei Hai (North Sea) to ice skating, and then later on it became school legend.

It was one romantic and also dreamy love story!

After that, when she was at her 16 years old, she got surprised and felt touching, but before she reached her 17 years old, she had already ended her relationship with Feng Chen Yi. While her 17<sup>th</sup> years old birthday, 18<sup>th</sup> years old birthday all was celebrated by Gong Xiao Man, but occasionally she would remember about Feng Chen Yi, so that when she was celebrating two times of her birthday, she felt pain and tortured.

Two years after is today, once again she feels surprised from Feng Chen Yi, the unforgettable feeling at same time filed with sweets memories and yet tears.

"Happy Birthday, Yao Yao." Feng Chen Yi intoxicating voice is flowing to her ears, and then he gave her a necklace which he puts to her neck by himself. "I am sorry, I have late for two years and give it to you."

Late two years and then give you? Impossible is...

Her heart is tightened, she lowers her head to take look at the necklace, just expected it is really daisy necklace.

"What is this?"

"Of course it is your 15<sup>th</sup> birthday present, take look."

```
"Ugh, is this daisy bracelet?"

"Like it?"

"En."

"I have made a whole set, but I just give you a bracelet first."

"What will you give me as present at my 16<sup>th</sup> years old birthday?"

"Earrings."

"How about my 17<sup>th</sup> years old?"

"Necklace."

"18<sup>th</sup> years old?"

"Brooch."

"19<sup>th</sup> years old?"
```

When Yao Yao asking about this matter, Feng Chen Yi faintly smiled: "You say?" His charming eyes were gleaming deeply which was so intoxicating.

Yao Yao shyly bowed down her head: "Huh, I still not sure whether I will marry to you or not. Moreover that times me only 19 years old."

"In Japan 18 years old is legal age to marry. The most important... I don't say whether I will marry you or not."

```
"Feng Chen Yi! What do you mean?"
"Hahahaha..."
```

Unforgettable memories about something relating to someone, suddenly gives her devastating feeling, there was a time she hates herself who has bad memory but also hates herself when her memory being sharpen.

At this moment, she really hates herself because she recalling many of her memories, many memories regarding her past with Feng Chen Yi. Long time ago she also hated herself to recall Feng Chen Yi kindness, and also she has derailment (Thought disorder) of Feng Chen Yi, recalled the memory when he cheated at her?

If not because his betrayal, perhaps this year, would they get marry? Perhaps...

"Thank you, Feng Chen Yi. But..." she is putting her effort to stop her glistening tears, slowly turned her head, she realized his good Looking face actually is so close to her.

"Things has passed, just let it passes. Things that happened two years ago it does not mean you can make up now and changes everything." She raises her hands, when she wanted to take off the necklace.

At sudden Feng Chen Yi stopped her: "What do you mean?"

She is frozen, she slowly lowers her head: "There was a time, I really wanted to forget everything between you and Li Ruo Ting, but this matter has tortured me for two years." She lifts her head up: "Do you know how I passed these days within two years? Perhaps, you Feng Chen Yi could think it as game. But for me, that thing is not more than nightmare, a nightmare which I wanted to forget but I couldn't do it!"

There was countless night when Yao Yao wakes up from her dreams, every times she wakes up her eyes always wet with tears.

Sometimes there is sort of feeling perhaps in few days will be forgotten; but there is also sort of feeling which unforgettable for the entire life...

### **Chapter 215**

Seeing the painful expression in her face, Feng Chen Yi keeps his hand from curling into fist, with bitter smiled and said: "Losing you... for me it always becomes my nightmare!"

Two years ago after they broke up, his expression showing as if nothing happened. But deep inside his heart it was so painful, a pain that he only he knew.

Every times when he saw her from far away, his heart would pain one times, every times when he met her, all the beautiful memories would flowing in his head and feeling torn as if tearing his heart.

So that, he chose to continue helping his family business, he thought using the time to heal his wounds and forget this feeling.

But he is mistaken one thing, he thought leaving perhaps the best decision he ever made, leaving could slowly forgetting. But after he left her laughing and her sadness, every memory about their past nonstop showing up and pain his heart, that love they shared before, more he wanted to bury it more unforgettable it is.

Until that time, he finally understood how he loves her. He indeed loves her so much!

"Let's we start all over, Yao Yao..." his warm palm is touching her cold small face, Feng Chen Yi careful looking at her, his lips is slowly brushes her lips...

Inside the Aula.

The commotion is ended, needless to say Long Qi is the victorious side, won over all of them without any serious harm, just afraid after this commotion, he would turned to be school legend who could won over many people at one fight.

"hahahaha, school is interesting place. Ao Tian ge, thank you." Sitting in the

rest area, Long Qi is happily laughing, while Mo Xue Tong is so attentively handling his wounds.

"You rotten kid, I sent you to school not asking you to have fight?" Yu Ao Tian using one of his fingers prodding his head.

"It was not my fault. The most important, I don't know which bastard knocked me with mobile phone!"

"Cough" once Long Ye heard what his younger brother said at his beside he is nervously making coughing voice and let out warning sign from his eyesight.

"Oh.. I know. But the other mobile phone, who threw it?"

Talking to this point, Yu Ao Tian was throwing a mobile phone but who was throwing the other ones?

"Xiao Meng Li seems so welcoming in school anyone could possible to throw a mobile phone. If next time you still teasing him, perhaps he will throw you a knife."

"Ugh..." being said by his older brother, Long Qi suddenly comes to understand, really, if just now were two knives and not two mobile phones which knocking his head perhaps he would die on the spot!

"Long Ye, help me to find little thing." Since sleeping beauty performances ended, Yu Ao Tian hasn't seen Yao Yao.

"Oh, understood." Long Ye is searching in Aula, his eyes suddenly spotted at Feng Ke Xin: "Fellow student, do you know where is Luo Yao Yao?"

Feng Ke Xin rolled her eyes, looking at Long Ye, and also seeing Yu Ao Tian who is at his back: "Why are you looking for Yao Yao? I am her friend."

"Oh, nothing. We just wanted to send her something."

"En?" sending something? Is this man who wanting to send thing to Luo Yao Yao? Or Board Director Yu the person who wanted to send something to Yao Yao? Luo Yao Yao indeed has skill, not to mention seducing my older brother, she also seducing Board Director Yu? Really interesting!

"I saw her as if she went to school garden, that way."

"Oh, alright. Thank you."

"Don't mention it."

After Long Ye asked, he is blinking to Yu Ao Tian.

Yu Ao Tian is alone walking to school garden, but no matter how he searching for Yao Yao he cannot find her not evens her shadow.

At sudden...

There is bright light which caught by his eyes from the sport field. He is curious so he walks heading there, although it flat, but he sees vague words which displayed by the fireworks.

"You are? Feng Chen Yi's secretary, am I right?"

The person who responsible to light the fireworks is Lisa, she turned to see: "Ah, CEO Yu, how coincidences."

"You are..."

"Haha, today is General Manager Feng's Ex-girl friend birthday, I am here to responsible lit the fireworks." Said Lisa she is pointing at the building rooftop.

That deep black eyes looking at...

In the rooftop railing there are two figures who are closely cuddling, their lips are touched each others, under the moonlight, this scenery is such beautiful and picturesque.

His eyes is open-wide, at the moment Yu Ao Tian sees this scenery, his big curling into fist, his vein is so clear under his skin, the scenery of those two person as if a dagger stab on his heart and piercing his eyes!

"Mei Yun, do you know General Manager Feng?"

"Haha, his ex-girlfriend likes me so much because of this, we know each other. It is unbelievable; Feng Chen Yi is love-struck person."

"My collaboration with Lan Du at the most only worth 8 billion dollars, but your piece of land at least worth 15 Billion dollars, I really want to know, General Manager Feng actually what is your reason to do this deficit business?"

"Big Boss Yu, whatever Feng Chen Yi done because of his ex-chick, so that..."

"Ha, really could not believe if Feng Chen Yi is love-struck person. Because of his ex-girlfriend he can sacrifice everything."

"Chen Yi, I want few men who are in your hand."

"Few men? Ming Hui and few of his fellow mates?"

"Yes."

"I do apologized CEO Yu, although you said this few men are yours men, I really can pay for your favour!"

Everything is seems to be scenes which flowing in his head, those coincides collaboration with Feng Chen Yi, those accidentally moments, seems everything has been explained now.

"So... this how's thing going on!" the wind is blowing, Yu Ao Tian stills watching, his black hair is blowing by the wind as if pair of his eyes are being blocked by it. But, he is venting out danger from his body, the strange atmosphere is suffocating in the dark night which able make people to shudder.

"CEO Yu, you..." when Lisa turned to see Yu Ao Tian, that time he has already been leaving to the unknown.

"Ao Tian, so fast? Where is Xiao Meng Li?" Seeing Yu Ao Tian gets into car, Long Ye is curiously asking while keeping looking for Yao Yao.

"Go home."

"Ah? Don't we still need to give Xiao Meng Li..."

"Go home!"

The atmosphere inside the car is strange, everyone is looking each others, and no one speaks.

"ring..ring...ring.."

At this time, Yu Ao Tian mobile phone is suddenly ringing, with his expressionless face he picks the phone call...

"Big Boss Yu, not long ago you have ordered us to check the matter in Japan, our men have done, Miss Luo ever dated a man when she was in Japan, that man is Feng Group second Young Master, Feng Chen Yi. But two years ago they had

broke up, after that, Miss Luo does not date any man after that."

This is last time matter, when a man showed up admitted as Yao Yao's boyfriend so he asked his men to check it.

After that in order to protect him, Yao Yao wounded herself, to cover reality of the man he killed. Because of that he felt touched, so that he forgot about that matter. Who knows...

During he is confirmed with his own eyes at sudden the fact also showing up in the surface.

"I did know it." He is calmly hung up the phone call, there is an expression which hard to read in his face.

But people who know his character understand very well, this is a sign for storm coming, more Yu Ao Tian calm crazier he would become which mean how serious the matter is!

The car is slowly moving, at sudden Yu Ao Tian takes out one beautiful box from his pocket.

Beside him is Long Ye who peeks at him: "Ao Tian, this is..." without waiting for him to speak. Yu Ao Tian has opened the car window and throwing that beautiful box out.

Seeing this scenery, Long Ye quite surprised, he opened his window, suspiciously looking at that beautiful box which getting far away from their car. He really wants to know, what was happened between Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian just now?

Passing the street, the car is speed. At this time, a pair of couple who is standing besides the street waiting for the traffic light: "See, there is something." They are heading there, pick up, slowly open that beautiful box, in front of their eyes it is something shiny brightly: "Woah, what a beautiful necklace."

On other side, at the rooftop...

Encountering sometimes is a sin.

I encountered you. I love you. I betrayed you. You tortured me. I still love you. I

encountered you. I fall in love with you. You betray me. I hurt you. I still love you. Still love you. Hate you most but love you most too. Because so in love that's why causing a hate, love result hate.

So, hurt each others, heart are already hurt, now, can I get a hug? Peacefully, cut all the ties of this feeling?

"We start all over again, Yao Yao." The warm palm is touching her small face, Feng Chen Yi is looking at her, his lips are getting closer to hers...

## 216 A

Guys, I am sorry to let you down. I really can't manage to post whole chapter at once because it really too long about / more than 5000 words so I still stick with old style, separate the chapter into few parts. But I will still post one chapter everyday though I have separated into few parts.

Happy weekend ^-^

Please enjoy your reading

# **Chapter 216**

### Part 1 (One)

Start... all over again...

Speak such simple and easy, he thought to use two years time to brush away every unhappy memories of her?

"Impossible!" when his lips less than inch from her lips, immediately Yao Yao stopped this beautiful scenery. "I have feared that I really can't play anymore. Last time wound hasn't heal and sometimes still pained me, this time if I start again with you, perhaps I will never believe any man for my entire life. I really can't... play with you anymore!"

"This is not game, Yao Yao!" Feng Chen Yi stopped her small hands; his good looking face is showing serious expression: "I never take our feeling as game!"

"If you are not taking our feeling as game, why two years ago..."

Wait! What is she doing? What is she doing?

Now she is Yu Ao Tian lover, isn't she? Why suddenly she followed her exboyfriend to here? Moreover why she confessing the feeling that she shouldn't have, as the results mislead the circumstances?

Woman indeed easy to get influence once being moved!

She conceals her sadness, forcing herself to control her mood, slowly said: "Forget it, thing that has passed just let it pass, I don't want to talk about it. No matter what, there is no way for us to start all over again. You must know, I have already had boyfriend."

"Boyfriend? Don't you think how ridiculous you are? Today is your birthday, where is your boyfriend, where is he?"

He is... celebrating Miss Mo's birthday. But that is not the main point, anyway between her and Yu Ao Tian, both of them don't have any feeling for each others, she really doesn't mind with whomever Yu Ao Tian and doing whatever

now!

"Yao Yao, tell me, who that man is!"

Cannot say!

Because Yu Ao Tian and Feng Chen Yi are different people, as what her mom ever said, Feng Chen Yi has clear and bright pair of eyes while Yu Ao Tian is a man who has huge responsible at his back with many stories inside him.

If he and Feng Chen Yi are simply only businessmen, maybe everything is much easy to settle. But... Yu Ao Tian background is too complicated, he is not only someone who has underworld emperor nickname in mafias, others he is successful businessman and the most important he is entering the government world as politician. If really Yu Ao Tian and Feng Chen Yi facing face to face, the best result is both of them are loser sides and getting hurt!

"There is none of your business." She left.

"Damn!" Feng Chen Yi is bitterly kicked the rail, he shows his expressionless face...

\*\*

"Thump Thump" the deafening sound inside the Bar, there are five or six students who are sitting in the dark bar corner, making a group waiting for the lead showing up.

About 2.25 Yao Yao finally showing up at the Bar.

"Hey, Yao Yao, we are agreed at 2 what are you doing, all of us have waited you for half hour, let's punished one glass." Gong Xiao Man is standing up, unhappily she hands over glass of wine to Yao Yao.

"I am sorry, I am sorry, I have little bit trouble when on my way coming here, so that... I punish myself, punish." She takes the glass of wine, gulping it. When she puts down her glass, she just realized the person who sits nearest to her is... "Qi Lian sunbae? You are also..."

"It is me who asked Qi Lian sunbae to come over. "Gong Xiao Man is hihihihi laughing.

Qi Lian Ao Yun is slowly stands up: "Yao Yao, Happy birthday." He raises his

glass and drinks it.

"Thank You, Qi Lian sunbae." She is forcing herself to smile and for once again she uses her effort to gulp the wine.

Gong Xiao Man feels something odd with her, hurried she pulling her aside: "My beloved, what happened to you? Are you in bad mood?"

"I... I just encountered Feng Chen Yi."

"Encountering him?" Gong Xiao Man crease her eyebrow, she looking Yao Yao from head to toe, measuring her and finally her eyes spotted a necklace which is hanging on her neck: "Little Daisy necklace? Doesn't this is one set with the last time when he gave you bracelet and also earring, wo kao, no wonder you are coming late, it seems that brat was the first person who celebrating your 19<sup>th</sup> birthday, he stills has heart."

If she really has Gong Xiao Man broad heart and also open minded, thing perhaps much better. "May be he is."

"Hey, it seems he has intended to reconcile with you? You just agreed to him."

"Agreed? How is about Yu Ao Tian?"

"Love is selfish, don't you understand? CEO Yu is not suitable for you, he is also does not have any ability to give you future, or else why he is asking you to be his lover. The most important is, does he love you? But Feng Chen Yi is different perhaps in the past he had done such rotten things, but who is never being impulsive and make mistakes when young, this is so called as prodigal son. You must chose someone you love moreover he loves you."

That's right, perhaps love must be like this, since the day she had promised Yu Ao Tian to be his lover she had understood very well there is no future neither for her nor Yu Ao Tian. But... she cannot betray him. She really cannot betray Yu Ao Tian! "My choice is still Yu Ao Tian."

"Yao Yao!"

"Xiao Man, you don't speak anymore. Although Yu Ao Tian does not love me, I do not love him too, my choice still... at least within these three years Yu Ao Tian still will be my choice! Apart from he is the person who terminating the

contract."

"Yao Yao, you are really too stubborn!" from Gong Xiao Man point of view, Yao Yao is an upright girl, but in her heart, only asking her to choose Yu Ao Tian and then her heart must be in peace.

"Hey, Xiao Man, what are you talking with Yao Yao? Today is Yao Yao birthday, don't make the atmosphere feels so frustrating ah."

"That's right." The fellow classmates are impatiently urging them.

Helpless, both good sisters conversation stopped: "We are coming."

Sitting among the group of people, everyone is playing games, drinking and eating, the atmosphere is live up. But it is so obvious Yao Yao mind is wondering, at the time she drinks an alcohol, she is drinking more than anyone.

"You less drink." Qi Lian Ao Yun really can't watch her, simply grab the glass from her hands.

"I... I do fine.. Qi Lian sunbae, hihihih." Her white smooth face turned little bit red, that pair of moisten eyes are so intoxicating.

"Qi Lian sunbae, you are too played a favour, you just know how to protect Yao Yao, why aren't you... asking us, stopping ask drinking too much?" that words really turned the atmosphere to be awkward.

Qi Lian Ao Yun furrows his brows, pulling Yao Yao up: "let's we go dancing." He is heading to the dance floor.

The flowing mind feeling, the piercing music, normally Yao Yao does not like this kind of extravagant life but today Yao Yao is so in addicting, perhaps by this way she might forget on few things, things which already become her past.

"Miss, my big brother wanted to invite you to have drink." This time, a man with hedgehog hair cut is coming closer to Yao Yao by holding a glass of wine in his hand.

She stops dancing, swept him a glance: "hihih, thank you." When she wants to drink the wine, Qi Lian Ao Yun has already taken that glass of wine from her.

"Thanks to your big brother good intention, but my girlfriend is little bit drunk, let me help her to drink this wine." Said Qi Lian Ao Yun—takes at one shot.

Going to Bar, encountering this kind of person, if the person does have background, directly reject other party "good intention" the last result absolutely is one battlefield.

"Oh." That hedgehog hair cut man shrugged his shoulders: "Ha, your girl friend is so cute, I hope both of you play happily."

"Thank you so much." Qi Lian Ao Yun understands very well the danger which lurking them.

YaoYao who is still in her high mode does not realize anything, she pulling Qi Lian Ao Yun's arm: "Qi...Qi Lian sunbae, I...I am not drunk yet. I, I still can drink."

"Stupid! That drink had added something!"

Seeing Qi Lian Ao Yun dark expression, she is blinking her eyes: "Things? What kind of thing? Is it taste good?"

"Come with me!" Qi Lian Ao Yun is dragging her to men's toilet: "You stand in here, you are not allowed to make moves, don't eat anything whoever gives you, don't drink anything whoever gives you. Understood? Simply to say you wait me in here until I come out."

"I got your order, Qi Lian sunbae." She is stupidly hihihihihi laughing, she stands straight waiting in front of men's toilet.

At this time, Qi Lian Ao Yun finally loosens up his hand. Faster he gets inside the toilet and nonstop vomiting, he hopes to throw up the things that he drank before.

Since he was young he has understood very well about "dark" lifestyle, toward drugs he is really sensitive, just now before he drank that wine he has smelled something being added inside the wine as "additional" ingredient.

"Qi... Qi Lian sunbae. Are you alright?"

### 216 B



I can't express how I feel when translating this "stormy" chapters. These few chapters aren't going to be tough yet because the climax for Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao still far away (They are not going to separation way yet and I hope I won't spoil much and so do with others who had read this novel).

I have read this novel few times for the translation purpose and these few chapters still give me indescribable feeling. I do really want to skip the chapters but at same time, I can't.

Let me present you...

# **Chapter 216**

### Part 2 (Two)

Suddenly the toilet's door is opened; Qi Lian Ao Yun suddenly lifts up his head, seeing from the mirror, Yao Yao who is nervously walking to and fro in front of the men's toilet.

#### Damn!

"Woah, Qi Lian sunbae, you vomit at me. You are drinking too much, am I right? Hihihihi."

"YOU!" just now he wants to flame at her, but seeing how cute and dummy Yao Yao how could he flames at her? At last he is just feeling helplessly. "Forget it, let's we get out." He wiped his mouth, keeping guard Yao Yao to back at the dance floor.

The music is going out-loud Yao Yao is following the music and dance crazier, moving her body.

Qi Lian Ao Yu besides her, he is watching and taking care of her but slowly he loosens his guard and followed her to dance.

"Woah! That handsome man is great dancer."

Women are gathering and surrounding Qi Lian Ao Yun side: "Handsome man, are you alone? Do you want to have drink in our table?"

"Hehehe, Qi Lian sunbae, these women are accosting you." Yao Yao is tugging Qi Lian Ao Yun's arm, as if she is watching good show, smiles happily.

Qi Lian Ao Yun furrowed his brows: "Get lost!" he shouted, not only scared the females who accosted him but also surprised Yao Yao.

"Geez. Doesn't drink just not drink, what you are fierce for?" few of women are lost their interest and leaving.

Qi Lian Ao Yun is turned his attention to Yao Yao, his pair of hand is in Yao Yao's waist, charmingly smiles: "Come, let's we continuing." He takes the lead

and leading her to dance.

"Qi... Qi Lian sunbae?" seeing how unsteady Qi Lian sunbae, she feels her alcohol tolerant is getting much better.

"Yao Yao." His big hand is gently stroking her white small face. Qi Lian Ao Yun good looking face is slowly getting closer toward her: "I really want to kiss you, Yao Yao...Yao Yao..."

His breathing is unsteady, gently spreads to her face.

Yao Yao is restless moving her head right and left: "Qi Lian sunbae, you... are you okay?"

"Yao Yao... Yao Yao..."

"Qi Lian sunbae, you calm down!"

Did it because the additional thing? What was adding into that wine just now?

Yao Yao is shocked to see Qi Lian Ao Yun alcohol tolerance, she is stunned and sober immediately, she panic seeing Qi Lian Ao Yun facial expression.

His white snow skin is suffused with reddish, a pair of his melancholy and charming eyes as his burned in fire. Impossible the wine is added with aphrodisiac, right?

"Yao Yao, you are so beautiful."

"Don't ah, Qi Lian sunbae!" her pair of hand is pushing away Qi Lian Ao Yun's chest with all her strength.

Just at this time...

"Police inspection, all of you take out your ID card." The music has stopped; the dim bar has turned on all the light and becoming so bright.

Qi Lian Ao Yun is glancing at the police officers over his shoulders, pair of his hand is gripping Yao Yao's waist tightly and won't let her go.

Thing goes bad, no one know what kind of thing was adding inside the wine which he drank before, if it was really aphoristic still better, but if it was drugs this would be troublesome.

"Qi Lian sunbae, hurry! Leave with me!" after she said, she still in his embrace

and using all her strength to take Qi Lian Ao Yun out, pulling his hand wanting to leave.

"Stay still! Where are you both going?" two police officers are blocking in front of them. "Takes out the ID card."

"Police officer uncle, my friend is sick he wants to go to toilet."

"Feeling unwell?" that police officer is swept his glance at Qi Lian Ao Yun eyesight: "Hahaha, I sure he had consumed drug, right? Take away!"

"Yes!"

Drug? Get into trouble, this time really gets into trouble, if police officer really finds something alike drug in Qi Lian Ao Yun's body, this will affect Qi Lian sunbae entire life!

\*\*

Police Station, investigation room.

Inside the room with white paint, Yao Yao is sitting on a bench. While Qi Lian Ao Yun is lying beside her and resting his head on her.

To unknown how long time has been passing, Qi Lian Ao Yun who sleeps soundly finally opened his eyes: "Where are we?" he changes his position into sitting and then he looks at the surrounding.

"Qi Lian sunbae, you awake? This is... here is police station."

"En?" Qi Lian Ao Yun is frowning, his melancholy eyes is looking at Yao Yao who is lowering her head: "What happened to you?"

"I am sorry, Qi Lian sunbae. Just now the police officer had checked there was drug in your body through your urine, all because of me who dragging you to this trouble!" if Qi Lian sunbae didn't help her to drink that glass of wine, Qi Lian sunbae would not being taken to police station. She feels so guilty so that she lowers her head, tears flowing down from her eyes.

"If I didn't drink that wine, the result must be more severe. Alright, little dummy, this matter is easy to deal."

"If the police station really wants to sue you, then you will have criminal record by the time it will affect your entire life. I am sorry Qi Lian sunbae, I am sorry. I am sorry. I am sorry!" Yao Yao keeps bowing and apologizing.

She really makes Qi Lian Ao Yun helpless toward her, he is stroking his black hair, and then one of his hands pulling Yao Yao to get closer to his side: "I tell you nothing will happen, really nothing will happen!" stands up, he is slowly walking toward the room glass door, knocking the glass door.

Qi Lian Ao Yun is having short conversation and then he sitting back to his seat.

"Qi Lian sunbae, what did you tell the police officer?"

"Of course I asked them to call the person who can guarantee we get out from here."

Uh, that's right, now both of them are in custody circumstances; they need the guarantor to take them out.

"Oh yeah, little dummy, I was the person who got drug, why are you getting in here with me too?"

"Uh, Qi Lian sunbae, did you really not have any memory about what happened inside the bar?"

Qi Lian Ao Yun twitches his mouth, helplessly he shrugging his shoulder.

It seems that Qi Lian sunbae really forgot what happened before? This is good too... "Haha, when I heard the police were going to have inspection, I really wanted to take you run away, but the result police officer were also suspicious I did consume drug too so that they took me together with you in here."

"You little dummy are also have quick-witted too. You still remembered to slip away." Said Qi Lian Ao Yun is dearly stroking her hair.

"Qi Lian Ao Yun, Luo Yao Yao, the person who guarantee both of you is coming, both of you can leave." The police officer is opened the door which is close shut before.

Yao Yao and Qi Lian Ao Yun are get out together, is his family member who guarantee me out too? Or Gong Xiao Man was noticed Yu Ao Tian, so that he also coming here to guarantee her?

Feeling so curious, Yao Yao who is walking out from the investigation room, not far from there she is spotted Han Li Shang.

"Really troublesome you, Officer Li." Han Li Shan is shaking hand with that police officer.

"Vice CEO Han, take care."

"En." He is nodding his head; coldly his eyes sweeping at Yao Yao and Qi Lian Ao Yun, faster he is walking out from police station.

It seems that Yu Ao Tian is the person who guarantees them gets out? Weird, how could he know that Qi Lian sunbae is her friend? Did Gong Xiao Man tell him? So where is Qi Lian Ao Yun sunbae's family?

When walking out from the police station, not far from there are luxurious cars parked, at one glance Yao Yao has recognized one of the car is Yu Ao Tian's car.

When Han Li Shang is walking away from Yu Ao Tian's car, his footstep is stopping. His expressionless face looking at Qi Lian Ao Yun: "Get in."

Huh... doesn't Vice CEO Han make mistake? Doesn't this word for her?

"Send my classmate goes home." The usual warm of Qi Lian Ao Yun suddenly is talking in cold tone with Han Li Shang.

"Rest assured, I know what to do."

2	<b>17</b>	A			

**Chapter 217** 

# Part 1 (One)

"So you have hid her in here."

A familiar voices flowing from the living room, Yao Yao is nervous, walking to take a peek, the person is Qi Lian sunbae.

He...why is he coming?

"Why are you here? Ao Yun."

"Suddenly I remember, long time ago you ever told me, no matter what I want from you, you will always give it to me, am I right, older brother?" Said Qi Lian Ao Yun he is smiling while his body is leaning at the door.

For moment Yu Ao Tian is silent, expressionless he said: "What you want?"

"It is nothing. I just want your lover Luo Yao Yao, older brother, can you give her to me?"

What did Qi Lian sunbae say? What did he mean with his words?

Yao Yao who is eavesdropping from the inner living room suddenly feels her head numb and going to be exploded; things are already complicated, why Qi Lian sunbae also coming to make things more complicated?

"Do as you wish." He said that simple, Yu Ao Tian leaving the villa.

No, how could Yu Ao Tian acts this way? How can he decide herself to whomever? Although he is angry, at least he must respect herself!

"Have you heard?" Qi Lian Ao Yun who was standing in front of the door before now is standing in front of her, he smiles sinister.

Yao Yao is lowering her head, silent, as if her soul has been taken, she is not even moving.

"Now you are my woman! I really want to know how usually you served my older brother, perform it now. I want to see it!" Said Qi Lian Ao Yun who is dragging her into the master room...

The luxurious sport car is speeding up in the street, finally it stopped in high

class pub's entrance.

Yu Ao Tian is faster opened his car door and walking inside.

Normally this pub is extremely noise but today suddenly it is so quiet, there are only Long Ye and few men in one table.

Seeing Yu Ao Tian suddenly comes out, Long Qi is curiously creased his brows: "Ao Tian, why are you coming here?"

"Can't I come here?"

Hearing the way he answered, Long Ye and Mo Xue Tong are glancing at him, and also look at Han Li Shang, they could feel... this time Yu Ao Tian is little bit odd!

"How can today the Pub is so quiet?" from the bar entrance, a woman with 170s cm height is walking inside.

Her skin is white as snow, she has long hair until her waist, she has clear pair of eyes which is intoxicating beautiful, and man might get trap at one glance. Her high nose and her small mouth, this woman really types of woman who can prison anyone at one glance, she is really beautiful.

"Big Miss, today the Pub is booked by Berson Group CEO, it seems he is celebrating his girlfriend birthday, so that..."

"Oh?" the woman furrows her eyebrows, her eyes looking at the dim and quiet bar, finally her eyes spotted at one corner of private room which not far from her place. "Enough, I know it. I want to go there to greet my friend."

Walking with 8 cm heels, the woman legs are looked so slender and long, her hand is carrying her bag, slowly walking to Yu Ao Tian in front. "General Manager Long."

Hearing someone is calling his name, Long Ye is dumbfounded for moment, he lifts his head up to see: "Yun Yin? Don't get hospitalize?"

"Ah oh..." Shang Yun Yin is helplessly shrugging her shoulders, she smiles: "I almost stay one year in hospital, if I am not get better, I must be crippled."

"Come, let me introduce."

"No need to introduce. Though, I don't really pay attention to the news. But I know beside you must be the Vice CEO Han, Mr. Han Li Shang, am I right?"

Han Li Shang is politely nodding his head toward her.

"This..." Shang Yun Yin eyes glancing at Yu Ao Tian... "Berson Group CEO! I have heard his big name before, CEO Yu!"

"Ha." Yu Ao Tian smiles gentlemanly.

When Shang Yun Yin eyes spotted Mo Xue Tong, her eyes not as shine as before: "This beautiful lady perhaps is CEO Yu's girlfriend right?"

"Hm, She is Xue Tong, CEO Yu's secretary." Long Ye hurried gives an explanation.

Shang Yun Yin is frowning: "I heard from the door men of outside, they said CEO Yu is booked this place in order to celebrate his girlfriend birthday, isn't she coming?"

"Uh..." Long Ye is looking at Yu Ao Tian who is sitting not far from him, very obvious his expression is turned to be dimmer and gloomier, hurried he change the topic: "Yun Yin, you are heard wrong, today we are coming only to play. No one is celebrating birthday. Come... let me introduce you with everyone. This is my friend, her name is Shang Yun Yin, we knew each other a year and half ago, this little girl is smart and cunning, all of you must be careful when encounter her later."

"Hey! Hey! General Manager Long, is there anyone who giving introduction like you? What is being careful little bit? Are you afraid I eat them up?" Shang Yun Yin rolled her eyes.

Long Ye who is usually so sleek and smooth (cunning) is not par for Shang Yun Yin, but her appearance is lit up the atmosphere to be lively.

### 217 B

After Li Mei Yun, the new love rival is coming. Yao Yao indeed needs to grow up faster to handle and taking care all women who coming toward to Yu Ao Tian.

In other side, Yu Ao Tian is facing Feng Chen Yi and his own younger brother as love rival in order to win over Yao Yao. He had gotten rid of Xia Ren Liang, well....

# **Chapter 217**

### Part 2 (Two)

"En?" Yu Ao Tian is looking at her with his deep cold eyes.

"How about we have drink battle, if CEO Yu lose, just running for three laps, how's?"

This is first time for Yu Ao Tian meeting a little girl who dares to provoke him: "What if you lose?"

"I lose?" Shang Yun Yin rolled her eyes, she smiles faintly and hooks her finger, she gets closer to Yu Ao Tian's ear, whispered: "Tonight we have one night sex..."

"You don't regret."

"I am Shang Yun Yin doing thing never regret before, because..." her lips curved upwards, smiles and with domineering way of speaking: "I still don't know how to write lose, this word!"

The cold and dim room, Yao Yao isn't moving and still lying at the bed, her eyes looking at Qi Lian Ao Yun who is undressing himself.

That gentle image, the warm heart image of him at this moment just disappeared. His eyes scarier compare to Yu Ao Tian's eyes!

"Doesn't fight back?" unbuttoned two buttons Qi Lian Ao Yun is smiling deviously asking her.

"You won't. Qi Lian sunbae you won't do anything to me!" both of them ever being stayed alone together before, after that night, Yao Yao is absolutely having faith with Qi Lian Ao Yun personality.

But...

That time, Qi Lian Ao Yun didn't know she is Yu Ao Tian's woman. But this time... thing is different.

"Are you sure? Do you really have faith with me? But tonight it seems I will make you disappointed!" after said, he lowers his head.

He forcibly kisses Yao Yao's lips.

She can feel his sudden frenzy kissing, Yao Yao does not have thought of Qi Lian Ao Yun will do such thing, her lips are little numb because kissed by him.

"How many times you did with my older brother in this bed?"

"How did he do you?"

"What types of position you like to do?"

His pair of eyes is looking disgusting at Yao Yao, every word that he said to Yao Yao as if a sword that thrust to her heart. "Enough, Qi Lian sunbae! Though both of us not knowing each other, but doesn't Yu Ao Tian still your older brother? How can you say him in this way?"

Disgusting, this is really disgusting; she really can't endure these brothers' vague relationships. If from the beginning she knew Qi Lian Ao Yun is Yu Ao Tian's younger brother she would avoid and go far away from him.

"mm, that is right, he is my older brother, the closest one in this world, but... you have heard, he had already given you to me!" after said, Qi Lian Ao Yun expression is dark, rude and rough he tears her clothes.

"No! Don't!"

The entrance of Pub...

More than two hours finally everyone is dismissed.

Yu Ao Tian footstep is steadily walking to his car, when he is starting the engine. Shang Yun Yin beautiful body is jump in to his sport car.

"Miss Shang, anything else?"

"I dare to play dare to admit my lost. Let's we move." Just now when having drinking battle, Shang Yun Yin wasn't Yu Ao Tian par. Just afraid ten of hers won't be able to win over Yu Ao Tian.

"I don't even care of that gambling deal. Miss Shang, I see you are drunk, let me find someone to send you off." Said Yu Ao Tian, takes out his mobile phone.

An instantly Shang Yun Yin takes Yu Ao Tian's mobile phone from his hand: "CEO Yu, you don't tell me that you never have one night sex before. This way, I

really will laugh at you."

"Ha." Yu Ao Tian is helplessly shaking his head, his good looking face is dim, his big hand is slowly grabbing her chin: "Even one night sex, it doesn't mean all women can do it!"

"Oh, that's right. I always heard that CEO Yu likes the "clean" women; it seems the rumour is indeed right. But..." Shang Yun Yin pair of hand is circling at Yu Ao Tian's neck, she smiles flirtatiously: "Very coincidence, this is my first time losing and also my first time..." Her lips are already pout simply kissed Yu Ao Tian's lips....

## 218 A



I have stated from the beginning I dislike Qi Lian Ao Yun. His character is "too good to be true". He could be worst than Yu Ao Tian in many ways.

## Chapter 218

## Part 1 (One)

"No! Don't!" The villa which is quiet before suddenly filled with Yao Yao screaming sound.

Qi Lian Ao Yun as if not listening and keep on tearing her clothes: "What? You can do it with Yu Ao Tian but why not with me?"

"Qi Lian sunbae, you calm down for moment, this isn't the matter with whomever! I am Yu Ao Tian's lover, so that..." her mouth suddenly gulping back her words because no matter what she will say, whether because of 'money' for saving her family or simply because of money matter, she has become Yu Ao Tian's lover already, telling too much to Qi Lian Ao Yun won't stop him neither.

"Because what?"

"Because..." she calms down herself and shouted: "I like Yu Ao Tian, I only love him, only can do it with him! Understood? Qi Lian sunbae, please don't make me to hate you!" she hopes her excuses could stop Qi Lian Ao Yun.

"Ha, you love him?" Qi Lian Ao Yun disbelieves laughing; his fist is punching at the pillow beside her: "What is good about that man? Do you know his background?"

"Of course I know about his mafia background. But I don't mind it. I don't even mind it at all, even for little bit. And about what good of him, Qi Lian sunbae... don't can you feel it?" Yao Yao on contrary grabbing Qi Lian Ao Yun's collar shirt, her eyes not even blinking and she is so certain with her words.

"Qi Lian sunbae, do you ever see how Yu Ao Tian treating anyone else? I have seen before! And then, the incident in the teacher's room before, I have seen his attitude toward you, I was so curious, why Yu Ao Tian could stand with your attitude toward him?"

"Just now, when Vice CEO Han guaranteed us out from the police station, Yu Ao Tian was dragging you down from the car, his words that he said to you, it

was so obvious the way of loving older brother who talking with his younger brother, I never! I never had seen that kind of Yu Ao Tian before."

These words, it is really honest words from her heart, her interaction with him these days, she has met that heartless cold-hearted Yu Ao Tian, the vicious and also no merciful of him, but now she also can see he as someone who has feeling and emotion too.

"Yao Yao, he had given you to me, after all you still put good words for him?"

Not like this, she really does not know with what kind of ways to deal with Qi Lian Ao Yun who is still in unstable emotions.

To her utmost, now she really hates Yu Ao Tian, she detests him because he made her as if she is stuff not as human-being which he could freely gave to anyone. She really hates him to the point she wanted to bite him to death.

But seeing Qi Lian Ao Yun who is pissed off, she better solve the in front problem faster. "Whatever I said is true. I thought his world only between live and death, but after I witness he together with you, I can see and sense Yu Ao Tian's love. You know how many people jealous; you have someone who cares you so much, patience with you, your older brother!"

"Jealous with me? Ha, you really stand in his sides doesn't it make your waist tired?"

Seeing the hatred in Qi Lian Ao Yun's eyes, Yao Yao heart is shivering.

Both of them brothers are having deep hatred, very complicated, perhaps Qi Lian Ao Yun is viewing Yu Ao Tian as his enemy!

Actually what kind of love-hate can turn out these two brothers? It seems as if Qi Lian Ao Yun not knowing to be grateful of Yu Ao Tian's love?

Just gamble one more time...

Since both of them are brothers, but why Qi Lian sunbae surname is Qi Lian? And Yu Ao Tian surname is Yu? She recalling her memory, when Yu Ao Tian faking to be teacher, he also use Qi as his surname?

Actually what stories hide behind both of these brothers?

"Yao Yao, why must you are Yu Ao Tian's lover? Why? I really don't want to

hurt you! But..." he is standing up, suddenly he gets crazy, frenzy smashing all the things inside the room.

"Qi Lian sunbae!" Yao Yao faster tidying her clothes, she wants to calm down Qi Lian Ao Yun who is going crazy.

"Don't touch me! You are cheap slut!" after said, he raises his hand and landed a slap to Yao Yao's face.

She stands unsteady and then sat down to the floor, silent and dumbfounded touching her face which is being slapped by Qi Lian Ao Yun.

"It is you who force me!" He said before leaving, when he was walking without he realized he stepped on a suit. "This suit?" suddenly he turned to look at Yao Yao, he glared: "You were two years ago..."

"You were two years ago?" when heard Qi Lian Ao Yun's word, Yao Yao slowly looks at suit which is holding by Qi Lian Ao Yun, doesn't this suit is belong to that kind man who gave it to her two years ago?

"Perhaps you may meet that person!" not long time ago Yu Ao Tian took this suit and said, that time she not paid attention, now after she thinks it carefully....

"Qi Lian sunbae, the person who gave me this suit two years ago... was the person is you?"

"Hahahahahha. You were going out from the host bar with that kind of appearance, seeing you two years ago had already known what things Yu Ao Tian done, no wonder you still can accept everything about him. Just as expectedly you are really loves him!" Qi Lian Ao Yun swept his glance at that suit held by him, his pair of eyes dim, at moment he tears the suit...

"later in the future ,what we have is playing!" He waved his hand, and quickly disappeared from the messy bedroom.

In front of Yao Yao is being torn suit, she has waited for two years for meeting that kind person and she even had thought how to repay that person.

Finally she met him but why she must encounter him in this way, too ironic.

It is so clearly in her eyes, Qi Lian sunbae is alike sun, but this time... he is so similar with an iceberg, it makes one heart shuddering.

"What we have is playing!" this words what did it mean?

Eyes is wetting by tears, seeing at the floor which the suit has been torn into pieces. Qi Lian Ao Yun not only tearing this suit but he also broke Yao Yao respect toward him...

## **218** B

**Chapter 218** 

# Part 2 (Two)

Three days later.

"Yao Yao, why are you come back staying at dormitory? Impossible it is because of CEO Yu, right?" At morning, Gong Xiao Man was curiously asking.

"Thing is getting complicated, we will talk it when we back."

"Ugh... thing with CEO Yu how can it not complicated, he is naturally born with complicated, just as expected, I said accurately about him, he with you who is simple really not suit each others." Since that time when Gong Xiao Man saw Yu Ao Tian for the first time, she has known that both of them aren't suit. Of course, the other person who is not agreed with them was Yao Yao's mother too.

"Every fellow student, I am president council Qi Lian Ao Yun, before the morning study ended, I would like to make an announcement to all of you." From the school broadcast, it is Qi Lian Ao Yun's voice, everyone is looking each others with curious expression, what's matter will being announced by Qi Lian president council?

"Since today onwards, Class A first semester Luo Yao Yao student is my girlfriend, I hope all of you...taking good care of her!"

"What!" inside the A class, all the female students are glaring with unbelievable eyesight.

Gong Xiao Man who is sitting beside Yao Yao also surprised: "What is happened? Yao Yao, you and Qi Lian sunbae?"

Since that day happened, she had moved from Yu Ao Tian's villa secretly, and also she never meets him. And about Qi Lian Ao Yun, she also never meet him too, still thought this matter would back to normal, she didn't go to find Yu Ao Tian to "settle the debt". Never thought, Qi Lian Ao Yun is suddenly moved with this plan, he even making an announcement in front of many people about their relationship?

"Luo Yao Yao just expectedly is seducer; President Qi Lian even got seduce by

her."

"That's right, really shameless. I even thought that President Qi Lian will be together with Vice President Gu, geez, this generation the vixen indeed awesome."

Inside the teaching room, the female students are gossiping, while Yao Yao only can bite hard her lips.

Did this what Qi Lian sunbae mean by playing? He did an announcement about their relationship in front of many people, intentionally to draw female students' attention to strike her.

This gives a feeling as if the super star that is not willingly to publicity who is his girlfriend to his fans. Qi Lian sunbae is intentionally to say such things just to force and trap herself in this big cage?

At sudden stands up, Yao Yao is rushing out, and before she is rushing out, Long Qi has already rushed out from the classroom...

"Hey, Yao Yao, Yao Yao!" Gong Xiao Man sees thing not good, she also rushing along.

"Luo Yao Yao." Hallway, Feng Ke Xin both of hands enveloped her chest, leaning to the wall, when seeing Yao Yao running closer, she is moved one stepped to block her in front: "You are really capable, one of your hands is catching my second brother, the other hand is grabbing president council Qi Lian. Does my second brother know you are born naturally as vixen? Oh, that's right, if my second brother knows; he would not get seduce by you and even scolded me his younger sister."

"Who is your second brother?" Gong Xiao Man who is following at back heard Feng Ke Xin's words, without any courtesy she asked her.

"Xiao Man, forget it, let we move." Yao Yao is pulling Gong Xiao Man's arm, wanted to leave.

This time, Feng Ke Xin is smiling sinister, slowly said: "Luo Yao Yao, since your friend really wanted to know who my second brother is, I will tell her, my second brother is Feng Chen Yi."

Suddenly Gong Xiao Man is halt, stopped her footstep: "Your second brother is Feng Chen Yi?"

"Mm? How?"

"Hahahaha, if this is the case, you better asking your second brother about things between he and Yao Yao. If you really think that Yao Yao seduces your second brother, you are really make big mistake. Obviously! It is your second brother who is not giving up of our Yao Yao!"

"You!"

"Take my leave, bye bye!" Gong Xiao Man is laughed provoking, she pulling Yao Yao faster, disappeared from Feng Ke Xin's face. "How can things be this coincidences, Feng Ke Xin is Feng Chen Yi's younger sister."

2	1	8	C
		_	_

**Chapter 218** 

# Part 3 (Three)

"Still there are something more coincidences. Qi Lian sunbae is... Yu Ao Tian's younger brother."

"Ah?" Gong Xiao Man's mouth is opened wide as if being stuffed with an apple.

Perhaps this is called as fate, the simple and single Yao Yao somehow is getting involved with all this chaos and confusion in such relationship, she is fated to be simple but the future awaiting her isn't simple.

"Qi Lian Ao Yun! What MF you are, do you know what were you broadcasting just now? If you don't know the relationship between Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao, let me tell you!" inside the student council room, it is Long Qi roaring voice echoing.

Qi Lian Ao Yun who is sitting in his chair is smiling: "Of course I know the relationship between Yao Yao with my older brother."

"Why you still did it? We are growing up together since we were kids, no matter what we had encountered, everyone never blamed you, always tolerating you, even my older brother, he MF also sided on you, you wanted to have wind then it wind, you wanted rain then it rains, what do you want more? What did Ao Tian sorry for you, after all you even dare to snatch your own older brother's woman? You MF are you still human?" More Long Qi says more he is pissed off; he is grabbed Qi Lian Ao Yun's collar shirt.

Counting from age, Qi Lian Ao Yun is older by three years to Long Qi, both of them are the youngest in the Yu Long's group and also the closest one, when they were kids both of them were used to play together. But as time passed for long time, Long Qi not really likes Qi Lian Ao Yun and slowly he makes a distance with him.

"This is the matter between my older brother with me, what are you pissed off for. Oh, that's right, I almost forget, since small your older brother always sides me but my older brother also always sides on you, am I wrong? No wonder, you can help Yu Ao Tian to fight!"

"Qi Lian Ao Yun, you are changed simply to say not even know how to communicate with you. I tell you, immediately you make announcement, Yao Yao isn't your girlfriend!"

"She is my girlfriend. Not believe... you can ask her by yourself." After said, Qi Lian Ao Yun is pointing at the Yao Yao who is grasping her breath standing in front of the door.

Long Qi is frowning; slowly he is loosens up his hand from Qi Lian Ao Yun's collar shirt: "Yao Yao, what is happened, actually?"

She is stabilizing her breathe, waving her hands toward Long Qi, at the moment she alike an arrow rushed in front of Qi Lian Ao Yun: "Qi Lian sunbae, what do you want so that you will let me off!"

"It is my older brother who gave you to me, if my older brother wanted to take you back, I will let you off."

"Was Yu Ao Tian who gave her to you?" Long Qi simply to say can't believe on what he had heard.

"Well, I will go and find Yu Ao Tian!"

Seeing Yao Yao is leaving, Long Qi is glaring at Qi Lian Ao Yun with hatred before he left.

"Long Qi, what is going on?" waiting outside the room entrance, Gong Xiao Man is worried asking.

"I do also not sure what is going on. You wait." Long Qi is helplessly creased his eyebrows, hurries he takes out his mobile phone... "The number that you dial is switched off!"

"Damn, now is working time, it is impossible Yu Ao Tian switch off his mobile phone!" he dialled another number: "Hey, brother, where is Ao Tian?"

"Since the open study class ended, Yu Ao Tian hasn't come to office, already three days. You little brat looking for Ao Tian, don't say you are messing at school?"

"I am not! I don't do anything troublesome. Brother, this like this, Yu Ao Tian

has given Yao Yao to Qi Lian Ao Yun as his girlfriend, actually what is going on?"

"What?" Long Ye is dumbstruck, he is trying to recall: "This thing I don't know too, but it does seems that you don't know both of them two brothers matters, moreover Ao Yun who has such shady character, Yu Ao Tian did must have his own reason. You don't get involved! I will go to find Yu Ao Tian and asked him later, I hung the phone."

"Hey, brother! Brother! MF!"

"How, Long Qi?"

"My older brother asking me not to get involved!" but the problem, how asking him not to get involved? Both of Yao Yao and Qi Lian Ao Yun must be hurt!

## 218 D

**Chapter 218** 

# Part 4 (Four)

"Miss Luo, CEO Yu has been three days not coming at office, if you want to find him, you go searching him by your own way to look for him, I can't help you."

"Yao Yao, these times, Master never came back to here, you better search at others place."

Walking in the street, Yao Yao's face is dim, Yu Ao Tian would not do this, he is someone who has responsible, he won't leave at sudden even not go to office for three days, does he... get sick? Though he is sick, where is he?

Her expression is little bit worries, she hurries hail the taxi and goes to the villa where she ever stayed before, perhaps Yu Ao Tian stays there?

She takes the key to open the door...

"Ah...en mm, ah..." from the inner living room, there is woman moaning sound.

"Damn! You want to kill me?"

"It is clearly yours is too big. I can't anymore..."

"Wait for me! Together!"

This voice? Yao Yao is nervously gulping her saliva, when she has already walked at the living room, the bag that she carries is felt down to floor.

As seen, in the sofa, a woman is bending her body in front of Yu Ao Tian.

These three days Yu Ao Tian didn't come to office because, he did this thing with this woman?

"Who are you?" When Shang Yun Yin paid attention to Yao Yao who is standing in front of the entrance, her expression isn't panic at all. On contrary she acts as if nothing is happened, tidied up herself.

"Yu Ao Tian, I have things to speak privately with you." She is trying her utmost to control herself, she does not look at that woman.

"What?" Yu Ao Tian coldly said, back her tidying his clothes.

"I want you to take back whatever you told your younger brother." After said,

Yao Yao is expressionless walking toward the sofa in front, straighten looked at Yu Ao Tian who sitting in sofa.

"Do you know what your status is? After all you dare to order me?"

"I know. But I am human, not your thing, not a thing you like to give to whom then give to whom! Or perhaps..." she paused, she continued to say: "You have given me to your younger brother, by this mean you and I do not have any relation, can we cut off all the ties?"

"Little thing, perhaps you mistaken one thing. In our contract, only you hear my order. I gave you to my younger brother, it doesn't mean, our ties are cut off."

"Yu Ao Tian! Don't you think you are so disgusting?" Yao Yao who trying to keep calm suddenly exploded, Yao Yao is rushing to Yu Ao Tian immediately.

This time, Shang Yun Yin who is sitting beside rolled her eyes, by instinct she rushed, simply to stop in front of Yao Yao: "Little Miss, I really hate your attitude when talking with my boyfriend."

Boyfriend?

Is she Yu Ao Tian's new girlfriend?

Honestly, when she entered seeing at their lovely-dovely scenery, Yao Yao is off guard, she not really paid attention to this woman.

Now after she takes look carefully, she indeed the types Yu Ao Tian likes. No wonder he could cage for three days not even go for work.

But, he seems ever told her that he won't get new liking this fast, didn't he?

But forget it, Yu Ao Tian can find new girlfriend, she must happy on his behalf, if he can let her off perhaps this is the most perfect ending. "Yu Ao Tian, according to the contract, I must listen to your order. But, the contract didn't state, there is one woman share two men, this point, am I right? Either we cut all the ties between us, or you take back what you said to your younger brother, you make the decision!"

Facing with Yao Yao's attitude that ignore her, how can Shang Yun Yin swallow her anger, she raises her hand and give her a slap. "I tell you one more time, I

don't like your attitude speaking with my boyfriend!"

Finger print at her face, she is coldly swept Shang Yun Yin a glance, with pissed off eyesight she looked at Yu Ao Tian: "Yu Ao Tian! You speak up..."

Shang Yun Yin sees Yao Yao ignored her, for once again she raises her hand. But when her hand almost landed to her face... 219 A

**Chapter 219** 

# Part 1 (One)

Suddenly Yao Yao grabbed her wrist: "Miss, you better behave. You better know your place before you speak. Actually at the moment I entered, the person who must get hit were you, I have endured you, what more do you want?"

Actually she really does not want to have anything with Yu Ao Tian's woman, but now she cannot endure anymore, frustrated! After she said she loosens Shang Yun Yin's wrist.

"Ao Tian?" Shang Yun Yin isn't an idiot, she can feel something in Yao Yao's words. Coldly she turned her head and looked at Yu Ao Tian.

"She is my lover." Yu Ao Tian who is silent for this time finally speaking up.

She can see how stranger in his eyes, compare to two years ago when first they met, this is even stranger more.

Yao Yao really suspicious, did this few months her interaction with Yu Ao Tian, was all of it just a dream, now it feels both of them seem never know each other before? Or he is still angry because of Feng Chen Yi? Or perhaps, he is afraid of his current girlfriend jealous, so he is acting alike stranger?

"Oh... so this is the case." Shang Yun Yin smiles: "Little Miss, according to the first come first queue, I might don't have standing point, but... you are only Yu Ao Tian's lover, while I am his girlfriend, this kind of relationship, the dummy also understand?"

She understood, lover is no matter in what kind of circumstances still outsider. "Please you understand one thing, today my coming to here not for fighting for whatever, so that just now whatever you did with him, I see nothing. If you really think you are capable, you can ask Yu Ao Tian to dump me quickly!"

When Yao Yao is talking these things, Yu Ao Tian eyes are gleaming dangerously.

Shang Yun Yin not even can say anything.

"Alright, it seems today nothing will give result for this conversation.

Disturbing both of you." She is smiling sweetly, as if nothing is happened and then leaving the villa with chin up.

It can be said, whatever Yao Yao did today is extremely satisfying, there is no slightly little girl, and on contrary she showed such majestic aura, not losing control of herself.

"Ao Tian, your lover she seems being spoiled to much by you." After Yao Yao left, Shang Yun Yin curved his mouth upwards.

Yu Ao Tian is tied his necktie, slowly walking in front of her: "My matters... there is none of your business! Others, you perhaps mistaken one thing between us, you are... only my one night stand lover who turned be bed-mate."

"Yu Ao Tian, you!"

"Sst, calm down." He smiles sinister extended his hand, caressing Shang Yun Yin's face: "When I still feel some freshness from your body, you better don't do thing that I hate, or else, the consequence you would be ever face it!" after said, he swaying her face, turned his back and left.

Her eyes are staring at Yu Ao Tian who is leaving, Shang Yun Yin at this moment finally witness what the rumours spread that, cold blooded, heartless, mood swinging Yu Ao Tian.

These three days both of them are always close and playing together, doing lovely-dovely. But that time she thought Yu Ao Tian wasn't as scary as rumours said, she thought he is easy to defeat. But now, thing has changed...

"Ha, just as expectedly with the spreading rumours he is heartless coldhearted man. When doing he is sweetest than any lover-couple, but once he turned his face he could be stranger than stranger. But, really interesting!" her mouth is curved up smiles deviously, she turned her body and sat in the sofa, excitedly and also with high-self confident she murmured: "Not disappointed he is the man I Shang Yun Yin likes. What to do? Yu Ao Tian, I really love you more and more!"

"Xiao Meng Li?" Long Ye is driving his sport car, entering the villa's district, when he at the entrance, he spotted at Yao Yao who is walking out, he lifts down his car window, hurried waving his hands: "Xiao Meng Li!"

"General Manager Long?" Yao Yao hurries walking to Long Ye's car side: "Such coincidence."

"Haha, I had called by Long Qi, I come here to have talked with Yu Ao Tian. After I think, he must stay at here."

7	1	$\mathbf{\Omega}$	D
Z	T	<b>y</b>	D

**Chapter 219** 

# Part 2 (Two)

But, starting this moment, this place isn't her place anymore, she is awkwardly smiles: "Hahaha."

"Just in time, I have questioned to ask you, you get in car first."

Yao Yao is pulled the car door and sits down; Long Ye is slowly stopped his car at street side. "Actually, after your open study session ended, I could feel Yu Ao Tian was little bit odd, actually what did you do, offending him?"

After the open study session ended? Was it during the time when Feng Chen Yi celebrating her birthday? "During that time, I, I didn't meet Yu Ao Tian."

"En? It was strange. When your open study session ended, Ao Tian was clearly rushing to the sport field to find you."

What?

Rush...rushing to the sport field? Did he witness by himself between her and Feng Chen Yi?

No wonder since went home from the police station, Yu Ao Tian was speaking with certainty in his every words. "He, he... went to sport field to find me, for what?"

"Of course he came to celebrate your birthday."

"To celebrate my birthday? Didn't he celebrate Miss Mo's birthday?"

Seeing Yao Yao surprised expression, Long Ye is smiling warmly: "So that was what Yu Ao Tian told you? That day wasn't Xue Tong's birthday, perhaps he wanted to give you surprise, so that he told you in such way. He was dragging me to accompany him to choose present last few days ago before your birthday. Just to let you know, that was first time for Yu Ao Tian to choose birthday present for girl."

'Said, Ao Tian, what happen to you today? Why are you taking me strolling with you?'

'Next few days that little thing will celebrate her birthday, so that I want to

choose present for her, you help me to take a look.'

'Ugh, you bring me to take a look? Are you alright? Both of us are mature-grown up men, you should bring Xue Tong to help you?' but at the time when Long Ye is recalled the memory: 'Something fishy, Ao Tian, normally you are hate to choose present for woman, aren't you? Every times when your women birthday you always give them your card, what happened to you today, after all you choosing the birthday present by yourself for Xiao Meng Li?'

'You less speaks nonsense, hurried, help me to choose!'

Indeed, this is the first time for Yu Ao Tian to choose present for a girl, he who is normally impatience with women usually only give a card or cheque for his women and let them spent it.

And then, that was the first time for Long Ye to stroll in the shopping mall for 2 hours, finally he chosen one beautiful necklace. Unfortunately...

"Huh, since he came back from the sport field holding the present which actually must be given to you as birthday present is threw, even the Pub which being booked in order to celebrate your birthday, finally only attended by few of us, let we playing."

After listened to Long Ye, Yao Yao mind 'open' as if something one exploded sound inside her head, finally she could feel Yu Ao Tian feeling when seeing she with Feng Chen Yi together.

No wonder he could...

What to do?

She really never thought she who never told Yu Ao Tian about her birthday but after all he still knew it, furthermore he still choosing present for her by himself, prepared surprised for her.

These days when she staying together with Yu Ao Tian, is not that she never seen his impatience towards women, she also could feel he is type of man who won't be enough with one woman. But why must he do all these things for her?

When she thought to this point, she could not help herself to weep and mopping, her eyes are moisten and she could not control herself to let out her crying voice, she really does not know why Yu Ao Tian do all this thing, but more she thought about it more she could feel her heart hurt and pain, the pain let her to recall all those memories when she staying together with him, those days.

There is bitterness but at same time sweetness in her heart, she tried her utmost to release out all the bitterness and let the sweetness stays, but every thing that makes her happy really stick to herself, unforgettable.

"Xiao Meng Li? Are you crying? You don't cry ah, I feel afraid to see girl crying, especially little girl like you."

Trying to stop her tears, she is forcing herself to give smiles: "I, I am okay. General Manager Long, I feel little bit uncomfortable I will back to school."

# **Chapter 219**

# Part 3 (Three)

"Mm, oh, oh yeah..." suddenly Long Ye remembered on something, he takes out a beautiful box from his pocket: "This is for you!"

She is slowly taking it, curiously she frowning: "This is..."

"You take a look first." Long Ye is mysteriously wink his eyes.

She is so curious; opening that beautiful box, inside it is a classic key diamond necklace from Tiffany, why Long Ye gives this for her?

"Do you like it? It is for you."

"Ah?" she is surprised and open-wide her mouth, hurried she puts the necklace back to Long Ye's hand: "No, No, General Manager Long, I...I can't have it, thank you... thank you for your good intention."

"It is okay, just thought it as our token of love when we are having an affair at Yu Ao Tian's back."

Seeing at Long Ye devious expression, at sudden Yao Yao expression changed to be serious: "General Manager Long, does this necklace is birthday present which Yu Ao Tian wanted to give me?"

At sudden, Long Ye good looking face which is smiling deviously stunned: "How can you know it?" he sees Yao Yao not really happy, so he wanted to tease her little bit, but never thought she could guess it right at an instant? No wonder the 200 IQ little girl isn't sham.

"Haha, because I believe the friendship between General Manager Long and Yu Ao Tian." At the beginning she is so curious why Long Ye told her these things, but after she listened to Long Ye last words, she has already made guess this necklace must be birthday present for her from Yu Ao Tian. If... Qi Lian sunbae can have same feeling alike General Manager Long about Yu Ao Tian, thing must be best. "General Manager Long, didn't you tell me this necklace had thrown by Yu Ao Tian, did you?"

"I have used all my effort to bring it back from a pair of couple who took it

before, after all... this is the first time for Yu Ao Tian bought present for girl. This has memory value things, what a pity if being lost?" after said, Long Ye expression suddenly changed to be so serious: "Xiao Meng Li, perhaps there is thing that I mustn't get involved in yours matters, but... I hope you can cherish and take good care of this 'necklace'."

#### Cherish?

Now the sceneries when she was barging inside the Villa flowing in her mind, her ears feel burning hot when listened to Yu Ao Tian and his girlfriend conversation before.

Who can tell her, what must she do in order to 'cheerish'?

Her eyesight is glancing at that necklace inside the box, her heart is tightening, these three years she must play her role as a good lover...

The coming days, because of Qi Lian Ao Yun's matters, Yao Yao becomes victim for all female students at school.

"Yao Yao, how will you settle this thing? What did CEO Yu mean by giving you to his younger brother? Really must be praised him, this thing he even could do it."

She is also wanted to settle down this matter, these few days she is trying to contact Yu Ao Tian, but he seems to avoid her, she went to the company, he left; she went to his house, he wasn't there.

"Now I could not contact Yu Ao Tian, so that I am trying to change Qi Lian sunbae attention."

"En, this is good too. I accompany you go there." Both of them are holding hands walking to school entrance, simply to say heading to the seniors' area.

But at this time...

"The Majesty Queen is coming!"

"Impossible? Really?"

"Really! Really! Just now I have spotted her sport car parked in school parking area, if you are not believe all of you can wait for moment, must be able to see Majesty Queen!"

Countless of Senior students are packed on the hallway to entrance, as if they are coming to greet great person with expectation eyesight's.

Yao Yao also wanted to cramp inside but she could not.

"What is going on?"

"It seems the school legendary person is coming to school."

Seeing Gong Xiao Man's eyes which is filled with expectation, Yao Yao also curiously blinking her eyes: "What legendary person?"

"I did also know it from the school discussions. As the rumours said she is big missy from one of four great mafias group, not only she is beautiful but she is also quite smart. The most legendary is, she is good fighter too one person can fight with ten men. But, one year ago, because her health problem she was taking school leave. She backs to school, Yao Yao how if we are also take a look this legendary senior sister how her looks?"

#### Cold sweat

Although she does not want to see, all the seniors are coming down and blocked her access.

"Faster, faster, Great Majesty Queen is coming!" following at the sound, all eyes are gathered to see at the graceful figure which is walking not far from there.

Her brown wavy hair is swinging follows her walking pace, she is walking alike model but with domineering aura.

2	2	0	Α
	_	•	•

**Chapter 220** 

# Part 1 (One)

But when Yao Yao sees that figure, her eyes are opened wide: "How can be her?"

"Ugh, Yao Yao, do you know her?"

She knew, of course she knew, this woman has an appearance which is not easy to be forgotten, moreover the place where they met before, perhaps she won't ever forget it for her entire of life.

"She is Yu Ao Tian's new girlfriend. Xiao Man, Let's move faster."

"Oh my, Yu Ao Tian has new girlfriend again? What he is thinking of?"

"Xiao Man, perhaps you are mistaken my relationship with Yu Ao Tian, there is no matter whether he has new girlfriend or not. The most important thing there is something that I hadn't told you before."

"What?"

"Yu Ao Tian saw me...with Feng Chen Yi together."

"Ah?" finally Gong Xiao Man understood why Yao Yao could be ended in this kind of circumstances. "Yao Yao you are really, although CEO Yu does not have feeling toward you but how could you expect him to tolerant this thing happened? With your plain character, better you choose one of them, between Feng Chen Yi and Yu Ao Tian, who does make you happier."

"I have told you about my decision!"

"Ugh, you are right... well since you have chosen CEO Yu, don't with Feng Chen Yi..." after she until here, Gong Xiao Man face suddenly turned to be dark: "Forget it, it not like I never witness Feng Chen Yi stubbornness, although you don't meet him, he will still find the way to force you. Your fate is such bitter, encountering two stubborn men. Ah..."

This is the most troublesome part which is facing by Yao Yao, she and Yu Ao Tian had made contract and she also has already made preparation to spend time with Yu Ao Tian for three years, but Feng Chen Yi at other side is nonstop

coming to disturb, it makes her heart growing annoyed to Feng Chen Yi but at same time it irritates Yu Ao Tian's side.

"Let's we move faster!"

"mm."

When both of them are turning their back, Shang Yun Yin voices flowing: "You? Standstill!"

She furrowed her brows, slowly turned back, very calm she smiles: "Senior sister, Calling me, what can I do?"

"Ha, I thought my eyes got problems, so it really you. So coincidences, after all both of us are studying at same university?"

That is right, she also thought how so coincidences could it, she could study at same school with Yu Ao Tian's new girlfriend!

"Yun Yin, do you know my girlfriend?" another familiar voice is coming over.

Yao Yao is dumbfounded at her standing place, turned her head, as seen that is a pair of hand is hugging her.

"Ao Yun? She is your... girlfriend?" Shang Yun Yin smiling eyes, as if she is waiting for one big show, she really does not know, the person who had mentioned by this little girl as Yu Ao Tian's younger brother actually is Qi Lian Ao Yun? She seems as if knowing what a big secret.

"Mm, yes."

"Not bad, your girlfriend is so cute. I and her... not long time ago, 'accidentally' met. Is it, Junior sister." Shang Yun Yin is smiling and stroking Yao Yao's head.

She is creased her forehead, this woman is growing up so beautiful, good fighter, in her eyes, Shang Yun Yin is especially 'smart'!

"Ao Yun, I go to the classroom first. Later we have talked."

"En."

Shang Yun Yin is leaving still surrounded by countless men, Yao Yao is coldly swaying away Qi Lian Ao Yun's hand which is hugging her: "Qi Lian sunbae, I advise you better to stop. Be careful to be laughing stock, this you still don't

know!"

"Being laughing stock? I don't mind! If really get embarrass, anyway I and Yu Ao Tian will be embarrassed together!"

Actually how much Qi Lian sunbae hates Yu Ao Tian? After all he could do this kind of scarification? "Qi Lian sunbae, this is the last time I warn you. I hope you know that I am only Yu Ao Tian's lover. If three of us relationship being found out by others, the person who most embarrassed still is me. You did so many things; I could feel you are simply to outrage of me!"

Never thought, she really never thought Qi Lian sunbae who she respects so much finally get into conflict with her, but... all of this because Qi Lian sunbae who forced her to do, she really does not have any choice!

"Who ask you to be Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend..."

When Qi Lian Ao Yun is passing her that moment, he is whispered this words to her.

Dumbfounded for the moment when she is moving.

At sudden Qi Lian Ao Yun is grabbed her wrist: "Why must you! Why must you!" she can see his melancholy eyes filled with question that he does not understand.

Listened to his hoarse voice, Yao Yao could feel, Qi Lian Ao Yun ways of speaking is not for Yu Ao Tian, but for hers. Why...Qi Lian Ao Yun can say so?

## **220** B

Can you guess what this chapter about?

## **Chapter 220**

### Part 2 (Two)

Sport class.

"Xiao Man, what are you doing?" in sport field, Gong Xiao Man keeps looking at the paper in her hand and smiles stupidly hihihihi.

Yao Yao feels curious; she took that piece of paper to let her see: "This is your relationship diagram!"

As she takes a glance, Gong Xiao Man is drawing the diagram very neatly....

Qi Lian Ao Yun and Yu Ao Tian is sibling (brother – brother).

Feng Ke Xin and Feng Chen Yi is sibling (Sister – Brother).

Yu Ao Tian and Feng Chen Yi is business partner.

Shang Yun Yin and Qi Lian Ao Yun is classmate.

Shang Yun Yin and Yu Ao Tian is couple

Luo Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian is lover.

Luo Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi is Ex-couple.

Luo Yao Yao and Qi Lian Ao Yun is couple in names.

Wait wait... think carefully, it is written so accurately. "Xiao Man, I see you are so boring and going to be crazy."

"Boring? Geez... why don't you say that your relationship diagram simply to say is more complicated than novel stories whom married into billionaire family, simply to say yours is too terrifying. Yao Yao I am watching you, if you fight and killed one, I will change red line in this diagram relationship into black line. At last, I hope in this relationship diagram will only last you with your future husband, Jia You (adding oil)!"

Killed one? Her current goal is, peacefully spending her three years with Yu Ao Tian, anyone she does not want to provoke. But... the best anyone doesn't come

to provoke her!

"Junior sister. You guys also have sport class?"

When both of them are chattering suddenly there is voice come to interrupt, when turned back, this senior is?

Ah! He is Lu Chuan! That school scoundrel, who came to harass Yao Yao on the first day, came to school!

Gong Xiao Man and Luo Yao Yao are looking each other, moving one step backward: "Senior Lu Chuan, what do you want from us?"

"Oh, nothing, I just heard the rumour said that Junior sister Luo Yao Yao is dating with president council Qi Lian Ao Yun, so that I coming here to congratulate. I have felt heartache for sometimes."

He is pretended to cry sorrowful! Gong Xiao Man narrowed her eyes: "Well, thank to Lu Chuan Senior, I and Yao Yao are going to group with other classmates, we take our leave."

"Huh!" Lu Chuan is smiled, one of his hand is grabbing Yao Yao's wrist: "Junior sister you can leave. But junior sister Yao Yao must stay. I have so many things wanted to talk with junior sister Yao Yao." He is smiling sinister while touching her small face.

"Senior Lu Chuan! What do you want to do? Now I am student council committee, if you are forcing me, I will make report to the teacher!" Yao Yao does not feel afraid of him and she even roared at him.

But the current Lu Chuan is also not showing his fear expression: "Go and make report. My backing is coming already, what I scared of?"

Backing? What did Lu Chuan mean?

At the time when Lu Chuan harassed Yao Yao, Gong Xiao Man has felt something bad is coming, secretly she is leaving. "Xiao Li, Do you see Long Qi?" "No."

"Anyone of you see Long Qi?" She is panicky looking for Long Qi asking group of fellow classmates.

"Before the sport class was starting, I seem to spot him sleeping at the backyard of sport field."

"Thank You." What teacher? What Discipline committee? Gong Xiao Man never believes in those people, when she was in Japan only money speaks up! And today in this school too, looking for teacher better for her to look for Long Qi.

Panicky she is running to the backyard of the sport field, just as expectedly Long Qi is laying under one big tree.

"Long Qi! Long Qi!"

Feeling there is someone who moving his body, at sudden Lon Qi wakes up: "MF, looking for death!"

"What are you screaming for? Every day you just knowing to sleep, Yao Yao gets in trouble! Faster go to help."

"Flat chest gets into trouble? What's trouble?"

"Aiya, we talked while walking." Gong Xiao Man is pulling Long Qi's arm and faster rushing to the place where Yao Yao is harassed.

### **221** A

There is no word to describe about this chapter except: Long Qi, you rock!

## **Chapter 221**

### Part 1 (One)

Luckily they are arrived in time, that brat Lu Chuan's men are surrounding Yao Yao. "Long Qi, those men, they are keeping on harassing Yao Yao not let her go."

"MF!" pair of Long Qi's hand inserted at his pocket and walking shabbily toward there: "Hey, what are you doing?"

"Who is this man?" Lu Chuan sees Long Qi killing aura quite strong, asking to someone beside him in low voice.

"Lu Chuan, he is first year student, this few days he is quite famous, as rumours said he won when fought with 20 men during the open study session. Now most of the first semester students are admire him.

"Is he that awesome?" Lu Chuan isn't Long Qi par, courtesy he smiles: "Junior brother, now I am talking with Junior sister, we are discussing about our feeling, this such thing you better don't get involved?"

"You discuss with whomever, I won't get involved and none of my business. But, you are not allowing discussing your feeling with Yao Yao!" Long Qi is moving step forward, one of his hands is pulling Yao Yao to his embraces.

"Junior Brother, Senior really admires you. I advice you one thing, this girl I have decided I want her!"

"MF, don't you understand human language? I have told you, you are not allowed to touch Yao Yao, understood?"

"Do I need to hear you?"

"Why must you so protected to her?"

"Geez... what is going with you? Don't you understand? Although she has already had husband, I will still same protect her, there! Is! None! Of! Your! Business!" Said Long Qi, he brings Yao Yao and Gong Xiao Man to stand aside, while he moves one step to face Lu Chuan.

"Long Qi is so handsome, so Man, just as expected he really can depend on!" hide behind Long Qi, Gong Xiao Man is secretly supporting Long Qi.

"Xiao Man, you mustn't call Long Qi, based on Long Qi character small thing will get bigger later on." Now Yao Yao really does not know what to do.

"So what should do? Person alike Lu Chuan that forceful, if not giving him little bit color (lesson), he will come harass you till death and won't give up on you."

This... indeed so true! "Geez..."

"Junior brother, since you are so arrogant, Very well. Zhu Que group, do you ever heard?" after said, Lu Chuan is rolling up his sleeves, showing his member' tattoos as one of Zhu Que group's men.

"Haaahahaha."

"What are you laughing of?"

"I laughed at you MF idiot!" at sudden Long Qi curved his hand into fist and give Lu Chun a punch right in his nose.

"Lu Chuan?"

"Lu Chuan?

"Lu Chuan, are you okay?"

"Damn!" perhaps Long Qi is one of the hardest obstacle in Lu Chuan's life who he ever met, using soft way is useless, using hard way also useless, simply to say he is hard to deal. "Faster, calling Big Sister comes."

"No need, I have seen." One cold voice is flowing over Shang Yun Yin is taking four men with her who are faster walking in front of them...

"See, faster take a look, it seems Long Qi will have fight with others."

"With whom?"

"I don't know."

"Sst... doesn't all of you see that woman in front of her is so familiar?"

"Ah! She seems... she is our school person of the year, Senior sister Shang?"

"Impossible? Long Qi is fighting with her? For sure he will lose. Just to know

she is from mafia background. Go, faster we take a look." Those students who followed the sport class, all of them are paying attention to them, seeing weird atmosphere, surrounding and watch for the crowded.

"Yao Yao, just now Lu Chuan mentioned about his backing, does the backing his mean... is that Shang Yun Yin?" Gong Xiao Man is whispering.

She is creased her forehead, seeing women are fighting to gain favour because of jealousy she had seen so many before, moreover things regarding between Yu Ao Tian relationship, she really afraid someone like Shang Yun Yin won't stop easily.

Must be there a conflict occurred? Or must let someone get killed then satisfied?

This is Yao Yao's reason why she wanted Yu Ao Tian to dump her when he is intending to find new girlfriend, she really does not want to fight over some strange jealousy.

"Junior brother, I never liked to waste my saliva talking to others. Just now you are hitting my man who is Zhu Que Group's men, should I asked him to fight you back or should..." Shang Yun Yin pair of hand is enveloped her in front, coldly she pointed at the outside school.

### **221** B

**Chapter 221** 

# Part 2 (Two)

As seen, outside the sport field there is open construction ground which parked dozen of black sedan cars neatly.

"Oh, such rush? There are such many cars; at least there must be more than fifty men inside."

"As what I said, Senior Sister Shang has mafia background, although Long Qi is good fighter how could he win over that many of men, after all he is alone. Really must not provoke her." Said one of the fellow student as if pouring cold water.

Few men who have good relation with Long Qi coming nearer, whispering: "Long Qi, you faster apologized to Senior Sister Shang. Her background is too complicated and she isn't someone we can provoke."

Perhaps, for this few men's eyes, Long Qi is a brat who is not more than a good fighter. But his real background only Yao Yao who clears of it.

"Ha." Long Qi is laughing coldly, he is spreading arrogant aura, standing with straight position he is slowly taking out his mobile phone: "Give all of you three minutes, must arrived at First University south gate! Others tell Nan Lu to come along."

"Long Qi!" Yao Yao has suspicious this phone call, whom he is calling for, but the problem is Long Qi does not Shang Yun Yin is Yu Ao Tian's new girlfriend?

"Forget it. She is..."

"Sst, flat chest, you follow me." Without waiting for Yao Yao to finish her words, Long Qi has been dragging her hand, walking heading to the south gate.

"Hey, little brat, where are you going?" suddenly Shang Yun Yi is asking at back.

Long Qi is curved up his mouth, grinning, slowly turned his back: "Woman, doesn't you want to play? How can we have good game inside the school?"

Seeing they are going to the south gate, Lu Chuan does not understand asked: "Big sister, what to do?"

"Tag along them, together go out."

The battle field is changing from the school sport field to outside; those fellow students are following by climbing to the school gate to watch the crowded.

Because this place is the safest place and they won't get splash of blood.

Time is ticking away.

"Little brat, three minutes is almost ended, your men, aren't they come?"

Listened to Shang Yun Yin provoking voice, Long Qi is smiling deviously. And at the next second...

As heard, there are countless engines sounded from all corners.

"This is, what sound it is?" those fellow students who are watching at the crowded, all of them are looking each other. One of them is screaming and pointed not far from there: "Hurry takes a look, there are many cars coming over here!" carefully counting at least there are more than twenty cars.

When the cars are parking aside, when the men out, there are about 100 people.

Shang Yun Yin is little bit panic.

"Xiao Long Xian Sheng (Mr. Long Junior / little)!" those men are standing in front of Long Qi, bowing with respect.

At moment, the domineering and also arrogant aura spread out from Long Qi.

When all those men lift their head, there are 'Yu' words embroider in their shirt which reflect on everyone eyes who sees it.

```
"Yu... Long.. Shi!"
(Yu Long Group)
```

"Faster see, all of those men are from Yu Long group!"

"Long Qi, don't say you are big boss of Yu Long's group, right?" this question is asked, those fellow students are dumbstruck.

"Yao Yao." Nan Lu is smiling while walking heading to Yao Yao's side.

"Yao Yao, who is she?" Gong Xiao Man is curiously pointed at Nan Lu.

"Later I will introduce both of you." Thing in urgent she needs to settle is... finding a chance to talk with Long Qi, Shang Yun Yin is Yu Ao Tian's current girlfriend! This is getting complicated!

"Xiao Long Xian Sheng?" Shang Yun Yin carefully looking at those black shirt which embroider with Yu, rolled her eyes: "You tell me, your older brother is Long Ye!"

"So what?"

"Hahahaha. I am your older brother's friend." Shang Yun Yin helplessly sighed, she really never thought this 19 years old Junior brother is Long Ye's younger brother, she thought Long Qi is Yao Yao's 'guardian', a body guard.

"Ya! Worst. I just remembered Shang Yun Yin is Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend, Yu Long group is Yu Ao Tian's group, does this mean?" Gong Xiao Man as if awaken from her dream.

Yao Yao is helplessly shrugging her shoulders: "So that, I have stopped Long Qi before, but before I done, he has..."

"Long Qi Junior brother, on this way looking at you indeed you are having few similarity with your handsome older brother." Shang Yun Yin is smiling and walking in front of Long Qi.

But Long Qi is acting on contrary; he lowers his head, coldly said: "Get rid this woman and also her men!"

"Yes! Xiao Long Xian Sheng!"

"Long Qi, what are you saying?" Shang Yun Yin shocked and also dumbfounded on her spot.

Yao Yao and Gong Xiao Man who are standing behind of him also dumbstruck: "Long Qi?"

As seen all the Yu Long men are surrounding Zhu Que Group's men.

"Long Qi, didn't you hear what I said before? I am your older brother's friend!" Shang Yun Yin panicking makes an explanation.

"You have said it. You are my older brother's friend. But... you are not my friend, I am Long Qi since the beginning never paid anyone debt!" at sudden he

lifts his head, his deep eyes gleaming, one of his hands is waving: "Move!"

PS: Last part will post soon

7	7	1	
Z	Z	T	L

### Part 3 (Three)

His way of speaking really awesome, Yu Long's men are fighting with Zhu Que's men.

"Wo Kao. Long Qi... really... Man." Gong Xiao Man is looked at Long Qi's handsome face.

He has very serious and mature looked, this expression is extremely difference compare to his daily carefree expression. He is so charming, really cool and awesome; she really not dares to believe, after few years how good looking Long Qi will be in the future?

"Hehe, Xiao Long Xian Sheng when he really serious, he is very similar with Big Boss. Even Big Boss Yu ever said, Xiao Long Xian Sheng is born naturally to be the Master of Underworld, later or sooner he will expand to the bigger world. But Big Boss Yu does not agree to let Xiao Long Xian Sheng to take mafias' path, so that he always had objection. Unfortunately...

"Unfortunately, Long Qi only has interested in Underworld." Yao Yao is continuing what Nan Lu wanted to say.

Since the day she knows Long Qi, she had found out this man doesn't have any interested with working, studying, but solely he only interesting with mafias' world.

Of course, she also understood the reason and objection of Yu Ao Tian to not let him get into underworld, after all the future of the mafias and politician really had so much differences. She finally realized, Yu Ao Tian actually is someone who has consideration toward every friend in his side. No wonder whether Manager Long or Vice CEO Han or others are willing to entrust their life to him.

"Long Qi! Must you really make Yu Long group to fight with My Zhu Que group?"

"Nan Lu, do you know why I called you here?" After all Long Qi is ignoring Shang Yun Yin questionable eyesight, coldly he looked at Nan Lu and asked her.

"Of course I know it, Xiao Long Xian Sheng if not at last resort, he won't fight

with women."

"Mm, well Nan Lu you take care her."

"Yes, Xiao Long Xian Sheng." Nan Lu is smiling alluring; slowly she is standing to Shang Yun Yin in front.

"I am your Big Boss Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend! I don't believe all of you dare to touch me!" Shang Yun Yin is coldly said; suddenly Nan Lu footstep is stopped.

She is doubt and takes a glance at Long Qi.

"Ao Tian's woman, I am recognized Yao Yao only. Others, I don't care! Nan Lu, what are you hesitate for, you go ahead!"

"Yes!" after said, Nan Lu kicks Shang Yun Yin and goes ahead.

"Long Qi really gives enough face for you, Yao Yao. You are too X awesome." Gong Xiao Man is envy, jealous, so hateful she must give thumps up.

She helplessly creased her forehead, slowly walking to Long Qi beside: "Is this good? Long Qi, she really is Yu Ao Tian's new girlfriend."

"Yao Yao, didn't you hear what I am saying before? I don't want to speak for second times!" Long Qi's face is showed expressionless in front of her.

At this moment, she feels little bit stranger with this Long Qi, after all he used to call her 'flat chest', 'flat chest' normally with that carefree and shabby attitude. Now when seeing him serious, moreover he is called her 'Yao Yao', still not used to with it. But... this feeling, no words can describe it.

"This Shang Yun Yin is really good fighter but Nan Lu also not bad. Really cool ah!" Gong Xiao Man is watching two women fighting without even blinking her eyes, their skill are almost at same level.

Long Qi who watching from far away impatiently furrowed his brows, taking an opportunity and chance to give her one hit, finally Shang Yun Yi being cornered!

This is the difference between man and woman, no matter how good one woman can fight but encountering man who also good fighter, moreover Long Qi is one of the best fighter in Yu Long's group.

"Damn!" Shang Yun Yi is felt in ground, one of her hand is pressing down by

Long Qi. She hatred gritting her teeth, her other hand is secretly takes out her mobile phone and sending short message to						

#### 222 A

**Chapter 222** 

## Part 1 (One)

"I am sorry, Xiao Long Xian Sheng, still needs you to take care." Nan Lu is feeling guilty, lowering her head.

"It is okay." He is coldly shaking his head, ordering his men to replace him pressing down Shang Yun Yin.

"Nan Lu, you go ahead. If I don't call you to stop, don't stop."

"Yes!" Nan Lu is slowly walking in front of Shang Yun Yin in front, gives her slap by slap.

"Long Qi, are you..."

"Are you sure to do so?"

"Just now I have..."

"I had told Yu Ao Tian to come here!" Shang Yun Yin is talking while slapping by Nan Lu.

Long Qi seems as if not heard anything, coldly stand there, seeing everything.

"Long Qi, I think this is more than enough. If Yu Ao Tian comes, perhaps thing will be more troublesome?"

"Based on Ao Tian nature he won't come to meddle with this kind of matter. Moreover, if today I don't give this woman lesson, later in the future you will be more troublesome!" Long Qi words at moment shut up Yao Yao's mouth.

That's right, if not standing steadily, if not do the thing to the utmost, this indeed only gives herself more trouble!

But...

Still one thing, she is so certain, Yu Ao Tian will come today. She can't say out the reason, but simply she could feel it. As long as Shang Yun Yi secretly texted Yu Ao Tian about this matter, informed him that she also get involved, then... Yu Ao Tian must be come!

After half day passed, all of the Zhu Que's men had defeated by Yu Long's men

while Shang Yun Yin face is swelling alike pig, but it seems Long Qi does not has any intention to stop.

Whoasah....

One massive car engine sounds, can feel this time car is more than those cars which Long Qi's called before!

"Long Qi, this..." Yao Yao heart is tightened, curiously looking at him.

Long Qi pair of hand slowly curls into fist, his handsome face changes little bit: "Ao Tian really coming!"

She knew it...

As long as Yu Ao Tian knows this thing involving her, he must be coming!

Those cars are parked at that construction empty field.

Everyone who is surrounded, each of them showing questionable expression: "Who is coming this time?" all of them are staring with wide eyes wanted to know which 'great' person is coming.

Unfortunately when the leader is getting down all the men in black clothes are holding black cloth and also covered the 'battle field' tightly around so the outside people won't see anything that happens inside.

"What situation are we? How can it feel as if the Emperor is touring?" Gong Xiao Man is looking her surrounded men who holding black cloth; her face is showing suspicious expression.

Yao Yao rolled her eyes...

Perhaps Yu Ao Tian does not want people to know he also get involved in underworld, so that he is asking his men to cover the 'battle field' from outsiders? It seems he really wanted to wash-clean!

"Xiao Long Xian Sheng?" Nan Lu could sense Yu Ao Tian coming so she hesitate asking Long Qi.

"Let's stop first. Nan Lu." When Long Qi said...

As seen, Yu Ao Tian is wearing black suit and expressionless, he brings Mo Xue Tong to the 'battle field'.

An instantly, all the focus and attention which belong to Long Qi at sudden goes to Yu Ao Tian, with his appearance everyone can see who is the Emperor and who is the Great General, this what is called as the Emperor Aura.

#### Part 2 (Two)

"Big Boss Yu!" all the Yu Long's men are bowing 90 degree with respect to Yu Ao Tian.

"Ao Tian! Ao Tian!" Shang Yun Yin even rolling and climbing, rushing to Yu Ao Tian's feet.

He is glanced coldly to Shang Yun Yin who is in front of him, his eyes looking at Long Qi, Yao Yao... "Yun Yin, who hits you!"

"It's, it is the girl who named Nan Lu, standing beside of Long Qi."

"Xue Tong, Nan Lu is your men. You know what to do?" Yu Ao Tian is staring coldly when speaking.

"Understood."

"Wait! It was me who hit Shang Yun Yin, there none of Nan Lu business." Yao Yao is stepped forward, block at Nan Lu in front.

Mo Xue Tong is simply passing her and directly give Nan Lu a slap.

Yao Yao can see clearly Shang Yun Yin happy grin in her face, she, Shang Yun Yin is too smart, perhaps she knows very well Yu Ao Tian won't do anything to Long Qi, so that she directly pointed at Nan Lu, on this way she could position herself and second she wanted to scare Long Qi, really cunning!

"Miss Mo..." Actually she wanted to stop by begging to Mo Xue Tong, but Yu Long's men who does not dare to listen to Yu Ao Tian? Panicking glanced at Yu Ao Tian: "I said, it was me who hit her, do you understood?"

Yu Ao Tian acts as if he does not see anything, his eyes are looking at other way.

What does he want? Does he know that she not scared being hit or does he want her to feel pain by seeing Nan Lu gets hit? Yu Ao Tian is really vicious, every times he will do everything in extreme way, and it always hurts other!

Every slaps which slapped by Mo Xue Tong to Nan Lu, Yao Yao can feel her heart in aching.

She bites her lips, Yu Ao Tian this is because you force me! She is curling her hands into fist: "CEO Yu. Are you sure keeps on hitting?" the naive small face is smiling sweetly.

Yu Ao Tian narrowed his cold eyes, but not take a look at her.

"Whomever you guys, the Yu Long's men do, there is none of my business, and I also not comprehensible with the you guys matters. I just know the today's Yu Ao Tian currently he is Berson Group CEO and also the biggest shareholder moreover he also candidate for election." She titled her head, pair of her hand are enveloped her in front: "But CEO Yu, you have girlfriend who has mafias' background, are you sure you can do the political campaign? And now you are using the mafias' way to settle the problem? Ckckckck, don't you afraid it will spread and affect your future?"

No one believes Yao Yao would say something like this!

Yu Ao Tian deep pair of eyes an instantly gleaming with killing intention...

All the Xiao Di of Yu Long are shivering because fear.

"Yao Yao." Long Qi knows this time Yao Yao might get in serious matter, hurries he pulled Yao Yao's arm.

Thing has gone to this point already, what must she afraid of? But...

I am sorry Yu Ao Tian, if you are not harming Nan Lu, I will not... use this way to face you. I am sorry...

"Do you think Yu Ao Tian will be threatened with your words?" unknown since when, Mo Xue Tong has already stood beside Yao Yao: "Normally the people who dare to say this kind of words, they only have one possibility!" after said, her eyes are flashing, her ring weapon is...

"Xue Tong Jie (sister Xue Tong)!" before Long Qi can react, Mo Xue Tong's ring has already been an inch piercing in Yao Yao's neck, Yu Ao Tian is calmly spoke.

Mo Xue Tong is alike living weapon stopped when she accept the order, her hand is in mid-air!

Yao Yao can feel relieved little bit, she is almost slumping on the ground, actually she really does not know what is going on, and she only feels as if she is getting near to death God.

"Long Qi, you settle all the mess you did." After said, Yu Ao Tian is slowly walking toward Yao Yao in front, while his deep bottomless eyes...

Without waiting for Yao Yao to regain herself, Yu Ao Tian has already put his hand in her collar and pulled her with his single hands as if she is little chicken. With faster footstep 'disappear' from the 'battle field'...

#### **222 C**

Some of you are despising Yu Ao Tian because his actions. He made Nan Lu got slap by Mo Xue Tong. From our point of view (readers), Nan Lu did something great because she was helping Long Qi to fight Shang Yun Yin in order to protect Yao Yao. But, from Yu Ao Tian point of view, Nan Lu is acting against the 'protocol' because she was receiving order under Long Qi, who is not her boss. That's why she got slapped not because Yu Ao Tian sided Shang Yun Yin. Actually, Yu Ao Tian could close one of his eyes but in order to give Yao Yao lesson he chosen to let Nan Lu felt little bit pain. that slap isn't real hurt compare to the all days when they were in Japan, establishing Yu Long group.

Again, who is Yao Yao? She is so kind and soft-heart little girl who also treasure friendship no matter whom the person is, included Nan Lu. She felt much better if that slap is given to her rather than landed on Nan Lu's face.

Here I presented...

#### Part 3 (Three)

All the people who witness the scenery are dumbstruck, All the Yu Long's men who don't know Yu Ao Tian's character?

What He hates the most is being threatening by others, as long as he has intention to kill he won't be soft-hearten, after Yao Yao said those threatening words, all of them are clearly can see the intention to kill her in his eyes.

But... when Mo Xue Tong took an action, they also could see Big Boss Yu hesitations in his eyes.

Was it an illusion? If it really an illusion, was the killing intention in Big Boss Yu's eyes are real? Or the hesitation of Big Boss Yu was the real one?

"Ao Tian! Ao Tian!" Shang Yun Yin seeing Yu Ao Tian leaving, although she must climb or roll, she must tag along him.

To unknown, she is being stopped by Long Qi, at sudden his hand is pulling her long hair: "Stop calling him, can you see he has already dumped you?"

"Being dumped?" Shang Yun Yin is dumbfounded, at the next second, the confident that she has in her eyes is cast off. Impossible! Yu Ao Tian won't dump her, she has confident although she must use any ways, she won't leave that man!

After leaving the battle field, Mo Xue Tong is bringing Nan Lu along with her and also Long Qi to the car which is parking at road side...

When open the car door, Long Qi takes a peek to inside: "Huh, Brother, you are here, why aren't you showing up?"

"Showing up your pig head! Shang Yun Yin is my friend, am I showing up to help her? Or seeing her being hit by you?" don't see usually Long Ye smiles warmly and gentle, but he is most cunning in the Yu Long group, he has nickname as 'smiling tiger / wolf in sheep's clothing' and 'public relation' these beauty names.

"Geez." Long Qi is pouting his mouth, he sits inside the car.

"What are you geez for? You little brat, long time ago when asking you to school you hit your teacher; asked you go to Berson for working you hit your colleagues; now sending you to University you even flame the fire. Can you let me live in peaceful?"

After listened to Long Ye nagging, Long Qi who is sitting inside the car quickly changed into 'blank' mode, he has used to with these groups of brothers and sisters scolding voices.

"However, this time you are really hit to meritorious. Along the street, Yu Ao Tian kept on praising of you."

"Ah? What situation we are getting in?" Long Qi is excitedly turned, seeing his older brother smiling face, and also expectation.

"Hahaha, for long time Yu Ao Tian had intended to get rid four great China mafias' group, not long ago we had discard Chi Long group, Qing Hu Group. He is still thinking the excuses to discard Zhu Que group, this battle, Zhu Que Group must think the way how to revenge to us, when the time is arrived..." after said to this point, Long Ye eyes gleaming with sly.

"Woah, would it be too ecstatic? But..." Long Qi remembered one thing: "Since Yu Ao Tian wanted to fight against Zhu Que group, why he helped that woman to vent her anger?"

"Ugh, this better you go to ask Yu Ao Tian by yourself, perhaps, hahaha... hahahha." all because of Yao Yao!

"Nan Lu, believe me, today you being hit won't be in vain, in the future I will pay that woman in double!" Mo Xue Tong who is sitting beside Long Qi is carefully applying ointment to Nan Lu, who is coldly at there. And then he glancing at Long Ye: "Can I?"

"You hit that woman, why are you asking me?"

"Doesn't she your friend?"

"Since the beginning I always weight love more than friendship, okay? Or else just now I would not stay inside the car, watching the show." The most

important is, Long Ye never thought Shang Yun Yin as his best friend or real friend, the most he only sees her as friend who has value, that's all.

Mo Xue Tong is creased her forehead, glaring Long Ye with her cold eyes and then ignore him.

"Brother, you are begging love too straight forward, aren't you? Don't you afraid Sister Xue Tong drown you?" Long Qi is joking, who knows Long Ye handsome face is blushed red.

"Now the person who I wanted to sink is you!" Mo Xue Tong is roared at Long Qi while glared him.

He frowned: "Sister Xue Tong, where did I provoke you?"

"You say? You fought, why did you call my men with you?"

"Ugh, I don't have female among my men, but you have lots of female under you, of course I called Nan Lu to come over!"

"I tell you, Long Qi, next time if you dare to call my men to help you fighting, let's we wait and see!"

<b>223</b>	Α		

# Part 1 (One)

"Gezz..." Long Qi for once more being scolded by groups of brothers and sisters, unhappily he rolled his eyes.

Seeing his expression, all the people inside the car can't help not to laugh at same time.

This is Yu Long's group; this is the bonds which create by Yu Ao Tian among his fellow brothers.

Perhaps in front of outsiders, Yu Ao Tian is heartless and also cold-heart man, Long Ye is the most cunning, Han Li Shang is the coldest ones, Mo Xue Tong is beautiful yet thorny, Long Qi is most unruly. But as long as they are grouped together, the aura that they had with them are fading away, very similar with an ordinary best buddies chattering, so relax and ease. But...

No one can barge into their world!

\*\*

"Let me go, let me go, this is still in school, you behave." On the way back to dorm, Yao Yao is being 'kicked' by Yu Ao Tian. The students who are passing by looked with curious eyesight.

Until Yao Yao comes back to her own dorm room, Yu Ao Tian finally let her off.

But this silent situation somewhat is created scary atmosphere. Worst, what will Yu Ao Tian do in order to deal with her? After all, she had said... that kind of words!

"Little thing, you are a wolf who know to eat but not know the feeder, after all you dare to bite on me?" his eyes sparkled at the words, he pushes Yao Yao to bed.

Nervously gulping her saliva, she hurried stand up: "This... this is, you forced me to do, you are on purposely asking Miss Mo to hit Nan Lu, only to hurt me, next time you can go straight hit on me!"

She is very aware with what she said. "Go straight to you?" Yu Ao Tian is giving

her snort, slowly walks in front of her, his slender fingers are stroking her white small face: "You skin is so thick, does it useful to hit it?"

What? After all he dares to say her thick skin?

"You! You are the one who has thick skin, pei (cursing words)!"

"Little thing, you dare to curse me?"

Seeing his eyes, Yao Yao does not even feel fear of him, on contrary...

In this moment she is searching for that familiar atmosphere and aura, that feeling when he is purposing teased her and makes her laugh. No fear, only a familiar feeling.

"It is obviously you cursed me at first."

"Still dare to talkback?" after said, Yu Ao Tian is flipping over his body and press down Yao Yao in bed, pair of his hand is pressing Yao Yao's arms.

"You, what do you want to do?" she is blinking her big and moisten eyes, nervously to fight back.

"Of course to shut your mouth!" Yu Ao Tian curved up his lips, his sexy lips are brushing her soft lips.

This is really an addictive scent which he can't let go.

This few days, every day Yu Ao Tian spending time with Shang Yun Yin, but no matter how many times they 'played' together, but he could not find that satisfying feeling, forever he felt in empty-stated.

But having contact and interaction with this little thing, forever he is lingering her. Especially whenever he tastes her lips sweetness, he feels as if he is sucking flower nectar and more he touched more he addicted to hers and wanted some more.

It seems, without he realized he had toxin by her.

Pair of his lips lingering for her lips, Yao Yao, "huhuhhu." Indeed struggling, for the indescribable feeling.

Yu Ao Tian lifts his head, taking deep breath and little bit in rush: "Bao Bei, stick out your tongue!"

No, don't, this is... so embarrassing.

"Faster, Bao Bei stick out your tongue!" his speaking tone is changed to be little bit forcing.

Yao Yao shut her mouth, not moving.

"I count to three, hurried stick out the tongue! 3! 2!"

When Yu Ao Tian almost counted to one, Yao Yao is closed her eyes, helplessly she stick out her tongue.

This time, he is looked alike someone who wait for good meal...

Gradually, his breath is more and more disorders, his big hand which is pressed her arms, slowly moved and groped her waist.

Very sensitive...

"uh!" feeling her hands aren't pressed anymore, at sudden Yao Yao opened her eyes, restless struggle to fight back. But she isn't par for this man?

He is so skilful untie her bra...

For once more he is stuff her mouth, so she keeps "huhuhuhu" begging him.

Suddenly his finger is stroking at below his belt.

The indescribable line has invisible crossed, she unconsciously taut her body, her entire body is completely wet by her sweat.

This is feeling of shameless...

#### **223** B

Not only Yu Ao Tian, I also not sure what type of girl Yao Yao is. I am not sure how her brain is working.

#### Part 2 (Two)

Her white snow skin slowly blushing pinkish.

Yu Ao Tian finally released her little mouth, "hu..." she heave a sigh and takes deep breathe, nonstop panting her breathe, "Yu Ao Tian, You..."

Without waiting for her to finish her words, a greater excitement crashes him. She is not tolerating him for standing in front of her head, shyly she begging him: "Don't ah~ don't ah~, this, this is still in school, don't like this, Yu Ao Tian!"

There is strong and forceful 'invasion' to her body, not long after that somehow that feeling is coming back to return attacking her sense again.

Unknown what to do, her body especially so sensitive today, perhaps because the icy relationship between them are cracked and melt down?

'bamn'

Still in process of thinking, suddenly the dorm room door is being kicked opened.

Who? Who is coming? Yao Yao's white face is still blushing red.

Yu Ao Tian faster covering Yao Yao body and with unhappy expression looked at the doorway...

"Older brother, you must know, now Yao Yao is my girl friend. You and her still doing this thing, didn't you feel ashamed?"

Is? Qi Lian sunbae? After heard his voice, Yao Yao is lying in the bed not dare to move, nervously close her eyes. She does not understand, how can Qi LianAo Yun speaks that easy and straight forward, obviously...

"Ao Yun, you must have been interacting with Yao Yao for sometimes, haven't you gotten enough?" Yu Ao Tian is standing up, slowly pulling Yao Yao up from the bed and hold her in his embraces.

"Of course not enough, at least I must wait her until she pregnant my baby?"

after said, Qi Lian Ao Yun moves in front and wanted to pull Yao Yao to his side.

But Yu Ao Tian not even loosens up his hand, she is as if something being pulling left and right by two men.

"How about this, Ao Yun. Anyway whatever I say, you won't listen. How about we asked Yao Yao to make a choice, if she chooses you, I will never show up again; if she is choosing me, you must stop to harass her. How is about it?"

"Yu Ao Tian, what you mean by your words? Do you want to take back your words?"

"En?" Yu Ao Tian is shrugging his shoulders, smiles deviously: "Last time I did only tell you, 'do as you please', but not said letting Yao Yao to be your girl friend."

"You! Older brother, you are indeed cunning, whatever you did always left back up path for yourself!" Qi Lian Ao Yun loosens up his hand that pulling Yao Yao's hand, his voice is dripped with sarcasm.

No wonder Qi LianAo Yun can say Yu Ao Tian so cunning, even Yao Yao as audience also thought... Yu Ao Tian indeed very cunning! This man no matter what thing he did, he is always having confident to win. Ha. Really once he attacks, he won't retreat. She is admired him!

"Bao Bei, come, make your choice."

"En?" Does Yu Ao Tian go for real? Really wanting her to make choice? Actually... honestly...

This is one of the best opportunity to leave Yu Ao Tian, isn't it? After all he is asking her to make decision, but... "Qi LianAo Yun, I remember that night I ever told you about my mind. Until now, I hadn't changed it!" she spoke with certainty, she is holding Yu Ao Tian's arm tightly, purposely showing her loving expression.

There is a time Yu Ao Tian is bad! Really bad!

But...

Hahaha, this time she has made decision to stay peacefully beside this man for three years, except, 'sky change', or else she won't ever violate the contract



7	7	7	
Z	Z	3	L

### Part 3 (Three)

The most important thing is...

She could feel Qi Lian Ao Yun who is standing in front of her is scarier than Yu Ao tian, perhaps the melancholy prince she had seen before only... someone at her past!

"Luo...Yao Yao!" at an instant, Qi Lian Ao Yun pair of melancholy eyes suddenly turned into pair of eyes which gleaming with anger, he is curling his hand into fist tightly.

Yu Ao Tian senses something odd, he hinted Yao Yao with his eyesight: "Bao Bei, you go outside first."

"Oh." She is carefully gets away from Qi Lian Ao Yun's side and immediately slips out from the room.

After Yao Yao has gone out, the room is growing in silent, Yu Ao Tian lets out heave sighed: "Ao Yun, this time can you give up?" He used very calm speaking tone, as if the most ordinary from ordinary way of older brother who is speaking with his younger brother, that way. There is no such aura of underworld bosses or the mighty CEO way of speaking.

"Yu Ao Tian, you are too vicious. When I was looking for you, asking for Yao Yao, had you planned for today's result?"

"Due to your character, if that time I didn't give Yao Yao to you, you must do something more impulsive things toward her. Better like now, I was happily giving her to you, by that way she is much safer." Yu Ao Tian would not deny the time during his younger brother asking, he was little bit angry, but in order to ensure Yao Yao safeness in the future not to be harm by Qi Lian Ao Yun, he must do it.

Just as what Long Ye said, no matter what Yu Ao Tian did he must have his own purpose.

Perhaps this is best thing to make, fulfilled his younger brother hanker for Yao Yao, letting both of them to have interactions, at last he asking his younger

brother to give up, by this way Yao Yao is completely safe.

"Hehehehe, Yu Ao Tian, you this person always schemes at anytime. But, you are really brave enough, didn't you afraid I would force Yao Yao to me?"

Did this count as brave? Perhaps, but... still same words, Yu Ao Tian never fight the battle which he not sure to win. "Most of time you always said I am heartless cold-hearted, actually Ao Yun, compare to me, don't you are more than me?"

"You had dated many girls before, there are lots of women surrounded you, this is not Big Brother does not know, but except your first love you never use your heart, big brother never seen you use your heart to any girl before. But until..."

"Last time, when you were at the teacher's room and also that night, the contemplation which you shown toward Yao Yao, I have understood everything. Ha, how could you do something makes Yao Yao hate you?"

Yu Ao Tian is too understood this younger brother very well, perhaps his eyesight, his movement, he might able to see what his younger brother would do.

Although Qi Lian Ao Yun hides his shady character within that warm and melancholy eyesight, but Yu Ao Tian knows, once his younger brother has used his feeling to anyone, he won't ever able to do anything which would harm that person!

#### 223 D

**Chapter 223** 

### Part 4 (Four)

"I am your older brother, who is seeing you growing up, I understand you." Yu Ao Tian is speaking with caring tone and let out his heavy sighed, standing up and gently patting his shoulders.

An instantly, his white face is turned to be dark, at sudden he pushes away Yu Ao Tian's hand: "Yu Ao Tian, you better watch yourself, you are not even understand about me. You remember! Soon or later I will drag you down!" after said, he turned and walked leaving.

At the moment he opened the door, Yao Yao is eavesdropping their conversation.

When both of them are looking at each other, Qi Lian Ao Yun is unhappily bites hard his lips, turned and left...

Although Qi Lian Ao Yun is not admitting how understandable Yu Ao Tian about himself, he still needs to admit it, that he didn't force Yao Yao, he was really afraid... being hate by Yao Yao!

'Why you must be Yu Ao Tian's woman?' this days, Qi Lian Ao Yun has been asking himself many times, Yao Yao was not understanding what did he mean by it.

But Qi Lian Ao Yun clearly understands himself, why he continuously keeps asking this question. Because...

He really, he really loves Yao Yao. That kind of flattering feeling when see her for first time, love at the first sight, even he does not know, how and why he could fall in love with her, so deeply.

If she isn't Yu Ao Tian's woman, perhaps he would slowly pursuing her, protecting her, and dear her.

But after that night, when Qi Lian Ao Yun found out her relationship with Yu Ao Tian, what he left for both of them were one sarcasm and piercing laughing sound, and then left, masking himself with unhappy, hatred and also helpless expression.

He hates Yu Ao Tian, he loves Yao Yao, the person he loves is the person's woman that he hates, other than frenzy and struggling in his heart, it seemed his eyes had been blinding by his heart hatred.

So that, that night he came back to villa, asking Yao Yao from Yu Ao Tian, as for the reason... simply because he wanted to take revenge toward his older brother? Or because he wanted to make Yao Yao as his? Ha, still he does not know himself!

"You are so good to Qi Lian sunbae." Yao Yao is walking slowly to the dorm room, with faint empathized facial expression.

"En? I am bad older brother, or else why my younger brother could hate me so much?" he shows his smiling face, slowly sits down at the bed, his eyes is filled with helpless.

"It is not. Although I don't know why Qi Lian sunbae hates you, but... later or sooner he will understand about your goodness."

That's right, soon or later he will understand.

Yao had heard all these two brothers conversation when she was at outside. When Yu Ao Tian is speaking with his younger brother, his way of speaking is forever so earnest, that patience, she really never seen this Yu Ao Tian before, honestly, how older brother could be so tolerant with his younger brother, this is not much can see. Especially the man is that Yu Ao Tian, a domineering man!

Qi Lian sunbae really not understands how Yu Ao Tian using his heart.

But, most of time she also not understand, isn't her?

Z	23 E				

# Part 5 (Five)

If not because of eavesdropping both of brothers conversations, perhaps she will hate Yu Ao Tian because he gave her to his younger brother and never know his reason to do so. She blames him, resent him, cursing and scolding him, at last she hates to the point she wanted to kill him.

But, in the reality?

How is not understandable she with Yu Ao Tian?

Perhaps he is so lonely, right? This man who is not good in explain himself, a man who is good in hiding himself, although he is being misunderstanding, still he will taking the responsibility and bear it by himself silently, he even can use his heart to think about others standing point. Yu Ao Tian is really...

How pity he is!

She close tight her mouth, takes a deep breath, she slowly walking to bed head and takes out the beautiful box: "This, Thank You."

She not really wanted to recall thing that happened during the night of her birthday with Yu Ao Tian, but seeing the case with Qi Lian Ao Yun, she feels that she must face Yu Ao Tian, facing with his kindness, using her heart, sincerely thank this lonely, mighty, and also cold man.

"En? This?" Yu Ao Tian's face longer, using one of his hand taking that beautiful box from Yao Yao: "This damn Long Ye, he really has his ways!"

"How could you know this is done by General Manager Long?"

"Apart than him who is busy doing, who else will do it!"

To be honest... Yu Ao Tian observation ability, really... scary which let people to shudder and get far from him, if later in the future she wanted to tell lie to him, will it expose soon? How smart he is?

```
"Come, Bao Bei, turn."
```

<sup>&</sup>quot;En?"

"Turned back."

"Oh." Yao Yao is turning her body, backed Yu Ao Tian.

He is taking out the necklace from the box, slowly put it on her neck.

Still same words, Yu Ao Tian will cherish more the things that he had lost for once before, this present is clearly had lost before, but at last it could come back to the owner's hand. Just alike the watch he wears...

"Later, without my order, must not be taking it off!"

From her back is flowing Yu Ao Tian commanding voice which could not be rejected by her, she nodding her head: "Oh." Slowly she is lowering her head, looking at the necklace which put on by him...

'Thump thump' strangely her heart beat faster, this feeling?

She burrowed, her heart is thumping because get moved? Perhaps...

After she experienced this thing she really had thought, there is as if nothing ever happened between both of them, feeling she just gets back the thing she missed during her birthday.

"Yu Ao Tian..."

Seeing her who backs him, Yu Ao Tian pulled her into his embraces, whispering at her ear: "What?"

"You break with Shang Yun Yi, okay."

'thump thump...' her heart beat is faster compare just now, she... how can she suddenly give him such suggestion? Asking him to... break with his girlfriend?

At sudden Yu Ao Tian who is still cuddling at her dumbfounded for moment, his deep black eyes are not gleaming.

At the next minute...

Oh, got an excuse! Yao Yao is letting out her heavy sighed, finally she knows why she must say that. "The thing I said before wasn't joking. Shang Yun Yin has mafias' background; she will affect your future. Before the election period, government will do the investigating regarding your background clearly. Once

the government side found out your girlfriend is someone from mafia' background, they will matter this thing to reject your election right."

He can feel that Yao Yao knows very well about politics. She is slowly turned her head, blinking her big moisten eyes toward Yu Ao Tian, very seriously: "If you really need girlfriend, just find a girl friend who has politician background, perhaps this thing will be lot easier."

So this is the reason why little thing asking him to break up with Shang Yun Yin? Really..., Yu Ao Tian is giving mocking laugh; tighten his hands which are gripped on her waist, pretending to be angry: "Who do you think I am? Am I the person who eats soft rice and depend on woman? Or am I type of person who can't live without woman?"

"Ugh... I, I don't mean it."

"Well, let me ask you, have you ever counted how many women you had chased away before?"

What is called as how many women were being chased away? She dissatisfied burrowed: "If you and Shan Yun Yin break up, it is only two persons okay? Don't make me as if I am your love-breaker."

"Ha, only two?" Yu Ao Tian is narrowing his eyes, grinning deviously; rested his head to her shoulder, whispered: "I ask you, since we are together, how many girlfriend I had?"

"Ugh..." Yao Yao this time just remembered, it seems he dated 2 women! Cold sweat...

"Well, how about you don't need to date anyone? Or else you dump me. You one person step on two boats for certain you will tumble!"

#### 224 A

#### **Release Schedule:**

I will post A Naive Short Tempered Girl (ANSTG) three times daily (Yes, you get to read one part during your meal time, breakfast, lunch and dinner) Every Monday to Friday. and then every Saturday and Sunday I will post one part together with others project translation so, still three times daily.

here I presented...

## **Chapter 224**

#### Part 1 (One)

"Dump you?" Yu Ao Tian is turned her body: "Dump you so that bless you to reconcile with Feng Chen Yi?"

Her heart is shivering for while, naturally her face gets to be longer, with her eyes, she is glaring at Yu Ao Tian deathly.

There is no slightest changing in his eyes, not alike he is angry or get frenzy, it seems this words just flowing out in that way?

No matter what, Yao Yao still does not want to miss this opportunity to give him an explanation: "During binding in contract, I won't together with anyone, this is my principle."

"Principle?"

Yes, principle, she will work to her utmost to suppress all her feeling for Feng Chen Yi, she only does not know how much time she needs to do, but no matter what, within three years she will keep herself according to the contract. "You are in my saddest circumstances, helped my family, you helped me to go through the most difficult times I had. So that, I will persistent until to the end."

Persistent until to the end? Principle? This little thing always says he is heartless, but now what she said... isn't she more heartless compares to him?

"Bao Bei, packing, packing up your stuffs, let's goes with me." Yu Ao Tian is changing the topic.

"Ah? Go? Where are we going?"

"You say?" he is grinning deviously.

Yao Yao can feel his real intention by saying 'go', her small face is darken, unhappily she is creasing her eye brows: "I want to stay at here!"

"Go!"

"Yu Ao Tian!" Endure! Endure! She bites her lips hard, she uses nice speaking

tone: "Though I go with you, but still to my unknown time you might chase me out, why must so wasting energy? The most important is, doesn't that place stay by Shang Yun Yin?"

"Who say to you she stays there?"

Doesn't she? But why last time when she went there she spotted both of them...

"No matter whether she stays there or not, I won't go back to there."

"I don't ask you to back and stay at there."

"Ugh?" her misty eyes rolled: "Your villa in the mountain I also won't stay there!"

"Also not there."

"Ah? The new place I do also won't go!"

"Also not the new place."

Faint, she really wants to faint; she is going to be faint by Yu Ao Tian, not this one, not that one? So where does he want her to stay?

Both of them are having 'verbal' battle for while. Finally it is ended by outraged Yu Ao Tian, she is forced to pack up and followed him leaving the school.

This man, forever always this domineering, when he is happy he will teased her, when he is unhappy he will chase her away. She is counting carefully since the day she becomes his lover how many times she moving house?

Does he think her as his pet? Called and come just goes as his orders. Too much!

"Bao Bei, later you stay here."

When the car stopped and parked in front of apartment, Yao Yao knows this place.

Here is Yu Ao Tian most modest and simplest building, it is only one single bedroom apartment, though she had ever come here two times, it has engraved deeply in her memories. Because staying at here, the 'Yu Ao Tian' is someone different from that Yu Ao Tian who used to be.

"Geez." She is pretending to piss off and rolled her eyes, sitting at the passenger seat not moving.

Yu Ao Tian is coldly swept on her, he wanted to flame but at sudden he is suppressing it: "This place others than Mo Xue Tong, no one ever come; if we are fighting, you stay, I leave!"

Huh? "Really? This is what you said." "Yes."

"Hihihihi." This time, Yao Yao finally showing her smiling face, happily she takes out her luggage from the car, as if a tough girl rushing inside...

It can be seen, Yu Ao Tian has placed her staying at so many luxurious places, but she loves this place much compare to those because here is most cozy and warmest place.

Of course, this... is also a place Yu Ao Tian most loved!

### **224** B

**Chapter 224** 

## Part 2 (Two)

Seeing she is rushing toward, Yu Ao Tian is helplessly smiling, actually based on his strong and forcing character, asking Yao Yao to stay is so easy, isn't it? Why must he give so many explanations to her, also promised to her? But this time, he really wants her to stay happily in the 'house/ home' he loves the most.

"Bao Bei, come, accompany me to take a nap, after wake up, I will take you dine out."

"I don't want you go taking nap by yourself. I don't feel sleepy." She acts as if sculpture does not want to move even an inch from sofa.

Yu Ao Tian is furrowed his brows, he held her alike sack bag, lift her and put her into master room.

"I don't want to sleep. You put me down!"

Outrageous tossing her to bed, when she wanted to sit down, he has already affixed to his strong body. His arms firmly encircled her waist so she can't move.

Rotten Bastard man, if she has chance, she also wanted to let him taste the feeling being affixed and also gives him helpless feeling.

Eyes are open widen, looking at the ceiling. Not long after that, beside her is the man who turned facing her who has rough breathing.

So quick felt asleep?

Titled facing his side, carefully to look at his face, he has high nose, moderate fuller lips, his 360 degrees of perfect face and also his fair skin, he indeed rare handsome man. As additional his calm temperament, noble and extravagance, really wanted to know how his parent look alike, how could they born this perfect son?

Oh ya!

Parent? Until this point, she only knew his younger brother is Qi Lian Ao Yun, but never heard from him about his parent, really strange, although they had passed away, at least at home must have their picture? Why there is no picture

no matter among of his many houses or villas there is no pictures or things related to his parent?

Yu Ao Tian family background really is mysterious, just similar with his mysterious personality, it has possibility at one moment alike sunny bright sky but in other moment can be gloomy dark cloud. Just expected he is type of man she must avoid.

Her petite body is leaning closer, her moisten big eyes are seeing at him who furrowed and creased his forehead so tighten. Hehe, this man although he is sleeping he still keeps nervous stance? Really bitter, his brows are deathly locked together, really want to stretch it apart.

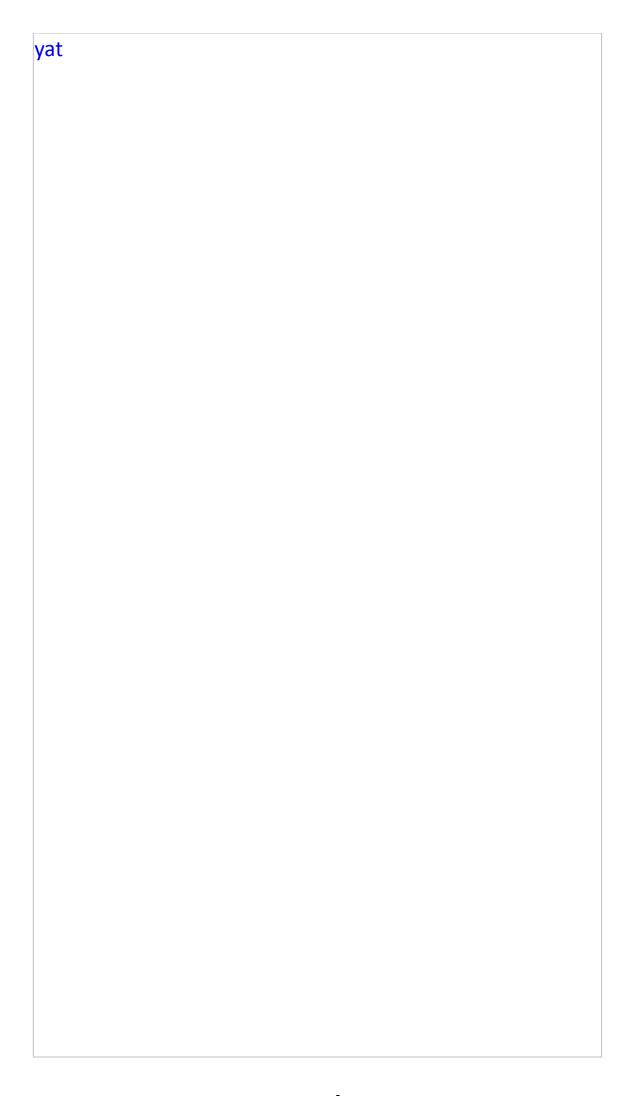
She is softly pressed his locked brow together, Yao Yao is sniffing... really good scent, what shampoo he uses, the scent smells so good, his hair is so dark.

Humph, God isn't fair, he is growing up so handsome and yet there is no pimples at his face, even his hair is taking very good care. Really makes one envy, jealous and hate.

At sudden she rolled her eyes: "Hi hi." She is curved up her mouth, grinning deviously, very careful she is trying to loosen up Yu Ao Tian's hands which encircling her waist, she is taking off her rubber hair band from her hair, humph, who ask you acting so bossy! Who asked you so bossy! Who ask you being unreasonable!

'Ding dong'

### 224 C



## Part 3 (Three)

Not long after that, the door bell is ringing from outside.

At sudden Yu Ao Tian is opened pair of his eyes, the first thing that catch by his eyes are Yao Yao small face which is furrowing: "Humph, humph, who, so noisy and annoying!" Her eyes still closed but her mouth is muttering cursing words.

Still say not sleepy, never thought this little thing is sleeping more soundly than him! Yu Ao Tian awake and sit down and then run to open the door...

Outside the door, Han Li Shang, Long Qi and others are standing.

"Ao Tian, since when you..." when Han Li Shang spoke half way, at sudden his handsome iceberg face is dumbfounded.

While the others three people are wide-opened their mouth, they are control themselves not to laugh at him and moves their face to other way of direction.

At moment Yu Ao Tian senses the atmosphere little bit weird, he turned his body and dashing into bathroom.

When he is standing in front of mirror, the mirror is reflected an extraordinary handsome face but the in front hair is tied with rubber band, his appearance is so funny.

"That damn little brat!" Yu Ao Tian is untied the rubber band from his hair, pissed off gritting his teeth.

"Hahahaha." Those four persons who standing outside the bathroom are laughing except Han Li Shang, three of them are laughing hard until their stomach hurt.

Yu Ao Tian's face at while is green another time is red, in order to saving his face he only can pretend to be strong and calm: "Why you guys looking for me?"

"Just this, Ao Tian, the lawyer who is responsible for your political election suddenly resigned, moreover he with his family are immigrating to South Africa, I tried to bring them back from South Africa but the Government of South Africa has issued out protection order for them."

"What?" Yu Ao Tian is furrowing his eyebrows, his pair of eyes is gleaming coldly: "It seems that is done by that man, that old thing Zeng Kai Rui has paid attention towards me."

"Impossible? You have hidden everything so carefully, there is no way he could find out your real status?" Han Li Shang is speaking while changing a glance with Long Ye.

Yu Ao Tian still with his dark face, slowly sitting down at sofa: "The South Africa government with Zeng Kai Rui relationship aren't simple, Northern Europe countries there are also have alliance with him, since that lawyer could get South Africa government protection, this is absolutely because of Zeng Kai Rui's ordered!"

"What to do now? We only have half of month before the election, although we can invite the replacement lawyer but still we must find someone we can trust. If Zeng Kai Rui really keeps eye and has been watching you, if keeps on delaying, he will find out more. If we give up this year election, waiting until next year, everything will be too late."

This point, Yu Ao Tian is extremely clear, two years ago when he was still in Japan he was in hurrying to acquisition Berson Group and also expand Berson Group in the fastest way, all because of he wanted to find the fastest way to be the politician and joining the election. It could be said, his main purpose is being politician.

"There is no other ways, also can't be trust, still need to find the replacement lawyer to do all the things. After all, none of us who has an authority in this field."

"Understood." Han Li Shang is coldly nodding.

Beside is Long Ye who is nervously speaking: "Ao Tian, Xiao Meng Li..."

"Sst." Yu Ao Tian expression is an instantaneously changed , his finger is pointed inside the master room.

Immediately Long Ye reacted, he speaks with very low voice: "Is she here?" Yu Ao Tian is silent nodding his head.

"That, we don't have anything to say, we take our leave." Long Ye is intentionally speaking in high tone.

Beside him is Long Qi who is creasing his forehead, he is very clear what his older brother wanted to report, but once he remembered Yao Yao who is inside the room, there is slightest guilty feeling in his heart, he really wanted to know, that time when he told Yao Yao about the burning villa case, was it right or wrong thing he had done.

"Ao Tian." When few of them are heading to the door, Han Li Shang's foot step is stopped, he silent for while, his cold eyes swept on Yu Ao Tian's black hair: "Did you ask that little girl to tied your hair on purposely or did she do it when you were sleeping?"

### **224** D

**Chapter 224** 

## Part 4 (Four)

After listened to Han Li Shang's voice with worries tone, everyone seems to be awaken from their dream, all of them were laughing at Yu Ao Tian but they forgot one thing...

Yu Ao Tian is someone who has very high sensitiveness. He almost alike Cheetah!

This is not bragging or exaggeration words, although he is sleeping soundly, a movement within 5 meters can immediately awakened Yu Ao Tian, he also could make quick judgement whether friend or foe, furthermore he could make fastest counterattack.

But today, a woman who sleeps in his side could be so easy to tied rubber band in his hair, after all he not even realized it, if that person is his enemy, perhaps he might already lost his head.

"Rest assured, I know what to do. You guys take your leave." After he sent off Han Li Shang and others, he is expressionless getting back to master room.

Soft bed, Yao Yao is lying with face facing up to ceiling, with eyes still close, her cute and innocent face very similar with chubby baby that pouting which makes other people wanted to pinch it.

Yu Ao Tian is walking slowly to there, his sharp eyes are glancing at her little hands which pulling the quilt tightly, ha... this little thing knows she had done something wrong, what she pretending for?

She still not makes any moving when he is lying at her side, his big hand is naturally put on her lower abdomen. That sensitive touching is provoking on surface of her clothes...

Unconsciously Yao Yao is burrowed, her eyelashes also followed shivering.

That big hand is transmitting warm feeling; she really can't help herself to continue pretending, faster she stopped his hand by pressing it, opened her eyes, and questioned him: "What are you doing?"

"Not pretending anymore?"

"Ugh..." cold sweat, just as expected she mustn't pretend to be smart in front of this man.

At the time when Han Li Shang and others coming, actually she had already wake up, but because she was afraid get punishment because being mischievous, so that she must pretend to sleep.

"Hihihi, you won't blame me right?"

"I won't blame... you had helped me to style my hair, how could I blame you?"

Staring at his devious grin, at sudden Yao Yao could feel chills running on herself, his face is showing smile but his eyes are so cold, will he revenge at her? Absolutely he will!

"Bao Bei, let me style your hair too."

"No... no need." An instant she is protecting her own hair with her pair of hand.

Yu Ao Tian is smiling deviously, slowly he is stood up: "I don't say that I will tie your hair." After said, his pair of strong hands grabbed her waistband.

"Don't ah! No!" Yao Yao is using all her strength to struggle from him: "I...
there cannot be tied."

Damn!

Who could tell him, this naive little girl how can she speak such seductive words with so innocent expression?

"Bao Bei, now you are as expectedly so seductive. Come, let me check it, check it." After said, his pair of eyes gleaming, he is pulling down her underwear.

"No!" she wanted to resist but it is too late, it only left quilt between them.

To unknown Yu Ao Tian is faster one step, get to look. "Aiya, you still same like before. Naked (too obvious)."

He... how could he like this?

"You, can't you not say it out loud?" she is avoiding his eyesight, an instant her small face is blushing.

"Bao Bei, you are so seductive, are you trying to seduce me?"

"Of course not!"

"So why are you touching yourself?"

Rotten bastard! Didn't he know the reason why? Less or more Yao Yao understood the vague words, in order not to get trapped by him, she shut her mouth up.

Yu Ao Tian is grinning deviously furrowing his brows, his big hand is pressing her back hand that cover her Mrs.V...

"You, what do you want to do?

"Ha." He is showing his playful smiles, he squeezing her middle finger, strongly moving around.

This...

"Humph..." Feeling as if a strong electric-shock is flowing in hers, her small mouth can't help to let out moaning sound.

"Bao Bei, is it nice to play by yourself?"

Enough! Enough! She really wants to shut her ears so that she does not need to hear him. "You let me go!" her little hands are restless, but no matter how she tries she can't sway away his big hand.

"Doesn't like? Since you dislike it, but why you show reaction?" He is smiling deviously speaking with mischievous tone, but the other hands...

"Ug." She is nervous biting hard her lips, she uses her utmost strength to resist, but no matter what she do it is pointless.

After while, she lost control. "Enough, stop." Simply to say she is going to be crazy, her fingers are being controlled by Yu Ao Tian, and this is must stop.

"How can it be enough? You must feel bad now?" Yu Ao Tian is smiling deviously; his finger is gently touched...

"Uh en..." Yao Yao is taking deep breathe, impatiently moving: "Don't move anymore! Please don't move! I feel bad!" this way of speaking is bringing either feeling ironic or ashamed, forcing her white face to be\*\* ripples.

"Ah..." she is moaning longer, she is reaching the peak.

Seeing how fragile and weak of her, Yu Ao Tian is grinning deviously, pretending to speak: "Bao Bei, every time at this time, you are especially seductive, if there is an opportunity I really wanted to photo you, showing the most real of yourself."

### 225 A

Chapter 225

## Part 1 (One)

"Have you done eating?"

"En.." she is nodding with fears.

"Come with me!" Yu Ao Tian is standing up, faster walking out from the restaurant; he goes straight to the Chanel store at the first floor.

"Mr. Yu, welcome." One of the sales girls is welcoming Yu Ao Tian passionately.

Does he want to buy thing? When she stills in her hesitate-state, Yu Ao Tian has pointed at Yao Yao. "Choose one piece formal gown for her."

"Yes. Mr. Yu."

Ugh... what situation am I having in? "Why, why are you buying me a formal gown?"

"This Sunday it will company annual meeting, you go with me!"

"Ah?" with what status she will be going there? As the ex-employee? But the colleagues must be suspicious? "No...no, I won't go."

"Must go!" after said, Yu Ao Tian is pulled Yao Yao to get inside.

Torment for sometimes, finally one of the formal dress is chosen, she is talking with Yu Ao Tian with absent-minded: "Ao Tian, you think carefully, if I go, the colleagues might suspicious."

"This year there are more than 2 thousand people joining the annual year meeting, you say who will be recognized and pay attention to you?"

Uh, this is so true, mixed with so many people, who will pay attention, if really encountered with old colleagues, perhaps she can act dummy little bit to pass from them. But, why Yu Ao Tian must ask her to join this time annual meeting? "Well, I want to bring Gong Xiao Man along."

"Do as you please."

Since Yao Yao walking out from the restaurant and talking regarding Yu Ao Tian's second girlfriend, he keeps on showing her his cold attitudes, even until

they get back to home, there is no slightest warm from him.

"You go to sleep first."

"Oh..." she is stuttering nodding her head, turned her back and walking heading to the bedroom, every two steps she will turn her back to take a peek at Yu Ao Tian.

This time, he is opened one bottle of red wine, slowly pouring it into wine glass and raised it high, gulping it one mouthful, his eyes is filled with unspeakable deep gleam.

It is not hard to see, Yu Ao Tian is having problem now.

"Did he still matter with his second girlfriend?" lay down at the bed, Yao Yao is opened wide her eyes, looking at ceiling.

'It seems that old Zeng Kai Rui has paid attention to me.'

'Impossible? You have hidden everything so carefully, there is no way he could find out your real status?'

Her mind is suddenly flashing back to the afternoon vague conversation between Vice CEO Han with Yu Ao Tian.

Zeng Kai Rui...

This name is so familiar, it seems that when father passed away, mother ever brought up his name once before.

Regarding to status?

Before Yu Ao Tian was mafias' boss, now he is businessman, right? What other real status he has beside those? Just as expected he really one of mysterious man!

Before sleep she is bringing her curiosity and her question. Finally she felt asleep.

Not long after that, Yu Ao Tian is slowly walking entered the bedroom, looking at her sleep soundly little face, finally he let out all his emotions and showing his smiling face and quietly lying on her side.

Uh, really one of little face with peaceful expression.

This afternoon when Han Li Shan was showing his concern, it was not groundless. After all, there are too many people want him to die, moreover wherever he is there are many danger lurking at him. So that, he has high sensitiveness and also awareness, after some time no matter where he is he would maintain alertness and tension.

But, this kind of sensitiveness isn't born with nature, but it sharpens due to strict practice, while the sacrifice for this ability is there's no night he could sleep peacefully.

But since the day he encounters this little thing, everything is different. At least he could sleep soundly and have good sleep.

'ggrrr grrrr'

The sound of teeth gritting flowing inside the bedroom.

Yu Ao Tian is gazing at her little face with frustration expression for moment, huh, just now he has praised this little thing, but an immediately she gives him a feeling alike slapping his own face, honestly this little thing sleep is not cute at all.

'peng'

Half of her body is wide open and fall to Yu Ao Tian's body, he is creasing his forehead, patiently endure the anger in his heart, he is sleeping by backing Little thing for the entire night...

2	25 B			

**Chapter 225** 

# Part 2 (Two)

The Annual Meeting of Berson Group.

Every year before the coming year, there are many groups starting their annual meeting. In order to avoid the peek session, Berson Group's annual meeting is generally set around mid-October.

In huge seven stars Hotel lobby, people are packed, the banquet hall which accommodate for the people are already filled with the visitor.

Inside the VIP rest room, Yu Ao Tian is looking at the time, slowly he takes out his mobile phone: "Bao Bei, are you arrived?"

"En, I am arrived."

"Go straight to the VIP rest room looking for me."

"Oh..."

Hung up the mobile phone, for long time only Mo Xue Tong who is helping Yu Ao Tian to tie and style his hair, for these past years, he never had anyone to be his stylist, everything is taking care by Mo Xue Tong.

Han Li Shang who is sitting on the sofa and facing Yu Ao Tian, coldly he asked: "Ao Tian, this is company annual meeting why do you call that little girl to come here?"

"Nothing so important...I just wanted to call her here." When Yu Ao Tian said this thing, his eyes are gleaming slightest cunning.

At one glance Long Ye has already gotten the clue: "Li Shang, whenever Ao Tian does something not in accordance with common sense, it means he must have his own purpose." But this time, Long Ye also could not make a guess the reason and purpose why he asked Xiao Meng Li to join the annual meeting.

"Huh, I also don't know why I must come to join the annual meeting, it is so clearly that I am not company's employee anymore." Said Long Qi who is sitting at one corner of the room, pulling his tie down around his neck, talking to himself.

"Long Qi, this year I don't ask you to come and join." Yu Ao Tian is coldly mock at him.

"Wo Kao, Ao Tian, how can you say something like this? Well, I leave!" when Long Qi is pulled to open the VIP room door, Yao Yao and Gong Xiao Man just in time walking come in.

Long Qi at one glance, his eyes are stunned and wide open: "You, you, you are...Flat chest?"

"Long Qi, Xiao Meng Li is coming, what you are screaming..." Long Ye unhappily talking to his younger brother, but when he sees at Yao Yao, he also showing same expression with his younger brother, it is surprised expression: "Xiao Meng Li?"

"En?" Yu Ao Tian who is backing the door sensed something is odd, he hinted to Mo Xue Tong his style is okay, standing up from his seat and look at the doorway.

As seen, Yao Yao is dressed in dark purple Chanel sleeveless one piece formal gown; the tight design of the gown is showing the most beautiful of her figure, the V-neck cutting is perfectly showing her white and slender neck and her beautiful collar bone but at same time not showing too deep cleavage.

Her slender arms are wearing a pair of black gloves which give her a sense of noble aura, she is wearing 8 cm high heels which could boost woman's most confident, the most feminine side and at a same time to cover the fact she is not tall.

Although these things were chosen by Yu Ao Tian who accompanied her to buy the gown, so there is nothing such surprising for him, but he could feel something is different now compare to the day when Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao went to try the gown, actually where the difference?

His deep black eyes is looking at her small-palm-sized face, she has watery eyes which drawing with black eyeliner and also using fake eyelash. Her tempting jelly sexy lips are covered with red lipstick color. As additional her hair is styled in Audrey Hepburn-hairstyle. Overall her appearance is giving pure and lovely little girl feeling and today she is covered with elegant and noble charm with her.

No wonder when the Long brothers saw her they could show such exaggerating expression, even this moment of Yu Ao Tian seeing the current her, he also get lost.

"I, I have said... don't use makeup." She can feeling the awkward atmosphere around her, Yao Yao is glaring and complaining at Gong Xiao Man.

Today, she is asking Gong Xiao Man to join Berson annual meeting, Xiao Man is stubborn to take her to salon, asking the stylist to get her the classic hairstyle of Audrey Hepburn, makeup her face with the most enticing look.

#### 225 C



I am sorry for not sticking at my schedule. My big aunt came two days ago and going to be stayed at my place for few days. My update going to be super slow until she backs to place where she belongs. I am super frustrating with my big aunt she really can't let me to have my rest. I didn't have good sleep since her arrival.

## **Chapter 225**

#### Part 3 (Three)

"Cut it off, you don't understand, all of them are mesmerizing. Is it? Long Qi." Gong Xiao Man is smiling, move one step forward in front of Long Qi: "Today, is Yao Yao beautiful or not!"

For long time, finally Long Qi is regaining himself, pretending to be calm by inserting his hands in his pocket, while his head is at other side: "Uglier than before."

"Ugly? Why your face is red?" Gong Xiao Man is grinning all over her face, she is using mocking tone asking him.

Long Qi suddenly feels losing face, one of his hand is touching his red face.

"Hehe." Gong Xiao Man is laughing satisfied, seeing the stunning expression from all the men who are in the room, it seems her effort to choose the new style for Yao Yao is paid off. "Hey, big uncle, you are also here. Does our Yao Yao look especially beauty?"

Han Li Shang is swept his glance at Gong Xiao Man, coldly he stands up: "Ao Tian, the annual meeting is going to start, I take my leave first to check it."

"En, you go."

"Damn, he is really a man who does not have any beauty sense at all!" Gong Xiao Man is glared at Han Li Shang who is going away, she resented looking at him!

"Xiao Meng Li, no need to pay attention to them, after all Han Li Shang and Long Qi are known as senseless. I think today you are...really beautiful." More or less Long Ye could see that Yao Yao feels awkward, hurried console her.

"Hi, General Manager Long, I think from all of them still you are good talker. I like to hear you." Gong Xiao Man is happily patting at Long Ye's shoulder.

He is furrowed while smiles: "Oh yeah? I always know that I have good taste.

Are you who named Gong Xiao Man? Do you have time now? I want to chat with you about the newest fashion."

"I have time."

"Well, you follow me to go at other room to talk about fashion." Long Ye is smiling, while his eyes are looking at Long Qi who does nothing: "Long Qi, you also follow me!" after said, he is forcibly dragging Long Qi and leaving the room with Gong Xiao Man.

"Ao Tian, I also going out." Mo Xue Tong is coldly spoke, slowly walking out.

Yu Ao Tian in this time he really wants to say, these fellow brothers indeed know him very well, this time he indeed need to have 'privacy' with Yao Yao now. "Bao Bei, come." He is smiling deviously using his hooked finger calling her.

She is lowers her head, when she is walking...

That 8 cm high heels slant.

"Aiya!" she is almost felt in front.

Fortunately Yu Ao Tian saw it and his hand is faster enough, he rushed as an arrow, embraces her.

"Thank you."

"Humph? Bao Bei, are you on purposed falling in order to seduce me?"

Seeing his face is masking with fake smile, Yao Yao is awkwardly furrowing her eye brows: "I, I don't really like to use high heels, so that..."

"Oh? So that. If you are falling into my embrace still okay, but if I see you fall in other men embrace... I will break your leg!"

Is this something she can control? This Yu Ao Tian simply to say not reasonable?

"Bao Bei, what to do, suddenly I feel, I want... with you to do something in here. I want to do something I like!" he is bending down his body, spreading warm breathe to her nose.

An instantly Yao Yao glared: "No, don't."

"Ha, I am joking. Now you are looked so beautiful, if I messed up... too bad."

His slender finger is stroking her nose tip.

Seeing his deep bottomless black eyes, she always felt Yu Ao Tian seems have other meaning in his words, this feeling can cause people to be wary.

His slender finger already slides down to her neck, his deep black eyes looking at the necklace in her neck: "Really so obedience, after all you are wearing this necklace when coming here."

How would she not? Didn't he ask her to do so, later in the future if he does not ask her to do, she won't take off the necklace because she does not want to cause any trouble!

"give you rewards." His mouth is upwards smiling deviously, without waiting for Yao Yao to react, he has bent down, suddenly kissed somewhere in her neck.

"Uh..." hurt! "What are you..."

"tok tok tok"

"Chairman Yu, the annual meeting is going to start, Vice CEO Han is inviting you to come."

Yao Yao question is cut off half because interrupt by the knocking sound.

Yu Ao Tian smiles, standing up: "Bao Bei, you should take a rest in here first, later when the bouquet start, I will ask people to come pick you."

"Oh..."

"My beloved!" Yu Ao Tian has left; Gong Xiao Man is coming back to the VIP rest room: "Did CEO Yu praise how beautiful you are?"

Cold sweat, this is not Yu Ao Tian character, bigger problem he will able to face with calm expression, moreover this is small matter. The most important is, she does not feel her makeup beautiful today: "Yu Ao Tian has met many beautiful women, didn't you ever meet Li Mei Yun, Shang Yun Yin. There still one who named Xu Qing. Others there also Zhao Qing Kong, but she seemed not Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend."

7	7		
Z	Z	<b>フ</b>	U

**Chapter 225** 

## Part 4 (Four)

"Woah, CEO Yu really have so many beauty women, one to another is indeed beautiful women. But it is normal thing, his own appearance could be said as extremely rare good looking, of course always being surrounded by beautiful women."

"Have you reconciled with CEO Yu? And Feng Chen Yi..."

"Hey! Sst! Don't mention him!"

"See how nervous you are, CEO Yu isn't here."

"This is not the problem, Xiao Man. Sometimes in order to learn forgetting one person, the best thing is starting from the most surface aspect such as not mention that person name anymore, stop to think about the past, throwing the things he ever gave and so on. By this way, can really forget that one person."

"Why must forget Feng Chen Yi? Since you love him, why don't you keep him inside your heart, just wait until three years passes and then think of it again."

Ha, Gong Xiao Man speaks so easy, hiding someone we like inside our heart, and then facing the other person, it is really tired, so tired, she really cannot do it.

"Yao Yao, your neck?"

"What wrong with my neck?" seeing at Gong Xiao Man surprised expression, she is curiously touching her neck.

"Hahahaha, wasn't this strawberry planting by CEO Yu just now?\* did he want to announce to world this person has already had the owner? Just expected he is such domineering man."

\*Gong Xiao Man referred to the hickey in Yao Yao's neck.

Planting a strawberry? Did, before Yu Ao Tian was leaving he left this hickey? What did he do? Did he let her to meet other people or not?

"Knock knock knock"

"Miss Luo, hello. The annual meeting is done now the bouquet is going to

start, CEO Yu is asking me to take you to go to lobby bouquet."

What to do? What to do? Should she go to the banquet hall with hickey in her neck? But, if this time she looking for something to cover, it is too late? Yu Ao Tian is too much!

Helplessly, Yao Yao bringing along Gong Xiao Man followed Yu Ao Tian's men heading to the bouquet hall...

Berson Group bouquet is held on the seventh star hotel rooftop, it is divided into two sections the indoor and outdoor, indoor is for the honour guests and high level management of Berson Group while the outdoor is for the ordinary employees of the company.

Both the indoor and outdoor, times to times there will be ordinary employees who want to climb to higher level come in and out, strolling around the hall.

When arrived at the VIP bouquet entrance, from inside there is music flowing out, when pushed open that big door, first thing that catch eyes are those men wearing western style suit and women wearing beautiful formal clothes with radiating elegant and noble auras, as seen this bouquet indeed glamour.

"Woah, Berson Group annual meeting isn't ordinary, after all they even invited the international stars." Gong Xiao Man is exhilarating over; her eyes are looked at the surrounding.

Such glamour and grand high society dinner party, although she is regarded as Miss from wealthy family but still this is first time for Gong Xiao Man to join.

If today Yao Yao is not dressed up, perhaps she has drowned to this grand bouquet. There are too many beautiful women, too many.

But now is different, the shows up of Yao Yao in this bouquet has attracted many eyesight's.

"Does that little girl Berson Group employee? Or who's companion she is? Her aura really is different."

"Yes. At least compare to those who use makeup she can be considered as refined and elegant, indeed eye-catching." All the people is discussing about her. Compare to those beautiful women, Yao Yao innocent appearance is elegant and

charming in which attracted many eyes.

"Hey, Hey, Yao Yao, you see everyone is looking at you." Gong Xiao Man is smile proudly.

Seeing at Yao Yao, her forehead corned is forming sweat bead, just as expectedly she still dislike this kind of bouquet, that time when she was still with Feng Chen Yi, she must join this kind of bouquet, for such long time, she still cannot get used with this moreover she really cannot get used with those hot eyesight.

"Miss Luo, you wait at here little while, I will be going to look for CEO Yu." Because there are mny guests coming to this evening, that man who leading the way is difficult to find Yu Ao Tian so that he asked Yao Yao to wait in somewhere inside the hall.

"En. Okay." She and Gong Xiao Man are standing at one corner of the VIP bouquet patiently waiting.

This time, few girls are coming to her: "Luo Yao Yao?"

Following with the voice...

### **Chapter 225**

## Part 5 (Five)

Aren't they fellow colleagues from the financial department?

Yao Yao remembered these people, all of them are Sun Li's confidant, Sun Li is the person who cooperating together with France's branch CEO Mu Yue who caused her trouble before, later because of Yu Ao Tian showing up, Sun Li got demotion to be an ordinary employee while she was strangely being promoted as Finance Department Manager, although she only worked for three days.

"You guys see, as what I said she is Luo Yao Yao, you guys said she isn't."

"I fainting I thought my eyes are wrong. Never thought..." these few female colleagues are standing in front of her, using kind of disdain eyesight measuring her. "Luo Yao Yao, didn't you resign? Why are you coming here joining the company annual meeting?"

"Yes ah!"

"Haha, long time no see. I am coming to accompany friend. Well, she is Gong Xiao Man from the sales department. I am coming here to accompany her." Yao Yao is introducing Gong Xiao Man while pulling Gong Xiao Man's arm.

Gong Xiao Man is replying at her ex-colleagues by nodding her head: "Hello everyone." Actually, Gong Xiao Man thought it is okay to tell them she is invited by Yu Ao Tian, what's the matter? She has that 'queen' position why doesn't she take it out and show off to those ex-colleagues? Gong Xiao Man really not understood.

"Oh that's the case, why aren't both of you in ordinary employee banquet hall? Why coming to the VIP bouquet hall? Or else, Luo Yao Yao you still haven't given up, thinking to bait golden turtle?"

"That's right, Luo Yao Yao, before you resigned from the financial department you were promote as Vice Manager, you still kick out Sun Li, weren't it because you and Regional Director Wang...?"

Gong Xiao Man who is standing beside although she not really understands what they are talking, but from the way this few girls expression, she knows they

aren't say what good thing. When she wanted to speak on behalf of Yao Yao, but Yao Yao faster ahead...

"My coming to this VIP bouquet there is no other purpose, if all of you think my coming to here because I have purposed, it prove that all of you showing up in here also have some purpose. Bluntly to say, all of you must go to the ordinary employees banquet but why all of you are showing up in VIP banquet?" she does not want to quarrel with her ex-colleagues but she never thought they are gossiping her with Regional Director Wang, just to let them know that inside her heart Regional Director Wang is one of the best teacher she has.

"That's right. We are showing up in here to catch golden turtle, we dare to admit. Are you daring to admit if you have something with Regional Director Wang?"

"There is nothing between me and Regional Director Wang!" It is so obvious Yao Yao flared up little bit.

These few girls seem not getting enough: "Bullshit, if there is nothing between you and Regional Director Wang, how could Sun Li demoted, while you were getting promoted? Geez, the most hatred person is someone like you who acted as chastity girl but actually a bitch."

"You guys!"

"What are you talking?" a gentle and soft voice interrupted.

This few girls are lifting their head up, stunned with beaming eyes: "Long... General Manager Long." All of them are expecting to catch golden turtle, golden turtle, but they really never expected today they are encountering one of the highest rank golden turtle who is General Manager Long, this golden turtle, after all in this company, there is a possible all of them will never to speak with Long Ye this top management person.

"Aiya, General Manager Long, there is someone who isn't company's employee anymore, but shocking shamelessly still coming to participate our annual meeting." Said this few female colleagues, who are talking sarcasm about Yao Yao.

While Gong Xiao Man who is standing beside, she is waiting for good show, she

is absolutely sure that Long Ye will take action?

Long Ye is pretending not understand anything, creased his forehead: "Who? Is there really still has kind of person?"

"See, the person is her. But, General Manager Long, you don't need to take notice with this kind of person. Do you have time, if possible..."

"Yao Yao?" Long Ye is interrupted few female colleagues who trying to flatter him, he showing strange smiles: "So all of you are talking about Yao Yao?"

"What's matter? General Manager Long." This few female colleagues are looking each others.

"Hahahaha, Yao Yao, you are really, you have resigned, but still keep your relationship with CEO Yu in secret?" Long Ye is smiling while glancing at Yao Yao.

While those few female colleagues seem haven't regained themselves: "Keep her relationship with CEO Yu in secret?"

"That's right. Since Yao Yao is being humble and low-profile, does not want to say anything. Well let me tell you guys. Yao Yao is CEO Yu's girlfriend, since she last time when she had summer break and staying at home quite boring, CEO Yu was arranging her to come at office to have play, today is CEO Yu who inviting her to come and join the banquet, she isn't someone outsider or so whoever. Even I still need to give this future boss's wife a face."

After Long Ye spoke, this few female colleagues are dumbstruck. They never thought that... Luo Yao Yao... could be... Yu Ao Tian's girl friend!

"Hahahaha, this thing those people might understand, not everyone you guys can provoke?" Finally Gong Xiao Man who is standing beside spoke with sarcasm.

Yao Yao who is keeping on silent for this time, quickly pulling Gong Xiao Man's hand, awkwardly smiling at Long Ye...

## Part 1 (One)

She really wants to ask, why must General Manager Long acts such exaggerating?

Still dare to say because boring so that she came to company for playing, it was clearly she was working at Berson first and then she encountered Yu Ao Tian, she really be in awe of Long Ye this black belly man in doing thing.

She sure enough, because General Manager Long heard their conversation so that he pretended to say this thing, only to give them little bit lesson, right?

Although Yao Yao dislikes letting people know she has relationship with Yu Ao Tian, but this time she must thank General Manager Long to help her out.

"Yao Yao, CEO Yu is waiting you at there, please follow me."

"Oh." After said, she and Gong Xiao Man are following Long Ye.

Looking at Yao Yao back is getting far away, those few female colleagues are 'chirping' noisily said: "You...you guys... had all of you heard what General Manager Long said... before?"

"Dead meat, this time we really should not provoke the person we must not provoke, no wonder Sun Li who has CEO Mu's backing suddenly being knock down, I even thought she is having an affair with Regional Director Wang but who knows the person who backing her is hundred time more powerful than Regional Director Wang!"

"What to do? Should we go to apologize to her? Didn't you guys listen to what General Manager Long said before, he even needs to give face to Luo Yao Yao, now we are provoking her, if CEO Yu knows, don't you think step us death alike ant, won't it be any different?"

"Apologized? Should we got to ask Xiao Qiao, asking her what to do, she perhaps can give us an idea."

"En, that's good too." This few female colleagues who are scared to be almost soulless, faster they rush to an ordinary banquet hall, looking for Xiao Qiao.

"Xiao Qiao, Xiao Qiao, this time we have caused big trouble."

"En? What happened?" This person who named Xiao Qiao is the person who helped Yao Yao to send document for Xia Ren Liang before.

"We just found out that, Luo Yao Yao... she after all is CEO Yu's girlfriend, this time we are doomed!"

"So that she is CEO Yu's girlfriend." Xiao Qiao does not surprised and nodding her head.

"Ugh, Xiao Qiao, did you know it?"

"Hahaha." She just laugh but say nothing, actually she did only guess not much but could feel it.

Her first impression when seeing Luo Yao Yao was type of little girl who seems so innocent and not yet growing up, but after she has interaction with her, she had seen many upper-class people their lifestyle and also Yao Yao, everything is much sharp from her compare to those ordinary women who have not seen the world.

As additional Xia Ren Liang this type of second generation golden turtle who chased her, she ignored him, during that time Xiao Qiao had made guessing, perhaps Luo Yao Yao is supported by stronger man, so that she not really mind with money and others.

But never thought, Luo Yao Yao's back is supported by a man like Yu Ao Tian, God's favour person (great person).

"You guys rest assured, Luo Yao Yao is type of good little girl, she won't pay attention to all of you."

Xiao Qiao is believing with her own eyes, further more she is believing on Yao Yao's IQ, if Yao Yao really does not have schemer heart, does not have high IQ she won't be able standing side by side with Yu Ao Tian, perhaps her scheming for the outsiders might see it as dummy, stupid but actually it is a camouflage of girl who good schemer!

Perhaps, even Luo Yao Yao herself does not know whatever she did today actually alike playing 'Pig eating tiger' this scheming!

## Part 2 (Two)

Inside VIP Banquet Hall

"CEO Yu, congratulation, thinking carefully until today you have acquisition Berson Group for 2 years, you have obtained great achievement, your future is limitless ah!"

"That's right, during that time when you just acquisition Berson group, you had said to expand Berson Group as first rank group in China within two years, there were many business men thought you were boasting, but now? You have done it, even we as the seniors are really admiring you."

"Haha, all just because Chairman Fang, Chairman Yang, all of you the seniors are taking care so that I have today achievement."

"Aiya, CEO Yu, you are really humble. You are too flattering us these old things."

Since Yao Yao is standing beside of Yu Ao Tian, she not even saying any word when the old senior chairmen are congratulated him, she is standing there quietly listening.

She always thought, Yu Ao Tian is someone bossy no matter who he is facing with, very arrogant and at same time cold man, but today this is her first time to see Yu Ao Tian's side as businessman.

Facing with those old seniors, Yu Ao Tian does not show his aloof but humble, it is noble humble aura.

It can be said that due to the today Yu Ao Tian, reaching to this position, he really can ignore everything, but he is understanding the word 'Attitude is determining everything', so that he is cherishing more those seniors, cherish their experiences.

No wonder Yu Ao Tian can be so successful, able to make Berson group to be strong and expanding it within 2 years. He really not looked alike man in his twenties because of success and then losing himself, that kind of youngster, he also unlike those men who were poor before to rich and forgetting his upstart, furthermore, there nothing can be seen in him, his unruly and disdained

attitudes.

He gives the feeling, as if he is born from wealthy family, who has aristocratic lineage, even he is wealthy, and his status does not give the arrogant feeling. His attitudes are such unwavering.

Perhaps...

Yu Ao Tian background isn't alike what the rumours spreading, an ordinary scoundrel? After all, few days ago Vice CEO Han would not say his other 'real status' this matter.

No matter what, this evening banquet, it lets Yao Yao to see another charming Yu Ao Tian's side, moreover it let one's heart to thump, no wonder lot of women tempting by him. Someone low-key and also have inner beauty how could one's not be fascinated by him?

## Part 3 (Three)

"CEO Yu." This time, one of middle age man who about fifty something is coming near.

"Chairman Li."

"Hahaha, today the annual meeting is so successful, congratulation to you."

"Don't be so courtesy, Chairman Li."

That fifty something middle age man is smiling awkwardly, while his eyes are looking at Yao Yao from time to time: "Actually I always want to find a time to have talked with you, regarding your matter with Li Mei Yun. I just found out not long ago you and Li Mei Yun had broken up, about the reason she didn't tell me. But now it seems..."

Mei Yun? So this old man is Li Mei Yun's father?

Perhaps feeling guilty because of doing wrong or perhaps because too awkward, Yao Yao is nervously gulped her saliva: "That, CEO Yu, I feel not really well, I want to take my leave to go to toilet." After said, she didn't wait for Yu Ao Tian answer. Pulling Gong Xiao Man dashing to the toilet, "Hu..."

"Yao Yao, why are you so nervous?"

"Didn't you hear, that old man is Li Mei Yun's father?"

"And so what? Didn't Li Mei Yun and CEO Yu have already broken up, what are you nervous for?"

"But..."

"Is this need to ask? Of course because of the guilt feeling to be thief!" at sudden, an anger voice flowing over.

Quickly both of them are looking at the toilet door way, as seen, Li Ruo Ting gloomy face is coming nearer.

Gong Xiao Man and Yao Yao are looking at the in front, surprising in unison: "Li Ruo Ting?"

"What? Seeing me both of you are so surprised? Ha, I just found out... so you are the third wheel who broke my big sister and CEO Yu relationship!"

"Your big sister?" Gong Xiao Man and Yao Yao are looking each other, and then in unison they said: "Your big sister is Li Mei Yun?"

Heaven, how can there are so many coincides in this world? It seems that Gong Xiao Man relationship diagram must be added one line.

Li Ruo Ting is the person who broke Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi relationship, while Yao Yao is the third wheel in her big sister and Yu Ao Tian relationship.

"Ha, Luo Yao Yao, you are really cheap, after all you dare to be third wheel!"

"Let me tell you, Li Ruo Ting, anyone can scold Yao Yao, but exception for you, you are not deserved to scold Yao Yao. 2 years ago, not to mention which cheap slut who slept with Yao Yao's boyfriend, humph, after all now even dare to scold other person as third wheel!"

"That's right. I admitted that time it was me who took the initiative to climb at Feng Chen Yi's bed, had initiative to seduce him, but Luo Yao Yao, did you really think yourself not have fault in here?" Li Ruo Ting is confidently pointing at Yao Yao's nose.

Gong Xiao Man who is standing beside frowned: "Do you mean, you had seduced other person's boyfriend, the victim must self-introspection to bear the consequences?"

"Gong Xiao Man, you don't always protect and sided at Luo Yao Yao this slut, there is a matter, heaven know earth know, me and you know it." Li Ruo Ting step forward in front of Gong Xiao Man pushed her away: "What kind of man Chen Yi is, you are know better than me, but how many scarification he did because of you, you know better in your heart. How much he loves you, Luo Yao Yao, you must know better by yourself. But how is about you?"

"Everyday other than study, it only study, you put Feng Chen Yi at side while you were becoming your good student. You even not let him to touch your hands. Did you think you boyfriend is saint, or a man who does not want him anymore?"

"It was you who had treasure, but not understood to cherish, so that you gave

me an opportunity to break in, this isn't anyone mistake but it's you, understood?" More Li Ruo Ting speaking more she tensed, her fingers are pointing at Yao Yao's chest: "As long as you cherish Feng Chen Yi little bit, that time, Chen Yi would impossible to sleep with me, understood? Don't act to be pathetic victim who blamed anyone, thinking as if this world is owed you!"

Facing with Li Ruo Ting accusations, Yao Yao really cannot argue back, because whatever Li Ruo Ting said indeed true.

That year Yao Yao was 15 years old she was officially dating with Feng Chen Yi, that days everyday she was seriously study, perhaps only once a week she would meet up with Feng Chen Yi, and it was because Feng Chen Yi who took initiative to go dating with her, so that she agreed with him. Or else she would not meet him once at one month.

It can be said, in their relationship, it was Feng Chen Yi who sacrificed more times compare to her. So that... after they had separated for these 2 years, she never let go or forgetting those feeling, because Feng Chen Yi indeed treated her so well.

## Part 4 (Four)

Reality is reality, she dares to face it. But listened to what Li Ruo Ting said, because she ignored Feng Chen Yi, so that Feng Chen Yi was overstepping to the bounds, this point she could not agree with her.

"Li Ruo Ting, according to your logic, woman must give up everything because of the man she loves, should everyday goes according to them? You had slept with Feng Chen Yi, right? How's the result? Have you gotten him?" at sudden she is swaying away Li Ruo Ting's fingers who pointed at her: "If one woman must lose herself because of the man she loves, it is fated there won't be any happiness in this life time!"

For Yao Yao, Feeling is supplement in her life, while man for Yao Yao is only a part of happiness in her life, but not as whole,

Perhaps many of women mistaken about this, by giving own body to one's man, means holding onto that man's heart forever.

Actually the truth is on contrary.

A man who is really in love with you won't because of your body and then stay together with you forever, because if it so, soon or later he will go boring with it, he will stay together with you simply to say because he loves you this person, that's all. On contrary, if a man does not love you, although you give him your body, waiting him played and get bored with you, naturally he will dump you.

So that... love is nothing to do with virginity. On contrary if giving own body sooner, perhaps the possibilities to lose man's heart is even sooner.

In everyone eyes, Yao Yao who has petite posture, an innocent girl image, someone who really need to depend on man for her entire lifetime. But this petite posture which has innocent look actually has one strong heart; her ultimate purpose isn't looking for a man and then gets married, that's simple!

"Xiao Man, let's we go!" Yao Yao is expressionless pulling Gong Xiao Man's hand; walk faster to go out from toilet.

Li Ruo Ting isn't happy with Yao Yao who pointed her weakness: "Luo Yao Yao,

no matter how things went before, the current you are ugly shameless third wheel, a slut, you don't have right to revile me! Furthermore you don't have right to blame anyone!" after said, she picks up a bottle of warm water which put outside the toilet and splashed it.

"Yao Yao! Be careful!" Gong Xiao Man who sees it pushes away Yao Yao.

That bottle which fully filled is almost splashed into Gong Xiao Man's body, the splashing out water sprinkled on her bare arm which is not covered by her clothes. At moment, her white skin becomes bright red.

"Xiao Man!" Yao Yao pulled Gong Xiao Man's hand; angrily she glared at Li Ruo Ting.

Knowing she has caused trouble, Li Ruo Ting is hurrying run away.

"I am okay, I am okay."

"What is okay, your skin is swollen, I... I call someone." Yao Yao is panic when running at corridor, but when she just running a step, that 8 cm heels stumbled her feet.

When she is about to fall down to the ground, a cold figure showing up, firmly hold on her. Before Yao Yao sees who the person is, that cold figure has already dashing to Gong Xiao Man in front. "Are you okay?" said that cold voice which as cold as ice.

Gong Xiao Man lifts her head, glanced, as she sees... uh... still this iceberg uncle?

"Aiyo, it so hurt." She is feeling a pain to the point she creased her forehead.

"Didn't you tell Yao Yao you are okay before?"

Listen to Han Li Shang questioned, Gong Xiao Man in her heart she really wants to roll her eyes, geez...so this damn big uncle had heard her before. He really ruined the atmosphere, it is so obvious she is acting spoil, still dares to expose her.

"It is so pain! You try yourself being splashing with hot water, will it pain or not?"

"Cut it off." This time Han Li Shang is letting out heave sighed, at sudden one

of his hand is pulled and hold close Gong Xiao Man.

This thing is out from Gong Xiao Man prediction, she really never thought this big uncle who always ignore and cold toward her could act this way!

## Part 1 (One)

"Vice CEO Han, Xiao Man she..." Yao Yao is worrying walking in front of Han Li Shang.

"Let me take care of her, you go back to the banquet first, Ao Tian is looking for you."

"But..."

Gong Xiao Man really can stand anymore, at this moment she really does not need Yao Yao's loyalty as friend, if she can say, she really want to say... 'Yao Yao, you hurry go, leaves me with big uncle to have privacy.'

"Aiya, Yao Yao, you are wearing high heels, walking isn't convenient for you, having this big uncle to take care of me, I am okay."

"Oh, well." Perhaps until this moment, the dummy Yao Yao still hasn't sensed Gong Xiao Man intention, with worried facial expression looking at Han Li Shang who is leaving.

With super worried heart, Yao Yao is heading back to the banquet hall.

Looking from far away, Yu Ao Tian is talking with whom-so-person, but that person who is talking with Yu Ao Tian isn't Li Mei Yun's father anymore.

Slowly getting close, no matter what she could feel from back the person who is talking with Yu Ao Tian is someone familiar?

"Bao Bei, where are you going?" when Yu Ao Tian spotting Yao Yao coming near to him, his face is masking with devilish smile.

Her heart is tightened, is Yu Ao Tian going crazy? Why must he call her so loud? Nervous looking at her surrounding, fortunately everyone is immersed in chatting and also music so that his voice isn't attracted.

But, those people who are talking with Yu Ao Tian more or less must able to guess her relationship with Yu Ao Tian?

Only left two steps before she arrived in front of Yu Ao Tian, her remaining light flashes, vaguely when she is looking at the person's face who chatting with

Yu Ao Tian, at that moment...

A diamond earring shine!

At this moment, that face is not more than any familiar turned to look at her...

Feng...Chen...Yi!

At this moment it feels the air freeze, two of them are looking eyes to eyes, at sudden Yao Yao's feet stopped, as if her feet is nailed to the ground cannot move and staring in front of Feng Chen Yi!

Long time before she ever thought, there would be a day Feng Chen Yi will find out with whom she is; she also ever doubted before, when he sees who is the man standing beside her how would he reacted, while what kind of feeling she would have?

After all, Yu Ao Tian and Feng Chen Yi is business partner, meeting is something avoidable. This lies only can keep at least for moment.

Although, she is naively hoping Feng Chen Yi will never found out. But this is too unrealistic, isn't it?

But today, the premonition scenery has broken out, and the outbreak is too fast, so sudden, she really does not know how to face and withstand.

No....

Perhaps, this scenery... is... Yu Ao Tian has arranged it before, hasn't him?

'This Sunday will be company Annual meeting, you go with me!'

'Ah? I, I won't go.'

'Must go!'

'Now you are so beautiful, if I mess up... it would be too pity.'

'Hahahahaha, wasn't this strawberry planting by CEO Yu just now? did he want to announce to world this person has already had the owner? Just expected he is such domineering man.'

At sudden her mind is flown those sceneries regarding to Yu Ao Tian who was inviting her to join this year annual meeting.

She really not understood, Berson group is having annual meeting why must call her coming, she isn't his girlfriend, she also does not have any right to show up even as couple.

But now, at least she understood the purpose Yu Ao Tian!

Actually when did he plan to scheme her? Since the moment both of them reconciled so he is starting to plan everything?

If suddenly calling her to participate in the annual meeting, wouldn't it be too obvious? So that, he must foreshadowing one week before, making as if she doesn't mind at all, creating false impression about him, when the time is arrived, killing her by borrowing a knife, it won't be too late? Right?

How can Yu Ao Tian like this? His shrewdness how could be so deep?

Is it anger, or is it a pain caused by making fun, or perhaps because Feng Chen Yi has already found out who is the man with her, the nervous feeling being found out, she really does not know anymore, she just know, her mind is blank, the music and people chatting voice is slowly becoming quiet.

## Part 2 (Two)

Cannot, cannot lost control in this situation, otherwise she is getting into Yu Ao Tian trap!

Dark eyes flashed, she is coldly looking at Feng Chen Yi who stands in front of her, please don't get into trap! Feng Chen Yi, begging you not to speak anything, or else both of us will be laughing stock for Yu Ao Tian!

"Bao Bei, come here." Yu Ao Tian speaks devilish.

Yao Yao is hurried to hide her eyesight toward Feng Chen Yi, lifting her gloomy facial expression and walking toward Yu Ao Tian beside.

On the process, Feng chen Yi eyes are stopped at Yao Yao, until the moment when Yu Ao Tian's hand is flung at Yao Yao's shoulder, he finally can be certain!

That man who is standing beside Yao Yao for this time is who!

'General Manager Feng, the detective has investigated, but the man has very strong anti reconnaissance capability, moreover he has many bodyguards who following him so it is so difficult to photo his face.'

'Chen Yi, the thing that I promised you yesterday... I wanted to change my plan!'

'CEO Yu, if you thought that I could not do this thing properly you can do it by yourself. But, this kind of thing, borrowing other knife to kill, why won't you happy about it?'

'Chen Yi, I realized that I am longing to be best friend with you.'

'Haha, thank you to CEO Yu acknowledge. It seems this time must add your part together properly to 'greet' Xia Yu.'

'Chen Yi, those few men aren't my men. If there is not mistaken perhaps we are sharing same purpose. I know you are never touched something about underworld. Those people in my hands are better than in yours, at least... I can give you satisfying result!'

There are lot of coincides, lots of meet by chance, he wanted to play Xia Yu, Yu

Ao Tian also targeting Xia Yu; he wanted to kill Ming Hui and his fellows, Yu Ao Tian also took an initiative to lend hand.

So everything has reason, all because both of them are falling for same girl? Interesting! This is really interesting!

During that time Feng Chen Yi ever thought if the man who stand beside Yao Yao is someone weaker than him, the result must be not satisfied him, since the person is Yu Ao Tian, this game will give one's strangely feeling excited!

"Chen Yi, come, let me introduce to you, this is...my girl friend, Luo Yao Yao."

Girlfriend? Yao Yao is creased her forehead, she takes a peek to Yu Ao Tian expression, his smiles is more than fake, but she still wants to thank him, at least he still gives her face in front of Feng Chen Yi.

"CEO Yu...girlfriend?"

Listened to Feng Chen Yi, hurries she looks at his face. His frosty expression with subtle smiles, his eyes are sharp.

"Something matter?" Seeing Feng Chen Yi for quite long not speak anything, Yu Ao Tian's mouth is curved upward.

"Nothing, feeling Miss Luo is especially beautiful." He is smiling elegantly.

Yao Yao lets out her heave a sigh, hehe, how could she forget, two years ago she has witness Feng Chen Yi capability, after experienced two years training in business world, believe Feng Chen Yi capability must be higher than before, must be higher, so that have the way to deal with the changes, isn't him?

"Bao Bei, General Manager Feng is praising you, faster thanks General Manager Feng." Yu Ao Tian is ambiguously smiles, whispering in her ear.

She is curling her hand into fist, if not because in this kind of venue, she really wanted to shout out loud at Yu Ao Tian, does he need to do this thing to this extreme?

"Hehe, Thank you General Manager Feng."

Feng Chen Yi once again smiles elegantly; his cold eyes are slowly looked at Yu Ao Tian: "CEO Yu, I want to greet CEO Li, I take my leave first."

"En."

Eyes follow Feng Chen Yi who is gradually leaving. Yao Yao who restrain her emotion finally release: "Yu Ao Tian, do you need to do thing on this way?"

"Bao Bei, what are you talking about?"

Still pretending? Yu Ao Tian are you still pretending? Doesn't he feel he is too fake!

# Part 3 (Three)

"CEO Yu, congratulation, the annual meeting is success, in China business other than Berson Group perhaps only Feng Group which can be a par to held this grand annual meeting." This time another honour guest is coming.

"Bao Bei, you are not allowed to leave. Find one place wait for me. I will go to accompany you immediately." He is whispering at Yao Yao's ear, he smiles and has talked with them.

Yao Yao is slowly walking to one of the corner, her face is extremely bad!

"Ugh, how can you in here? Does Chen Yi bring you here?"

After listen to this voice, Yao Yao quickly lifts her head; her eyes are spotted at a man who has bright red hair colour. Is he... Ou Yang Zi Xuan?

Hurried she suppressed her anxious, she is forcing herself to smile: "Haha, I was Berson Group employee before, so that I participating this year annual meeting."

"Oh, have you met Chen Yi?"

I have seen him, but... still in that very awkward situation. "En.."

"Where is he? I have looking for him for such long time."

Eyes are sweeping for the entire venue filled with packed people, it really not easy to look for one person but Feng Chen Yi is someone outstanding, and people would recognise him at one glance. "That." Yao Yao's finger is pointed to somewhere not far.

"Ou Yang Zi Xuan swept at one glance: "Oh, Well, I go to see him first."

"En..."

Her eyes are looking at Ou Yang Zi Xuan's back, when he has arrived at Feng Chen Yi beside, he is pointing at Yao Yao direction.

As seen, Yao Yao is hurried lower her head, she is afraid to meet Feng Chen Yi's eyes.

Not long after that, Feng Chen Yi is bringing Ou Yang Zi Xuan out from the banquet venue.

"Follow me." At sudden Yu Ao Tian is walking in front of her, immediately he is holding her hand and heading out from the banquet venue too.

Walking to the secluded corridor, occasionally there will few waiters passing by, Yao Yao is lowering her head; make a fist from her hand.

"Bao Bei, meeting with your ex-lover, is it worth to let your mood down for this long?" pair of his hands are inserted at his pocket; he is smiling deviously asked her.

"Yu Ao Tian, today in here all are your employees, I don't want to argue with you in here!"

"Since you know it, you mustn't show that half life half death expression!" After said, his hand at sudden pinched her chin.

"Uh." The pain is tingling, she could feel the hand that pinched her chin is showing vein.

At this moment, two figures from the other side of corridor is entered Yu Ao Tian's eyes, his mouth is curved upward, smiles sinister, at another second, he is forcing his lips to kiss her lips...

"I... do I mistaken something? The person... who is kissing with Big Boss Yu, the girl is... is she...your Ex-girlfriend?" the person who is standing at the corridor while smoking is Ou Yang Zi Xuan who glared with big eyes, at the other moment he is looking at Feng Chen Yi who is at his in front.

At the moment when he sees Feng Chen Yi anger face, he can't help himself but gasped, "Chen... Chen Yi, won't...the man that you are looking for this time... he is Big Boss Yu, right?"

Feng Chen Yi is curled his hand tightly into fist, with cold eyes, he keeps on looking at those figure which are not far from his place.

He thought at this time, he could control himself very well like before; he thought when he found out the person is strong opponent, he could play slowly. But when he witness by himself seeing Yu Ao Tian kissed Yao Yao that moment,

his heart seems being suppressed, so suffocated so unbearable.

Bring up his pace...

When Ou Yang Zi Xuan sensed something odd beside him, hurried he stopped him: "Chen Yi, what do you want to do?"

"You say?"

"You calm down! Huh! Come!" Ou Yan Zi Xuan dumped his smoke which in his hand, using all his strength and his body to block Feng Chen Yi, disappearing from the corridor: "You must know, Luo Yao Yao is your Ex-girlfriend, Big Boss Yu is her current boyfriend, if you are rushing by this way, with what status you want to separate both of them? Moreover, your current relationship with Big Boss Yu is business partner, if in this time both of you fight, the person who sees you as laughing stock will be your big brother! Don't get trick by it."

"Chen Yi, I understand, until now you are still have feeling for your Exgirlfriend, if you are really can't let her go, you can go slower, at least let Yu Ao Tian to settle your big brother first, you may still have time, there is no need to be such rush, fight with Big Boss Yu now, you say?"

Although Ou Yang Zi Xuan most of time looks so sloppy, but everything about Feng Chen Yi he always puts his heart, very considerate, whatever he said because to consider overall situation. After all, Feng Chen Rui wanted to wish for Feng Chen Yi death, having Yu Ao Tian, it can guarantee to discard Feng Chen Rui, once Feng and Yu fights, the last man who stands must be Feng Chen Rui.

"Chen Yi, how about, we leave first. Eyes not see heart won't irritate, you say?"

"Why must we leave?" Feng Chen Yi regained himself, coldly laugh: "What to say we still need to wait until the banquet end and we leave, this is politeness; don't you think so?"

Ou Yang Zi Xuan dumbstruck, feeling... Feng Chen Yi is planning something; it gives kind of frightening feeling.

## Part 4 (Four)

Returned to the banquet hall, the venue has turned music for dancing.

"General Manager Feng, I am Berson Group Marketing Manager, I have heard you big name, doesn't know whether I have honour to dance with you?" one beautiful woman is standing in front of Feng Chen Yi with smiles.

He politely smiles, coldly said: "I am sorry, I have dance partner already."

"Oh, it is so regretful."

"General Manager Feng, I want to have dance with you, can I..."

"I am sorry, I have dance partner already."

Facing with one by one the beautiful women in front of him, there is daughter of the politician, famous star, well-know business woman, he answered coldly toward them one by one, while Ou Yang Zi Xuan who is standing beside him, little bit envious, jealous and hatred.

Actually, Ou Yang Zi Xuan is quite handsome man, but unfortunately he and Feng Chen Yi are best friends, naturally he will let his best brother to get the limelight!

Feng Chen Yi frozen eyes are looking coldly at the big hall entrance. When he spotted Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao return, his mouth twitched, hurried he faster his footsteps into the entrance: "CEO Yu."

"En? Chen Yi, what's matter?" Yu Ao Tian stopped his footstep.

Yao Yao is lowering her head, purposely avoiding Feng Chen Yi who keeps moving forward.

At sudden he stretch out his hand, hold to Yao Yao's arms, with smiling face looking at Yu Ao Tian: "Does not know whether I can dance with your girlfriend?"

"Haha, this you must ask my girlfriend, and not...asking me!"

'thump' (nervous)

One huge problem is thrown in front of Yao Yao, must she refuse, but her in

front is bossy Feng Chen Yi, if today she refuses him, she does not know what trouble will she arouse in the future, she really does not dare to think about it; but facing the strong Yu Ao Tian, how must she give an answer, what big problem is waiting for her when she goes home, she does not dare to think of it. What to do?

When Yao Yao is in dilemma, suddenly Feng Chen Yi solved her problem: "Haha, As long as CEO Yu, you not mind, it is okay!" After said, he is forcibly bringing Yao Yao to the dance floor.

Being surrounded by beautiful music, Feng Chen Yi is elegantly grabbing Yao Yao's waist, coldly said: "Didn't I have teach you how to dance? Have you forgotten?"

How could she forget, long time ago, when she stills together with Feng Chen Yi, both of them were participating many venues, for convenience, Feng Chen Yi was teaching Yao Yao lots of high society etiquette as well dancing in the ballroom.

She in difficulty glancing at Yu Ao Tian who is not far away, slowly puts her hands in Feng Chen Yi's shoulders, expressionless dancing according to the music.

Under the spotlight, Feng Chen Yi can see her charming face: "Yao Yao, today you are especially beautiful, I almost can't recognise you." He shows his charming smiles, he speaks vaguely, whispering in her ears.

"My Beloved, 2 years you with me, you never put makeup, how? After follows Yu Ao Tian, are you understand to beautify yourself and make him happy?"

His intoxicating voice somewhat is piercing into Yao Yao's ear, she bites her lips, many times she tries to avoid his whisper.

"Now in front of your current boyfriend and your Ex-boyfriend dancing together how is your feeling? Does it exhilarate for you, en?"

"Feng Chen Yi!"

"Sst. My beloved, your current boyfriend is watching at us, you guess, will he think us \*\* in here? Or are we talking about our past?" Feng Chen Yi expression is so ambiguous; it is so rare to see Feng Chen Yi smiles so charming in public.

Yao Yao understands, he is intentionally to provoke Yu Ao Tian, but... at last the person who will be suffer will be her!

"Feng Chen Yi, you enough, what will you gets by doing this?"

"Of Course I have. As your Ex-boyfriend, of course I want to see how deep your feeling with your current boyfriend." After said, he is intentionally hugging Yao Yao's waist tightly, that cold eyes are spotting the red mark in her neck...

## Part 5 (Five)

"Hey, who is the girl that dance with General Maanger Feng, does she his girlfriend?" outside the dance floor, everyone is shocked looking at Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao dancing along the music.

"Absolutely is, General Manager Feng is well-known for his cold character, but you guys see when he is dancing with that little girl, he is smiling so charming."

"No matter what to say, that little girl is looked perfectly match with General Manager Feng. She is so beautiful."

"That's right."

At this moment, everyone eyes are focused to Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao alike pair of prince and princess. Perhaps if replaced by Yu Ao Tian, those people might think her as his little sister, or perhaps someone who being supported, that kind of relationship.

Actually these two men if compare from their outlook, must be an equal (no distinction), no matter their height and their appearance, both of them are dominating the mature and also steady temperament.

The important point, Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao have 9 years age gap, his height is 192 cm; Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao have 3 years age gap, his height is 187 cm.

Although aside the main factors, forget the age, height, everyone will still think Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao as couple.

There is no reason, only a feeling.

Perhaps, this should be same alike what Yao Yao' mother said, Feng Chen Yi has bright pair of eyes while Yu Ao Tian has pair of deep eyes which bottomless, at one glance could guess that he is someone who has many stories with him, he is so complicated, he is really someone that could not stay side by side with Yao Yao, moreover he is not suitable for Yao Yao. Although both of them are publicity their relationship as lover (couple lover, boyfriend and girlfriend), naturally, people will think she is a girl who supported by Yu Ao Tian.

"What circumstance is it, Ao Tian. As what I know, Feng Chen Yi is rare to dance in public, what is going on today?" One of Long Ye's hand is holding a glass of red wine, his head is tiled at Yu Ao Tian's side.

He is coldly looking at Long Ye, while his eyes are slowly looking at two figures that dancing in dance floor: "That little thing is Feng Chen Yi's ex-girlfriend!"

"Huk" subconsciously Long Ye's mouth spitting out the wine, afraid of his gaffe being seen by others, he quickly takes his handkerchief and wipe dry his mouth: "Are... are you sure? Xiao Meng Li... Xiao Meng Li is...." this is big trouble! This time really troublesome!

Last time when meeting Feng Chen Yi, Long Ye would not sense anything, Feng Chen Yi cares so much with his Ex-girlfriend; while in Yu Ao Tian's side it seems he and Xiao Meng Li has tied. No need to ask, these two men no one of them will give up, this is really interesting.

Just at this time, the dance hasn't ended, as seen Feng Chen Yi's face darken, pulling Yao Yao's hand inside the venue.

Yu Ao Tian sees, frowned; he also wanted to rush there.

Long Ye pulled Yu Ao Tian's arm: "Ao Tian, you calm down. Just to know, you and Feng Chen Yi relationship are business partner, don't because this simple matter ruins the overall plan."

"Rest assured, I know what to do." After said, he quickens his pace out from the venue.

Long Ye still can't be rest assured, helplessly he puts down his glass of red wine and following at Yu Ao Tian back; at other side, Ou Yang Zi Xuan could see Feng Chen Yi almost lost control, hurried go there.

At the beginning the banquet is lively, after Feng Chen Yi, Yu Ao Tian also left the venue, unintentional it puzzled the guests with undoubtedly eyesight. But none of them could able to guess, today these two businessmen who are most anticipated and as pride by people because of one woman both of them are losing control of themselves...

#### 228 A

I know some of you are waiting so long for Gong Xiao Man and also Han Li Shang. I think this part can lit up our mood better compare to Yao Yao – Yu Ao Tian – Feng Chen Yi, which is so devastating relationship.

#### Part 1 (One)

Other side...

Inside the hotel room, Gong Xiao Man is smiling sweetly when lying on the bed, she is recalled the scenery when Han Li Shang brought her to the hotel room.

'Vice CEO Han, Hello.'

'Immediately give me one room.'

'Ugh... sorry, Vice CEO Han, all VIP rooms of our hotel had already booked, now we only left an ordinary room.'

'Whatever, quickly!'

'Yes.'

'Other, hurry ask someone to bring ice water.'

'Yes, Vice CEO Han.'

Inside Gong Xiao Man's heart, Han Li Shang is someone who cold and almighty, but just now when he talked with the hotel's staff, his speaking tone was sounding in such panic, she could assume Han Li Shang acting that way because of her wounds, so that he could show that kind of nervous?

Of course, when Han Li Shang hugged her along the way to the hotel room, she is actually enjoying the experienced being envy, jealous and hatred by others, this feeling.

Aiya, Aiya, now the person she wanted to meet actually Li Ruo Ting, she wanted to thank that cheap\* person because splashing warm water to her body.

\* (贱 Jian can mean cheap, lowly, despicable or even slut)

"Come, this towel I have soaked in ice water."

Seeing Han Li Shang out from the bathroom by bringing the cold towel,

immediately Gong Xiao Man showing her painful expression: "Aiyo, so hurt, really hurt, Big Uncle, you say will it leave a scar? Hu, how will I face other people in the future later?"

"It just sprinkled by warm water won't leave any scar." Said Han Li Shang sitting at the bed side, one of his hand is covered the ice towel to her wounds.

Geez! Damn big uncle just expectedly really good in ruing atmosphere, she thought, he would act alike Feng Chen Yi when Yao Yao being paw by kitten saying... 'Rest assured, if there left scar, if no one wants you, I will marry you.'

That time when Gong Xiao Man listened to Yao Yao narrated, actually she was so envious her for long time.

It is so obviously Feng Chen Yi is cold person, while this big uncle also someone who is cold person, but how could both of them have such big differences?

Perhaps...

During that time, did Feng Chen Yi have fallen for Yao Yao?

If it was the case, it seems Feng Chen Yi has loved Yao Yao for such long time, after all that time when Yao Yao got paw by kitten she was only 13 years old.

"Well, big uncle, if I really have scar, no one wants me, will you want me?" Gong Xiao Man is seriously looked at Han Li Shang, her eyes are filled with expectation.

He is coldly lifting his head: "If really there is no one wants you, I will responsible to look boyfriend for you."

"Cut it off, you are so bad at coaxing girl? You even can't speak lie?" Gong Xiao Man feels lost and furrowed, not happy tsk her mouth.

Does she really need Han Li Shang to introduce her a boyfriend? Though her arm will leave scar, there still a person wants her. She is Gong Xiao Man who won't go to that stage which no one wants her."

"Little girl, I never said something sweet alike honey before, moreover, inside my heart I always thought you as my little sister, so that there is no need to coax you."

After listened to Han Li Shang spoke without any emotion, Gong Xiao Man

creased her forehead, quickly she glared at him: "What do you mean by saying this? Do you want to tell me, there is no possibility between us? Or what?"

"You know by yourself is more than enough!"

"Ha, my heart knows very well is enough? Big uncle, you don't tell me, you especially brought me to here only to tell me this thing!"

After heard the question from Gong Xiao Man, Han Li Shang sink into silent.

At that time, Gong Xiao Man feels her heart as if pierce by something, it pains, she thought, perhaps this big uncle might have feeling toward her even little bit, at least he still showing panic expression when seeing her gets hurt, but now it seems, he just looking for right opportunity to let her know, between them are impossible?

# Part 2 (Two)

"Han Li Shang! If you thought I am too young and bring off age as reason, well, I can prove to you, I am not little girl anymore, I am woman!" said Gong Xiao Man stands up; she doesn't care about her wounds, immediately she undressed herself.

When she is half undressing herself, at sudden Han Li Shang stands up... "Enough!" his face is freezes pair of his hand is stopped her and pressed her down to bed. "There is no use to prove something like this toward me? Are you such cheap?"

#### Cheap?

He MF thought that she really acts like this to every man? He MF really thought that Gong Xiao Man such slutty?

Most of people said, woman pursuing man is alike layer of yarn (easy), but now for Gong Xiao Man female pursuing male isn't such easy? Perhaps, because facing this big uncle, facing this person who won't burn with passion flame of human world, this man will be this difficult?

There is losing in her eyes when looking at Han Li Shang pair of cold eyes, ha, lot of people say men are kind of creature who think with their lower part? How could when she is approaching Han Li Shang in half naked, but she doesn't see anything except cold pair of his eyes? Why doesn't she see that \*\* in his eyes, does she not have any charm? Or this man's heart doesn't even moved by her, tempted by her?

"Hey, Big Uncle, you really think I like you? I just want to prove to you that I am not a little girl, that's all. Remember, don't be so easy to take age as excuse, in my eyes you are a man. I hope you to see me in your eyes as a woman because I am a woman and not so whatever little girl!" Gong Xiao Man spoke coldly, her eyes sweeping and measure him: "Do you think this position pressing me is okay? People who don't know will think you want to rape me!"

Han Li Shang also realized pressing her in this way quite odd, hurried he takes

away his hand that pressed Gong Xiao Man's hand, slowly he sits in the bedside.

"Dressed yourself first."

"S...." suddenly Gong Xiao Man gasped.

Han Li Shang turned his back: "Are you okay?"

"What okay, just now you are pressing at my wounds."

He is helplessly frowning, slowly raises her wrist looked at the wounds in her arm. Suddenly he feels something off, his eyes are glancing at her body which only wear bra: "Dressed first." His speaking tone is gradually softer.

"You hold my hand, how can I dress."

Helplessly, Han Li Shang loosens up her hand, looking at the time...

# Part 3 (Three)

"It has already be so late, If you want to back to school then back to school, if you want stay here, just stay here, I take my leave first."

Han Li Shang is going to leave, Gong Xiao Man unhappily rolled her eyes: "Big Uncle, can you have a common sense, do you know if burning wounds can cause fever at night, so you want to leave me without anyone to take care of me?"

"Later I will call Yao Yao to accompany you."

"Yao Yao has Yao Yao own matter, since you are responsible about me, you must responsible to the end, how can you not have any responsible sense?"

Facing with this smooth-talker little girl, Han Li Shang really does not want to waste his saliva to argue with her, hurried he takes a chair and sits down: "You sleep, I accompany you in here! Can it?"

"Hihihi." Gong Xiao Man is secretly laughing, people said that older man will be able to give sense of security, from Han Li Shang's she could perfectly feel secure feeling. If the man is someone in tenth or early in twenties, little brat, they won't care too much, perhaps has already left very early.

"Big Uncle, are sure to spend the night sitting in chair?"

"Do you think?" Han Li Shang impatiently spoke.

"The bed is such big, you can sleep at the other side. If you are afraid I will act unruly toward you, well, there is no big deal you just put few of pillows in our middle."

"No need!"

"Hey, what do you mean, actually you want to come here or not, I am a woman does not fear to sleep with you, a man, what are you afraid of?" Gong Xiao Man hasn't stopped to provoking.

What to say, Han Li Shang is a man in his thirties, how could he does not see the scheme that Gong Xiao Man sets? But man needs to have face, a little girl could say something out of limit, if he is declining her, it seems that he is like what she said.

Expressionless he lays down at the bed side, backing Gong Xiao Man.

Seeing his back, Gong Xiao Man stunned for moment and shows her satisfied expression, huh, what a pity little girl, she feels very happy only by the man gives her little bit taste of sweetness, it able to satisfy her, really poor.

Time, 'ticking ticking' passing by, Han Li Shang breathing is heavier, he could feel that he really felt asleep. Beautiful man is sleeping in her front but how could Gong Xiao Man not be able to sleep.

Damn, is this big uncle really a monk? Only little bit, how could he not have any thought even for a little bit? Although she does not own an empress beauty but she is also not ugly? How could he sleep this soundly?

Gong Xiao Man hates gritting her teeth, gently she sat up, arched, and carefully she stares at Han Li Shang sleeping face.

His curling eyelashes, his white skin, his strong neck, not too thick and thin lips, how can this big uncle such handsome?

It is not she never seen any handsome man before, Qi Lian Ao Yun, Feng Chen Yi, Long Qi and others, but only in Han Li Shang and Yu Ao Tian she could feel the masculine of maturity man which have strong charming aura.

Now days, there are many handsome men, but handsome men with masculine maturity charm are really rare to meet. It is kind of charming aura which not able to resist by little girl.

When she thought about it, Gong Xiao Man is gulping her saliva, gently she brushes her lips to his lips.

Hihi....

A faint smile of satisfaction, she is happily comes closer to Han Li Shang's back, close pair of eyes, feeling not really satisfied, she opened wide her hand and hugging Han Li Shang's waist, happily sleep and go to her dream world.

While at this moment...

At sudden Han Li Shang wide open his pair of eyes, his frozen eyes are gleaming slightly. He is slowly raises his hand and stroking his lips, "Tck" heave a

sighed, he is helplessly stroking anything toward this little girl!	his	head,	just	expected	he	really	could	not	do

# Part 4 (Four)

Feng Chen Yi with his expressionless face is dragging Yao Yao to the quiet sidelines.

When his footstep stopped, Yao Yao is pissed off swaying his hand to let her hand off: "Feng Chen Yi, what do you want?"

"It not like you never stayed at Japan, don't you know Yu Ao Tian's background?" obviously, Feng Chen Yi is provoked by the kiss mark in Yao Yao's neck, finally he vent out his emotion.

"I know!"

"Well, do you know or not how many women Yu Ao Tian have?"

"I also know it!"

"Ha, didn't you say, you want to find a man who only sincere to love you solely; does Yu Ao Tian is someone who can be yours only? Is he really loves you?"

"He..." Yu Ao Tian absolutely could not have her only, after her interaction with him for this time, she really witness Yu Ao Tian charm, he is destined not to be a man who belongs only to one woman. She more willingly to believe, Feng Chen Yi perhaps will only love one woman. "There is none of your business."

"That's right, none of my business. He is your boyfriend, either you are happy or hurt, only you who know it!"

Seeing how unstable Feng Chen Yi's mood, actually Yao Yao is helpless, this stupid, he thought that she will be so hurt if Yu Ao Tian have many women? Why must she hurt? Anyway she does not have feeling for him. But this is also good too, as long as Feng Chen Yi thought she really loves Yu Ao Tian, everything is good.

But Yao Yao does not know, more she showing her loving expression toward Yu Ao Tian, more Feng Chen Yi won't give up.

Love, this thing is such strange.

There is time, seeing the person we ever loved is happy, though we are hurt

but still we will give up and giving them blessing; but there also a time when seeing the person we ever love sad, forever we won't ever to give up, forever hatred want to snatch that person back to our side. Perhaps, this is called as love; always hate to admit to let the person we loved get the greatest happiness.

All are mingling in high society circle, Yu Ao Tian rumour isn't something that Feng Chen Yi never heard before, so that, he never suspected Yao Yao's boyfriend would be Yu Ao Tian; he also never suspicious, Yu Ao Tian would say Yao Yao as his girlfriend. After all, these two men are too out of place.

Now when the truth revealed, no matter the reason because they ever had relationship or not in the past, he won't ever feel peace to hand over Yao Yao to man like Yu Ao Tian!

His cold eyes are looked at her neck; that kiss mark as if a knife which piercing into his eye balls. "Where is the necklace?"

"What necklace?"

"The necklace which I gave you!"

Yao Yao is dumfounded, her eyes are avoiding to left and right: "Throw, have thrown it!"

"Say it one more time!"

"Have thrown it!"

An instant Fen Chen Yi is fuming in rage, at sudden he grabbed Yao Yao's neck for the necklace, using forced to take it off...

They knew each other when Yao Yao was 13 years old, every times she was lying at one glance Feng Chen Yi always found out, included this time! But damn it! He knew that she was lying, but when he heard she said "Thrown" this word, his heart still ache!

# Part 1 (One)

The key shape necklace is fallen on the ground, the crisp sound of the fallen necklace followed by a deep voice...

"Chen Yi, suddenly you bring out my girlfriend don't you think this little bit impolite?" Yu Ao Tian is slowly walking in front of them, bend half his body to pick up the necklace, ambiguously smile.

Yao Yao heart is tightened, at sudden turned back, seeing Yu Ao Tian is playing with that necklace in his big hand, slowly she walked to his side.

At this moment, Long Ye and Ou Yan Zi Xuan are hurried come nearer.

"Haha, I apologized CEO Yu, I just want to have 'private' talked with Yao Yao regarding our past, reminisce the old days." Feng Chen Yi facial expression changed, his solemn face has slightly provocative.

"Reminisce?" Yu Ao Tian quietly glances at Yao Yao and once again looks at Feng Chen Yi.

"Yes. Reminisce. I have forgotten to tell CEO Yu, actually Yao Yao is my Exgirlfriend, old friends meet, and it is unavoidable looking for quiet place to reminisce." Said Feng Chen Yi is smiling coldly, pulled Yao Yao into his embraces. Since Yu Ao Tian likes to play in dark, well he simply bring out three of them relationship in order to challenge him directly (announcing the war).

When Yu Ao Tian introduced Yao Yao, he had guessed Yu Ao Tian must know their relationship!

# Part 2 (Two)

"Oh? That is." Yu Ao Tian is smiling deviously, his deep eyes are suddenly showed gloomy gleam, one of his hand is pulling back Yao Yao from Feng Chen Yi's to his embrace: "So you are the person from 2 years ago, when Yao Yao slept with me, said that you was the boyfriend who cheating."

Yao Yao heart is tightened, her moist eyes cast with gloom, yes...two years ago! The matter about two years ago, no one really knew it well other then Yu Ao Tian, right?

"You! You slept with him two years ago?" Feng Chen Yi recalled the scenery when he met Yao Yao with man's suit in school garden, that time she told him that she was looking for one night stand sex, he thought she was speaking because of anger, did... it real?

But another moment, his unstable mood calm down! "My beloved, not long time ago when you were sleeping with me you had said that nothing was happened between you and your boyfriend? Actually were you lying or CEO Yu is lying?"

Feng...

What does Feng Chen Yi say? How could he say something mislead?

Yes! She had ever said to Feng Chen Yi that she and Yu Ao Tian never happened anything, but it has reason!

Her stiff body slowly shivering, she is nervously slowly glancing at Yu Ao Tian...

He is curled his hand into fist until showing his vein, his forehead veins also clearly seen, when Yu Ao Tian cold expression caught by Yao Yao's eyes, she is helplessly inhale cold air.

This time Feng Chen Yi is too much, really too much!

When everyone has not 'digest' Feng Chen Yi's word, something surprising is happened, his mouth is curved upward, his sexy lips suddenly kiss on Yao Yao's lips.

This kiss, so superficial, but it enough to push a war to become white-hot.

"Hm, really give a familiar taste." Feng Chen Yi sneered lick his lips, provocative, his eyes looking at Yu Ao Tian: "CEO Yu, you won't be minding right? This is only etiquette kiss."

Ou Yang Zi Xuan who is standing beside has already looked with dumbfounded expression, Feng Chen Yi really does mean to fight with Yu Ao tian, although... if these two persons really wants to start a war, who will win and lose it still hard to say.

"Don't mind. Is it only etiquette kissed, right?" If not because Long Ye, perhaps the suffocating atmosphere might keep on continuing, these two men if they really want to make moves perhaps they are able to ruin half of China, he is faintly smiles, alike an arrow dash in front of Feng Chen Yi.

Without wait to his response, Long Ye has landed his lips to Feng Chen Yi's lips.

"Ugh..." the atmosphere which looks alike battlefield filled with fire and smoke at sudden turned to be funny scenery because of Long Ye sudden movement.

Feng Chen Yi's face is darkening: "General Manager Long, what are you doing?"

"Haha, General Manager Feng, I just want to give you an etiquette kiss, that's all." Said Long Ye is gently smiling.

Though, he really does not willing to kiss a man, but only by this way it could postponed the war...

# Part 3 (Three)

Standing and keep on silent, Yao Yao has been staring blank from the beginning, she does not understand anything? How thing turn to be this way? Why Feng Chen Yi kissed her in front of Yu Ao Tian?

She is pissed off biting hard her lips, tighten her fists, swaying away Yu Ao Tian's hand which in her shoulder, she is quickly running away without looking back.

'So you were the man from 2 years ago, letting Yao Yao to sleep with me, as heard that boyfriend was cheating.'

'My Beloved, not long ago when you were sleeping with me you had told me that nothing was happened between you and your boyfriend? Actually who is lying, you or CEO Yu who is lying?'

How could they act this way? How could they speak without any consideration? How to make General Manager Long and Ou Yang Zi Xuan who are standing beside to look at her?

Is she one hundred percent slut? Or a slut who will sleep with anyone?

Both of them are selfish men, really and really selfish.

Tears are flowing wetting Yao Yao's face, under the dark night sky, the petite figure seems to be weak.

Perhaps, in people eyes, they thought she might have happiness; there are two extra ordinary men who fight for her. But, whether the today Yu Ao Tian or Feng Chen Yi, both of them are only leave Yao Yao pain, unlimited pain.

Both of them are indeed never thought and try to put on her shoes, on contrary both of them are scarifying her in this kind of situation and dumped her.

She is so clearly, in that situation they are used her to be a bullet to shot each others. But, she is human, not a bullet, and also not a thing, there is no one who put themselves on her shoes, thinking about her even for moment!

Ha, hovering around in between two strong men, the feel really bad.

Facing with the heartless Yu Ao Tian, Yao Yao really does not have any expectation, anyway both of them don't have any feeling for each other; while facing with Feng Chen Yi who she ever loved, she really wanted to know, both of them had already broke up, he also doesn't have any responsible to think about her.

Only by this, it feels better. Anyone doesn't need to owe at anyone, no need to considering for feeling and getting along. And then, persevere for three years, after three years; she could free herself from this heartless game. Doing whatever she likes...

Inside the apartment.

(key, opening door sound)

The door is opened, when Yao Yao arrived half hour later, Yu Ao Tian has back.

Her eyes are staring, coldly swept at him, bitterly gritting her teeth: "Today result, are you satisfied?"

"En?" Yu Ao Tian face is darkened; didn't he hear mistaken? After all this little thing is asking him with this kind of tone?

"Ha, little thing, do you know what are you talking?" the key in his hand is thrown to the floor, the sound is piercing ears.

Yao Yao is angry, stand up: "Yu Ao Tian, you dare to say, these days you are treating me very well, aren't you waiting for today—this scenery? Since you had known my relationship with Feng Chen Yi, why did you arrange this kind of coincides of meeting, do you want me to look bad?" she said coldly: "Ha, now finally I understood what did Qi Lian sunbae meant, unexpectedly whatever he said wasn't wrong, you, Yu Ao Tian whenever you are you will always scheming, you have your own goal!"

She really admires Yu Ao Tian (in negative way), how could he control everything very well, able to make everything as if a chess game, while others people are his chess pieces, being controlled by him, this kind of man really so scary, right?

"Little thing, before you said all things, have you thought about your status?" Yu Ao Tian sneered, slowly walking in front of her, his good looking face has a trace of chilling expression.

"I know about my status, no need you to..." at sudden, Yao Yao seems to react, her anger emotion an instantaneous changes at sudden.

"Finally you are reacting?" He is stretching his body, his face does not have any expression, sitting on the sofa, chastise looking at Yao Yao who is in his in front.

Under...

**Understood!** 

Regarding the meeting with Feng Chen Yi was Yu Ao Tian plan, it is better to say at this moment is the starting game by Yu Ao Tian!

If she really does not have any feeling toward Feng Chen Yi, she would not be so afraid to meet her ex-boyfriend, so that the trap which set up by Yu Ao Tian would be zero; if... she still have feeling for Feng Chen Yi, she would be very angry when facing, or feeling afraid, without she realized she had fallen into Yu Ao Tian's trap.

So that, Yu Ao Tian didn't intent to make her looked bad or Feng Chen Yi, but he just wanted to test water... regarding her feeling toward Feng Chen Yi...

PS: Make sure to stay tune, I still have one part to be posted soon ^-^

# Part 4 (Four)

Should say Yu Ao Tian has very careful thought, also deep? Or must say this time Yao Yao is the one who too stupid?

"Little thing, have done to question me, now... it is my turn to ask you!" said Yu Ao Tian who face is still darken, he pulled Yao Yao into his embraces, his cold big hand is pinching her chin, slowly showing his sinister face: "Actually, what kind of reason, you could tell your ex-boyfriend, we, never happened anything!"

Her heart feels as if being suppressed by stone, strangely chills are covered her whole body.

This word said by Feng Chen Yi was so sharp; it makes her totally in cornered.

The important is not about whether she slept with whom and in whose bed, because until today Yu Ao Tian knows very well she is still virgin. But the main matter is why must she say that to Feng Chen Yi, there is nothing ever happened between her and Yu Ao Tian.

Cannot give an explanation, acting might turn to be reality, she has released signal to Feng Chen Yi, as if telling him... 'I am still virgin, I still pure, you wait for me.'

But the fact isn't it, that time when she told Feng Chen Yi those words, she didn't mean to prove whatever but simply hope him to let her go, that's all.

But would Yu Ao Tian believe?

Both of them are not having any feeling, also do not have any trust, by that way although she trying to give an explanation it would feel too much, moreover the person is Yu Ao Tian? After all, Yu Ao Tian does not understand Feng Chen Yi's characters.

Her lips are trembling, but she not utters any sound, she really afraid speaks wrong in front of Yu Ao Tian which will anger him.

Long time, Yu Ao Tian does not wait until she regained herself. "Ha." His face is showing gloom smile, his deep black eyes flashed, at sudden he pushes her...

'Peng' her forehead hit table corner, the blood dripping down blurry her eyes.

"Yu..." when Yao Yao lifts her head up, she is looking for Yu Ao Tian's shadow, the iron gate closed sound is echoing in her ears, he has left...

The next morning.

Yao Yao has sat down in the living room for the entire night, as long as she heard the any movement or any sound, she would think whether Yu Ao Tian coming back or not?

But this apartment which is living by Long Ye or Mo Xue Tong who are returning back at home.

Based on Yu Ao Tian character, Yao Yao knows it very well he won't show up in front of her in this short time.

If in the past, she really wished Yu Ao Tian went missing for more few days, but this time, she really hopes he could show up immediately in front of her, even only few minutes, as long as giving her an opportunity to explain.

Although he not believes on her, although he will be angry, it is nothing matter. Because, she feels little bit regret, about yesterday night hesitation, she even let her chance to give explanation slip away.

# Part 5 (Five)

She is dragging her exhausted body, lowering her head going to university.

"Hey, Hey, you guys see that silver rolls-royce car, is it charming?"

"Yes, it seems to be Feng's car."

At sudden, that expensive car stopped in front of the university entrance, the students who are passing by they stopped their footstep, not far they are whispering.

The First University can be say having many students who are coming from all over the world, but the 40% are coming from wealthy family, so that there are hundreds of expensive cars parking in the university entrance which not really catch eyes. But Feng Chen Yi's car is one of the five most expensive cars, in order to purchase it needed to go many procedures and much trouble, in China only the Feng's who has those type of cars, so that many people know that car is belong to the Feng's.

Yao Yao creased her forehead, intentionally she passing by that car from the university entrance but not stopping, but this time Feng Chen Yi's secretary, Lisa is walking faster from the car, stop in front of her: "Miss Luo, General Manager Feng wanted to speak with you for moment, can you get into car?"

An instant all the students are looking at Yao Yao.

She lowers her head, biting hard her lips, what Feng Chen Yi wants? Does he still feel yesterday was not enough in mess?

"I am sorry, I don't have time. And also, please tell your General Manager Feng, between me and him there is nothing to talk about."

"Miss Luo, this I can help you to tell him, but at moment I might lose my job. So that, I personally begging you, I afraid you should go with me to there for moment." Lisa is speaking with begging tone.

Facing with Feng Chen Yi this domineering boss, Yao Yao understands very well Lisa bitterness. "I understood." Her eyes are coldly sweeping to car which is not

far, faster she walks at the back passenger seat.

'Knock knock' (knocking sound)

Hand is knocking at the car glass window. She could feel at her back all the students are looking at her, but since everything has gone to this point, avoiding is useless. Although, this matter would go to Yu Ao Tian's ears.

The glass window is pulling down, Feng Chen Yi'e head pop out, when he wants to open his mouth, his eyes spotted the wound in her forehead: "You are injured?"

"General Manager Feng, What good thing you want to say?"

"Get in to car!"

"I think there is no need; if you have words just say in here!"

"Get in!" Feng Chen Yi is showing impatiently.

She is glaring at him, turned and leaving.

"Luo Yao Yao!" helplessly, at last Feng Chen Yi gets down from the car, faster chasing her, catch her arms.

"Let me go, Feng Chen Yi!" Yao Yao is expressionless glaring at the hand which grabbed her hand, the peripheral stare from the surrounded of university.

"Tell me, how you get injured, I will let go." Feng Chen Yi ways of speaking turned to be gentle a bit.

She quiet for while, she feels her nose goes runny, that is kind of bitter and grievance feeling, as if wanted to look at someone to have talk but there is no one can, that kind of feeling. No matter what, at least she knows Feng Chen Yi who is in front of her isn't her confident, he? At most he only a culprit.

# Part 1 (One)

"How I get it? You say how I get it? All rewarded by you!" Yao Yao detests and swaying away Feng Chen Yi's hand, hurried she tries to control her emotion.

Feng Chen Yi is stay still as if being acupuncture his whole body, dumbfounded, not let go but also not speaking, only his handsome face which keeps on staring at the wound in her forehead.

Perhaps, he never thought, the fight between him and Yu Ao Tian will involve Yao Yao. So that today he is coming to the university early in the morning, his coming all because last night matter.

It seems that...

It still little bit late. "You don't say because rewarded by me, aren't you loves him, and he also loves you? How he loves you?"

Listen to Feng Chen Yi questions, Yao Yao really feels herself got one hard slap in her face, this feeling, if not because she wishes Feng Chen Yi faster to give up on her, why must she lie?

"Well, that is ours matter, none of your business."

"That's right, there is none of my business. But you don't forget, Luo Yao Yao, in the past I ever told you, later I will let you to live in bitter, but..." his cold good looking face turned to other side, he sneers: "both of you feeling really cannot stand with a little test!"

Hah? Test? There is no feeling what test is for? "Feng Chen Yi, you are really... bastard!" she gritting, raises her hand 'pa' (slap sound) slaps hard on his face.

Is he still the man that she loves for 5 years?

She started to secretly love him at 14, dating at 15, breaking up at 17, encountered him again at 19, this is the man that she loves, one of the selfish man?

Why Feng Chen Yi didn't act this way before? If in the past he acted this way, perhaps she has forgotten this love as earlier as she could, no! Perhaps to say,

she would not fall in love with him!

"Ha." Feng Chen Yi is laughing, slowly loosens his hand that grabs her hand, stroking his own face: "anyway my image in your heart has changed this way. You remember, Luo Yao Yao, later in the future something like this will likely to happen, you must prepare to cry wet your face!" after said, he expressionless walking back to his car.

"Feng... General Manager Feng." Lisa who is witnessed all the processes, from the in front seat hand out a handkerchief: "You... are you on purpose asked Miss Luo to hit you?"

Just to know, kids that growing up in Feng household, from the day they understanding thing the first lesson is martial art to protect self, this because to prevent from get kidnap so that they must learn it.

When Feng Chen Yi was at 11 he has already held black belt, so that his fighting skill won't be weaker than Yu Ao Tian.

Alike Yao Yao slapped, he could very easily to stop it, but he even welcoming that slap, enough to be seen, he is so willing to get the hit!

"There is none of your business, start the engine!"

"Back to the company? General Manager Feng."

"No." His eyes are gleaming coldly, he throwing out the handkerchief from the window, coldly said: "Go to Berson group!"

"Yes, General Manager Feng."

# Part 2 (Two)

That dazzling and expensive car finally left the university, but that scenery is staying long in those students who see it.

"What is that little girl relationship with Feng's?"

"Yes, it seems, both of them are boy and girl friend?"

"Huh, no wonder, that little girl is beautiful. But too audacious, she not even let any face for the Feng's, doesn't she afraid being dumped?"

"Who knows."

Listen to the whispering, Yao Yao chooses to ignore, hurried she dashing to inside of university.

"Hey, Luo Yao Yao."

Heard familiar voice, at sudden Yao Yao stopped her footstep, coldly looked over: "Feng Ke Xin?" ah, after the big brother came to give troublesome, now the sister also comes to give trouble? Actually what she owe to the Feng's family in her past life?

"You don't need to look at me with that eyesight, I called you, not to troublesome you." Feng Ke Xin is smiling in front of her.

"At the beginning I am curious, I have asked my brother regarding both of your relationship, I really never thought you are the heartless girlfriend of my second brother when he was in Japan."

"En?" what she said... 'you are'? Did Feng Chen Yi ever mention about her in front of his little sister?"

"Didn't both of you have break up 2 years ago?"

"En."

"O, no wonder, my father is keeping on calling my second brother to continue family business, no matter what he does not want, the result was two years ago suddenly he called home, took his initiatives to come back to China. It afraid his feeling was wounded." Feng Ke Xin is talking to herself, with curious expression asked: "Hey, both of you have been breaking up for two years, my second brother has many times went to Japan to look for you, why didn't you think to reconcile with him?"

What? What does Feng Ke Xin say? "After we broke up, both of us never met anymore, until not long ago when I back to China."

"Ah? Impossible! Our family does not have business in Japan, so that there is no reason for my second brother to go to Japan. But there was a time after both of you broke up, every week my brother would fly to Japan, he would back on Sunday night; and then company has many things to do, he later on less visit Japan. And also this half year he has stopped goes to Japan. If he went to Japan not for you, then for whom?"

Whether Feng Ke Xin said all these things by intention or not, but unintentionally it has been moving Yao Yao's heart.

Actually when they were breaking up that first half year, she has heard classmate said they met Feng Chen Yi in school entrance, but that time because she was so hurt, she shut all the news about Feng Chen Yi, and never asked.

But today, according to what Feng Ke Xin said, it seems that the rumour circling in her classmates were right.

Ha, it is so obvious after break up he showed ignorant attitudes, making her heart ache and then did something warm her heart, why must he be this bitter?

Enough! Enough! She really does not want to think about Feng Chen Yi, it is clearly she has gave up her feeling, should she flames it to start over again? She does not want like this, she just too exhausted.

#### Part 3 (Three)

"He is looking for Li Ruo Ting!" that's right! He must go there to see Li Ruo Ting!

"Cut it off, Li Ruo Ting? Not long ago, the Li's wanted to have business marriage with us, Feng's, they said wanted to marry the second Miss but the result my second brother had refused it. If he really has feeling for Li Ruo Ting, why must he refuse this marriage proposal? It is obvious marry the second Miss of Li's it can help my second brother to stronger his position." Said Feng Ke Xin with piercing laughed.

She thought by bringing up about Li Ruo Ting, Feng Ke Xin could stop but never thought it would talk to wider topic, which she does not know.

Pursed lips, she creased her forehead: "Feng Ke Xin, you say this thing must have purpose right?"

Feng Ke Xin dumbfounded, ha, this Luo Yao Yao is deserved to be called as genius, after all she is able to guess what inside her heart. "I am straightforward person, since you have found out, I won't make denial. That's right! I have purpose! Let me tell you honestly, I like Qi Lian sunbae!"

She...she likes Qi Lian sunbae? Does Feng Ke Xin knows Qi Lian Ao Yun is Yu Ao Tian's younger brother? Will Feng Chen Yi stoped her? If Yu Ao Tian found out will he separate them?

Strangely, Yao Yao feels unsettled, but... feeling this kind of thing, actually once falling in love, the outsider force to stop will only to deepen the bone of feeling, that's why it is called as true love.

Perhaps, someone like Feng Ke Xin who has warm character a like sun might be able to shines Qi Lian Ao Yun dark side of heart.

"So this is your intention to keep me beside your second brother, reconcile with him?" Yao Yao is faintly smiling.

"That's right!"

"Haha, actually you don't need to do so, because I never dated Qi Lian sunbae."

"En?" at sudden Feng Ke Xin eyes is glared bigger.

"This mater I could not tell you in detail, but me and Qi Lian sunbae are strictly really never dating before. If you like him, you can slowly pursuing him."

"Cut it off, I am Feng Ke Xin, must I need to pursue anyone?" Feng Ke Xin talked alike queen: "I believe not long after this, Qi Lian sunbae will pursue me."

Seing how confident Feng Ke Xin, Yao Yao helplessly smiles.

To be honest, from the very start she has good feeling with her, though she gave her much trouble. But from Feng Ke Xin nature, she stills able to see something good from her. If she isn't Feng Chen Yi's younger sister, perhaps they can be good friend. "I leave first, Feng Ke Xin."

"Wait! No matter what is my intention to tell you about that, but, all I have said is true!"

No need to do so, Feng Ke Xin really does not need to prove anything to her, now she more willing to think whatever she said is lie; perhaps to say she really does not suitable for Feng Chen Yi, and also wish not to hear thing that she does not want to hear.

"Feng Ke..."

"Yao Yao, bad... something bad! Something bad happened!" at sudden, Gong Xiao Man with panic expression rushing between her and Feng Ke Xin in front.

# Part 4 (Four)

#### **Berson Group**

"General Manager Feng, may I ask you do you have appointment?" Mo Tong Xue is stopping Feng Chen Yi in front of the CEO's entrance office room.

He inserts his hand in his pocket: "Trouble you, please tell CEO Yu, I have thing looking for him!"

"I do apologized, CEO Yu is handling public business, perhaps now..."

"Xue Tong." At sudden, the CEO door room is opened, Yu Ao Tian is waving his hand to Mo Xue Tong, with his devilish expression looked at Feng Chen Yi: "Chen Yi, I have heard you voice from inside the CEO room, what happen, why are you such in rush looking for me?"

"Can I get inside to have talk?" Feng Chen Yi coldly said.

Yu Ao Tian is nodding, turned his body and entering to the office room.

"Lisa, you wait at me in front of the door."

"Yes, General Manager Feng."

After leaving his words, Feng Chen Yi hurries follow to enter the office room.

"Sit." Yu Ao Tian who is sitting at his chair in his office pointing at the chair in front of him.

He waves his hand: "I have thing that I wanted to ask you, CEO Yu."

"En?" Yu Ao Tian eyes rolled, his body is leaning to the chair, smiling ambiguously: "What's matter?"

He is moving few steps in front of the office desk, for moment, his calm expression changed: "CEO Yu, aren't you really mind because of last night conversations, are you?"

"Ha, Chen Yi, what do you want to say?" Yu Ao Tian is acted pretending not understand asked.

"Actually it is nothing. Frankly to say because Yao Yao too understand me, she

knows how to say something, so that I won't touch her. If I know, something is happened between you guys, last time no matter how she begged on me, I would not be mercy, ha." Feng Chen Yi is pretending to regret and heave a sighed, his eyes are meeting with Yu Ao Tian's eyes, his mouth is curved, give a faint smile.

After that, he turned his back leaving Yu Ao Tian office room...

Ha, really embarrassing.

Standing in front of the office room, Feng Chen Yi is laughing self-mockery, it was clearly that he planted that misunderstanding, but now it only one day and he has already cleared up all the misunderstanding, actually after he thought about it, using this misunderstanding to test Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao, would it be better?

But...

When he saw the wound in Yao Yao's forehead, that kind of heart ache is indescribable with words, both of them had been together for such long time, not to mention hit her, even to push her, he won't do it, but Yu Ao Tian is over and over hurting her! Simply to say damn it!

Curling his hand into fist, with his face gloomy, he whispered: "Yu Ao Tian, this is my last time to...step back!"

Many people want to know, what is different between love and like.

Hence, GOD sketched out a picture, a little boy walked to the roses garden, can't help but lament, 'what a beautiful rose' he pulled the flower, put it down.

But another drawing, it still a little boy who also walking to rose garden, his eyes see roses, faintly he smiles, pick up sprinkler and fertilizer began carefully to take care the roses.

This is the differences between love and like.

Like is taste of come down on something, leave you as you want, as long as you got it, it is okay; while love is taste of carefully to nurture, although one day it will belong to other person, you will be able to look it happily from further...

Inside the office room.

After Feng Chen Yi done, Yu Ao Tian has understood the meaning behind, and then, the first thing which flowing in his mind is Li Mei Yun ever told him...

'Aiya, Aiya really want to know how his ex-girlfriend looks alike? After all she is able to keep Feng Chen Yi's heart that long.'

'What? Are you starting to have interest with others girlfriend?'

'Ah. Mei Yun, impossible for you not to know my expectation toward my woman?'

'Could it be Feng Chen Yi never touch his ex-girlfriend?'

'How's that possible? Feng Chen Yi is normal man.'

'Humph, there is time, more you love more you not willing to touch!'

During that time he doubted what Li Mei Yun told him, but now Feng Chen Yi words proved everything.

More love more not willing to touch? Ha...really hard to make people to believe it (understand the feeling).

#### Part 5 (Five)

His deep pair of eyes slowly looked toward to the floor, followed by Yu Ao Tian's hand which touching his pocket, from his pocket slowly he takes out the necklace which he gave to Yao Yao as her birthday present.

Yesterday, because of Feng Chen Yi impulsive movement, the necklace was broke, Yu Ao Tian has picked it up and kept it for this time in his pocket.

His eyes are looked attentively to his hand which holding the necklace, his pair of eyes gleaming, very fast he press the call button on the telephone.

Not long after that Mo Xue Tong comes in. "CEO Yu, what can I do for you?"

"Xue Tong, trouble you to go to fix this necklace..."

"Ao Tian!" at sudden, the door of the office room is pushed opened, Han Li Shang with his gloomy facial expression rushed into the room: "Bad, something happened!"

On the other side in First University...

"Yao Yao, bad... it is bad! Something happened!" Gong Xiao Man with her panic expression rushing in front of Yao Yao and Feng Ke Xin.

"What is going on, Xiao Man?"

"Aiya, I, I do also don't know how to explain to you, you hurry follow me to the school bulletin board to see it and then you will know it." After said, Gong Xiao Man is running with Yao Yao to the school bulletin board.

As seen, in front of the huge bulletin board, it has been surrounded by many students around three layers. When Yao Yao showing up, those students who are surrounded slowly turned their back: "See, she is Luo Yao Yao."

"Woah, she is looked more innocent compare to the photo."

"Of course, that kind of face is 'bargaining for money' that ability, after all the university student innocent is 'worth of money' one is better than others."

"That's right."

The way of the students discussing her are so piercing and looked her with disdain eyesight, Yao Yao's body is strangely shivering, her heart also followed 'thump' thump' nervous and not peaceful.

"Give a way, thank you." Gong Xiao Man is pushing away the students who are in front of the bulletin board, pointing at the poster... "Yao Yao, you see!"

'First Year student from A class Luo Yao Yao, being supported (negative meaning) by a businessman, every month the salary is 80 thousand, can be played; when the real businessman's girlfriend pregnant knew it, Luo Yao Yao schemed her and made her miscarried, forcing the real girlfriend to be dumped. But until today, Luo Yao Yao is still that businessman's lover, no changes in her status.

as it reported, when Luo Yao Yao was studying in Japan as student exchange, she also had many times being businessmen's lover, at 15 year she did abortion, also drugs.

at below is Luo Yao Yao's picture.

Others, if there is people who suspicious with the contain, not long after this, the informant can posted Luo Yao Yao and the businessman intimate picture, let everyone can share...'

Reading every words in the poster, Yao Yao's head feeling it is exploded, her heart as if being emptied.

'supported, scheming, miscarriage, drugs' these words in the eyes of students were sharply denounced, plastered in her body. Despite what is written in the poster are not true, but there is a truth that more than enough to push her into hopeless abyss.

Who wrote the poster?

Li Ruo Ting? Shang Yun Yin? Or...Qi Lian Ao Yun? Everyone has the possibilities...

### Part 1 (One)

"Hey, Luo Yao Yao, is this written in the poster are true? If it is true, you can be said as the first most rotten person in our university."

"Hahahahaha." At back there are piercing laughing voices.

Beside her is Gong Xiao Man who is angry and glared at them: "Stop speak nonsense!"

"Whether it is nonsense or not, very soon we will find it out later? Well, above has said that, after few days there will be picture to be shown. Woah, I hope it will be bed photo."

"Ha, I am more interested to the businessman who is supported Luo Yao Yao. Will he is someone at his forties or fifty middle age man? Or sixty, seventy something old man? Luo Yao Yao indeed too open."

"You guys give try to say one more time!" Gong Xiao Man is rushed and confronted those few students.

"What? Dare to do but not dare to hear what people say? Luo Yao Yao does not say anything, what are you fuming for?"

"That's right. I guess 80 percent Luo Yao Yao is afraid of being found out, so that she not dares to say anything, right?"

"En, En, there is a possible."

After all Gong Xiao Man is only having one mouth, how could she win over many people? "You guys!"

"All shut up your mouth!" at sudden, Long Qi is roaring at everyone so that they turned their back. He is pushing away those students who are blocking his way, rushing to the most in front: "If don't want to die, I count to three, all get lost!3!2!"

Without waiting he counted until '1', everyone has already disappeared.

After witness his fought with Shang Yun Yin last time, in school there is no one

who does not afraid of Long Qi.

"Long Qi, still you are so dependable." Gong Xiao Man gives him thumb up.

If this is the normal him, he might already say something, but now...

Long Qi face is darken when seeing the poster posted at school bulletin board, his black eyebrow is furrowed, at sudden he extend out his hand and tearing the poster into pieces which humiliate Yao Yao.

"Yao Yao." Gong Xiao Man is dragging Yao Yao's hand, she just realized her hand is extremely cold, and also shivering: "You don't need to think about whatever they said. Later we will help you to investigate who did this thing, when the time is arrived, I will help you to vent this anger!"

At sudden her head feel heavy, the voice is get softer, not able to hear clearly, no matter what cannot hear anymore. Slowly she lifts up her soulless eyes... how can Xiao Man turn become twos? What Xiao Man said? Why at sudden she can't hear anything? WHY! She feels her eyes darken, followed by her body which slumps and she lost her consciousness.

"Yao Yao!" fortunately, Long Qi arrived at right time beside her, with one hand he pulled her into his embraces. "Gong Xiao Man, I will bring Yao Yao go home, you...can't go now."

"Why?"

# Chapter 231 Part 2 (Two)

Still that words, the small apartment where Yao Yao stays, that apartment, Yao Yao is the first 'outsider' who stepped her feet inside there, believes Long Qi, or Yu Ao Tian, all of them won't expect there will be the 'second outsider' to step in again. "You don't need to know, just rest assured to leave her with me, when she is awake, I will ask her to call you."

"That good too."

Long Qi worries, and hurries to take Yao Yao to the apartment where he stays, so clumsy he is putting cold towel to her forehead.

Sitting at the bedside, without expression he heave a sighed, his warm damp hand is stretching extend toward her pale small face.

But when he is almost to touch her cheek, Long Qi withdrew his hand back, "Hey, Flast chest faster you awake, this is not what kind of huge matter, don't let me worry about you." His pair of eyes is showing deep sorrow, slowly he is lying beside Yao Yao and close his eyes...

'Yao Yao, later when you are growing up, don't be such easy to date any man, once you realized falling in love with a man, feeling he can be the other half who will accompany you for your rest of life, you must dating well, until get married, because reputation and integrity are the most important for woman.'

'Mom, what is called as reputation and integrity?'

'Reputation is something so important for woman, when you grow up you will know it.'

'Luo Yao Yao is a cheap slut, being supported by businessman; at age 15 abortion; forcing and harm the initial girlfriend of the businessman, simply to say shameless.'

'That's right, how can in this world there is such despicable person? After sleeping with one man, again sleep with other man.'

'Yao Yao, sorry, let's we divorced, because I had known your past.'

'Mom, all my classmate are laughing at me, they said mom is being supported, is it true?'

"No! that is not! It is not!" ad sudden her eyes are open, Yao Yao wakes up and sit down, her eyes are sweeping at unfamiliar surrounding environment.

So that... just now only a dream...

#### Part 3 (Three)

In her dream, she dreamt the conversation between her mother and the younger her; she also dreamt being laughed by her classmates; she even dreamt about her future husband who found out her past and intending divorced her, her child knew about her past and crying when going to home.

Too scary, all of these are just too scary, today, when she think about her future, it only left one dark future, there is no slightest brightness.

"Hey, flat chest, flat chest!" seeing Yao Yao's forehead is filled with big cold bead of sweats, Long Qi who is beside her grabbed her wrist.

"Ah!" Yao Yao screams because surprised, at then she swaying away Long Qi's hand, She moves her body to the bed corner. "Long...Long... Long Qi?"

"You?" Long Qi is seeing his hand being swayed away by Yao Yao's little hand and also sees she frowned. "Are you afraid of me?" very obvious, it can be seen the fear in Yao Yao's eyes.

"Not... not. I just, just..." does not know how to explain, if she always gets along with Long Qi, really does not know what kind of rumour would be made by her classmate later.

"Do you really care of the poster?"

Care, extremely care of it. She lowers her head, her tears are falling down.

"Flat chest, as you know someone like me won't be able to say what kind of great things, but at least I know what is called as right, standing upright this principle, if you because of that rumour, tormenting yourself, you are really stupid."

"But..." gripping the guilt, her small hands are trembling, she impatiently looking at Long Qi, slowly said: "The contain above, that also slightest true. I am indeed...Yu Ao Tian..."

"Yao Yao!" Long Qi with his loud voice stopped her: "I don't know how people view you and Ao Tian, but I, also my big brother, we never thought you as Ao

Tian's lover. Moreover, Ao Tian never has habit to have lover, in his world, women are only his tool, that's all. I think, both of you and Ao Tian aren't happened anything yet, right?"

Staring at Long Qi serious expression, carefully to 'taste' his words, vaguely remember Nan Lu also ever said Yu Ao Tian never has habit to have lover. "Since it is the case, why that time Yu Ao Tian wanted to help me? Moreover asking me to be his lover?"

If this is simply only for getting her body, he could simply make the transaction with money, why must he make a deal with her for such long?

"Uh?" Long Qi is dumbfounded, before Long Ye done with Yao Yao's background investigation, he had warned Long Qi to be careful when talking, because this girl has high IQ, she might has potential to dig more thing from words, it seems this time he oversight this.

"Ha, Hahaha... as you know, that time Ao Tian thought your father might involve with the flaming in Hua Mei Villa, perhaps that is the reason to let you stay at his side. Moreover Ao Tian this person is someone likes, his 'prey' to surrender themselves, while you are not giving in, probably this is the reason to put you at his side. Ahahahaaha."

Is it?

Yao Yao is carefully staring at Long Qi, his face is showing one forceful smiles, but he reasons indeed fit with Yu Ao Tian's character.

Remembered that time when she was signing the lover contract agreement with Yu Ao Tian, Yu Ao Tian ever said, wait until her 'surrender' that time, perhaps due to his domineering character, she keeps 'safe and sound' staying beside him?

"Long..."

"Flat Chest, do you feel hungry?"

"No..." Yao Yao shakes her head.

"I feel hungry, I go down stair to eat something, how about you, go to living room watching television."

"Oh, okay." Yao Yao nodding as stiff as wood, at sudden she thought... "Where it is?" her eyes are sweeping at the messy room, this room types is look so similar with Yu Ao Tian's apartment, but the environment is different.

After she staying with Yu Ao Tian, she realized he is someone who extremely likes to be clean, his house is arranged in very good order, spotless. But in here...

Really sorry. (this word mean so sorry to say such mess)

#### Part 4 (Four)

"This is my room, you come." Long Qi is bringing Yao Yao out from his room, pointed at the an opposite room: "This room belongs to my older brother. We are living at the second floor.

Ah, she always knows that Long Qi and others also Yu Ao Tian are living at same apartment building, but never know which floor Long Qi and others live in.

No wonder she feels this house type is so similar with Yu Ao Tian's house, only Long Qi stays with two rooms and one living room.

Turned her head to glance at Long Qi's room, haha, inside is extremely messed which really suitable with Long Qi's unruly character. "En, I understand, Long Qi, You go have meal first. I also back to home."

"You stay here first. Anyway, I am alone and boring."

"But..."

"You don't 'but' anymore, I am almost hunger to death, I leave first." After said, Long Qi faster his footsteps, walking out.

When he arrived at the front door, he lets out heave sigh, just now he almost told Yao Yao, Yu Ao Tian keeps her in his side the reason because of the scar in her left shoulder.

Although, he does not know the meaning of her scar for Yu Ao Tian. But, Yu Ao Tian has warned few of them not to mention even slightest about this matter to Yao Yao. "So close! Luckily I am smart enough, taking an excuse to run away. Hehe."

Yao Yao is alone at the living room, her hand just follows to turn on the television, but she is not paying attention to the television.

Her big moist eyes are looking at other side, perhaps the entire school has already found out the matter she is being supported?

But after all this is the surface matter, actually the real obstacle is the mysterious person who posted the photo, there is nothing more convincingly

than tangible evidence which able to make one's believe in, isn't it?

"Ckckck, but what to do! Once that person posted the photo, not only won't get any scholarship, perhaps her three years future won't be at peaceful!

Creased her forehead and let out heave sighed, Yao Yao little hands are clenched into fist.

'The newest news, Berson Group this morning at 10 o'clock is being exposed to suspicion of business allegation (doing commercial bribery), at the present the independent commission against corruption (ICAC) is pursuing the matter, if there is no accident, in the three days, Berson Group shares will fall to 10%. Due to the experts, the Berson Group chairman and also CEO Yu Ao Tian, perhaps because of it might lose at least about 40 million dollar.'

"What is going on?" Yao Yao attention is being take up by the television, her big eyes are watching at the news reported in television.

"Berson is get suspicion into bribery case? This is such serious matter, Yu Ao Tian loses 40 million dollar, things perhaps not as simple as it, once it filing the legal suit, Berson Group is likely to be suspended about one year by the United States (headquarter company), when that time arrived it won't be about monetary loss calculation."

She is nervous licking her dry mouth corner, when she wanted to pick up phone to call Yu Ao Tian...

# Part 1 (One)

But.

Yesterday both of them were fighting, will Yu Ao Tian accept her phone call during this time?

'Just this, Ao Tian, the lawyer who is responsible for your political election suddenly resigned, moreover he with his family are immigrating to South Africa, I tried to bring them back from South Africa but the Government of South Africa has issued out protection order for them.'

'What to do now? We only have half of month before the election, although we can invite the replacement lawyer but still we must find someone we can trust. If Zeng Kai Rui really keeps eye and has been watching you, if keeps on delaying, he will find out more. If we give up this year election, waiting until next year, everything will be too late.'

'There is no other ways, though the lawyer can't be trust, still need to find the replacement lawyer to do all the things. After all, none of us who has an authority and knowledge in this field.'

In her mind vaguely recalled the reason Vice CEO Han looking for Yu Ao Tian not long time ago, his lawyer as if has been running away to South Africa? Does this mean there is no other trusted lawyer beside Yu Ao Tian? In this time if there is no lawyer to come forward, this must be so troublesome.

Thinking to this point, once again Yao Yao wants to pick her phone...

Wait!

Berson Group must have independent Legal division, although one lawyer is running away, Yu Ao Tian must have any other lawyer, right?

But, Yu Ao Tian ever said, the trusted lawyer hasn't founded, that means... all the lawyer in legal division can't be trusted?

'gritting teeth'

When she in doubt, the big door is opened, Long Qi is bringing lunch. "Flat

chest, though you are not hungry, must eat a little."

Ck, should make a phone call to Yu Ao Tian or not? What if he thought she is so busy doing? If this matter does not settle in good way, it is possible to make Berson Group loses more, what to do?

"Hey, flat chest, I am talking with you!"

"Ah?" Yao Yao finally realized Long Qi has come back. She is absent-minded looking at Long Qi who is in front of her, frowned: "Long Qi!"

"En?"

Her beautiful small face is radiating cold aura, stands up, quickly she throws away the cold towel in her forehead, coldly said: "Take me to Berson!"

# Part 2 (Two)

Berson Group.

"Ao Tian, this matter is too strange, it just happened, media have surrounded the entrance door, don't they react too fast?" inside the CEO office room, the atmosphere is so heavy, Long Ye who is sitting in the sofa be appeared to have calm expression, but his face is stern said.

"Ha, it is so obvious there is someone done it secretly." Yu Ao Tian is smiling devilishly, he played with his pen.

"Done in secret? The purpose?"

'Bang' (sound)

He tosses the pen in his hand to the table side, slowly he looking at Long Ye who sitting in the sofa: "If not mistaken, this is to stop me to join the election to be politician!"

"You mean?" Long Ye is glared wide, and exchanging glance with Han Li Shang who is sitting beside him: "Is Zeng Kai Rui again?"

"Ha." Yu Ao Tian smiles, standing up his pair of hand is inserted to his pocket, half of his body is leaning to the in front of table: "Li Shang, regarding to this time 3X Group commercial bribery case, who is responsible for it?"

"The sales manager division. This morning he has taken by ICAC for investigating."

"This..." he narrowed his eyes, turned his body, taking his suit and walking heading out to the entrance.

"Ao Tian, where are you going?"

"If not mistaken, later the ICAC will come to take me away for investigation, if I am being taken by them, that..." when he said to this point, Yu Ao Tian is leisurely touch his face still masking with smile.

There is time, Long Ye and others really admire Yu Ao Tian's attitude and confident as winner side, because of his ability to control everything, he sets the

atmosphere in which everyone won't be nervous. "En, I understand, you leave first, I will keep off here for you."

"En."

When Yu Ao Tian just want to open the big door. Who knows, the big door is being pushed open from outside.

"CEO Yu! They are..." Mo Xue Tong is coldly glanced at few men who stand behind her.

At one glance Yu Ao Tian has understood: "Secretary Mo, you leave first." "Yes, CEO Yu."

This few men who followed at Mo Xue Tong back, they take out their License (identity) card from their pocket: "Mr. Yu, how are you, we are from ICAC. I am senior superintendent of police, Chen Hong Sheng."

"Ha, now the government people are working so efficiency? What happened in the morning, the afternoon has already made the movement?" Yu Ao Tian is not in hurry to speak, his corner of mouth is curved upward, talking provoking and smiles devilish.

"Mr. Yu, we are also do according to the procedures, since you have already known very well in your heart, please follow us." Said the senior superintendent of police, Chen Hong Sheng without any expression.

At the moment both of Han Li Shang and Long Ye who are sitting in the sofa, looking each other, almost at the same pace, both of them are rushing to the door. "Senior superintendent of police, Chen right? Have you clear with the matter? Do you really want to take our CEO Yu out?"

"Haha, are you General Manager Long? Regarding to our investigation process we do not need to explain to you, so far we are only obey the command given, must bring CEO Yu to police station."

Very obvious, the ICAC has purposed to take Yu Ao Tian; But Yu Ao Tian is definitely must not go along with them.

# Part 3 (Three)

Everyone knows, this matter whether Berson Group is suspected because of commercial bribery or not, as long as they take Yu Ao Tian, furthermore the media in the entrance door, at last the Berson group shares might fall as rocket, though after that Yu Ao Tian is proved to be innocent it is useless.

"Whose command it is?" pair of Yu Ao Tian eyes gleaming, carrying his suit, his hand is inserted in his pocket.

"This..." The Superintendent Police Officer Chen eyes are flashing, he and Yu Ao Tian speak few things, the atmosphere is obviously being dominating by Yu Ao Tian. "This is secret, Mr. Yu, please be cooperative with our work, or else I will take you by force!"

When superintendent Police Officer Chen said this, once again Han Li Shang and Long Ye looking at each other, their face cold, take big strides blocked in front of Yu Ao Tian.

An instantaneous, the atmosphere in the office room is turned be odd, few of the ICAC officers are stepped backward for few steps looking at those three persons. "Han... Vice CEO Han, General Manager Long, this is our work, we... we must take CEO Yu."

"You cannot take CEO Yu go!" just when the atmosphere is especially tensed, a pair of heel with height 8cm stepped on the office room floor, with professional appearance, moreover with makeup face and also the outfit, it helps to cover her childish appearance.

At this moment, her appearance is looked alike professional white collar outlook.

"Who are you?" Superintendent Police Officer Chen curiously creased his forehead.

Yao Yao face is showing cold expression walking in front, wearing high heel which sounded 'tktk', within this huge office it is vaguely heard several sharp echoing.

"Sir, before you asking about me, don't you think you must introduce yourself first?"

This is the first time for Long Ye to see Yao Yao makes thing difficult for someone, can't help himself to secretly curved up his mouth.

"I am Senior Superintendent Police Officer, ICAC Division, Chen Hong Sheng!" Said Superintendent Officer Chen with anger face while takes up his credential card.

Yao Yao is pretending to sweep a glance.

"What are you looking at?" Superintendent Officer Chen not understood asked.

She is shrugging her shoulders: "Oh, nothing, I just want to ensure you are not the fake one, that's all!"

"You!" Only by this two sentences conversations, Officer Chen is obviously can feel the little girl makes thing difficult for him: "Miss, have you done to confirm? Or else should I show you my ID card!"

"Ha, I am world class Senior (High Ranking) lawyer, Luo Yao Yao, I am also CEO Yu solicitor (Attorney / Lawyer). This is my License card!" After said, Yao Yao is taking out her lawyer license from her pocket.

Officer Chen does not see her license card, but his eyes is flashed with shocked looking at her and measuring her: "You are... Luo Yao Yao?"

Seeing from Superintendent Officer Chen reaction, Long Ye is not really understand, Xiao Meng Li is lawyer, why must he looked that surprise? Does he know Xiao Meng Li?

"Superintendent Officer Chen, I also afraid you are doubt about my identity, so that especially I bring my ID card too!" Yao Yao takes out her ID card, coldly laughed: "This, you can confirm, right?"

# Part 2 (Two)

Berson Group.

"Ao Tian, this matter is too strange, it just happened, media have surrounded the entrance door, don't they react too fast?" inside the CEO office room, the atmosphere is so heavy, Long Ye who is sitting in the sofa be appeared to have calm expression, but his face is stern said.

"Ha, it is so obvious there is someone done it secretly." Yu Ao Tian is smiling devilishly, he played with his pen.

"Done in secret? The purpose?"

'Bang' (sound)

He tosses the pen in his hand to the table side, slowly he looking at Long Ye who sitting in the sofa: "If not mistaken, this is to stop me to join the election to be politician!"

"You mean?" Long Ye is glared wide, and exchanging glance with Han Li Shang who is sitting beside him: "Is Zeng Kai Rui again?"

"Ha." Yu Ao Tian smiles, standing up his pair of hand is inserted to his pocket, half of his body is leaning to the in front of table: "Li Shang, regarding to this time 3X Group commercial bribery case, who is responsible for it?"

"The sales manager division. This morning he has taken by ICAC for investigating."

"This..." he narrowed his eyes, turned his body, taking his suit and walking heading out to the entrance.

"Ao Tian, where are you going?"

"If not mistaken, later the ICAC will come to take me away for investigation, if I am being taken by them, that..." when he said to this point, Yu Ao Tian is leisurely touch his face still masking with smile.

There is time, Long Ye and others really admire Yu Ao Tian's attitude and confident as winner side, because of his ability to control everything, he sets the

atmosphere in which everyone won't be nervous. "En, I understand, you leave first, I will keep off here for you."

"En."

When Yu Ao Tian just want to open the big door. Who knows, the big door is being pushed open from outside.

"CEO Yu! They are..." Mo Xue Tong is coldly glanced at few men who stand behind her.

At one glance Yu Ao Tian has understood: "Secretary Mo, you leave first." "Yes, CEO Yu."

This few men who followed at Mo Xue Tong back, they take out their License (identity) card from their pocket: "Mr. Yu, how are you, we are from ICAC. I am senior superintendent of police, Chen Hong Sheng."

"Ha, now the government people are working so efficiency? What happened in the morning, the afternoon has already made the movement?" Yu Ao Tian is not in hurry to speak, his corner of mouth is curved upward, talking provoking and smiles devilish.

"Mr. Yu, we are also do according to the procedures, since you have already known very well in your heart, please follow us." Said the senior superintendent of police, Chen Hong Sheng without any expression.

At the moment both of Han Li Shang and Long Ye who are sitting in the sofa, looking each other, almost at the same pace, both of them are rushing to the door. "Senior superintendent of police, Chen right? Have you clear with the matter? Do you really want to take our CEO Yu out?"

"Haha, are you General Manager Long? Regarding to our investigation process we do not need to explain to you, so far we are only obey the command given, must bring CEO Yu to police station."

Very obvious, the ICAC has purposed to take Yu Ao Tian; But Yu Ao Tian is definitely must not go along with them.

#### Part 1 (One)

When that statement of confession showed to in front of all the people, Yu Ao Tian pair of dark eyes flashed, he has guessed that this matter must be 100% filling case! Zeng Kai Rui ability hasn't changed even after few ten years!

"Ah, so this is the case." Yao Yao helplessly pouting her mouth: "There is no way."

"Haha, Miss Luo, can we take CEO Yu now?"

"En? Why you guys still want to take CEO Yu?" Yao Yao is intentionally asking pretending not understand.

Superintendent Officer Chen is obviously impatience: "Didn't you say that you want to see the evidence? Now I have shown it to you."

"That's right, nothing is wrong, you have shown the evidence, so that you must arrest the person who is needed to be arrested, but why do you still want to arrest my client?"

"Miss Luo, what do you mean?"

"What I mean? It is so simple!" Yao Yao face is darken, coldly said: "Berson Group legal representative is my client this is right, but the person who responsible for 3X group isn't him. The manager from sales division had written the state of confession very clear who is in charge of the matter!"

"That's right, if the person who in charge isn't CEO Yu then who will be the person?"

"Ha, every group has own each group process, as comparison the public security division alike you, all of you are directly work and take responsible under our Prime Minister, am I right? Should I arrest the prime minister when you guys commit wrong! Superintendent Officer Chen, you are causing disturbance without obvious reason!" This time Yao Yao is roaring, the atmosphere is sided Yu Ao Tian. At this moment her sweet side as if a powerful queen who control everything, while those of them are look like ministers who being shut by her, speechless cannot say anything.

"Luo...Miss Luo, according to you it means?"

She is coldly rolled her eyes toward Officer Chen, turned her back to Yu Ao Tian:
"CEO Yu, the sales division manager is work under whom?"

At this moment Yu Ao Tian is silent, when he wanted to open his mouth, Long Ye has already move one step ahead:

"The sales division manager is work under my supervision."

"General Manager Long?" Yao Yao is opened wide her eyes, difficult she creased her forehead. Not long after, she moves one step ahead, whispered: "General Manager Long, you have faith on me, no matter this case they have evidence, I will still be able easily to bring you out."

"Ha, Xiao Meng Li, oh, no, I must call you as Great Lawyer Luo, today you let me to open wide my eyes, I have been surprised by you, how dare I not put faith in you?"

Seeing Long Ye charming smiles, she is shyly smiles, this kind of smile is showing how innocent, pure and sweet she is, at the moment, she changed from the domineering queen to sweet lovely little princess.

"Okay, Miss Luo, since this is the case, I will take General Manager Long go."

"Wait!" when she is turning her head that moment, her expression is change cold: "I have right to apply for General Manager Long to be taken away from the back door. Moreover this must strictly confidentiality."

"This is impossible!"

"Superintendent Officer Chen, if you are not agree with me, I will use my right as world class lawyer to sue the Chinese government with accusation by violating human rights! Once this matter getting bigger until disturb the cooperation among countries, Superintendent Officer Chen, are you sure the consequence is something you can bear by yourself?" Yao Yao question as if a piercing sword, simply pierce into Chen Hong Sheng's heart.

This is one of the power which world class lawyer have, they have so many convenience, one of the convenience they have, is directly to apply a direct filling sue to the one country through united nations. So that, the world class Lawyer identity is being admired but also being feared by country.

"I understood, Miss Luo, I will do as you want." Unhappily Superintendent Officer Chen is clenched his hand into fist, turned his head and talked to his subordinate: "Bring General Manager Long through the back door."

"Yes, Superintendent Officer Chen."

Long Ye is brought by the ICAC officer leaving the office room, but not only this one, Yao Yao other identity is completely being exposed in front of many people.

# Part 2 (Two)

As the entire process, The experienced Superintendent officer Chen could not say anything but had been led his nose by her, at last as if not arrested anyone, so they disgraceful left secretly from the back door.

'hu...'

After sending off the ICAC officers, Yao Yao finally lets out heave sighed, this is her first time to exposed herself as world class lawyer (advance level)!

"Flat Chest! My older brother he..." Long Qi who is standing in front of the door quickly walking inside, his face is showing down expression.

She is confidently smiles: "Rest assured, the commercial (business) bribery case right, well even you are really bribed, it is only small problem. Within three days, I will bring out General Manager Long."

"Are you sure?" Long Qi is half belief and half disbelief creased his forehead, but after he recalled Yao Yao performance before, he believes she must be able to bring out his older brother: "Say something Flat Chest, what that called as World Class Lawyer license, after all it so awesome, why are you still going to study in school? Why don't you go directly to be lawyer?"

"Ugh...because I had joined the examination to get the world class lawyer license during my Senior High School, my study experience not so many. Moreover..." she is excitedly laughed, she showing up her little girl hesitation expression:

"Going to school can get many, many of scholarship."

Perhaps other people going to school because to find better job in the future, but Yao Yao is going to school... simply because... to get scholarship! [\*hit head to the wall].

"You... are you actually an idiot, or genius?"

"So what? Why are you scolding me?" Yao Yao unhappy frowned.

Seeing her dummy expression, Long Qi finally believes the differences between

idiot and genius only separate by one lines, more he sees Yao Yao now she more look alike an idiot.

But not to mention, perhaps he does not understand the world of Genius, and remembered, when Yu Ao Tian was rushed out from comfort zone, it was so obvious he could easily to get lot of things, but because in order pursuit the feeling of stimulation, he purposely lose that things from his hand, after that he will go to fight for it, when he almost get that thing, he lost it again, and then fight for it again, this action repeatedly, the people who witness him really wanted to curse him...

The genius is naturally born to be strange!

"MF, you go out working is earning more than your scholarship?" First time Long Qi has witnessed her ability to control the computers, later the ability to control the stock market, and many more, she is casually mentioning the other ability to ensure that she will get scholarship. Idiot, Yao Yao simply is an idiot!

"Ugh, I cannot use my Attorney license at my own will, I have my own difficulties." Yao Yao is showing her bitter face creased her forehead.

"What kind of difficult?"

"Because her teacher does not allow her to randomly uses her lawyer license before she at the age of 24!" suddenly, Yu Ao Tian voices flowing from her back.

Yao Yao expression tightened, quickly she turned her head: "You, how can you know it?"

He is smiling devilish, slowly sitting at his chair: "Three years ago, when I was in Japan I had encounters Sang De Si Xian Sheng (Mr. Sanders) he was so proud telling me he had accepted sixteen years old little girl in the Japan as his student, he was so certain that within one year his student would able to get world class Attorney license, but he was afraid his student was too young and fear to be used by bad people, hence... I gave him an idea. I told him to tell his student, when she at age 24 she could use her attorney license and exposed her identity."

This Mr. Sanders is the head of world class lawyer community, and also Yao's teacher (master).

Among few coincidences of fate Yu Ao Tian and Mr. Sanders are becoming a

good friend, that time three years ago when Mr. Sanders talked about his little student, Yu Ao Tian never had thought about it before. After 3 years of substance, he encountered Yao Yao again, moreover he even investigated that Yao Yao is law student, if he count back, the time of counting back, he suspects that 16 years old little student perhaps Yao Yao.

So that, when Yao Yao exposed her identity, he didn't feel any surprised.

"Woah, so that when my teacher told me that I able to use my lawyer license at age of 24 it was your idea!" Yao Yao little mouth is shaped in O, feeling all of this really so coincidence.

"Little Thing, can you not listen to your teacher's words?"

"Ugh, seriously if my teacher found out he might pissed off, but..." her pair of eyes are flashed, smiles devilish: "My teacher is one hundred years won't show up once, he won't be found out, hihi."

"Are you sure? Ah..." Yu Ao Tian is helplessly smiles: "Perhaps this time you might meet your teacher."

Her devilish smile in her small face at sudden changed to be stiffen: "You... impossible you... you are asking my teacher, asking my teacher to be your solicitor?"

"That's right." When Yu Ao Tian representative Lawyer had run away to South Africa, he has ordered Han Li Shang to look for lawyer, but Han Li Shang hasn't found any suitable candidate, helplessly, yesterday night, Yu Ao Tian had made a phone call to Mr. Sanders, inviting him for his help.

So that, when the commercial bribery case broke out, his first choice is to leave, because he is waiting for Mr. Sanders appearance.

"I begging you... you, you tell my teacher to go back." Yao Yao with her small begging face walking to the in front of chair, with pity eyes looked at him.

"I knew your lawyer had run away to South Africa, I can completely to replace his position, help you to settle everything, all just give me to do, okay?"

## Part 1 (One)

"That's right, Ao Tian Ge (Brother Ao Tian), just give the case to Yao Yao." at beside Long Qi is encouraging.

He is silent for moment, his good looking face is slowly curved upward: "Little Thing, if you are really still wanted to help me, perhaps you may use your license many times? When the time arrived, though I don't invite your teacher come here, don't your teacher will still find it out, right?"

"Aiya, this is not the problem! Actually, teacher indeed told me that I can use my Attorney license when I at 24 years, but he also ever said if I have real client, I can use my Attorney License earlier. I asked you not to invite my teacher to come here because my teacher, him...tck!" such frustrating, if Yu Ao Tian really inviting teacher to appear here, she really does not need to show up today!

"Okay, I won't tease you anymore, Little Thing." Yu Ao Tian showed her a wry smile, he clearly knows the reason why Yao Yao dislikes her teacher coming over, the main point because Mr. Sanders is someone odd, simply to say he is very similar with crazy person, even when he gets in touch with Mr. Sanders most of time silent. "Later I will make a phone call to your teacher, asking him no need to come here anymore."

"Thank you!"

"Hence as you said about client and solicitor, later will find one."

"Why?" Yao Yao not understand creased her forehead.

"That's right, Ao Tian, why, we have Flat Chest, isn't it better?"

"Ah, the reason is so easy, I am must be the client that you don't want to have!" there is slightest meaning inside Yu Ao Tian's words, he is exchanging sights with Han Li Shang.

They are standing in muddy water, this is something not suitable to let Yao Yao to joining them! At least, the current her is 'clean', there is no way for her to join into their group as one of them.

"Are you pointed at the commercial bribery case? According to my bottom line, this is not something unfair practice, as long as there is not death people, or fraud, all aren't included my bottom line."

After hearing Yao Yao begging tone, helplessly Yu Ao Tian gives a wry smile, he knows very well and obviously his dark world, that world isn't something that Yao Yao can bear. "Little Thing, are you really want to be my solicitor?"

If, she isn't Yu Ao Tian's lover, or doesn't have 'insulting poster' blow out, this matter, she really wanted to wait until her age reached 24 and starting her Attorney career.

But now...

She really wanted to prove herself to everyone, she isn't a lover who is being supported by Yu Ao Tian, she is someone who has career, someone has dream, though she indeed accepted Yu Ao Tian's money! "Yes, let me to become your representative lawyer, even to help you to survive until the election for politician, it's okay."

"Okay."

"Ao Tian!" Han Li Shang unsatisfied frowning.

Yu Ao Tian is signaling it's okay to Han Li Shang by waving his hand: "Wait after the election then we have further talk."

"Thank you." she is smiling sweetly, when afternoon her dim eyes are casting gloomy but at this moment her eyes are beaming, finally the time comes for she to prove herself 'value'!

# Part 2 (Two)

"Ugh, that's right, how about the business bribery case?" at sudden Long Qi brings back the main topic.

Yao Yao frowned: "Oh yeah, I almost forget about it." she uses little bit strength to hit her head: "This case indeed has very simple solution, but I had investigated Berson in US listed market, The US government is very sensitive with Commercial (Business) bribery case, so that once some media have made disadvantage reports, the US government is likely to suspend the activity, it can take one month at least or could be to one year, so this..."

"It will be affecting Berson stocks in China?" Said Yu Ao Tian.

Yao Yao is certain about it and nodding her head: "That it! So that, Ao Tian, you have few things to do now."

"Said."

"First, you must seek for dependable media to make the surface report about this case; the second, since I had told Officer Chen to strictly keep this matter, so the news General Manager Long being taken won't be exposed. But in order to prevent unwanted thing, this few days you must go high profile, higher it be better it will be. Including Vice CEO Han, you also must do it, going to the banquet or any invitation, in order to rout media suspicion. Until I solve everything."

"En." Yu Ao Tian smiles nodding his head: "So this few days, Long Qi, you need to accompany Yao Yao. Whatever she needs you must help her."

"Ok."

'Knock' (Knocking sound)

Just at this time, Mo Xue Tong is slowly walking inside: "Ao Tian, the media which waiting in front of the entrance door had left. Others..." her pair of eyes gleaming cold, her eyes glancing at Yao Yao.

"It is okay, Xue Tong, just say it."

Yao Yao can sense, they are still on guard toward herself, but this is so normal, after all they have followed Yu Ao Tian many years, while she is only new lawyer who joined them.

"Others, I have investigated, the person who is in charged for 3X Group indeed has relationship with Zeng Kai Rui."

Zeng Kai Rui this name is brought up again, isn't he prime minister? Yao Yao can't help herself not to wonder and frowned, she can feel that Yu Ao Tian and the current Prime Minister Zeng have deep grudged for each other?

"Okay, I understood, Xue Tong, is there anything else?"

"No." When Mo Xue Tong wanted to leave, but her footsteps suddenly stopped, her cold eyes are sweeping at Yao Yao with measuring eyesight.

"Ugh?" seeing at Mo Xue Tong eyes look toward herself, she pursed her lips, but at other second... "Ah! I am so sorry, Miss Mo, this dress which I wore... It is yours..."

No wonder Mo Xue Tong especially feels this dress such familiar! She is creasing her forehead, glaring deathly to Long Qi.

"Sister Xue Tong, you don't blame me, it is Yao Yao who was asking me to help her to find mature outfit, so that I went to your home to take your dresses and also your makeup kit."

Mo Xue Tong does not say anything, but turned her body and left.

At this time, at sudden Yu Ao Tian good looking face is smiling devilish.

"En?" everyone is curious looked at him.

He hinting nothing wavering his hand: "All of you can leave."

"Oh." when Yao Yao is following Han Li Shang and also Long Qi going out, Yu Ao Tian opened his mouth and said:

"Little Thing, you stay."

"Heh?" she stopped her footstep, sending off Han Li Shang and Long Qi to leave.

Inside the office room is quiet, thinking carefully, the matter of yesterday

hasn't settled, does Yu Ao Tian? He wants to bring up that topic? This time she must explain clearly to him?

But, Yu Ao Tian isn't a person who likes to bring up old matter, this isn't his character, but will he revenges for himself from others matters to herself? Ah complicated!

Yao Yao worries still stood at her place.

Yu Ao Tian smiles devilish, with his fingers he pointed at her: "Come here."

"Huh..." she is nervous walking in front of the office desk.

He is hinting her to come in front his chair.

Yao Yao's heart is shivering when walking.

"Is it really Xue Tong's dress?"

"En."

Yu Ao Tian is staring at her with measuring eyes, that good looking face for once again is hinting slightly laughing expression: "You really have such huge 'difference' with Xue Tong, how can you wear her dress?"

Mo Xue Tong has height about 170 cm something, her body is perfect with appropriate balance, while Yao Yao only has height about 150 cm something, her body not too mention, it belongs to the 'wash board' type.

But this is really something unchangeable, since she is a type of baby face, if she does not wear mature clothes, how could she acts domineering.

"What do you mean?" at moment Yao Yao understood the meaning behind Yu Ao Tian's words, unhappily she is pulling her chest: "Though I have pinned brooch, but it also looks suitable ah."

"Really?" He is purposely showing unbelievable expression: "I don't believe you. You take off the brooch I want to see it."

"Take off then take off!" when she is going to insert her hand inside, she

gained herself, turned at sudden: "You think I am foolish, if I take it off, you can see everything." really this person, Yu Ao Tian is rotten bastard! "I need to prepare all the data regarding the case, I take my leave first."

She is talking while walking, turning her body to leave, but Yu Ao Tian is grabbing her wrist at sudden, using strength to pull...

She is falling into his embraces.

She is so close with that good looking face, restlessly she pouting her small mouth: "Yu... You...hu..."

His domineering lips are pressing to her lips, his skillful tongue is forcing pry to open her teeth and intertwined her tongue.

The warm big hand at same time caressing and moving to her inner clothes.

Yao Yao can sense that, this time Yu Ao Tian is little bit odd, as if he is going to be crazy, and also losing his logic.

"Hu!" she is nervous moving her body, she wants to push and free from this hug.

But the man is hugging onto her tighter, his big hand has already probed, reaching until her white shoulder, using strength rub circling.

"En hu..." chest is feeling numb and weaken, also pain, this kind of fire meeting water feeling, turned her body become more sensitive, quickly get into the state.

Gradually open pair of the blurry eyes, combined with his rapid breathing and also his enchanting face, hot breathe is brushing her face, as if being hypnotize slowly she feels as if going into another world. It is strange feeling.

Inch by inch, that big hand is stroking down from her white skin to directly her skirt.

Yao Yao who has drown into another world still hasn't realized the warning alarm is calling out.

And then, when Yu Ao Tian has slipped into her pants, her blurry eyes flashed: "Hu!" she as if someone who being awake from dream world, using her strength to stop his hand.

"Bao Bei, today you are too amazed." Yu Ao Tian unwillingly to separate from her lips.

She could see the strong sparks in his pair of eyes, the man masculine\*\*, this is her first time to see this kind of Yu Ao Tian, it has something unspeakable strange feeling, little bit insecure and also fear feeling.

His rough breathing, get closer to her ear, his tongue is licking her sensitive spot in earlobe.

"Hu." her body is shivering, her half body is weaken, slump to his embraces.

"Bao Bei, I want you."

His deep voice flowing into her ears as if a magic charm, without waiting for Yao Yao response, at sudden he has already forced into her...

"Don't!" she unconsciously clamping her body, but still it is too late.

One of Yu Ao Tian's hand already moved her into his pair of leg, while one of his hand in his pant.

'Bao Bei, I want you.'

The words floating in her mind, this is her first time to hear his begging, more she could sense the today Yu Ao Tian is little bit uncontrolled, if not quickly to stop him, perhaps... "No, don't. Let me go."

"Give me!" the order which is not easy to refuse.

He quickly wants to release his fiery dragon, at this moment, his dragon has stood straight, this is enough to show his\*\* strong.

Yao Yao is scared wanted to escape from him, but this man has strongly gripped onto her waist, while his other hand take off her skirt, tossing aside.

Lifting up her body to aligned with his dragon, downward press...

"Don't ah!!! Yu Ao Tian, are you still mad because yesterday matter?"

When he is lifting up her body that moment, at sudden Yu Ao Tian stopped, that pair of eyes burn with\*\* immediately dimming: "What happened yesterday?"

"Isn't it because yesterday matter. But you are not acting like this before, at least you never forced me..." her body is in alarmed state and also shivering, Yu Ao Tian must because yesterday matter so that he wanted to punish her? Just as expected he is still angry, isn't he?

His face dim and silent, he takes her skirt, let her down from his leg and faster he zipped his pants.

His cold eyes are sweeping her nervous face, the wound in her forehead caught by his eyes...

He is creasing his forehead, he quickly withdrew his eyesight from her forehead, coldly said: "This morning Feng Chen Yi came to look for me, whatever he told me he had completely done it! No need to give any explanation."

Just a moment, Yu Ao Tian has gained himself back, between the glowing eyes is impenetrable gloss, his expression is only cold.

"Feng Chen Yi, why did he come to find you?" this morning? Didn't this morning...

'you don't forget, Luo Yao Yao, I had said before, later I will let you live in miserable, but...both of you feeling really cannot stand with a little test!'

'Feng Chen Yi, you are really rotten bastard!'

'Anyway my image in your heart has turned to be like this. You remember, Luo Yao Yao, later this kind of thing will often happen, you better to prepare wet your face with yours tears!'

Why Feng Chen Yi likes to act something like this? Every time when he meets her he will hurt her as if the wounds never healed, and then after he turned he would change to be someone who has warm heart.

She almost going to be crazy and torment because of Feng Chen Yi's attitude, this is also one of the reason why Yao Yao hates and also loves him!

Once time like this, second times like this, what does he want? Since he had said wanted to be rotten bastard, just keep on being one why must he do something like this?

Her eyes are showing complicated, looking at Yu Ao Tian's pair of eyes, but quickly she suppress that kind of eyesight which shouldn't show up.

Perhaps Feng Chen Yi has completely explained to Yu Ao Tian, so this matter must be settled, she does not want anything happen between her and Yu Ao Tian because of Feng Chen Yi.

"You go busy with your things."

"En?" is this mean done? If Yu Ao Tian not because yesterday matter punish her, so what did he do just now? "Oh..."

Yao Yao is hurried going out from office room with questioned expression.

After she left, Yu Ao Tian let out his tensed feeling at sudden: "Damn!" he clenched his hand into fist, hit on his table.

He really does not want to believe just now he was losing control of himself!

It has been so long, there is no woman could make him this crazy, losing control of himself and also his rational, just now that moment, he was simply wanted that little thing.

He still remembers, when he signed the lover contract with her, he thought this little thing would not give any\*\* to him, at least time could give a prove, he could control himself very well before.

Until, just now, Yao Yao has exposed her sexiness as woman, that side of her feminism, the vibration in her words, her confident look, it was not only astonishing Long Ye but also Yu Ao Tian.

That moment, he really could not wait wanting this little thing.

Speak honestly, the woman who able to thump and flattering Yu Ao Tian's heart is woman with charm.

"Ah." He lets out self-mocking laughed, deep inside his pair of eyes flashed lusting gleam: "Just wish this little thing won't too often to show this side of hers." or else sooner or later, there will a day he won't be able to suppress his desire for this beautiful growing fruit.

No matter what is going on, today he has done something meaningful, and that is...

The debt that owed by Feng Chen Yi today, he had paid it.

He has especially told Yao Yao, today matter when Feng Chen Yi looking for him, it because he does not want make himself owed anything toward his rival.

No matter Yu Ao Tian or Feng Chen Yi, though both of them are having different character but actually both of them are type of domineering men and like to feel the adrenaline stimulus, so that both of them like to 'several hundred' steps before attacks, this because they wanted to stimulate themselves to be more interested in...

Legal Division.

The appearance of Yao Yao in Legal Division has aroused curiosity among the employees, her coming is too hasty, she even does not give proper basic introduction such as self-introduction, the Supervision of legal division is in charge to arrange an office room for her.

"Do you know the little girl who is coming just now?"

"Don't know, didn't Supervisor Xu arrange office room for her? All of you asking supervisor Xu will know it."

The lower management in Berson group, normally it is started from Team Leader, and then Supervisor and then Vice Manager from any division and then Manager from any division, this hasn't including the Manager Assistants, Secretaries and others special positions. Usually only above of General Manager position who will have own office room.

And then, Legal Division is an exception division. The division has ten lawyers, every lawyer responsible with one secret case, having one assistant, the person who manage them is one supervisor, every lawyer has their own office room.

Until Yao Yao coming, those lawyers who are usually staying inside their office room, they are gathering in meeting room, taking their secretary, assistants all of them are discussing about her.

"Old Xu (Lao Xu), Lao Xu, who is that little girl?" those gossipers who are gossiping, called out supervisor Xu.

This supervisor Xu, his age hasn't reached forty, he has good looking appearance and also valiant, especially his deep pair of black eyes, there is no slightest shown him in forties. As additional his energetic temperament and good looking aura. "Haha, the main reason I don't know what is going on, I just know she is a lawyer who is especially invited by CEO Yu, moreover she is the

person who responsible for CEO Yu."

"Hah, isn't it mean she replacing Lao Sun position?" this Lao Sun is the lawyer who run away to South Africa, his position is responsible for Yu Ao Tian.

"En, it seems it is true."

"Faint, that little girl at least only at her twenty, will she be able to?" the colleagues are show their disdain eyesight.

Supervisor Xu smiles: "Though she cannot, all of you must have faith in CEO Yu's eyesight, right?"

"This indeed true, due to CEO Yu ability to find talented person, I believe something important alike this position won't be simply look for others." having Yu Ao Tian affirmed, these few colleagues has little bit certainty toward Yao Yao.

After all, those talented persons in company are found by Yu Ao Tian, the example is Regional Director Wang.

"Long Qi, are all of these the data between our company with 3X group?" inside the office room, Yao Yao is reading one of the document with curiosity asked.

"Yes, I have taken all of these from the filing room (data storage room)."

"Woah, it really recorded very carefully and in detail, it is absolutely clear. Your Berson Group Management System are too awesome, it even archived this kind of things?"

"Of course, all of these are especially created by Ao Tian, he asked whether working with or partnership with any company must be recorded in detail, including the process of conversation, the contains, even the other parties character, expenses, earning, and so on and so on."

Reading the contained of well-organized archives, Yao Yao really admires Yu Ao Tian to the highest level: "Yu Ao Tian really awesome, no wonder Berson Group can develop this big and strong, with all these things, although the important employee resigned at sudden, the new employee can immediately take over the job.

"Huh? So is this the purpose of Yu Ao Tian to prepare all of these things?"

Actually until now, Long Qi not really understands the reason why there is an achieve room (storage).

"Isn't it? The most important for one company is the management system and also the human resources (employees), there is no doubt of Yu Ao Tian capability, but not all the subordinates can have an equal ability alike him. Moreover the business within the country is so competitive, perhaps the talent who are not easily being 'grow/teach' by him, might been taken by others company, so that preparing all these things must be quite useful. So that, Berson won't be in chaos because of the leaving of someone."

Yao Yao really admires Yu Ao Tian who has this vision, foresight for further, it is so rare for the leader of one company to think about this matter, under the normal circumstances, one talented person might led the nose of the entire company when leaving, while Yu Ao Tian used this method in order not to be led by any talent but also not afraid his talented people being dug by others company, if this is not foresight what should it be called?

"Cold sweat, these kinds of thing I don't understand and also don't have any interesting on it. You take look these things,

I want to go to ICAC office to see my big brother."

When looking Long Qi is going to leave, Yao Yao gives a weary smiles: "You don't need to see General Manager Long."

"Why?"

"Hehe, Tomorrow I will take your older brother out!"

"Ah?" Long Qi is excitedly dashing to in front the desk, his face is filled with curiosity: "Didn't you say three days?"

She is smiling devilish, swaying the document which is in her hand: "Having boss a like Yu Ao Tian, it making my work more efficiency, you say?"

The next day...

Early in the morning Yao Yao goes to ICAC's office, after a simple rebuttal to the several top executives, not only Long Ye being released without charging with any crime, the ICAC prosecutors are not able to prosecute him.

"Xiao Meng Li, your speed really shocking at one's self, yesterday afternoon I was brought, today before afternoon you have taken me out? To be honest, I never tasted coffee made in ICAC's office." Long Ye is walking out from the temporary detention room, his face is filled with excited expression.

Standing in front the entrance, welcoming Long Ye is Yao Yao who smiling with pouting mouth: "General Manager Long, if you really like this place, I can go back to inside, saying few words with Officer Chen there is some detail that I missed out, I will let them to prison you few days."

"Uh...Forget it." Long Ye is acting, pretending that he is afraid by shrugging his shoulder and slowly bend down little bit his body, whispering to her ear: "How could we having such reckless conversation and care for nobody? As if we see government divisions as nothing?"

"Well, both of us must go low-profile. Come on! Ao Tian and others are waiting you at outside." Yao Yao stroke her head, quickly taking Long Ye rushing in front of ICAC's building.

But when they are in front of main entrance door, Chen Hong Sheng has waited for them, slowly walking in front of them, stopping them: "Miss Luo you are really awesome, only by yours few words, you have made our hard work completely look a like trash!"

She lowers her head, takes a deep breathe, her innocent face an instant changed become so cold: "Superintendent Police Officer Chen, didn't all of you are also awesome, a day ago realized something odd, yesterday morning you had already caught our manager from sales division, and then at the afternoon you

even brought out our General Manager. There is something don't do it too over, other people does not know what is going on, but can't I don't know anything too?" after said, there is a slightly cunning beam in her eyes.

At sudden Chen Hong Sheng keeps silent.

"Ah, Superintendent Office Chen, can both of us take our leave?"

"Please." after said, Chen Hong Sheng moves a side give them way.

Yao Yao is bringing Long Ye out with puffed up her chest, walking with vain manner.

"Superintendent Officer Chen, doesn't this Luo Yao Yao too arrogant?" seeing their back when leaving, those few ICAC employees talking with dissatisfaction.

"Nonsense! If all of you have her capability, all of you also can be this arrogant!" He is pissed off frowning, quickly he takes out his phone: "Tell the head, Berson commercial bribery case is settled without any problem."

"Ah? What situation is going on?" the person who accepted the phone call surprised asked.

Chen Hong Sheng clenched his hand and make into fist: "At sudden the world class lawyer showing up to protect Berson, we are also cannot do anything!"

"Ah? World class lawyer? Do I hear wrong, after all this kind of high class lawyer is showing up in China? Really scary." talking to this point, that person has continued his words: "Alright, understood, I will tell Lao Da (Big Brother / Big boss)."

\*\*

#### Michelin Restaurant

"Hahaha, is it really?"

"It true, why must I lie to you." inside the luxurious private room, there are happy and bundle of laugh sounds flowing.

When Yu Ao Tian received the news Long Ye is safe and soundly, he is especially book this place for treating him welcoming-back dinner.

"This time really thank to Xiao Meng Li, so that I can get out this quickly. Let's, Xiao Meng Li, let me cheers you one glass." Said Long Ye, raised his hand high

which is holding wine.

She is looking at her wine glass: "Must I drink all of it?"

"I drink it all, you do as you please." Long Ye is happily gulping his red wine in his hand at one shoot.

Yao Yao seems to take a sip of it, the most important she is clearly her alcohol tolerance.

"Well, I also want to cheers Flat Chest one glass, you took out my older brother so quickly, really thank you." Long Qi is type of person who seldom said courtesy words, perhaps this time he is too worries about Long Ye being caught.

This group of people, other than Han Li Shang and Yu Ao Tian, basically all of them were related or being victim of criminal before, even Mo Xue Tong when she was in Japan she ever related to criminality, all of them were too tired (bored) with those days went in and out from police station, so that, this time when Long Ye facing this difficulties, all of them are recalled back those days when they were in Japan, this feeling.

"Haha, don't be so courtesy, this is my work." Yao Yao is laughing courtesy.

Sitting beside her who keeps silent this time is Yu Ao Tian, he lets out sighed, raises his wine glass and slowly stands up...

She glances: "Are you also wanted to cheers me?" she really cannot drink anymore.

Yu Ao Tian is replying her with his elegant smiles, his dark eyes are flashing to Long Ye: "I didn't fulfill last time promise, I will punish myself 3 glasses!" after said, when he wanted to raise his wine glass...

Hurried Long Ye stopped in front him: "Ao Tian! This time matter is accidental, you do not need to blame yourself."

"That's right, Ao Tian, this is an avoidable matter. You have brought all of us from Japan back to China, moreover with today accomplishment, all of us, all of us are really thank you!" Han Li Shang said this words, his expression is showing how grateful he is.

Yao Yao who is sitting beside Yu Ao Tian, she is looking at everyone expression,

at sudden inside her heart there are very complicated feeling.

Either Han Li Shang or Mo Xue Tong, included the Long's brothers, for all these time all of them are so loyal and faithfully toward Yu Ao Tian, this bonds are stronger than family feeling.

"Long Qi, Long Qi." She is softly calling Long Qi by pulling his sleeves: "What was Ao Tian's promise to all of you before?"

"Haha, I have forgotten to tell you, all of us except Li Shang, before we met Ao Tian, all of us were little scoundrels in the street, it is Ao Tian who had changed our lives!"

Yu Ao Tian and Han Li Shang has known each other when they were young, it could be said as old acquaintance. Han Li Shang is young Master who born from wealthy family, he was staying at overseas, so that both of them were rare meeting, during that time, both of them were not counted as friend.

And almost 13 years ago, when Yu Ao Tian was 15 years old and Han Li Shang was 17 years old, because of certain reasons, Han Li Shang went bankrupt, straying at street in China and encountered Yu Ao Tian.

Since Yu Ao Tian was little boy he had already admired Han Li Shang, hence, he brought up his wishes to work together with him, this topic. But Han Li Shang this person is born naturally arrogant, he always bear cold attitudes, it was Yu Ao Tian who melting him slowly by slowly, then he agreed to develop together with Yu Ao Tian.

After one year passed, Yu Ao Tian is 16 years old, once he was hunted down, could not help he must hide inside one of fishing boat, that time the person who was responsible to taking care the fish boat was 16 Years old Long Ye. Don't be underestimated his young age, during that time he could be considered as little scoundrel, so that people still gave him face.

As the name of brotherhood, Long Ye was bringing Yu Ao Tian to hide inside his own fishing boat, but without he realized he was offending the people who intended to kill Yu Ao Tian, for the coming days, Long Ye was suffering from many ways to get revenge.

Hence, Yu Ao Tian gave ideas, he wanted to go to Japan for developed, he also

wanted Long Ye to go with him, after considering, Long Ye was bringing his younger brother Long Qi, also his fish boat, with Yu Ao Tian and Han Li Shang, they were going to Japan.

When they were arriving in Japan, relying on Yu Ao Tian genius brain, also his merciless characters, very quick he had made his own territory.

Two years later, Yu Ao Tian is 18 years old, one night he went to nightclub together with Long Ye by coincidence they encountered Icy princess, Mo Xue Tong.

Mo Xue Tong is born naturally beautiful, she has superior looks, there were lot clients who mouth watering with her appearance, there was one Big Boss (mafia) who wanted to dominate her. Although Mo Xue Tong was going deeper in underworld, but it not influence her character, between death and life, she really wanted to kill that Mafia boss, this angered the men of the mafia's boss, all of them were intending to \*\* Mo Xue Tong.

At that time, Yu Ao Tian helped her, and brought her to Yu Long group, being taken care. While Mo Xue Tong naturally has good skill, her ability to learn is also very fast, she is highly looked by Yu Ao Tian.

As time passes, this few men are becoming the key figures in Yu Long group.

It took almost two years, Yu Ao Tian gave them three promises...

The first, he won't let them to stray in the street anymore, also won't let them to enter police station randomly, being bullied by other people.

The second, within four years he would make Yu Long Group as the most powerful mafia group in Japan. Within six years, will help them to 'wash', getting back to China proudly. Within 8 years, will let them to live days without worries for food or clothes (primary and secondary necessity).

The third, within ten years, will let them to be known in entire China, moreover they don't need to live in stormy days (worries), only live with peace of mind.

Listened to Long Qi brief narrative, simply to say Yao Yao can't imagine, what kind of life they had gone through before, what kind of complicated stories and bitter life they had before, no wonder the bonds among them are stronger than family member, perhaps because, all of them are depending each others more

than ten years?

This is really such precious friendship, at same time it makes people become passionate due to the inspirational story.

The story about people who starting from empty-handed, Yao Yao had heard it often, but it happened right-beside her, witness it by herself, there is slightest hope to be impulsive to join them.

Ha, counting carefully, three promises of Yu Ao Tian had been fulfilled, all of them from hunted down to stand firm, this first promised had fulfilled.

Within four years, it also when Yu Ao Tian was 24 years old, Yu Long group has transformed to be first mafia group in Japan, during that time whenever she heard about Yu Long Group, these three words, her legs would weaken.

Hence within 6 years, which mean 2 years ago, didn't it the time when Yu Ao Tian acquire Berson Group? He really succeed to brought all of them from underworld (black path) to business world (white path), proudly come back to China.

Haha, within 8 years, just in time, it is now...

Yao Yao looking at them, she does not need to ask, all of them are having no worries about primary and secondary needs of days. Yu Ao Tian is really having awesome leadership, too bold, each commitment he had made one by one is fulfilled and happened.

Believing within this two years, he can fulfill all his promises? Or else, why must he want to be politician?

"Hey, Yu Ao Tian." When Yao Yao opened her mouth, several people broke into stiffness.

Yu Ao Tian is putting down his wine glass, curiously asked her: "What?"

"If both of us meet earlier, will you let me to join the group?"

"Ha, do you feel that both of us aren't meeting earlier?" Said Yu Ao tian, who is sitting back to beside her.

Long Ye is waiting everyone to sit back at their seat. "That's right, Xiao Meng Li, didn't you have meet Ao Tian two years ago? You even thought him... Thought him as... Host."

After everyone heard it, without lowering their head, they laughing.

No wonder two years ago Yu Ao Tian could be so furious, during that time he has already become Big Boss, how could he turned be Host? Simply to say it was too embarrassing.

"Cold sweat, I said not that time, earlier, earlier." awkwardly Yao Yao trying to explain, she really wanted to forget whatever had happened two years ago, perhaps it not because herself who put herself into trouble, perhaps she won't have any relation with Yu Ao Tian today? That time she was so regret with what she did two years ago.

But this moment, seeing Han Li Shang, Mo Xue Tong and others, together with Yu Ao Tian wrapped by this atmosphere, she really can feel, encountered Yu Ao Tian two years ago actually not really something bad from start until now.

"Ha, didn't I have tell you that, don't you feel that we have meet not enough early?" Yu Ao Tian lowers his eyes suddenly looked at her.

"Uh..." Yao Yao at the moment could not react what does he mean, once more she explained: "I mean, earlier than two years ago."

"Earlier than two years ao..." suddenly Yu Ao Tian stopped, he really wants to know whether today he is little bit drunk or nor, after all he almost say it out, didn't he only drink one glass of wine? His good looking face is turned to other side, then his lips curved upwards and smiles a like sinister: "Though it earlier, I won't to let you join in group."

"Why?"

"Because... You are not belong to ours world!"

That's right! Either Han Li Shang or Mo Xue Tong or the Long's brothers, few of them perhaps have large family background, come to final analysis, they and Yu Ao Tian might one world people.

But Yao Yao is different, her thought, she has naive and pure shiny glowing eyes, she has destined not to belong as one world with them.

"Huh." to speak frankly, when Yao Yao listened to Yu Ao Tian's words, deep inside her heart she strangely feels lost, she has known that herself and they are not come from same world.

"Oh yeah, Xiao Meng Li, when we were at ICAC office, you had said few words to superintended officer Chen 'here is something don't do it too over, other people does not know what is going on, but can't I don't know anything too'? What does it means?" Long Ye sees her expression kinda odd so he tried to change the topic.

"Oh, that. Actually normally the commercial (business) bribery case, as long as not taking too much sum of money, the ICAC will close one eyes. Moreover Berson group this big company, all of them most of time will ignore it. I had investigated you and 3X company transaction, it only involving few of millions, the ICAC isn't necessary to go and investigated it by themselves, but still took so much effort by calling superintended officer to personally investigated it, this is

such not normal."

Regarding to this point, Yu Ao Tian who has mingled in business world within two years has very clear about it, after all when they did this everything is going well, before.

"Well, Xiao Meng Li, you say why did they want to investigate the commercial bribery case?"

"This is so simple, you guys must be offended someone who has high position in government so that they did it. Or perhaps, there politician who held high post who does not want Yu Ao Tian to join this time politician election, especially, to give negative news about him before the election." This speculation of Yao Yao is similar with Yu Ao Tian, there is no doubt.

Now Long Ye is more convincing that both of these persons are genius equally. "Well, perhaps we are really offended the entire government?"

"Cut it off, if you guys really offended the entire government, though I have three heads and six arms I won't be able to help you, except I really make report to the united countries, using the international court, investigated the country."

"HaHa. Say, your world class lawyer license is quite awesome, I could see that Superintendent Officer Chen quite afraid of you."

"Absolutely!" Yao Yao doesn't go low-profile, after she heard what Long Ye said, she patted her chest, confidently said:

"Not long ago Ao Tian ever said, society is describe as food chain, the mafias can be controlled by the business world, while the business world must give face to the government. But no matter what country it is, they only fear with World class attorney, after all the one who able to control us only the united nations, so that, I particularly go for the world class lawyer license."

"Awesome, awesome." Long Ye replied her with clapping his hands, his cunning eyes gleaming glances at Yu Ao Tian:

"According to your statement, you are not afraid of heaven and earth, are you?"

"I..." She still wants to say that she isn't afraid of anyone, but once she sees Yu

Ao Tian who besides her, hurried she lowers her head, shaking her head: "I do also have my fear."

"Oh? Even the government fears of you, who are you afraid of?"

"Older brother, can't you see? Of course Flat Chest afraid of Ao Tian!"

That's right, she really really afraid... Afraid of Yu Ao Tian, from all the food chain, the last part is, she as the world class lawyer also afraid of the mafias, okay? If she really makes Yu Ao Tian angry, perhaps she could disappear from this world quietly without trace.

"Oh, so that's all, it seems if later your wings go firm, we will ask Yu Ao Tian to deal with you!"

After listened to Long Ye teasing, Yu Ao Tian lets out cold humph, his cold pair of eyes are sweeping over his shoulder to look at Yao Yao who lowering her head, sneered: "This little thing if her wings spread firmly, do you think looking for me still useful? The best way is... Never let her to have chance making her wings go firm!"

"......" Geez. Yao Yao unhappily rolled her eyes, Yu Ao Tian this man really not a good thing, he only can use this kind of word to put her into 'ice house'. Humph, eat the food! She takes her chopstick, nonstop eating all the food in the table...

The food is eaten and the dinner is ended.

"Ao Tian, where are you going?" when all the people are going to leaving the main hall of the restaurant, they are heading to same one luxurious car, the person who is responsible to drive is Han Li Shang asking with curiosity.

"Go home."

"I know, which home?"

"Our apartment."

"How..." Han Li Shang cold eyes are glancing at Yao Yao: "How about her?"

"Li Shang Ge (brother Li Shang), don't you know that, Yao Yao has already lived in ours home for such long time."

After Long Qi said, at sudden Han Li Shang expression darken: "Ao Tian, is it true what Long Qi said?"

Listened the way of Han Li Shang speaking, Yao Yao could feel the tense by take deep breathe.

Yu Ao Tian is giving her a reassuring smiles, warm big hand is pulling and held her small hand tightly: "Haha, recently there are lots of work in the company, I forgot to tell all of you guys that, I have prepared Yao Yao to stay with me in..."

"I understood." Han Li Shang said these words, 'bang' sound, he used his strength to shut the car door when he gets out from car, takes big strides he left.

But this hasn't ended, Mo Xue Tong who sits at back seat not even say anything, open the car door followed Han Li Shang, together both of them are leaving.

An instantaneous, the atmosphere inside the car turned to be awkward, Yao Yao feels little bit in trouble, pouting her mouth: "I, I will try to move out faster."

"Rest assured, Xiao Meng Li, you don't need to take Han Li Shang and Xue Tong attitude into heart, when first time we met them, that time, both of them also showing same attitude, dealing with people like them (cold character), we must have thick skin."

"That's right, Flat Chest, Li Shang Ge and Xue Tong Jie are sharp-mouth but tofu heart people, on outside they are cold but inside there are so passionate, when you are getting closer to them, knowing them better, you will find out, no need to think too much about what they said."

"Cut your nonsense, Long Qi, go, drive the car."

"Oh..."

The car engine is starting and moves slowly, Yao Yao is looking outside the window...

Perhaps just a like what General Manager Long said, Vice CEO Han, Secretary Mo are people who cold from outside and warm inside, but she also can feel the strong rejection from them.

She feels alike an intruders who caught getting into their home, this kind of feeling she has aware of it since long time ago, this kind of feeling isn't something can be erased as time flies, it seems their world, is it a place that she should not step into?

Kind of strange and empty feeling hanging in Yao Yao's heart, only by this time, at sudden one pair of big hand is embracing her shoulders, giving her a warm also security feeling in his hug.

Raises her eyes, she only sees Yu Ao Tian's chin, ha, since the first day she met this man, she really could not hear any comforting words let out from his mouth, but he always in most appropriate time to give her warm hug that able to comfort her heart.

It stills one mystical changing, since the first time she refused to hold his hand, being hugged by him, and slowly she becoming more familiar and accustomed with this kind of feeling, she is starting to depend on him.

What kind of feeling is this? Older brother? Senior? Friend? It cannot be describe, anyway it isn't love feeling, because she could not feel that fast heart

beat or blushing face because of embarrassed, that gestures...

"Ao Tian, arrived..." when the car is stopped in front of the apartment, Long Ye who is sitting in the front seat just wanted to speak.

Yu Ao Tian stopped him with 'sst' gestures, while his finger is pointing at little brat in his embraces.

"Fall asleep?" Long Ye spoke softly asked.

He smiles, nodding, gently picks her up, get down from car.

"Haha, this Xiao Meng Li is really darn sweet and cute." all of them are together getting into elevator, Long Ye is carefully take a look at her sleeping face, more he sees her more he can feel this small face really similar with little girl.

"Ao Tian, you are really dears her, after all you even take her to stay in here."

"Is it?" Yu Ao Tian is curiously creased his forehead, using the most foolish eyesight to look at small person in his held, looking at her, without he realized he showing one charming smiles.

Long Ye who besides looking at him, helplessly he shaking his head: "You see your current expression, simply to say more similar to parent who looks at own child. Ao Tian, what do you see she as?"

"En? What do you think I see she as?" Ao Tian is creasing his forehead looking at Long Ye.

"You don't tell me you see her as your lover. As what I see, she doesn't do any lover task at all, you even doesn't look alike having / supporting a lover. From my point of view as outsider, you are raising her as little sister or daughter, or perhaps as pet."

"To be honest, Brother Ao Tian, listened to my older brother said, I recalled, that time when you were asking me to keep an eye of her, the way you told me, it very similar alike father nervous when found out his daughter has puppy love. Just recalled the day when Ao Yun dating for the first time, you are also looked so nervous. Ao Tian, don't you also want to make flat chest as your daughter or little sister, seeing from the way you treat her?"

"En?" if not because the Long's brother said, or else Yu Ao Tian won't realize, since when this little thing has already been 'little fellow' who turned to be inseparable part in him?

Perhaps Yu Ao Tian not even clearly understands himself with what kind of attitude he deal with this little girl, but yesterday when she was confronting with Officer Chen, he was so clear with himself that he really saw her as woman, completely sees her as woman!

"Ha, perhaps, I thought having one younger brother is not enough, and wanted to have another younger sister?" said Yu Ao Tian faster walking inside the elevator.

When he back at his own room, he gently puts Yao Yao down in the bed, his pair of dark eyes are focusing at her tender small face, he is extending his finger poking her chubby little face. "Ha." there is hint of faint smile that hang in his mouth.

Really one cute little thing! His finger is lightly unbutton her clothes, take off her outer clothes.

At this time, Yao Yao who is sleeping soundly suddenly her eyelashes moving: Uh." hazily opened her eyes.

"Am I waking you up?" the good looking face is showing gentle faint smile.

She is dumbfounded, her eyes are looking lower, seeing herself only left with bra, naked half upper body, she hides herself with her hands: "Why you undress me?" her white smooth face is showing her unhappy expression.

Yu Ao Tian twitched, said: "Sleep, of course undress." flipping his body, lying down beside her, his big hands are caged her petite body, his fiery lips press onto her lips.

"Uh." sleeping must undress, now kissing, is it counted as good night kiss? This time, Yao Yao does not flounce, she only hoping this man quickly ended the kiss.

But this man having tasted the marrow, the longing for its savour grows (crappy) so there is no slightest thought to stop, his burn hot palm is touching her lower abdomen and slowly slides down to her white underwear.....

"Uh Uh." Sense of dangers, she catches and grabs tight that man big hand. "I am sleepy!" petite body is moving to the opposite direction of man.

"Well, you go sleep." Said Yu Ao Tian lightly, put aside her busy-doing hands away, up lift her underwear...

Her naked body is exposed to the air, the quivering rabbit is slightly tempting, makes her face blushing: "I, I said, I am sleepy." she want to cover her spring (lower part means) but the man has took one step a head to occupy 'the territory'.

"I know. You sleep yours." Yu Ao Tian raises his eyes, smiles devilish. This expression is showing, you sleep yours, I play mine, this meaning.

But the problem is, can she sleep comfortingly? "Don't be like this, okay... Stop." without waiting for her to finish her words, suddenly the numb feeling is hit her.

Yu Ao Tian's fingers are playing in her sensitive parts, while his other fingers

are playing with her mouth.

"Uh, don't! Stop..." double teased, she is restless, moving her body, her small hands are using all the strength to push him away from the head on his chest.

Yu Ao Tian raises, glancing at her panic expression, his lips are curved upwards, smiles: "Alright, go sleep."

At sudden all the teasing stopped, Yao Yao is dumbfounded looking at Yu Ao Tian who sleeps soundly lying beside her, this... Is it really ended?

Cold sweat, doesn't it good if it ended?

But, this is really not Yu Ao Tian's style, will he plan to do more exaggerating counter attack?

Yao Yao is trying to steady her breath, nervous cover her body with quilt, from time to time, taking glance at Yu Ao Tian, until she confirms that he won't do bad thing, then she dares to close her eyes.

While at this moment, Yu Ao Tian who is pretending to close his eyes, open his eyes...

Just now he teased Yao Yao to that far, actually he wanted to confirm whether he would lose control of himself due to impulsiveness or not. It seems that, just now the feeling was no different with before, it was simply only to tease her, longing her body scent that's all. It seems he could turn on only when he facing with 'her other side', he simply losing his rationality?

"Let me go, let me go now! Do you hear or not?"

"Xue Tong you listen to me!"

"I ask you to let me go!"

Halfway between sleeping and awake, Yao Yao heard man and woman quarrel sound, at sudden she opens her eyes, this two voices seems to be?

"Yu Ao Tian! Yu Ao Tian!"

"En?" Heartlessly Yu Ao Tian looked at her.

"Quarrel!"

"I heard it."

"You heard it? Why don't you go to mediate? It seems Miss Mo and General Manager Long are quarreling, they are your friend right, how if it distress the harmony, it will be bad."

Looking at Yao Yao worried face, Yu Ao Tian really not understand, is this little thing resident committee or what? Why she likes to middle other business? "You rest assured, Long Ye likes Xue Tong, he won't hurt her. Sleep."

"Ah? You said... General Manager Long likes Miss Mo?" this time how can Yao Yao go to sleep? Her eyes are wide awake as if the light bulb, how can she does not know General Manager Long likes Miss Mo this... "Are they dating? Or only General Manager Long sided love? You tell me."

Seeing the gossiper her, Yu Ao Tian expression changed cold, suddenly he raised.

"Why are you going?"

"Go to be peacemaker!" if not because he is in good mood today, he really wants to strangle this gossiper little thing.

Yu Ao Tian is being disturb by her until wide awake, dressed and left the room, enter the elevator and heading to Mo Xue Tong's house where she lives.

When the elevator door opened, Yu Ao Tian's eyes spotted Long Ye is pressing Mo Xue Tong in wall, is forcing to kiss her. It can be seen that Mo Xue Tong face is showing fear and also anger.

An instant, Yu Ao Tian face is changed to be stern: "Long Ye! You MF what are you doing?" dashing alike an arrow, Yu Ao Tian pulls Long Ye's hair and swaying him away.

"Ao Tian?" Long Ye is obviously at loss what to do, his eyes are filled with confusion, perhaps he didn't know what he had done.

"You go back first!"

Followed Yu Ao Tian order, Long Ye creased his forehead, stood up and walked toward the elevator, when his big steps entered elevator, he glanced at Mo Xue Tong who is bowing and leaning in the wall by lowering her head: "Damn it!

Just know what did I do?"

"Xue Tong, perhaps Long Ye has drank too much, you..."

"Hu...." Mo Xue Tong crying voice has stopped Yu Ao Tian.

He takes deep breathe: "Xue Tong..." the words hanging in the mouth, but cannot say anything. Because he clearly knows that Long Ye attitude just now had already revived Mo Xue Tong's minefield, or else due to her strong character impossible she cried.

Luckily Yao Yao asked him to mediate, he really not believe Long Ye able to do something like this!

"Geez." Yu Ao Tian takes deep breathe, one of his hand inserted in his pant, the other is patting Mo Xue Tong's shoulder: "I, leaving first."

Mo Xue Tong is quiet woman, her character is introvert, moreover Yu Ao Tian is type of man who does not know how to comfort woman, so this moment he is decided to leave, asking Mo Xue Tong to adjust her mood by herself.

But when he is going to leave, that moment...

At sudden Mo Xue Tong grabbed his wrist: "Stay! Accompany me!"

\*\*

The next day...

"Strange, didn't Yu Ao Tian go to be peacemaker yesterday? Did he go to mediate for one night?" After Yao Yao washing her face, she is talking by herself and heading inside the elevator.

Yesterday when Yu Ao Tian left she had slept, even when she up from bed, she didn't see him, so he wasn't back all night.

'Ding Dong' (bell sound)

Yu Ao Tian lives in fourth floor, the elevator is stopped at third floor.

As she could remember, the first floor no ones live, the second is Long's brother, well, the third floor if it isn't Miss Mo then will be Vice CEO Han?

Cold sweat, no matter which one of them, Yao Yao has a feeling as if being pressed by big mountain.

'Pound' sound

The elevator door opens slowly, and stand in the corner.	Yao Yao subconsciously	head down her head

# Between Yu Ao Tian and Mo Xue Tong

## Part 1 (One)

When entering, from the footsteps sound, if seems to be two person?

Impossible Vice CEO Han and Miss Mo are living together as 'roommate', right? Then she might subject to!

Trembling she raises her head, when she is the elevator there are two figures spotted by her eyes, she dumbfounded....

How can the persons are Yu Ao Tian and Mo Xue Tong, getting into elevator together?

Although yesterday he was going as the peace marker, but mediating for the entire night, moreover he was staying alone with Miss Mo for the entire night, didn't it little bit strange?

Cold sweat, what does she think of, General Manager Long likes Miss Mo, Yu Ao Tian and General Manager Long are best friend, it is impossible Yu Ao Tian and Miss Mo having something beyond than friendship right?

Secretly Yao Yao reproaches herself, making blind and disorderly conjectures, and dashing out from the elevator, nodding her head to them: "Good Morning."

Mo Xue Tong is replied Yao Yao enthusiasm with cold, take big strides getting inside the elevator.

Sweat, why it feels as if Yao Yao has the feeling, being snubbed despite showing good intentions?

"Bao Bei, why are you still wearing Xue Tong's clothes?"

"Ugh? I don't have mature outfit, so that I could not have changed. Miss Mo, I

am so sorry, Few days I am going to give it back to you."

"No need, just throw it directly!"

"......Oh......" Awkwardly Yao Yao lowers her head, the atmosphere inside the elevator is such suffocating and cold.

Not long after that, three of them have already gone out from the elevator.

"Little Thing, you go to company or school?"

"Company."

"En?" For a moment, Yu Ao Tian little bit doubts, but not directly speak something. "I drive you."

"No, I can go by myself."

He knows the reason why Yao Yao reacts on this way because she is afraid of being gossip topic by others, but now she is his personal lawyer, actually there is no need thing to have considered so much. "Get in car!" Yu Ao Tian is pulled her arm, pulled her into the driver seat.

Yao Yao is dumbfounded: "Are you asking me to drive?"

"Last time when I was sicked, it was you who drove the car. It happens I can this chance to read few documents." After said, Yu Ao Tian sitting in passenger seat.

# Between Yu Ao Tian and Mo Xue Tong

## Part 2 (Two)

Honestly, driving this kind exclusive and luxurious sport car, Yao Yao not even little bit fear, the main point is all thank to Feng Chen Yi, he had taught Yao Yao how to drive this type of exclusive and luxurious sport car before.

The car is steadily moving in the street, from time to time she is taking glance to Yu Ao Tian: "Last night.....? Had you... Slept?" does not know the reason, when she is asking this question suddenly her heart is pondering, nervous.

"En, I had slept." Yu Ao Tian's head lowers still reading the document in his hands, while replying her.

"Had slept? Did you sleep at Miss Mo's place?"

"En." Yu Ao Tian is nodding his head, but he can sense something odd: "En?" when he lifts his head up, he just realisedYao Yao is using shocking expression to look at him. "You....? Drive properly!"

If not because Yu Ao Tian has good reaction, perhaps they have already being crashed truck in front of them.

Yao Yao is trembling while parked the car on the roadside, her face is white pale.

"Bao Bei, you are not focusing driving, why are you keep on looking at me?" Yu Ao Tian is using his calm speaking tone asking her.

But her mind brain isn't there.

He had slept, he had slept at Miss Mo's place, logically due to the apartment model, isn't it one room one living room or two rooms with one living room, Miss Mo is alone, her room must be one bedroom and one living room, right? So where did...Yu Ao Tian sleep?

"Little Thing, I am talking with you?" seeing Yao Yao glared at him, but not answering him, Yu Ao Tian is clearly impatience.

"Did you sleep in living room?"

"En?" listened to Yao Yao question, Yu Ao Tian deep eyes are gleaming, he can sense Little Thing is so strange, after all,

Yao Yao never shown any interest wherever he slept before! Furthermore, she even asked such detail! "Of Course I slept in the bed." His mouth curved upwards.

Nervously Yao Yao gulped her saliva: "So, where Miss Mo slept?"

"What do you think?"

'What do You think?'

'What do you think...'

What does she think? One mature man is sleeping in bed, impossible to ask woman to sleep in sofa? Then definitely both of them are sleeping together!!!!

At sudden Yao Yao is creasing her forehead, curled her hand into fist, asking with anger: "How can you like that? How could you sleep with Miss Mo? Didn't you think you are too much? Yu Ao Tian!!!"

Seeing her worried expression, Yu Ao Tian is smiling: "Bao Bei, with what kind of point of view you questioning me?"

Ugh....

That's right, with whoever Yu Ao Tian spending night, there is none of her business? Didn't he often doing so before?

With what stand of view she asking him about this matter?

What is happened? Why when she heard that Yu Ao Tian was spending night with Miss Mo, suddenly she is flaring up????? "I... I am helping General, General Manager Long to ask you!!!"

"En? Since when you are so close with Long Ye? You even help him to question

me, hold a justice?"

"This is because, this is because.... Fair... Fair and justice in heart! You are clearly knowing that General Manager Long likes Miss Mo, how can you interfere others???"

seeing Yao Yao's face who has shown righteous indignation expression, at sudden the smile at Yu Ao Tian's face disappeared: "Little Thing, you are bit too over, drive!" after said, heartlessly he lowers his head and keep on reading his document which in his hands.

Yao Yao is angry, glaring at him, suddenly she stepped on the accelerator to start the car.

Did she really because of General Manager Long ask for the justice? Or because she is oddly angry so looking for excuse?

Not clearly, not sure, but one thing that she can sure, when she knew that Yu Ao Tian was spending night with Miss Mo, this matter, she really unhappy....

# A Look so Fiercely as if Tiger's

## Part 1 (One)

Berson, Legal Division.

"Xiao Meng Li, this is all the detail record of company accounts (the archive), please take look of it." Regarding to Yao Yao's asking, Long Ye is bringing all the document related to company accounts.

In order to let Yu Ao Tian can smoothly follow the politician election, Long Ye is self-volunteered, becoming Yao Yao's assistant.

"Hey, did all of you see just now? General Manager Long is self-volunteered to send all the documents into the new lawyer's room."

"Had seen. That little brat actually what kind of great person ah? General Manager Long even becomes her subordinate?" the legal division lounge room simply raged, everyone is more curious of Yao Yao's background.

At this time, a figure who spreads cold aura suddenly walking inside to legal division lounge, all the people are looking to there, another moment all are said: "Han, Vice CEO Han."

Han Li Shang pair of eyes cast dim, said at low tone: "Which room is Yao Yao's?"

"In, in that room." everyone is nervous pointing at one room near a corner.......

"Ss..." inside the office room, Yao Yao is flipping Berson's account documents within two years, her face is cast gloomy.

Sitting on her opposite is Long Ye who can sense something odd, curiously frowned: "Xiao Meng Li, what's matter?"

"General Manager Long, these accounts..."

"Bang." sound, the office room door is kicked opened.

Yao Yao is nervously looking at the door, as seen Han Li Shang is getting inside with angry expression.

"Vice CEO Han, you..."

Without waiting for Yao Yao to finish her words, Han Li Shang has already grabbed her collar shirt: "Who give you permission to check on company accounts?"

Beside Long Ye can sense something bad, afraid would been seen by the employees who are in lounge room, hurried he closed the office room door: "Li Shang, these document accounts were sent by me, letting Xiao Meng Li to take look at it! You let her off!"

Han Li Shang didn't care with Long Ye persuasion, still with cold stare looking at Yao Yao who is in his in front: "I tell you, you just need to do your works, others than that none of your business, don't get interfere!"

What did he mean by do my works? What did he mean with none of my business? "Vice CEO Han, do you think checking company accounting isn't my business?" Yao Yao who is always feared whenever meeting Han Li Shang, this moment her attitude is out from expected.

"Your job is, only to help Yu Ao Tian smoothly joining the politician election, that's all!"

"Are you sure? Well, I am sorry, I can't do it!!" Her face is dimmer, coldly she glaring at Han Li Shang who in front of her.

An instantaneously Han Li Shang flared up by her who goes tough: "Are you threaten me?" after said, he lifts Yao Yao's collar shirt, pushing her on the cold wall.

One of his hand with force strangling her throat, while other hands quickly takes out a gun, stick it onto her forehead.

The atmosphere inside the office room is suffocating, filled with thick killing aura.

Yao Yao is opened wide her eyes, she not even dares to take a breathe a moment that gun sticks on her forehead.	t the

#### A Look so Fiercely as if Tiger's

#### Part 2 (Two)

"Li Shang!" Long Ye sees thing is going to be worst, his good temper is changed, faster he grabbed the gun from Han Li Shang's hand: "What do you want to do?"

"Long Ye, this matter you back off, as you know I hate the most people who only smarter little bit but dare to threaten me!!"

Ha, only smarter little bit?

Is he talking about her?

Face all things, she can show herself attitude when enduring it, but when she facing with professionalism, she won't endure any!

The fear is disappearing from her eyes, she is using her strength to free her neck from Han Li Shang's hand, chopping but continued to say:"It's me who threaten you... Or it's you, don't know...anything!"

"Woman, what do you mean by this?" a pair of heartless eyes, he is pulling the trigger using his finger.

This subtle movement is caught by Yao Yao's eyes, she can feel, if she lets herself staying in this kind of situation, Han Li Shang may kill her soon or later!

Her black eyes turned, her expression cold, using her strength she kicked Han Li Shang's stomach.

Facing with this sudden attack, Han Li Shang is obviously not thinking of it, and then his hand that grabbed Yao Yao's neck has loosen.

Even Long Ye who is beside seen with dumbstruck expression.

Another second, Han Li Shang has put the gun onto Yao Yao's head, without waiting him to do another step, coldly she questioned him: "Vice CEO Han, you are so storming, is it because you are afraid that I will be able to check on

Berson's tax fraud, defraud revenue or others? Do you think by killed me, you can keep all of these as secret?"

Speak frankly, Berson's tax fraud, defraud of revenue, these matters, it only Yu Ao Tian, Han Li Shang and Long Ye, three of them who knew it.

When Yao Yao said that she wanted to check on account books, Long Ye really never thought, This little girl could find out all the underhanded activities in very short time, but, he ignored the reality she is genius.

"Xiao Meng Li, don't spout nonsense!" Long Ye's face expression is dimmer, that charming eyes are turned to be dangerous gleam.

Facing with fierce look as if a tiger's, finally Yao Yao has seen the real them who ever mingle in the underworld.

It seems Yu Ao Tian was right, she and they are coming from and destined to have different world!

"Hu...." she is pouted out breath, smiles faintly, she is trying to alleviate temporarily this atmosphere which filled with danger: "Vice CEO Han, General Manager Long, it seems that both of you are not really understand the process of politician election."

"What do you want to say?" Coldly Long Ye asked.

"If business man is going to join the politician election, the first step is, must be willingly to give check on accounts." Yao Yao is slowly walking in front of her working desk, takes one of the account book, flipped: "Even me who is not studied accountancy major, I could see within these two years Berson has been tax fraud, also defraud the revenue. Ha, you guys thought..." 'Bang', a sound, she is using her strength to smash the account book on the table, shouting: "Don't you think that the accountants sending by the government won't find it?"

# Part 1 (One)

Her domineering voice echoing in this cold office room, Long Ye is dumbstruck looking at Yao Yao who is standing in front him, his eyes has slightly admired gleam.

His admiration isn't because Yao Yao's words, but more when seeing her dealing with Han Li Shang who pointed gun at her, along with his imperil eyesight, that calm attitude has reversed the situation.

For along this time, he always looks Yao Yao as little girl, but this moment, he really cannot use that eyesight to look her as little girl but sees her as awesome woman!

"I understood Yao Yao, you say, what the solution for this matter." Long Ye pressed down Han Li Shang's hand that holding a gun.

Yao Yao pouting, play fool sitting on her chair: "Give me a time to think of it, and then, at 1:30 at afternoon, you bringYu Ao Tian and also Vice CEO Han, gather at third floor small meeting room. I will give you all solution for this case."

"I understood." after said, when Long Ye is going to leave, he realized that Han Li Shang still standing at his place, there is no slightly intention to move, quickly he pulled him out.

"This is such embarrassing?" one of Long Ye's hand is inserted to his pocket pant, he smiles at Han Li Shang while walking.

His cold eyes are sweeping at Long Ye, turned his eyes: "Didn't you too?"

"Hey, Li Shang." at sudden, Long Ye stopped his footstep, his gentle smiles gradually replace with concern and worries expression: "Do you feel it?"

"What?" Han Li Shang facing Long Ye when talking.

"The speed of Luo Yao Yao growth." when they first met Yao Yao and also after recently meeting her, they have known this Little girl is talented genius girl, all of them are also witnessed Yao Yao growth. But since the day Yao Yao took out her bright world class lawyer license, the speed of her growth is shocking.

"Perhaps she indeed that types of woman! Just recalled when I was child, encountering Ao Tian for the first time, I could not sense any differences between him with average people. But after 13 years when I had encountered him again, his changes beyond my expectation!"

"Does this mean... Luo Yao Yao still have chance to 'growth'?"

Han Li Shang lower his eyes, silent for moment, slowly turned his head: "That is her matter. But if she turned to be Yu Ao Tian's obstacle, I believe you and me are understood very well what should we do, right?" the connotation meaning the words, there are bright gleaming in both of their eyes....

# Part 2 (Two)

Meeting room.

"This feels so odd, usually I am the person who asked to have meeting, but today I am called to join the meeting?"

Sitting at the main seat of the meeting room, Yu Ao Tian spoke, making fun.

Long Ye is shrugging his shoulder: "I did take long time in order to reacting, such strange." that time, actually he had been feeling as if sink into Yao Yao domineering aura, so that at last he had obeyed her.

When they are having conversation, at sudden the door of the meeting room is pushed-open, Yao Yao is entering the meeting room without any particular expression. She not even gives anyone a chance to take breath, her eyes are directly looking at Yu Ao Tian: "Perhaps Vice CEO Han and General Manager Long had told you, well I am going to the main point."

'Bang' sound, she tossing the documents from her hands to the table, taking one of the chair, sits facing Yu Ao Tian:

"Once the government has investigated about Berson tax fraud and also defraud revenue, it not only will stop your politician election but also troubled Berson. Now the only way to solve it. You must to give up your place to others."

"Luo Yao Yao, do you mean to let Ao Tian resign?" Coldly Han Li Shang asked.

She moves her chair, facing Han Li Shang and nodding her head: "That's right!"

"The purpose!" Yu Ao Tian coldly let out this words.

Have to say, forever this man always wants to know the purpose when he facing with all matters, apparently he won't do anything that does not have purpose. It seems that she has understood Yu Ao Tian little bit, so that before she came here she had prepared everything to explain to him.

## **Campaign Proposal**

"First, I asked you to give yours place to others, doesn't mean that you must resign, you can use the title as Board of Chairman. On surface it seems you are taking advisory post, actually you still able to control Berson stock and even control everything!"

"Second, once you are becoming Board of Chairman, from the outsider view's you are not controlling Berson anymore, so government won't send their accountant to check on Berson accounts. Of course..." speaks until this point, Yao Yao's eyes are flashed, coldly laughing: "After experienced the case with Officer Chen, I won't say there will be no person from government who isn't trying to get rid of you, there is a possibility they will come with some excuses in order to check on Berson accounts."

Honestly, Yao Yao has been so thoughtful regarding all the matters, so careful, it really let one's open-wide their eyes.

Long Ye is glancing toward Yu Ao Tian.

He keeps silent for moment, smiles devilish: "Solving way of the matter!" after said, he hooks his fingers. That seems as if he has 100% certainty, Yao Yao has thought the way to solve it.

Just as expected, she is using her strength to push the document on the table: "The solution inside the document."

Yu Ao Tian takes the document, flipping and reading, commanded: "Continue!"

At this moment, the dominant power all of sudden goes to Yu Ao Tian's, it was so clearly from the moment Yao Yao entered the room, she has looked alike queen, but without realized at sudden the person who hold back the dominant power is taken by Yu Ao Tian.

Seeing this lofty CEO, secretly Yao Yao takes a deep breath.

Huh, really such scary man, he is always can be a winner, even controlled everything. It seems no mater how she works hard, she won't be able to suppress him. "The third, although there is no such problem of Berson accounts, I will still going to give you suggestion to give up your position, by this way it will show your determination and loyalty, put your whole heart into politician election, this is going to be successful campaign."

"En, I take your suggestion. Is there anything do you still want to report?" at the moment when Yu Ao Tian close the document, giving the expression of domineering King.

While at beside two persons who listen to their conversation are Han Li Shang and Long Ye, both of them are feeling unnecessary (no need to be) being here, the conversation between Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian are something that both of them cannot meddle with.

He only said half and she able to continue the other half; and also as if she hasn't done anything but he has already known what would she do for the next.

Perhaps, this is something called as perfect fit. At least, before when they were having meeting, either Long Ye or Han Li Shang, hadn't met anyone who matched with Yu Ao Tian this well!

Yao Yao is looking at Yu Ao Tian's pair of eyes, helplessly pouted, couldn't he let her to dominating the battle field? Why must he such rushing to take the lead? Makes her looked as if a little minions, although she is little minions, cold sweat.....

"Ugh..." keep quiet for while, her moisten eyes moving, trying to probe asking: "Is your purpose only to become congress member?"

'Bang' sound, Yu Ao Tian is smashing down the document to the desk, without expression asked: "What do you want to say?"

"Don't you think about higher position?"

"Higher position? Ha.... Prime Minister?"

Ugh? Seeing that vague smiling expression hung on Yu Ao Tian's face, Yao Yao is dumbstruck, is he joking? He.... His eyes are beaming, an endless ambition, it

makes one's who see it, shudder of fear. Could it be, his goal is really wanting to be Prime Minister?

This.... Is his ambition too big?

"I am not joking with you. Do you ever think to have higher position?"

"Can you help Ao Tian to reach higher position?" suddenly Han Li Shang spoke.

She is smiling while nodding: "Yes."

"What position?" suddenly Long Ye expression turned be serious.

Her clear eyes are beaming as sharp clear gloss, confidently said: "State Council Executive Vice Premier."

After listened to this, others than Yu Ao Tian, everyone face is stiffen: "State Council Executive Vice Premier? Yao Yao are you kidding?"

"I am not kidding. When I looking Berson account, I had checked, currently the position of State Council Executive Vice Premier is empty. Compare to be congress member, State Council Executive Vice Premier is belonging to government high rank employee, it belongs to one of the highest politician position in government circles."

Especially State Council Executive Vice Premier this position, it above has three or four level under Prime Minister position. So that, this position is one of the most wanted political position.

"Based on... Yu Ao Tian background can this being achieved?" Han Li Shang doubted when asking.

At the moment, Yao Yao is staring at Yu Ao Tian: "with his background in business and also his assets it can be considered to join the election, it match with State Council Executive Vice Premier requirement, and the rest need...."

"What we need?"

"So far I don't have purpose to follow State Council Executive Vice Premier election, you just need to help me for the Congress election." Yu Ao Tian who is silent this time suddenly coldly opened his mouth.

Long Ye and the others are so curious, doesn't he always want to join

government? Since Yao Yao has this ability, why Ao Tian refused?

"Yao Yao, just forget that Yu Ao Tian interested or not, you say, what we need to do?"

"The rest we need, Ao Tian to have three generations background as Senior government leader, that's all!"

"Heh? But Ao Tian does have all of this qualification."

# **Choosing Higher Position**

Long Ye is confidently talking to himself, his eyes are looking Yu Ao Tian. But when he sees Yu Ao Tian's face showed dark expression, he realized he has said something unnecessary. "Aiya, this... Doesn't it little bit difficult?"

Ugh, she seems heard General Manager Long said that Yu Ao Tian has already fulfilled this requirement, did she hear wrong? "No, it not difficult!"

Listened to this words, Han Li Shang eyes flashed: "What is your solution?"

"Ao Tian personal files must be in Japan, right?"

"That's right."

"I can take the fastest flight to Japan, hack the Japanese Government intranet, changed Ao Tian personal files, changed his background. And then... Due to all of you guys capability, it must be easy to help Ao Tian to have few politician fellows as his 'relatives', right? After said, Yao Yao's mouth curved up, give a faint smile. This indeed for those who stayed in Japan for some years is something easy. But... "Can this works?"

"En! On other side, the relationship between Japan-China is quite tense, if Ao Tian personal files are retrieve from Japan, he definitely will get attention from nation leader; on the other hand, his background as business man will give additional point, so that he can directly join the State Council Executive Vice Premier, for others trivial things they can put more effort, the success rate is very high."

"Ao Tian, you..."

"No need to say anymore, I don't have interest with State Council Executive Vice Premier position!" when Yao Yao talked in a lofty strain, Yu Ao Tian from the

beginning has already given cold attitude, as if it nothing to do with him. Doesn't Yu Ao Tian always looking for highest position? Why doesn't he look

interested with higher position? Yao Yao is curious looked at him.

This moment Yu Ao Tian is silent, his deep black eyes turned: "Little Thing, it stills that same words, I just need you to help me secure the Congress member position, I will give my effort to go along with yours works, thus for others, for this moment no need to think of it."

"Huh." since he has let out his words, so she does not need to say more. "Alright, I understood. Still, just now I have checked that company current asset, so far it has 5 billions dollar, can you let me to manage it?"

"Can!"

"Ao Tian, those current assets..."

"Li Shang, as you know now my focus are go to congress election, so all my works for the company's business may be paused temporary."

Every company has current asset (Liquid asset) in order to maintain status quo, and also if today Berson is facing with something that related to money matter, there also a possibility because of no current asset, it can give adverse effect. But at same this shown that Yu Ao Tian determination toward political election. He didn't even ask Yao Yao what to do with the money, and also could drop everything regarding to Berson.

Since he has been such determining, why Yu Ao Tian didn't have any interest with State Council Executive Vice Premier position? It so obvious he types of man who has big ambition, impossible he only aiming for congress election, strange! Yao Yao is curiously thinking about it, slowly standing up: "Ao Tian, if there is nothing to talk, I take my leave first."

"En."

Inside the meeting room three persons are looking at Yao Yao's back, when she left, Han Li Shang and Long Ye are immediately changed 360 (drastically), both of them are changed serious expression as if talking big matter. "Ao Tian, regarding Luo Yao Yao's suggestion just now, you must have been guessing it before, right?"

"En." the person who can hack into government internet (intranet) not only Yao Yao but Yu Ao Tian also can do it, his personal data in Japan was changed by him personally!

"Well, why don't you directly go to State Council Executive Vice Premier position election? By this way perhaps you are getting closer by one step?" Han Li Shang curiously asked.

Yu Ao Tian eyes down, coldly said: "My purpose indeed Prime Minister, this position, but, I want to sit on Prime Minister position by using my name and also my family name, not by depending by other things such as 'Japanese relatives, Japanese family' to be Prime Minister!"

Facing with many matters, he could use his mind set to do any unscrupulous divisive tactics, as long as his goal reached. But as long as it regarded to his family name, Yu Ao Tian's attitude always puts his family honor as the priority, as the most important, he rather takes long circling path, but at same time he must bear his family name to the top in politic.

"Understood." the persons are nodded, because the persons who sitting in here are knew very well Yu Ao Tian's background!

"Say, Ao Tian, after Yao Yao together with you, she seems to be 'learned bad'.

"Long Ye is using joking speaking tone in order to remove the tensed atmosphere inside the meeting room.

Yu Ao Tian clearly knows what he pointed out, neither about company tax fraud or defraud revenue, It not only Yao Yao didn't stop it, on contrary she even helped them; others, when she brought out the topic to change Yu Ao Tian's personal data in Japan for deceiving government, but...

"Ha, these things aren't touched her bottom limits, that's all."

"Bottom limit?"

Stands up, Yu Ao Tian is smiling devilish: "Deng Hui Hong's little brother until today haven't asked anything out from Deng Hui Hong the things I wanted, it seems that I need to pay visit personally to Madam Deng. When the time is

arrived... All of you can witness what is that Little Thing bottom limit!" honestly to say, he does not want to touch Yao Yao bottom limit, but.. He does not have any option.

After said, Yu Ao Tian is leaving the meeting room without any expression....

Several days in row, Yao Yao is busy preparing things regarding to Yu Ao Tian's politic election as congress member, although it hard, but it able to let her to forget those unhappy things in her heart."

Just now going out from Berson, Yu Ao Tian's sport car has stopped beside her.

Naturally she pulled open the door and sit beside the driver seat: "Don't you go to dinner party (party that engage in social activities)?"

This few days, Yao Yao was so busy, while Yu Ao Tian everyday is having dinner party, both of them are lessen time to meet each others.

"Drive you go home first."

"No need, if you are still have thing to do, you just go to do yours business, I can take public transportation go home."

"Ha." Yu Ao Tian is faintly smiles, directly start the engine.

His sport car is speeding in the street, Yu Ao Tian's hands are in steering wheel while his eyes focus on the in front street. Both of them are silent along the way, but when it getting closer to Apartment, slowly he spoke: "Recently you are busying with my matters, is it okay you not going to school?"

Yao Yao does not think that Yu Ao Tian is asking about this matter, she stammered smiles, she turned her head to other side: "It's okay, no problem."

"Don't you like school that much? If you are not going to school within seven days, you may disqualify from receiving full scholarship. Moreover, you will demerit?"

"It won't be that serious... Rest assured, I have already taken leave of absence." She is smiling exaggerated, comforting Yu Ao Tian.

"Arrived." the car stopped in front of the apartment entrance.

"Sorry to bother you." when Yao Yao wanted to leave, suddenly she turned her

back, smiles: "Tonight you have less drink, it is not good for body."	

# Part 1 (One)

## **Mystery Message**

These few days both of them are having lesser chance to meet each other, When Yu Ao Tian is arrived at home she has been sleeping. On the morning, when she wakes up she could smell alcohol on his clothes, he must have been drinking much alcohol.

"Ha." Yu Ao Tian only can give faint smiles and then drives his car....

And then, the atmosphere which surrounded them slowly changes.

He is being thoughtful for her study, her private life; she is being thoughtful with his health, his private life. Although Yu Ao Tian only can give her a smile, but this smile, for a man who has aloof and almighty character is something precious, at least he does not refuse her to meddle with his private life.

But it seems both of them don't notice the changing on the way they interacting between themselves; or perhaps, both of them are already blended to the point they don't not which part odd from them.

"Long Qi, what was happened to Yao Yao during in the school?" when Yu Ao Tian is moving away from Apartment he phoned Long Qi.

Since the first day Yao Yao didn't go to school, he had already suspicious, after few days passed, he was sure Yao Yao must have encountering something when she was at school, so that she didn't go to school.

"Like this Ao Tian, few days ago there was someone posted a rumour about flat chest. Since then Flat Chest didn't go to school again."

"Who did it?"

"I don't know."

Yu Ao Tian silent for moment: "Alright, I hang the phone." hung up Long Qi phone, directly he phoned Han Li Shang:

"Li Shang, tonight banquet you go by yourself."

"Ao Tian, you must know how important this banquet. The Representative of Asia Pasific region have come here in person, if you are not showing up you are too impolite!!!:

Yu Ao Tian also knows how important this banquet is, but.... There is something more important compare to his business: "You randomly make an excuse for me, say that I am sick or whatever. Sorry to bother you."

"Ao...."

Before Han Li Shang ended his words, Yu Ao Tian already hung up the phone call, his car direction is changed....

Inside the apartment.

'hum hum hum..." taking bath during the sunset in cozy bathroom, it seems Yao Yao likes this place so much, once she went home she was humming while tidying up the room.

"Kring, kring, kring...." (phone is ringing)

It seem her phone is ringing, she is lying down on the sofa when received the phone call: "Hello."

"Qin Ai (beloved), what were you doing these few days? Why didn't you come to school??" It was Gong Xiao Man who phoned.

She gives bitter smile: "You knew the reason why I was not coming to school, it needs time to let the rumor disappeared, sometimes."

"Oh. How was your days?"

"Very good."

"Very good? Geez, listened to your speaking tone, already knew these few days you had excellent days. Tell me, what things make you such happy?"

"Uh...." She seriously thought about it, but after she thought carefully about it, it isn't something really happiest thing. "I just randomly being so busy, nothing is especially happy thing."

"Less speak nonsense. I have known you for long time, usually your speaking tone is such different when you are happy or not. You tell me with whom you

spending your time these few days?"

"Who would it be." at this time Yao Yao's mouth is smiling faintly.

"Yu Ao Tian?"

"Of course."

"Ugh... Usually when you mentioned about this name, your speaking tone sounded helpless or being irritated, but why today I heard from your speaking tone you are such happy? Could it be that?? These few days your feeling are changed toward Yu Ao Tian?"

"How possible it would be!" Yao Yao is creased her forehead, quickly she stands up, her face is seriously make denial expression: "It's, it same as usual."

"Humph? Something fishy, something fishy."

"what is fishy?" listened to the way Gong Xiao Man said, It so obviously Yao Yao feels irritated.

"It started at beginning when heard Yu Ao Tian, this name, the speaking tone was little bit bashful. But when I mentioned about the changes of your relationship with Yu Ao Tian, suddenly you became irritated, it is so obvious that you have the wicked flee when no man pursueth (commit fault feeling)."

"I don't!"

"Are you sure?" Gong Xiao Man changed her way speaking: "Are you dare to see yourself in the mirror, see that whether your face is red or not? Is your face showing such bashful smiles?"

Listened to this, Yao Yao speedily dashing to bathroom, seeing her small face which is smiling bashful that reflecting on the mirror, hurried she gulping her saliva, after all Gong Xiao Man has guessed right? Impossible....

# Part 2 (Two)

#### **Mystery Message**

'Thump' 'Thump', suddenly her heart is beating so fast, thinking carefully these days her interaction with Yu Ao Tian, it seems she adapted, more getting used with Yu Ao Tian.

No, no, no, this time because Yu Ao Tian didn't show any vagaries characters, so that she get used to him. That's right, this must be the reason!

"Yao Yao, ahahahaha, didn't you really go to reflect yourself in the mirror?"

"No! Of course I don't, I am not dummy."

"Beloved, sometime in the process when woman and man are interacting they are easy to happen something, moreover Yu Ao Tian indeed someone has big charm. But don't blame me not remind you, he is really! Really! Really not suitable for you, you should not have any feeling for him." Gong Xiao Man speaking tone changed to be serious when talking in half way.

That's right, Yao Yao knows very well that she does not suit Yu Ao Tian, so that... "I won't fall in love with him." won't be, won't fall in love with Yu Ao Tian, that man is too dangerous, once she really falls for him it only will give her heartache. She isn't someone who has already known in front is big hole and then she jumps in!

"Well, it's good."

"Haha." she is forcing herself to smile, lift her eyes up she sees herself in front the mirror, she just realized farfetched smiles on her face. If it was long time before, when she heard Xiao Man said this words, she would be agreed with her, but does not know since when, whenever she heard Xiao Man's words, she feels little bit.... Irritated.

'Dong....' suddenly, the mobile phone showed messages notification.

"Xiao Man, I have short message in here, I hung up."

"Oh..."

Hung up the phone called, she read the short message...

'Luo Yao Yao, Maple Tree (Feng Ye) hotel room number 908, there is 'surprise' waiting for you, if you want to know this secret, just come here, it won't let you down!'

Who sent this message? Is it a frank? Such boring?

Will it be a trap? But this type of trap such blunt, right?

Sst... What kind of 'surprise' it will be?

Should I go or not?

Yao Yao is looked at her mobile phone message, she feels in difficulty....

Maple Tree Hotel, room number 908.

Inside the dim room, luxurious decoration, a lamp exudes a faint light, the room is wrapped by lustful atmosphere.

Yu Ao Tian is sitting in the sofa inside the room while playing his mobile phone. Not long after that, the door is opened, Shang Yun Yin enters the room by smiling while holding her handbag: "Ao Tian, the meeting place is such special."

### 250 A

I never had any doubt of Yu Ao Tian who is heartless, cold-blood, merciless. I have read the part when the paid-back he gave to Li Mei Yun, a kind of damage which able to make Li Mei Yun or other women to have nightmare every time they re-called about the experienced they had gone through whenever they opposed Yu Ao Tian.

Yu Ao Tian never soften his heart whenever he dealing with man/men, woman/women, young and even old. I can't agree with Yu Ao Tian but other side, I can't pity Shang Yun Yin too.

### Part 1 (One)

## Heartless man is doing touching thing

He keeps his mobile phone, lifts his head up to glance Shang Yun Yin who walking in: "Knowing this is such 'special' you are still coming here, right?"

"Humph? Ha, 'The need' not only for man." Shang Yun Yin tossed her handbag aside, pair of her leg are put on Yu Ao Tian, smiles coquettishly while her hand is hugging Yu Ao Tian's neck: "Sometimes Woman also has the necessary too!"

Not to mention, Shang Yun Yin is kind of woman who has playful charm but also mature woman lust. It can say, she types that able to hold man's heart.

"Haven't met you for sometime, how can you be this horny?" Said Yu Ao Tian looked at her coldly.

Shang Yun Yin is shrugging her shoulders, speaking with provocative tone: "Don't you like it?"

"Ha." he sneered, gently he pushed away Shang Yun Yin's body from his: "If you are really in need... Undress, go to bed wait for me!"

"I like step by step."

"Are you sure?" Yu Ao Tian is standing up, his face at moment darken: "But I don't have much time. I leave first!"

"Hey!!" it is so obvious Shang Yun Yin unhappy, grabbed his arm to stop him, unhappily she creased her forehead:

"How can you change to be this sentiment now?"

"It according to the person!"

"!!!!!" Yu Ao Tian heartless words as if a pierce that penetrating into Shang Yun Yin's Arrogant heart, but this is the opportunity that she has awaited for such long time, although inside her heart she is not happy, she also would not want to

let off this 'opportunity'. "Alright. I know what should I do." she is forcing herself to give a smile, faster she heading to bed, slowly undress herself.

Yu Ao Tian only standing at beside coldly looking at her, there is no expression in his face.

Not long after that, the woman's body has exposed naked, she gives charming aura, hooked her fingers: "Still standing?"

"Heh." Yu Ao Tian twitched his lips, he takes out one black handkerchief from his western suit pocket, tossed to herself:

"Put this on your eyes."

"En? What game are we playing?" Shang Yun Yin isn't suspicious, she takes the black handkerchief and put on her eyes.

"Kneel on the bed, tilting your body up."

Listened to Yu Ao Tian's command, she is patiently followed him, she could hear the footstep getting near from her back, nervously she bites her lips.

After all her body just 'starting', before doing foreplay, directly thrust into, it must be hurt.

But toward a man like Yu Ao Tian who has character alike king, once does not do according to his instruction, there is a possibility if he said that he will leave then he will really leave. So that there is no way, in order to reach 'her goal' Shang Yun Yin must do as she told.

Suddenly, that big and heartless 'thing' thrust inside her body.

"Argh!!!" Shang Yun Yin is enduring the pain by clenched her hand into fist, her tears wet the black handkerchief.

That heartless big thing is getting inside her body, as if a big beast (monster) constantly plundering. But so soon, she can feel such strange feeling in her body, satisfaction, and also that pain slowly disappearing.

"En...uh...en...uh..." she is moaning happily, her tensed body changed to be relax.

"The voice more coquettish, or else the result won't be satisfied."

Suddenly Yu Ao Tian joking voice flow, but the voice source obviously far, Shang Yun Yin frowned, at next seconds, quickly she put down the black handkerchief that covered her eyes, she looked for the sound source.

As seen, Yu Ao Tian is sitting at the single sofa, smiling devilish toward her.

Her face widen (shocked expression), faster she turned her head, seeing who is the man that thrust into her body:

"You... Who are you?"

The stranger heartless man constantly thrusting into her, pair of his hand grabbed her waist, so that she cannot escape.

"Let me off! Let me off!" Shang Yun Yin is restless moving her body, tears are flowing from her eyes corner: "Yu Ao Tian!!! Are you losing your mind?? Why are you doing this?"

# Part 2 (Two)

#### **Heartless Man Is Doing Touching Thing**

"En? Your expression may affect the result." Yu Ao Tian is pretending feeling at lost lose shaking his head, and then clapping his hand: "Just shoot until here."

"Yes! Big Boss Yu!" a unison voice replied.

Speedily Shang Yun Yin takes a glance, as seen a man from left side is holding recording tool. "You guys...you guys...?" she is shocked, her eyes are glared widen.

That man who is holding the recording walking toward Yu Ao Tian, he gives it to him.

He watched it, his lips is curved up showing his satisfaction smiles: "Not bad, the result is great!"

"Yu Ao Tian!!!! Uih...." When Shang Yun Yin is going to vent her anger, she heard that man who is thrusting inside her, uttering low growl, "Don't!!! Don't keep on thrusting inside me!!! Don't!!"

The man does not care with her begging, that\*\* has already thrust inside her body, and then that man loosen up her body, feeling satisfied he wearing his pant.

Shang Yun Yin is feeling embarrassed and pissed off hurried she wearing her clothes, few steps she rushed in front of Yu Ao Tian: "Simply to say you are such abnormal!" she raises her hand, at the moment her hand landed...

Yu Ao Tian has already grabbed her wrist: "This is the pay-back 'present' for you."

"Present?"

"Ha." coldly he laughing, he swayed away Shang Yun Yin's hand, eeriness said: "Since you dare to make Yao Yao not dare to lift up her head at school, well of course I must give you one big present!!" after said, he hand over the recorder to

his subordinate: "Go, take this recording to Media, asked them to put it into headline, no matter how much money must be spent!"

"Yes, Big Boss Yu." after said, two of his subordinates are walking out from that room.

"Don't! Yu Ao Tian, you can't do this!!" an instantaneously Shang Yun Yin breaks down. Although her character is such bullying (arrogant / trouble-maker) but she also counted as conservative, or else how could she keeps her virginity for quite long time, once the recording being publicity, later when everyone in China also in Asia know it how she could lift her head up!

"Ha." Yu Ao Tian humphed once, he pulled her long hair, that scary face is gradually moving away from her: "When you had decided put Yao Yao to shame, that time you must know about this ending!"

Staring at that good looking face who showed devil expression, Shang Yun Yin's face has already wet of tears, how could she think of this ending?

In her heart, she really never took Yao Yao as her love rival, perhaps to say, she never thought that Yu Ao Tian... Can like that kind of Little Girl types!

Not bad, that big poster was asking people to post it, it because she only wanted to vent her anger. Who knows that her ending would be like this?

"Yu Ao Tian! Simply to say you are devil!" Shang Yun Yin really does not know what to do, everything that happened between she and Yu Ao Tian as if was yesterday, but today this man even asked other to rape her, he even asked them to record it.

As said Yu Ao Tian is heartless, but now the current him who is heartless man doing touching thing only for a girl?

Ha, it seems she is over-valued herself, her position inside Yu Ao Tian's heart.

# Part 1 (One)

### Caught in the bed (cheating)

"This is what you are looking for!" after said, suddenly he loosen his hand, without any expression he looked at Shang Yun Yin who has slumped on the floor.

"Do you ever loved me? Yu Ao Tian!" she wipes her tears, slowly raises her head.

Looking at Shang Yun Yin'eyes which filled with expectation, Yu Ao Tian is creased his forehead: "It seems that you are really misunderstood our relationship, I have told you, you are only my bed mate!"

So far he never like to play with women by including his feeling, neither his girlfriend nor his one night stand lover or bed mate, he will let the other party know clearly. If the other party unwilling to do so they can refuse.

This was also a reason why Li Mei Yun fell for him, it because Yu Ao Tian understood very well to settle his 'relationship' very clearly, he never mud himself, confused the public, he never to include any feeling only to get particular woman.

"Ha, I understood!" so weak Shang Yun Yin climbed up from floor, clenched, hasn't left the room.

Indeed, she indeed too confident with herself, she always think that Yu Ao Tian might fall for her soon or later, but now it seems she had mistaken, biggest mistake, this heartless man actually cold-blood man! He won't have any feeling toward any woman, except....

Seeing not far from her place, Luo Yao Yao is getting closer, very fast Shang Yun Yin changed her face expression, get rid those sadness from her face, confidently raises her head.

"Shang Yun Yin?" Yao Yao is shocked stop her footstep, dumbfounded, her face darken. That message was sent by Shang Yun Yin, was she the person?

"Ha, rumor said recently you are being Yu Ao Tian's lawyer? Really let you work hard. Luo Yao Yao, don't you feel so work-out for him?" Slowly Shang Yun Yin walking in front of her, giving her provocative smiles.

"Why must I feel work-out for him?" she is clenched her hand into fist, creased her forehead.

"When you are so busy to help Yu Ao Tian, though I was also work-out serving him on the bed. Aiya, it seems that you are really cannot satisfy Yu Ao Tian, so that he asked me...to busy in here. Ha." after said, Shang Yun Yin puts gloomy smiles and left.

And then, at the moment she entered the elevator, her face that showed smile expression is disappeared: "Yu Ao Tian, although I can't get your love, I won't let both of you have happiness by being together!!!"

Inside the apartment, darkness, only the street lamps light that penetrating to living room sofa, that light is beaming in Yao Yao expressionless face that already white pale.

After Shang Yun Yin left, she wanted to leave, but without she realized she walking inside the room where Shang Yun Yin stayed before.

The room door was unlocked, she could see clearly the person who sat on sofa was Yu Ao Tian! At sudden, her mind was empty-blank, turned and run back to the apartment.

Everyone has said curiosity is deathly, she really hates herself why must she followed the short message instruction, as the result she knew the thing that she must not know.

But, the thing that irritated her more...

On the moment when she spotted Yu Ao Tian inside the hotel room, her feeling was such similar with two years ago when she caught Feng Chen Yi red-handed on bed with Li Ruo Ting, that scenery more or less very similar, although there is no reason for her to get angry, to be so sad, but deep inside her heart she still felt pain, not comfortable, really not comfortable.

Impossible, impossible to have this kind of feeling? That time she was in love with Feng Chen Yi, being cheated by him, being hurt, being sad, all of these

feeling were so normal. But she does not love Yu Ao Tian, logically, with whomever he was, it up to his decision, his freedom!!

What is going on with her?

'Creak' the apartment door is slowly being opened, followed by faint light. "Heh? Bao Bei, I thought you are going out, you are at home why don't you turn on the light?"

Heard, it is Yu Ao Tian's voice, she is clenched her small hand, her face is staring far away, not looked at him: "Forget to turn on."

"Hah, this you also can forget?"

She tensed bites her lips, lower her head, forcing to show her smile on her face: "Tonight, didn't you go for banquet? Why suddenly you go home?"

# Part 2 (Two)

### **Caught in the Bed (Cheating)**

"Changed the schedule." after said, Yu Ao Tian sits beside her. On the moment he wanted to hug her. Yao Yao movement is so exaggerating, jump out from the sofa.

The atmosphere at sudden changed to be awkward.

Yu Ao Tian is creased his forehead: "You..."

"I am sleepy, I want to go to sleep. You take your rest early." turned, when she is leaving.

Suddenly he stopped her by grabbed her arm, pulling her into his embraces: "Bao Bei, from this few days, this is my first time going home earlier, why are you going to sleep?"

Low whispering voice alike demon charm bringing such vague atmosphere to her ears, the warm back hug wrapped and hugged her tightly.

"En, I, these days I feel little bit tired, so that, wanted, to have rest earlier."

"You are tired? Or..." Yu Ao Tian smiles devilish, his big hand is gently caressing her small face: "purposely avoiding me?"

Staring at his handsome face, deep black eyes, also his charming smiles, actually she feels an impulsive to smile back to him, why this man can facing everything with such calm as if nothing never happened?

Oh, that's right, he always been like this, right?

When he was with Li Mei Yun that girlfriend, also when he with her, he also didn't feel sorry or guilty toward Li Mei Yun, anyway in his eyes every woman isn't something valuable, is it?

On this moment he gives you a feeling, let you to stay beside him, but once you do something he dislikes, he will immediately dump you.

Ha, he really the infamous cold-blood and also heartless man!

"It is not on purpose avoiding you, but I really feel tired!" Yao Yao gives fake smile, she really wanted flee from his embraces.

Who knows, Yu Ao Tian's hand are hugging her tighter, his fingers reach her chin slightly hard, slowly raising her chin up. The sexy lips burning hot brushing to hers.

Yao Yao is creased her forehead, she doesn't show any refusal, as if a wooden sculpture kissed by him.

But when Yu Ao Tian's lips are touched hers... Suddenly inside her mind flowing the scenery of Shang Yun Yin's back.

"Don't touch me!!!" she growled low, while her hands touched Yu Ao Tian's face.

His deep eyes are dim, hurried he grabbed her small hand: "Little Thing! What nerved you are!" very obvious, Yu Ao Tian didn't expect suddenly this little thing react such over, feeling irritating he pushed her away from his embraces.

"I have nerved! Or your brain have drown into water!!!" her suffocating feeling finally exploded, Yao Yao is standing in front of him, roaring loudly.

Yu Ao Tian darken face is staring at her small face, his big hand are slowly make into fist: "Little Thing, is it because these few days I treating you too well, so that, you are trying to seek trouble for me?"

Ha, hahahaha, she really curious, with what sort of mood Yu Ao Tian said these words? Does he think her as his pet?

Oh that's right, she is so similar with little dog who waging her tail in front of him, as long as he called her out, she is seeking trouble for herself!!!

"Yes, it is me who seeks trouble for myself, or you are the person who don't keep your words!!!"

## Part 1 (One)

#### Yu Ao Tian, you get lost!

"What are you trying to say?"

"You had ever told me, you would break up with Shang Yun Yin!! But you?"

At sudden, Yu Ao Tian deep pair of eyes are gleaming brightly, finally he understood why suddenly this little thing pissed off!

"How could you know it?"

"It wasn't important how I found it out, the important thing is, why are you still together with her!! Hah?"

This is his first time to see Yao Yao showing her raged, if this is changed to be another woman, he could not guarantee himself won't give a slap, but this moment, he really wanted to know with what kind point of view Yao Yao could be this angry?

His cold evil face has a faint laughter, his body is leaning on sofa, not slow not in hurry, said: "That's my business. While you, with what kind of status questioned me?"

What... Status? Ha, earlier she knew that she shouldn't bring out this topic, after said it only to ashamed herself? He only spoke one words, she has already being speechless. After all, from the beginning her relationship with him is so unequal. Thinking to this point, Yao Yao is helplessly pressed down her anger to her heart, clenched into fist: "Using the status as your lawyer, can't I? I have told you, you together with her there won't be any benefit for you, if you are not break up with her, just replaced me! I really can't help you anymore."

Finally the thing that never expected to be happened, it has happened.

At the beginning Yu Ao Tian still wanted to play vague expression, but after listened to Yao Yao last words, he is raging to the point he smashed all the tea cups into floor. "You are angry to me, because you think, Shang Yun Yin might affect my future career?"

"That's right!"

"Humph." Yu Ao Tian lets out cold humphed, he finds out lately he is more sentimental, he even thought little thing raged because or perhaps...

Takes deep breathe, expressionless he stood up: "Can I assume just now you are trying to threaten me with your words?"

Threaten? no, it isn't threaten.

But.... Although in order to cover up the fact, but just now her words were indeed filled with threaten. She knows very well due to Yu Ao Tian's character he won't accept himself being threaten with this, but she really hopes, this moment he could weaken little bit, step back little bit, break up with Shang Yun Yin...

That gleam eyes are facing to Yu Ao Tian gloomy eyes, she coldly said: "It up to you how to think it! Now, please you get out!!!"

"Little Thing, are you mistaken something? This is my house!" this is his first time being chased out by woman!

"But last time when you were asking me to stay here, you said in the future if both of us are quarreling, I stay and you are out!!"

"You!!!" after he listened to this word, simply to say Yu Ao Tian is raged to the point his face turned to be green, purple, he really wanted to strangle this smooth talker little thing! But at sudden, he only can grit his teeth, laughed: "Very good." turned his back, 'Bang' a sound, door being slammed the door, left....

Not long after Yu Ao Tian left, Yao Yao sits down in frustration. "How can thing turn to be like this?"

She had felt that herself little bit odd from the beginning, as if a wife who being cheated by her husband.

Things must not go to be this point, mustn't it? With what kind point of view she angered at him? Is it because she as Yu Ao Tian's lawyer, this status?

No!

This time, Yao Yao knows very well her feeling that unwillingly to see Yu Ao Tian together with Shang Yun Yin, it isn't because...

Shang Yun Yin could affect Yu Ao Tian's future career, but simply it because her personal mixed feeling.

'knock knock knock' (knocking sound)

Yu Ao Tian left and went to Long's brother home.

Long Ye is opened the door, his face is exposing devilish expression: "Being chased out?"

"ahem..." his face is tighten, pretending to be calm, pulling the necktie which in his neck: "I just forgot to bring my key."

"Oh... So you mean, you wanted to stay with us?"

# Part 2 (Two)

#### Yu Ao Tian, you get lost

"En."

"Welcomed." Long Ye is giving a way by moved aside, let Yu Ao Tian to get in, he is slowly locked the room, smiled: "Oh yeah, Ao Tian, you must know, our apartment soundproof... Never been good."

"....." Yu Ao Tian can feel that as if a sword stabbed on his back, he is gritting his teeth, hurried changed the topic: "I am tired, I go to have rest first."

"Oh, go. Actually Ao Tian... Little Girl is simply jealous, can't you feel it?"

"....." it seems this apartment soundproof really such bad, even Long Ye who stayed at the second room could hear their arguing. "How can I feel her wings are already firm?"

"Little girl, when there is no feeling naturally she will consider many things, but once she has already had a bit of feeling, she won't think too much."

Regarding to Long Ye, Yu Ao Tian really to ignorant, because both of them were quarreling not loudly, so that he thought Long Ye didn't know the reason Yao Yao pissed off.

But....

There is a saying said that those who are closely cannot see clearly, the close distant between Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao are seem not aware by both of them, the subtle changes in their relationship, while the spectator (outsider) who stayed close with them could see it so clearly...

Berson Group, Legal Division.

"Supervisor Xu, thank your help."

"Xiao Luo, if later on there is thing you are not understand you can come to find me and ask, it is okay."

"En." This is the first time for Yao Yao to take an initiative to discuss something with Supervisor Xu, since she was hastily becoming Yu Ao Tian's lawyer, basically everyday she is badly busy, so she didn't have time to say hello to her colleagues. If this time she didn't encounter difficult case, perhaps she won't have any chance to talk with this experienced supervisor Xu.

"Supervisor Xu, I take my leave first."

"En."

Walking out from Supervisor Xu's office room, Yao Yao lightly sigh a sigh of relief, after went through quiet night, she has understood.

Not long ago she was Yu Ao Tian's lover, although now she stills his lover, but now she is slowly looking for herself value. There is completely no need because of hot-headed for a while and also her sadness she lost this kind of best opportunity.

Moreover, although Yu Ao Tian is reconciled with Shang Yun Yin, it really can affect his career future but that's his decision. This is proven that he likes Shang Yun Yin so that he still has something with her\*.

If now she is blindly separating both of them, she might look as someone so despicable.

Moreover, if Yu Ao Tian is really broke up with Shang Yun Yin, what advantage she will get? After all, she clearly understood, between she and Yu Ao Tian there is no good ending, also she knows that he is someone who won't belong to any woman!

If she thinks by this way, suddenly she realized although Yu Ao Tian reconciled with Shang Yun Yin, actually this isn't bad thing too.

"Are you who named Luo Yao Yao?" suddenly a voice cut off her flowing mind.

#### Note:

\*] 藕Ou 断 Duan 丝 Si 连 Lian: literally = the lotus root is broken, but threads still connect the two pieces lotus root is a tuberous plant, with lots of threads. Therefore, when you break it, a number of thread will still be attached.

The idiom meaning: the ties are severed but not completely, to still have a thing for somebody, to still pine for somebody.

<b>253</b> <i>P</i>
---------------------

# Part 1 (One)

#### **Yao Yao's Status Being Questioned**

Quickly Yao Yao turned and took a look, she realized in front of her are two women and one man. "Yes. Hello."

"Haha, we are yours colleagues. Since your coming, you keep staying on your office room, we are also feel not good if going to disturb you. Actually we are always thinking to throw you welcoming party."

Cold sweat.

She really never thought that the colleagues in legal division are such passionate. "I am sorry, really sorry, I have so many cases in my hands, so that I..."

"En, we knew it. Oh yeah, how old are you?"One of the female lawyer is looking her with measuring glance.

Today, Yao Yao is wearing casual clothes, moreover she does not put any makeup, so that her face is completely looked alike baby face. In order to avoid others suspicion, hurried she said, "I, I am 24 years old."

"24 years old?" few of the lawyers are exchanging their glances: "Haha, when you were just arrived we thought you are at your twenty, but now compare with first time, never thought you are 24 years, you really good in taking care your skin."

"Hahahaha." Yao Yao is awkwardly laughing.

Few of the lawyer that exchanged their glances, one of the female lawyer turned her eyes, trying to dig something, asked: "Oh yeah, which university did you graduate from? What type of lawyer license do you have?"

"Ah? She stills a student, moreover regarding to her lawyer license, it is something that she could not mention... "I, I had graduated from First University. I only have beginner lawyer license from Government."

"Only beginner lawyer license?" when Yao Yao told them, few of lawyers at the moment they seem to lose interest of her: "Ha, I thought you have at least Senior Lawyer License from Government. So you just have beginner license!!"

Every profession there will be comparison among them, even for the lawyer there is no exceptional. Under the normal circumstances the national lawyer's license and world class lawyer license qualification are equally divided at same level. It also divided into beginner, intermediate and Senior, those who has Senior (advance / high) license is considered as someone awesome. While for the beginner license it is completely newbie. So that few of them are looking down at Yao Yao.

"Haha, Later if there is something that I don't understand, I still need to learn from you guys."

"Geez, I don't have time to take student, I am so busy." that woman talked with cold-shoulder tone, while her eyes are glancing at the woman beside her: "You can ask Miss Song to help you, she is nation intermediate lawyer."

"Forget it, are you trying to mock at me? In our company most of the lawyer are those who hold nation advance license?

Still ask me to teach? I really afraid to be laughing stock."

"Who will laugh at you? Ah Song, as Junior Lawyer (beginner license holder), she even entered our company, your position has upgraded to one level."

"Heh, speak frankly it such weird, this is the first time our company accepting junior lawyer, this newbie."

"That's right." both of the women are having chit chat, as if both of them are purposely wanted to let Yao Yao heard it, act as if completely forgetting her presence.

An instantaneous Yao Yao can feel that they are not welcomed her, so that she only can secretly left.

There is no way, it seems something called as self-interest this thing really available, someone who have status will be respected, someone who does not have any will be despised.

Huh....

"Aiya, aiya, I even thought that little girl perhaps has advance license so that being valued-highly by CEO Yu, you guys say, she is Junior lawyer, how can she being accepted by CEO Yu?" seeing Yao Yao had already left, two women and one men, three of them are starting to gossip.

"Who knows, I also curious. Does she come from big background?"

"You may know that our CEO Yu, so far he never used people based on their background, he only valued their capability."

"Cut it off, but if that little girl is someone who related to CEO Yu, 'have special relation'?"

"En? Will she possible...." thinking to this point, few of them are laughing with mocking...

# Part 2 (Two)

### Yao Yao's Status Being Questioned

When it is lunch time, Yao Yao is stretching her body, tidying up her working desk and preparing herself to go to have lunch.

"Aish, wait wait..." when she is arrived in elevator, the elevator is slowly closed the door, she is quickly trying to enter it.

Actually her colleagues have obviously seen Yao Yao who was dashing to enter the elevator but they decided to ignore her and let the elevator to close the door, not waiting for her.

Did they do it... On purpose? Yao Yao is standing in front the elevator dumbstruck.

But at this time, suddenly the elevator door is opened.

It seems she has thought too much, perhaps her colleagues hadn't reacted, she smiles intending to thank them but her eyes spotted someone, that person is... Wang Han.

"Little girl, we meet again."

"Regional Director Wang?" she takes big step getting into the elevator, politely she smiles: "Actually not long ago I joined the company, I have intention to come to your room greeted you, but recently I was so busy, hence..."

"It's okay." Wang Han smiles elegantly, but his eyes are looked at few lawyer from legal division: "just now, didn't few of you hear Yao Yao asked for the elevator, waited her for moment?"

Few of the lawyer are exchanging their glances, they are tightlipped: Regional Director Wang, we really didn't hear it, we weren't doing it on purpose not give her an elevator."

"Well, why I could hear her although I also stood inside the elevator?" this year Wang Han is almost in his forty, he types of men who won't seek for problem but

he also a man with temperament. Yao Yao is growing up with face that easy to be bullied, if no one stand for her, afraid later she will have difficulties mingle in legal division.

"Regional Director Wang..." at beside Yao Yao showed her difficulty expression while shaking her head toward Wang Han, she understood Wang Han intention, but really the result won't give any benefit to anyone. Moreover, this isn't something big matter.

"Fiuh." Wang Han takes deep breathe, helplessly he shook his head.

By this time, the elevator stop at cafeteria. "Little Girl, I go to have my lunch."

"En, Regional Director Wang, see you again." Yao Yao is getting out from elevator after Wang Han.

Left few of the colleagues from legal division who looks each other. "Did you guys hear their conversation? That girl seems ever worked in Berson before?"

"It seems so. Sst... She knows Regional Director Wang, moreover his position isn't low, but inside the high management there aren't many youngsters."

"That's don't know. Perhaps she is someone's relatives. It seems this little girl indeed has big background."

"Let her be, as long as not interfere each other, she doesn't provoke me, once she provoke me, I don't care whoever she is." few of colleagues are talking while get inside the cafeteria. They are choosing place near to the window. And then, by coincidence Yao Yao is sitting in pair table.

Not long after that, Long Ye hurried sat down in front of her.

"Hey, Hey, see, General Manager Long." few of the lawyer are pointing at Yao Yao secretly, while some of the lower management employees also glanced over and focus on Yao Yao.

After all, someone alike Long Ye who is coming from top management usually eat in private room or eating out, it so rare to spot them in cafeteria, naturally it's drawing out attention.

# Part 1 (One)

#### Being Hit by Long Ye's Girlfriend

"Xiao Meng Li, last night when you were quarreling with Ao Tian, did you say something too over?" Long Ye asked with stern face.

She dumbfounded, how could General Manager Long know both of them were quarreling yesterday? "It seems I did..."

"What did you tell Ao Tian?"

"What happened? General Manager Long." seeing Long Ye worried face, she can feel some bad premonition.

"Today after we done with the meeting, Ao Tian was asking me to meet him personally, asked me to tell you, all the cases that handle by you must be given to Supervisor Xu."

"What?" does this mean Yu Ao Tian is going to replace her?

'If you aren't breaking up with her, just replace me!'

Ha, that's right, it seems yesterday she told him so, actually when she said this word, she had already guessed the result.

Really regret, it clear enough that Yu Ao Tian isn't afraid of any threatening, she really does not know how high sky is and how thick land is, she even dared to say such thing, is it comfortable now? She just found out her value but immediately it gone.

But....

This is also clearly proven the decision already decided by Yu Ao Tian, isn't it?

"Okay, I understood, later I will going to do the handover process." Yao Yao is forcing herself to give a smile.

But Long Ye sees her eyes are little bit moist: "Xiao Meng Li, you don't need in hurry to do handover process, let me have my lunch first and then I will going to check once again with Ao Tian."

"There is no need to check, General Manager Long, it not like you don't know Yu Ao Tian character who never said two after he said one. He said that he wanted to replace me, he must be replaced me, hahahaha."

"But it also not certain yet. You wait for me, I am going to take some food, I haven't had any since morning."

"Okay." her eyes are looking at Long Ye back who is leaving, the smile in her face gradually disappeared.

Actually during this time when she becoming Yu Ao Tian's lawyer, it can be said as one of the most wonderful time she ever had with Yu Ao Tian, she didn't need to think about herself status as Yu Ao Tian's lover, also she could show her strength proven that she came to help Yu Ao Tian.

But now...

Ha, even if Cinderella will have been hit back to the original shape after some of time, and so what with her? What kind of status is that kind of status, there is no way to change of it.

"Are you who called as Luo Yao Yao?" suddenly, in front of dine table two beautiful women are showing up.

Yao Yao lifts up her head, she is measuring both of the women, they don't have work permit card, they aren't company's employees. "Who are you?"

"I asked you, are you Luo Yao Yao or not?" one of the women are talking so fiercely.

She nodding her head: "En. Yes. You guys looking me for..."

'pa' (slap sound)

Without waiting Yao Yao to finish her words, one of the women has already slapped her.

Five finger print in Yao Yao's face, she is dumbstruck. While that scenery is shocked people who having lunch inside the cafeteria, all the focus goes there.

"Two Misses, what are you doing? Yao Yao didn't give them face, stood up,

pissed off glared at both of them.

"What am I doing? You are born naturally as slut that's why must be hit!" after said, both of the women are pulling Yao Yao's hair, one of them are constantly kicking her.

All the employees who see the commotion are completely dumbstruck, they really not understand what is going on with the situation?

"Stop, both of you stop!" Yao Yao has already rolled on the floor, her mouth corner is bleed, her hair and clothes have been savaged by those two absurd women, she in mess.

"Stop? You little slut speaking quite strong! Today if I don't give you good lesson, perhaps you may don't know how to be human!!!" after said, one of the fierce woman kicked on Yao Yao's stomach.

# Part 2 (Two)

#### Being Hit by Long Ye's Girlfriend

Few of the security men speedily arrived, hurried to stop them: "Two Misses, please have self-respect, this is a company, if both of you are not going to leave, we will going to call police."

"Self-respect? Ha!" one of the women laughed with disdain tone, swaying away the one of the security's hand, suddenly grabbed at Yao Yao's hair: "Let me tell all of you, this slut, she is third wheel! Is Berson having specialize in nurturing this kind of mistress to seduce others boyfriend's? Asked about self-respect, or must she the one who has self-respect first?"

At the beginning Yao Yao who still raging suddenly her face changed whitepale, so pale, she is looking that two women with shocking expression, are both of them... Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend?

"What? Little slut, had a guilty conscience? Keep yourself arrogant, aren't you just depend on your innocent face to seduce others boyfriend's, are you? Well, now I will let your face cannot lift to meet others!!" after said, both of the women continued hitting her.

Few of the security men who have seen, hurried to stop them.

"So she is third wheel?"

"Such disgusting, the most hatred third wheel."

"Ha, just as I had said before, this Luo Yao Yao isn't what kind of good thing, being mistress, really want to know whose mistress she is, even being hunted to here, such embarrassing."

Those employees who see the commotion, at the beginning was quite surprised when found out the reason but then they were happily looked at her, those ridicules voices piercing into Yao Yao's ear.

This kind of feeling, it so resemble with the feeling when she was ridicule by students during at school, this kind of ashamed, no self-respect feeling.

Ah, she has already could not mingle in school, it seems she also cannot stay at Berson anymore, right?

Shouldn't, she shouldn't being Yu Ao Tian's lover, when she took this step, she had thought about this kind of ending before.

But... Although she had thought about this kind of ending, in order for her Grandpa medication fee, was there any turning back for her?

"What are you doing?" suddenly Long Ye shouted at that group of people.

That woman who is constantly kicking Yao Yao immediately stopped: "Ye!! Is she the person? Currently you always have phone call with?" the woman is pulled Yao Yao's hair, with hatred she pointed at her face.

At that moment, Yao Yao finally gained herself, so that this woman is... Long Ye's girlfriend?

"Oh, so that she is General Manager Long's... Mistress?" some of the employees are said with cold tone, and then they are pretending as if seen nothing and keep on eating their lunch.

"Ha, I have said, Luo Yao Yao background just unexpectedly not simple, just as predicted she is depended on connection to enter Legal Division, or else, due to her beginner license how can she work in here?" those legal division employees are secretly laughing at her when they know the truth.

"No wonder recently General Manager Long keeps coming to legal division looking for her, so this is the reason."

"Shi Lin, are your brain damaged?" Long Ye expression darken, he tossed away the plate full of food, rushed in front of the woman, at sudden grabbed her hand: "Let off!"

"I won't!!! Ye, this few days you are keep phoning this Luo Yao Yao, sending messages, you dare to say there is nothing between you two?"

# Part 1 (One)

#### They are Worry about Her

Indeed recently Yao Yao is sending messages to Long Ye, having phone calls, but all because they are doing thing for Yu Ao Tian, so that they are contacting closer little bit. Impossible because of this, this woman has suspicion that she might have relationship with General Manager Long?

"She is only one of my employees! I am contacting her because of the company matter!" in front of many people, Long Ye can't say much, if there is no one, he won't be such patience to talk this much nonsense with this woman?

"Company's matter? Ha, talking about company matter, could it spend for entire night? You think that I didn't know that both of you are living together, this matter!!!"

"Uh...." when this woman said, inside the cafeteria indistinct noises coming from.

Actually what the woman said wasn't wrong, Yao Yao indeed staying at the same apartment with Long Ye.

"You followed me?"

"Long Ye, this is because you forced me!! I have gave everything you want, but you are betraying me at my back!!!" the woman voice is raising.

Long Ye is clenched his hand hard into fist and showing his nerves: "Let me tell you once again, I don't have any relationship with Luo Yao Yao except works matter!!"

"I don't believe, I don't believe!~"

'Creak, creak' it is a gesture as if bone moving.

Yao Yao clearly knows and also can feel Long Ye is almost exploded, but once he exploded, no matter he will quarreling with this woman or hit this woman, it won't benefit anyone in here! After all, this place has too many pairs of eyes. She is using her strength to bit her lips, grabbed the chance when that woman

trying to reason herself to Long Ye, at sudden she released her own hair from that woman's hand: "Are both of you enough?"

"You this little slut!" after said, this woman is trying to lift her hand high.

She is steady firm catch that woman's hand, shouted: "Miss! If you are doing slanderous accusations, be careful I will going to sue you doing slanderous accusations, the thief caught dirty, caught the cheating must in pair, what evidence do you have saying that I have relationship with General Manager Long? Both of us are staying at same apartment but not staying together at one room, understood? See how you looked now, simply to say exactly alike bitch, embarrassed to death!" after said, she swayed her hand and left....

Although the woman felt unsatisfied, she intending to catch up but she was stopped by Long Ye: "Shi Ling, I have words with you, come!"

These three persons have such complicated relationship, if Long Ye doesn't know Yao Yao, perhaps Yao Yao isn't

Yu Ao Tian's woman, he really wanted to break up with this woman immediately, but if he really break up in front of these people, the situation would be turned as if Long Ye really has relationship with Yao Yao, only to bold the relationship between them.

Either Long Ye or Yao Yao, this woman has nurse a grievance for both of them!!

Leaving the cafeteria Yao Yao didn't come back to her office, but she directly rushing out from Berson, although she had put on the meaning of her words at last minutes, but it not like she didn't notice those contempt sight surrounded her.

Embarrassed, so embarrassed!

This is the ending for the third wheel! The lover ending!

Although her relationship with Long Ye are innocent, but no matter what there is no way to change the reality she is other lover!!~

Arrived at hotel near the company, she randomly check in one room, after she entered, she covered herself with guilt and crying.

She cried not because she felt difficult and also not because she got hit, but because holding the feeling of doing wrong, she is venting out her feeling of

oing wrong which buried inside her heart, she really being torment because over status for such long time, really for long time!

# Part 2 (Two)

#### They are Worry about Her

'kring, kring, kring' (phone ringing tone)

Her mobile phone is keep on ringing, all are Long Ye's phone call. She didn't pick it, but she similar to ostrich keep on hiding inside the quilt, she wrapped herself tight, perhaps by doing this way she could feel little bit secure feeling.

'beep...beep,' the phone ring tone is replaced by messages notification tone.

For long time, she takes her mobile phone and glance for while, the total of missed call were 48 times and 36 messages.

Read the messages, one by one.

'Xiao Meng Li, where are you? Pick the phone!'

'That woman has been punished by me, you pick the phone!'

'My little ancestor, I almost worried to death, please reply my message!!'

'I begging you, my Great aunty (slang word), if something happened to you, I might be killed by Ao Tian!!!'

Yu Ao Tian...

Ha, can't be estimated with whomever he with now.

Yao Yao is laughing with disdainful expression, continuing to read her phone messages, suddenly Yu Ao Tian's name pop out in her vision line.

```
'pick the phone.'

'where are you?'

'Luo Yao Yao, you hurry pick the phone!'

'You damn mother fucker hurry pick my phone call!!'

'Little Thing, don't let me to find you!'
```

And the next, all are messages from Yu Ao Tian, furthermore one by one the messages are filled with strong words. Looking at that 48 missed calls, ten were Long Ye's and the rest were Yu Ao Tian's phone calls! Yu Ao Tian, he...

'Creak' (sound)

Big door that shut tight suddenly opened. Without waiting for Yao Yao to gain herself, she has seen Yu Ao Tian dashing inside.

Yu Ao Tian who is facing with countless matter always act calm, but today it is so obvious he looked such fluster, his breathing is rough, standing in front of her, his expression is filled with anger.

Yao Yao is nervous grabbed the quilt corner, he... Did he angry? Was it because she not picked his phone call?

In her absent-minded state, Yu Ao Tian has already rushed two steps in front of her. At next second, he pulled her into his embraces: "You!!! Really makes me so worried to death...."

Not see his face expression, but Yao Yao clearly heard when he spoke the last words and he has taken long breathe.

While his pair of big hand keeps on hugging her tightly, as if afraid she will be disappeared in seconds.

He, worries? Did he worry about her?

Yao Yao is giving herself mocking laugh, strangely her nose runny and feel sour, she realized she lives in such lowly life, only when she heard Yu Ao Tian consideration words, after all she feels that happy? Really lowly!

"Next time, no mater what happen in the future, you are not allowed not to pick my phone calls, understood?" for very long time, finally Yu Ao Tian loosen her from his embrace, using strong speaking tone to emphasizes his words.

"En." she replied him by nodding her head, but that pair of dark eyes has slightly bright gleam.

"You!!" Yu Ao Tian who has high sensitiveness must can feel her ignorant attitude when replying at him, this is his first time for worrying a woman, but he

even got such replied, simply to say his mood is such terrible! But...

He understood very well why Little Thing could act this way!

His deep pair of eyes are looking around, this is not quite big or small hotel bedroom, he took a TV remote which in bed-head, quickly he turned on the TV.

Yao Yao is little bit not understood with meaning behind his gestures, but at next minutes...

'This time pornographic video is continuing ferment (causing commotion), according to the user searching, the female lead is First University student who is in her third Year, her name is Shang Yun Yin, her father is someone has mafia background.'

After listened to the news reported headline, Yao Yao dimming eyes suddenly flashed, suddenly lifts her head up glancing to TV....

# Part 1 (One)

#### **Misunderstood Settled**

In the news reported, when the video being played on screen, although the male and female lead are being mosaic when doing that, but at one glance Yao Yao had recognized the place, that place was the hotel room which booked by Yu Ao Tian and Shang Yun Yin.

Her heart tighten, faster she looked at Yu Ao Tian: "That man was you?"

"......" after heard these words, Yu Ao Tian almost dropped down the remote control to the floor from his hand, how can this little thing being such slow? "Heh, Bao Bei, do you think that I am such shameless to that point? Being the male lead and even recorded this sort of thing, and then sent it out by myself to the Television Station? And also now I am watching the video with you?"

"Are you schemed (get trapped) by others?"

"....." now he really wanted to give this brat a slap!

"Little Thing, we have been together for sometime now, you take look carefully, does that man posture similar with mine?"

"What do you mean by?" she doubted blinking her eyes.

Yu Ao Tian's face is darkening, suddenly he pressed her down to bed: "It seems that I need to recall your memory about my body posture!"

"Don't... No!! Wait!!" wait wait... Nervously Yao Yao trying to calm down her mess up moods, perhaps this thing is coming too sudden, so that she does not prepare herself to examine it.

But at this moment it seems she gained herself: "You wanted to say, this man wasn't you, but other man? Shang Yun Yin was doing it with another man.... Being recorded and then the recording...sent to... TV station?" this mean, that day nothing was happened between Shang Yun Yin and Yu Ao Tian? "Why you did it?"

"You say?"

Staring at Yu Ao Tian pair of deep eyes, she dumbfounded blinking her eyes, but the next seconds.... "The person who made me not able to lift up my head at school was...Shang Yun Yin?"

This speculation appear as if she too narcissist toward herself?

But... It just happened Yu Ao Tian asked why she didn't go to school yesterday, after that she received Shang Yun Yin short message, and today Shang Yun Yin's pornographic video being viral by helped of media

Did Yu Ao Tian do all these things only to help her to vent out her frustration and also give Shang Yun Yin a lesson?

Yao Yao is impatiently waiting for his answer.

Not long after that, Yu Ao Tian heave a sigh, slowly he stand up from her body, facing with her and nodded: "That's right."

"So why yesterday you didn't..." her words hanging half, Yao Yao gulped it back, suddenly she remembered, this damn man is born naturally dislike to speak much nonsense with woman, furthermore giving an explanation!

But the problem is, he didn't explain, but how can other know the truth? At last, the thing had gone to such mess!

"Little Thing, you must believe in me!" at sudden, Yu Ao Tian expression changed to be so serious, staring at her pair of eyes.

This is the first time, first time for her to see a gleam of light in Yu Ao Tian's pair of eyes, does her eyes have problem?

This man no matter what he done his pair of eyes always deep pitch dark without bottom, no one can guess what his thought. But now, this pair of eyes actually shines a faint sheen sincere.

"It's not I don't believe in you, but since the beginning...You never gave me a chance to believe in you! While you...

Never believe on me too, am I right?"

Between both of them, everything is started from misunderstanding, together

without any feeling, so it is so impossible to have faith and believe in each others!

"Alright. Since this day, let we start all over!"

Start... All over? What this... Mean?

Strangely, suddenly Yao Yao feels her heart having faint excitement, but at same time she is afraid to know the meaning behind Yu Ao Tian's words, but also she is expecting the true behind these words, such complicated.

Don't try to find it! Don't try to find the meaning behind the words, Yu Ao Tian isn't a man that she afford to have relationship with, he isn't! No! No!, her six sense tells Yao Yao, once thing happened, the ending and result isn't something she can bear, she really afraid, so scared to have man and woman relationship with Yu Ao Tian.

# Part 2 (Two)

#### **Misunderstood Settled**

'knock knock knock' (knocking sound)

When the atmosphere kind of frozen, suddenly the knocking sound of the door has broken the silent between them, Long Ye pushed open the door: "Ao Tian, how long will you keep punish me to stand in front of the door?"

Yu Ao Tian is glancing at Yao Yao who beside him, with devilish smiles: "You ask her."

With her moisten eyes she stared at Yu Ao Tian, it seems what he said before only a joke, there is no such meaning behind it, perhaps?

Luckily General Manager Long is knocking the door and broke this tensed atmosphere, or else she really doesn't know what to do.

"My little ancestor, during the lunch time... I am so sorry." Long Ye felt guilty, bend down his body, bend toward the bedside, looking at her.

"General Manager Long, you don't need to say sorry to me, I know the commotion during the lunch time actually nothing to do with you."

"That's right! Still you are more sensible!" Long Ye let heave sighed of relief as if heavy burden has taken out, stood straight, clapping his hands...

Another second, two men in black suit show up, pressing down a woman whom body is stained with blood, walking inside. "Kneel down."

Although, the woman has been hit until her face swollen, but from the clothes she wears, Yao Yao at one glances still can recognize that woman as Long Ye's girl friend. "General Manager Long, you, this?"

"Still not hurry apologized!" this time there is not many pairs of eyes see, Long Ye does not care about his image, he shouted fiercely toward the woman who is kneeling in the floor.

"I am so sorry, I am so sorry, Miss Luo, I just know that you are CEO Yu's

girlfriend, it was my fault to mistaken you, I am really sorry."

This woman is girlfriend that Long Ye dated not long ago, she simply thought that Long Ye is only General Manager of Berson Group, but now she has found out the bad sided of Long Ye!

"Forget it, it's okay." Yao Yao is forced to smile.

But Yu Ao Tian who is beside her can feel and see her sadness expression.

"Asked her to get lost!" Yu Ao Tian spoke coldly.

Two men in black suit give respect-bend and then take the woman to leave the place.

"Yao Yao, I had broken up with this woman, if you are still not comfortable, just tell Long Ye Ge Ge (Brother Long Ye), Long Ye Ge Ge——-will help you to vent it out." Said Long Ye with gentle tone.

Yu Ao Tian who is sitting beside looking him with dagger eyesight: "Sweet-talk?"

"Look what are you saying Ao Tian, I have seen Xiao Meng Li as my little sister since the beginning. Am I right? Yao Yao."

"Haha." Yao Yao smiles sweetly, actually except the first time when they met, that first time when General Manager Long teasing (make fun of her) her, other than that time he always treating her well, furthermore judging from his age, becoming her older brother indeed quite well-to-do. "General Manager Long..."

"Still call me General Maanger Long?" Long Ye is pretending to show his unhappy expression.

Yu Ao Tian rolled his eyes, extending his hand to touch her shoulder, sneered: "Just called him Long Ye."

"Ao Tian! You this brat!!!"

Seeing both of them bantering, once again she can feel there are sort of warm and harmony atmosphere between them. And also who will know, normally both of these men are looked so aloof, actually in privately they also have an ordinary people's side? This side of them are able to give fascinating and also charming more people and also give more human's touch.

## Part 1 (One)

#### Long Ye's Love Toward Mo Xue Tong

	"Long Ye Ge Ge."
	"En?"
	"Don't you like Miss Mo? Why are you still dating with another woman?"
	"" Long Ye never thought Yao Yao would suddenly ask this question,
r	ne turned his gaze to look at Yu Ao Tian.
Υ	u Ao Tian also never thought Yao Yao would ask this question, hurried avoid

Long Ye's gaze, turned away his head, his expression as if said... This matter is none of my business.

"Hehehehe... Yao Yao, likes is likes, but both of us never dating, while I am a normal man, you, understand right?"

Although... Understood....

It means that Long Ye loves Miss Mo (one-sided love), and then because of 'the necessity', so that he would date any woman?

Ha, she recalled not long ago when Li Ruo Ting blamed her, she was vaguely revealed this signal, so that was the reason why Feng Chen Yi overstepped the bounds, because she could not satisfy him.

Do all the men type of creature who are thinking more with their lower part?

How about Yu Ao Tian? No Li Mei Yun and now also no Shang Yun Yin, while she also cannot give him anything regarding 'that thing', will he have another woman later?

Thinking to this point, there is slightly feared flashing in Yao Yao's eyes. Because what Long Ye's girlfriend did just now, really affected her, she really afraid if one day Yu Ao Tian's woman would come to find her, and then the result perhaps worst than now.

"Alright, I won't disturb both of you, I leave first." after said, Long Ye has gone

and left them.

But his words was something irresponsible, it completely make the atmosphere between Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian turned to be so awkward. Provoking her little heart, 'thump thump' beat so fast.

"You must be still so angry with that woman who hit you, right?"

Ah? This word said by Yu Ao Tian gives her head feeling numb, lifts her head up, she looked at his bottomless eyes, it gives her cold-shivering feeling.

That is such scary eyesight, if now she replied him 'yes', this word, and then would he...

Yao Yao knows more or less regarding to Yu Ao Tian's character, she afraid if she nodded her head, the next morning that woman's body might being in street!

"That, why are you asking?"

"Just now when that woman apologized, your eyes expression was kind of odd."

Haha, Yu Ao Tian indeed has great observation skill, if her heart just little bit has a wave, he might be able to detect it (feel it)? But...

Although he guessed it right but this time he is mistaken about the reason!

"I really didn't anger her anymore, but... It is more... Problem of myself."

"En?"

"Actually..." she gulped her saliva, taking deep breathe, trying to recall all the scenery which happened in company and also her feeling. "You think carefully, if that woman wasn't Long Ye Ge Ge's girlfriend, but... She was yours, today she dashed to company hit me, the ending would not this easy, coming in front me and apologized?"

Talking to this point, slowly Yao Yao's eyes gazing down, her eyes cannot restrain her emotion, the layer of mist in her eyes: "When first time she showed up in front of me, moreover when she hit me, I was extremely angry, so pissed off, the woman was giving me a feeling as if she was crazy bitch. But at the moment she yelled me as Third wheel, I really thought she as your girl friend. An

instantaneous I felt I was such in wrong, furthermore so afraid, scared..."

Isn't the person who experienced this kind of thing would not know how her feeling, her helplessness, those surrounded eyes that see her with disdainful eyesight, women were hubbub, simply to say she hated herself and wanted to find a pillar—-smashed her head and go die, really too embarrassed, so embarrassed, after all today society isn't that open-minded which able to give Lover and third wheel a little space.

#### 257 B



For me Long Ye is someone cool and smooth-talker, he is good negotiator, sweet, romantic, flexible, very fast to adapt with new environment. Compare to Long Qi and Han Li Shang, Long Ye is calmer and sensible but also warm and gentle though he also can be so rude in some cases.

Someone alike Long Ye may live in such easy going life but actually, inside his sunshine man character, deep inside him there is insecurity feeling and also sense of inferiority.

When I translated this chapter, it recalled the feeling of helpless. I heart Long Ye, I understood the helpless feeling that he felt, no matter how he worked hard for getting Xue Tong attention, that ice princess never looked at him.

#### Part 2 (Two)

## Long Ye's Love Toward Mo Xue Tong

Yu Ao Tian who is sitting at bed side staring at her dim eyes, he wasn't there when that thing happened, also he could not feel her mood, but this moment, from her eyesight he could see the fear and helplessness which she experienced. That deep pair and bottomless eyes measuring by seeing her face, the wounds in her body, slowly Yu Ao Tian is extending his hands, touch her bruise eyes corner with affection....

"sssh..." (sound of enduring pain)

Yao Yao cannot help herself to inhale one cold air.

Seeing from her bitter expression, these wounds aren't only left in her face but also inside her heart. "You, are you such caring with your status?"

"Haha." she helplessly smiles, curled up his pair of leg, her hands are tightly hugged it, prop her chin, slowly said: "If I don't care of it impossible for me not dared to go to school, moreover after I experienced such thing, I was running away and hiding in here."

Since gone out from Berson, until in the street, she felt as if everyone eyesight filled with disdain glance, as if everyone could see her status as Lover, despised her, looking down at her, the kind feeling of guilty conscience, she really felt it for such long time, too long...

"Huh." Yu Ao Tian sees her difficulty expression, sighed, and then takes out his mobile phone, dialed a phone number:

"Xue Tong, go to my safety box and then take the third document send it to Rui Sen Hotel which is next door of the company, room number 403."

Yao Yao absent-minded looked at him, Yu Ao Tian... What is he doing?

Rui Sen Hotel Entrance.

After Mo Xue Tong takes the document she walks faster, constantly moving forward to the hotel room which Yu Ao Tian told her, but when she just entered the big entrance, just in time Long Ye is walking out.

Both of them are exchanging their eyesight, Mo Xue Tong is hugging tightly the document she held, hurried avoided his eyesight and passed him.

But at the moment both of them passing each other, suddenly Long Ye grabbed her wrist: "Are you planning to use this kind of attitude to face me for your entire life?"

Mo Xue Tong expressionless looking to far away, after sometime, that cold eyes are slowly looking at him: "This is what you seek for!"

"That's right, this is what I seek for, I seek for..." Long Ye laughed mocking himself, but next second, his good looking face dimmer, whispering: "But whom changed me to this point?!!!"

Regarding to what he said, It is so obviously Mo Xue Tong doesn't think so: "This is your problem!"

"My problem? Mo Xue Tong, are you really wanted to force me to go crazy?" since Long Ye was in his tenth he has already mingled in this society, there was no matter that he could not solve. His character is such smooth, meeting human talk in human way, meeting ghost talk in ghost way, so that in Yu Long group, his nickname is 'diplomat'.

But Mo Xue Tong, only her, a person he cannot deal with, no matter with what kind of attitude he used to deal with her, she always answer him with her coldness!

"Long Ye, you must really to take a look your current self now, how failure you as person! You even couldn't watch your woman, even let her came to company to make commotion and done such embarrassed things. I see, your craziness is none of my business."

Staring at that pair of eyes which filled with disdain eyesight, since the day he met this woman who seems could not be burn with passionate, the way she

looks at him always this kind of eyesight.

That's right, compare to Yu Ao Tian who has the ability to control the result, very obvious he is such lacking; compare to Han Li Shang who has high education background, he only someone who learnt everything by himself. And also compare to the family background of them, he is only a little scoundrel who roaming in the streets.

# Part 1 (One)

Regarding of Mo Xue Tong, she is princess from Japanese Royal Family, although her family was in straitened circumstances, stranding in ordinary people's place, but she always been in that high, aloof and splendid. In front of her, who is he? Although now he has everything, but in her eyes, forever he is always that lowly scoundrel, little scoundrel, that's all.

"Hahahahaha." Long Ye is laughing mocked at himself, slowly he loosen up her hand: "Since the day you know me, didn't I kind of failure person? Anyway, no matter how I work hard, in your eyes Mo Xue Tong... I just this kind of person!" after said, he turned and left.

Mo Xue Tong is coldly stared at his back and left, without any emotion turned back while he had left...

#### **Hotel Bedroom**

"Bao Bei, come, let me help you to take care the wounds." Yu Ao Tian from the hotel room toilet found a medicine box, he takes out the potion (liquid medicine alike betadine), gently he applies that potion to her wounds in her face.

The distant between her face with this good looking face are close, she narrowed her eyes little bit, this is her first time to spot gentle and warmness in his face.

While he when applying the potion on her face, every fingers of his are gently touch her face, as if he is afraid will hurt her if he put little bit strength.

So that, someone alike Yu Ao Tian who does not have patience toward woman, there is also the time he could act this patience too, but perhaps at this moment, the today him perhaps is having good mood.

At this moment, Yao Yao really wanted to keep this scenery inside her heart, after all the moody Yu Ao Tian rare to show this kind side of him.

"Is there any wound in your body?"

Body? Yao Yao is nervously blinking her eyes, and then she moves her body:

"my, my body didn't hurt."

"En? Bao Bei, if I found out there is wound, what kind of punishment should I give to you?" so that the gentle and warm expression in his face actually conceal his sinister intention.

She has guessed that the warmness side of Yu Ao Tian won't last long, but never thought it disappeared such quickly.

"I... My... My body I do by myself."

"Take off!"

Cold sweat.... She isn't dummy, if she undress there won't any good ending. "I can do it by myself."

"Undress!" Yu Ao Tian is speaking with strong tone.

Yao Yao is in difficulty creased her forehead, dumbfounded not moving, inside her eyes as if a little sheep that going to slaughter doing for the final struggle.

And then at this moment...

'knock knock' (knocking sound)

Suddenly the door is knocked.

It lit her hopes, excitedly she pointed at the door: "Someone is knocking!!"

Yu Ao Tian face is dimmer and glared at her, put down the medicine in his hand. Slowly walked toward the door. "Sorry bother you Xue Tong."

"It is my job, I leave first."

"En." Shut the door closed, Yu Ao Tian gazed at the document and walking inside the room.

Yao Yao is curiously staring at Yu Ao Tian who is standing beside the bed, but she even curious with the document in his hand, her head is filled with question mark, why he looking at her?

"Give." one cold word, Yu Ao Tian tossed the document to Yao Yao's.

"Ugh..." Yao Yao takes look at the document, flip and read it... So that the document is their lover contract agreement.

"Why are you... Giving me this?"

Yu Ao Tian stands silently while staring at her, after sometimes, he takes deep breathe: "Fiuh," quickly he takes the document from her hands and then...

'ssst...' (tearing paper sound)

The legal contract which is not too thick has already turned to be pulped in his hand.

Yao Yao is shocked with bull eyes, her little mouth make 'o' shape. What is Yu Ao Tian doing this time? What he intended? What is he doing?"

'Thump' her heart skip beat.

# Part 2 (Two)

Inside big bedroom it only left with sound of paper being torn, when that lover contract agreement paper which is a symbol of her humiliation being torn into pieces, Yu Ao Tian said: "Since today onward... You are not my lover anymore."

The snow is gradually falling from the sky, it forming a beautiful scenery.

Perhaps in this moment the atmosphere changed to tardiness... Slow...

A tiny of 'snow flakes' wrapped around these two persons body, the temperature inside the bedroom higher little bit.

At this moment, she really speechless, cannot describe how her feeling, she only feels her head is empty...

What did Yu Ao Tian say? He said... Said... She isn't his lover anymore? Is it really? Really? Really?

She—-over and over, over and over to ensure by herself, trying to recall Yu Ao Tian's words, afraid being mistaken, thought it perhaps her heart mistaken about it.

That lover contract isn't fake, not fraud, the sky with snow flakes are the proof. She....Luo Yao Yao, since this day she won't be living by bowing her head anymore.

"Yu..." the waves of her mood for long time hasn't steady yet, she wanted to say something, but her heart too sour, chocked, after all she losing the way to speak something.

At next moment...

Tears are bursting from her eyes, flowing down wet her cheeks, she hugged her head, crying.

"What are you crying for? This moment, doesn't this what you are expecting for?" expressionless Yu Ao Tian looked at her, his deep eyes surging with unspeakable luster.

He won't know, he won't understand that moment when Yao Yao become his

lover, the pressure pressed on her heart, he also won't understand the burden she shouldered, the humiliation she experienced for this time, it was so heavy.

If it can say, since there is changing in the way of interaction between she and Yu Ao Tian, she isn't afraid of him anymore, perhaps this will be a good start, it is better to say this moment...

The real light is coming.

Haha, at the beginning world actually is such beautiful place. Actually she could this faster get out from the darkness.

Very long time, finally Yao Yao can gain herself, opened her mouth sobbed: "I, so, happy. I really am, very happy. Thank you... Thanks to you...Ao Tian, thank you."

Seeing her face with smiling expression, although her face wet with tears, Yu Ao Tian finally understood, so that she crying because she is happy.

And then, this is his first time to see Little Thing smiles brightly in her face, she smiles alike angel.

Ha, such grief!

Until this moment, he finally understood, how heavy the burden this Little Thing shoulder, does she really such longing to escape from him?

To be said, at the beginning Yu Ao Tian let her to be his lover, the reason because the scar and also to force herself to stay beside him in order to investigate about it. And then, this lover status actually is the biggest protection given by Yu Ao Tian!

Still same words, there are many people who wanted his life, too many, if he really let her to stay beside him openly then the troubles are keep on coming, only by keeping her secretly beside him, hiding her, it will completely give her real safety.

But, Yu Ao Tian never known this kind of protection actually give her such heavy burden.

And then, Yao Yao perhaps does not know, this kind of pressure, this kind of relationship, Yu Ao Tian actually give her the most smooth and fine protection



# Part 1 (One)

#### Hold on, This is Weird Feeling

At sudden, Yu Ao Tian grabbed her wrist.

Without waiting her to gain herself, his domineering lips are pressing down hers.

"Uh!!" did he regret? Did he change his mind? Yao Yao feared and glared with her big eyes, pushing his chest with her small hand, using all her strength, while her little head is restless keep on moving.

Yu Ao Tian can feel she is so restless, frowned, his big hand is hold on her head, his tongue is domineering pry her teeth, sucking, intertwined with her little tongue, enjoying the scent of her.

"Uh... Uh..." she is breathing unsteady and turned to grasp her breath, this kiss is coming to sudden, too fierce, and she doesn't prepare for it.

Also does not know after sometime, the atmosphere in bedroom turned to be burning hot, Yu Ao Tian unwillingly to leave her lips.

"Hu...hu...hu..."

When she free, she doesn't stop taking deep breaths: "Yu, Yu Ao Tian, didn't you say, I... I had free as your lover, hadn't I? Why are you?"

"That's right! You are not my lover anymore, but it doesn't mean... These three years you can leave from my side! Little Thing, don't think to escape from me, or else I will make your life living death!!"

For once again fate is shackles her, firmly tied on her, it feels as if it comes from the hell, a command of reaper echoing in her ears.

Within these three years don't think to escape...

Or else I will make your life living death....

Weird! So weird! Before he ever told this too, but that time her heart felt such feared and irritated. And then this moment, she does not have any particular of those feeling, moreover her heart is strangely skip beat.

Wondering if she have been accustomed got abused, could it means she has turned to be masochist?

No, it isn't...

She is blinking her big eyes, staring at Yu Ao Tian's eyes, finally she realized the reason why she didn't feel fear or irritating when heard those words.

The reason, although when Yu Ao Tian said these words with cold and commanding speaking tone, but in his eyes there were contained indistinct surging of sadness gleam.

Yes, he will never let go this Little Thing, he won't...

If she unwilling to be his lover, then he can change their relationship, but no matter what the reason he won't ever let her escape from him, at least for now on he won't let her to leave him!

Perhaps, the reason because of the mystery of her scar hasn't revealed; perhaps he still had others reason. The real reason, perhaps Yu Ao Tian himself also does not know the reason too!

"So now what kind of relationship we have?" Yao Yao looked at him with complicated expression, her face is obviously showed helpless, if not lover relationship, there is no reason for both of them kissing, but at same time he also does not want to let her go, doesn't this also mean she still his lover?

"Up to you." Yu Ao Tian gives her faint smile, stretching out his hand and then gently pinching her nose tip: "Whatever you like just do as you please, anyway for this time you are the only woman who beside me."

What he means, Whatever you like just do as you please? Why Yu Ao Tian always speak such ambiguous? "Well, if you have new woman, can our relationship be terminated right the way?"

This time, she used 'I', and not 'you', remembered in the past when she asked this questioned to Yu Ao Tian, more or less the meaning, 'If you have another woman, can you dump me?' and now she has changed it into 'our relationship can be terminated right the way.'

"Of course, now you are not my lover anymore, if I have other woman, whatsoever, you are free to make your decision."

Ugh....

Strange... What kind of strange relationship.

But, it also comfortable, because suddenly she can feel she and Yu Ao Tian is standing equally, she isn't that lowly anymore. Hahahahahaha.

Yao Yao lowers her head, a smiles curved in her mouth.

# Part 2 (Two)

Inside big bedroom it only left with sound of paper being torn, when that lover contract agreement paper which is a symbol of her humiliation being torn into pieces, Yu Ao Tian said: "Since today onward... You are not my lover anymore."

The snow is gradually falling from the sky, it forming a beautiful scenery.

Perhaps in this moment the atmosphere changed to tardiness... Slow...

A tiny of 'snow flakes' wrapped around these two persons body, the temperature inside the bedroom higher little bit.

At this moment, she really speechless, cannot describe how her feeling, she only feels her head is empty...

What did Yu Ao Tian say? He said... Said... She isn't his lover anymore? Is it really? Really? Really?

She—-over and over, over and over to ensure by herself, trying to recall Yu Ao Tian's words, afraid being mistaken, thought it perhaps her heart mistaken about it.

That lover contract isn't fake, not fraud, the sky with snow flakes are the proof. She....Luo Yao Yao, since this day she won't be living by bowing her head anymore.

"Yu..." the waves of her mood for long time hasn't steady yet, she wanted to say something, but her heart too sour, chocked, after all she losing the way to speak something.

At next moment...

Tears are bursting from her eyes, flowing down wet her cheeks, she hugged her head, crying.

"What are you crying for? This moment, doesn't this what you are expecting for?" expressionless Yu Ao Tian looked at her, his deep eyes surging with unspeakable luster.

He won't know, he won't understand that moment when Yao Yao become his

lover, the pressure pressed on her heart, he also won't understand the burden she shouldered, the humiliation she experienced for this time, it was so heavy.

If it can say, since there is changing in the way of interaction between she and Yu Ao Tian, she isn't afraid of him anymore, perhaps this will be a good start, it is better to say this moment...

The real light is coming.

Haha, at the beginning world actually is such beautiful place. Actually she could this faster get out from the darkness.

Very long time, finally Yao Yao can gain herself, opened her mouth sobbed: "I, so, happy. I really am, very happy. Thank you... Thanks to you...Ao Tian, thank you."

Seeing her face with smiling expression, although her face wet with tears, Yu Ao Tian finally understood, so that she crying because she is happy.

And then, this is his first time to see Little Thing smiles brightly in her face, she smiles alike angel.

Ha, such grief!

Until this moment, he finally understood, how heavy the burden this Little Thing shoulder, does she really such longing to escape from him?

To be said, at the beginning Yu Ao Tian let her to be his lover, the reason because the scar and also to force herself to stay beside him in order to investigate about it. And then, this lover status actually is the biggest protection given by Yu Ao Tian!

Still same words, there are many people who wanted his life, too many, if he really let her to stay beside him openly then the troubles are keep on coming, only by keeping her secretly beside him, hiding her, it will completely give her real safety.

But, Yu Ao Tian never known this kind of protection actually give her such heavy burden.

And then, Yao Yao perhaps does not know, this kind of pressure, this kind of relationship, Yu Ao Tian actually give her the most smooth and fine protection



٩
J

This chapter is specially summarized.

"Ah en..." it sort of little bit pain but also it gives comfortable feeling that she sensed, she cannot control herself to let out the moaning sound.

"Hm? Really nice to listen...."

"Enough! Don't say anything!!" She is embarrassing to death, Yu Ao Tian has done with tormenting her body, why must he keep on tormenting her nerve? Rotten bastard!

"Ah." he is smiling devilishly, slowly stands up, his hand is stretching out boringly caressing her abdomen.

"Don't!!" Yao Yao feels in danger, at the moment she clamp her legs tightly, restlessly keeps on moving her body: "Let me go! Stop, I dislike this way!"

"Dislike?"

"That's right! Dislike!!"

"Oh?" Yu Ao Tian narrowed his eyes, at other moment, his hand has already caressed her lower abdomen.

\*\*Inserted part\*\*

'Ring ring ring' (mobile phone ringing sound)

At this time, suddenly Yu Ao Tian's phone is ringing.

"Okay, I understood, I will be going back." Yu Ao Tian is replied the phone called shortly, turned his face and looked at her: "Bao Bei, you are going back to company with me."

"I don't want!" angrily she pulled up the quilt covering her body, covered her head, sulking, "I had gotten replaced."

"So that's you are angry because of this matter, didn't someone threaten me, said that, If I didn't break up with Shang Yun Yin, just replaced her?"

She uncovered her head, looking at Yu Ao Tian sinister face, coldly said: "So, are you really replaced me?"

"That's right, I never dated Shang Yun Yin, how could I break up with her? So that I only can replace you."

"You!!" Yu Ao Tian is really.... Smooth-talker (cunning)!!

"Alright Bao Bei." His expression changed to be serious: "Something comes up in the company, I must go there, you taking rest in here, I will pick you up later." after said, he bend his body little bit and gently kissed her forehead and then turned and left.

But Yao Yao face is blushing red, her heart skip beat, 'Thump' 'Thump' beat so fast.

This kind of feeling? No, it must be illusion! Must be illusion!

'Bang' the bedroom door is shut closed, Yu Ao Tian is standing in front of the wooden door, his slender tall body is leaning at the wooden door, "Fiuh..." a sound, taking deep breathe, pair of his eyes is surging with unbearable luster. It seems that he must take longer time to suppress his sensual desire toward this Little Thing. But...

Currently this type of feeling isn't something he hates!

Thinking to this point, Yu Ao Tian's mouth is curved up and give faint smiles, put one of his hands in his pocket, walking slowly until disappearing from the corridor...

Inside the bedroom, after Yao Yao heard the door is closed, suddenly she stands up, faster takes her phone and make phone call to Gong Xiao Man: "Xiao, Xiao Man!!"

"Beloved, is something happened?"

"That's right! Something is happened!" talking about this, her face was raised with an excited smile.

"Faster say, what is happened?" But Gong Xiao Man on the other way phone call can feel something stuck in.

"I, am, not, Yu Ao Tian's, Lover, anymore!"

"Really, is it really? What situation are we in?"

"Hahahahaha, it was him who taking an initiative to tear the lover contract agreement, moreover he said to me that I am not his lover anymore."

"En? Is it something good really happened?" Gong Xiao Man who is in the other side phone call rolled her eyes, she also cannot hear something alike unhappy from Yao Yao speaking tone, but she really wanted to know what make Yu Ao Tian finally let go of Yao Yao? "Beloved, what scheme are you used?"

"I didn't! It was him who took the initiative. Of course, perhaps because..." speaking to this point, Yao Yao excited expression gradually turned to be grateful.

"Because of what?"

"Anyway something exaggerating thing was happened, I told him, becomes his lover, I have such heavy burden, and then he torn the lover contract agreement."

"Woah Kao! Yu Ao Tian is bloody cool man. That also mean, both of you are not having any relation anymore?"

"Ugh... It also cannot count as not having any relation." talking about this point, Yao Yao really have something that needed Gong Xiao Man guidance to teach her.

"What do you mean by this?"

"Ckckck, how to say. Yu Ao Tian said that, I don't need to be his lover, but within these three years I must not leave him. As you know, although there is no love contract anymore, he indeed had given me money." The paper contract is tied Yao Yao's hands and feet, although the contract agreement had gone, but she won't be forgotten the fact that she had sold herself to Yu Ao Tian.

"Ugh...isn't that... Also still called as Lover? It only changed from contract agreement to verbal agreement."

That's right, she also thought this way, but.... "But he also told me that, I am the only woman who beside him now, and then, I said, if he has another woman, both of us will terminate our relationship, and he said okay."

*"*....."

"What wrong, Gong Xiao Man, why you are not saying anything?"

"Wait, wait, give me a time to tidy up your relationship diagram. Now Yu Ao Tian does not have any girl friend, you are not having any boyfriend too, both of you are together, once he has girlfriend, both of you terminated the relationship. So now both of you... Aren't both of you boy and girl friend?"

"....." this time Yao Yao dumbstruck, she really dumbfounded.

Perhaps, dealing with other people she can clearly feel this kind of vague relationship, but once she dealing with Yu Ao Tian, she really never thought she and Yu Ao Tian can be....

Ugh, once she thought about the words she feels it so exaggerating, think it carefully, both of them are not coming from same place, impossible they turned be?

Perhaps Gong Xiao Man has misunderstood on something.

The next day early in the morning, Yao Yao is going to company with extremely happy mood, she has sweet smiles in her face. Perhaps this day is one of the happiest day in her last two years!

\*\*

'Ding' the elevator is stopped at the first floor, she is entering the elevator with other colleagues.

"It was her, it was her, yesterday who was being hit, it was her."

"Ha? Oh my, it was such embarrassing, after all she still daring to come to work? How can someone have this thick skin-face."

From her back there are so many colleagues who whispering, if not because she does not want to make thing bigger, she really wanted to tell those two colleagues, can both of you speak lower when badmouthing other person?

"Geez, since have face to be someone's lover, the face mustn't normally thick."

"Sst, speak lower little bit, although she is mistress, you must see whom mistress she is, if she really with General

Manager Long, all of us will be dead meat!

That two colleagues aren't stop, they are continuing talking at Yao Yao's back, even all the colleagues inside the elevator make a sound of ridicule.

Yao Yao bites hard her lips, she really cannot endure it anymore, suddenly she turned her head: "Colleagues, I advise all of you to be careful with yours words. First, I am not anyone mistress why must I not dare to come for working? Second, please all of you be careful with yours words, or else I will sue all of you defaming me!"

'ding' (elevator sound)

When Yao Yao is done with her words, the elevator is stopped at legal division, she is walking out with her chin up. And then looked at those few colleagues inside the elevator, their mouth is opened wide as if being stuck with apple.

To say, Yao Yao has overawe aura, she is giving kind of aura alike, if all of you still dare to continue, I will make all of you live as if dying, this kind of feeling, who dares to gossip her?

This actually Yao Yao real character!

Before she broke up with Feng Chen Yi, she always live in confident, pride, facing with all things, although she is at losing side she will put out king's attitude toward herself, perhaps this is also the reason why Feng Chen Yi interested in her.

But when she broke up with Feng Chen Yi, her pride and confident are gradually weaken, until she becomes Yu Ao Tian's lover, she is living in humiliation and also darkness.

But now everything is different, she can be such audacious to say out loud, she also can fight back to those who bully her.

"Ha, so without that status, although I was being badmouthing by others, I don't care about it little bit, really such strange feeling!" standing in front of the elevator, Yao Yao is excitement made a gesture with open arms. She makes small jump and go to legal division.

"Xiao Luo."

When she entered the lounge, she meets Supervisor Xu: "what happen Supervisor Xu?"

"Later at eight we will go to have small meeting, CEO Yu will coming here by himself, he wanted you to make the report about the election process and arrangement."

"Ugh?" Did Yu Ao Tian arrange this meeting? This is too sudden, luckily she had made preparation earlier. "Okay, supervisor Xu, I understood."

"Xiao Luo."

When she is going to enter her office room to tidy up (collect) her data, those colleagues who love to gossip crowded her.

Seeing each of them who used that lowly expression, she knows no good thing will be happen. "What's matter?"

"Later, when meeting, General Manager Long will also join."

He,heheheheh, see there is no good thing? What did they intend to by telling her later General Manager Long will also join the meeting?

"Oh, that, thank you everyone. If there is nothing else, I want go inside to tidy the data."

"Hey, wait Xiao Luo, you don't say that we are gossiping, we want to ask you, after yesterday matter, how is your relationship with General Manager Long now?"

"That's right, that's right, does General Manager Long break up with his girl friend? Aiya, yesterday it was really tough for you, moreover your face injured."

Seeing their exaggerating compassion smiles, it can be said that Yao Yao finally sees something that called as the sided of higher level of hypocritical people.

She still remembered yesterday when she being hit, this colleagues were those who was nearest, they are giving what sort of expression toward her, now when she turned her head all of them are pretending to show their consideration expression, don't they feel a sense of guilty? "I also not really clear about General Manager Long's privacy, thus, the matter being hit was due to misunderstanding, it all alright."

Yao Yao reaction is so calm, this few of gossiper colleagues don't get what they want, they are certainly unhappy.

"You guys say what did she mean?" seeing Yao Yao entered her office room, all of them are make a circle and continuing to gossip.

"It seems she is acting tough, this kind of matter who will admit."

"But, if General Manager Long is choosing his girlfriend is okay, but if General Manager chooses her, with what kind of attitude should we face her?"

"Just think it as something never happened."

#### **During the Meeting**

Eight sharp, the meeting room in legal division is filled with people, ten lawyers are sitting in chair with rounded table, while all of their assistants and secretaries are sitting at the seat behind them.

"CEO Yu, General Manager Long." seeing Yu Ao Tian appearance, all the people are welcoming him.

'ahem, hem." (cough voice)

Three, two females colleague are sending out signal, those small eyes are looking at General Manager Long and Yao Yao, they are also curved up their mouth, giving mocking smile.

"Sit down." Yu Ao Tian sits down and then everyone dares to take a seat. "Today the reason I convene this meeting, I want to hear everyone thought about Yao Yao's campaign proposal."

Yao Yao? Does Yu Ao Tian intentionally called her name? Yao Yao dumbfounded, suspicious taking a glance to Yu Ao Tian.

Inside the meeting room, everyone also can feel odd atmosphere.

"It likes this, the election is getting near and the time is less than two weeks, in this short time, I hope CEO Yu can fulfill four things."

"First, The 5 billion current asset, four days ago I had personally donated one billion to Hope Primary School on behalf of CEO Yu's name. By estimated the money had transferred today, until the time please CEO Yu going to notice the PR department, planning to make the announcement. Does anyone agree?"

When Yao Yao said her first point, everyone is hesitated for moment, because Supervisor Xu had decided the resolution before: "The positive publicity campaign for CEO Yu Ao Tian image will be very helpful and feasible."

"Thank You Supervisor Xu. The second, I have listed down few of influential businessmen who are having good relationship with CEO Yu and also powerful in business world, I hope all of them can cooperate to support CEO Yu in this time election. This is the name list, please take a look." Yao Yao distributing the copies to everyone.

Everyone is taking look, they are faintly express approval. "This is so important to get the support from these business men, this point really good. But..." after Supervisor Xu praised, he turned the topic, doubt taking look at Yao Yao: "Why in this name list there is no Feng's group? As you know, Feng Group has very good relation with the government, moreover as I know, The Premier of the State Council likes Feng's group General Manager, Feng Chen Yi so much, if he can give support, won't it much better?"

"....." Sweat

She had predicted being questioned why not put Feng's name in list.

"I see how about this." Supervisor Xu is thinking on some ideas, said: "Regarding to the political election, the government has been signaling although not very clear, but the government implied, that is during the election there must be at least two or more enterprises must have 2 billions current assets as campaign funds. Our Berson can go with this path, can directly supporting CEO Yu's back, and about Feng's group, how about to make it as CEO Yu.... Campaign fund supporter?"

Huh....

She almost vomit blood.

Regarding to Supervisor Xu suggestion, she had thought about it before, actually if she doesn't know Feng Chen Yi, one hundred percent she will recommend Feng's group to support Yu Ao Tian, but...

Their past relationship. So that, she always doubt whether she wanted to put Feng's group as Yu Ao Tian supporters or not as, 'Money Funder', if Feng's group agreed, the successful of Yu Ao Tian campaign can reach 90%, after all the government financial is depending on Berson and Feng Group support, the government of course not dare to act reckless.

This is also not bad, Supervisor Xu suggestion actually help her to voice out her idea, this is also avoiding her awkwardness.

"CEO Yu, what do you think about this suggestion?" Supervisor Xu is waiting for Yu Ao Tian's decision.

He silent for moment, that deep and bottomless eyes are glancing at Yao Yao.

When she has realized the observance eyesight, she lowers her head, 'thump thump' her heart is beating alike drum.

"Yao Yao, what do you think?"

"....." it feels as if one cold arrow shot directly into her heart, awkwardly she is facing and see Yu Ao Tian's eyes, this brat must be on purpose, right? He must be on purpose!! This rotten bastard!!

"I think it quite good idea, but... Whether Feng's group agree or not it still depend on them, it will be another case!"

Humph, he has thrown this difficult thing to her? So that she also can throw back the matter to him.

"Ha, he will agree with it." Yu Ao Tian is ambiguously smiles, looking at Yao Yao with playful eyesight.

"Continue."

"The third, few days before the election, I will arrange charity auction for CEO Yu by gathering all the influential business men."

"This point is good. I remembered last year there were two persons who joined the congress member, one of them few days before the election were meeting businessmen and also politician, while the other one was ignoring this point so he failed." Supervisor Xu is repeatedly praised.

From these three points, Yao Yao must have done not less homework, so she able to suggest this kind of etiquette and Public Communication means things like interpersonal relationship should not be ignore.

"And the last point." when Yao Yao wanted to talk about this, compare to the above three points, she paused for moment, because she has premonition the following words that she going to say may let doubt sound from everyone:

"Ugh... CEO Yu had given me 5 billions current assets, now it left 4 billions, I will... Invested all this 4 billions to support the soccer team. Within this 2 weeks there will be international soccer match!"

"What?"

"What situation it is?"

Just as expected, after Yao Yao has done with her words, inside the meeting room an instantaneously it caused a stir, everyone is discussing, whispering. Supervisor Xu is frowning: "Xiao Luo, it seems international soccer match does not have any relation with CEO Yu election?"

"No, it has relation! Supervisor Xu..."

"Xiao Luo, three points before I am so agreed, thus about this soccer match, it must be entertainment division which must deal with it, it seems none of legal division business, right? Moreover the 4 billions funds in football, won't it be loss outweighs the gain...."

"Not like that..."

"That's right, Xiao Luo, now the most important thing is to settle CEO Yu election matter."

"You guys listen..."

"I do also think we need to settle the election campaign first."

Everyone is talking, they are not even give Yao Yao a chance to have words, giving an explanation, she one person to argue with ten persons, one by one of them are able to drown her death.

"The forth point I accept it." Yu Ao Tian who is silent for this time suddenly spoke, his speaking tone is so calm, but it enough to stuff everyone's mouth.

Everyone is silent, all eyes are looked at him, perhaps this is what called as the power of CEO. Does not need to shout, what yelling, only by one simple word it enough to draw everyone attention!

"CEO Yu..."

When supervisor Xu opened his mouth, Yu Ao Tian has stretched his hand to

stop him. "Regarding to soccer this matter, I had thought about it half years ago, moreover I have found entertainment division to make the blueprint, only waiting to start."

Really? It seems Yu Ao Tian also takes attention to this matter? Yao Yao is little bit surprised with bull eyes, she even thought Yu Ao Tian said such thing only play her up, but after she sees serious expression from him, it seems he really thought about this matter before.

"As for reason, Yao Yao, you explain to everyone." Yu Ao Tian stills giving the best chance to her.

She smiles, when she wants to stand up and give explanation to everyone, but her face suddenly pale, there are cold bead in her forehead....

### Merciless Abuse Yu Ao Tian

Impossible? In this time after all?

Hahahahahaha, God, are You joking with me?

Facing with countless pair of eyes that looked at her, she is trying to suppress her panicking mood, quietly she sits back to her chair: "We, our Interim Prime Minister, Prime... Prime Minister has hope and also likes, he is especially, especially hope that China soccer team improving. If we make it simple, giving this 4 billion to Interim Prime Minister, give him, give him as present, he absolutely won't accept it. But if...." her lips twitched: "Our, our money being invested to thing that he like most, moreover it will give best result, this just waiting it turned to be gift in disguise, isn't it?"

"This..." to be honest, if not because Yao Yao explained it such direct, everyone would not thought of it. Now, the today's biggest leader in political, the Interim Prime Minister indeed likes soccer so much. If Yu Ao Tian takes out his money for soccer, doesn't this mean fulfill Interim Prime Minister hopes, this is also awaiting to be gift in disguise. "Say so, this is going to be big help for Yu Ao Tian political election."

"That's right. That's right."

Seeing the changes expression from oppose her to praise her, Yao Yao feels slightly relief, but the next second....

Oh, my God. She feels her mind blank, while her forehead streaming down cold beads of sweats.

"Yao Yao, are you okay?" Yu Ao Tian sensed something odd from Yao Yao expression, asking her with consideration.

Now she only has one wish, that is Yu Ao Tian can hurry dismiss the meeting.

"No, nothing..." she is in difficulty while wavering her hand, expecting no one will pay attention to her.

But Yu Ao Tian is keep on asking with affection: "Stomached?"

This moment, everyone is looking at her, and also glance at Yu Ao Tian.

Just to let know, in Berson whether small or big meeting, This CEO always showing such cold expression, people won't be able to guess what his thoughts, moreover he is someone who won't give any consideration to any employees, and now from his expression it is so obvious, even the dummy can sense both of these two persons are odd.

"En...ssh..." Yao Yao cannot bear it anymore, the pain makes her twitched and spread cold breathe, her face is paler.

Just in this time, Yu Ao Tian is nervously standing up, faster he dash beside her: "Bao Bei, I take you to hospital."

"....." This time she absolutely sure 100% that Yu Ao Tian is doing this on purpose in front of many people, he is called her this way!!!

But this hasn't ended, when the meeting room is deathly silent suddenly Long Ye rushed: "Sister in law, are you okay?"

"....." Yao Yao feeling as if her body being acupuncture, her eyes are wide opened staring at two persons who are standing in front of her.

She really wanted to ask something to both of them, should they act such exaggerating? Couldn't it be Long Ye come to join this meeting only to say, 'Sister in law' this word, could he be? Is it only to proof to everyone that she isn't Long Ye's mistress?

"It's okay, it's okay, no need to go to hospital." she is forcing herself to wave her hand.

Yu Ao Tian purposely to take deep sighed, helplessly said: "When at home you are still okay, why suddenly your stomach aching? Dismiss the meeting first."

"En, dismiss! Dismiss!" Long Ye waved his hand to everyone.

At this time, everyone had already dumbstruck, one by one of them are looked alike stone, stiffen when walking out from the meeting room.

When all of them have walked until the door way, everyone finally gain themselves: "So Yao Yao is..."

"CEO Yu's?"

"Girlfriend?"

"Dead meat, all of you help me to think, did I say something horrible to Luo Yao Yao?"

"How could I remember, anyway it seems I didn't." Everyone is shocked looking each others, at next second, all of them without they realized had already soak with cold sweat....

Inside the meeting room...

After those people left, at sudden Yu Ao Tian face turned to be dim, asking him to act as gentle man, he really not good at all!

"Ha, it settled." Long Ye smiled.

As Yao Yao guessed, today Long Ye joining this meeting only to call out 'Sister in law' in order to prove the innocent relationship between them.

No wonder today meeting was too sudden, this meeting just similar held to let everyone knew that Yao Yao is whose girlfriend!

"Are your stomach really hurt?" Yu Ao Tian looked at Yao Yao bend in her seat.

Nonsense! Does he think that she is schemer like him? After all she could think of to pretend stomachache to prove her innocence to everyone?

"En...." she nodding with no strength.

Yu Ao Tian is creased his forehead, without waiting for Yao Yao to react, he has extended his hand and hold her waist, pulled her into his embraces....

The next thing!

"Don't ah!" Yao Yao with hoarse voice screaming out, her eyes are nervous looking at Yu Ao Tian, Kao! Why suddenly he held her in his arm?

"What is going on?" Standing at twos of them back, Long Ye sees stiffen body of both of them, he even can sense something odd with them, when he wanted to walk and take a look.

Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao are almost in unison shouted: "Don't come here!!!" after said, both of them are exchanging their eyes sights.

It seems that Yu Ao Tian has already found out, really such embarrassing. Yao With complicated mood snugged on his embraces.

"Ugh?" standing behind both of them, Long Ye is creasing his forehead, his footstep stopped at the original place.

At sudden, the atmosphere in meeting room changed to be strange. For very long, Yu Ao Tian who backed Long Ye coldly spoke: "Long Ye, you go out first."

"Okay."

'Bang' after heard the sound of the door being shut, Yu Ao Tian calm face immediately change into anger face, lower his head with blaming expression he looked at Yao Yao who is still in his arms: "Are you dummy? How could you don't know when your period come?"

If not because when he held her at that moment in his arm, looking at the chair that has blood stain, perhaps when Long Ye was walking closer to them, he would find it out what was going on.

"I.... I was so busy these few days, so that I forgot. The result when she was doing her report half way..." she snugged her head into Yu Ao Tian embraces, shrink herself, looking at her way she is looked alike as if little girl who had done wrong, not too mentioned her cuteness.

"How many times this thing happened?"

Listened the way he questioned her, she with her complicated mood, showing her fingers: "It is only twice."

"Only? Twice? So how many times more do you think of? Huh!!!!" Yu Ao Tian heave sighed, helplessly said: "I will going to buy it for you!!!" after said, he put Yao Yao down back to her chair.

"Are you going to buy it by yourself?"

"So whom must I ask to? Should I say to them to buy a sanitary napkin for you, or should I ask them to buy the sanitary napkin for me?"

Staring at Yu Ao Tian anger face, Yao Yao unhappily frowned: "What are you

angry for? I, I just want to ask you, if, if you are going to buy yourself, your, how about your clothes?"

# Part 1 (One)

### Helped her to buy sanitary napkin

"Clothes?" Yu Ao Tian lowers his head looking at his own western suit, he finally realized when he put Yao Yao onto his arms, his sleeves is stained with blood. "MF!" he felt disgusting immediately take off his suit, pissed off he tossed it in meeting room table.

Yao Yao takes a glance, an instantaneously she flared up: "For whom are you showing up your temper to? I had said to you not to hold me, but you were stubborn wanted to do it!!"

Due to her way of thinking, his consideration toward her was wrong? "Good, very good!" Yu Ao Tian is letting out mocking laugh, giving her thumps up in front of her face, and then he turned his back walking to the door way.

"Hey!! Will you go to buy for me or not?"

Suddenly he stopped, his forehead veins 'chug', gritting his teeth he said: "Buy!!!!"

When he opens the door, who knows that from behind Yao Yao's voice flows: "This time don't buy diapers!"

"....." Why now he really wanted to strangle this Little Thing?

Turned his head, he gives her cold glared, and Yu Ao Tian also showed her, his darken face, and then slammed the door left.

This is his first time feeling himself such pity to mess (feeling in difficult, in tight corner), when caring about that damn Little Thing, the result he even got criticized? The thing that makes him most pissed off is, MF at last he still....

He stills need to lower his head to go and help that Little Thing to buy.... Sanitary Napkins!!

"Hihihihihi..... Just now can it be counted as Yu Ao Tian disaster? Really feel happy (satisfied happiness)!" Yao Yao has done changing new pant and walking

out from the toilet, every times she thought about Yu Ao Tian expression that going to be crazy during inside the meeting room, she feels it such funny, although the most aloof man also can get crazy, this sort of side. "Interesting. Aiyooo...." as she has pleased with herself, she has forgotten the matter about her aches.

Washing her hands, she is so lame when getting out from toilet. But when she opened the door...

"Yao Yao, just now your report was so great."

"That's right, I admired those four points that you said. Later if there have any chances I want to learn from you, asking you about the legal matters." in front of the toilet door, there are two legal division colleagues who standing there.

Yao Yao remembers, one of this colleagues has Song as surname, she is nation middle license lawyer, while the other one is holding advanced license, she was so obviously telling them that she is Junior (beginner) lawyer, why suddenly they are asking herself to 'give a teaching' about legal matter?

Is it... Because of Yu Ao Tian?

Yao Yao dislikes this kind of feeling, although the only way to prove her relationship with Long Ye are innocent only by Yu Ao Tian, moreover, regarding the legal matter she is so confident with herself, although these people are buttering up with her because of Yu Ao Tian, she also not have any objection.

"You guys are too polite, later in the future if there something I don't know, I still need you guys assistance."

"You are too polite. Both of us still need you to take care of us." Those two persons are clamped at Yao Yao's right and left while walking out from toilet.

The passion that they showed her, it really gives her kind of feeling as if living in palace filled with many harem in ancient time, realizing this concubine has been losing affection, they are stepped on her; when realizing this concubine has been gaining affection, hurry they butter her up. Geez, actually this kind of thing is something so common this day, isn't it? Or else, why there are so many people who expecting and pursuit the feeling being superior?

"Xiao Luo, CEO Yu said that if now you have time, he asked you to go to CEO's

room." When she is going to enter her office room, Supervisor Xu coming over.

She dumbstruck, did it because of report matter or else why he wanted her to come to his office room? Impossible.... He wanted to take revenge to her because just now matter? Cold sweat.... "I, I understood Supervisor Xu, thank you."

Although afraid, she stills gathering her courage to go to Yu Ao Tian's office room, because due to this man character, as long as she escape (avoiding) the last result always be most severe.

# Part 2 (Two)

### **Help Her To Buy Sanitary Napkin**

"Why are you looking at me?" Standing inside the office room, she is curiously asking.

Yu Ao Tian is looking at her who wears new clothes with measuring eyesight, his fingers are pointing at few bags on sofa: "Later you bring all those things."

Prada, Chanel, Burberry... All are well-know world brands. She is surprised gulped her saliva lower her head: "Are you buying these?"

"I asked Mo Tong Xue to buy it." he bought her sanitary napkin has already been something that shocking heaven, and then went to buy her woman's clothes? He perhaps he would not be Yu Ao Tian anymore.

"Oh. But, these clothes, I don't want."

"All these clothes are formal dresses, just think it as benefit from company, so that you don't need to wear Tong Xue's clothes anymore."

Huh, that's right. Now she is really lacking of mature and formal clothes. "Well, thank you." when she takes the thing and going to leave, suddenly Yu Ao Tian spoke.

"This few days I am going to Japan. I have told Long Ye to help you, you remember! At these time when I am not in here, if you have something to do, MUST! Let Long Ye know, understood?"

Yu Ao Tian used speaking tone that she cannot refuse, she looks at his serious expression, she vaguely can feel.... This few days with his absent, it seems going to be dangerous for her? "Oh, I understood."

"Still..."

"What?" Yao Yao curiously blinking her eyes.

Yu Ao Tian silent for moment, his deep bottomless eyes flashed, coldly said: "The matter about Feng Group, I will settle it, you don't need to stick your nose

Actually due to the normal process, normally everything regarding to Yu Ao Tian politic election must be settled by her.

And now, Yu Ao Tian is especially mention the matter of Feng Group, he will settle it by himself, but now...

"En, I understood." walking out from Yu Ao Tian's office room, her white skin face is gradually cover with dull atmosphere.

Two years later after encountering Feng Chen Yi, both of them have dragging their feeling, hang in doubt, she clearly knows that she is avoiding and escaping from her unforgettable feeling, after all she stills has feeling toward him. But, since when she gradually wanted to forget all her feeling toward Feng Chen Yi, she really cannot think of it.

At this moment, whenever mention about Feng Chen Yi's name, her heart not only not beating fast, also not has that faint hurt and not escaping, on contrary she wanted to face it, face that feeling that she not dare to face before, furthermore, she completely wanted to cut off all the sweet moment she ever had! Perhaps by doing so, she can feel more relief....

A sport car with high speed makes a beautiful arch, stopped in front of luxurious apartment.

One of Yu Ao Tian's hand is holding a document walking out from his car, he entered the elevator.

'Ding Dong' (Door Bell)

Pressing the door bell. Not long after that the big door is opened, Feng Chen Yi is dumbfounded when spotted Yu Ao Tian standing at his in front door, and then with courtesy he smiled: "CEO Yu, why are you coming?"

"I went to your company, your secretary said that you had taken sick-leave for few days, hence I directly come to your place, am I disturbed you?"

#### 265 A

This chapter must be little bit surprising and apparently this is also one the best chapter which I liked. We know Yu Ao Tian has friend-foe relationship with Feng Chen Yi since both of them have same goal to get rid Feng Kai Rui and others enemy which blocking their path in business world and at same time both are rival either fighting Yao Yao's love or battle between Berson Group (CEO Yu Ao Tian) and Feng group (CEO Feng Chen Yi) as the best company in China.

Everything must be changed now when both of them are finding out, they also have complicated relationship with Yao Yao, their first agreement is questionable now....

Are they still buddies in business or turned to be rival fight for Yao Yao affection?

### Part 1 (One)

# **Going to Feng Chen Yi's Place**

"Not disturbing, please get in." pair of Feng Chen Yi's hand are inserted inside his pocket, turned his back and walked to living room. "Do you want a glass?" he pointed at red wine that has already opened in the table, smile when asking.

"En? Are you sure you can drink?"

"Haha, it's okay, it is only fever." Feng Chen Yi is taking tall glass, pouring the red wine until half.

Yu Ao Tian takes up the red wine glass elegantly, his eyes are looking around at this luxurious apartment which is not big, it reminded him about his apartment that currently he stayed in.

It seems no matter how much money one person have, home is always a place warm and nice, it more than enough.

"Don't you live with your father?"

"I had moved, after think carefully it stills better to live alone." when Feng Chen Yi speaking till here, sipping little bit the red wine, his cold eyes are suffused with luster.

"It so true."

Suddenly the atmosphere little bit awkward. Both of them are silent.

Feng Chen Yi puts down his red wine glass, coldly looking at Yu Ao Tian who sits facing him on sofa: "CEO Yu, are you coming here today, not only looking for me to have chat?"

"Hahahaha, Chen Yi it is impossible you not guessing my coming purpose right?" he curved his lips up, elegantly sipping his red wine.

"Can vaguely guess it. If it was in the past, this little matter I would still help you, but now..." Feng Chen Yi rolled his eyes, both of his hand enveloped his front, expressionless he asked: "CEO Yu, can you give me a reason why must I help you?"

"Heh, if you want a reason.... It only my eyesight! I believe on you Chen Yi, You are mature to make difference between personal and work matter!"

As if there is smoke that spreading inside the apartment which is not too big and also too small, Yu Ao Tian and Feng Chen Yi are exchanging their glance that is deep and cold, but at same time there sparks.

After sometime, Feng Chen Yi is standing up, dragging his tired body to his bed room, from his desk taking one document and then came back to living room.

He takes the document and tossing it in front of Yu Ao Tian.

Opened, his deep black pair of eyes are reading carefully the contain of the document, 'pa' a sound of closed the document. "Chen Yi, this time really thank for your hard work."

"Only help you this small case. I wish you success in your campaign." after said, Feng Chen Yi sits back to sofa, raise his red wine high.

Yu Ao Tian is replied him politely: "Take your fortune words." two of them are raise their wine glass as if best buddy.

Regarding to the document that Feng Chen Yi hand over to Yu Ao Tian, it was thing that he had prepared before, the plan of Feng Group current asset will support Yu Ao Tian politic election, this case.

It seems that Yu Ao Tian has good eyes, due to Feng Chen Yi mature and also his leader demeanor style, it enough to have him manage Feng Group. He indeed can difference personal matter with business clearly, at the present still don't know who is friend and who is foe!

"Thinking carefully later when you become my rival it's really.... Gives me goosebumps, excited!"

One mountain cannot have two tigers, soon or later Berson and Feng's group must fight, but before that thing happen, both of them must get rid the in front enemy, by that way, both of them won't think too much for the game.

"CEO Yu, you must remember the words that you say today, don't too focus with your new status when you already enter political world, it's okay if you have forgotten your own company, but I am not a man who easy to take advantage of."

"Rest assured, although I will going to take backstage role, but as long as you sent me 'duel invitation', I will use all my strength to win over the duel!"

From the way Yu Ao Tian words it can be seen, his respect toward Feng Chen Yi as rival and also as friend.

Once he resigned from his post, all the company authority will be given to Han Li Shang, he acknowledge Han Li Shang capability, but Feng Chen Yi capability, he also perfectly know who is stronger than.

## **265** B

What is going to be happened if Yao Yao, Yu Ao Tian and Feng Chen Yi gathered at one place?

Will it going to be super mess?

### Part 2 (Two)

## Going to Feng Chen Yi's place

"Well, I first..."

"CEO Yu, have you eaten?"

"En?" he hesitated for moment, smiles and said: "Not yet."

"Just in time, let's we have meal together." Feng Chen Yi slowly walking from living room toward kitchen, he hold a big bag of food on the shelf: "I bought so many things, but there is no one I can share. Ke... Ke..., ke (coughing sound)." Seeing his pale expression, helplessly Yu Ao Tian takes off his suit, rolled up his sleeves: "I see you are missing a chief?

Well, I will do it."

"Heh? CEO Yu, can you cook?"

"Is it strange? When I was in Japan, I was living alone, moreover I still need to take care my younger brother, of course I able to cook little bit."

Regarding to Yu Ao Tian personal life, Feng Chen Yi not really know, the only thing that he knew about him, before he was underworld big boss in Japan, but today, he even seen another side of Yu Ao Tian.

'He treats me very well. He is so considerate. I like him!'

Suddenly Yao Yao's words are echoing in his ears, during that time he even hesitated perhaps she talked that way only to drive him off. But now it seems....

Forget it, no matter what Yao Yao said was true or lie, Yu Ao Tian had hit her before, it was real! "CEO Yu, do you have younger brother?"

"En. He same age with you. But not as mature as you." if Qi Lian Ao Yun is half mature from Feng Chen Yi, perhaps there are not much tangled between these

brothers relationship.

"Ha, I never mentioned him to anyone before."

"Others than Han Li Shang them, there are not many people know about my younger brother." this is first time for Yu Ao Tian taking an initiative to mention himself having younger brother this matter. "Where is the restroom? I want to wash my hands."

"There."

Seeing Yu Ao Tian going inside the bathroom, Feng Chen Yi tidies up all the food that he bought, just in this time....

'Ding dong' (bell ring)

Suddenly the door bell is ringing, hurried he walking and open the door. But when he sees....

At sudden his pale face changed to be energized: "Why are you coming?"

The person who is coming not other person but Yao Yao! She lowers her head, pursed tight her lips, faintly smiled:

"This... For you." after said, she takes out a box from her pocket.

Feng Chen Yi is so curious so directly he opens the box, once he opened it.... His cold eyes suddenly gleaming with rage.

The things inside the box are those half set of Daisy jewelry that he gave Yao Yao before, and also the perfume bottles which he specially made for her, the daisy fragrant.

After both of them broke up, she had thrown all the things that he ever gave her, but there are few that she could not throw away, because the meaning is too deep, too deep.

But, every time Yao Yao sees these things she would remember all the warmness when they were still together, the sweet scenery, although at last her face wet by tears, pain. She hides all these things, hide all of it to the place she won't be able to see it.

Until today, since she left from Yu Ao Tian's office room and went back to her houses, rummage through her cabinet and closet, found out all these things.

nd for once again she took a look these thing and recalled the memo dn't cry anymore, only her heart Still little bit hurt.	ries, she

200 A	Z	b	0	A
-------	---	---	---	---



Dear fellow readers,

This is my humble reminder, you are allowed to put comment BUT no rude and spoilers. Please respect other readers and also me as translator.

The chapters is going to continue with high dosage of sweetness, little bit bitterness but still this chapter is one of the best chapters in this novel.

### Part 1 (One)

## She is Fooled by Two Men

Perhaps, this represents her feeling is already been slowly forgetting about Feng Chen Yi. As to say, asking her to let it go completely, perhaps she still could not do it, she won't be able for the rest of her life! She only be able to keep and hide this feeling deep inside in her heart, turned it to be pieces of good memories.

One woman in her life perhaps she will be able to love few of men, just as man who also able to love few of women.

But as time flies, perhaps the feeling change to be faint, that love feeling slowly will going to be lessen, until there will be one day you encounter the— he or she the person you ever love deeply, the word that leave 'lately are you okay' there won't be any thing that bounded your heart, perhaps you will smile asking yourself 'did I ever date him before?'

But, woman in her life there must be one or two men that makes her won't ever forgotten, although they already broke up, or never get in touch until old to die, but every time mention his / hers name will make heart pain.

While one from these two men perhaps was your first love or your first man (having intercourse for the first time) First love is someone first time when knowing loving feeling, moreover the love that has deep imprinted and engraved on someone heart, it won't be easily to be forgotten.

Just as Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi, wanted to forget the past is something difficult, only bit by little bit, bit little bit to make it into beautiful memories and hide it deep inside the heart.

Every time she opened it up, things that across her mind is slightest tears and also faint smiles....

"What do you want?" coldly Feng Chen Yi covered the box, with lower voice he asked.

"I just feel it... Perhaps there is someone need it more than me." such important stuffs, she really not dares to keep it, she really hopes that these things can enchant the last person that Feng Chen Yi hold.

"You...."

## Part 2 (Two)

### She is Fooled by Two Men

'creak' (door open sound)

From inside the living from there is door open sound, Feng Chen Yi's face darken.

Yao Yao is curiously creasing her forehead, she wanted to take a look to inside, but her vision line is blocked by Feng Chen Yi. "Is there anyone in your home?"

"Oh. That's right. Just now your CEO Yu was coming." Feng Chen Yi cleverly changed the topic.

Yao Yao dumbfounded for moment, Did Yu Ao Tian come here? He must be coming here to talk about election matter?

"Did he come to ask you to be his supporter?"

"That's right."

"So how about you? Did you promise him?"

Seeing Yao Yao nervous expression, Feng Chen Yi cold eyes rolled: "Why must I agreed with him? Does he has any relationship with me, so that I must support him? Or because he is my ex-girlfriend's boyfriend?"

"Heh? Yu Ao Tian also said so. But those things I don't have any interest on, Prime Minister Qi naturally will give me that much advantages."

That's right, at Feng Chen Yi back there is premier of the state council as his supporter, he must not afraid of anything.

But..... "You just think it as helping Yu Ao Tian, isn't it easy matter?"

"Although it is easy matter, I also won't help! Or else..."

"Or else what?"

"Or else you break up with him!!"

Break up....

Before she didn't have any choices because of that piece of paper, but now.... That piece of lover contract had disappeared. Although she has owed Yu Ao Tian money, but as long as she works hard, saving money she still be able to pay him, isn't it?

But why? Why since that piece of lover contract agreement disappeared, she does not have any thought to betray Yu Ao Tian?

'That's right! You are not my lover anymore, but it does not mean... These three years you can leave from my side! Little Thing, don't think to escape from my side, or else I will let you live as death!!!'

Is it because those words? No, there is no relation with those words, because after she listened to that words, she indeed felt afraid, but not that sort of a sense of disgust.

So what the reason? It feels after some time and recently when staying beside of Yu Ao Tian she does not feel any fear like before, feeling force. Moreover since she becoming his lawyer, she still be able such happy.

It seems, staying beside him to do something for him, accomplish his wishes, perhaps in order to really pay off her debt to him slowly from her heart. "No, I won't break up with him. If you don't want to be his supporter, I can find another people."

"Is Xia Ren Liang from Lan Du's group? My beloved, as long as you dare to find him, I will use all my strength to dissipate his company!!!"

Staring at Feng Chen Yi cold eyes, Yao Yao unhappily frowned: "You are crazy, Feng Chen Yi! You don't want to be Yu Ao Tian's supporter, but does not allow other to do?"

"If Yu Ao Tian kneels down begging me, I can consider about it." after said, Feng Chen Yi laughing with mocking and enveloped hand in front of the body.

Yao Yao knows very well Yu Ao Tian character, not to mention this little thing, although his entire company is getting in danger because of Feng's group, he won't kneel down begging Feng Chen Yi!

What to do? If Feng Chen Yi agreed to support Yu Ao Tian, this is as if tiger with wings; since he doesn't want to support, there is no way, only can think to choose other to do?

When she is drowning in her thought, a familiar voice flow from inside the living room: "Can I cook for you, you still want me to kneel down and begging on you?"

This voice?

Yao Yao is open wide her eyes, suddenly she lifts up her head looking at Feng Chen Yi naughty smiles, push him away, rushing into living room.

As seen, Yu Ao Tian is starting to cook, he is wearing an apron in his body. "You... You.... Why are you here?"

"Aren't you also in here?"

Glared at Yu Ao Tian pair of bottomless eyes, Yao Yao can feel her heart shivering, she gloomy can see a vague smile in his eyes.

But at another second, hurry Yu Ao Tian changed the topic: "This, I have thing that needed Chen Yi's help, in order to show my sincerity, especially coming here to cook a meal for him!"

Is it true? This is perfectly not match on Yu Ao Tian character. In order to identify the truth, hurry Yao Yao looked at Feng Chen Yi, hoping to get an answer from his expression.

Who knows, Feng Chen Yi showed gloomy expression, coldly gave an order: "Hey! You hurry cook. I am starving to death!"

"I know...."

Impossible? Yao Yao used her hand to cover her mouth, pitying Yu Ao Tian pathetic expression, he.... Is he really Yu Ao Tian? After all, after all he can be enslaved by other?

Does her eyes have problem? Her eyes must be have problem with her vision!

Must be! "I, I am going to help you."

"Don't!!!!" Feng Chen Yi is nervous pulled Yao Yao back. "You, better have a rest in living room, I come to help CEO Yu." he had experienced Yao Yao cooking skill, if asking her to cook, although next year is coming perhaps they still won't be able to have meal.

## 267 A



This novel is going turned to be Yaoi if Yao Yao still keeps her imagination going while....

### Part 1 (One)

## Two Men and One Woman are Having Dinner

Seeing Feng Chen Yi is moving and go to help Yu Ao Tian, Yao Yao still in doubt when walking to living room.

Didn't Feng Chen Yi such fierce before? Why at sudden he moves and helping Yu Ao Tian?

With her suspicion eyesight, suddenly she spotted two document on the table in living room, curiously she flipping the document, at one glance....

One of the document is Berson plan supporter, while another one is the Feng's group supporter plan, that supporting plan from Feng Group has been signing with Feng Chen Yi's name.

Moreover she sees there are two glasses of red wine left over, no need to ask... Both of them have already come into conclusion!

Damn! She....

Is being fooled by these two domineering men and also black bellied!!!

Rage in fume! Pissed off! It reminded her long time ago when Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye fooled her, she never thought that now Feng Chen Yi and Yu Ao Tian are working together to fool her?

Feng Chen Yi really, in the past every time she begged at him, he always refuse her, and then that brat at one blink will immediately fulfill all her begging.

It seems that she still not really understand about these two men, also at same time she seems to be little their rival-friend relationship!

"CEO Yu, it is not enough." seen Yu Ao Tian has prepared five portion of steak,

Feng Chen Yi confidently shaking his head.

"Is it still not enough giving her three portion?"

"She at least must eat six portions! At normal circumstance having she to eat five portions, it is still normal. You prepared five portions, it mean both of us don't have any portion to eat."

"....." Yu Ao Tian just found out, he feels since this Little Thing staying with him perhaps she never ate to her fullest? "Chen Yi, you were so worked up before."

"Later the person who will be worked up must be you, CEO Yu."

These two persons are comforting each other, while there is unspoken words.... This little thing although she looked delicate and weak, how can she MF has ability to eat more than both of them who are men?

"You guys need..." Yao Yao who is taking a rest actually feel little bit cannot tolerance, thinking whether she needs to go to help or not, but as she turned her head to kitchen seeing the view, immediately she gulping her saliva speechless.

The most important scenery in kitchen is looked so harmonious, ,both of the men are working so compatible, clear division of labor, moreover the faint laughing sound, it is completely no room for her to barge in, they are really looked alike sweet 'couple'.

'gulp' Yao Yao is gulping her saliva, suddenly she feels as if she is bulb lamp, disturbing both of them?

But....this scenery is filled with love! Brokeback??

This	picture is cre	edited to it's	owner. Take	n from Hana	abaozi's insta	gram

Part 2 (Two)

# Two Men and One Woman are Having Dinner

Oh.... These two men are so handsome, so good looking, if both of them are together they must be fulfilled and satisfied many Fu Nv\* expectation. So, which one of them act as [攻] Gong (masculine) and who will be [受] Shou (female)? From both of their characters, they are so manly, but from body posture, both of them are looked so feminist, but from height and age, Yu Ao Tian is looked alike Gong (masculine). Whatsoever with both of them!

Yao Yao is absent minded staring at both of them, her mind is filled with her imagination thoughts.

'Aiya, I have cut my finger.'

'Chen Yi, are you okay? Come let me take a look.' Yu Ao Tian raised Feng Chen Yi's finger and put it into his mouth. Feng Chen Yi little bit embarrassed, blushed turned his head at other side.

'Ao Tian, are you tired? Come, let me wipe your sweat.' Feng Chen Yi is gently wipes Yu Ao Tian's forehead that wet with sweat, while the men face shone with sweet smile.

Thinking, thinking, Yao Yao's eyes are shone brightly, while she is constantly gulping her saliva, her face is blushing pinkish.

Two men who are cooking suddenly feel kind of hot eyesight from living room, both of them are turned their head, at

unison they shouted: "Don't think nonsense! Hurriy wash your hand, eat!"

"Ugh...." So that all was her illusions, such no interesting!

In dining table, three of them are drinking red wine, while eating beef steak. The atmosphere seems enjoyable. But Yao Yao who is sitting in the middle (between Yu Ao Tian and Feng Chen Yi) looks as if sitting on thorns, she feels quite weird sitting between her ex-boyfriend and also....Yu Ao Tian, it seems calm before storm.

Better for her not to speak anything, only eat her food!

"CEO Yu, do you know, during the time when we were in school, there was one time sports event, this little dummy no matter what she was insisting to join U skate board competition, the result...."

Yao Yao's face is stiffen, not wait until Feng Chen Yi done with his words, immediately she puts down her fork and shouted: "Shut up!!!!"

"It was kind of interesting moment, just say and share it with CEO Yu."

"Why don't you share your embarrassed moment then?"

"If you knew it, you are allowed to share it too."

"Ugh...." honestly, Feng Chen Yi is perfect person when he was still at school, there was any embarrassed moment of him. "I don't care, if you dare to say it, I will kill you!!!"

"Are you threatening me? Aiya, I am so afraid."

"Cut it off...." Yao Yao unhappily rolled her eyes, she is picking up an onion ring from the table and tossed it to Feng Chen Yi.

"You darn woman! Are you tired with your life?"

"Come and hit me?"

At beginning the atmosphere is enjoyable and peaceful but gradually changed, Yu Ao Tian who is sitting at beside quietly eating his meal as if being dumped into another world.

From the way both of them bickering, Yu Ao Tian watches their past, also sees the different sides of Luo Yao Yao, different side of Feng Chen Yi.

Luo Yao Yao that he knows is someone cute very similar with little white rabbit, while Feng Chen Yi together with Luo

Yao Yao changed to be more cheerful, and also fierce.

Feng Chen Yi in his eyes, someone cold, although he smiles but all are fake smiles, but in front of Yao Yao, this moment he able to show his smiles from deep inside his heart, even his character is changed alike sunshine boy.

If there is a word to describe these two persons, perhaps there is no words other than perfectly match by heaven!

#### Note:

\*] 腐 Fu 女 Nv: The word is coming from Japanese words 腐女子 (ふじょし, fujoshi), describing that those women who like to read Boys Love genre (Yaoi / BL). According to Baidu, The English translation for Fu Nv is Fag Hag or Rotten Women

## Part 3 (Three)

### Two Men and One Woman are Having Dinner

'ci la' (a sound produced by a quick-sliding action) A steak knife is rubbing on the plate and make shrill sound.

At same time Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi who are twitching their mouth looked at Yu Ao Tian, this time Yao Yao can sense... Just now her attitude is little bit too over.

"Sorry." Yu Ao Tian is apologizing for his impolite table manner, while his hand is holding a wine glass and take a sip of it, slowly said: "Little Thing, just now when Chen Yi mentioned about the U skate board competition, didn't it result as split crotch at last?"

"																		,,

"Huff." Feng Chen Yi almost spit out the red wine from his mouth, he acting pretended as an innocent by shrugging his shoulders: "It is CEO Yu who able to make guess of it, there is none of my business."

"You!!" Yao Yao is glaring and also gritting her teeth, that's right! During the sport event, Yao Yao virtue her intelligent in her mind and heart when doing everything, but every time she always ended up in pathetic.

That time she was participating extreme sport, she joined Skate board competition simply because to show her heroic, but at the last during she her best time, her pants... 'rip' sound, split up. It made her to be laughing stock for the entire school for almost half year.

"CEO Yu, how can you guess it?"

"It is so normal, this kind of thing only she able to do it." Yu Ao Tian puts down the knife and fork, smiles devilish to Feng Chen Yi, slowly said: "You do you remembered last time when you met me in convenience store (minimart), the result I forgot to bring my wallet."

"That diaper was buying for her!"	

## Chase out by Yu Ao Tian

"" being said by Yu Ao Tian, she stunned for a while and
feeling as if her honor has been swept over, these two men impossible this bore,
both of them are exposing her most embarrassed moment?

Yao Yao pursed tight her mouth, angrily eating her meal.

Although Yu Ao Tian shows his faint smile in his face, but his eyes are obviously have cold gleam.

Because, from this matter it can be seen, Yao Yao attitudes toward these two men are different.

Believe Feng Chen Yi also can sense it, but at same time there is no slightest happiness that he feel, on contrary, he feels such annoying. Because since the first time both of them together, Yao Yao never this obedient, never this cute. From his view, since Yao Yao together with Yu Ao Tian, obviously she is alike little bird rests upon a man (such timid and lovable little girl), she so obediently and lovely, it not only will make man to adore and cherish her but also protect her.

Two years ago when Feng Chen Yi still with Yao Yao, although sometimes she looked so cute, muddle-headed, but most of time she did it only in his in front!

"Fulled, who washing the dishes?" after eating the meal, Yao Yao had swept clean all the foods, satisfied patting her stomach. But the moment after she asked this, suddenly she feels regret and have sensed of guilty.

Because, these two men are staring at her....

"I understood..." she is so self-awareness to clean up all the dishes, while these two men are getting up and heading to living room.... Playing games! Huh.... She really have bitter life!

"CEO Yu, never thought that you are so good playing i-box?"

"Ha." he is smiling devilish, slowly said: "This is my first time to play this kind of game. But sometimes it isn't someone 'play first' then that someone can 'win over'!"

Feng Chen Yi knows there is another meaning in his words, coldly smiles, faster he puts down the game in from his hand.

'game over' as heard, it is a sound coming out from Television.

"There also a time, 'step backward', does not mean letting go. On contrary it perhaps can get bigger chance 'to win over'!"

"Oh ya? Then I will see it." after said, Yu Ao Tian's pair of eyes dim, turned his head to Yao Yao who is washing dishes:

"Bao Bei, are you done?"

"Done."

"Well, let's we go home." Yu Ao Tian standing up, politely he smiles: "Chen Yi, have disturbing you for whole night, really sorry."

"It's nothing, I still to thank CEO Yu you have excellent cooking skill."

They are biding good bye, Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao are leaving together.

Shut his door close, this luxurious and expensive apartment turned to be quiet, Feng Chen Yi is leaning his body on his wooden door, helplessly he smiled: "Sending off the girl that loved most with her boyfriend, this feeling is terrible bad."

When three of them were inside the room, he didn't feel any uncomfortable, but after Yu Ao Tian left, moreover when heard he called her such intimate, finally Feng Chen Yi really can feel the pain of, the girl that he loved most has become others man's.

But after two years when they encountered, only today he could have good meal together with her, moreover they were bid good bye calmly, weren't they?

Should he need third party in order to have peaceful interaction with her? This

is so ridiculous!!! His big hands are curled tightly into fist, at sudden a strong light across his eyes.....

"How can you suddenly cook for Feng Chen Yi?" inside the sport car, sitting in passenger seat beside the driver, Yao Yao curiously asked.

"Really, after all you was at his home, but not let out any voice. You are...." she is so embarrassed, being fooled by these two men. Also didn't know whether Yu Ao Tian had listened to their conversation or not.

"Why didn't you say something?" see Yu Ao Tian not answered for such long time, Yao Yao turned aside to see him, realized, this moment his expression is so dark and his face even scarier when the lane light radiating him!

The car is slower it's speed, steadily stopped at the street side.

"You... Why do you stop?" Her voice is carrying shivering tone, she can feel bad premonition of something.

Yu Ao Tian is looking far away, silent for such long time, not long after that, he used his cold eyes to look at her: "How can you suddenly think to come to Feng Chen Yi's place?"

He.....

Does he care about this matter?

When she stepped into Feng Chen Yi's house, when saw Yu Ao Tian, she asked, 'Why are you here?' he answered 'Don't you also come?' during that time she had already felt something odd from him.

But later the atmosphere was quite enjoyable, she thought he perhaps not care about it anymore. But she really forgot Yu Ao Tian is type of man who has deep thought, he could control his mood so well no matter in what kind of situation he is, until there is nobody, he is going to explode!

"I sent something to him."

"What kind of thing?"

Actually these things aren't something need to hide, but she does not want to say it too clearly. "The oldies."

"What kind of oldies things?" he used forcing tone to ask.

Yao Yao is feeling in difficult, creased her forehead: "Yu Ao Tian! Did you forget what you ever told me? Now you are asking me this way, aren't you believe me?"

Of course he remembered, he also not disbelieve her, perhaps he is too care regarding Yao Yao coming to Feng Chen Yi's place alone. But this reason isn't enough to flare him up.

But the real reason why Yu Ao Tian pissed off was the interaction between Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi, the atmosphere, that sort of atmosphere that he could not get into, feeling that cannot barge into their world! Perhaps it was a world only for hers and Feng Chen Yi!

At sudden, Yu Ao Tian is pulled her body closer, one of his hand is pressed her head, with his domineering lips he kissed her lips.

"Uh." this kiss similar with crazy kiss, it makes her lips feel hurt. Her pair of hand is hit his chest, she feels uncomfortable, restless.

Under the pain feeling, she uses her teeth to bite his lips.

Yu Ao Tian feels pain and then humphed one time, and then ended his kiss, while his face is showing such cold and scary expression.

"Get lost!" his mouth throw out this word coldly.

Yao Yao glared, she thought this man won't be alike he used to be, but she is mistaken, it's easy to change rivers and mountains but hard to change a person's nature. Staying beside this man forever will be similar with pet, when he likes he will call you, when he dislikes he will shoo you.

'ssss' sound, immediately she gets down from the car, as fast as arrow with winds speed the car has disappeared in the dark of night....

"Ha, Yu Ao Tian you are rotten bastard!" she is laughing while mocking herself, gritting her teeth.

Really regret, early she must tell him, 'if you are venting your anger to me, our relationship is ended'. After all, the percentage Yu Ao Tian angry is bigger than he looking for women.

"Ugh, would he this time looking for another woman?" this... Can she really

leave him and cut all ties with him? Ha! This is also not bad.

2	69	Α		

## Part 1 (One)

### Qi Lian Ao Yun is Coming to Help

"Bastard, why didn't you find a place there are many people and then leave me?" standing in the little bit isolated street, Yao Yao has been walking for sometime but hasn't seen any car.

This time, there is light flashing, she stopped with hope, constantly she waving her hand to that car.

A type of modification sport car is slowing down, but when the window down, she really regret why must she wave her hand to stop this lame car?

"His, little chick, do you want to hitch a ride?" inside the car is few men with blonde hair, at one glance—— they are seemed not a good people.

"No, not, I... I am waiting for someone, haha."

"Little chick, don't lie. We have seen you from far away that you are waving to our car, moreover, is this a place to wait someone, only ghost believe on you!" said this few scoundrels, a man who sat on driver seat is trying to reach her: "Come in, we can send you to your home, if you missed it, you perhaps need to walk home."

She would rather to walk until her home than get into car with this few men, her six sense told her, getting into their car is more dangerous than walking home!

"Thanks for you guys kindness, I really am waiting for someone. I take my leave first." After said, Yao Yao hurried walking away.

The man who sits on the driver seat hurried open the car door and chasing her: "You little chick, how can you such ungrateful, since few of good brother begging you to send you go home, you even dare not giving a face?"

Yao Yao creased her forehead, ignoring them and keeps her head lower.

The man sees her, pissed off: "Mother Fucker! He pulled her wrist.

"What are you doing?"

"You say, of course sending you to home." the man smudged.

Yao Yao is restless swaying her had to break free herself from that man: "Let me go! Let me go!"

Just in this time....

It heard, 'Bang' sound, something big crashed. Yao Yao with that man looked at the....

As seen, a Bugatti Veyron hit the rear bumper of that car.

Yu Ao Tian? But as she remembered the car that drove by Yu Ao Tian today was Lamborghini, right?

"Damn!" few men are getting down from the car, checking on the crushed.

This time, the owner of Bugatti Veyron is getting down. "Sorry, I am careless hit the rear."

Heard the familiar voice, Yao Yao takes a glance.... "Qi Lian Sunbae?" how can he.....

"Hey, little brat, is this called as careless? Street is such wide open, there is no one, how could you hit the rear? Are you thinking because you have more money, is trying to test the strength of your Bugatti Veyron?"

"Think as you please." Qi Lian Ao Yu does not care laughs, he takes out his wallet from his pocket, put few wad of bank notes: "Does this money enough for paying your loses?"

Using her corner of eyes, that wad of bank notes at least thousand of dollar, Yao Yao hurries walking to his side, whispered: "Qi Lian sunbae, no need to pay that much."

"That is no matter? Anyway it isn't my money." Qi Lian Ao Yun face is showing mocking expression.

An instantaneous Yao Yao understood the behind meaning of his words, it because is Yu Ao Tian's money, so he is such audacious?

"That's right, that's right, in this days Fu Er Dai (second wealthy generation) is

someone really 'impressive' (negative meaning: Bad-ass). If it can, I also want to be bristle-tail." the man smiles, taking the bank notes from his car while talking to himself.

At sudden, Qi Lian Ao Yu melancholy eyes flashed, very fast he has dashed in front of that man, pulled his collar shirt: "Who is bristle-tail that you mentioned?"

"Little brat, do you want to fight? Just to remind you, we are five in here."

Seeing the situation is kinda not right, Yao Yao wants to go in front and become a peace marker.

2	69 B		

## Part 2 (Two)

### Qi Lian Ao Yun is Coming to Help

As heard, Qi Lian Ao Yun humphed once, raised his hand and beat that little scoundrel, hit on his face.

"MF! You are simply seeking for death, let's we go together (fight together)." after said, those few scoundrels are surrounding him.

Although Yao Yao wants to be peace marker but it is impossible, the other party is five people, Qi Lian sunbae only one person, better.... Make report to police! She quickly takes out her mobile phone from her pocket, call police.

But without waiting the phone connected, three from the five little scoundrels have already knocked down on ground.

Left two who running away because scared, they even don't want the car anymore.

Woah, after all Qi Lian sunbae can fight? This is her first time to see Qi Lian Ao Yun fighting, she thought a gentle and warm person like Qi Lian Ao Yun is belong to intellectual types, never though he also a good fighter? "Qi Lian sunbae, you are so awesome."

"Ha, following that man, at least I must learn this kind of thing, if not would he let me off?"

Ugh....

When Qi Lian Ao Yun said this, obviously Yao Yao can see his hatred, did Qi Lian Ao Yun not want to learn martial art but he was forcing by Yu Ao Tian?

No matter what, that is these brothers matter, now she only.... "Qi Lian sunbae, thank you." She thanked Qi Lian Ao Yun.

"What are you thanked for?" Qi Lian Ao Yun tidied up his shirt, coldly walked in front of her.

"Hehe, you know." in this wide street, even if the driver is dummy would not

crash the car. If not because Qi Lian Ao Yun, she really didn't know how she going to be ended.

"You stop think too much, I just sleepy, and resulting I hit my car, who knows such coincident, you are being disturb by few scoundrels."

*"……"* 

Didn't Qi Lian sunbae sleepy? How could he see her being disturbed by few scoundrels? Yao Yao's mouth curved upward, and also not exposed Qi Lian Ao Yun, if really want to say, dealing with both of them are really difficult.

"How about you, why are you walking alone in here, would it...." Qi Lian Ao Yun melancholic eyes flashed, inserted his hand into his pocket, slowly bent down his body, so his height at hers level, sneered: "Are you dumped by Yu Ao Tian?"

Ugh....

Can she assume he was right?

This is really, why every time she being chased away by Yu Ao Tian, getting down from the car, she always meets Qi Lian Ao Yun? Such coincidentally? "Qi Lian sunbae, don't talked that harsh, why must Yu Ao Tian dump me, could not I be the person who dumped him?"

"Oh? Are both of you broke up? That's right, that kind of man indeed not reliable, he can be so nice with you in moment but the next moment he can... Ruin you by his hands! He is kind of cold blood heartless man rotten bastard!"

As for what Qi Lian Ao Yun said, she really agreed, Yu Ao Tian really types of moody man, but does he really cold blooded? Actually it is not completely right.

And then, since Qi Lian Ao Yun badmouthing his own older brother, Yao Yao really feels little bit awkward. "Qi Lian sunbae, if I was the person saying him it okay, but you are his.... Biological brother, right?"

"Didn't I say all the truth, not believe me? Let me prove it to you!" after said, Qi Lian Ao Yun is taking out his mobile phone, slowly dialing Yu Ao Tian number....

## Part 1 (One)

### **The Similarity Between Brothers**

"Ao Yun, what's matter?" voice from the phone is Yu Ao Tian's.

His melancholy eyes flashed, directly pressed speaker button: "Where?"

"At home."

Ugh.... So Yu Ao Tian is not looking for woman? Really disappointed. After she heard that loud speaker voice, she feeling lost pouted her mouth.

"Your house are so many, which one?"

Listened to the way Qi Lian Ao Yun question, Yu Ao Tian who is at another side of phone call frowned, he can sense something odd. Because Qi Lian Ao Yun others than money won't call him, moreover he won't speak this much of nonsense. "In ours father and mother's house."

Ours father, our mother's house? This is the first time for Yao Yao to hear Yu Ao Tian mentioned about father and mother.

Thus the way of Qi Lian Ao Yun asked, impossible trying to know, trying to know whether Yu Ao Tian is with another woman or not right?

"Ao Yun, why are you calling me? Say it directly."

"Oh, nothing, I just hit my car."

"What? Are you okay?" it is Yu Ao Tian nervous speaking tone from the phone, Yao Yao is obviously understand him who cares his younger brother so much, only Qi Lian Ao Yun not really cares Yu Ao Tian.

"Rest assured, I won't die. But your little lover...." talked to this point, Qi Lian Ao Yun gazed at Yao Yao who beside him.

"Yao Yao? Is she with you?" immediately Yu Ao Tian speaking tone turned to be cold.

Geez, how can he change this fast? When he heard his younger brother got

into problem he sound in rush, panic, but once he heard about her he turned to be so calm, does he really wish she gets hit to death?

"That's right."

"Oh, is there any thing more?"

"En? Brother, why don't you ask me, how's hers? Why she together with me?"

"That little thing matter none of my business."

Once she heard his words, Qi Lian Ao Yun is smiling provoking her, as if he said to Yao Yao, see, your man not care whether you live or die.

Yao Yao is bitting hard her lips, another moment, quickly she took the mobile phone, she shouting out loud on the phone: "You this old thing, why don't you go die?"

"What did you call me?" very obvious, Yu Ao Tian didn't expect Yao Yao would call him that way.

"Called you old thing, so what? In my eyes you are old thing!!"

".....I am only 28."

"So what? I just 19 years old, you called me Little Thing, but not allowed me to call you old thing? Old thing! Old thing! Old thing! Cih, MF!" Yao Yao really not give any chance for Yu Ao Tian to talk back, quickly she hung up. So good!!

Qi Lian Ao Yun who is beside her already dumbstruck, since he lived with his brother in Japan, he had seen countless women who sticking with his older brother, but none of those women dared to talk that way to his older brother, although there was perhaps would not have any good ending.

But just now, he is clearly heard that although Yu Ao Tian is angry but he is showing more helpless feeling and dearing her.

Just in this moment, Qi Lian Ao Yun can feel that Yu Ao Tian is treating Yao Yao differently compare to those women who ever with him.

"Give you back your mobile phone, Qi Lian sunbae."

Taking his mobile phone, he rolled his eyes: "Yu Ao Tian does not care with you, while aren't you sad?"

# Part 2 (Two)

#### **The Similarity Between Brothers**

"Haha, he knew that I am okay. He also knew that you lied to him."

Indeed, due to Yu Ao Tian observation skill, when Qi Lian Ao Yun said that he was with Yao Yao, he had guessed that Yao Yao must be okay, after all, Qi Lian Ao Yun has deep feeling toward her, if something bad really happened to Yao, he would not call him with that calm speaking tone!

"You seem to understand him well. Since that the case, why you still scolded him?"

"I scolded him because fun, anyway it is boring." the most important is, when he asked her to get down from car, that anger she really can't keep it. "Qi Lian sunbae, I take my leave first."

"Leave? This place is hard to find ride, if you want to walk to down town it needs about one hour, don't you afraid to encounter scoundrels?"

"Ugh...." she really does not want to encounter any of scoundrels.

"Come on, I drive you." after said, Qi Lian Ao Yun seat in driver seat.

Yao Yao feels in dilemma frowned, can she? Can she take the ride? But.... She still remembered what Yu Ao Tian did, 'one step back today for two steps forward tomorrow' (retreat in order to advance), Qi Lian sunbae won't harm her right?

Thinking to this point, Yao Yao slowly take her seat....

'Ring...ring...." not long after the car starting the engine, Qi Lian Ao Yun's mobile phone is ringing, he sees the display screen, looked at Yao Yao.

"Yu Ao Tian?"

"En."

"Don't pick it! Don't pick it!!" Yao Yao waving her hands.

But seeing her this way, Qi Lian Ao Yun is smiling devilish, on contrary he picked the call: "Hello?"

"Bring Little Thing to my house."

Qi Lian Ao Yun staring at Yao Yao.

Although the phone isn't speaker but she heard what Yu Ao Tian said: "Not going!!!" he was the person who asked her to get down from the car, and now he is the person who asked he to go back, why must her? Does he think she as his pet?

"She is not going to."

"You directly drive her to here!"

"Yu Ao Tian, why based on what must I listen your command?"

Heard the way Qi Lian Ao Yun spoke, Yao Yao is secretly clapping her hands, that's right! Should not listen to Yu Ao Tian, anger him to death! Just anger him to death!!

"Ao Yun!!!"

"I have decided to take her to my home. I hung the phone."

"Hey? Ao Yun! Ao....." without waiting for Yu Ao Tian to finish his words, Qi Lian Ao Yun has hung up the phone call.

"Damn!" looking at Yu Ao Tian, he is angered by his own younger brother and also that Little Thing, his face already blue and then purple.

Those two person must be Yu Ao Tian 'unlucky stars'! If later in the future both of them are joining hand and working together, perhaps he won't live until forty, he has already angered to death by both of them!!!

"So irritating!" he spoke it angrily, Yu Ao Tian wears his clothes, he opened the door and rushed out....

About ten minutes later, he has driven his car to Qi Lian Ao Yun's house.

But when he arrived in front of the Villa's door, as he heard, there is faintly moaning voices of woman.

Yu Ao Tian's heart is tightening, 'thump' 'thump' hurried he press the door bell.

Very long time, Qi Lian Ao Yun is wearing his pajamas opened the door, but he

hasn't spoken anything. Yu Ao Tian has already pushed him away, directly dashing inside.

"Ah!!!" inside the living room, a woman with her messy shirt lying on sofa, seeing Yu Ao Tian coming, she is panicking covering her private area.

Realized this woman isn't Yao Yao, Yu Ao Tian is secretly heave a sigh of relief, finally he able to let out his tension.

"Ha, so strange, last time you were not tricked but why this time you are tricked?" Qi Lian Ao Yun laughed at him, slowly he sitting on the sofa, pulling that nervous woman into his embraces.

"Ao Yun, she is...." the woman is peeping Yu Ao Tian expressionless face.

"She? She is only a stranger, you not need to pay attention to her!" Qi Lian Ao Yun is glanced Yu Ao Tian with his disdainful eyesight.

He showing him a cold expression.

7	7	1	Λ
Z		T	A

# Part 1 (One)

#### **Looking for Xia Ren Liang**

Dealing with his younger brother attitude, Yu Ao Tian is already used to it. "Where's Yao Yao?"

"She is not at my place, I drove her to her own house."

He had predicted!

But as he heard the way Qi Lian Ao Yun spoke, he still little bit worry. The main point is his younger brother is someone shady, there is time he also cannot guess what Qi Lian Ao Yun going to do.

"I leave." expressionless Yu Ao Tian turned his back and left.

"Hey, Big brother!" Qi Lian Ao Yun is chasing him until the in front door, his body is leaning at the door side, coldly said: "Both of us as brothers, since we were kids we didn't have any same interest. But this time, it seems both of us brothers, finally has shared one 'interest'."

Listened to his words, Yu Ao Tian chooses to keep silent, coldly he back to his car, the ride isn't stop moving forward to the place where Yao Yao's house....

'Ring, ring...' just arrived at Yao Yao's house downstairs, Yu Ao Tian's mobile phone is ringing: "Xue Tong, what's matter?"

"Ao Tian, the airplane ticket is changed to next two hours, you hurry prepare your stuffs for going to Japan."

"Why suddenly changed?"

"The person that you wanted to meet, suddenly phoned that tomorrow will be going to England. Hope to meet you tonight."

Yu Ao Tian is silent, his pair of deep eyes flashed looking at the fourth floor of the apartment.

From the little window, it shows the light still on, it seems that little thing hasn't slept? "Okay, I understood. I am going to airport." hung up the phone

call, he turned his sight into other way, and then slowly his car disappearing into the darkness of night.....

"Huh, it has been so long not sleeping in this bed, it really gives good feeling." dawn, that small palm-sized room is only enough to accommodate her small single bed. Yao Yao is rubbing her sleepy eyes, stretching her body.

Staring at familiar environment, every thing is so familiar. Since she was 13 years old until today, although she gathered all her footsteps that printed in this house the accumulation won't be more than a month, but there is no slightest unfamiliar feeling in this house, on contrary she feels as if she always staying at this home.

Is the reason because she staying at Yu Ao Tian's place? She carefully compares, although her home is smaller by one size number of Yu Ao Tian's apartment, but all are so cozy, so comfortable.

\*\*

"Mom, good morning."

"Dear, come having your breakfast."

"Thanks Mom." Yao Yao is mouthful eating the food that cooked by her mom, she feels touched and almost shed tears, this familiar taste, mother's smell. Hu.... "Mom, I am going to office."

"En? Yao Yao, recently what are you busying? At one moment you are going to school, another moment you are going to office."

Staring her mother face that filled with suspicious expression, Yao Yao remembered, for all these time she was busying Yu Ao Tian's matter, she also forgot to contact her mom, she also forgot to pay visit to hospital looking her grandfather.

"Mom, anyway recently there were many things happened, I can't tell you all at once, but wait until I done with my things, I will come to accompany Grandfather, okay?"

"He he, you silly little girl, mom does not need you companion, as long as you contacting mom, then mom will have peace in heart, satisfied."

When children travel far from home, mother never stop worrying. Since Yao Yao graduated from Senior High in Japan and back to China, she is lessen showing up in home. This, as her mother understanding, she always has thought sorry toward Yao Yao, moreover she feels guilty, but she more afraid her daughter being bullied at outside.

"En, Mom, I understand. I take my leave first."

# Part 2 (Two)

#### **Looking for Xia Ren Liang**

After she sending off and see her daughter left, Mother Luo is taking deep breathe, as mother she knows very well and also can sense that her daughter attitude is little bit different compare to the past, her smiles are more, her eyes are brighter, recently her daughter must be in good condition, right?

"Tian Ming..." Mother Luo is taking out an old photo which colored already yellowish. The man who in the picture has delicate features, having impressive appearance, he was Luo Yao Yao's father who had passed away. "Recently my eyes are twitching, I feel something bad is going to happen. As you know, my hunch has always been very accurate. I really afraid something bad happened to Yao Yao, but now it seems...." she faintly smiled: "Yao Yao must be okay."

"If it say so, haha, perhaps this hunch has relation with our father. You rest assured, I will keep my promise, I won't let either our father or Yao Yao get into trouble! Tian Ming, you in heaven must wait for me, I will.... Very soon going to accompany you." she murmured, Mother Luo smiles while close her eyes, slowly takes that yellowish color picture in her embraces....

A BMW 7 series is slowly stopping at Berson Group entrance door, Yao Yao is carrying a document amd coming closer to the car.

"Xiao Meng Li, where are you going?"

"General Manager Long, I asked you to start the engine and wait for me, not to drive me going out. I have thing that need your help to do."

Long Ye frowned, she is still calling him General Manager Long, but she keeps on giving him order, actually between both of them who has the bigger authority?

Hehehehe.... "Say, CEO Luo, what do you want me to do?"

"Ugh.... Long Ye Ge Ge." Yao Yao is helplessly pouted her mouth, hoping he will stop to tease her.

"Hehe, I still prefer to hear you addressing me this way. Say, sister, what help do you need?"

"Come." Yao Yao quickly takes out thick document from her bag: "Inside her there are nine names list, you take a look, who you know, I have prepared the data, you take it to them and let them to sign it."

Long Ye is flipping the document carefully: "Are all of them the supporters selected for Yu Ao Tian?"

"Yes!"

Basically the names in the list are the strongest influential Chinese Businessmen, Long Ye and some of them can be said have few connection: "I handle it."

"Well, so I trouble you." after said, Yao Yao is push open the car door.

"How about you?"

"Me?" she bend down her body looking at Long Ye who sit at driver seat, smiled: "I need to go to Lan Du Group for while."

After experienced last time matter, under Yao Yao helped, Lan Du group still preserve it's position in ten tops at the fourth rank. So, for this time for sake of Yu Ao Tian's political congress election absolutely won't less Lan Du's group. But she has premonition, if asking Long Ye to look for Xia Ren Liang, he won't sign.

"Miss, do you have any appointment?" the in shift receptionist politely asking her.

Yao Yao awkwardly smile: "Sorry, I don't have any appointment, but I have important matter want to look for your CEO Mr. Xia Ren Liang."

"I am sorry, if you don't have appointment, I can't let you go in."

Ck.....

It earlier she knew something like this going to be happened she would not delete Xia Ren Liang phone number!

Yao Yao always stick with her decision whenever she had made one, when she had been ensuring Lan Du's group peacefully went through all the critical

circumstances, she had deleted all things regarding / related to Xia Ren Liang. But she never thought, now this become her problem.

What to do? How can she meet Xia Ren Liang? Must she waiting him in here?

Yao Yao is in dilemma standing in front of Lan Du's group entrance lobby, she walking back and forth.

Just in this time....

"Xiao Luo?"

# Part 1 (One)

#### **Unforgettable Love**

It is woman's voice.

Yao Yao is lifting her head to look at the voice source: "Xiao Qiao?"

"Secretary General Qiao." the in front desk receptionist is politely bending respectfully toward Xiao Qiao.

She is surprised pointed at Xiao Qiao who smiled: "You?"

"Haha, after one month coming to Lan Du's group. Now I have promoted to General secretary position."

General secretary position? Does it mean her work is similar with Miss Mo? Haha, Xiao Qiao is awesome.

"Xiao Luo, why are you coming here?"

"I.... I am coming for yours CEO Xia. But, I don't have appointment." she smiled awkwardly.

Once Xiao Qiao heard: "Come on, I will bring you to meet Ren Liang."

Ren Liang? Does Xiao Qiao and Xia Ren Liang?

Xiao Qiao is taking lead and directly bring her to CEO's room.

Xiao Qiao who seems so familiar with all the way, pushing open the office room: "Ren Liang, see who is coming."

Inside the office room, Xia Ren Liang is lifting his head up, but at the moment he sees Yao Yao showing up in front of his eyes, his eyesight obviously changes bright, but very quickly it turned dimmer and expressionless. "Yao Yao, why are you coming?"

"Haha, I come to ask for your help."

"Oh?" Xia Ren Liang rolled his eyes, smiles toward Xiao Qiao: "You can go out first, Xiao Qiao."

"Ren Liang?" Xiao Qiao is little bit unhappily creasing her forehead.

Yao Yao senses something odd, but quickly Yao Yao is trying to change the awkward atmosphere inside the office room: "Haha, no need to ask Xiao Qiao goes out, it's only a simply matter." she is trying her best to say.

But Xia Ren Liang has been already signaling Xiao Qiao to go out, a moment, Xiao Qiao is curled her hand into fist, forcing to show a smile: "Xiao Luo, you have chat with Ren Liang, I won't disturb, I take my leave first."

"Uhm... Xiao.... Xiao Qiao...." seeing Xiao Qiao who is going to leave, Yao Yao feels in difficult frowned.

Actually Xia Ren Liang doesn't need to do this, she can feel that both of them are dating, while Xiao Qiao impossible does not know Xia Ren Liang in the past....

Now Xia Ren Liang asked Xiao Qiao to leave, she completely can sense something odd.

"Haha, Yao Yao, what kind of help you seek from me?"

Listened to Xia Ren Liang's voice, she changes her complicated expression in her face, forcing herself to smile: "You must know, now CEO Yu is going to go for political election, I hope you want to be his supporter."

"Yao Yao? Am I mistaken something, you are looking for me only to ask me helping Yu Ao Tian?" Xia Ren Liang disbelieved hurried get up from his seat, as fast as an arrow standing in front of her: "Have you forgotten about last time matter?"

How could she forget about the matter? That time she really hated Yu Ao Tian so much, hated him who humiliated her, why must he say something like that in front of Xia Ren Liang.

But, she is born naturally only to remember other people kindness, and trying her best to forget all the unhappy things. In the future Yu Ao Tian will going to do, will going to do many many good things, she has already had that vision. "The past no need to mention."

"Ha, are you still becoming Yu Ao Tian's lover?" when Xia Ren Liang asking this matter, his speaking tone as if disdain her, perhaps he does not do it on purposely to look down at her, but whoever mention about 'lover' this word,

everyone must use this kind of speaking tone.

"I....currently I...." must she tell him? Even she, herself does not know what kind of relationship she has with Yu Ao Tian: "Now I am officially dating him." whatsoever, she only can say so.

Xia Ren Liang disbelief frowning: "Are you really love him?"

"En, love." since the day she staying together with Yu Ao Tian, other than intimate matter, no mater what the question, she will answer love.

# Part 2 (Two)

#### **Unforgettable Love**

She does not like to explain so much with others, moreover telling others, especially when dealing with man who has feeling toward her, she will stubbornly say that she has already had someone she love.

If she does not say she loves Yu Ao Tian, and then telling blablablabal about her bitterness, there is no point to do so? And at last it means to signal others, telling them, 'I am not like anyone, please come to pursue me; I become Yu Ao Tian's lover because I have my own difficulties, please don't give up on me.'

There is no point to do so, by doing that way she only degrading herself!

"Bring it here!" Xia Ren Liang expressionless stretching out his hand.

She dumbfounded for moment: "What?"

"Don't you want me to be Yu Ao Tian's supporters? Hand over the document to me?"

Ha! Does this mean Xia Ren Liang agree? Quickly she takes out the document from her bag and hand it over to Xia Ren Liang, Xia Ren Liang looks so cooperative signing it.

"Thank you. CEO Xia."

"Ha, CEO Xia, this kind of addressing is sound alike stranger." Xia Ren Liang mocking by laughing himself, hand back the document to Yao Yao: "I signed my name only because of you. I know, if I don't put my signature, you won't be happy. So that, although this matter really makes me unhappy, but since it will make you happy, I willing to do it!"

At beginning she actually so happy but because Xia Ren Liang spoke this way, she feels gloomy.

Although she really slow for everything regarding to feeling matter, but she also understood what Xia Ren Liang mean by his words. She is shivering when taking back the document, she silent for moment, take deep breathe, slowly said: "You

and Xiao Qiao are dating, right?"

"That's right! We are going to marry soon."

Just as expected! Her guessing isn't wrong, due to Xiao Qiao capability impossible for her to be general secretary for Lan Du's group, except she is CEO's future wife.

"Congratulation. After all you find a right person, just having good life with her." Xia Ren Liang, you must be able to grasp the meaning behind my words, right?

Since you have choose to holding hand until old, must be respecting each other, or else not only Xia Ren Liang will be bitter alone but there still Xiao Qiao too.

"I take my leave first." when Yao Yao is turned her back to leave.

Suddenly Xia Ren Liang rushed in front her, give her back hug, hugging her tightly.....

Xia Ren Liang.... What does he do? Heart, 'thump' 'thump' skip beat nervously, she is dumbstruck with her wide open eyes, turned back, she can see from her eyes-corner that good looking face leaning on her shoulder.

At sudden the atmosphere changed to be such ambiguous.

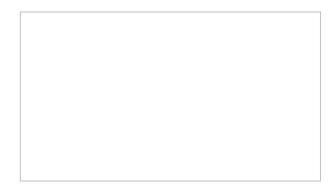
When Xia Ren Liang sees pair of Yao Yao's eyes are filled with complain and also surprised, he realized he had done something foolish!! "I am... Sorry." faster he free his hand that hugging Yao Yao, his eyes avoiding her.

Gee.....

Damn! She must not choose Xia Ren Liang to be Yu Ao Tian's supporters, furthermore she must not meet Xia Ren Liang. It seems she has underestimated this man feeling toward her.

"Yao Yao. There is something that I always want to ask you." Xia Ren Liang heave a sigh, his black pair of eyes are filled with her reflection: " That time, when Lan Du's group facing a crisis, Xiao Qiao sent me PR planning, was it yours"





Ah~ Finally the man that I always ship with Yao Yao is showing up, starting this chapter. Which at the same time, this is marking the half way of the novel itself....

What a long journey~

### They are going to be Married

'Bang'

After Xia Ren Liang said this, suddenly the CEO's office room door is opened, with panic expression Xiao Qiao coming.

For once again the atmosphere turned to be awkward.

Xia Ren Liang frowning, there is no anger in his speaking tone: "Xiao Qiao, what are you doing here?"

"I... I, I just want to know whether Yao Yao has left or not."

Haha, Xiao Qiao perhaps not really coming to check whether she has left or not, but she afraid Yao Yao would tell Xia Ren Liang about the truth? Yao Yao is helplessly smile, her eyes are gleaming slowly looking at Xia Ren Liang: "The question just now you asked...what do you mean?"

Looking at Yao Yao pair of eyes which showing suspicious sight, Xia Ren Liang despaired, sighed: "No, nothing."

"En, well I take my leave first." Yao Yao nodding her head to both of them and then she left the CEO's room.

"Xiao Luo! Xiao Luo..." not long after that, Xiao Qiao chased at her back.

She has known that Xiao Qiao might come to chase after her: "What?"

"It is regarding to that matter."

"Alright, Xiao Qiao, you don't need to say anything, since I let that matter being taking care by you, it means that the matter would be forever kept inside my heart as secret. Rest assured, I will never tell anyone for this life time."

"Haha, thank to you, Xiao Luo. I don't know whether Ren Liang have told you or not, we are going to marry soon?"

"En, he had told me, congratulation."

"What to congrats. He married me, actually because of your....."

Xia Ren Liang is type of man who value feeling more, when Xiao Qiao gave the plan solution to him, he really didn't know how to thank her.

While Xiao Qiao is cunning woman who has more schemer thought than any average women, she knows if she asked 100 million to Xia Ren Liang, he would give her. But after all 100 million amount of money still has it limitation, but married to this man it mean to have unlimited bank notes.

That time she showed an attitude, as if she didn't need any repay. It makes Xia Ren Liang has different opinion about this woman.

For such long time, both of them often to go out and having meal together. There was one time both of them were drunk, things happened. Xiao Qiao was crying and asking him to take a responsibility, since he is someone who value feeling more so that he fulfilled what Xiao Qiao wanted.

"You said these to me, don't you feel afraid that I will make report to Xia Ren Liang?" after heard what Xiao Qiao said, Yao Yao is jesting with her.

Xiao Qiao does not have any objection shook her head: "I have been so stress about this matter for long time, there is no one to share, I afraid I might go crazy soon."

"Hahaha, Xiao Qiao, it isn't something that you does not have anyone to share (talk about), but your heart just not at ease, so that you want to say it out."

"Heart not at ease?" Xiao Qiao dumbfounded, after sometime she smiles helplessly: "No wonder when the things just happened, I didn't feel any bitter, but for such long time I feel so bitter."

"Yes. That is because you are more loving Xia Ren Liang, more caring about him. If from beginning, you are using a trick (scheme) in order together with Xia Ren Liang, now you are sacrificing your true feeling. Since this is the case, all the trick and the scheme that you done, on contrary all of them are evidence you really love him, am I right?"

"Yao Yao!" the guilty feeling that followed Xiao Qiao for such long time, because of Yao Yao words suddenly enlighten her. "Do you think I am such despicable?"

"I don't think so. Still a same word, this only an evidence that you love Xia Ren Liang, that's all."

These words, all are them really a sincere words from Yao Yao, at the beginning Xiao Qiao perhaps targeting Xia Ren Liang's money, but when her heart is not at peace, without she realized it is an evidence that she has already fallen for Xia Ren Liang.

There are few women who will use any scheme in order to get the man that they love, this isn't called as despicable, on contrary this is type of cherishing expression.

On other side....

Xia Ren Liang is obviously some who despicable more!

Perhaps some of people might say, Xia Ren Liang is a man who value feeling more how can he is more despicable?

That's right! Although he is a man who value feeling more, but using this kind of attitude to settle feeling matter is sort of despicable.

The case is because of, he had slept with Xiao Qiao, he even decided to marry this woman. But does he love her? Has he ever thought that the important of marriage, if only to take a responsible and then he married her, this is something too foolish.

Actually Yao Yao really wanted to tell Xiao Qiao, regarding to this marriage matter better she consider it for once again. But looking at her back, actually she really have many matters of her own.

One blessing word, once sincere praying, it is more than enough. Just hoping there is one day, Xiao Qiao can cherish these 'scheme' let Xia Ren Liang really loves her. By this way, both of them perhaps will have happy.....

Leaving Lan Du's group, when she is going to take bus back to office, her phone suddenly is ringing,

"Hello?"

"Yao Yao..." the person who calling is Long Ye. But from his speaking tone, does Long Ye face with problem?

"What happen? Long Ye Ge Ge?"

"Hm.... Like this. Everything is going so smooth. But.... Hei Yan Long, if you want him to sign, you must come by yourself!"

Hei Yan Long? The chairman CEO of Bao Lai's group, the business is rank third in China. How can he suddenly asking something like this? Her position is such lower few levels than Long Ye, if he wanted to meet someone, Yu Ao Tian is more suitable, right? "Long Ye Ge Ge, what is going on actually?"

"This matter I do feel little bit odd. I have met Hei Yan Long few times, this person does not have any scandals, in this circle he is so low profile, he isn't a man who meet one woman and than do something, type of playboy. He suddenly asked for this, I also don't know what his reason."

"Since this is the case, I go to meet him must no problem, right?"

"I also don't know what to do. Now Ao Tian is in Japan, I can't contact him, ckckck!" From the way of Long speaking tone, she can feel he is in such helpless situation, the most important thing actually he cannot guess actually what Hei Yan Long wants. If this Hei Yan Long doing something not good to Yao Yao, doesn't this mean he is sending Yao Yao into tiger's mouth?

"Long Ye Ge Ge, you don't need to be panic. A person like Hei Yan Long who has position, has status, he wanted to meet me, this is also my honor. If I refused him, this obviously I am such childish, don't you think so? It is okay, I am going to meet him, it must be okay."

After listened to Yao Yao comforting words, Long Ye who is on other side phone helplessly smiles, really such obedience little girl, she even comforting him? No wonder Yu Ao Tian is such thoughtful for this little girl. She is so obedient and also mature, he even does not know how to use his heart to love her (dear her, sort of feeling for family member)!

"Fiuh...." silent for moment, Long Ye is taking deep breathe. It seems there is no such good way, if Hei Yan Long has bad record, he won't be such hesitated to refuse him, but that brat has very good track record, this is so frustrated! "I will going to accompany you!"

"En.... Okay."

The place that Hei Yan Long asked to meet is in private club. This area is little bit isolated. When Long Ye picked Yao Yao, it is almost evening.

"How can this place is such in isolated area?"

# Part 1 (One)

#### **The Youngest Chairman CEO**

looking around at darkness of the environment, Yao Yao shivers.

Long Ye keeps silent while driving the car, his expression is so serious and stern, he never thought that

Hei Yan Long would give such desolate address.

The in front of ten meters is Hei Yan Long private club, compare to the pitch dark night, that big four storey villa is glamorously brighten with lights.

The car is slowly stopped, Long Ye and Yao Yao are getting down from the car.

When they are going to enter the villa, suddenly Long Ye stopped his footstep. "Listen to me Yao Yao." he bend down his body, keep his height at her level, seriously said: "Since this time, you are not Yu Ao Tian's lawyer, you are Yu Ao Tian's woman! Either for our Berson Group or Ao Tian, we are not giving anyone face, we are also won't afraid of others people threaten. If Hei Yan Long has something bad intention toward you, you don't need to be afraid, you also don't think to consider too much, white path, Berson will come for you; if black path, there is Yu Long's group take care for you, understand?"

He really afraid that Yao Yao will consider too much for the complete result, afraid she will endure everything say nothing. Actually due to Berson Group current position, walking in business world, there's no one who is not bend down their waist?

So what with Bao Lai's group? It can say only for this time Berson is asking favor from Hei Yan Long, if there is other person, why must consider about Bao Lai's group?

"I understood. Long Ye Ge Ge, you rest assured, I will take the opportunity to act."

"En." after said, both of them are push open the big door.

And then, seeing inside the villa scenery, both of them dumbstruck.....

As seen, the glamorous big lobby is standing countless men, women, together there is beautiful music flowing. No need to ask, in here must be held a party.

Long Ye and Yao Yao are exchanging their glances, at same time both of them are heave a sigh, after all in here is banquet, there are many people in here, why both of them are so nervous? It seems that both of them are thinking too much.

"General Manager Long!" this time, a man from group of people who wears silver-colored western suit come closer.

He has honey colored skin tone which is similar with healthy tanning by the sun, he has pair of eyebrow alike blade so sharp, a deep black eyes utterly unpredictable, long eyelashes like wings cover his sharp eyes color. High bridge nose, subdue thin lips, v-shape chin, it articulate his arrogant character, it gives pressured feeling for others.

This man is....

When Yao Yao is wondering, beside her Long Ye has whispered: "He is Hei Yan Long."

Ugh....

This man seems only in his twenties, he looks at same age with Feng Chen Yi, he.... After all he is Bao Lai's group Chairman CEO, moreover he is such good looking!

"CEO Hei!" Long Ye smiles charmingly, quickly he stands in front of Hei Yan Long and shakes his hand:

"Aiya, you are having party why didn't you tell me, you see, I come with my casual cloths, this is obviously impolite."

"General Manager Long, you can come here I am so happy, why must we need so much courtesy?" Hei Yan Long politely smiles, his deep black eyes are slowly looking to Yao Yao.

She is nervous gulping her saliva, she feels this man is radiating kind of haughty, violent feeling, really scary.

"Come, Luo lawyer." Long Ye can feel that Hei Yan Long eyes are focusing at

Yao Yao, knowing that he called her.

'thump thump' although heart skip beat, but Yao Yao looks so calm from outside, her face is hanging a smile and walking there, nodding her head to Hei Yan Long: "CEO Hei, hello."

"CEO Hei, this is our representative lawyer of our CEO Yu."

"Oh?" Hei Yan Long eyes flashed, he glance Yao Yao with disdained: "I even thought that the representative lawyer of CEO Yu must be someone who has three heads and six arms, but it turned only a little girl. CEO Yu can find this little girl to be his lawyer, does he take everything too lightly?"

From the way Hei Yan Long speaking tone that such piercing to Yao Yao's ears, Long Ye finally understands Hei Yan Long does not attempt on Yao Yao but.... He taunts Yao Yao, but it also something that Long Ye dislikes. "Aiya, CEO Hei, although this little girl still so young but she has capability!"

# Part 2 (Two)

#### The Youngest Chairman CEO

"Is it? Ha...." Hei Yan Long is mockingly laugh, his deep black eyes are looking at Long Ye: "General Manager Long, come, let me introduce you to few of friends."

"Okay." Long Ye smiles while nodding his head, taking an opportunity, hurry he whispered to Yao Yao's ear: "Wait for me in here."

"En." she smiles, she is sending off Long Ye with Hei Yan Long.

Strange, this Hei Yan Long called her to come, does he only want to see Yu Ao Tian's lawyer? If only for this, this Hei Yan Long really such dull (nothing to do)?

Yao Yao is helplessly shaking her head, she not really cares what Hei Yan Long said about her, after all capability can't be judged from appearance.

"Quickly! CEO Hei is at there. Come, let's us greet him."

"Forget it, although you go there and talk with him for the entire day, don't you still know what kind of person Hei Yan Long is? The most beautiful woman in his eyes are not more than fart. If you want to mark, better you take a look for the man who stands beside CEO Hei."

"Which one?"

"The General Manager of Berson's group, Long Ye! Worth more than money, his appearance is one two (similar) with CEO Hei."

"Ugh..."

Listen to these two women who chit chat beside her, Yao Yao who is alone doing nothing pouting her mouth.

Actually this kind of party or any formal banquet from the high social class, most of the women are from one or two stars wealth family who are looking for prospect future husband (marriage partner) or having connection, while in their eyes they are looking for few men that are as expensive as diamond bachelor.

"Miss, are you Mr. Zhang's daughter the king of Logistics business?" suddenly,

a man who well-dress standing beside Yao Yao.

Suddenly she remembered, this kind of party, banquet, there are few successful men who are looking for 'partner' for this kind of occasions.

Although it says, man with lots of money won't lack of women, but they won't spend much money to look for prostitutes, because no self-pleasure. While this kind of occasions, this is the best place to hunt, looking for the suitable 'partner' and when telling outsider quite give face.

This is the rule in this elite circles. This knowledge that Yao Yao has, all because she ever followed Feng Chen Yi to attend this kind of banquet and also he was the person told her.

"Haha, Mr. It seems you are mistaken."

"Oh, this is, don't know whether I have honor to be friend with Miss?"

Cold sweat... Here comes again, in this elite circle the way to strike up a conversation really such old-fashioned. Secretly Yao Yao in her heart ROFL him, she also think how to reject him.

Just at this time, one of Hei Yan Long's hand is holding red wine, slowly walking to their side: "Am I disturb you guys?"

"CEO Hei! Not disturb, not disturb." the man with respect bend his head down.

Hei Yan Long takes a sip from his red wine glass, smiles:"Now, I want to have privately talk with this Miss."

# Part 1 (One)

#### Almost.....

"Oh... I understand. I understand. Well I won't disturb CEO Hei."

"Wait." When the man is going to leave, Hei Yan Long calling to stop him, he hand over the red wine glass to that man's hand: "Help me to put the glass to there, thank you."

"Ugh, this is my honor." the man is awkwardly smile and then turned to leave.

Yao Yao who is standing beside keeps quite for this time, she can feel something....

Hei Yan Long this person character is more than an arrogant! She really never seen, the person who host the party asking his guest to help him put down the wine glass, as if a servant.

"Miss Luo" at sudden Hei Yan Long's face changed to be cold, his pair of black eyes flashed as if wild beast looking at her: "Since CEO Yu is value you so highly, I really want to know, knowing Miss Luo capability. Now I have case related to legal matter I want you to help me to take a look for moment, can you?"

Hehe, does Hei Yan Long test her? It is so clearly he is looking down her, why must he need to test her?

"CEO Hei, just now General Manager Long was praising me little bit, as lawyer, I am only a newbie. I believe your company must have lawyer that better than me to help you share burden?"

"Ha, Can I assume by saying these thing Miss Luo, you are rejecting me?" After said, Hei Yan Long eyes flashed.

Yao Yao curled her hand into fist, she is forcing herself to give a faint smiles, she afraid if she keeps shirking, this Hei Yan Long perhaps would not give her chance backed off completely? He is really an aggressive man! "CEO Hei, I don't mean that way, since CEO Hei valued me, I will happy to share the burden."

"Follow me!" After said, Hei Yan Long is walking faster to the elevator direction.

Yao Yao in difficulty frowning, she is constantly looking for Long Ye in big hall, but it crowded with people,

she really cannot find Long Ye, finally she only can follow Hei Yan Long entering the elevator.

The elevator is stopped at third floor, Hei Yan Long is taking her to the most far of room.

Open the door room, inside it is only a simple decoration bedroom suite.

Hei Yan Long is taking her to this kind of place, this isn't look alike people want to talk about business?

"CEO Hei, you this?"

"Miss Luo, I am type of person who does not like to speak bunch of nonsense with woman." Hei Yan Long tugging his necktie, turn his back and then sitting in long single sofa: "Say, how much money that CEO gives you every month, I will double it! Perhaps, we make it simpler, how much money you are per night, as long as you say the price, I pay it!"

Does this Hei Yan Long have sickness? How can he speak this calmly when he said such indecent stuffs?

'Forget it, although you go there and talk with him for the entire day, don't you still know what kind of person Hei Yan Long is? The most beautiful woman in his eyes are not more than fart'.

Something odd, something odd, just now that two women had said Hei Yan Long isn't someone lewd, while Long Ye Ge Ge also said, Hei Yan Long isn't a playboy, so there is no reason for him to do transaction with her?

Actually what is his purpose?

Yao Yao rolled her eyes, at sudden her face changed dim: "CEO Hei, it seems that the person you looking to 'exclude the difficulty and anxiety' isn't me. I see.... You better find other people, I think, there must be many people who still wanted to do this kind of transaction with you!" After said, she is turned her

back and wanted to leave.

Suddenly Hei Yan Long rushed in front of her, he hold the door firmly. "Isn't Miss Luo coming to help CEO Yu to do some business? If I don't give my signature to that document, perhaps Miss Luo might get in trouble right?"

"Haha, CEO Hei you might misunderstand something. Our CEO Yu indeed need supporter to support his political election. But, it doesn't have to be you!!!"

Due to Yu Ao Tian today's position, as additional the others nine supporters, actually there is no need the support from Chairman CEO of Bao Lai's group as supporter. Of course, with him, it similar with cream on the top of cotton cake.

"Ha, it seems that all the people who stay beside of CEO Yu more or less must be contagious with his domineering aura! But, Miss Luo, don't your reason to stay beside CEO Yu because of money? So why are you still pretending to be such proud?"

Geez, if comparing pretending arrogance, how can she win over this Hei Yan Long?

# **Chapter 275**

# Part 2 (Two)

#### Almost.....

"CEO Hei, I see, both of us don't need to continue this conversation, please give way!"

Seen Yao Yao is stubborn wanting to leave, Hei Yan Long pair of black eyes dim: "This is what you force me!!!"

'papapa' clapping hand sound.

As seen, from the inner room there are two men who are walking out: "CEO Hei!"

"One recording her, one do it with her!"

"Yes!"

"Hei Yan Long, what do you want?" Yao Yao is surprised and shocked when asking him.

Hei Yan Long narrowed his sharp and cold eyes, pulling her long hair: "Don't understand? But very soon, you will remember of it!" after said, he used strength to push her.

Yao Yao is falling down to the floor, what happened? What is called as soon she is going to remember? Is this the planned of Hei Yan Long (Murder of invited guest)? She does not have rancor against him but why he does this evil plan?

"Really dirty...." Hei Yan Long is taking out his handkerchief, can't stand and wipe his hand that touch Yao Yao's hair before.

This time, those two men are picking her up left and right and directly taking her to go into the inner room.

Hei Yan Long is following at back, leisurely, leisurely he sitting in a small sofa.

"Let me go!" if you two touched me, I will let all of you pay in double!!!" Yao Yao who is pressed down on the bed moving restlessly.

Hei Yan Long looked her with disdain: "Pay in double? Do you think that CEO Yu will because of you this kind of cheap thing going to fight with me life and death? You are over-looked at yourself? Or do you think that you have capability to fight with me? Ha, I really don't know what to say about you, whether you are too naive or you are too over-estimated about yourself! Do it!"

"Yes, CEO Hei." accepted the order, one of the men is pressing down Yao Yao's body, while the other men is taking out the recording tool.

She constantly moving restless, she also can feel that no matter what today this Hei Yan Long does, he won't be stopped until he reached what he wants. Actually what is the reason? What the reason why Hei Yan Long hates her this much? Obviously this is the first time both of them meet, isn't it?

The second floor of Hei Yan Long's room.

"Chen Yi! Chen Yi!" Ou Yang Zi Xuan panicking pushed open the second floor most far room.

Feng Chen Yi is slowly sitting down from the bed, gently rubbing his temple: "What?"

"You guess who I saw just now?"

"Who?"

"You make a guess!" Ou Yang Zi Xuan is smile mysteriously.

Feng Chen Yi face is darken: "Now my head is hurt to death, I don't have any strength to play with you."

"Ha, perhaps after I said who the person is, you won't feel your head hurt anymore."

"En?"

"I, have seen, yours, Ex-girlfriend!"

## **Chapter 276**

# Part 1 (One)

### Your Ex-girlfriend is lowly slut

"Yao Yao?" just predictable, once he heard Ou Yang Zi Xuan said, Feng Chen Yi impatience expression is replaced with cold expression: "How can she come to join Yan Long's party?"

"How can I know, but she seems to follow Yan Long to third floor's room."

"Third floor's room? Isn't there is bed room?"

Seeing Feng Chen Yi keeps silent, Ou Yang Zi Xuan smiles while clapping his hands: "Rest assured, rest assured, don't you know Yan Long that brat, although he took your ex-girlfriend to his room, nothing will happen. Although your exgirlfriend is naked in front of him, he won't take even a glance."

"Zi Xuan!!!"

"Ugh..." realized his words are already too rash, quickly Ou Yang Zi Xuan covered his mouth.

"When Yan Long took Yao Yao, how his expression?"

"En.... Quite serious to stern, it seems anger face."

"Damn!" once he heard, Feng Chen Yi hurried wearing his shoes and get down from bed.

"What happened, Chen Yi?"

"Yan Long will do something to Yao Yao!" no other people who know Hei Yan Long more than Feng Chen Yi, it can be said that both of them are plus one Ou Yang Zi Xuan are growing up together, so close as if a side of pant. Just after that, Feng Chen Yi was studying in Japan while Hei Yan Long was going to England so for few years they were not contacting each other.

But since little boy, Hei Yan Long has bad temperament, once he wanted to fight / deal with someone, all are written over his face very clearly.

'knock knock knock' (knocking door sound)

Feng Chen Yi is panic knocking the door.

"Who?" from inside, it is Hei Yan Long impatience voice.

"Me!"

'Creak' (sound of door being opened)

The door room is opened, Hei Yan Long with curious face looking at him: "Don't your head hurt? How...."

Without waiting for Hei Yan Long to finish his words, Feng Chen Yi has already pushed him away, directly he dashed inside the room. Just as expected, inside the inner room bed he has found Yao Yao.

Feng Chen Yi face is darkening, a punch flew to the man's face who is pressed Yao Yao's body.

"Feng Chen Yi..." Yao Yao is dumbstruck to see at Feng Chen Yi's rough breathe, how can he be here?

"Chen Yi, what are you doing?" Hei Yan Long chasing inside, amused!

He steady his breathe, coldly asked: "It is me who asked what are you doing!"

"It's nothing, I just punish a lowly cheap slut, that's all."

"Hey!!!" the person who stand beside is Ou Yang Zi Xuan who just want to warn Hei Yan Long when used his words, but who knows that Feng Chen Yi has already rushed and sending his punch to Hei Yan Long's face.

"Damn! Are you sick Chen Yi, why you MF hit me?" Hei Yan Long fume in rage asked him.

"Yan Long, don't say anything more, that girl is Chen Yi's Ex-girlfriend." Ou Yang Zi Xuan afraid thing going to be complicated, explaining by whispering.

After Hei Yan Long heard it, his face showing disbelief expression: "Is it really?"

"Why must I lie to you!" Ou Yang Zi Xuan nodding his head affirmatively.

"Impossible, Chen Yi..." Hei Yan Long's eyebrows gather into one line, he is pointing his finger to Yao Yao who is sitting on the bed with disgusting expression, disbelief asked: "After all you even dated this cheap slut? You even hit me because of this cheap slut???"

At sudden, Feng Chen Yi pair of eyes are gleaming dangerously.

Ou Yang Zi Xuan shivers with cold atmosphere, hurried he standing in between of these two persons:

"Can both of you calm down for moment, OK? Yan Long, why are you keep on saying Chen Yi's ex-girlfriend as....cheap slut?"

"Ha, you can ask that woman what kind of disregard thing that she did."

"Ugh...." Ou Yang Zi Xuan turned his head, smiles tilted his head.

# **Chapter 276**

# Part 2 (Two)

### Your Ex-girlfriend is lowly slut

Yao Yao coldly creased her forehead: "CEO Hei, since you were asking me to come here, you have been blabbering so many strange things, I think it is better for you to explain everything clearly!"

"Ah. You really a good actress, don't you think today scenery is so familiar? Or until now you are still not remembered anything?"

He keeps on asking her to remember, remember, actually what should she remember? Others than her memory before she was six forgotten, everything still in her memory. Did she ever meet Hei Yan Long and offended him when she was at 6?

Wait...wait!

Her face long, Yao Yao is looking at the man who standing beside holding recording, and then looking at the man who hit by Feng Chen Yi that rolled on the floor. Does this.... "Do you know Shang Yun Yin?"

"Ha, finally you are not pretending?"

When Hei Yan Long said this, all pairs of eyes are looking at her, did she really do something that degrading.

"CEO Hei, I really want to know what's your relationship with Miss Shang?"

"Actually I don't need to say so much thing with you, since you are Chen Yi's ex-girlfriend, and he also such protective to you, because of Chen Yi, I must say what that 'good' thing you have done!!" Hei Yan Long sneered, tidying his necktie, slowly said: "Chen Yi ah, your ex-girlfriend is CEO Yu's lover (person who being supported), do you know it?"

#### No!!!!!!!!

All the blood in her body as if bleeding out, she does not afraid Feng Chen Yi to know this matter, but Hei Yan Long said out loud this matter in front of many people, moreover the person who stand inside this room also has Feng Chen Yi's best friend, furthermore Feng Chen Yi is so protective toward her, what kind of eyes his friend must see him?

Yao Yao is using strength to bite her lips, slowly she lowers her head, tears filling her eyes. She not dares to look at Ou Yang Zi Xuan's expression, she also not dares to look at Feng Chen Yi's expression, at this moment she only wants to find deep hole and jump in.

"And so what?"

'Thump' amused, quickly she lifts up her head and looked at Feng Chen Yi what kind of expression in his face, his expression is such calm, the way of he speaking is such calm, as if he had known this matter for long time ago, but she never told him the matter she becomes Yu Ao Tian's lover?

"Ah, Chen Yi, you are really so open-minded. I am telling you, this woman because of envy and jealous, she made Yu Ao Tian's ex-girlfriend lost her baby, and also made both of them broke up. And then, CEO Yu and my god-sister (younger sister / gan mei mei), who is also called as Shang Yun Yin together, the result this cheap slut..." after said, Hei Yan Long wanted to hit Yao Yao. But seeing Feng Chen Yi pair of eyes gleaming dangerously, he really not willing and only make fist his hand: "After all asking people to rape my god-sister and also recorded it and sent it to media!!!"

Hahahahahaha.... So that, did it how Shang Yun Yin tell Hei Yan Long? No wonder Hei Yan Long looked her with disgusting expression, he even asked her whether she remember or not.

"Woman, all these things are done by you, right?"

She did it, no she didn't do it, those things was none of her business. Li Mei Yun lost her child; Shang Yun Yi being raped, she actually the victim, didn't she?

"Chen Yi, these things do you know?" Hei Yan Long laughed, turned his face and looked toward Feng Chen Yi.

### **Chapter 277**

# Feng Chen Yi, Don't be too good to me

"I know it!" He coldly said this words, quickly he walking to the bed side and hold Yao Yao's hands: "Yan Long, Others than Friend relation, I can tell you earlier. These few days I will acquire your company's stock in large-scale."

Feng Chen Yi.... What does he mean? Yao Yao is open her eyes wide, with disbelief expression looked at him.

Without waiting for her reaction, Feng Chen Yi has already pulled her hand and walking toward door way.

"Feng Chen Yi, you MF after all you even sending out an invitation to fight because this cheap slut?" Hei Yan Long does not understand roaring, but Feng Chen Yi without any expression walking toward doorway.

But when he has already walked until the door, suddenly Yao Yao stopped her footstep.

Don't be like this.... You cannot be like this.... This is her matters, this matter shouldn't let Feng Chen Yi get involved, he shouldn't!

"What?" Feng Chen Yi turned his head, smiling at her.

At this moment, a sour feeling wrapped her heart, if she does not try to hold her breathe, afraid she will cry like-river to vent her ache.

Why must treat her such good? Now both of them aren't boy and girl friend anymore, why must he treated her this good. Reminiscence past time, no matter who bullied her, he would directly fight with that party to the point live and death, although that moment he was so angry, but he still would give her a gentle smile.

Now this kind of feeling as if she turned back to that time, it also give a feeling as if both of them never separate; as if never passed that two years separation.

Don't be like this! Don't be such nice to her! If in the past this kind of feeling is called as touched, now this kind of feeling is called as burdensome!

Chen Yi....

Thank you for trusting me; thank you to treat me so good. But.... Sorry, yours love, I have no right to hold on it anymore!

The heart feels down, she gives faint smile, suddenly she sway away Feng Chen Yi's hand, turned back to Hei Yan Long....

'Since this time, you are not Yu Ao Tian's lawyer, you are Yu Ao Tian's woman! Either for our Berson Group or Ao Tian, we are not giving anyone face, we are also won't afraid of others people threaten. If Hei Yan Long has something bad intention toward you, you don't need to be afraid, you also don't think to consider too much, white path, Berson will come for you; if black path, there is Yu Long's group take care for you, understand?'

So far, the thing that she hate most is using connection, she also dislikes to be said by people, who is her boyfriend; who she knows. But for this time, she has forgotten one thing, now she is Berson Group's person, she must not embarrassed Berson! Regarding as Yu Ao Tian's woman..... Ha, she really does not how to say out their relationship!

"CEO Hei, I am so envy with Shang Yun Yin because she has God-brother like you who such loyal. But, yours cute little God-sister seems not to take you as her older God-brother!" she is not in hurry when speaking, her lips curved up and then give him a mocking smile.

"What, you this woman is trying to devastate my relationship with Yun Yin?"

"Ha, if both of your relationship such good, no matter how I try to devastate it stills useless? But you CEO Hei, if you have Yu Ao Tian's phone number, you can directly call him, asking him what his relationship with your little God-sister! And also, the cheap article that made by your little God-sister in order to put me ashamed, today result is something must be done by her. And the last...." Yao Yao's eyes close and silent for moment, and at the moment she lifts her eyes, the

unimaginable domineering aura has wrapped her surrounding: "Now I am Yu Ao Tian's lawyer, waiting until you done with your investigation, if you are still seeking trouble for me, I dare to bet with you, CEO Yu won't let you go easily!!!"

Battle start....

Better put all the matters to hers.

Feng Chen Yi and Hei Yan Long are best friend, he isn't the person who related to this battle, so that must not dragging him into this matter.

"CEO Hei, you think carefully because of lies that your little God-sister said, you are marking Berson as foe, is it worth?" After said, she sneered, turned her body and walking toward the doorway.

Feng Chen Yi is coldly standing there, when their eyes met, she saw blame in his eyes.

Feng Chen Yi, are you blaming me, why must I do something like that, or because I depended on Yu Ao Tian?

Feng Chen Yi, are you complaining me, why I never depended on you?

No, I had depended on you....

When both of us were together, I always depend on you. But now.... I really cannot depend on you anymore.

"Hei Yan Long is quite good friend, since he found out about our relationship, I could feel that, I can see the hatred in his eyes, he is protecting you as his best friend, this is something rare, you must cherish his...." as regarding about me.... I am not worth to be protected by you!

Whispering, she is giving faint smile to Feng Chen Yi, slowly she walking away from his side.

"Yao Yao!!!" at this time, Long Ye with his rough breathe running, he is panicking glancing at expressionless Feng Chen Yi who stand in front of the doorway, and take a look to Yao Yao: "Are you okay?"

"[...."

"General Manager Long!" without waiting for Yao Yao to finish her words,

Feng Chen Yi has curled his hand into tight fist, quickly walking in front of him: "Trouble you to help me passing my words to CEO Yu, if he cannot protect his woman, please asked him to move aside!!!"

After heard Feng Chen Yi's words, Long Ye creased her forehead, but after that, he laughed: "General Manager Feng, there is one thing that you mistaken, this matter is none of CEO Yu business, CEO Yu also does not know anything, it is me who not protect Yao Yao well!"

```
"Long...."
```

When Yao Yao is going to say something, Long Ye stretch out his hand to stop her: "I am sorry, Yao Yao."

Not like this! Not like this! Both of them are mistaken! No one is sorry her, while she does not need anyone protection. Why all of them are....

It seems, this mean she is not strong enough! It's okay, she can slowly work hard, she will prove to all of people, she really does not need anyone protection!

On other side....

"Damn!!" when everyone is leaving, Hei Yan Long is raging in fume, smashing the vase beside him.

"CEO Hei?"

"All get lost!"

"Yes...yes." those two men are panicking leaving the room.

Hei Yan Long takes out his mobile phone from his pocket: "Yun Yin."

"God-brother, what happened?"

"I asked you! Actually what is your relationship with Yu Ao Tian."

"He is my boyfriend. But now he wasn't."

Hei Yan Long black eyes flashed, coldly said: "Are you sure? But just now when I called CEO Yu, he didn't say so!"

"Ugh...." it is obvious Shang Yun Yin speechless: "That, That, is that he said?"

His big hand made into fist, no matter what Hei Yan Long stills a CEO who owning company that is third rank in China, as soon as at once he heard, he can

tell that Shang Yun Yin is panicking. "Just don't think what Yu Ao Tian said, now I still want to know one thing!"

"What, what things?"

"You, in Luo Yao Yao's school, did you confront her first?"

"She... She is seducing Ao Tian, so that I...."

'creak' (cracking sound) without waiting for Shang Yun Yin to finish her words, Hei Yan Long has already hung up the phone call. "MF!!" after all he is being used by Shang Yun Yin!!!

#### My Personal Comment:

So far, I haven't find any picture that fit Hei Yan Long description. I know, some of you might wonder why I rooting on him so much, why I ship him to Yao Yao. On the first meeting Hei Yan Long is already so hateful perhaps compare to all the males, Hei Yan Long meeting with Yao Yao is the worst. He almost made Yao Yao raped. But again, Hei Yan Long also has his adorable side (just say I am so biased LOL).

### **Chapter 278**

# The Irruption in Vast of Darkness

Although this Hei Yan Long has arrogant character, temperamental, but he can differ black and white clearly, who is wrong then it is wrong, even the person is his little God-sister he won't slide it go.

This time if not because Shang Yun Yin's father begging him to help, he won't get involved into woman's affair. The result after he get involved, he is not more than laughing stock.

'creak creak' (creaking sound)

This creaking sound is coming from bone movement, Hei Yan Long dialing another number: "Zi Xuan, where Chen Yi?"

"He has back to his house."

"I asked you, what is that Luo Yao Yao relationship with Feng Chen Yi?"

"Aiya, to be blunt, she is the girl that until today loved by Chen Yi."

"But...." Hei Yan Long simply disbelief: "That woman is Yu Ao Tian's lover (girl that being supported by Yu Ao Tian, mistress) that kind of woman, how can Chen Yi still love her?"

"You are wrong, Yan Long." from other side of phone call Ou Yang Zi Xuan is taking deep breath: "Since the day we know Chen Yi until now, how many girls that Chen Yi introduce to us?"

Thinking carefully.... "It seems, none."

"But, Chen Yi always loves this woman, just as I know, both of them had been knowing each other when they were still in school, when knew each other, this little girl only 13 years old. Although you think that girl not good, but at least you must believe on Chen Yi's eyes! After all, that woman is the only woman that Chen Yi ever admitted as his girlfriend."

Being said by Ou Yang Zi Xuan, Hei Yan Long is speechless, that's right, if he suspicious about Yao Yao this is so normal, because he does not know her; but it will be different case with Feng Chen Yi, all of them are growing up together, Feng Chen Yi isn't type of man that easily being seduced by woman and lost of himself, he can love Yao Yao that deep, that girl must be someone special and different compare to others women!

Since she also able to walk beside Yu Ao Tian, furthermore she can be chosen as Yu Ao Tian's lawyer; Feng Chen Yi can love her deeply. If one man is blind, impossible two of these superior men are also blind too!

"That, Zi Xuan...."

Listened to Hei Yan Long puffed voice, Ou Yang Zi Xuan directly cut him off by saying: "Actually before that little girl left she had helped you to say few good words to Chen Yi. Here I am also going to calm his mood down, it will be okay. All are good brothers, impossible because of this matter turned to be enemy."

"En...." Hei Yan Long expressionless hung up the phone call, he knows that he won't change to be Feng Chen Yi's enemy, but the things that he cares....

'Actually before that little girl left she had helped you to say few good words to Chen Yi' it is so obvious that woman was so angry, but how could she help him spoke?

Heh.....

Hei Yan Long still feeling disbelief!

Other side.....

Long Ye is slowly driving the car leaving from Hei Yan Long's villa, the light form his car headlamp is shining lighten the rough road, inside the car is deathly silent.

"Yao Yao, just now..." Long Ye is breaking the silent as first person.

She gives him faint smiles: "I am okay."

"That.... Fine. Hahahaha." Long Ye let out dried laugh, his charming eyes are

gradually dimming.

'Long Ye, you should see your current self now, such loser you are!' in his brain flowing the words that Mo Xue Tong ever said.

Before he brought Yao Yao to Hei Yan Long in front, he had thought no matter what happened he would protect her well during Yu Ao Tian absence, the result, he still being taken advantage by Hei Yan Long.

Such failure!

Damn!

Long Ye is gritting his teeth, he holding tight the steer wheeling.

Just at this moment, seeing from the vast darkness, there are few lights that caught by their eyes.

Followed by few lights that are few cars that approaching them, it seems a dozen of sport car from it vague sounds.

"Long Ye Ge Ge...." at sudden feeling bad premonition, Yao Yao is nervously gulping her saliva.

"It's okay. No need to be fear." Long Ye face is darkening, suddenly he stepped on the gas, eagerly to break through the 'barricades' and looking for another way.

But this rough road left side is sea, the right is mountains and rocks, while those dozen cars are firmly locking at them, so there is no way to hide.

Subconsciously Long Ye glanced at the rear mirror, he is thinking to turn back but since when the way has already being locked by few cars.

"Zhu Que Group! They are Zhu Que's men!!" on the moment when Long Ye want to turn and deal with the situation, suddenly Yao Yao opened her mouth.

"How can you know it?"

"I....." Yao Yao is nervously trying to gather herself, faster said: "Just now when Hei Yan Long was looking trouble to me because he is Shang Yun Yin's older Godbrother. Moreover Shang Yun Yin must be known about our schedule. Furthermore in this kind of place must be the best place to set an ambush." She

also could not completely sure these people are Zhu Que's men, but her six sense has told her, others than Shang Yun Yin there won't be any person would do something like this.

"So we are get trapped in trapped (double scheme), since when this Hei Yan Long also playing in mafias world?"

"No! I doubt.... Hei Yan Long perhaps also being used." from just now conversation, Hei Yan Long was not really understanding her relationship with Shang Yun Yin, he only believed on Shang Yun Yin's words. If he really wanted to deal with her seriously, he also won't make a move in this such place.

"Ha, damn it either Zhu Que's group or Hei Yan Long, anyway they all are coming to send their lives. Yao Yao, have proper seat!" after said, pair of Long Ye's eyes are flashed, he speed up the car once again, alike an arrow he moving forward to break few of the cars.

Few meters before the crashing, Yao Yao is nervously covering her face with her pair of hand.

Quickly Long Ye stretch out his hand to block Yao Yao's in front.

'Bang' a sound, the crash give huge impact, it bounced out the airbags, luckily there is Long Ye protection, so that Yao Yao not because the car crash her face get hit.

"Long Ye Ge Ge!!"

"Sst...." But Long Ye is not that fortunate, although there is the protection of the airbag, but his forehead still dripping little bit fresh blood.

"Rest assure, it only small injury."

But this time, there few men who are getting down from the dozen car, armed themselves with gun, walking toward Long Ye's car.

Yao Yao is nervous open wide her eyes, simply to say she loses count of those enemies, what to do? What to do? There are so many people, even today if they are having wings it still hard for them to escape.

"Yao Yao, locked the car's door, don't get down!"

"How about you?"

"I have my own mission, while your mission is... Immediately make a phone call to Li Shang. If there is person dare to come closer to you, use this to attack them!" after said, Long Ye is taking out a gun from his pocket and give it into Yao Yao's hand.

"Long Ye Ge Ge, you give this to me, what about you?"

"Me? I have my own way." Long Ye gives a charming smiles, he turned his head to see who keeps on knocking the car door, at the moment he is going to open his car door, slowly said: "Yao Yao, this time... I won't let you get harmed, believe on me!" he has failed one time, this time, it the best opportunity to fix everything!!!!

### **279**

Somewhat the story is getting more interesting even without Yu Ao Tian presence. I am so excited to translate these few chapters since Hei Yan Long being introduced. Old mysteries and also the new ones are showing up but there still no clear trace. The pieces of puzzle....

### **Chapter 279**

### Yao Yao's Firing the Gun

"Long...." when she is thinking what to say, Long Ye has rushed out from the car, and he has been fighting with those armed men.

Looking at that constantly brandish persistence figure, Gradually Yao Yao eyes are moisten.

In the eyes of the worlds, those who are walking in the underworld, they are always sticking with 'bad guy' label / tag. And then who will know that those people who are mingling in underworld are those who value loyalty highly, also has the responsible side?

She believes, if not because she is in here, due to Long Ye capabilities in order to escape is only a piece of cake.

Ha, she is clearly said that she does not need anyone to protect her, but when she is facing with beating and killing situation, she really useless!!

"Hello? Han, Vice CEO Han. We, we are being attacked by people!" she is hiding herself inside the car, nervously she called Han Lin Shang.

"Location!"

Location? Location? Where is this!!! "I am sorry...I don't know where is it...."

"Damn!! What car that Long Ye used today, at least you know it right?"

"BMW 7 series."

'ttuttut...' (phone called hung up)

"Hello? Hello?... Han....Vice CEO Han?" The phone call is already hung up, her body is shivering looking at outside from the window.

"Argh!!!"

It is a person who bleeding and 'bang' sound, coincidental it hit into the car's window.

Fresh blood, the glass slowly flows down at the man's hideous face in front of her eyes, Yao Yao is shocked and wet her face with tears, her body is shrink inside the car, pair of her hand is holding tightly the gun that Long Ye gave her before, unstoppable shivering.

God, I begging you, please protect Long Ye Ge Ge.

Must be alright, must be alright, Long Ye Ge Ge must be alright.

Hu.....

She really useless, she even does not have any courage even to see the battle field. Or perhaps, she is feared, feared to see Long Ye getting hurt....

'bam, bam' there are sound from car being attacked, Yao Yao face is dropped, seeing those who standing outside the car from the window are still fighting.

Not long after that, those fighting sound gradually disappeared.

Perhaps Long Ye Ge Ge had fought them until they left? Is this an evidence that Long Ye Ge Ge is alright? Is it?

Vice CEO Han, Vice CEO Han, you faster come!!!

'bang bang!' there are few times of gun firing sound from the vast darkness, after heard that Yao Yao feels as if her head going to explode.

She is so afraid, she is really afraid that.... If Long Ye gets shoot!

Take a look far away through the window, it seems there are getting more people who getting involve to the battle. What is actually going on?

Just at this time, she heard 'knocking' sound, it seems that something is prying the car door, another second, Yao Yao can feel the door car is suddenly being opened.

She could feel cold air wrapped her, pair of her hand is holding the gun, it pointed at the person who is standing outside....

"Didn't anyone teach you, not to point the gun in front your own men?"

This voice is....

Without waiting for Yao Yao to react, one big hand as if catching little bird

taking her out from the car.

She is dumbstruck staring at that cold expression face, there is no warmness in his eyes, she is paused and exhale and then crying out loud: "Vice CEO Han..." so that the number of people is getting many because they are Yu Long's men, this is too good, really good!

It seems that Long Ye Ge Ge's car has GPS tracking, so that Vice CEO Han can find them so quickly?

Yao Yao is touched and wiped her tears on her eyes corner: "Long, where is Long Ye Ge Ge?"

Han Li Shang is pointing at not far place, slowly put her back to ground.

Yao Yao takes a look, as seen not far from there, there are many blood stain in Long Ye's body who is leaning on Long Qi's.

"Thump" (heart skip beat)

It feels as if heavy stone pressed her heart, she dashed to see: "Long, Long Ye Ge Ge??? Long Ye Ge Ge!!!"

"En?" Long Ye is difficulty to open his eyes, his lips are slowly curved up and make a smile.

Paused, Yao Yao finally can let out heave sigh, she slumps on the ground, it seems that Long Ye Ge Ge is alright.

"Flat Chest, you are terrible ugly when crying." Long Qi spoke with mockery face.

"You are still daring to say Xiao Meng Li?"

"So what?"

"I am your older brother who has injured to this point, Xiao Meng Li who isn't my biological younger sister can cry for me, you MF still dare to loquacious?"

"Cut it off, you still dare to pretend, it was clearly because you are too tired so that you lying on the ground. The blood stain in your body isn't yours but others people." Long Qi is unhappily rolled his eyes, supporting his body to get up from the ground.

"Fiuh." Long Ye is taking deep breath, lack of strength he is patting his waist: "It really has been long time for me not making moves, only in this short time, it feels as if going to collapse."

"Huh. I want to move, but there is no opportunity!" Long Qi is copycat his older brother helplessly shaking his head.

"Long Qi, You rest assured, this is only a start. This is not the first time people are taking an initiative to seek trouble to ours Yu Long." Said Han Li Shang coldly, while he is supported another shoulder of Long Ye, slowly walking toward the car that parked not far.

Hahaha, this good fellow sworn brother of Yu Ao Tian, their world are really difficult to barge into by the outsider, Yao Yao only can quietly standing beside them, watching them bickering, but somewhat the atmosphere among them are so wonderful.

Following their footsteps, when Yao Yao just walked two steps suddenly she stopped, slowly turned her head....

The ground is messed with death body, is this the world that Yu Ao Tian ever told her? Slaughters, bloody, perhaps for Yu Ao Tian and those groups of people this is such normal scenery alike having meal?

Just expected as what Yu Ao Tian ever told her, she really isn't someone who come from same world with them!

Yao Yao is helplessly laughing, at then she is glancing to the gun that she hold tight for this time, this is her first time touched gun.

"Yao Yao, get into car." Three men who are standing beside the car looking to her.

"Oh." when she just wants to move.

As seen, suddenly that three men face are changed. Long Qi is nervously shouted: "Yao Yao! Be careful....."

What.... Is.... Going on?

Her heart 'thump' 'thump' skip beat, as if the time is moving slowly. Yao Yao is nervously exhale air roughly, at the moment when she turned her head she

spotted behind her....

As seen, not far from her is a man with bloody body, slowly is getting up from ground, while his hand is holding a gun that pointed at Yao Yao!

'My majestic Lan Duo, the right way to hold gun is this way. Pull the trigger and attack the enemy at once. You are not allowed to give your enemy chance to attack you back. Understood?'

'Understood.'

Understood!

At sudden her face changed dim, her moisten eyes gradually turned with killing intention....

Another second!!

'bang....' the piercing sound of the gun rip the silent and quiet night, while three men not far from her has already dumbstruck because surprised.

"Ah!!!!!!: another moment, it is shocked voice, and then it followed by Yao Yao who has already fallen to ground.

"Flat Chest!" Long Qi is embracing the unconscious Yao Yao, his eyes filled with disbelief.....

### 280 A

**Chapter 280** 

# Part 1 (One)

### Who is The Majesty Lan Duo?

Long Ye and Han Li Shang both of them are exchanging glances, faster both of them are looking at the man who being shot by Yao Yao.

Both of them are expressionless when seeing that man who has already pool of blood, in their eyes there are flashed same strange shine.

"Killed at one attack!"

"So clean and flawless!" simply to say both of them are not daring to believe, the beautiful shot just now was shot by Yao Yao, no matter the skill or angle, or the target hit, it really similar to professional killer!

"Just now I have thought...." Long Qi who is holding the unconscious Yao Yao is walking in front, he has only talked in half but forgotten the last half what he going to say.

"I also thought that Xiao Meng Li can shoot, but the pace she shoot is faster than the man too much!"

Long Ye is narrowing his eyes, glancing at unconscious Yao Yao, he also looked at the man's body that had attacked. "Fortune?" his eyes are looking at Han Li Shang.

Han Li Shang is killer's head of killer group in Yu Long's, he is also the person who has high technique in weapon especially gun. He silent for moment, coldly shaking his head: "Absolutely had been trained by the professional!"

In the silent night, because of Yao Yao shooting technique has aroused many strange speculations.

Three men are wrapped by suspicious atmosphere, three of them are drown in their own thoughts.

At the time they are arrived, they are directly heading to Long's brother's house.

"Assumption, this woman real identity perhaps is killer, while her purpose, what is it?" the living room isn't big, there is cold voice of Han Li Shang echoing.

"Hah, how could flat chest be a killer?" Long Qi scorned and even rolled his eyes: "Even a chicken she not dares to kill!"

"Well, just now that shoot, how it happened?"

That's right! The shooting technique was fast, accurate, fierce, this too confused!

"Li Shang, I don't repudiate your assumption, don't you forget that, I had made Xiao Meng Li background investigation before!"

"But you must know, her identity before she was 12 years old has protected by the government!" That time Han Li Shang Ever said that, there are only two types of people who identity would be protected by government, one is type of dangerous person. The second is.... Someone who come from powerful background!

"No, I can't imaging Xiao Meng Li as killer." Long Ye really cannot imaging Yao Yao as someone titled as killer: "Li Shang, other than killer, what type of person who able to have this kind of shooting technique?"

"All the people who come from royal family! As what I know, in Europe there is a strict royal family, since the day their successors able to speak, they must accept education as strict as adult; since able to take things must be learn taking gun; when able to walk must learn self-defense, all because afraid espionage or other countries killer or assassination, kidnapping."

This, undoubtedly linked into the two possibilities from Han Li Shang, one is type of dangerous person; The second is someone who come from powerful background!

While Yao Yao perhaps....

"But do all of you forget? Flat chest is genius, perhaps she has ever seen our gun technique, so she able to do?"

"Ugh...." the words that Long Qi said has taken others to different direction, for once again they have forgotten that Yao Yao is genius young girl, this reality.

"Li Shang, is there any possibility alike what Long Qi said?"

"Ha, this you guys must ask Ao Tian, I am not a genius!"

"Argh!!!!!" at sudden, from inside the room flowing shocking screaming, three men who are sitting in the living faster rushing inside.

## 280 B

121212	

**Chapter 280** 

### Part 2

### Who is the Majestic Lan Duo?

Yao Yao face is white pale sitting on the bed, dumbstruck looking at that three men, another moment, she is terrifying holding her head: "Did I kill a person? I killed a person, did I? Did I?"

"Yao Yao, calm down!!"

"I killed a person, killed a person, killed a person!!"

"Yao Yao..." The Long's brother are busying comfort Yao Yao who is shocking to hysterics.

This is the normal person reaction for the first time holding gun. They are seeing one normal person reaction in Yao Yao's face, there is nothing looked alike any so-called as killer, so-called experienced being trained, it seems they are thinking too much, aren't they?

For long time, Yao Yao is being able to gain herself back, she drinks warm milk, her hand is trembling so obviously when she is putting down the glass into the bed head.

"Haha, Yao Yao, the person isn't died just now."

"Not died?" Yao Yao gloomy eyes are flashing: "Is that true, Long Ye Ge Ge???"

"En."

"But... But, as I could recalled, that bullet was hit on his...."

"Your eyes must be mistaken. Hehehe. Talking about you, was it your first time holding a gun?"

"En."

"Is it?" Long Ye is trying to confirm.

That's right, she can guarantee 100%, this is her first time holding a gun, also

first time firing it. But....

Why....

At the moment when she raised her gun, in her head there seems a sound flowing?

'My majestic Lan Duo, the right way to hold gun is this way. Pull the trigger and attack the enemy at once. You are not allowed to give your enemy chance to attack you back. Understood?'

How could there was strange voice flowing in her mind? As if she able to see faint hazy picture.

Sst....

Pain! Suddenly head feel hurt! As if going to explode, more she trying to find the answer more she feels the pain in her head!!

"Yao Yao, what happened?" seeing Yao Yao aching expression, Long Ye is suspicious and asked.

"My head is hurt, so hurt!"

Three men are exchanging their glances, Long Qi with smiling face come closer: "Flat Chest, tonight you sleep at here, I will sleep with my older brother."

"No no need."

"It is okay. You see, your face is so pale, faster go to sleep." Long Qi is talking with certainty. He is taking care of everything, and then three of them are returned to the living room.

"I can guarantee, she isn't lying, this is her first time gave a shot." Long Ye is confidently said.

Han Li Shang is coldly frowned: "I also feel she is not faking it. But.... Forget it, still better wait until Ao Tian political election done, we can discuss with him, discussing."

"En...."

For the entire night having nightmare, it is tormenting Yao Yao who is going to work with low spirit, sitting inside her office room feels uneasy.

Ckckck, what was actually yesterday hazy scenery?

Who is Lan Duo Majesty? What kind of person Lan Duo Majesty? Was it because she watching too much drama in the past, so that she was having illusion?

Ssst
Head feels hurt again, forget it, still don't think of it anymore!

This is how Hei Yan Long's Cadillac looked alike (more or less).

Berson Group Entrance.

A long wheelbase Cadillac slowly stopped, the driver is politely opened the door.

Hei Yan Long who is wearing black western suit while his hand is holding a bucket of red roses, entered Berson Group.

"Ugh." the on duty receptionists are exchanging their glances: "So handsome!" cannot help they swallowed their saliva. But another moment, both of them are gaining themselves, hurried stopped in front of Hei Yan Long: "Mr! May I ask do you have appointment?"

Ps: Remember to check out one more chapter for today ^-^

### 281

roses	

Still wondering why I like Hei Yan Long most of from all the male? This chapter is giving one of the answer. And there will be some more as the novel progress.....

### **First Time Giving a Woman Flowers**

Hei Yan Long stopped his footstep, narrowing his black eyes.

The assistant that followed at his back hurried walk to in front: "Two Misses, please give a way." after said, that assistant is pulled away the two receptionists who blocking him in order to give away.

Hei Yan Long is taking this opportunity by taking big strides and directly entering the elevator.

"Uh... Mr, you cannot get inside." waiting until two of the receptionists reacting, Hei Yan Long has already gotten inside the elevator.

'Ding' the elevator is stopped at the legal division.

"CEO Hei, please." Two of his subordinate one at left and one at right, blocking the elevator door.

One of Hei Yan Long's hand is inside his pocket while the hand that holding roses supported on his shoulder, he goes straightly to the legal division's lounge.

"Mr, hello, may I ask you..." the office staff in legal division when meets Hei Yan Long deep black eyes cannot help but being tempted.

"Where is Luo Yao Yao?"

After while, that employee gains herself, finger is pointing at Yao Yao's office room: "There, at there..."

"Thank you!" after said, Hei Yan Long is straightly heading to Yao Yao's office room.

"That, That man, is looking for whom?" not long after that, the employee is beside of the employee who is pointing the way to Hei Yan Long tilted her head and asked her colleagues.

"He said looking for Luo Yao Yao!"

"Holding, holding a bucket of roses and looking for Luo Yao Yao? Luo Yao Yao... Doesn't she CEO Yu's girlfriend?"

"But also cannot stop those who pursue her. Do you know who is the man just now?"

"Who?"

"Ah." this employee is giving secretive smiles, slowly said: "He is the youngest Chairman CEO, Hei Yan Long from Bao Lai's group!"

"He is Bao Lai's group Chairman CEO, Hei Yan Long! Why....why Yao Yao is so fortune, not to mention she has CEO Yu as her boyfriend, even the Bao Lai's group Chairman CEO also pursuing her. Hu..... Heaven is not fair."

'knock knock knock' (knocking sound)

The knocking sound, Yao Yao hasn't opened her mouth, but the door has already pushed open.

Just at right time Yao Yao who reading a document looked at Hei Yan Long, immediately her expression darker: "CEO Hei, did yesterday matter hasn't clear enough, or still, need to 'trouble' you to come by yourself?"

"Oh, You are misunderstood, yesterday matter I had clarified it, so that today I am especially coming here by myself to apologize!" after said, Hei Yan Long is taking out his hand that inserted in his pocket, and one of his hand that holding a bucket of roses tossed into Yao Yao's desk. "Take it!"

She is dumbstruck seeing the roses in her desk, she also looking at Hei Yan Long who is perfectly arrogant, she really wants to ask, is this brat coming to apologize or coming to make commotion? Is there anyone who coming to apologize with his kind of arrogant attitude? "CEO Hei, I accept your apologize and about the flower, better you take it back."

"Woman!" Hei Yan Long's eyes are gloomy, coldly said: "If not because of Feng Chen Yi's face, do you think I will be coming here to apologize to you? This is my first time giving a flower to woman!!!!"

#### Gee!

If the current atmosphere is not suitable to laugh, she really afraid she could

not control herself to laughing madly.

In this world there is no one like him, who because of his fellow sworn brother (good buddies) coming to apologize a woman. And then giving a bucket of flower to his buddy ex-girlfriend? People who don't know might think him wanting to poach!

"I know this is your first time giving a woman flowers, or else, you won't come and give roses." Yao Yao held her laughed, pretending to be icy when speaking.

"Hah?" Hei Yan Long frowned, his black eyes rolled: "What do you mean?"

"CEO Hei, before you are giving flowers, you better ask the meaning of each of the flowers, or else it will give misunderstanding." after said, Yao Yao is lifting the bucket of roses, giving it back to Hei Yan Long.

He took the roses, dumbfounded for a moment, turned his head and looked at his subordinates: "What is the meaning of roses?"

"Hei, CEO Hei, the meaning of roses is followed with it numbers. Just now you are bought 33 roses, the meaning is... The meaning is.... I love you...."

At sudden, Hei Yan Long face is turned dark, the hand that holding the bucket of roses is exposing his veins: "After all you had already known it why didn't you tell me! Why not say anything! Why didn't say anything!" he is constantly hitting that bucket of roses into his subordinate head.

"CEO Hei, I thought you are giving it to your girlfriend, so that...."

"Damn!" Hei Yan Long is fiercely biting his lips, next moment, he calms down, turned his head smiles and walking in front of Yao Yao: "Just now, thought nothing is happened." After said, he tossed away the bucket of roses to his back.

Yao Yao helplessly frowned, this Hei Yan Long really has violent character, he has bad temper, still really.... Scary!

"Bring it!" Hei Yan Long turned his back, as if big boss sitting on Yao Yao's office room desk.

"What?"

"Didn't you want my signature, still not hand it over?"

"....." hahahahahahahaha, to be honest Hei Yan Long is the most arrogant person she ever meet in her life so far, when apologizing he is alike big boss, he is using his signature to make up for his fault, and also when he is talking to orders as if talked to dog (talking to someone unimportant). Really admire him! "CEO Hei, you are coming late, I had been already looking for other people as replacement!" Yao Yao expressionless sitting at her own seat, an arrogant expression turned to other side.

"You!!!!" Hei Yan Long is pissed off and jumped down from desk, this is his first time being refused!! "You have guts!" coldly he said, Hei Yan Long turned his back and took his subordinates to leave the office room.

"Hahahahaha, This friend of Feng Chen Yi is so interesting." waiting until Hei Yan Long gone, Yao Yao finally let out her laughing voice, it seems that Hei Yan Long and Feng Chen Yi had already reconciled, right?

Not to mention, an arrogant person alike Hei Yan Long, he takes an initiative coming only to apologize because of Feng Chen Yi, she really believes. At same time.... Yesterday attacked it seemed there was none of Hei Yan Long's business?

'knock knock knock' (door knocking sound)

Suddenly the knocking sound interrupted her thought, "Come in."

"Miss Luo, CEO Yu is calling you to come to his office room."

Is Yu Ao Tian already back?

He is really.... Said left and then disappeared without any trace; said back he suddenly popping out. Just as expected he is a man that cannot be predicted!

"CEO Yu, you...." when entered into the CEO's office room, inside the atmosphere is little bit weird, she takes a quick glance at Long Ye who is having serious expression, and also looking at Yu Ao Tian who is reading document, her instinct tells her something bad is going to happen. "Why are you looking for me?"

Yu Ao Tian does not raise his head from his document, coldly said: "Hand over all the stuffs that you handle to your assistant, after that, you are going back to school."

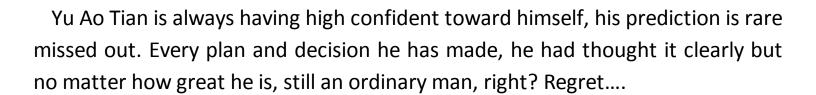
'Thump'

As if an invincible stone heavily pressed down Yao Yao's heart, it's only left one step, only one step for Yu Ao Tian's political election, just at this time he is asking her to get lost?

With unbelievable eyesight she looked at Long Ye's eyes, he still masked his face with serious expression, keep silent.

Actually what is going on, why Yu Ao Tian wanted to replace her? "Give me a reason!"

### 282A



### Part 1 (One)

# I won't let you to replace me!!!

Yu Ao Tian stopped to do his works, take a deep breathe, slowly lifted his head: "Your first priority is going to school, is this reason enough?"

"Not enough!!!" Yao Yao curled her hand into fist, as if an arrow dashed in front of the desk: "In my professional works, other than I am doing a mistake, or else I won't ever accepted being replaced before the things settled!!!"

Seeing how stubborn she is, Yu Ao Tian is creasing his forehead, his dark bottomless eyes slowly looked at Long Ye: "You take your leave first."

"Yes." Long Ye is nodding his head, turned and left the office room.

Perhaps, Yao Yao never thought that the day Yu Ao Tian back from Japan would replace her? But Long Ye is obviously clearly, when Yu Ao Tian back from overseas, he had told him all the things happened during these days, made report to him.

Yu Ao Tian does not angry, he also not blaming, he only called Yao Yao to come, and the rest he had said that he wanted to replace Yao Yao. Long Ye can feel that, although on the surface Yu Ao Tian didn't show any expression, but inside his heart he really cared what had happened within these few days, or else, impossible in the very critical time during the election he has asked Yao Yao to be replaced!!!

"Yao Yao." Yu Ao Tian circled his working desk, walking until in front of Yao Yao, both of his hands raised and gently caressing her cold little face: "These few days matter, didn't you see anything? If you are keep on meddling with my business, there might be more serious matter keep on showing up in front of you and if you are still staying beside me!"

During his absent when going to Japan he had already predicted what was

happening these few days, the relationship between Shang Yun Yin and Hei Yan Long, he also knew it.

So that, before he left, he said 'These few days I go to Japan. I have already asked Long Ye to help you, you remember! During my absence these few days, if you have something to do, must! Let Long Ye know, understood?'

But he lost sight of Long Ye, actually he is also an ordinary person, he isn't three heads six arms person (superman), there is time he also cannot do anything! Wanted she safe and soundly, only can depend on her own capability so that it can ensure she is safe soundly.

"I understand your meaning, Yu Ao Tian, you are speaking rounding.... Actually you are looking down at me!" after said, Yao Yao break free Yu Ao Tian's hand that touch her cheek. "That's right, I admitted, when Hei Yan Long is seeking trouble with me, I could not do anything; when being attacked, I almost pee in my pant. But so what? You, Yu Ao Tian when first time you killed people did you such handy? Everything has it process, I can slowly adapt with it!"

Her face is showing the stubbornness of little girl, as if an impulsive person who is going out from cottage and not afraid of a tiger tenacious sense.

This is his first time to see a mature expression in her cute little face of young girl.

Honestly, there is few things strange, on the day he wanted to keep Yao Yao beside him, he was expecting this little thing to grow up faster and understand the dark side of this society, because by this way she can survive in this society.

But after Yao Yao stepped into this society, he is starting to regret of his decisions, he hopes she can be able to live as the normal 19 years old girl. This is so complicated.

"You cannot do the comparison with me, because I am a man!!"

A man? Hah, did he mean because a man so there is no fear to do anything, while because she is girl so she born naturally as someone must be protected? No wonder Yu Ao Tian never had any respect toward women! "Miss Mo also a woman, doesn't she also help you to do something?"

"Are you compare with Xue Tong? Ha...." there is traced of disdain luster from

pair of Yu Ao Tian's eyes, he curved up his lips, provoking her: "Perhaps Xue Tong isn't anything comparing IQ with you, but at least she can 100% protect herself in order not to get harmed, while you?"

The Asian woman who is mingled Underworld, Mo Xue Tong is quite famous, at least few of men who has status and power had failed in her hands, is there any difficulties to protect herself?

"That's right, in some case, I admit that I am not even a fart; but in some sides, I still have confident for myself!!!"

"Oh, that it." Yu Ao Tian is curved upward his mouth, smiled: "I understand what you mean, doesn't you want to say that, in white path side, you can protect yourself? Well, tonight I will let you see, what is so-called as white path, actually how white is it!!!!"

# Part 2 (Two)

### I Won't Let You To Replace Me!!!

"Aiya, CEO Yu, it is really hard to have meal with you." inside the private room, Yu Ao Tian is inviting few of familiarized politician.

"Hahahaha, all of you can come here, this is my honor. For these few days of election, I still need to depend on you these few seniors."

"What are you talking, are you CEO Yu satirizing us? Everything that we have today, all thanks to your help, is it right? Hahaha."

Today the politician who is coming here, basically are those who had received Yu Ao Tian 'grace', in their eyes, Yu Ao Tian is their 'money owner', so that they still need to see Yu Ao Tian's face when doing something.

"CEO Yu, we have seen Miss Mo before, and who is this Miss?" one from the four men, a middle age man about is someone in his fifty years pointed at Yao beside Yu Ao Tian.

Yu Ao Tian expression changed cold swept his glance to Yao Yao. Politely Yao Yao standing up and nodding her head to all of them: "I am a representative lawyer for CEO Yu for this time election, Luo Yao Yao."

"Ugh..." all the people are exchanging looks, silent for a moment, and then they are giving dry laugh:

"Still, still so young, hahahahaha."

From their expression on their faces that is not difficult to see they are looking down at Yao Yao, she is born with baby face, even putting makeup, it still helpless to hide her child aura.

But Mo Xue Tong is different, her beautiful icy aura is able to suppress, it only can make people to see but not dare to play with.

"Come, drink!"

Drinking three rounded, all the politician have already showed tipsy, but bottle

by bottle of liquor still opened.

Yao Yao is taking glance at Yu Ao Tian who sits beside her, count carefully, 500 Moutai, at least he has already drunk it bottle and half, but his face still does not show any drunk expression.

Perhaps, due to Yu Ao Tian today's position, liquor is becoming part of his daily, if he does not have ability to drink perhaps cannot settle anything.

Her moist eyes is turned to another way, taking an advantage when everyone is drinking, faster she takes the liquor bottle beside Yu Ao Tian, without any sound she pour half into the towel for wipe hands.

This subtle moves, others perhaps not aware of it but this view could not pass from Yu Ao Tian's eyes.

Two persons four eyes, Yao Yao is awkwardly smiles, does he bother? She is helping him!

Who knows, quickly Yu Ao Tian looked at the surrounded people, he whispered in her ear: "Bao Bei, why don't you pour all?"

ll .	" uah	impossible	Ha could r	act drink and	umara riaht?
•••••	ugii,	impossible	ne coula i	iot uriik ari	yillore rigitt:

# **Drinking Liquor for Engaging into Gathering**

And for rest of time, as long as there is someone pour the drink full for Yu Ao Tian, Yao Yao will pour all the liquor into that white towel when no one noticed it she will replaced it with mineral water.

This is also called as capability, when half of the people are already drunk, only Yu Ao Tian who stays sober, this undoubted is Yao Yao hard work!

"CEO Yu, you are really, really awesome, we are a group of old men really cannot win over you. Admire! Admire, let's go! My treat, let's we go to usual place keep on drinking!" words are said by the head of financial secretary, one of the most highest position among those who are at here. Tipsy he stands up, walking to door.

"Still want to drink?" Yao Yao is dumbstruck, just as an information, just now when having a meal only she who drink beverage, while everyone is drinking white wine, even Mo Xue Tong drank it too. Everyone at least had already finished one bottle of white wine, isn't it enough?

"This is the reality, all of them during the day they are looked alike gentlemen, but when night comes they are drinking liquor as if part of entertain, anyway, money is easy coming, not spend it, sooner or later it will be found out by ICAC." when Yu Ao Tian said this, he also followed these few men going out from the private room.

She is dumbstruck looking at the dishes served filled the table, one by one the government officer are stink with liquor smell, helplessly smiles.

It seems, things that so-called as white path there is no much differences with

black path. Drinking liquor, playing with women, the most obvious difference is, black path is directly killed people, while the white path killed people is more tricky and filled which schemes.

Fiuh.,....

Perhaps, the thing that suitable her in the future is, opened her own lawyer office and helping the commoners with legal cases?

Cannot! She cannot admit defeat! If now she lowers her head, she will be laughed by Yu Ao Tian.

"Come, come, little beauty, go, sit beside CEO Yu, you take care of him." inside the private room, the head of financial secretary pointed one of beautiful woman as little beauty.

"Rest assured, I won't embarrassed you." that woman is smiling alike vixen, turned her body and walked in front of Yu Ao Tian.

Yao Yao who is sitting quietly in one corner rolled her eyes, ha, can this count as Yu Ao Tian looking for woman? Hehehehehe.... She feels complacent.

Yu Ao Tian coldly spoke: "Officer Liu, as you know that I prefer my secretary to take care of me." no matter what kind of dinner he attended, he can still not bringing Long Ye, he can still not bring Han Li Shang but only Mo Xue Tong he could not less! As long as she there, at least she could help him to stop many flowers to entangled him.

"This is true. These flowers really not as beautiful as Miss Mo not even an half, no wonder CEO Yu seems not interest," Officer Liu takes deep breathe, calling the women who are in left and right of his side pouring liquor to Yu Ao Tian.

"Fiuh" Yao Yao who sits in the corner let out heave sigh, although she little bit disappointed Yu Ao Tian didn't break their agreement. But things that make her more disappointed actually, successful men are too many helpless!

Sometimes, perhaps some men are not really playboy, but because they have reached certain position so that attracting few troubles. Luckily there is Miss Mo who stays beside Yu Ao Tian as shield, if no her what to do?

When everyone is hugging right and left, he is lonely sitting there, would not

he going to be laughing stock?

Really such pity.....

"Miss Luo, right?" just at this time, two officers are sitting beside of Yao Yao: "Just now when we were having meal you were not drinking any liquor, come, let drink with us."

"I am sorry, I cannot drink."

"Hah, Miss Luo, you are coming for social gathering, don't you drink? You words really not giving us face?" two men face suddenly turned dim.

She is creasing her forehead, although this is her first time to join such drinking gathering, but in television she has watched this kind of scenery so often, coming to this kind of place, if you say cannot drink it will really make some people mad to you.

"Alright. Let me give my toss to everyone." she raised a glass of foreign liquor, forcing herself to drink it, the pungent smell instantly give burning feeling until the head.

"Good, give a face!" two men are followed to drink. "Miss Luo, let's us play dice."

Still not letting her go?

Her begging eyes are looking at Yu Ao Tian, he is accompanying few of the officers.

If this time she rejecting both of these men, will they keep saying her not giving them face? It seems they will.... "Alright. Let's we play dice. But, can I go to rest room first?"

"En, can, we are waiting you."

Seeing Yao Yao left, both of the men are laughing. Not long after that, one of the men creasing his forehead with complexity: "Will it makes a ruckus?"

"Only a lawyer, what to afraid of?"

"But she is CEO Yu's people."

"Cut it off, in this circle who does not know that CEO Yu and Mo Xue Tong

matter, moreover the women who are following at CEO Yu, they are sexy type, this little girl won't be CEO Yu's woman. Since this is the case, we don't need to think too much." when the man talked until this point he is not embarrassed laughing: "\*\*, this is still my first time, think of it really exciting!"

"You are said wrong, it must \*\* lawyer. Playing this is more excited."

"Hahahahahahaha..."

A moment of effort, since Yao Yao back from the rest room, the hostess who are sitting at their side keep on pouring the liquor.

"Miss Luo, what to play?"

"Hahaha, I really rare out for playing, so that too complicated rules I can't play, how about playing big and small. Is it okay?"

"Uh...." after these two men heard, they heart are burst in joy, this even can drunk faster. "Okay, who lose, punish with drink."

"En!" after said, three of them are playing.

Yao Yao lost not many, glass by glass the foreign liquor get in to her stomach, but these two men are also not better than her, they also drink many.

Not long after that, three bottle XO, has finished by three of them. Two men feel uncomfortable creasing their forehead: "Miss Luo, you are really awesome. We, both of us really satisfied. We cannot, I want to go home, go home."

Two men are standing up tipsy, they cannot stand firm and almost fall into floor. When looking at Yao Yao, she seems as if someone does not have problem, sitting there firmly.

"Liu, officer Liu, today we are drinking too much, cannot accompany you, we take our leave." two men are walking in front of officer Liu, and bid good bye with him, and they even give thumps up to Yu Ao Tian:

"Your lawyer, really, good drinker!!"

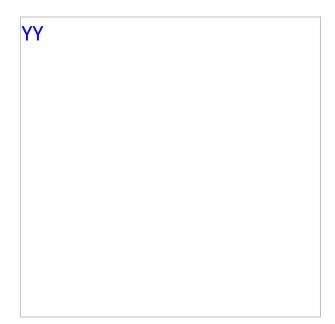
When heard these, Yu Ao Tian can't help himself to glance at Yao Yao who sits on other corner.

"CEO Yu, since two of them are leaving, I must go home too, or else my wrinkle

wife going to make ruckus."

"Humph, Officer Liu, just accompany us little bit while." said the hostess who are companion of officer Liu as if unwilling to parting.

Officer Liu is helplessly heave a sigh: "Next, next time." after said, he left.



### Yu Ao Tian, You Get Lost!!!!!!

"All of you also leave." Yu Ao Tian also asked the hostess who accompany him to go out, he looked at Mo Xue Tong who besides him: "Xue Tong, are you okay today? Should I make a phone call for Li Shang to pick you up?"

"No need, I can leave by myself."

"En, Be careful."

Efforts, finally inside the private room left Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao, she is curious frowning: "Aren't we also left?"

"Wait for moment. I still want to drink, come, Bao Bei, since you are good drinker, accompany me drink." after said, Yu Ao Tian moves and sits beside Yao.

She pouted for moment, give awkward smiles: "Alright, I pour the liquor!" take one bottle of liquor, 'gulp gulp' pour it into a glass, and then take full bottle of liquor of hers. "Come, toss!"

"Huh, Bao Bei." Yu Ao Tian is taking down her glass, one of his hands pulling

her into his embraces, the other hand is pinching her chin, teasing her: "Before we drink, should we do something special first?"

```
"Ugh...no, I don't want!!"
```

"Well forget it." Yu Ao Tian is happily let her go and only putting his hand in her shoulder.

Is he still Yu Ao Tian? How can today he is so easy to deal?

"Bao Bei, drink it!" after said, Yu Ao Tian drink all at once.

Yao Yao also happily raised her glass, but when she take a sip.... 'Yucks' she throwing up all the liquor.

```
"How's exchange it?"
```

She heard Yu Ao Tian laughing voice from her beside, she frowned: "Are you exchanged mine?" did he exchanged it when he hugging onto her? Yu Ao Tian, how could he such....lowly?

"Little Thing, your little trick perhaps can fool those few old men, but if they are being replaced by people who have good observant ability, your trick, it will only give more troubles!" said Yu Ao Tian with gloomy expression while his hand puts down the liquor glass on the table.

That's right, just now when Yao Yao was having drink with those two officers she indeed had used a trick.

Before she went to rest room she had bribed the hostess who pouring the liquor, those two men were drinking foreign liquor, while the hostess that she bribed gave Yao Yao green tea! So that no matter how many glass she had, she would not drunk.

"Next time I will drink it for real. Anyway my liquor tolerance is terrible, after I drunk, they will satisfy."

"Wait until you drunk? Ha...." pair of Yu Ao Tian's hand inserted into his pocket, laughed with mocking:

"Wait until you drunk, it means the show is starting!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Hah."

"You... What do you mean?"

His dark eyes are dim, one of his hand is lifting her chin: "Do you think, what will man do toward drunken girl? You better not tell me they will send you home!!"

From Yu Ao Tian's words, she knows the other meaning, but.... "The thing that happen under the women unwillingness, it is called as rape. I can sue them! Moreover, all of them are government officers, the penalty will be more severe!"

"Hahahahaha, you are so naive? When they said you are the one who make moves, who will you sue? Moreover, although you are successful to make them fall from their position, but don't you think you are still at the loss?" Yu Ao Tian draw back his hand that touched her chin, expressionless stand up: "Bao Bei, go home."

No, that's not true, thing is not going to be like that! But, but every words that Yu Ao Tian said sharp as if a knife! She even does not have chance to fight back.

Although she successful to make them fall for their position, but still she is the person who at loss, isn't she?

But if coldly facing those people, want to settle things, it completely impossible!

Men going out, their lost are money; women going out, their lost are body!

This is what Yu Ao Tian wanted to tell her, this is the difference between men and women, this is the darkness of this society, what so-called as white path, actually are dirtier, aren't it?

Perhaps, years ago she had understood this principle, hadn't her?

Staying beside Feng Chen Yi, small big society gatherings in this kind of circles, if not everyone looked her as Feng Chen Yi's girlfriend this status, perhaps in earlier years, she had N times being eaten until clean!

But now, she as Yu Ao Tian's lawyer joining this kind of gathering, who will consider of her, in their eyes, she is only a small lawyer, although she forced, something happened on her, no one will consider about her, won't they?

"I take my leave. I am going home."

"Bao Bei, outside the club, Yao Yao is standing next to car, expressionlessly looking at Yu Ao Tian who is sitting at driver seat.

"Bao Bei, which house do you heading?" he is smiling devilish, one of his hand is leaning on the window, looking at her.

"Of course going to my own house."

"Who allow you to go to your house?"

She wants to go to her own house, does she need other permission? "Yu Ao Tian, do you forget something, now I am not your lover anymore, I have my freedom!"

"Well, let me drive you."

"No need!" after said, Yao Yao takes big strides and prepare to leave.

Yu Ao Tian's face changed dark, faster he out from car, pulled her arm: "Can I say that you trying to finding fault?" if not today he still have something to do, how can he let her to go back to her house? Now things are perfectly good, she even dare to offend him?

"I try to find fault? Yu Ao Tian, I asked you, why you want to drive me home? Drive to half way, you are unhappy and then asked me to get lost. Still better for me to go home by myself!"

Hah, it seems this little thing still angry with last time matter? That's right, he admitted, last time was his fault, but the problems!! That time he was extremely angry, asking her to stay, there is no advantage for anyone!

Yu Ao Tian is helplessly creased his forehead, suddenly he hugs her.

"Hey, Yu Ao Tian, what are you doing! Let me go!" she is restless.

Yu Ao Tian gives her driver position, quickly he helped her to fasten safety belt. And then, he is sitting at passenger seat.

"En? You...." she is dumbfounded looking at Yu Ao Tian who is sitting at her beside, misty eyes. "What are you doing?"

"Don't you still hold a grudge? Come! I give you a chance to take revenge. Come!"

Ugh....

What Yu Ao Tian wants?

Her moist eyes are rolled, quickly she laughing happily, roared: "You get lost from car!"

The expressionless Yu Ao Tian is getting down from the car, standing outside the car, gloomy said: "Is it enough? If not, I will let you to have one more time!"

"Enough." it is enough, she really never thought this domineering man can do something to this point, but.... Make Yu Ao Tian gets down from the car, it really gives so much happy feeling!

"Huh..." Yu Ao Tian is taking deep breathe, suddenly his gloomy face gradually at ease. When he is about to open the car door....

"Good bye!" Yao Yao is smiling devilish, suddenly she steps on the accelerator, car, 'wuish' one sound, it has already left.

### 285

1XT	

The good show for Shang Yun Yin is starting......

### **Execute Shang Yun Yin**

"....." simply to say Yu Ao Tian can't believe, after all this little thing.... Really left him? "Damn!" fiercely he made fist from his hands.

This is his first time being chased out from car by a girl! Moreover, he not understood himself of how many times he has that patience to coaxing this little girl. The result he turned into this lame situation, it seems he....

"Hah, little kid really being spoiled to rotten by me." he stopped gritting his teeth, Yu Ao Tian expression changed to helpless smiles, but inside his eyes it gleaming 'pamper' eyesight....

'Ring, ring...;' (phone ringing sound)

Suddenly, his mobile phone is ringing, Yu Ao Tian face is changed gloom, slowly pick the phone call: "Li Shang, is it done?"

"All had settled. Zhu Que group's boss Shang Zhe Nan already dead, but his daughter.... Escape."

"Okay, I understand. The rest let me finish it." hung up the phone call, the expressionless him is standing in the darkness of night, silent for moment and then he makes a phone call....

\*\*

Hei Yan Long's villa

"Older God-brother, Older God-brother, I beg you, help me, help me. My father is killed by Yu Long's group, you must help me!" Shang Yun Yin is kneeling on the floor while crying, constantly she begging Hei Yu Long who is sitting on the sofa.

He is swaying the wine glass in his hand, the gleaming of his deep black eyes are flashed reflecting from the red wine glass. "Rest assured Yun Yin, I still remember that your father is my savior."

"Thank you, Older God-brother." after heard it, Shang Yun Yin heave a sigh.

"Young Master, your phone call." the head of house keeper walking to Hei Yan Long beside, the phone is handed over.

He gives cold smile when take the phone: "Hello?"

"I am Yu Ao Tian."

"CEO Yu? What's matter!"

Listened to this word, at beside, Shang Yun Yin's heart simply to say as if being choked, her eyes constantly staring at Hei Yan Long black eyes.

"Now I am on the way to your house, Shang Yun Yin must be at there right?"

"She is! CEO Yu, welcoming you." Said Hei Yan Long expressionless when hung up the phone call.

"Older God-brother, why you tell Yu Ao Tian that I am at your place? He will come and kill me, he will kill me!!!" Shang Yun Yin simply to say that she is panicking as if an ant in the hot pan, sitting restless.

The silent Hei Yan Long is leaning on the sofa while his hand gently swaying his red wine glass, there is no expression in his face.

"Older God-brother what to do? You will protect me right?" Shang Yun Yin is sitting beside him, begging while pulling his arms.

"Let off!" coldly he burst out this word, as if coming from hell, there is no feeling at all.

"Older God-brother?"

"Hah, when you are using me to deal with Yao Yao, have you thought me as your Older God-brother?! When your father used me to strike General Manager Long and others, have you thought me as your Older God-brother? If not because CEO Yu told me about that matter on the first day he back from Japan, perhaps I still don't know that I made myself to be enemy of Berson Group and also Yu Long Group!!!"

"I....Older God-brother, I. I am sorry, I am sorry, I didn't on purpose to used you. Can you think it as a favor for my father who ever saved you, I beg you to

help me this one time? I begging you!"

That year, the eighteen years old Hei Yan Long was coming back from England to take over family business, he was nearly being kidnapped by the mafias. Luckily, Shang Yun Yin's father showed up as peace marker, so that he had spared.

Hei Yan Long himself is extremely a loyal person, so that, he gave so many to Zhu Que's group. Or else the small group in the Jiang Hu (underworld), impossible turned to be the second biggest mafia group only within few years.

"Yun Yin. As you know I am type of person who have good faith, your father helped me, until today I still thanked him. But....." his black eyes rolled, his lips faintly curved upward, smiles alike sinister: "Your father had died, hadn't he?"

'Thump'

Due to Shang Yun Yin cleverness impossible for her not be able to understand what Hei Yan Long said, suddenly she shivers for cold atmosphere, stand up and preparing to escape.

But who knows, the violent Hei Yan Long is pulling her long hair: "Gee, Yun Yin, don't go. Didn't you tell me that CEO Yu is your boyfriend? Immediately he will come to pick you up!"

"No! No! Let me go, Older God-brother, I begging you, I begging you." Shang Yun Yin constantly begging.

Hei Yan Long using his cold eyes to see everything, silently waiting for Yu Ao Tian coming.

"Young Master, CEO Yu is arrived." The head of housekeeper lead Yu Ao Tian to walk until the inner living room.

Once Shang Yun Yin's eyes meets his eyes, cannot help to be afraid and lower her head down.

As seen, Hei Yan Long is putting down his red wine glass, while his other hand is pulling Shang Yun Yin's hair and walk until in front of Yu Ao Tian. "Good evening, CEO Yu."

"Hahahaha, CEO Hei, bothered you." Yu Ao Tian pair of eyes stared, his big

hand grabbed Shang Yun Yin's arm.

"No, no, Ao Tian, I begging you, let me off, all those matter not my business! I begging you." Shang Yun Yin is bitterly kneeling down begging.

Yu Ao Tian is smiling devilish, slowly said: "I know there is none of your business. Or else how can I come here pick you by myself? Yun Yin...."

She knew, a man like Yu Ao Tian heartless and cold blood is impossible to be this nice, impossible to let her off. "Ao Tian, I...."

"Sst, if there is anything to talk, let us go out and have a talk." Yu Ao Tian smirks stopped Shang Yun Yin to speak, and then turned and said to Hei Yan Long: "Take my leave first."

"Careful." Hei Yan Long politely nodding his head, and then clapping his hand to his head of housekeeper: "Send off CEO Yu."

"Yes, Young Master."

After seeing Yu Ao Tian and Shang Yun Yin left, Hei Yan Long is letting out his sigh.

Normally he is afraid two types of people, the first type is dishonest person and the other types is villain!

While him, because being used by Shang Yun Yin he didn't question (finding the truth) but become small person who not differ between white and black, but now.... "Luo Yao Yao, our debt is settled, we are not owed each other!"

"Ao Tian, Ao Tian, I begging you, let me off." Leaving Hei Yan Long's villa, Shang Yun Yin is constantly begging.

"Yu Ao Tian is silent, not say anything, he grabbed her arm, roughly pushed her into a car that is parked at the road side.

When she get in, Shang Yun Yin is extremely scared, staring inside the car there are sitting, Nan Lu, Mo Xue Tong, Long Ye, Han Li Shang and others, she knew, this time it is hard for her to escape.

In the vast darkness the car is slowly moving, when the car has arrived at the secluded place, finally the car stopped and parked.

Yu Ao Tian glanced at Mo Xue Tong who sits beside him.

She coldly smiles, pulling Shang Yun Yin's hair and then get down from the car.

"Where are you bringing me?"

"Aren't you a good fighter? We do one round battle. Win, you may leave." Mo Xue Tong takes off her outer clothes, coldly rolled up her sleeves.

All are mingling in underworld, more or less Shang Yun Yin must ever heard rumour about Mo Xue Tong, but her fighting skill also not bad, since this is the case....

"One means what one says."

"Hah." Mo Xue Tong give cold smiles.

As seen Shang Yun Yin, dashing closer, but....

#### 286



All the women who ever had relationship with Yu Ao Tian, despite of they were cruel, wicked, schemer but their feeling toward Yu Ao Tian were actually sincere, they loved him but man alike Yu Ao Tian isn't someone who easy to be loved, to hold. This is also the reason why Yao Yao makes so many excuses, denials for loving Yu Ao Tian because she feared to lose at this feeling battle.

Staying for this time beside Yu Ao Tian, she had witnessed the ending of the women who loved Yu Ao Tian, none of them had good ending. Zhao Qing Kong losing her unborn baby, Li Mei Yun besides losing her unborn baby she also raped and Shang Yun Yin....

So this is also time for Yu Ao Tian to sever all his ties with other women and just focus himself to Yao Yao and others more important things.

### The Big Day that been Waiting, Arrived

She is not even half good than Mo Xue Tong!

"The difference is too big." the person who is sitting inside the car, Long Ye is helplessly shaking his head.

"I never seen any woman able to hit Sister Xue Tong." Nan Lu ever fought with Shang Yun Yin, she also admitted that Shang Yun Yin fighting skill not bad, but compare to Mo Xue Tong, the gap just too big.

"Today I had drunk too much, I want to go home and take a sleep, ask Xue Tong to stop playing around." Said Yu Ao Tian coldly, little bit impatience gently rubbing his temple.

"Understand." faster Long Ye gets down from the car: "Xue Tong, Ao Tian asked you to settle it as soon as possible!"

Received the order, Mo Xue Tong expression cold, pulling Shang Yun Yin's collar shirt, and then 'papapa' giving her countless slaps: "This is for Nan Lu, now...." her cold eyes are filled with killing intention, suddenly one foot.....

Shang Yun Yin 'ah' vomit blood, her body has slumped on the floor.

This time, Yu Ao Tian slowly get down from inside the car, his cold eyes had seen everything.

She used her last breathe, crawling to Yu Ao Tian's feet: "Look at, both of us, relationship, you, let me off, can you? Ao Tian..."

Since the day he knew Shang Yun Yin, she indeed did many bad things, but her feeling toward Yu Ao Tian, it is real.

But....

"If I let you off, it means I am giving Yao Yao more one enemy!" after he said, his pair of eyes dimmer, suddenly his big hand already strangle Shang Yun Yin's neck!

Perhaps, every woman is longing to touch a man that never been enough for her, Shang Yun Yin also, there is no man that able to capture her heart, but Yu Ao Tian is exceptional.

She is so confident, thinking that she is able to handle this man, but the truth proven, man that not able be touched, no matter how work hard it still would not be able touched it.

She had seen the heartless Yu Ao Tian; but also ever seen the affection Yu Ao Tian, but unfortunate, this feeling isn't belonging to her.....

And then 'ugh' voice, Shang Yun Yin finally closed her eyes for forever.

The expressionless Yu Ao Tian with draw his hand: "Ask people to clean it." after said, he turned back to car.

'ding ding'

When he just sits inside the car, there is short message notification, opened....

'Ao Tian, after experienced today matter, I realized perhaps my thoughts about everything is too perfect. And also there perhaps are darker matter that I haven't seen. But no matter what, this problem is a reality, I still need to face it sooner or later.

But as you said, perhaps the time hasn't arrived (not now). That time I didn't understand why my Master (Teacher) wanted me to use my lawyer license when I reached age 24years, but now I understood.

No matter what will happen, being kind is my basic nature, waiting until your election ended, I will going back to school.'

Toward Yao Yao who is still in her blooming age, for normal girl, asking to join Yu Ao Tian's world, actually it is too early. But she only helps Yu Ao Tian to do some stuffs, not only to prove herself value but also to pay back her 'debt'.

Whether money or other thing, Yao Yao knows, this man is a man who she hated so much before, but actually he had helped her out and also make many things for her, only for few things, she just not willing to face it....

The car that parked in the darkness of night, slowly moving, that cold body is already disappeared from this world. Yu Ao Tian puts back his mobile phone, faintly smiles.

It seems, after these few days, that Little Thing is maturer not less....

The bright sun is hanging on the blue sky, eleven November is getting closer the weather is slightly cold but clear and crisp, the air is fresh. Not hot and also not cold the wind is blowing gently, this signaling today is good day.

Very early Yao Yao has ride a bus to Yu Ao Tian's apartment.

'knock knock knock' (knocking sound)

"Bao Bei, you come so early."

Seeing Yu Ao Tian stills with his pajamas, she impatiently urging him: "Quickly, quickly change your clothes!!"

"Why is so rushing? The election is starting at ten, now only eight." Yu Ao Tian is so calm, not in hurry walking to living room, leisurely he sitting on the sofa, turned on the Television.

Yes, today is election day, and also the day that all of them waiting for these long time. "You hurry change your clothes! If late, the Senior Congressmen, those group of people are strictly with the process, they may disqualify you!!"

"Heh? Bao Bei, it is obviously I am the person who is going to join the election, why are you more nervous than me?" Yu Ao Tian teased, smiles and pulled her into his embraces.

She really not same alike Yu Ao Tian who is perfectly calm (metal mental), this is her first time step up with her lawyer status, so that she is especially cared of it. "Aiya, you faster, okay?"

"Huh, You, later you will be a strict wife in the future." Yu Ao Tian is helplessly pinched her nose, unwillingly heading to take a bath, having lazy bath.

Anyway, being strict wife in the future she not really certain, but one thing she certain, she will be a strict lawyer.

'Yesterday the Chairman CEO of Berson Group held press conference, decided to resign from his post, and giving his position to the Vice CEO Han Li Shang as new CEO. And also promoted General Manager Long Ye as Vice CEO. Once this news being reported, Berson Group stock has already dropped to 1.3% point in the row, still don't know whether the stock will keep on falling or not in the

future!'

Watching the television news, Yao Yao is taking long breathe.

The leader replacement is not giving a small shock, it has been considered once Yu Ao Tian gave his position the stock would be fell rapidly, so that they were especially choose one day before the election day to make an announcement.

Once Yu Ao Tian election is successful, Berson group stocks will raise. By this way it won't give any huge losses for Berson Group, and also because he is successful being elected it will make the stock increase drastically.

Hoping his election will be succeed!

At this time, Yu Ao Tian who is already taking bath walking to the living room, he is tossing Yao Yao with a necktie.

She looked at the necktie, and also looked Yu Ao Tian: "What?"

He is smiling devilish, slowly said: "You say?"

Gee!

Until this time he even stills be able to tease her for while? Although Yao Yao face is showing her dissatisfied, but.... Inside her heart she is willingly in this most important time to help him tie his necktie!

If said women 'weapon for battle' is makeup; while men 'weapon for battle' is their suit!

Yao Yao is seriously and also carefully helping him to tie the necktie, when it tied, she pouted her mouth, slowly lifts her head up, looking into that man pair of bottomless eyes, gently said: "Fighting!" her small hand is stroking down to his necktie.....

"Hah." Yu Ao Tian smiling, suddenly he catches her small hand: "Let's go!" turned, open the door.

Han Li Shang and the others have been waiting outside the door.

There is no words, there is no expression, but all of their face are hanging faint smile, as if everything has said so that no need to say verbally.

This, perhaps this the best way to cheer him.

Perhaps other people don't know how work hard Yu Ao Tian for this day, but the people who staying beside him such as Han Li Shang and others all know better and understood how much effort he put, today for this moment, he is using hundred, perhaps thousand times of hard work to exchange with it!!

"Chairman Yu." from outside the apartment, cars are parked neatly and orderly, and also the subordinate that come to meet Yu Ao Tian are wearing formal suit, give him bow-down respect when greet him.

The driver is opened the car door, Yu Ao Tian is taking Yao Yao to sit at Master car, the other are sitting at second row.

The car is slowly moving, he obviously can feel how Yao Yao's hands are shaking: "what's?"

```
"Have you memorized your speech?"

"En."

"Have you take all the data needed?"

"Em."

"Are you really memorized your speech?"

"Em."
```

"There won't be any loophole right?"
"....."

"Flast chest don't you think you are too nervous?" Long Qi who is sitting beside really can't stay still anymore, impatiently yelled her.

"I, I am only to ensure there will no any mistake. Do YOU understood, what can you understand?"

"Xiao Meng Li, You are too nervous?" Long Ye broke the tensed.

She really, really! She is really nervous. It can be said that, when she was facing her big and small examination she still able to keep herself calm and quiet this type of attitude, but this moment, because of Yu Ao Tian politician election campaign, yesterday she almost got insomnia.

"Rest assure, you have done well, I must be succeed." Yu Ao Tian tightly holding her small hands, also giving her a smile as if everything will be okay.

"Really? But...." she is nervous, afraid there is something she missed about, something that she hasn't thought, and become Yu Ao Tian failure.

"Xiao Meng Li, Ao Tian won't randomly praising you. Since he has said that you had done well, it proved there won't be any loophole." Long Ye smile warmly.

She nervously gulping her saliva, just hoping, hoping there really won't.....

'Bang!' it is one hard attack, people inside the car are rushed forward.

Fortunately Yu Ao Tian has good reaction, one of his hand grabbed the car handle on the top and the other hand holding Yao Yao's waist, so that she is not hitting in front.

"What is going on?" Han Li Shang is asking the driver.

"CEO Han, there is a car that hit ours!" the driver is panicking make a report.

Han Li Shang glared, faster he looked at car outside, as seen there is one black car that blocking in front of their car. "Ao Tian?"

"Change the route, leave."

When Yu Ao Tian giving an order, there is another 'bang' sound, the car side also being hit.

"Bad intention to stop your election?" Long Ye creased his forehead, can't help himself to look at the outside of car.

Not long after that, two cars are hitting their car again, 'shuashua' (brushing sound) next there are few men who holding gun.

When Long Ye is going to take out his gun, Yu Ao Tian face dimmer, shaking his head. "Ask the people at back not to take out the gun! Just think a way to leave this place."

"Yes, chairman." The driver accepted the order, determined to choose reverse, going straight to the direction of the viaduct and run away.

But the people who are intending to attack them not have any intention to stop, they are keep on following.

'bang! Bang! Bang!' they even keep on firing the car while Yu Ao Tian stills calmly sitting inside the car although there are few holes in car.

Yao Yao is scared hugged her head, she afraid to scream out, she is tightly biting her lips, so only let out humph sound.

Actually what is going on?

Why at this time those people are choosing to attack Yu Ao Tian, do they want to stop his election campaign? Actually why must they stopped his election at this event, didn't they know that he had already qualified as congress candidate?

"Bao Bei, don't be afraid." Yu Ao Tian is using his body to hug and cover her, he even showing her a faint smile to comfort.

This smile as if a fire during winter, burn, warm her heart. She only can feel her nose runny, from corner of eyes there is a trace of tears.

It's so obvious Yu Ao Tian is the one who most concerned about this election than anyone, isn't he? But at this time, he even have time to comfort her?

'Bang!' there is another hard attack. The car where Yu Ao Tian used has already changed shape.

"Chairman Yu, there are few car coming over, what to do?"

"Viaduct, go straight to the urban area."

"Yes."

"Don't!!! Don't!!!" Yao Yao has already calmed down herself, quickly said: "By this time is driving the car into urban area, perhaps they are really stopped. But if they aren't not stopping, Media will be so audacious keep on asking about this matter, the campaign has not been starting, but you must bear negative news, for you this is disadvantage, Ao Tian!!"

That's right!

The other party purpose must be wanted to fail the campaign, so that there is a possibility those people won't be stopped!

Yu Ao Tian silent and thought for moment, whispering: "Change the direction, faster change, go to suburban."

"But Chairman Yu, if we are going to suburban perhaps there won't much time left for the election."

For this congress election Yu Ao Tian has waited for many opportunities, but once missed out this one he needs to wait another 3 three years to join the election, during that time he has already 31 years old, in order to complete his dream does not know how many years must spend again.

But, if really make this kind of negative news, Yu Ao Tian perhaps won't be able to join in the next three years.

Waiting, perhaps is better than being deprived of the qualification?

"Go to suburban area!" for once again Yu Ao Tian repeated his command.

The driver who driving the car is helplessly nodding his head: "Yes, Chairman Yu." the car is faster change the route.

But the enemies keep on firing the gun, constantly attacking the car.

"Ah...." Yao Yao can't not bear her fear and screaming out, she is really afraid, this kind of scene she had watched many times in television, simply to say she feels as if she is experiencing a nightmare from hell.

"It's okay." for once again Yu Ao Tian is comforting her by showing her a smile.

Still a same word, he is not a type of man who have patience with a girl, moreover he hates the most girl who easy to be shocked. But he understands

Yao Yao well, after all she only 19 years old little girl, dealing with this kind of thing actually difficult her.

"Ao Tian, you must know the purpose of those people right?" Yao Yao who still in fear asked.

Yu Ao Tian silent for moment, nodding his head.

"So after all their purpose is you. Well.... Let me get down from the car!!"

Yao Yao words, doubtless flared up all the people inside the car. Han Li Shang is angrily creasing his forehead, yelled at her: "By this time you want to get down from car, all of us will be killed by you!!"

'Bang bang bang....' there are few firing gun sound.

"Ah!!" Yao Yao is curled up her body, can't stop trembling: "They, their target are Yu Ao Tian, not me. Faster get me down from the car!!"

#### 288

parliament house			

### **Chapter 288**

# Believe me, I will help you settle everything

"You darn woman!" Han Li Shang vibrate strong gaze, quickly he takes out his gun.

"Li Shang!" Yu Ao Tian who silent for this time yelling to stop Han Li Shang movement. His bottomless eyes are slowly looking at Yao Yao.

Seeing her face that being scared to white pale, the terrifying eyes, he can feel that how scared she is.

Human, after all are selfish, sometimes in order to protect a self, won't be considered many things. He can understand Yao Yao action.

"Stopped the car."

"Chairman?"

"Stopped the car!!" Yu Ao Tian spoke louder.

The driver who is driving the car hatred creasing his forehead, slow down the speed of car.

"Long Qi, you go with Yao Yao."

"Ao Tian?" Han Li Shang really not understanding, a girl who trying to escape when facing difficulties, simply to say it needless for Yu Ao Tian to be thoughtful, right?

When the car stopped to the side that moment, Yu Ao Tian even protecting Yao Yao when the car door being opened: "Long Qi, you go with Yao Yao. I will cover both of you." after said, suddenly he takes out his gun from his pocket, firing his gun toward those men who keep on attacking them.

Inside the car Han Li Shang cannot stay still, impossible for him to look at Yu Ao Tian fight with all those people by himself, so that he followed his back get down from the car, cover up Yao Yao.

"Ao Tian, after you settle the trouble, remember to come to Parliament House!"

"Woman, are you still pretending to be good person in this time? If you are not make a noise get down from the car, perhaps we can make it into Parliament House now. Now waiting to settle all this group of people, perhaps the election had done, there is no difference whether to go or not?" Han Li Shang Gritting his teeth spoke.

She during this time does not have much time to give any explanation, her eyes

are firmly looking at Yu Ao Tian: "Must come! You must come!!"

Perhaps being contagious by Yao Yao attitude, or perhaps because for her, Yu Ao Tian is slowly nodding his head: "En." covering Yao Yao and Long Qi when leaving.

When he certain that both of them are saved, Yu Ao Tian and his people are spending some time to fight with the killers and then they hurried come back to car inside.

"Ao Tian, is it worth?" Han Li Shang with his rough breathing, coldly asked him.

Yu Ao Tian keeps silent for while, his deep black eyes flashed: "This.... Is what I owed her."

The other side.....

'Hu....hu...'

Long Qi and Yao Yao don't know how long they have been running, after ensuring there are no one chasing at their back, finally both of them are stopped their footstep.

Yao Yao entire body slumped between the fields, constantly she wiping the sweats from her forehead.

"Yao Yao, What are you doing?" Standing beside Yao Yao is Long Qi who eyes are in dazed.

She knows that her attitude now is looked so selfish, but.... "I believed Yu Ao Tian can come back safe and soundly. While me....I have my own mission to accomplish!"

When Yao Yao has gained herself, suddenly she heave a sigh of relief, quickly stand up: "Long Qi, if you are really wanted Yu Ao Tian's dream come true, I want you to do something, can you help?"

The Parliament House is located in center of the city, stately and magnificent, it has five floor style design building as the symbol of politician dignified. In the center of the building there is a magnificent statue, it even more give a vivid illustrating about the importance of the politic.

- [			

"Trouble you, driver." Yao Yao gets down from Taxi, standing in front of the big metal fence entrance of the Parliament House, she is looking everything with her serious eyesight.

She is checking on her time, it has been passing 20 minutes.

Hahaha, but it does not matter, she must! Absolutely! Fulfilled and make Yu Ao Tian's dream comes true.

This is not only for the first time in her life as lawyer, the main point; but because of Yu Ao Tian. She must help him to drag this time election campaign!

Yu Ao Tian, I believed you will be going to success. While you, will you also like myself who.... Believe on me?

She smiles faintly, takes a deep breathe, quickly walking inside the parliament big lobby....

Inside the huge hall, all seats are occupied, everyone is showing up serious and stern expression. This is Parliament House, this is the highest domestic politics place.

Yao Yao is taking one corner, quietly have her seat, taking a glace to all the people who joining this campaign.....

Sitting.... Sitting at the second row, the person must be the head of officials? Does that person is the Head of finance secretary who having meal with her last time?

Haha, in this place is really look awesome, but privately (when come to personal matter), when his left and right were holding hostess, mocking his own wife as worn out house wife, indeed he changed to be alike another person.

Her eyes are keep on looking, the person who sitting on the first row....

Deputy.... Deputy Prime Minister.

Uh.....

Yao Yao is secretly taking a deep breathe, she is so rare to spot the country's top leader on the television, but never thought that she is so lucky today because able to sit under the same building with him, think carefully this is so remarkable, it so similar with daydreaming.

But.... If Yu Ao Tian campaign is succeed, won't he also be an important politician to?

Hahahahaha....

So that in the future will Yu Ao Tian looked alike them, everyday is showing that kind of stiff expression, make his hair shinny, when he speaking will he also sound coldly?

Aish, thinking carefully it bit scary.

"The next candidate is Yu Ao Tian!"

Finally! Finally this time is arrived! Yu Ao Tian, I will bring your part too, fighting together!!!

Faster Yao Yao tidy her dresses, inhale the air, slowly walking to the podium....

"What is going on? Isn't the person Yu Ao Tian? How can turn to be a little girl?"

"That's right, what is going on?"

When Yao Yao walking to the podium, the audience in below are whispering.

When she was in school she had hosted small and big meeting, but facing with few of officials who sitting on below, actually she is so scared, her pair of leg keep on trembling, after all, all these people are those she often sees in the Television, as if the Gods in the sky, it's out of reach.

"Hello... Everyone." calm down! Calm down! Yao Yao, you must calm down, if this time you are not brave enough, you will be defeated! Her small hands are curled into tight fists, she used her strength to bite her lips, smiles, and said: "I am Mr. Yu Ao Tian's lawyer Luo Yao Yao. First, I would like to give deep apologize to every officials who are sitting in here." after said, she bends her body giving respect bow.

"This, what this mean?" one of the officials from the second row coldly spoke.

She lifts her head, and once again gives her smiles: "I just accepted Mr. Yu Ao Tian's phone call, because of something he had a delay on his way, perhaps he needs about half hour so that he can arrive at here, I hope all the officials are forgive Mr. Yu breach of etiquette.

"After all, even coming late?" from the stage below someone coldly said.				

6f061d950a7b02080df8afdb65d9f2d3572cc8d3

### **Chapter 289**

# He Believes Her, She Believes Him

All of them certainly not forgiving him for coming late, this mistake, after all this is parliament, not business world, and also not market place. It is a symbol of a country's highest authority, and how to understand a person who had chosen to be so careless? Even the person is successful Yu Ao Tian in business world.

Yao Yao understands, these few men won't forgive him, so that, she had made a preparation before.

"Everyone, officials, politicians, please let me to finish my words before, all of you questioning the mistake made by Mr. Yu."

"Facing this sort of important day, Mr. Yu has made preparation for everything and hurrying to come into Parliament House. But, on the way he coming here, he bumped into pregnant woman. During this time, everyone is hurrying to go to work, so that no one cares about that pregnant woman, but when Mr. Yu saw this, there was no doubt of him to stop his car, bringing that pregnant woman to the nearest hospital, so this is the reason why he is late!"

This is the thing that Yao Yao asked Long Qi to help!

'Long Qi, if you are really wanted Yu Ao Tian's dream come true, I want you to do something, can you help?'

'What is it?'

'You hurry go to find a pregnant woman, and then you order Berson PR staffs exaggerating news about Yu Ao Tian who sending pregnant woman to hospital, and also talking about the late for political campaign election, this matter.'

'Okay! I understood!'

The lateness of Yu Ao Tian is something prohibited in front of the politic world, but.... If because helping other and then because of it coming late, perhaps this will be another matter?

But, Yao Yao seems to overestimate some politician humanity!

"Even so it cannot be forgiven. The election three years once, what Yu Ao Tian thinks this election as? Even the employees know that work is a priority, and how about him?" This man again, why? Why he seems trying to find Yu Ao Tian fault and won't let him go? Since the beginning he keeps on finding Yu Ao Tian mistakes.

Yao Yao really not understand, how can one person such heartless until this point, and even say, does his purpose actually for falling Yu Ao Tian and won't let him be succeed?

But, vaguely remember, Yu Ao Tian has several time brought about this Deputy Prime Minister, it not hard to know that Yu Ao Tian and Vice Prime Minister might have some grudges, moreover this man isn't vice Prime Minister's people. Furthermore today it seems that Vice Prime Minister is not coming.

Or perhaps? Does he help Vice Prime Minister.... To do something?

Thinking to this point, suddenly she helpless smile: "That's right, I did tell Mr. Yu. I really not understand, why Mr. Yu because of pregnant woman, wanted to ruin the political election which held once every three years? But... Mr. Yu even questioning me back.... What is basic responsibility of one officials in governmental?"

She is pretending to crease her forehead: "Well, what it is? Mr. Yu also questioning me, what the most important for one country?" after said to this point, she is helplessly shaking her head: "I have thought it for long time, finally I understood what Mr. Yu meant!"

"The most important for one country is citizens (commoners), the reason why all of you can sit secure in this position, the state can operate in orderly, it is because the tax that paid by the citizen, also it makes one country able to support the military, manufacturing the weapons and then protecting and defend our country dignity."

"If we because of joining the election but ignoring the citizens safety, is it still be able to call as the successful politician, Mr. Yu also won't feel peaceful in his heart. So that, Mr. Yu better to take the risk missed the election campaign possibility, and very affirm to send the pregnant woman to the hospital, this kind of action, this kind of kindness, do all of us still hardhearted to reproach Mr. Yu for his lateness? This, is it enough to become a qualified politician? On behalf of people, for the people?"

Her words are resonance, and there's tears in her eyes, as if to be infected everyone. They could not help but muster with clapping hands.

At the moment when she sees one by one those politician stern expression changed to be understanding smiles, Yao Yao knows, she has succeed for the first step.

Raised her hand, wipe her tears, huh, even she also almost believe that Yu Ao

Tian really because sending the pregnant woman to hospital and late. In order to lie with other people she must be able to lie to herself first!

Since this is the case.... She simply does not want do two endlessly, even the words for Yu Ao Tian election campaign she also done it!

Thinking to this point, Yao Yao feels her throat dry, but keeps on talking....
Outside the Parliament House.

"Ao Tian, do you really come?" the person who guarded the Parliament House inner entrance is Long Qi, seeing Yu Ao Tian and the others showing up he is so excited and happy dashing in front of them.

"How can you be here, Long Qi?" Long Ye is curiously to looked at his younger brother.

"Bro, I don't have time to explain to you." After said, Long Qi quickly turned his gaze to Yu Ao Tian: "Ao Tian, like this, Yao Yao said she would help you to settle all the matter, she also wanted me to tell you, takes out all the gun. Don't bring the gun inside the Parliament House."

"All has kept."

"Well, that's good. Now you hurry get inside."

"Did it already late? How could she settle it?" If not because Yu Ao Tian stubbornly still wanted to come here, Han Li Shang and others must be gone back to their home and take rest.

"The detail I am not really clear, anyway Yao Yao asked me to find a pregnant woman, and then inform the PR department, asking them to make exaggerating news about Yu Ao Tian lateness caused by he was sending a pregnant woman to hospital so that he late for his political election campaign!!"

When Long Qi said this words, Han Li Shang and others are already dumbstruck....

Actually in the end who is being thoughtful, not panicking, it seems at this moment has proven everything!

When all of them were thinking that Yao Yao because of fear was running away, actually she was the person who calmer than anyone during the chaos situation

and even calmly making a decision!

She was kept on saying 'Those men purpose are Yu Ao Tian, not me' also not asking Yu Ao Tian to escape, this means, since they were targeting Yu Ao Tian, so that no matter how hard they did, those people still wanted to stop Yu Ao Tian to go for the election campaign.

While she, she is an outsider so that she can completely escape from them, and also she can help him to fight for more time!

Yao Yao has already had prediction that Yu Ao Tian must be come late for the election campaign, so that she simply asking Yu Ao Tian to be a bait, draw the enemy's attention. She disappeared and left, help him to arrange everything, planning the way for him!!

Han Li Shang, Long Ye, even Mo Xue Tong, all of them in this moment have already felt guilty. Although they had helped Yu Ao Tian won over half of Jiang Shan (rivers and mountains / power), but there is no one of them that able stay beside Yu Ao Tian as Jun Shi (military adviser), this role, but Yao Yao apparently able to play this role very well, one of the most important role!

"Ha." Yu Ao Tian curved up his lips, his eyes turned and looked at Long Ye and also others: "I will go first, you guys wait for me in here." after said, he faster go to inside the Parliament House through the big door entrance.

It seems, his stubborn is right.

'Faster settle them, escaping from them and rush to the Parliament House.'

'Ao Tian, it is already late! There is no need to ashamed yourself by going there.'

```
'Go to the parliament!'
'Ao Tian....'
'Go.'
```

# Chapter 290

# **Big Problem is coming over**

When everyone was busying persuade him, only him alone who still stubborn, not because anyone... But because for what she told him before she left.

'Ao Tian, after you settle the problem, remember to come to Parliament House!!'

'You must come! Must come!'

That firm eyesight, that pair of eyes with stubborn sights, it makes one person not to hesitate.

That moment, he was being contagious by Yao Yao, as if a part of his old memory that buried for long time dug out, it was same eyesight, it was same contagious feeling. How could he doubt about her?

So that, no matter succeed or failed, he still stubborn coming to Parliament House, even if he ashamed himself there is no regret and grievance for him!!

'Squeaked' (the door open sound)

That heavy and thick metal door is being pushed open.

The government officials who is sitting nearest to the entrance door obviously noticed Yu Ao Tian.

"Yu...."

He faintly smiles to stop that man greeting him, quietly looking at that shinning star who is standing on the podium....

"I believed once Mr. Yu succeed in this election campaign based on his

capability he will definitely bring a development into China's political. Either in Economic or others. Please every officials have faith on Mr. Yu, Thank You!" at the end of a wonderful speech, Yao Yao from the podium rushed down and giving a deep bow.

The deafening applause flowing, seeing how wonderful Yao Yao speech just now. But unfortunate for Yu Ao Tian since he only able to see the last part.

He is slowly moving toward the position near to the podium, giving his faint smile while clapping.

Yu Ao Tian? Just at the moment when Yao Yao gets down from the podium, first person she spotted is him.

If it is not because of confined situation, he really wanted to hug this Little Thing!

"You work hard." taking a seat, Yu Ao Tian said softly.

She is smiling while waving her hand: "This is my job. I have said before, from the start to the end. Rest assured, you will success."

"Hahaha, I believe on you." Yu Ao Tian smiles gently, when there is no one pay attention, he gently kissed her forehead....

Ugh.... Dumbfounded she staring and then blinking her eyes at the man who smile charmingly, her heart

'thump, thump' skip beat.

The feeling heart throbbing, is it because of this kind of situation or because of he kissed her forehead, so that she feels this nervousness? Or still.... There is another reason?

"After go through examination from our Prime Minister and some state council officials from every divisions, they decided....." finally the thumping moment is arrived, at the moment when the representative officer is going to make announcement for the result, Yao Yao's heart trembling.

"The congress member for this election is.... Mr. Yu Ao Tian!!!"

"Wuiz" a sound. At the time when she heard Yu Ao Tian this name, Yao Yao can feel her head is emptied. But another moment, the deafening applause is taken

her back into a reality! "It's you! It's you! It's you!! You are succeed! You are succeed!!!" she is happy with her hand raised, her eyes are filled with happy tears.

Does not know why, actually there is none of her business whether Yu Ao Tian is succeed in his election or not, but this is her first time in her life that she worked so hard when doing something, the joy of being successful is self-evident.

Compare to Yao Yao excitement, Yu Ao Tian expression is looked so flat, inside his bottomless eyes are revealed his dissatisfied.

Why? Yao Yao can feel that Yu Ao Tian must be so longing for this position, but why his expression such cold, or else this position isn't something not really important for him.

It seems this position really cannot satisfy this person ambition?

Perhaps, this ambitious man purpose is..... Prime Minister position!

"Congratulation, CEO Yu. No! Now I must call you as Congress Yu."

"Haha, what are you saying, Officer Liu, I still haven't thanks everyone."

At this time, the Prime Minister slowly walking toward here.

From the age he must at least someone in his sixty, deep black is concealed the traces of years, his vigorous aura embodies a sense of human dignity. He smiles, slowly extend out his hand: "Congress Yu, later in Parliament still need your strength. Congratulation."

"Thank You, Prime Minister, I will do the things that I need to do."

"I have high expectation on you." Prime Minister smiles, his pair of bright piercing eyes slowly looked at Yao Yao: "Lawyer Luo, your speech are extraordinary. It seems, It not only Congress Yu has an outstanding ability but he also has good eyes in selecting talented person."

Woah (happy expression)

Prime Minister is praising her, this is simply alike dreaming, too unbelievable, too unbelievable, if can bring a camera to here, this is too good ah<sup>~</sup>, she really wanted to find someone to record this moment as keepsake (memorialized)!

"Thank You, thank you to Prime Minister praising me."

"Haha. The capability of the youngsters are really unlimited. Later the country.... Is depending on you guys." When the Prime Minister said something meaningful, he gave a nice pat to Yu Ao Tian's shoulder and then left.

Aiya, aiya, if earlier she knew this when picking her major, she would not take law, tckckckc, she must go for politician path. Too cool, too majestic.

Of course, this is only Yao Yao's joking to herself, the main reason why she choosing law actually because.... Her mother had been telling her not to touch anything with politic thingy! But she wanted to hold a memorial ceremony for her father who in heaven, so that she only can choose an occupation that able to plead for old case.

"All Officials, I take my leave first."

"En, Congress Yu, take your time."

When Yu Ao Tian is going to take Yao Yao with him and leaving, a sound of footsteps coming from behind, and followed with sharp voice: "Mr. Yu, You are not allow to leave!!"

Turned his head, as seen, a middle-aged man who is wearing a gold rimmed glasses showing up in front of them, beside him standing a man who has not an ordinary aura, and there are also few of minions.

They are.... Who are they?

"Secretary Fu, what is going on?" The head of the state council and few of the officials are curiously coming over.

Secretary Fu? Faint, in this politic world, the position of secretary can't say small or big, whom secretary he is, if he is Prime Minister or Vice Prime Minister secretary this position is called as big. Yao Yao is thinking inside her heart.

That secretary Fu is tugging up his gold-rimmed glasses and smiles: "Chairman Tang, I think this time the congress election must be re-elect once again."

What does he mean? What does he mean with re-elect? This secretary Fu is dissatisfied with Yu Ao Tian in which part? Why must re-elect? Yao Yao dissatisfied creasing her forehead, glancing at Yu Ao Tian who is standing beside

her.

But Yu Ao Tian is looked so calm, as if he has already predicted this thing will be going to happen.

"Secretary Fu, the congress election is once every three years, only choose one every election. If really want to re-elect, at least you must give irrefutable reason, just afraid it won't be met with the parliament's rules."

#### **Chapter 291**

# Yu Ao Tian is Daebak\*]!!!

Listen to Director Tang explanation, Secretary Fu gives a smile, the eyes that hidden behind his glasses flashed: "This time congress election if not Mr. Yu being chosen perhaps still easy to settle, but if Mr. Yu, this election really need to re-select. Because I have received a news, two years ago before Mr. Yu coming to China, he was one of Yakuza's head in Japan! I didn't say wrong right? Mr. Yu?" After said, Secretary Fu pair of eyes are beaming directly looking at Yu Ao Tian.

'Thump....thump.... Thump! Thump!' (heart racing)

At sudden Yao Yao heart beat is racing faster, she failed, after all she is forgot about Yu Ao Tian's background!

She thought this parliament officers only looking for selecting a new congress man, they won't want to waste many time only to dig out Yu Ao Tian's past, but....

She obviously knew that some of the government officials are seeking trouble for Yu Ao Tian, after all she didn't think everything as whole, in completely.

As someone lawyer the most basic responsible is helping the client to think every possibilities and things in many aspects, no matter how big the matter is, how the details, must be prudent and cautious.

Such a big loophole, how could she not pay any attention? Just not paying attention!

There is faint trace of warmth in her moist eyes, she is biting hard her lips, she isn't blaming Secretary Fu disclosure, but she is blaming herself, hate herself,

first time accepting a case she has made huge mistake by leaving such big loophole! Such a failure!!

"Secretary Fu, I don't know what are you talking about?" Yu Ao Tian confused shrugging his shoulders, helplessly looking at everyone.

"Secretary Fu, does this matter have absolute evidence?" Director Tang attitude is clearly a turning point, if Yu Ao Tian really have background as mafia, it means that against the Parliament rules, this time of election must be held for once again.

"Of course. If there is no absolute evidence, I would not dare to ask to re-do the selection this request." Said Secretary Fu confidently, his hand is pointing at the man who has owned not an ordinary aura, that person is standing beside him: "This man is head of police officer in Japan, Mr. Hattori (Fu Bu), he could give an evidence about Mr. Yu past!"

Hah, this Secretary Fu after all went to Japan and brought the human evidence? While other people can do anything without single loopholes why she couldn't? For once again Yao Yao bit harder her lips, with guilty eyesight looking at Yu Ao Tian, lowers her head down. This time is dead meat. Sorry, Yu Ao Tian....

"Hello to every Chinese Officials. I am head of police officer in Japan, my name is Hattori Jiro (Fu Bu Chi Lang). I ever met Mr. Yu in Japan before, moreover I could take responsible by giving an evidence that Mr. Yu was head of number one Yakuza group in Japan." Hattori Jiro is using Japanese when talking with everyone by pointing at Yu Ao Tian, he also using translator helps to translate it into Chinese.

All of the officers who are listened to this, all of them at loggerheads: "Mr. Yu, if what Mr. Hattori said is right, really sorry, you must be disqualified from the congress!"

"Fuh..." Yu Ao Tian is taking deep breath, one of his hand is inserted into his pocket, slowly said: "Director Tang, this matter I really don't know how to explain it to you. How about.... I ask Mr. Yamagucchi (San Kou) to give an explanation to you, can he?"

"Mr. Yamagucchi?" all of the people are exchanging their looks: "The Japanese Secretary of State, Mr. Yamagucchi Taizo (Shan Kou Tai San)?"

"Yes! I see, only him who can help me to prove everything." After said, Yu Ao Tian is taking out his mobile phone, directly dialing the number of Mr. Yamagucchi Taizo, it is using video call so both sides of official can connect visually.

"Hello to every Chinese officials. I am Yamagucchi Taizo. I heard the news of Mr. Yu being elected as Chinese Congress member and I am so happy for that. Actually the Japanese side has been inviting Mr. Yu for few times, expecting he will be coming to help Japanese government, but Mr. Yu has refused, actually quite regretful...." Yamagucchi Taizo and the Chinese official are doing an interaction, in order to proof that Yu Ao Tian isn't the head Yakuza in Japan, he even ensured that there was mistaken between Hattori and Yu Ao Tian.

"Two days ago you went to Japan, were you trying to find Mr. Yamagucchi?" When everyone is having an interaction with Mr. Yamagucchi, Yao Yao is whispering with very low voice to Yu Ao Tian who is beside her.

He is nodding, and even showing his cunning smile.

At this moment, Yao Yao heart can be at ease, but still she really cannot forgive herself with the reality of the loophole.

Yu Ao Tian is completely settled everything, she believes if there is no requirement to have representative lawyer during the election process, based on his capability he can do everything perfectly by himself!

Ha, she has pleaded to herself that she would do some make up for the debt she owed him. But now it seems that, everything that she made obviously useless.

"Mr. Yu, Mr. Yamagucchi has been confirmed everything for you, apologizing, just now was doubting about you." The director of Parliament Tang Ying Jie smiles while hand over back the mobile phone to Yu Ao Tian.

"Haha, Director Tang, something important alike Parliament congress member this position, it is good to be extra careful when you are doing screening (choosing)."

"Mr. Yu, it is so good if you can think this way. Really happy, you can join us in Parliament."

"Me too." Yu Ao Tian smiles elegantly, he also waiting for Director Tang to leave.

When he sures there is no 'ears' anymore, his deep black eyes flashed, faster he looked at Secretary who standing not far: "Really worrying you how you give an explanation to Zheng Kai Rui later?"

Listened to Zheng Kai Rui, this three words, secretly Yao Yao creasing her forehead, this name again! Vice Prime Minister! So that this person is Vice Prime Minister's secretary. She has lost her count every times Yu Ao Tian mentioned about Zeng Kai Rui, this name, actually what kind of hatred between Yu Ao Tian and Vice Prime Minister?

"Mr. Yu, you are thinking too much, this time only heard from others report, this is completely nothing related to Vice Prime Minister, after all the Japan and the China sides have already proven your Innocent, well it seems this really only a misunderstanding."

"Aiya." Yu Ao Tian is pretending surprised and open wide his mouth, but his face is showing his devilish smiles walking slowly in front of Secretary Fu, spoke softly: "Well, just didn't know, whether today, the matter that I got attempting to be killed, did it also not related to him?"

"What? Mr. Yu did you almost get killed before? Didn't you come late because of helping pregnant woman?" Secretary Fu is pretending to be stupid and dumbfounded spoke in high tone.

Yu Ao Tian showed confusing expression, frowned: "When did I say I was being hunted down? You must heard mistaken, Secretary Fu."

"En? What? Well, I heard mistaken, hahahaha."

"Haha."

Two people are laughing at each other, but inside their heart both of them knew what the real thing happened, only because walked for quite long in political path, both of them must be so careful with their words and deeds.

"Yu Ao Tian, you are awesome, after all you are being able to invite Mr. Yamagucchi to help you out!" Hattori Jiro is gritting his teeth.

#### **Chapter 292**

## The Congressman Yu Ao Tian

He really know Yu Ao Tian very well, and he also met him for couple times. One who walks in black path, one who walks in white path, as head of police officer Hattori Jiro, impossible for him not understand Yu Ao Tian?

Speak little bit blunt, when he was in Japan, Yu Ao Tian was almost being caught by Hattori Jiro. So that there still a revenge between them.

"Mr. Hattori, this time you suddenly visiting China, moreover you were secretively meeting China Government officer. You think after you go back to your country, could it be Mr. Yamagucchi thought you.... Selling out your country?"

Just as information, today the relationship between China and Japan are quite tensed, this time Hattori Jiro coming to China might absolutely telling the Japanese side, he as someone who has high position but coming to China secretly, although he could go back, but he won't have any good ending!

"Yu Ao Tian, thank you for your consideration. I have my own way to explain the matter!" after said, Hattori Jiro and Secretary Fu leaving the Parliament with darken face.

"Ha."

From far far away looking at Yu Ao Tian who face is hanging with subtle smile, Yao Yao who keeps on silent for this time, slowly walking in front of him: "Why Mr. Yamagucchi wanted to help you?"

"No matter in which country's the person who hold high position must be built their own party (group) in private. Hattori Jiro is confidant of Japan Deputy Vice Minister, while me during in Japan, just by coincided, I was confident of Mr. Yamagucchi Taizo. Very early he really wanted to get rid this Hattori. Hence, I just told him, once Hattori pointed his finger on me, going to reveal my past, then once he came back to Japan, Yamagucchi Taizo could excuse to the Japanese Government to catch Hattori because sold out country secret. So that, based on my relationship with Yamagucchi, in order to gain advantage, he helped me, this is something sensible."

This mater sound such simple, doesn't it all about the internal government fight, Yamagucchi Taizo must protect his own confidant, and on other side he also wanted to get rid rival's confidant too.

But.... The reality actually are far complicated! Now Yao Yao is quite happy, that time she listened to her mother's words once she choosing to get involved into politic this path, or else because of the internal fight, she perhaps has beaten till hers bones are broken.

Important to say, based on Yu Ao Tian complexity, walking in politic and government path must be as smooth and flat alike white clouds!

"Oh yeah, since you are Mr.Yamagucchi's confidant, why didn't you choose Japanese government, isn't it more handy to be there?" by this way, Yu Ao Tian does not need to come to China with Businessman status, and at same time no need to waste much time, doesn't this is much better?

"I don't like Japan, this is my reason, can it be?" after said, Yu Ao Tian is holding her hand and walking out from the Parliament House.

But she clearly can feel it, this is only an excuse that given by Yu Ao Tian to stop her from keep asking.

Hence the reason why he must come to China and join the political, this is not really the point she wanted to ask, because she just randomly gives him question when asked him.

"Ao Tian, how's things?" walking out from the Parliament House, Long Qi and others who are guarding the door hurried dashed in front.

He silent for moment, faintly smile.

Paused, Long Qi and the others are showing their excitement smiles: "So

Good! Too great! Very good!"

"Ao Tian, Congratulation!" Han Li Shang is tightly hugging Yu Ao Tian, that cold eyes is clearly have tears.

It can be felt that, all of them are so touched, so happy. But.... From the moment the election result was announced, Yao Yao is so obvious can feel Yu Ao Tian flat emotion, even until now he stills so.

Compare to Long Ye excitement, Han Li Shang tearing eyes, he as if an outsider, only giving a faint smile, there is no such happiness expression!

"Xiao Meng Li, this time you are contributing much, come, let me give you a hug!" after said, Long Ye without waiting for Yao Yao to react, pair of his hand hugging onto her waist, and then raises her up.

Ugh.... This is such? She paused, this gesture gives a feeling she is so embarrassed, after all she isn't a little girl, being hugged like this actually too embarrassed. The most important is..... "Haha, Long Ye Ge Ge, actually this time Yu Ao Tian succeed, this is really nothing related to me, still because of my appeared careless mistake, which resulted... Yu Ao Tian election almost failed...." talked to this point, Yao Yao is feeling guilty lowering her head.

Long Ye at moment dumbfounded, slowly put Yao Yao back to the ground, his face curiously looked at Yu Ao Tian: "What is going on?"

"Get into car later we will have talked about it."

"En."

In front of the metal fence, there are many reporters awaiting. Waiting Yu Ao Tian and others walking out from the inner metal fence, the reporters are surrounded as if bees....

"Mr. Yu, how's the election result? If it failed, will Berson Group stocks keep on going down?"

"Mr. Yu, are you ever thinking to take over the CEO position in Berson again?"

Facing with the reporters who are continuing give questions, Long Ye who knows well about this and can manage with ease, talking on behalf of Yu Ao Tian: "Haha, Media fellows, if you guys want to know the result of the election, still

better to check out the news that Parliament House going to announce. Thus, for now our Chairman really can't say anything so far."

Taking a chance when Long Ye drawing the media attention, Yu Ao Tian movement is so fast he pulled Yao Yao quickly to get into car which parked on road side.

Not long after that, Long Ye also free himself and gets into the car.

"Ao Tian, where are we going to celebrate?" Han Li Shang has epoch-making idea to go for Happy moment, it hard to see but today he just too happy, so happy!

"Rest assured, the celebration place, Ao Tian has given an order to me." Said Long Ye, he smiles secretive toward Yu Ao Tian.

"Bao Bei, tonight you..."

"I want to go to my home."

"Humph." Yu Ao Tian gives cold humphed, but this is also good, tonight he and those few government officials will 'drink to the fullest'.

Not long after that, the car is taking lead to send Yao Yao home, "I take my leave first. Good bye everyone." she waving her hands and then get down from the car.

Suddenly Yu Ao Tian grabbed her wrist: "Tomorrow at 7 morning, I will going to pick you up, remember, take swimming suit."

"Ah?" Going to swim? "I cannot swim, I won't go."

"You must come!"

"That's right, Xiao Meng Li, I have prepared this especially to celebrate Ao Tian succeed in election, in advance there is swimsuit party."

So this is a party for celebrating Yu Ao Tian? But swimsuit party? When heard it feels alike porno. "I, can I call Xiao Man to join?"

"Cannot!!!" without waiting Yu Ao Tian replied, Han Li Shang who is sitting inside the car is impulsively spoke.

"Ugh...." Yao Yao dumbfounded, why the reaction of Vice CEO Han such

strong?

"Can, you can call anyone to come."

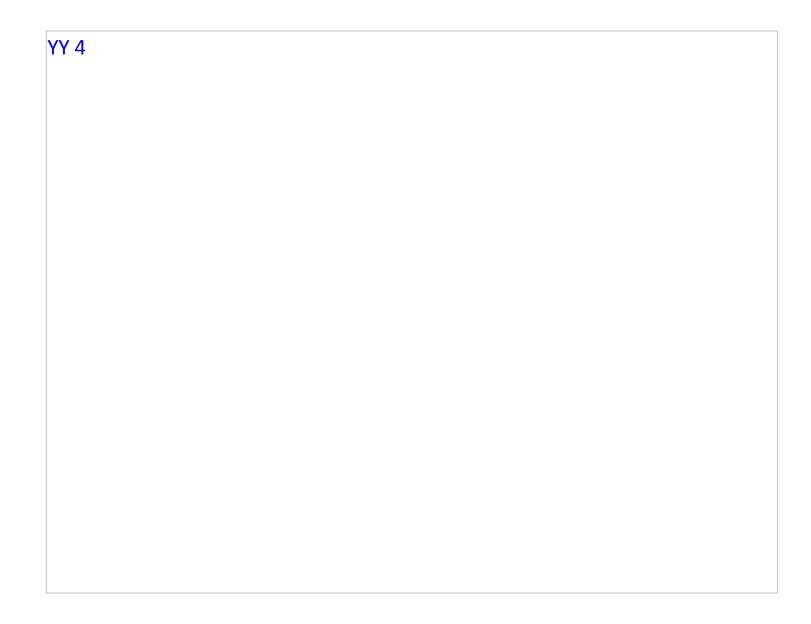
"Ao...."

Yu Ao Tian is stopped Han Li Shang to speak, smile devilishly: "You go home."

"Oh, Good bye." Yao Yao is happily waving her hand, turned her body and walking toward her own house.

It can be felt, Han Li Shang's face showing such annoyance, he really is, so afraid to meet Gong Xiao Man that little girl!

#### 292 B



### **Chapter 292**

### **Beautiful Women**

"Ao Tian, just now Xiao Meng Li said that your election almost failed, what did she mean?" the car is slowly moving, the joyful atmosphere inside the car suddenly change into tensed atmosphere, everyone is showing up gloomy expression.

"Just as what I predicted, Zeng Kai Rui really planned to expose my mafia background when I was still in Japan in order to stop me from election."

"Fortunately you had made the preparation. But from this case, Zeng Kai Rui

must be guessed about who you are, right?" Said Han Li Shang codly.

As seen, Yu Ao Tian handsome face showing cunning smiles: "I have entered political circle, certainly going to confront him head to head, this time he wanted to stop me, everything... Just too late!"

If Yu Ao Tian does not enter political circle, perhaps Zeng Kai Rui can incite the entire politician to be his enemy. But once he entered the political circle, once he is being selected into a position as one of the 'Party' which able to go against Zeng Kai Rui, so do not need to stick with Deputy of Prime Minister?

"Oh yeah, how about Xiao Meng Li's mother?"

After heard Long Ye, Long Qi who is silent for this time creased his forehead, clenching his hand into fist.

"Just wait, wait for little bit." This is not for first time Yu Ao Tian delaying this matter, Long Ye and Han Li Shang had said about this matter few times before, but he kept on saying to wait this matter and delayed it until now.

"Ao Tian, if.... You have considered something, just let me to go for it." within this few days, everyone has witnessed something between Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao, although they are believing that Yu Ao Tian isn't type of person who can be controlled by feeling, but they are also afraid this time he would change the past ruthless.

"Haha, Li Shang, you must be mistaken on something, I don't have anything to consider. It only this few days there was lot of things happened and need to be settled so that it delayed. My problem, I must settle it by myself!" after said, inside the deep pair bottomless Yu Ao Tian's eyes, his eyes gleaming with dangerous flash....

That same afternoon, the Parliament House had announced the election result, when the news about Yu Ao Tian being selected as the congress member broadcast to the entire city, the stocks of Berson Group has increased for hundred points. It seems this time election, not only let Yu Ao Tian to gain this share as congress member, but it even to bring back all the Berson loses. This, perhaps, is called as the benefit by engage into political.

The next day.

"Woah.... This is my first time.... To see such luxurious private yacht!!" at seaside, Gong Xiao Man is opened wide her mouth, pointed at the Yacht that parked in seashore.

This luxurious private yacht can fit at least 300 people, inside, there is swimming pool, ball room, and also room to take a rest, it is akin to small luxury cruise.

She and Yao Yao are exciting looked at the yacht, looking to the vast blue sea, infatuated and take deep breathe: "Comfortable! This time really sprinkle by your fortune, Yao Yao."

"Haha, it should be me who thank you because accompanying me come here." she just does not know this time celebration will be at yacht, it seems there won't be any swimsuit party? It was Long Ye who scared her.

"Every beautiful women, there is a place to change the clothes, you guys hurry changed into swimsuit." Long Ye who is arranging this celebration commanding everyone.

All of them are heading to the changing place.

"Hey, Yao Yao, other than Mo Xue Tong, who are the rest?" at one corner, Gong Xiao Man is pointing at few women who are at same changing room, titled her head.

"Ugh... That one is the head housekeeper at Yu Ao Tian's villa, her name is Angel."

"Woah, even the head of housekeeper is really beautiful."

"Hahaha...." actually sister Angel is only using the status as head of housekeeper to conceal her real identity as killer. Yao Yao awkwardly smiles, while her eyes looked at the other person who is stranger to her: "And about that woman, I also don't know."

"Ssst.... Counting at us, the total women are five, they are four men, you say how come there left one? Oh there also some staffs."

"....." cold sweat, what does Gong Xiao Man think of? "Xiao Man, this is only ordinary gathering, you don't think too much, okay?"

"Hihihihi. Do you know, my beloved, this is one of my likeness." Gong Xiao Man

is smiling devilish, she really can't wait to hurry change her clothes with swimsuit.....

Luxury yacht, at the bow of yacht, four beach chairs are arranged side by side, four men are lying on the top leisurely, and leisurely looking at the vast sea.

The sun is shining on their body, the formation is more charming scenery than the sea, moreover the four men appearances are too brightly for eyes.

"Ah, it really has been long time." Long Ye pair of hand put at back to support his head, his head facing to the blue bright sky.

"Thinking carefully, this yacht since we bought it, this is still our first time to use it, isn't it?" This private yacht priced about 9 billions, it was bought by them after they acquired Berson and generate first revenue. But because all of them are too busy with working, this yacht has been idled for long time.

"Oh yeah, Li Shang, why are you bringing Angel to come here?" Long Ye changed his position into sitting, curiously looking at Han Li Shang.

"Nothing. Just want to call her coming here." said Han Li Shang coldly, he takes a sip of beverage that put beside him.

"Older brother, you still say Li Shang, the woman that you call here, who is she?"

"You say whom?"

No need to ask, it must be Long Ye new girlfriend.

Long Ye once again changed his position into lying position, his eyes staring at Yu Ao Tian who keeps silent for this time.

He is using sunglasses, not moving lying there.

Long Ye curiously frowning: "Ao Tian? Ao Tian?"

"En?" Yu Ao Tian moved his head looked at him.

"Oh, nothing, I thought you are sleeping."

"I am sleeping." Yu Ao Tian is taking off his sunglasses, bitterly rubbing his temples: "Last night I had drinking until 3, now being shaken by the yacht, I almost want to throw out." After said, he takes cold beverage, gulping mouthful,

and finished it with two times big gulps.

"Cold sweat, those group of politician old men really awesome, everyday they don't have thing to do so go to drink, fortunately you have good tolerance with liquor, or else you must be drunken to death by them."

"Ye!" suddenly, there is a woman voice.

Long Ye takes a look, as seen, this woman has sexy body shape, her body is wearing plain blue bikini and slowly walking toward them.

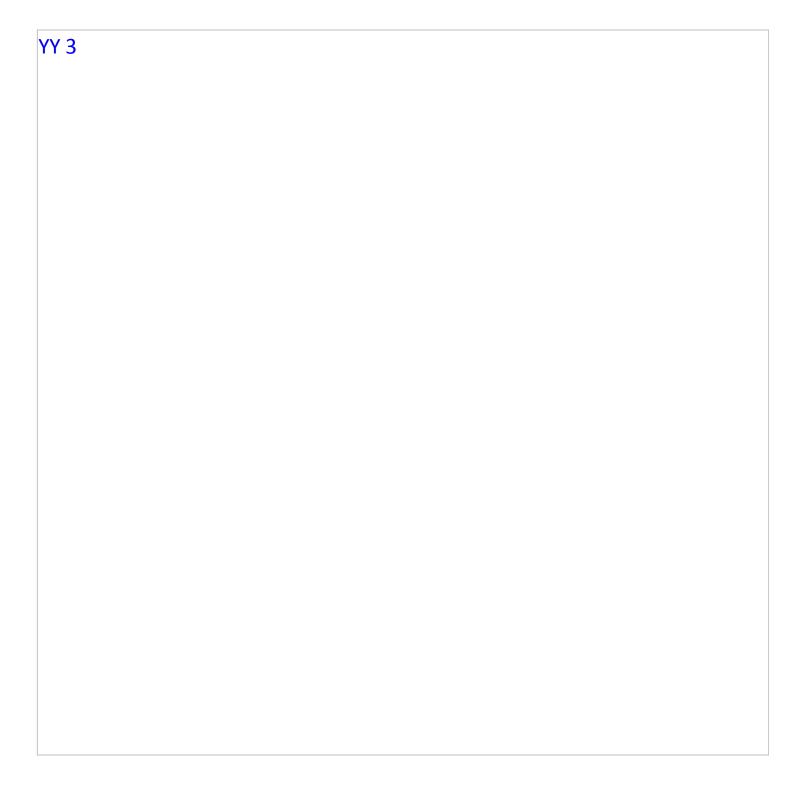
She is appearing in front of them taking off her outer, her action almost choking Long Qi: "ke ke (cough voice). Fuck, her boobs!"

"Long Qi, you are really useless!" coldly Yu Ao Tian glance at him.

As his biological brother he also despised him with smile: "Having you as my younger brother is such embarrassing, your older brother if want to have girlfriend must be this type." after said, his use pair of his hand to shape the body, this gesture.

Long Qi is fiercely gritting his teeth, these two of men are bullying him because he does not have any girlfriend? Not to mention Long Ye's girlfriend must have be someone who has sexy body, Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend also those who have good body too? It seems that later on he must find the S shape girl to be his girlfriend?

#### 293



### **Chapter 293**

# **Every Woman has sexy body**

"Ye, what are you guys talking?" the sexy woman completely ignored and bend down her body to Long Ye, and at same time smile politely to Yu Ao Tian.

"Nothing, where's other?" Long Ye vaguely hugging on the woman's waist,

smile when asking.

"Soon they will come out."

When she just spoke, Angel and Mo Xue Tong are coming out together. These two women although their body aren't as exaggerated as Long Ye's girlfriend but still their body are A body where protrude should be its present, the place where there's lift it's elevated, still hot in eyes.

"switttt...." Long Qi is making blowing sound, whispered: "Still sister Xue Tong is more beautiful."

Although, what that Long Qi said is a fact, if gather face with body together, believe all the women in this yacht must be shown the white feather (candidly admit defeat), but older brother's girlfriend is still dare, he even dares to say such thing, it will definitively anger some people.

"Long Qi!!" Long Ye is fiercely glaring at his younger brother, but that pair of charming eyes can't help to look at Mo Xue Tong's back.

She is coldly lying down at an empty beach chair, wearing her sunglasses and alone drinking her beverage.

Angel is giving deep bow to Yu Ao Tian before she sits down beside Han Li Shang.

"Why flat chest and Gong Xiao Man haven't show up?" Long Qi is impatiently waiting for them, all the people are gathered to open the champagne.

"Oh ya, talking about Xiao Meng Li, Ao Tian you make a guess what kind of bikini she is wearing? Or high fork swimsuit?" Long Ye is so expecting what kind of bikini will be wore by this Xiao Meng Li who has 14 or 15 years old face.

"No need to guess." Han Li Shang is expressionless pointing at two persons who are slowly walking closer, subconsciously wearing his sunglasses to cover his helpless expression.

Long Qi, Long Ye, Yu Ao Tian three of them are curiously looking over there, as seen, three of them are showing dumbstruck expression, the next moment... "Huff." the Long's brothers are drinking beverage, and spitting it out.

Long Ye is more exaggerating he even spitting out toward his girlfriend's body. "Ye!"

"Sorry, sorry." Long Ye is enduring his laugh, turned his head to other side, patting at Yu Ao Tian's shoulder: "Xiao Meng Li.... Really different with everyone, hahahahaha."

He can clearly see that Long Ye smiles is little bit strained.

The most important, Yao Yao who has 14 or 15 years old face, now she is wearing such childish swimming suit (little girl swimsuit), and even braid her hair in two section, her looks simply alike primary student!

She is absolutely different compare to these beautiful women who 'a body where protrude should be its present, the place where there's lift it's elevated'.

Even Gong Xiao Man today is wearing bikini, standing side by side with Yao Yao, she looks alike big sister who is bringing her little sister, Yao Yao is looked so naive, too naive.

"Damn!how can flat chest flat to this point? Impossible she does not know how lacking she is? At least she must use something alike bra swim suit."

"Long Qi, you hold your tongue! This is quite good, really good, hahahaha." Long Ye afraid Yu Ao Tian lost face, quickly alleviate the awkward atmosphere.

Just to know, all Yu Ao Tian's girlfriend, none of them who are not beauties. Although Yao Yao is so beautiful, but her beauty.... Really types of lolly-girl.

"What good that's! Ao Tian standing side by side with flat chest, I can feel older brother with little sister or father with his daughter?"

"Long!!!" this time, Long Ye really doesn't know how to alleviate the situation, because he also feel....

These two persons standing side by side, actually really not match. "Ao Tian, speak honestly, when you are with Xiao Meng Li.... Don't you feel sense of guilty (doing crime)?"

Hahahaha.....

If say not, it really impossible! Yu Ao Tian in this side really speechless, that

Little Thing not only her appearance that looked alike 12 or 13 years old, even her 'inner' simple to say really a little girl! Impossible he does not have sense of guilty?

But.... Because of that, he is simply loves her, spoil her. Perhaps this is a common thing for an ordinary big man, facing with this little girl, no matter how heartless and cold-blood a man there will still endurance!

"Yao Yao, you are really, everyone is wearing bikini, it only you who is wearing childish swimsuit, really embarrassing!" Gong Xiao Man is pulling her hand, softly complaining.

"You, you know that I just back to China, I hasn't had chance to go swimming, so that in my home there is only this swimming suit that bought when I was 12 years old."

"Ah??? Aren't you growing since you were 12 until now???"

"....." cold sweat, it seems, thing really like this!

Finally everyone is gathered, everyone is surrounded a long table that has put at there beforehand, Han Li Shang and the Long's brothers everyone of them is holding one bottle of champagne, using strength to shake it, "1! 2! 3!"

'Bang'

The cap opening sound crisp and loud, the fragrant of the champagne overflow from the bottle neck. The Long's Brothers using their thumb to stop up at the champagne's bottle, from the bottle the champagne splashing every where.

"Ah...."

The Long Brothers are splashing the champagne to the women, all of them are screaming surprised.

Long Ye's girlfriend is even exaggerating looking everywhere to hide, everyone is playing awfully.

Long Qi only targeting Yao Yao, no matter where she hides, he will be coming over her. That champagne is spraying all over her body even to her face.

"Hey!!! Long Qi, why don't you targeting other people?" Yao Yao is unhappily pouted her mouth, representing her protest.

"Since you are good to be target, of course targeting you." after said, he for once again using his strength shaking the champagne, and using his strength to spray it to her face.

At this time, Yu Ao Tian is walking over, alike kid being hugged, he hugging Yao Yao into his embrace, glared at Long Qi, his expression as if telling, spray if you dare.

Who knows....

Today Long Qi not even giving Yu Ao Tian face, directly he spraying the champagne to Yu Ao Tian's face.

'Huh.' sound, has already sprayed into his face.

"Hahahahahaha." Yao Yao is laughing crazily by covering her mouth.

Yu Ao Tian really wants to know, whether this Little Thing is dumb or not? Because of whom he makes himself got sprayed? "Long Qi, I see you this little brat today seem you bore to live!!" he puts down Yao Yao on the surface, quickly he dash to Long Qi.

"Ao Tian, Ao Tian, be careful with your image, now you are congressman." Long Qi is catching Yu Ao Tian.

He immediately changed his playful expression, it is not because he care too much about his congressman image, but the important there are Long Ye's girlfriend and Gong Xiao Man, these outsiders, he indeed does not want to reveal too much his personal thingy.

There is no way, for while he better enduring Long Qi.

"Come, let's we together celebrate Ao Tian political path 'won't be back'."

"Ao Tian, congratulation."

"Congratulation, Chairman Yu."

"Congratulation."

"Congratulation." everyone is giving blessing words to Yu Ao Tian.

Everyone is raising high their hand that holding the glass with champagne. "Come! Cheers."

'bang' sounded, the champagne let out crisp and loud voice. Herald, from now on Yu Ao Tian in the political career is officially set sail.

### 

Australia-	R18-Rating					
_	_		6.1.			
steamy scen	ie, enjoy yo	ur reading		apter. So, fo	or those wh	no waiting for
steamy scen		ur reading		apter. So, fo	or those wh	no waiting for
steamy scen	ie, enjoy yo	ur reading		apter. So, fo	or those wh	no waiting for

## Chapter 294

### The Vague Atmosphere inside the Yacht Cabin

"Bao Bei, with your appearance, you think how many scolding I need to shoulder in the future?" when everyone is playing happily, Yu Ao Tian is slowly walking closer to Yao Yao's side, smiles sinister while spoke.

She dumbfounded, blinking her eyes few times: "What's matter with my appearance? What?"

Yu Ao Tian's eyes are looking her from head to toe, really more he sees her more he feels she is so much looking alike primary school student, he even not really know with kind of attitude he must deal with her.

"Huh." he is taking deep breathe, pretending to be bitter said: "You say, if there is media that photo us together, the headline will be the Parliament congress member without consider about morality act indecently toward little girl, what it will do?"

Speak honestly, this is such serious problem for politician, maybe one day this topic will ruin Yu Ao Tian politic career.

"Aiya, doesn't this is so simple? You can find a girlfriend." once Yao Yao spoke, suddenly the atmosphere change to be dimmed.

Since the day Yu Ao Tian being elected, she isn't his representative lawyer anymore; if he really looking for girlfriend, they will be more stranger than now, they will not have any relation.

This, it seems something that Yao Yao has been looking forward for such long time, but when she said it out, she can feel her heart is such uncomfortable.

"Ha." Yu Ao Tian is smiling devilish, it seems that she not really clearly about the relationship between both of them! Thinking carefully, he takes the opportunity when no one focus on them, he takes Yao Yao quickly inside the yacht cabin.

"Hey, Yu Ao Tian, why you take me here?" the second floor of cabin, the rest

area. Inside not only has comfortable sofa, and also soft bed, there is also transparent glass at the below which able to see the fish diving in water.

"Humph, you are such heartless Little Thing, I want you to know, knowing the words just now spoken by you actually provoking me!" after said, he pushing down Yao Yao on the bed, his sexy lips are brushing on her lips.

"En uh..." her eyes opened widen, she is little bit not understanding what Yu Ao Tian mean by saying this such thing, her words provoking him? Asking him to find girlfriend, how could that provoking him?

That skillful tongue is entering her little mouth, strongly intertwined with her tongue.

Yao Yao cannot bear this type of kissing, want to refuse, but her mouth is tightly sealed, so she cannot say anything.

Gradually, at the beginning inside the cabin is muffled but because of this kiss it even more suffocating.

Cannot to breathe, it will going to die, really unbearable!! "Huhuhuhuhu" pair of her hand hitting on his chest.

By this time Yu Ao Tian still reluctantly to let her go.

"Huhuhuhu..." Yao Yao is constantly letting out rough breathes, she even thought she going to die, her moist eyes are glaring fiercely toward him.

Damn! Yu Ao Tian eyes sharply looked at her: "Don't look at me with that kind of eyesight!" or else he really would have sense of guilty, Heaven knows that the appearance of Yao Yao now, she is really looks alike little girl that being bullied? How can he keep on continuing?

"I don't like to be like this!" she dislikes, she dislikes it not even a bit, staying beside Yu Ao Tian there is no special feeling, but once there is something intimate interaction, she really feels uncomfortable.

"Dislike?" Yu Ao Tian is smiling devilish, his bottomless eyes are slowly glance over: "Bao Bei, you dislike it but why this place 'stand up'?"

Yao Yao is looking at her chest area, vaguely there are two small things obviously bulge. How, how can this happen? Hurried she cover her chest area

with pair of her hand: "I, I...." huhuhuhu.... This is so embarrassing to death, it even bulge out!

"You are really, the swimsuit not even have bra pad?" luckily her situation only happened inside the cabin. If her situation being seen by many men, Yu Ao Tian's face might be deathly lost because of her.

"This swimsuit bought when I was 12 years old, it absolutely does not have any bra pad!!"

*" "* 

Does this little brat stop growing since she was at 12 years old? Yu Ao Tian feels this little thing perhaps wrongly when reported her age! "Come, Bao Bei, let me check on it, okay."

"I don't want!!"

"You not let me to check on it, if you going out like this you will going to be laughed by them."

This right too, Yao Yao loosen her hands that protecting her chest area.

Yu Ao Tian is pretending to seriously checking, but the other moment, his mouth is curved upward, smiles alike sinister....

Darn it!

Yu Ao Tian this rotten bastard! Waiting she comes to react actually she has been falling into his trap, so if she thinking to stop, everything is too late.

He lower his head, open his mouth, he has already accurate finding her sensitive area on her swimsuit.

"Uh, Yu Ao Tian, you.... You are rotten bastard!!" Yao Yao is pissed off while keep on push away forehead that close to her chest, constantly she keeps on scolding and cursing him.

"Bao Bei, just as expected your little mouth really so provoking!" he narrowed his eyes, his big hand is kneading her breast, and once again he lower his head.

"Uh ng..." something alike electric-current flowing to her body, her soft body is shaking from time to time and it comes to series of thriller (feel excited at sudden).

Now she really regretful to scold this rotten bastard man, but if she does not scold and curse him, will he stop?

"Bao Bei, take look at yourself, you are really hot." Yu Ao Tian really satisfied with her reaction.

Yao Yao quickly lowering her head, immediately her little face is showing embarrassed expression: "You are too much! Yu Ao Tian!!!"

She is someone who having 14 or 15 years baby face, moreover today she is wearing childish swimsuit, obviously so child-alike. But the bulge thing in her chest really flirting, and with her child-look alike the scenery of doing crime pop out.

Even Yu Ao Tian, a man who does not have any likeness for \*\* but after seeing this kind of scenes he impulsively wants to make his move, if this being seen by such fervent\*\* big uncle, perhaps today she won't be easy to escape.

It seems Long Ye has mistaken one thing, even getting along with Yao Yao this type of Lolly there will give some guilty feeling but, if really will get stuck with it, although there will give some guilty feeling at same time it also provoking!

Gradually, Yu Ao Tian bottomless eyesight suddenly flashed that kind of\*\* beam, his sinister smiles, suddenly he takes off Yao Yao's swim suit.

"Hey! You!!!"

If, just now whatever Yu Ao Tian did actually a kind of teasing her, but this moment....

'thump, thump' a sense of tension filled the air, when just wanted to cover her naked body....

For once again, Yu Ao Tian is faster ahead, he lower his head and using his tongue to touch her sensitive part.

"Ah ng...." the movement is becoming tense but also giving a thrill sense, she is enduring herself by bite

hard her lips: "Don't, Don't like this." using her strength to stop him.

Tepidness big hand is touching her sensitive part, his fingers are rubbing at her nipple.

"Ngng." The hot burn Yao Yao's face has already blushed red, that tense body gradually weaken.

#### **295**

Australia-R18-Rating		

Taking this chance, I want to inform you guys, my update will going to be slower. Since my proposal has agreed by My Boss, so I will be super busy starting next week, taking this week opportunity, I will try my best to stock my translations work so you guys will have something to read during my absence. Moreover, Obsidian also going to have break for while and automatically I will handling all the projects plus one that left by Thunder.

At same time, perhaps I won't be able to response to all your comments during my away, but still I want to hear from you guys, just leave your comments on below comment box ^-^

I will reply as soon as I back to my regular

## **Chapter 295**

### The Vagueness of Two People are going High

Slowly, his white big hand is sliding down.

"Don't!" she can feel dangerous, quickly she clamped both of her leg tight.

But the man stills able to get into-between the gap, very quick he instigate cloth, his fingertips lightly stroking the woman's sleek and soft.

Ups and downs, it gives teasing temptation.

"Beg, I begging you. Stop it..." Yao Yao is showing up her begging expression, both of them have been for some while not doing this such intimate things, for this meanwhile she indeed is having comfortable life, there no such pressure, but today for once again she feels that strange sense of suffocation, she feels something weird inside her heart.

"Want me to stop?" Yu Ao Tian is smiling sinister raised his head.

Seeing a glimpse of hope, quickly she nodding her head.

"Well, did you remember two year ago when you were begging me?"

Two year ago? How begging him? Didn't that time also like now, the way of begging?

"Bao Bei, if you call right, I will let you dress yourself."

Addressing him a right way....

How she called him two years ago? Big Boss Yu? No, not right, it seemed not this kind of addressing, so how to call him?

Yao Yao is trying her utmost to recall, in her mind it seems has so many things, she feels in difficultly bites her lips: "2... Two years ago, I was 17 years old! But, but now I am 19 years old." after she remembered the way she addressed him two years ago, she feels so embarrassing.

"Bao Bei, but you don't forget, I am also older by two years too."

That's right! She is 19 years old, Yu Ao Tian also 28 years old, it seems both of them still have that difference age gap. After she thought about this, she is embarrassed pouted her mouth, murmured: "Big... Big brother, begging you to let me off."

#### Damn!!!

Two years ago he felt this kind of addressing was sweet to death, but now seeing her like this calling him, simple to say it gives a heavier the sense guilty of him (as if doing crime to little girl)!

"Can I dressed?"

"Do as you please." Yu Ao Tian is restraining himself to press down the lower abdomen.

Yao Yao gets up, Yu Ao Tian is slowly moving down.

When she had just sorted out her swimsuit, feeling the lower part of the swimsuit is picked up to side.

"What are you doing?" Yao Yao is tensed open wide her eyes.

Yu Ao Tian is smiling alike sinister, slowly lower down his head....

"En ng...." a strong sense of excitement, compare to just now temptation is so difference, it feels as if there's something in the body keeps moving, and the body lower part has sensed stronger limp and numb feeling.

"Yu, Yu Ao Tian, you.... You are not... Keeping your words. Don't, don't..... I begging you, don't lick anymore!" she is using her strength to push his head away, her face is showing panic and also fear expression.

The feeling that felt by the body cannot lie, she really afraid to show her uncontrolled self.

"Bao Bei, only by this short time, your lower is already wet. No matter how, it stills cannot suck-dry, what should to do?" Yu Ao Tian is pretending to sigh, his tip of tongue is brushing that attractive slit, one of his fingers is slowly getting inside: "Come, let me check it, check on it, does inside really that wet!"

"Ah ng... Don't, too deep, finger stops moving. Don't!" She really going to lost herself. That sensitive body keeps on teasing by this rotten man, how can she

hold it?

"Bao Bei, come, continue calling me."

"Don't!" she does not want to be taken advantage by this man's idea!

"Don't?" Yu Ao Tian smiles devilish, his finger is probing deeper and stir for a bit.

"Uh!!! Ng ng... You.... Big, Big Brother." The naive Yao Yao, she thought by compromised with Yu Ao Tian this man can stop his hand.

But who knows, this is not more alike playing with\*\* fire.

Today, this man has been addicted to the excitement of this kind of teasing-crime. His bottomless eyes are sweeping at the swimsuit which she wore, the picture of the crime scene for once again showing up in front of his eyes.

Just as expected, she wearing this childish swimming suit, moreover keeps calling him big brother, resulting all the things that he's doing right now, simply to say this is provoking his masculine\*\* nature.

"Bao Bei, why are you calling me?" after said, for once again he moving his finger.

"Uh." Yao Yao covered her mouth, so that she won't let out any embarrassed voice, "Big, Big brother, you, you, let me off, okay?"

"How you want me to let you off? Bao Bei, if you are not said it clearer, I don't know what to do."

Does this rotten bastard pretending to be dummy? is he really not understand what she is talking? Yao Yao suspicious at this moment thinking, murmured: "Please take out your hand, fingers take... It out."

"Oh." Yu Ao Tian is leisurely raised one of his hand, slowly moving his finger.

At one glance, simply to say she wanted to cry: "You! You are rotten bastard!"

"You must say, Big Brother, begging you, please take out your hand's fingers from my inside."

This kind of words once it heard.... Such fervent! She can't say it, really cannot

say it out!

"Not say?" seeing Yao Yao not open her mouth for some time, Yu Ao Tian deep eyes flashed, raise her pair of leg up, his tongue tip is teasing hers\*\*.

"Ah en...." Strong sense of electrical across her lower body, her small hands are grabbing quilt.

But this hasn't ended, that bad tongue is moving and teasing, it stimulate the most sensitive areas of her body.

"Don't!!! Don't be like this!!" Yao Yao is shaking her head crazily: I said, I said...." step by step she is getting into the trap of the devil: "Big, Big brother, begging you, please... The finger that trust into my inside... Please let it out..."

Does not know whether because of this type of dirty words provocation or because the man has very good skill. Without waiting for Yao Yao to finish her words, she can feel her lower abdomen tensed, a heat suddenly spewing out. "Ah...." her whole body as if floating clouds, her body fell on the bed.

"Bao Bei, today your reaction is so fierce, see, you made the quilt wet." Yu Ao Tian raised and changed into sitting position, seeing inhale mouthful of air, Yao Yao who let out rough breathe, he smiles.

"You, you are rotten bastard!!" she hates, she embarrassed glared at him, her eyes is filled with averse feeling.

Every time he always teased her to the lame condition; every time she feels embarrassed because of him.

She really cannot bear this kind of shame, but at same time it gives a feeling hard to forget.

"Little Thing, if you are keeping on scolding me, it won't be that easy to stop!"

Ugh.... She covered her mouth, her eyes are gradually looking at the man's lower part. That beach pant is slightly elevated. It is proven the man is \*\*.

It has been long time, she does not being forced by him to do that, does she?

Can this being said he is taking a step back?

Toward men, Yao Yao really does not have so many understanding, and also she really does not know how strong this kind of desire for men. But, due to Feng Chen Yi cheating, Yu Ao Tian who keeps on changing girl friends, without realized it, this is a prove men also have longing for this kind of thing.

Does Yu Ao Tian now?

Forget it, actually she should secretly happy about it, because until now both of them don't have a real relationship. Really should not provoking this man, if he is having bad mood, she will completely out of luck.

#### 296

Picture credit to it's owner

I still going to update A Naive Short-temper Girl on daily base but I only post one chapter per day, I think this is the best way I could do. Moreover after Fasting Month ended, I will be on my holiday so, I might be off about three or four weeks. and also in order to keep up with my schedule that I had planned before hand ^-^

Just ensure to check your e-mail notification for the newest chapter

## Chapter 296

### Long Qi \*\*

"Long Qi, have you found Ao Tian, them?" inside the yacht cabin, Long Ye is patting his younger brother's shoulder.

He is slight absent-minded: "No, haven't found." nervously he shaking his head, and then he rushed to toilet.

'thump, thump' his heart is skipping beat hardly, Long Qi handsome white face is blushed red, pair of his clear eyes are filled with strong of man's\*\*.

"Hu... Hu..." constantly he lets out rough breathing, his burning hot body is leaning on the wood door, wanting to cool down, but his ears is constantly echoing the scene that he heard just now in the cabin rest room area.

'Big, Big brother, begging you, please... The finger that trust into my inside...

Please let it out...'

He was asked by his older brother to look for Yu Ao Tian, but by coincidental he saw the vague scene of Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao.

Yao Yao was showing that kind of expression, and also her tempting voice, again and again it pound his senses.

"Damn!" Long Qi stunned feeling his lower abdomen tensed, something is lifting up from his beach pant.

Faster he open the water tap, constantly he watering himself with cold water, from head to his body, he expecting himself to quickly forgetting all the scenery that he had seen before.

#### 'knock knock knock'

"Long Qi, are you okay? Are you having seasick?"

"I, I am okay." he stopped the water, take deep breathe, pretending as if nothing happen, open the rest room door: "My stomachache..." without he realized his eyes are looking at Yao Yao who is standing at Long Ye's back, his

white face for once again blushing red.

"I have found Ao Tian, come, let's we go to deck."

"En, Oh..." Long Qi is gulping down his saliva nodding his head, walking to the last row. But his eyes not daring to look at Yao Yao.

"Hey, big uncle, why don't you go swimming? Won't it because your body is not good, so that you are not daring to take off your cloth and go swimming, right?" when everyone is playing in the pool, Gong Xiao Man is walking to the ship's bow, looking for Han Li Shang.

He is sitting at the most edge of the yacht bow, casually glanced at Gong Xiao Man, continuing with his coldness eyes looking at the vast blue sea.

Gong Xiao Man eyes rolled: "Big uncle, let's play together." she stretching out her hand and pulling Han Li Shang's arm.

His sharp eyes are glancing at her hand that grabbed his arm, not long after that, his cold handsome face showed strange smile: "Alright."

"Come, come, let's us play volley ball together." when Long Ye's girlfriend said this, Gong Xiao Man and Han Li Shang go to the pool side, At this moment, Long Ye and others also come and join to pool side.

"Okay!" Gong Xiao Man is raising her hand as the signal she agreed, pose one beautiful pose, jumping into the pool. "Big uncle, let's together."

Han Li Shang who is standing at the edge silent for moment, slowly takes off his cloth.

The body has perfect muscles, it so similar with the body builder show which shown in front of Gong Xiao Man's eyes, she really regret toward herself that thought Big Uncle does not have any good body shape so that he reluctant to go for swimming.

Strong sturdy pecloralis muscles, perfect abdomen muscles, adding with his cold handsome face, simply to say it is too perfect to be picky.

Gong Xiao Man is dumbfounded gulping down her saliva, if here doesn't have anyone, she really wants immediately jump onto big uncle!

"Hey, big uncle, you have such great body, how you practice it?" Gong Xiao

Man is swimming to the pool edge, curiously asked.

Han Li Shang faintly smiles, his pair of cold eyes are slowly looking at somewhere not far: "Angel, together."

"Oh." Angel from the lying beach chair stands up, smiles in front of Han Li Shang.

When she is going to get into the pool, Han Li Shang is carefully supporting her arms: "Be careful, cold water."

"Fn."

"Ugh." from beside Gong Xiao Man who sees the scenery feeling there is little bit odd, how can someone cold alike this man can be so warm toward the woman who called Angel, do both of them are closest friend?

"Xiao Meng Li, come, together." suddenly Long Ye diving into the water, waving his hand to Yao Yao who stand at the pool edge.

Quickly she shaking her head: "No, No." hurry she stepped back few steps, but who knows her foot slipped, she almost falls into the pool: "Ah!"

Luckily at this time, Long Qi who is the closest toward her, one of his hand grabbed her arm.

"Thank You." Yao Yao smiles sweetly.

But who knows....

'Big, big brother, begging you...' that scenery flowing inside Long Qi's brain, his heart is 'thump thump' skip beat.

Another moment....

He loosens his hand.

'bam' a sound, Yao Yao falls down into the pool. Fortunately the water not too deep, just fortunately not pass her neck. "Long Qi, you are really not a human!"

He is suppressing the tense inside his heart, smiles devilishly, said: "Sorry, my hand slip."

"You!!!" Yao Yao paused for moment because she is raging in fume.

At this moment, as seen Yu Ao Tian is rushed at Long Qi's back, without waiting him to react, Yu Ao Tian's kicked him....

Heartlessly he kicked him to the pool.

"Ao Tian, you???" Long Qi is using not understanding eyesight looking at Yu Ao Tian who is standing at the pool edge.

He titled his head, smiles devilish: "Sorry, my foot slip."

"Hahahahaha." Yao Yao who standing at side laughing happily.

Long Qi gritting his teeth glared at her: "You dare to laugh! You dare to laugh!" constantly he hit the water to her face.

"Xiao Man! Xiao Man! Help me!"

"Coming!" Gong Xiao Man is hurrying swimming from not far, grouped with Yao Yao to attack Long Qi.

At once, this celebration party that held for Yu Ao Tian has reached it highest point.

"Why don't play together with them?" when all the people are playing volley ball, Yu Ao Tian is sitting beside Mo Xue Tong.

She coldly glanced at the pool side which has high atmosphere, helplessly smiled: "Too childish, you know, I don't like it."

"Ah, Xue Tong, there is time you need to rest yourself little bit. Perhaps, this will be the most relax time that I have." After said, Yu Ao Tian lying his body on that chair, as if intoxicated looking at the blue sky.

Politic this path, how hard it will be he knows it so clearly; it started since he was 16 years old had his first battle, becoming Japanese mafia; at 26 he fought the second battle, to be businessman; now when he at his 28, this is his third battle in his life, and at the same time this is the most important battle for him, perhaps there will be no more relax days in the future like today.

"Ao Tian, when will you break up with that little girl?"

"En?" pair of Yu Ao Tian's eyes are glancing at Mo Xue Tong.

"Nothing, I just curious, randomly asking."

"Xue Tong, you better to take care your own matter!" Yu Ao Tian used heavy speaking tone, his eyes are looking at someone who are in swimming pool: "Impossible for you don't know the reason why Long Ye keeps on changing his girlfriend one with another one?"

"I know. But, there is none of my business? It is him who is not enough mature." Mo Xue Tong smiles, but another moment, his face cold: "But Ao Tian it also not like you don't know... The reason why I never wanted to find any boyfriend?"

### 297

XMT 3	

I just feel Gong Xiao Man so brave, fighting for her feeling and love.

## **Chapter 297**

### **Everyone Moods Changed**

"I go to find something to eat." very obvious, Yu Ao Tian is trying to avoid the topic, when he is standing up.

Mo Xue Tong grabbed his arm: "Ao Tian, you..."

"Xue Tong!" that bottomless eyes are sweeping at Mo Xue Tong's hand which grabbed his arm.

She is using her strength to bite hard her lips, shook off....

"Hey, Yao Yao, you see." inside the swimming pool, Gong Xiao Man pointed at Yu Ao Tian and Mo Xue Tong who are not far from them.

"What?"

"Don't you find both of them little bit odd?"

"What is odd from both of them? Both of them are best friend." Yao Yao does not think so she only gives her smiles, she also raised her hand to climb up from pool.

"So they are best friend..." That's right! Gong Xiao Man is turned her head to look inside the pool, it seems not long ago Han Li Shang and Angel still inside the pool but at sudden both of them are disappearing together. Hurried she chasing: "Yao Yao, Yao Yao."

"What's matter Xiao Man?"

"Come." she pulled Yao Yao to sit, curiously asked: "Do you know what is the relationship between Big uncle with the woman who called Angel?"

"Ugh." their relationship? "Speak frankly both of them are... Boss and subordinate relationship?" in Yu Long group Han Li Shang is the leader of killer group, while Angel is killer, perhaps this kind of relationship can be called as boss and subordinate, right?

"Oh, so that the case."

"So what, Xiao Man?"

"No, nothing...." Gong Xiao Man without she realized are looking at the other side of the yacht.

As seen, Han Li Shang is leaning on the yacht, Angel is slowly walking in his front. And then, Han Li Shang pair of hand is enveloped onto Angel's waist, his lips slowly....

"Xiao Man? Xiao Man, what are you seeing?" Yao Yao is following Gong Xiao Man vision line, at same time she sees: "Oh." when she saw that scenery, she cannot help to spread cold air: "So CEO Han is dating with Sister Angel."

Gong Xiao Man eyes brows at sudden wrinkle to make one line, without waiting for Yao Yao to react, she dashed in front of them. "Since when both of you start it?"

Heard this kind of questioning intonation, Han Li Shang stopped to kiss, Angel is curiously looked at Gong Xiao Man, and then looked at Han Li Shang: "Why she asked this way?"

"Haha, I also don't know." Han Li Shang changed his coldness to warm gentle when talking to Angel with smile.

"I ask you, since when both of you starting?" once again Gong Xiao Man asked with high tone, all the people who are not far from pool looked at them.

"Xiao Man?" Yao Yao never seen the bolt (extremely furious raging to the extreme) Gong Xiao Man, in her eyes, Gong Xiao Man is someone who has so many mischievous ideas and sometimes can be little bit muddle-head big sister, but why now?"

"Say!" Gong Xiao Man is curled her hand into tight fist, angrily roared.

Han Li Shang gloomy frowned, coldly said: "What do you want me to say? There is nothing that I should report to you?"

"Right! That's right, you are indeed no need to report anything to me, it just me who is acting alike lowly slut! All are my own wishful thinking. But since you have already had girlfriend why didn't you tell me?"

Yao Yao who is standing beside can feel something from her words, does Gong

Xiao Man and Vice CEO Han?

"Haven't you known it now?"

Yes, she knew it, but if from beginning she knew it, she didn't need to use so many feeling toward this cold man, her feeling won't fall deep!

"Late!! Now it is too late!" Gong Xiao Man curled tight her hand into fist, fiercely glared at Angel: "I tell you, since this time, I want to fight with you for this man!" after she said, she dashed as if an arrow, gently kissed on Han Li Shang's lips.

The cold pair of eyes immediately changed into blank, believe that Han Li Shang also by himself won't ever expected this little girl after all can say something alike this?

"Oh." Yao Yao who standing not far let out cold breathe, she, she is too admire Gong Xiao Man.

The sudden kiss ended, Gong Xiao Man coldly looked at Han Li Shang, and also Angel, turned back, there is no turning back.

Fight for a man? Ah, with what she will fight?

After all she does not have good body shape alike Angel, she also not as beauty as hers, the most important thing is, that Big Uncle is always acting cold when facing her, this, she has already lost. Thinking to this point, her tears flowing down wet Gong Xiao Man's cheek....

"Xiao Man! Xiao Man...." Yao Yao hurried chasing behind of Gong Xiao Man to accompany her.

Angel heave a sigh: "Mr. Han?"

Han Li Shang using his hand to stop her, forcing to give a smile: "Angel, today really thank you."

"No, it seems that I am not help much."

"Haha, you have helped me."

"Li Shang, you brat is quite heartless too." at beside who keeps to be observant, Long Ye is slowly walking closer to his side, touched his shoulder.

"Mr. Long (older), Mr. Han, I take my leave."

"En." Long Ye sees Angel who is disappearing, smiles devilishly: "I have thought, why today you are suddenly asking Angel to come with you, it seems that you are asking her to shoo away your admires, actually that little girl is not bad, her looks also not bad, her body also not bad, the most important she is serious about you. Why don't you consider her for a bit?"

Ha, but with Gong Xiao Man's age she is enough to stop Han Li Shang footstep. After all, both of them have 11 years age gap! He is enough to be called as her uncle. "Long Ye, it you have time to say me, don't you also do something so similar like I do?"

"What do you want to say?" suddenly Long Ye changed to be cold.

"What I am going to say? Ha, you are constantly in front of Xue Tong keeps on changing girlfriend, for what, you know by yourself."

"I take my leave first." Long Ye changed his expression to little bit tender, stand and disappearing in front of Han Li Shang....

The whole afternoon, the atmosphere on the yacht is quite strange from that morning, it filled with heavy atmosphere.

Until the yacht docked, everyone seems to have carry their own feeling.

The way Long Qi looked at Yao Yao is different; Long Ye attitude toward Mo Xue Tong also weird; between Mo Xue Tong and Yu Ao Tian; Han Li Shang and Gong Xiao Man.

Perhaps the only person who is still normal might be Yao Yao? But seeing her best friend hurt, her mood also ruin bad.

"Bao Bei, I drive you home." when get down from yacht, Yu Ao Tian is taking his sport car near the seaboard.

"No." she waving her hands, she looked at Gong Xiao Man who beside her: "Today I want to go back to school accompany Xiao Man."

"No need, Yao Yao. I want to be alone by myself."

"Xiao Man?"

"I really want to be alone." Gong Xiao Man lowers her head speaking with sad tone.

She really very rare to spot Xiao Man to be this dispirited, it seems that Gong Xiao Man really likes, she might like Vice CEO Han right? But, does Xiao Man know Vice CEO background?

Actually, said that she and Yu Ao Tian are two people who come from different world; while Gong Xiao Man and Vice CEO Han don't they are two different people too?

"Well, Xiao Man, I send you to school."

#### **Chapter 298**

# Bao Bei, Please Accompany Me for Tonight

"Aiya, Xiao Meng Li, just by coincidence I will passing your school when driving my girlfriend, how about I help you to send your classmate."

Yao Yao glances at Gong Xiao Man, waiting for her answer. Gong Xiao Man is nodding her head weak and following Long Ye then left.

"Get into car."

Sitting in Yu Ao Tian's car, she is absent-minded for whole time, her head is filled with Gong Xiao Man's matter. For long time she realized.... "Didn't you say to drive me home? This way, doesn't this the way to your home?"

"My home, does it also yours?" after Yu Ao Tian said this, he smiles.

Ugh....

Listen to this, does not know what to do, strangely Yao Yao feels her heart warm. "I want to go to my own house."

"Just accompany me for one night." When Yu Ao Tian said this he is not using forcing tone, but he is so gentle, and even so calm.

She really rare to hear Yu Ao Tian talking with this kind of speaking tone, he makes her really does not know how to reject him: "I...."

"Later I will be so busy."

Yu Ao Tian stills need to manage Berson Group, moreover secretly lead the Yu Long group, and now he also shoulder the responsible this mission as congress man, he absolutely will be busy.

So he means, will he be busy to the point both of them difficult to meet each

other?

Woah! Doesn't this is so good!

"Well, if you won't do strange thing to me, I, today I will follow you and accompany you at your home."

"Hah, what kind of strange thing?" Yu Ao Tian rolled his eyes, smiles when looking at her.

This brat, here he comes again! "You know it!"

"I don't know."

"You know it!"

"I don't know."

Both of them are keep bantering, without they realized the car has driven until Yu Ao Tian's apartment.

The car is slowly stopped, waiting her to get down from the car, Yu Ao Tian has rounded her, grabbed her hand. "This present for you." after said, he pulled the red cover which covered another car.

As seen, A range Rover car is spotted her eyes: "Give me this... As present?"

"Hm." Yu Ao Tian smiles while taking out key from his pocket, tossed it to her hand: "This, you deserve it, later it belongs to you."

"Deserve?" Yao Yao is curiously blinking her eyes, this car is costed about 300 millions, how can he send her this expensive car as present? "Is it a 'good bye' present?"

"What 'good bye present'? Little Thing, you think too beautifully." Yu Ao Tian is knocked her forehead with affection: "Didn't I have tell you, although there is no contract agreement, but you must stay beside me for three years."

Gezz...

She even thought this is separation gift from Yu Ao Tian for her, three years! Three years! Damn, thinking of it, feels alike type of torment.

"This car, is because you help me during the election, so that I give it to you. While your salary, it going to be counted separately!"

Listened to Yu Ao Tian, immediately her face turned to be dimmer: "Your election succeed is none of my business." After said, she hand over back the key to Yu Ao Tian.

He had guessed this Little Thing still brood on the failure: "Silly girl, if not because of you who helped me to drag sometime during the election time, do you think no matter how many preparation I did, would it mean?"

Yu Ao Tian is a man who differ clear between reward and punishment, in his world there is not such failure should exist and being accepted. Whatever that Yao Yao did from the beginning actually were so perfect, but he realized that she didn't think about his background this part, so that at first he took flight to Japan to make up a loophole.

This, isn't Yao Yao fault.

If she was representing someone who does not have any mafia background, she actually does not need to consider many things, many complicated things.

But now she is Yu Ao Tian's representative lawyer, a man who has such complicated background, so that, could not consider to the perfect, whole thing was something normal.

This is the reason why he does not want this world class lawyer talent to stay beside him, if he lets her to stay, her days will be absolutely! Absolutely bitter!

"Yu Ao Tian, you better send this car to other person."

"Send it to other person?" Yu Ao Tian is pretending to smile, he is pointing at the car plat number: "Bao Bei, it is hanging your birthday. You ask me to send to whom?"

.....really it is hanging the number of her birthday, but as she can recall this kind of birthday number plat must get from auction, isn't it? "Did it get from an auction?"

Ha, it seems that this Little Thing stayed with Feng Chen Yi did learn not less thing. "That's right. Get from auction."

"How... Much money did you spend for it?"

If he told her, this number is costed almost one villa, she will refuse to have

this car, won't her?

"Not much. Little Thing, I feel sleepy, let we take rest."

"Oh..." Yao Yao is feeling difficulty to see the key on her hands, she feels the key is so heavy.

Back to house, both of them are simply really go to bed and sleep.

There is such thing as interaction, also there is no such 'something shouldn't happen' this thing, this night, both of them are appeared alike husband and wife who are each showed respect and affection for the other, although both of them are sleeping on the same big bed but there is no such intimate gesture.

Yao Yao is sleeping so soundly, this is also one of the most steady and secure feeling, does not know why, since she ended her contract as Yu Ao Tian's lover, this is can be said as her first time sleeping together with Yu Ao Tian on same bed.

At beginning, there will be something knot in her heart, but Yu Ao Tian indeed so well-behaved so she rest assured.

While he....

This type of mighty man, from the beginning felt annoy this strange way of sleeping from this Little Thing, slowly he is getting used with her gritting teeth, her restless, until, he has already gotten used to have her beside him.

Hence, as long as this Little Thing sleeps beside him, he can sleep soundly, he can have one good, steady and secure sleep, still it is really strange feeling.....

Half month later.

'Today, the parliament house is chosen Mr. Yu Ao Tian to be the representative congress man to speak the sympathy toward the fire victims.'

'Three days ago, the parliament congress man Mr. Yu Ao Tian was attending the negotiations with EU border, the main topic was orientated about the current Financial situation.'

'The Yugoslavia President is visiting our country this morning, The Parliament House is in charge, the Yugoslavia president is keep on praising the congressmen, that showing China as great country.'

Yu Ao Tian has been congress man for more than half month, every day if not accommodate foreign guests, he will responsible for the media or visit overseas, simply to say he is awfully busy.

As long as Yao Yao turned on Television she would be able to spot Yu Ao Tian.

The two years ago of cold and charming underworld big boss who ever shown in front of her; two years later the domineering and also forceful man who barging into her life, now his progressing to be someone kindly in the Television, filled with dignity aura, this image, speak honestly, she really cannot make herself to get used of him.

Perhaps, because the distance between she with this man is getting further and further, the gap between both of them aren't as simple as more than one world.

"My beloved, every day he is so busy, what both of you use in order to communicate each other?" Gong Xiao Man is curiously asked Yao Yao who stayed at the dorm.

'Ding' the mobile phone notification showing up a message.

She opened her message, it is only a simple two words 'have slept'. Close her mobile phone, shaking it off in front of Gong Xiao Man: "Well, sometimes using short message."

#### **Chapter 299**

# Yao Yao's Mother Being Kidnapped

This half month, both of them are rare to meet up, but Yu Ao Tian always send her short message once at three or five days, if not 'have slept' it would be 'wake up', although it only a single word, but invincibly it has already drawn the gap line between both of them. Yao Yao is clearly can understand, so that she actually know that person who keeps on showing up on television.

"Ugh, It seems that Big Boss Yu really thoughtful."

"Sst, Xiao Man, now he is congressman, politician, stop addressing him as Big Boss Yu."

"Oh, oh, that's right, now he is congress man, a politician, must be careful. Say, Yao Yao, do both of your relationship aren't completely a couple?"

Not completely a couple? This is still kind of vague way of addressing.

Yao Yao is helplessly smiled: "I just know, the current relationship between both of us are something vague within these three years, so that only can enduring until three years, perhaps, there will be a day he will have a girlfriend and then get married, when it comes both of our relationship might completely done."

After all Yu Ao Tian has already 28 years old, perhaps marriage in his eyes are something not important.

But now his status is politician, if not get married, does not have stable family, it hard to break through.

"This is also not bad. At the beginning, Yu Ao Tian attitudes toward you were so disappointed, but later on, I think his performance is beyond the responsibility

of the relationship between you."

It can be said that Gong Xiao Man is one of the person who knew very well about their relationship progress, at the beginning she hatred Yu Ao Tian so much, felt that his attitudes were more ruthless than treating normal lover toward Yao Yao, so ruthless. But then, later and later, his attitudes toward Yao Yao is much better compare to lover, simply to say he treats her much better alike treating girlfriend. "No sweet without sweat (after the bitter comes the sweet), really make jealous...."

No sweet without sweat, Gong Xiao Man is talking about this four words. She gives faint smile, Yao Yao is lying powerless on her bed, absent minded staring at ceiling.

"Xiao Man, thing between you and Vice CEO Han..."

"Don't mention about him!" Gong Xiao Man snapped to stop Yao Yao, expressionless she changed her position into sit: "I have decided to give up on him, even a heartless man alike Yu Ao Tian can bloom with you, simply to say Han Li Shang is one metal tree, this life time impossible to bloom flowers!"

No, Xiao Man mistaken....

Cannot to use Yu Ao Tian character to compare with Vice CEO Han, Vice CEO Han is type of cold man who is impossible to make first move, but once he makes his move, there won't be any turning point."

While Yu Ao Tian is different, someone clever who have good ability to understand things and also make good judgment, someone mentally deep, unstable man, really he is someone who at one moment can spoil you alike little kid, but at another moment he can heartlessly toss you and make your life severe as hell.

Actually what is called as sweet after sweat, apparently Xiao Man hasn't.... Found it out!

"Fiuh!" Yao Yao heave a sigh, seems as someone who has thought about love lying beside Gong Xiao Man...

The weather in November, it has entered the winter, on the street there are lot of people who have changed their summer outfit to winter outfit.

Mother Luo is in hospital taking care her father in law, hurrying to go home.

'bam' (sound of something falling down with loud sound)

The basket that held by her hand is falling on the ground, the eggs inside are cracking mess on the ground.

Mother Luo is shocked when she sees the place in mess situation, it seems that something has happened before. When she was at hospital, her eyelids kept on twitching, constantly twitching.

"Aiya." heave a sigh, Mother Luo bent down her body and pick up those eggs that cannot be used anymore.

At the moment when she raised, suddenly there are two men in black suit showing up in front of her:

"Madam Deng Hui Hong?"

"You.... Are?"

'Bam' for once again the basket filled with vegetable falling on the ground, Mother Luo is kidnapped by those two men in black suit disappeared when the sun gradually set.....

"Uh uh." inside the dim big hall, Mother Luo is being tied on the chair, her mouth is being covered with cloth so she only let out hu uh this sound.

Not long after that, there is footstep sound.

Inside the big hall the subordinate bow down with respect: "Big Boss Yu."

"All leave." said Long Ye who is coming together and stay beside Yu Ao Tian. Inside the big hall those little scoundrels—— other than darkness the big hall is filled with strange atmosphere.

"Aunty, it hard for you." Yu Ao Tian is walking in front of Deng Hui Hong, he uncovered the cloth on her mouth.

"You...." Mother Luo is dumbstruck staring at that extremely good looking face, the incomparable devil charm from this man, her eyes beaming: "Yu Ao Tian."

"Haha, never thought we just met one time on hospital before, you still can

recognize me."

Mother Luo keeps silent, although she cannot recognize the look of this man, but she won't be able to forget a pair of bottomless eyes of this man, the eyes which has countless stories, that pair of eyes are really scary, it able to make one's self could not forget at one glance.

"Aunty, today my purpose to invite you coming here, I believe you have already guessed it, right?" Expressionlessly Yu Ao Tian asked.

Mother Luo is silent for while, slowly raise her head, facing and looking at that eyes which intimidate her: "Does it about the fire happened in Hua Mei Villa, that matter? My younger brother had ever asked it from me? And also that Miss Mo Xue Tong, she isn't your girlfriend and furthermore she wasn't the person who helped by Luo Tian Ming, right?"

"Hahahaha, Sister Hong, you really smart." Yu Ao Tian gives faint smiles, bend down in front of her, carefully untied the rope that tied her body.

"Sister...Hong?" Mother Luo open wide her eyes, deathly staring at his face.

Not long after that, the rope that tied her is untied, Yu Ao Tian silent for moment, slowly pulled mother Luo's hand that wrinkle: "After years of severe tests, and also living in tormenting, you are really aged so much. When I was at hospital meeting you, I didn't recognized you not even a bit. But, I won't be able to forget, 20 years ago, you were one of the most beautiful woman in politic circle."

When Deng Hui Hong listened it, gradually her body is trembling, her old eyes are keep on looking ups and down on Yu Ao Tian, one second, two seconds, three seconds.... "Xiao.... Xiao Tian! You.... Are Xiao Tian?"

Yu Ao Tian titled his head, giving a charming smile: "It's me, Sister Hong."

"How, how can be like this, I have thought you had.... Had...." Suddenly mother Luo chest feels stuffy, she hard to breathe.

Recalled the memory of 20 years ago, the domestic demand for workers is not so high. When Deng Hui Hong 16 years old she has joined work force, at 18 years old she entered political circle.

Also at the big Yard of political Bureu, first time she met Yu Ao Tian!

During that time he was 7, it also his the first step entered primary school as little boy. Although that time he also had such astonished good looking, but that pair of eyes still clear, compare to today this pair of eyes seems to be filled with countless stories, deep to the point bottomless, this pair of completely different eyes.

This perhaps what called as after years of severe tests.

The today she is only 40 years old, but wind and frost (hardships of a journey or of one's life), worries, and also the suffering of the trip, from her face she looked at someone who near to her 50 included her experienced toward hardship if life.

# 300

Another series storm of this novel, it is coming over. I don't really like the chapters but it has important information, such as The case of Hua Mei Villa, which has been looking by Yu Ao Tian for years, also this perhaps a new chapters of Yu Ao Tian – Yao Yao – Feng Chen Yi relationship and also Gong Xiao Man – Han Li Shang.

Qi Lian Ao Yun, Long Qi, Ou Yang Zi Xuan, Hei Yan Long.....

# Chapter 300

# Yao Yao's Mother Being Killed

"You thought I had died?" Yu Ao Tian gives faint smile reminiscence old days, but he is using such gentle speaking tone.

But somewhat Deng Hui Hong sees killing intention inside pair of Yu Ao Tian's eyes. She shakes her head, heave a sigh: "Perhaps this is what called as fate!"

"En, it's fate. I really never thought Sister Hong, you can go and followed Uncle Luo, I still remember...." Yu Ao Tian's eyes rolled: "It seems that time Uncle Luo has already had wife, am I right?"

"Thump"

Deng Hui Hong's heart sink, there's time she almost forget about this matter, but this is the truth, it is not something you say forget and then you forget it. "En, until today I am still not.... Legal wife and husband with Tian Ming."

That time the 18 years old Deng Hui Hong just entered political circle, she was pretty and slim alike jade, there was not less politician who bowed on her feet.

But somewhat she has feeling toward Luo Tian Ming who was only a secretary. Although she knew he has already had a wife, had his own family, but she really could not control herself not to love him. At last she became his lover which there was no turning back.

Political Bureu itself is strictly place which managed the conduct of corrupt this kind of bad atmosphere, Luo Tian Ming because afraid being investigated, so that he sacrificed Deng Hui Hong to be his lover.

This is also a reason why, Deng Hui Hong let her younger brother to take all the assets which left by Luo Tian Ming such as house, she didn't dare to fight with him, al for this as the reason. Because until today she still his lover, with what kind of status she can ask his asset and make it belong to hers?

While the Elder Luo (Luo Lao Ye) although he is Luo Tian Ming's father, but he does not know, this what so-called as daughter in law actually being changed by

his son whom actually his lover!

"Ha, I really never expected, Yao Yao could walk as the same path like me." when Deng Hong Hui thought of the possibility Yao Yao perhaps becomes other person's lover, she others than helpless does not know what to say anything. But, she never regretted to be Luo Tian Ming's lover, but at same time she does not know whether Yao Yao also has a fortune alike hers!

"Sister Hong, Yao Yao does not walk at the same path as you, because I never took her as my lover!" although at the beginning he had this thought but he never really took Yao Yao or see her as his lover.

"Is it. But both of you are not match, not match at all. If I still have a chance to see Yao Yao brings her boyfriend to meet me, as long as she does bring you, although I must die, I won't be agreed both of you together." It isn't because Deng Hui Hong hates Yu Ao Tian, on contrary she so affirm that Yu Ao Tian is someone so awesome, everything about him, everything, but due her point of view as elder, Yao Yao is too naive, her naive is so similar alike little child, so she does not suitable to have someone deep alike Yu Ao Tian as her boyfriend.

"Sister Hong, that is afterwards."

"That's right, it is afterwards matter..." Mother Luo helplessly smiles, slowly lowering her head, silent for moment, slowly standing up: "Xiao Tian, the answer that you want, I will tell you. But I want you to promise me one thing, can I?"

"Say."

"Please don't harm my father in law and Yao Yao. Can you?"

Yu Ao Tian pair of hand envelop his front, his mouth curved upward but slowly it turned to be unruly smile: "Why?"

"Xiao Tian, you must know! That matter didn't have any relation with my father in law and also Yao Yao!!!" Deng Hui Hong flaming rushed in front of Yu Ao Tian.

Long Ye who is standing at side just want to stop, but soon being stopped by Yu Ao Tian.

She is begging by kneeling in front of Yu Ao Tian, her white pale hands are

grabbing at Yu Ao Tian's trouser: "Sister Hong begging you, begging you, let off my father in law and Yao Yao!"

"Ah, sister Hong." Yu Ao Tian is helplessly smiles, slowly bend down, that pair bottomless eyes are showing dangerous gleam, and followed the last one question, said: "That matter, with my... Mother! And then my younger brother, what was the relationship?"

'thump'

The heavy stone that pressed on Mother Luo's heart slightly sink down, she even speechless when asked by Yu Ao Tian, anyway she feels her begging such buffoonery, doesn't have any persuasiveness, that's right, that matter really tangled too many people.

Since had made big mistake, and then just let it continue to be wrong.

Think to this point, Mother Luo powerless loosen her grab toward Yu Ao Tian's trouser.

"But Sister Hong, you rest assured. I won't harm Yao Yao. If want to say, the person who has the most 'no relation' with this matter must be her, really is Yao."

Deng Hui Hong open wide her eyes, the next second, she helplessly smiles: "You... Have found out?"

"En! When I saw the photo of you and uncle Luo, I have made my guess."

"Haha...." Yu Ao Tian is too clever! He has strong observation capability! Deng Hui Hong is more affirm, Yao Yao absolutely shouldn't stay together with this type of man who able to control everything.

"Sister Hong, before you answer me the question, I still have another personal question, want to ask you."

"What?"

Yu Ao Tian silent for while, slowly said: "How the scar on Yao Yao's left shoulder happened, you must know about it right?"

Scar?

Deng Hui Hong is careful trying to recall her memory, after while, she helplessly shaking her head: "I am sorry, Xiao Tian, I also don't know. That time, when I got the phone call, they said Luo Tian Ming and Yao Yao were having car crashed, when I arrived at hospital, Doctor told me that Luo Tian Ming had gone, while Yao Yao was in emergency. But doctor said, Yao Yao in critical-stated was not caused by the car accident, but because the left shoulder scar, so that, I also don't know how that scar happened."

After heard from Mother Luo who trying to recall her memory, Yu Ao Tian is taking deep breathe, the expectation expression at sudden disappeared from his face.

Mother Luo raised her body, her mouth curved upward and show faint smiles: "Xiao Tian, thus the matter about Hua Mei Villa, both of Luo Tian Ming and I,we were took a part, I am sorry...." before she finished her words, she slowly close pair of her eyes.

Awaiting, she must have her ending.

Tian Ming.,...

I have said before, my feeling has been a very good. Just alike the moment when you left me, I had this kind of feeling before.

You knew, those years when we were still together, the things that you most said to me was sorry, must give me a legal status.

But I never expected about that so-called legal status.

So what, if I able to be your legal wife?

I had gotten all your love it was more than enough, actually you never did any mistake toward me, I also didn't have any complain to stay beside you.

Heh, but there was one thing, which made me hate you most!

I don't understand, not understand, why before you gone you left father in law and Yao Yao in my care.

That time when I heard about your death, the first thing that flashed in my mind was together leaving this world with you. But because our father and Yao Yao, I just can live bitterly in this world, having a taste of the days, living without

you.

And then now.....

Finally I can left, finally I can go to heaven to accompany you. But sorry, I cannot keep my promise, cannot keep on taking care our father.

Tian Ming, please you waiting me at heaven, will you?

13 years of lone, missing finally will be ended. Deng Hui Hong makes this 13 years of suffering into a dying whisper. She really not fear of death, perhaps this dying moment is something she has awaited for such long time, too long to end.

There is time, love, that is, if you leave, I will only leave the body.

'Bam' a deafening sound comes from dim big hall, will it to be the ending or the beginning of the hatred, this, still mystery.....

301		

So this is another painful chapter, It took me sometime to translate it because after this, the tougher chapters are coming soon.

Fellow readers, just prepare your mental (加油 Jia You / Fighting)

# Chapter 301

# The Death of Mother made Her Suffering

"Beloved, after this period of time our school will be holding winter dance, accompany me to take part on it, okay!" does not know from where Gong Xiao Man got this information, now she is almost becoming Yao Yao's detective.

"Forget it, Xiao Man, you know the last case just died down, at this time if I join this kind of public event not too good." just as Yao Yao expected, rumor this kind of thing will die down as time passes, when Yu Ao Tian election ended, she back to school, everyone is gradually forgetting those shocking poster news, this matter.

At same time, when the rumor disappearing there still.... Shang Yun Yin. Hence the reason, at least she can make her guess, one or two.

"This time by joining the public event such as dancing it can prove your innocent, you think, you had disappeared for sometime not showing up your face, although no one bring this topic up, but suddenly you are coming back to school, more or less, people will still bring it up. You better to bravely showing up, happily, give those big mouths a good face, would be good."

"Xiao Man! I really admire you, don't you think that the excuse you give..... To forceful?"

```
"Hihihihihihihi, go or not?"

"Go! Go! Okay?"
```

"Hi hi."

"Where to go?" at this time, Long Qi who is also at class alike little follower keeps on following at Yao Yao's back.

Since that day, he has been arranging by Yu Ao Tian to keep on studying as student at school, so he never stepped his foot to company anymore, so that his occupation is a student now.

"Participating on our school winter dance. Are you joining or not, Long Qi?" "If flat chest joins, I also join."

"Are you Yao Yao follower, aren't you? Where she goes? You are also following?" Gong Xiao Man showed such cold-shoulder expression looked at him.

Long Qi on contrary not take thing seriously, rolled his eyes: "What follower? I just asked by Yu Ao Tian to be Flat chest bodyguard so she won't have affair."

"Cut it off, Yao Yao be unfaithful? I see CEO Yu perhaps the one who has overstepped the bound, the change is bigger?"

"That's I don't know. Anyway Ao Tian this person is 'carnivore' perhaps during these days in political circle he had 'holding back' too much and be at worst."

Ha!

Wouldn't it be better? If Yao Yao have an evidence, having an evidence that Yu Ao Tian perhaps have other woman, then both of their relationship can be ended?

"Hey, Long Qi, Long Qi, if you are finding out that Yu Ao Tian has another woman, on the very first time you must let me know, okay?"

Long Qi looked at Yao Yao with despised look: "Are you dummy? Ao Tian is my sworn brother, why must I sold him out?"

"....." geez, she has guessed it! At least she has seen few of Yu Ao Tian's good buddies sworn brothers that stay beside him, perhaps if Yu Ao Tian said coal ball is white, his few good buddies because the behalf of loyalty, must say exactly same with him, it is white!

'ring, ring, ring...'

The phone suddenly ringing.

Yao Yao looks at her display monitor, unknown number? "I accept the phone call."

"En." seeing Yao Yao leaving, Gong Xiao Man and Long Qi these two people are stayed quiet alone.

But seeing time, the class is going to start, but Yao Yao hasn't come back.

Gong Xiao Man and Long Qi are exchanging glance: "Her phone call, where she is? Go, Long Qi, follow me to find her."

"Oh...." both of them are walking out from the class.

But at another side of corner, they spotted Yao Yao's back, squat on the floor.

That two of people are exchanging their glance once again. "Beloved, what are you doing? After receiving the phone call why don't you heading back to class, are you having stomachache?"

But when both of them are walking beside Yao Yao, they realized..... She stirred up the body and sobbing voice.

"Yao Yao? What is going on?" Gong Xiao Man panic bend down her body, grabbed her shoulder.

She keeps on crying, crying, even she cannot speak clearly: "I, I, I, Mother, Mother, Mother.... Gone, she gone...."

'thump'

As if one heavy stone pressed, Gong Xiao Man expressionless stayed.

Beside them is Long Qi who has heavy expression, in his eyes showed the surge of unease as if he has already known this moment would be coming.

Curled his hand into fist, Long Qi is disappearing from these two girls side, he goes to the place where there is no one, he made a fist and hit his hand on the wall: "Sorry....Yao Yao."

He murmured with regret, he really does not know the lie he had made up until today whether has helped Yao Yao or not, or he has harmed Yao Yao. If due to her cleverness, perhaps.... She would be able to stop everything that happened now, wouldn't her?

For the moment Mother Luo's body is in Funeral Home, the police found the body at the seashore, there was a bullet shoot into Mother Luo's heart, killed at one attack, while all the things on her body disappeared. The police affirmed she is murdered.

"Yao Yao, I accompany you to eat something." at the entrance of funeral home, Gong Xiao Man sees Yao Yao's face is white pale, simply to say it ache her heart to the point she does not know what to say.

Just now was identified the body, she clearly could see there still tear trace in Yao Yao's eyes, perhaps, Yao Yao holding back her tears and perhaps she does not want to let her mother who has already in heaven to see her grief right this moment.

"Xiao Man, you go by yourself. I think.... I want to... Go home to have rest a moment, okay?" actually she has pair of bright big eyes, but at this moment her eyes looked empty, speak frankly it little bit scare people.

Gong Xiao Man pouted her mouth: "Well... I go to accompany you. Okay! You go home."

"En. Today, thank you, Xiao Man." Yao Yao is forcing herself to give a smile.

Gong Xiao Man who sees it feeling her heart aching more, she frowned: "I take my leave! Something happen! Remember to make phone call to me."

"En." slowly nodding her head, her eyes are looking at Gong Xiao Man's back, her forcibly smile gradually disappeared from her face.

Mom has gone, Mom has left, What to do with grandpa? How to let grandpa know about this matter?

Cover it up for whole day, say her mother is sick, but this matter couldn't being covered to one month right? When the time arrived, grandpa who is aged, found out the news, could his body hold on?

She does not want to think about, she has been losing mother who important for her, and soon will going to lose her grandpa.

"Fiuh..." taking a deep breathe, she hailed a taxi, back to the house, it has been turned to be cold home.

'Bao Bei, let mom take a look, is the hair-clip beautiful?'

'It is so beautiful, thank you, Mom.' at her 6th everything was completely was her new memory started, this mother who looked alike stranger for her, first time gave her one beautiful hair-clip, until today she stills have it.

'Yao Yao, go to school, must study diligently, do you know? When time arrived mom will be giving you big apple as reward!'

'En, Mom, Yao Yao wants to eat big apple, so that I will study hard!' at her 7th, it was her first time got big apple from her mom as her reward, but the muddle head her, she left the big apple until it was rotten and then being thrown because she didn't want to eat it, at last she cried telling her mom that the apple had died! Mother was so patience said, Apple could not die, but it has been gone to another world, living a new life.

# **Chapter 302**

# The Last Message Left By Mother

'Mom!!! Mom! I, I am bleeding!'

'Silly girl, this isn't bleeding, but you are having your period. Our Yao Yao finally is a big girl. Since this day onward you are not allowed to have junk food, during the menstrual period, you must eat red dates, understand?' when she was at her 12, it was her first time to have her menstrual period, she was shocked to the point panic, Mom was so patience to tell her what should she paying attention to, but she who didn't obedient, still secretly eating ice cream, so that she is having dysmenorrhea as root cause.

'Mom, I can go study to Japan as exchange student.'

'Really? Yao Yao my treasure, you are awesome!!!' when she was at her 13, she received a letter of acceptance from Yi Xue institution in Japan, really made her family burst of happiness.

But at night, she saw her mother secretly crying, because her mom not really wanted her treasure baby to leave from her side.

Too many, there are too many memories; too many, too many thing that she could not forget, in her memory there are so many things about her mom, the most are her mom kindness and also her affection.

Since she was 13 years old, she never spent any cent money from her home; but before she was 13 years old, everything she had, everything was depended on her mother crossing stitch handcraft for raising her.

That crossing stitch handcraft thing could earn few dollars? Mother not even slept at night, only could earn few of dollars. While because of the sleepless

night, her mom is aging too much.

There is one thing, Yao Yao won't able to forget until today, and because of this thing, she grew maturer.

She remembered when she was at her seven or less, she liked one pair of shoes, she cried wanting to buy it, mother was using two sleepless night to do cross stitch and bought her that pair of shoes.

But because that pair of shoes hurt her feet, Yao Yao bad tempered didn't want to wear it anymore. But didn't know....

That pair of shoes, it more than enough to feed them one family for one week. Mother didn't blame her, but secretly took that pair of shoes to the store. But the storekeeper said because the shoes were dirty, had worn so could not do return.

Hence, Mother Luo in front of the storekeeper, carry a bucket of water, inside there clean the pair of shoes until it shine and bright.

If not because Yao Yao had seen that scenery by coincidence when she on her way home from school, perhaps she forever never known how bitter her mom; perhaps she won't be matured!

Really does not want to recall the memory, there are too much, and more painful, she not even can accept her mom had gone, this reality.

Standing inside the small house, taking out one by one the present that gave by her mom to her, feeling sour tears are flowing down from her eyes.

"Mom, Why don't you wait for me? Why don't you wait for me until I really enter into society, officially earn money, repay all your kindness raising me!"

There is nothing more helpless that children cannot support their parent.

Since she was a little kid her mother always be the person who taking care of her, day by day she is expecting to have capability, let her mom to enjoy good life. But this one day, it hasn't arrived, mother has already gone, how can she repay all her mom affection toward her?

'Bam' a sound, the tight closed door is being push open from outside.

Yao Yao slowly turning back, looking at the entrance.... "You?"

This person isn't a stranger who barging inside, he is Feng Chen Yi, he is breathing roughly standing in front of the door, solemnly he looked at her. But another moment..... He dashed faster in front of her, hugging onto her tightly into his embrace!

This, perhaps like magic spell, the tears that she held back for so long, gulping too much bitterness, but at the moment she being hugged by Feng Chen Yi. The tears are bursting out from her eyes, bursting out the bitterness in her heart, burst....

"Hu!!!!!" very long hu, bringing endless bitterness. The sadness air filling inside this not too big room.

But, the most strange thing is.....

Because of his appearance, because of his embrace, after all she does not feel that helpless and lonely because of her mother leaving, that moment.

Feng Chen Yi is hugging her tightly, more and more tightly, his face show imposing expression of endless pain.

He really can't see her in tears, he really can't hear any grief from her, but at same time he really does not know how to help her to get rid all her bitterness, other than this embrace, other than to become first person who coming here, he really powerless.....

Does not know for how long, sun is gradually hide behind the mountain (sunset), she finally can control herself. "You, You, how can you come here?" choking sound expressed her difficulties.

"Because I know, the current you, need... Someone to accompany." when Feng Chen Yi said this, his face is showing faint smiles.

He after all not dare to say 'need my accompany', since when he changed to be someone who lack of confident? But, perhaps just by this, he can slowly, getting into her heart for once again.

Half month, since the matter related to Hei Yan Long, both of them never contacting each other. He also knows that Yu Ao Tian could not come to accompany her, but actually he only looking for an excuse to meet her, face to face.

Until this thing happened!

He has thought before, although Yu Ao Tian accompany beside her, he will still coming here, because, he could not to recall what had happened two years ago for once again!

But, there is a time, Feng Chen Yi really not dare to think of, that moment for the first time when Yao Yao was looking for him asking a bank notes, every times he thought about that, he feels as if he was the person who pushed her to other man side.

So that, he swears to himself, later, no matter what, although she will be other man's wife, mother of her children, at the most painful of her, he will be the first person who showing up in front of her!

As old folks said, love for such long time, interacting for such long time, that love can be slowly disappearing, naturally it will change to be family affection.

And at this moment, when Feng Chen Yi hugging onto her this seconds, the first thing that flowing in her mind is, so that.... In this world other than her grandpa as her family, she still have.... Feng Chen Yi a man who she loved and slowly turned become her part of family!

"My Mom...."

"I knew it." Quickly Feng Chen Yi stopped her, he does not want to hear any news regarding her mom death from her, the woman that he ever love so deeply.

"Did Xiao Man tell you?"

"No. It was police who looked for me."

"Police.... Looking for you?" Yao Yao frowning, slowly she breaks free pair of her hand from Feng Chen Yi's embrace: "Why police looking for you?"

"Because I was the latest person who had interaction via mobile phone with your mother."

"You.... The latest, had phoned call with my mother?"

Feng Chen Yi has thought to let her mood stable and then telling her about this matter, since she has suspicious, so he better....

From his pocket he takes out his mobile phone, showing her the short message: "This is a message that left by your mother for me before she being murdered."

After Yao Yao heard it, at sudden her face changed, hurry she takes the mobile phone from Feng Chen Yi.....

'Chen Yi, Aunty has something impertinent to ask from you. Aunty knew, perhaps this kind of asking is little bit bold for you. But just thought Aunty as someone shameless, using your love toward Yao Yao, but Aunty really does not know whom to ask for help.

Aunty hopes, you, now, immediately, using all your utmost to take my father in law and Yao Yao to go to overseas, somewhere a safe place, don't ask me about the reason. Just thought it as something that Aunty owed you, on the next life Aunty will be worked for you alike horse and cow.

Others....

There is word, perhaps I could not tell Yao Yao, as they said kids feeling shouldn't being interfered by mother, but, Yao Yao is too naive, I really afraid that Yao Yao would be lost herself of the illusion when dealing with feeling.

Chen Yi, if you are really love Yao Yao, don't ever give up on her, okay? I really hope, hoping that you can be together with Yao Yao, perhaps in the future there will be a man who more suitable for Yao Yao, but compare to now, Aunty just acknowledge you!!!

If, both of you can get married, just think as Aunty may rest in peace!'

## 303

Happy Weekend Everyone ^-^

I'm back a moment after few days busying with my works. I haven't read all the comments you guys left but I had peek and replied some, sorry if I missed out any....

These few chapters little bit devastating for those who root Yu Ao Tian with Yao Yao because you guys could read on the last two or three chapters, Feng Chen Yi is coming back. And for those who fans of Feng Chen Yi, the author heart you LOLS.

# **Chapter 303**

# Yao Yao's Grand Pa is Hunting Down

This is a short message that sent by Deng Hui Hong before she got killed.

But this lethality information is really too powerful, it also enough to prove that she is a very clever woman.

The contain of short message, there is not mentioned about Yu Ao Tian, not even a word, but ever words more enough to 'control future result'. After all, Yao Yao is filial daughter....

When Yao Yao read the short message, have no choice but suspicious the words that her mom left behind, because during that time, the most important.....

"Due to the time when the short message being sent out, it also can be said that the message is being sent out not long before my mother death, it seems she had known about her death. But asking Grandpa to be taken to overseas.... It meant...."

"You mom must be murdered!" Feng Chen Yi is so certain when continuing Yao Yao's words. "Right after I got the short message, immediately I made a phone call to your mother, but, the mobile phone didn't pick up by anyone."

"Since Mom has already made her guessed about all of these, why didn't she directly send me the short message, telling me, actually what was going on, or perhaps.... Who killed her?" Yao Yao really does not know, after all her mother had time to send out short message, it clear enough to say what exactly happened, beside who was the killer!

"There is a possibility, the person who killed your mother is someone powerful. Your mother didn't want you to get involved with the matter. Yao Yao, this is also my wish." Feng Chen Yi kept back his mobile phone, his expression is gradually change to be serious, slowly he pulling her cold ice hands: "This matter, just let me to investigate it, you don't get involved. If you must get involved,

before you take any action, you must let me know!"

If can, Feng Chen Yi really does not want her to read this short message, but he understands very well Yao Yao's character, if not using this thing to turn her focus, she will continue to be sad.

Yao Yao is type of girl who dealing thing hard with hard, in order to find the killer who killed her mother, she will be living stronger than currently.

"En, I understand. Thank you, Chen Yi. Where is grandpa?"

"I have arranged your grandpa to go to New Zealand, waiting until he arrived at New Zealand, I will transfer him to other country. Now he must have been in Airport."

Feng Chen Yi really arranging everything very well, using New Zealand as transit, and then transferring grandpa to other country, by this way it is guaranteeing completely success. She really does not know how to thank this man....

"Oh yeah!! You, how you said to my grandpa?"

"I told your grandpa, his sickness is getting worse so that he must take medication in overseas in order to be better."

Good, Feng Chen Yi didn't tell Grandpa about mother's matter. But.... "Did my grandpa really listen to you?"

"You must be more understand about your grandpa compare to me, how could he deliberately promise me to go overseas?"

That's right! Grandpa is absolutely stubborn, he must be more willingly to wait until die rather than go overseas to get medication, he most afraid to take flight.

"Ahem..." Feng Chen Yi looked absolutely awkward, helplessly said: "Acting alike spoiled child."

Acting.... Alike spoiled child? Acting alike a spoiled child! Feng Chen Yi..... Acting spoiled? Simply to say she is not daring to think about it, the scenery when Feng Chen Yi acted alike spoiled child in front of grandpa.

But it can be said that Grandpa must be liked Feng Chen Yi very much, or else how could he being persuaded with this such thing?

"Yao Yao, you rest assured, I had doctor and also nurse who getting along with your Grandpa, inside the plane there is also emergency equipment. So that, you don't need to worry about your grandpa."

Haha, Feng Chen Yi had thought for everything, what's more she needs to be worry about? But, this debt, she really does not know how to repay it to him!

'Let void about yesterday, now you are in front of my eyes....'

This ring tone? Didn't she have change the mobile phone ring tone? Why still this ring tone? When Yao Yao wanted to take out her mobile phone, she realized it is Feng Chen Yi's mobile phone that actually ringing.

So that, he always using this ring tone.

'Give you this mobile phone, but the ring tone shouldn't change!' that was the first time when Yao Yao gave Feng Chen Yi new mobile phone, she didn't only give him a new mobile phone, but she also forced him not to change the mobile phone ring tone.

'Why can change it? It is such awful song.'

'This is my favorite! So that, you are not allowed to change it! If you change it, I will kill you!'

'You this woman!' Feng Chen Yi just helplessly accepting to use this ring tone, and he has been using it until now....

But she now she has changed her mobile phone ring tone.

"What? No matter how much it take the cost, must be protecting Elder Luo safe and soundly until the airport!"

'Thump' when listened to Feng Chen Yi stern commanding, Yao Yao paused for moment and she can feel heavy atmosphere suppressing on her: "What is going on?"

"When sending your Grandpa to airport, encounter with some attackers."

Just as expected! It seems this is serious matter! The death of mom, Grandpa

being attacked? Actually who the people, dare to do this kind of thing on day time? Aren't mother and grandpa only ordinary citizens? Actually which powerful people they had provoked?

"Yao Yao, you rest assured, the people that I asked to protect and send your grandpa to the airport, all of them are those body guard who are being strictly trained by Feng's family, your grandpa must be arrived safe and soundly to the destination, believe on me!" Feng Chen Yi is so certain when said.

She is nervous curled up her hand into fist, now, she only can wait patiently to hear her grandpa news....

The small room is filled with cold and silent. Yao Yao is sitting on sofa, there is no any expression on her face. While Feng Chen Yi is constantly walking to and fro, waiting for his subordinate to make report.

#### 'Let void.....'

The mobile phone just ring, hurry Feng Chen Yi accept the phone call: "Hello?"

"General Manager Feng, Elder Luo has safe and soundly get into plane."

He can feel the heavy feeling of him falling down to ground, just now he still afraid, if something bad happened to Elder Luo, after all today Yao Yao has been losing one of her most important family, if now she also losing....

Ha, he really cannot bear to see the woman that he loves so much in great pain.

He signed to Yao Yao 'OK' hand gesture.

Yao Yao heave a sigh, her whole body is almost slump on the sofa.......

"Know who are the people attacking Elder Luo?"

"General Manager Feng, the attacker skill are so clean, neatly, moreover the shooting skill are professional, they must be have professional killer background."

"According to you guys capability, what is your guessing about the killer?" alike Feng's household which has high status, all the body guard they used must be come from professional killer group, so that, all the body guard that stay beside Feng Chen Yi are those high skill professional killer.

## **Chapter 304**

# Hei Yan Long Coming messed up Everything

"General Manager Feng, if they are those who coming from killer group, at one glance we must be able to identified it. But from their skill, they must be 'personal' or 'mafia' the professional killer who are being trained."

"Alright, I understood." Feng Chen Yi hung up the phone call, if the killer are coming from personal or mafia group, Personal is quite large but if mafia..... Having Ou Yang Zi Xuan is more simple!

"What kind of people who are attacking Grandpa?"

"Killer. And about the background, I still need to go and ask Zi Xuan, see whether he knows it or not."

"Asked him?"

"Haha, Xi Zuan's Mother is Chinese first rank Mafia group Big Boss from Xuan Wu group, so that, regarding to the underworld matter, still needs his help."

Recalling the memory, Ou Yang Zi Xuan's father is a businessman who having rank fifth in China, Ou Yang Group chairman, never thought that, after all his mother is big boss of first rank mafia in China?

If including Bai Lai group's Hei Yan Long.....

Feng Chen Yi's friends indeed are.... Awesome!

Wait! If talking about underworld matter, just go to find Yu Ao Tian will it more helpful?

Forget it, now Yu Ao Tian must be extremely busy, she has already owed Feng Chen Yi this 'debt', if dragging Yu Ao Tian, this 'debt' perhaps won't be able

repay until this life time ended!

'Let void yesterday, now you....'

'Thump' once listened to Feng Chen Yi's mobile phone ringing, Yao Yao's eyes is cover with mist, nervous and feels intense.

"It's Yan Long, you don't need to be so tense." Feng Chen Yi comforted Yao Yao by patting gently her shoulders, turned, accept the phone call: "What's matter?"

"Just now I was coming to your company, looking for you, your secretary said that you have gone out, where are you?"

"Now I am with...." paused for moment: "With a friend, what's?"

Friend....

Haha, finally she and he can be friend, right? Yao Yao really happy to hear the way Feng Chen Yi introduce herself.

But, she does not even see, the bitter expression that shown by Feng Chen Yi's face. Just now he almost to say together with girlfriend.

"WEII, right now I look for you."

"Do you have thing to settle?" seeing Feng Chen Yi hung up the phone call, she slowly opened her mouth asked.

"Yan Long has something to look for me, I have sent him your house address. You should not mind, right?"

"Haha." she showed her forcing smile, powerless shaking her head: "Recently I have watched news, your company had gotten so many projects, you must be so busy right?"

"Still okay, not that busy." he speaking while walking closer to the sofa where Yao Yao sat on, sitting beside her.

The conversation stopped, the inner room is deathly silent to the point scared people, both of them are so awkward sitting at same room.

Feng Chen Yi is glancing Yao Yao for a moment, hand that inserted to his pocket slowly taking out, he extending his hand to Yao Yao's cold hand.

When he wanting to pull Yao Yao's hand, immediately he drawn back.

After all before there is nothing to talk between boy and girl friend, just alike now both of them are sitting quietly, this is really awkward.

But Yao Yao's mother just passed away, he does not want because of his 'greedy', he even more hurting her....

'knock knock knock'

There is knocking door sound in the middle of silent room, Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi are exchanging glances.

"Perhaps Yan Long, I go to open the door." he standing up and open the door.

"I say, good brother, what kind of house your friend living in? After all living in such poor area? Refugee camp?" Hei Yan Long is showing such criticize expression when he is standing in front of the door, from time to time he is using his hand, alike fan as if get rid the dusty air.

"Yan Long, you shut up!" Feng Chen Yi roared, hurry signaling Hei Yan Long with his eyes.

"Ugh." perhaps Hei Yan Long feels something, moving a step enter the inner room, when he takes a look....

"Sorry, my house address is little bit desolate, and also little bit small. You don't take in heart." Yao Yao is standing up, forcibly to give a smile, but pair of her empty eyes are keep on staring to the floor.

"Don't you together with your friend? So that, the person is your EX-girlfriend!" Talked to this point, Hei Yan Long is giving strange laugh, one of his hand dragged to Feng Chen Yi's shoulder, whispered: "Not interrupt both of you right?"

"Sst." Feng Chen Yi coldly creased his forehead. "Yan Long, why are you looking for me?"

"Oh, nothing. I just looking for you to going out and play." After said, Hei Yan Long is walking to the sofa, pointed at the sofa.

Yao Yao is nodding her head as signal you can have a seat.

Hei Yan Long patting twice the sofa and then he sits down. Pair of his hand is inserted into his pocket, as if a Big Boss he crossed his leg: "Woman, is your house this small? Simply to say it as big as my toilet at home."

"Sorry."

"Chen Yi, you are really, she at least is your Ex-girlfriend, you change another house for her. CEO Yu also, how can he let his own lover to live in such place? Ha, really stingy." Hei Yan Long shrugging his shoulder, does not know his words without he realized actually had stepped on few mines.

Perhaps because Yao Yao is having bad mood, so that she does not listen to whatever he said. "Sorry." by nodding her head as her apologized gesture.

"Eh?" Hei Yan Long creasing his forehead, his deep pair of black eyes are keep on looking at her, today this woman seems to be different compare to last two times he met before?

"Yan Long! Today I don't have any mood to play with you, if you don't have any serious matter, you go back first." Feng Chen Yi coldly said, his hand is already curled make into fist.

If he does not know Hei Yan Long character very well, perhaps one punch has been sending out for him!

"What is going on?" this time Hei Yan Long just realized something off.

"See, hahaha, looking both of you have been here for some time, I haven't served any drink. Let me go inside and bring out." Yao Yao pick up the electric pot from the tea table and then pouring the water.

The water has already over filled the tea cup, but she still pouring.

Hei Yan Long tilted his head and confused looking at Feng Chen Yi, raise his hand and pointing at Yao Yao who at his in front.

Feng Chen Yi frowned, shaking his head, signaling him don't say anything. "Haha, Yao Yao, don't busy yourself, we drink we pour by ourselves."

"It's okay, it's okay. It my job, my job." she served the glasses on the table, bringing one in front of Hei Yan Long: "Drink the water."

He deep black eyes are blinking, slowly extending his hand.

But without waiting him to take the glass, her hand has already loosen up, 'bam' one sound, the glass has hit on the floor and make crisp and loud sound inside the silent room.

"I am sorry, sorry." Yao Yao circle until right in front of Hei Yan Long and picking up the pieces of broken glass.

"Yao Yao, don't do anything more."

"It's okay, it's okay, I must I must."

"Yao Yao?"

"Hu....." the piece of broken glass injured Yao Yao's finger tip, she humped once, the fusion of blood and water form into beautiful flower pattern.

"Yao Yao! Are you okay." Feng Chen Yi quickly dashed beside her, nervously pulled her hand.

"Hu.... It because I am such useless, so that my mother lived in such place." tears, immediately wet her eyes.

At beside Hei Yan Long who sees this scenery, shocked to dumbstruck: "This is none of my business right? I just said the reality, the truth, this place is quite small."

# **Chapter 305**

# Heartache, Grievance, Wound being left by Family

Once Yao Yao heard this word, she even feel herself more useless and powerless, her crying sound even louder.

Feng Chen Yi give strong glared to Hei Yan Long: "Will you die if stop talking?" with his gentle eyesight he looked at Yao Yao who is crying, he is gently caressing her cheek: "There is nothing wrong with you, now you are still studying in University, aren't you? I remembered when we were at school, you were always got scholarship, you have been working so hard already."

"All useless! Those money only enough to support myself. My mom, there was no day she able to enjoy happy life!"

"It's okay, days are still long, later you can give your mom unlimited happiness." Hei Yan Long perhaps thought he was the reason why Yao Yao cried to that point, so he is trying to make up.

But by no bad intention, his words simply to say as big mistake.

"Yan Long, you shut up!"

"Hey, Feng Chen Yi, I have made step back to this point? This woman unreasonable crying, don't you think she such annoying?" If not looking at Feng Chen Yi's face, he perhaps so lazy to coax Yao Yao, he really does not have any patience toward women.

"Yan Long!"

"Sorry." Yao Yao is forcibly to sniff, quickly she wipes her tears: "Chen Yi, what

he said is right, tears are not useful, also little bit irritating! I, I won't cry again." Yao Yao wanted to investigate who killed her mother, she wanted to investigate who killed her mother and hunted down her grandpa.

"Hah." Hei Yan Long who is standing beside smiles.

But Feng Chen Yi's face still gloom, seeing from Hei Yan Long's eyes, he is raging in fume, the most important that Hei Yan Long does not know actually what happened, so that he could say something that relaxing!

He better to see Yao Yao keeps crying, but don't wish her to hold back her tears!

Feng Chen Yi is so careful when treating Yao Yao's finger tip that wounded because of the piece of broken glass.

"Thank you." she is forcing herself to show smiling face.

But in Feng Chen Yi's eyes it seen as something bitter.

"Chen Yi, I feel little bit hungry, let's we have something to eat." Perhaps Hei Yan Long feeling little bit bored, so he gives some ideas.

Feng Chen Yi looked at his watch, perhaps it would be good for Yao Yao to change an environment: "You must not have be eaten anything, let's go, I am going to treat both of you."

"No need, you go with CEO Hei, I feel little bit exhausted, I want to take a rest."

"Yao Yao...." Feng Chen Yi heave a sigh, "Yan Long, you go by yourself, I don't feel hungry."

"Chen Yi, you have gotten any meal since you came here during afternoon, you go with CEO Hei."

This time if Feng Chen Yi leaves her alone, he really could not do it. "This, you accompany me to go out, although you are not eating anything, just think it as accompany me, can you?"

Yao Yao feels in difficulty creased her forehead, she only can force herself to nod, this time she really does not want to go out!

Going out from house, just realized if Hei Yan Long's body guard are guarding at the apartment floor.

At the lowest floor even more exaggerating, there are long-wheel car parked in front of it, it is not difficult to see, Hei Yan Long is type of stylish and extravagance person, no matter his body guards, or his expensive car.

"Chen Yi, as I remember you are not blacken person, but why since you are together with this woman, you becoming blacken person?" Sitting inside car, Hei Yan Long looking at Feng Chen Yi with despise eyesight, he recalled just now he being criticized so many times by him, he feels such disgusting.

Feng Chen Yi says nothing, coldly he leans his head to car's window.

"Does not know what Zi Xuan doing, should I call him out to have meal together with us?"

"Call him, I have something looking for him." after Feng Chen Yi said, his cold eyes are glancing at Yao Yao who is absent-minded.

Not long after that, the car is stopped at the five star restaurant not far from Yao Yao's house.

"You guys are so late." Ou Yang Zi Xuan has already booked a room while waiting for them. "Ugh, Chen Yi's ex-girlfriend also come."

"Hello." Yao Yao is forcing herself to smile, silently looking for a seat to sit down.

"I say, Yan Long, today you are so free, after all you even coming here during your working time?"

"Every day I do such leisure, company has so many things to settle, no matter how to settle there won't ended, better taking a fresh air."

"Do the employees at your company know that you are such irresponsible CEO?"

"Watch what you say. If someday you sit on my position, you will do same thing as me."

"Cut it off, my father keeps on asking me to come and help in the company, call me off, still dare to ask me exchange position with yours?" Ou Yang Zi Xuan said until this point, helplessly heave a sigh: "If my mother's group really needs a help, it would be better. Huh...."

Hei Yan Long and Ou Yang Zi Xuan are having good chat, very lively. Completely don't pay attention to the tension that surrounded Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao.

"Eat this." Feng Chen Yi adding food to hers plate.

She is forcing herself to smile, forcibly nodding her head and eat one small mouth, but at the moment she swallow, her stomach feels so discomfort: "I, I go to rest room."

"I accompany you."

"No need." after said, Yao Yao stood up and then rushed out from the private room.

"What is going on? Chen Yi, are you reconciled with your ex-girlfriend? After all why suddenly you treating her so well?" Although Ou Yang Zi Xuan does not know what is going on between Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao, but he never seen he treating her this well.

"You still dare to say, Zi Xuan, just now when went to that woman's house, it was more disgusting. Actually I really could not hold back anymore so that I got an idea to go out to have a meal."

"Uh? Chen Yi, she even let you to get inside her house, it seems soon there will be something." Ou Yang Zi Xuan showed devil smiles.

At beside Feng Chen Yi still with his cold expression: "Zi Xuan, can you use your mother connection, investigate about killer group movement recently?"

"This, can, too easy. But..." Ou Yang Zi Xuan just remembered: "You investigate about killer matter for what?"

Feng Chen Yi slowly putting down his chopstick, his cold eyes are gazing at Hei Yan Long who is still eating: "Today, Yao Yao's mother is being.... Killed!"

'bam'

When Hei Yan Long heard this news, suddenly the bowl that holding by his hand dropped down to table, he is showing such unbelievable expression on his face, he really never thought, that woman's mother....

Standing up, Hei Yan Long turned and leaving.

"Ugh..." Ou Yang Zi Xuan dumbfounded looking at Hei Yan Long who is leaving,

curiously he frowned: "What happened to Yan Long?"

"Just now when he was at Yao Yao's house, Yan Long has said some hurting words to Yao Yao."

"So that was the matter. Chen Yi, you know, Yan Long's character. Now when he found out the truth, he must be in guilty right? You don't blame him anymore."

"Because I know what kind of person Yan Long is, so that I am enduring for this time!" if changed it to other person who said just hurtful words, earlier Feng Chen Yi would not let that person off.

"Uh, no wonder today you are treating your ex-girlfriend this well? Actually what happened? How can your ex-girlfriend's mother suddenly being killed....."

## 306

# **Chapter 306**

# **Lullaby Her until Sleep**

'Ring ring'

Ou Yang Zi Xuan talked half way, Feng Chen Yi's mobile phone message notification LED flashing, taking out to see, it is a short message sent by Yao Yao.

'Chen Yi, I feel little bit uncomfortable, I take my leave first. You accompany CEO Hei and Ou Yang Zi Xuan eat, no need to look for me.'

He shut his mobile phone, Feng Chen Yi cold eyes are gleaming dangerously, coldly said: "The detail how thing happened I don't really know. But, Yao Yao's mom must be known something (get involved with) big matter."

Since walking out from the restaurant, Yao Yao takes a deep breathe, until now she still cannot suppressed her grievance her sadness, in front of others, seeing others laughing happily, she really feel uncomfortable.

'tin...tin...' (horn sound)

At her back there is a long wheels luxurious car. Hei Yan Long is expressionless when getting down from his car: "Miss Luo, I want to have chat with you."

The quiet and secluded street, the sun is gradually hiding behind the mountain (sunset). Hei Yan Long and Yao Yao are walking side by side, his car and his body guards are slowly following at their back.

"CEO Hei, You stopped me, wouldn't this your reason to walk me home right?" still walking in the street, pair of Hei Yan Long's hand inserted into his pocket, along the way both of them are keep silent, it is Yao Yao who becomes the first person melt the atmosphere.

"I have a friend, he is always living in such well-off family, he has an easy life

and everything had already provided for him, but never cherish everyone who in front of his eyes, bless in front of him. Regarding to the teaching taught by his parent he never took it as serious, even he ever thought it would be great if his parent just disappeared. Until my friend reached his 18 years old, just as he expected his parent really gone, when they went out for vacation, the airplane fell, both of them died. That moment, my friend, finally he realized, how idiot he was before!"

"He pretend to be strong, in front of other he acted didn't care of anything; at other back, he used his tears to wash his face, praying, if father, mother can live again it would be better. But if father and mother really could live once again, what could he do? Should he back to live as wealthy second generation who alike month? Or, everyday learn nothing and keep on spending money? Thinking the way how to anger father and mother?"

"Hence, he told himself...." talked to this point, Hei Yan Long suddenly stopped his footstep, his pitch black eyes are slowly looking at Yao Yao, faintly said: "There is nothing alike change only the appearance, but better live to the fullest in this limited life, better to fulfill father and mother expectations. Because, he always believes, in heaven his father and mother are keep on watching him, Yin and Yang being separated, both of them will be happy to see the today him. This, more than enough!"

## That's right!

The death people would never come back, we just an ordinary person not a God, cannot to bring back the death to live. But although we are only an ordinary person, we can still change our current life.

The blindly strong desire of apathetic, crying until no tears, there is no way to bring back the death mother to live, if mother who has been at heaven seeing the current her, must be worried. Otherwise, better for her to live well, live to the fullest, even they have separated, Mother who has been in heaven would feel happy for her.

The wind is blowing her black hair, that empty pair of eyes finally has slightest gleam.

And in front, this violence, arrogant and eccentric man's eyes, why there is a

trace of sadness in his eyes?

Does she see wrongly? Or, does the fellow friend this man said actually himself?

"CEO Hei, today.... Thank you. I believe you, your friend's father and mother at heaven, seeing his changes might be very happy." walking until one of street section, Yao Yao is looking Hei Yan Long with grateful eyesight.

He coldly smiled: "Perhaps." he is taking out his hand that inserted into his pocket, put in front of him, slowly he bends down his body.

"CEO Hei?"

"I want to express for whatever I have said to you today....my apology...." raised his body, Hei Yan Long's head does not turn back and just get into his car, left Yao Yao in front of her door.

Haha, how can this type of arrogant man apologized to her? This is something rare. Just as expected, Feng Chen Yi has friend like this really something cannot beg but only encounter by fate.

"Ha, I know Yan Long must be apologized to you."

Suddenly, there is familiar voice flowing from other side of street section, she turned her head, she looked at the intersection: "Chen Yi, you....."

"You say, you were at home, So that I came to your home but the result I found you were not at home, so that I waiting you at here. What did Yan Long tell you?"

"Nothing. Oh ya, Chen Yi, I ask you, did Hei Yan Long father and mother...."

"His father and mother were passed away when he was at his 18."

Just as expected, just now when Hei Yan Long told her about his friend's story, it was really him. No wonder, his eyes moisten.

18 years old.... Both of father and mother passed away, Hei Yan Long must be sadder thousand times compare to her?

Moreover, he stills need to shoulder the entire Bao Lai's group, he must get used with the politic in business world that early, deceive and blackmail each other, stills really bitter and complicated.

While her, as long as she able to find the truth regarding her mother death, the rest there won't be any changes in her life.

By this way comparing herself, she really much better off than Hei Yan Long.

"Today Thank you, Chen Yi."

"You have told me so many thank you today."

"Haha. This.... You don't need to accompany me anymore, better you go back now." in front of her room, Yao Yao awkwardly gives her smile, her eyes are avoiding him.

"Waiting until go fall sleep, I will go!" after said, Feng Chen Yi pulling her hand and walking inside the room.

"Huh, Chen...." she wanted to refuse, but seeing that pair of Feng Chen Yi's serious eyes looking at her, she gulped all her words.

Just alike this domineering man, today he could do this actually something seldom. Or else Hei Yan Long and Ou Yang Zi Xuan impossible looked so surprise.

If she keep on refusing, this domineering man will going to explode, right?

Lying on the bed, Feng Chen Yi helps to cover her with quilt, and then he moved the chair to bedside, sitting down and reading book.

Inside the room it is so quiet, perhaps if there is a needle fall down the sound will clear, in order to avoid awkwardness, Yao Yao does not dare to open her eyes to see what Feng Chen Yi doing, only asking herself to fall sleep, faster fall asleep.

The feeling being inside one room with Ex-boyfriend, really.... Really awkward. But.... Because there is Feng Chen Yi companion, this cold night changed warmer.....

Gradually, Yao Yao breathing changes to be rough. Feng Chen Yi closes the book in his hand, his deep eyes are slowly looking at her small face.....

This moment, Feng Chen Yi can feel the gap between them are so far; although the physical distant is not more than one meter, but heart as if as far as sky and ground. She cries, he only can use his hugging to comfort her, cannot do anything; she hurt, he only can secretly sitting beside her at here accompanying her, there is nothing he can do for her.

Actually what should he do in order to exchange with this woman's heart, the woman he loves deeply? To be able love this woman openly without any consideration to think about?

It is obvious this love ever on his hand, but now it is extremely more difficult than before.....

"Good Night, Yao Yao...." murmured, the ice cold lips landed on her forehead.

#### 307

wallup.net	

#### **Chapter 307**

## **Yu Ao Tian Coming**

Because of her mother dead, impossible for Yao Yao to recover quickly, but Hei Yan Long's words, Feng Chen Yi companion let her understood, the death of her mother is reality, although crying until her tears dry there won't change anything, better she lives good life, so her mother in heaven can rest in peace.

So that, on the second day after mother Luo death, Yao Yao has already come to school.

"Yao Yao, when will you do your mother funeral ceremony?"

"According to the process, the family member can go to the funeral house within seven days working time to get the body."

"Oh, when the time comes and need money, you remember to tell me. I have made phone call to my mother before."

"Thank you, Xiao Man...."

"Haha, this is something I must do, both of us are friend."

That's right, friend.....

From her eyes she is able to see Gong Xiao Man worries and also her concerns. Mom death is reality, but she still have group of friends, there is Xiao Man, Long Qi, Chen Yi, and.... Many more, many of people who consider about her. She must not let them to keep on worrying her. "Xiao Man, you say that winter dancing event, when will it start?"

"Ugh..." Gong Xiao Man hesitated for moment, forcing herself to give a smile: "Still, still early to go, so early."

"Oh, later when the time is coming near, you remember to tell me."

"En, en...." so that, Gong Xiao Man has intention to make Yao Yao can get out from her sadness because her mother death, but seeing her who forcing to give smile expression, Xiao Man feels bitter in her heart.

'Please all the member of student council immediately gather.'

'Please all the member of student council immediately gather.'

After listened to the emergency broadcast, Yao Yao is hurrying to join student council. She thought it is only a temporary emergency meeting, but she realized there is Dean, most of them are school board of directors.

"What is going on?" Yao Yao is curiously asking the female Senior of student council.

"Don't know."

"Every student council member, just now we have received an urgent news, later the politician government representative will be coming here to do an inspection, at the appointed time, the student council members will help to

introduce the school environment to the government representative, with expectation, the member of student council will be able to fulfill their duties to carry forward the glory of our school."

The Dean seriously, explaining everything in detail, and gave all the arrangement to Qi Lian Ao Yun: "Student President Council Qi Lian, the following section of detail all are given to you to arrange it, I am going out to welcome the representative."

"En, understood, Dean."

Seeing the Dean and all of the board chairmen leaving, Qi Lian Ao Yun expressionless waving his hand: "Others than Luo Yao Yao, everyone can go back to dorm and have rest."

"En? Student President Council Qi Lian, didn't Dean mention that all of us must take part to introduce our school to representative? Why you...."

"Only need Luo Yao Yao, more than enough, all of you leave!" Qi Lian Ao Yun spoke more serious.

As seen the members of student council, you see me, I see you, all of them are exchanging their glances, who does not know in order to get closer with politician this is one of the best opportunity? If being spotted by the government side, they can simply working in government (get into political circle) right after they graduate, for the next, basically they don't need to be worry about.

But they really don't understand, why Qi Lian Ao Yun wants to give this important job to this newbie Junior?

Helpless, everyone only can do as what he said, they back to dorm and take rest.

"Qi Lian sunbae, you only let me alone with the representative, don't you afraid I won't do it well." when everyone has dismissed, Yao Yao is opened her mouth with difficulty.

Qi Lian Ao Yun gives a cold smile, half of his body is leaning on the table inside the room, pretending and said: "You can do it, and it's only you who can do it!! What did Qi Lian sunbae mean, is the government representative who doing the inspection....

"Student Council President Qi Lian, Student Council President Qi Lian, the government representative, the Dean wants you to bring the student council members to welcome him."

"Understand!" Qi Lian Ao Yun is smiling, hurry taking Yao Yao to school entrance.

Not far from there, these two Audi A6 cars are used by the government representative, one at front and at back slowly stop in front of school.

When the cars just stop, Dean has already bowing with respect while opening the car door, constantly bowing: "Congressman Yu, Congressman Yu, welcome you."

This time the person who is doing inspection is Yu Ao Tian!

Yao Yao is secretly taking a peek to Qi Lian Ao Yun who standing beside her showing devilish smile, does not know what Student Council president Qi Lian plan?

"Dean, we are old acquaintances. Don't be such courteous toward me." Yu Ao Tian slowly getting down from car.

He is wearing deep black western suit, although he is not as stylish when wearing the western suit as before, but this is suitable with his status, position, and also very suitable with nation politician dignity.

"Aiya, Congress Yu, before, you are one of our school board director, now you are government official, although we are acquaintance, but I don't dare to treat you with cold-shoulder manner for someone who has great status alike you. Although you are our board of director before, I think it as position break through."

"Ha, really good at buttering." at beside Qi Lian Ao Yun is whispering, talking low voice with disgusting-stare when seeing the Dean spoke.

But Yao Yao feels this as normal thing.

Or else why Yu Ao Tian so desires to join the political circle? It is so obvious, in

business world no matter how big it is, stills need to give the government official face, Yu Ao Tian is one of the evidence for this principle.

At the beginning he has million dollar car changed to be Audi A6 which is suitable for government official, at the beginning has many branded western suit but now change cannot more than an ordinary compare to the most ordinary brand.

It seems that, Yu Ao Tian lifestyle isn't as extravagant than before, but actually his status has increased hundred times.

"Student council President Qi Lian, call your student council member to gladhand Congress Yu."

"Student Luo Yao Yao, this matter is given to you. I believe.... With your 'capability' you will be able to settle everything very well, can you?" When Qi Lian Ao Yun said 'capability' this word, he by intention bold it.

Not far from there, Yu Ao Tian can see Yao Yao's face changed to be nervous.

"Alright, then, I take my leave first...."

"Aiya, President Qi Lian, you are only asking one student council member who responsible to introduce our school to the government representative?" The Dean expression changed as if blaming and also questioning Qi Lian Ao Yun's arrangement.

He smiles, shrugging his shoulder: "So what Dean intending to say? Doesn't one person not enough? Dean, you rest assured, all the student council members cannot compare to one Luo Yao Yao capability! Isn't it, Junior Yao Yao."

Her tense face is dimmer, she lowering her head, keep on silent. She really wants to know, this time Qi Lian sunbae, does he on purpose to not giving face to Yu Ao Tian, or on purpose to shame both of them!

"Dean, one student to guide is more than enough, you know, my coming this time does not want to be such exaggerating."

"Oh, since Congressman Yu has voiced out, so just let it be." The Dean hurried rushed to Qi Lian Ao Yun side shook his head: "Student Council President Qi Lian,

you may go back first."

"En,....." he smiled, but that melancholic eyes at moment glance at Yu Ao Tian, at moment it give such provoking eyesight.....

#### **Chapter 308**

# The Impulsive Kiss

And then the next moment, the Dean and the few of board directors together with Yao Yao are taking Yu Ao Tian and other few of officials touring at First University—to do inspection, taking a look.

The whole process, Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian keep a distance of themselves with sort of stranger distance, this perhaps is the first time both of them meet after the election.

"Alright, Student Luo Yao Yao, today you have worked hard." seeing it almost dinner time, the Dean is taking a lead to end the inspection.

"En, Well I take my leave first." She smiles, politely giving a respect bowing to each and every official: "All official, good bye."

Haha, she knows, once Yu Ao Tian is taking path in political circle, it means both of their relationship actually has already near the end.

The today politic isn't something alike Palace politic, what wives and concubines, Magnificent clothes delicious food (splendid life), but the today politician are those image of the government.

Although now she and Yu Ao Tian are normal couple, at political and government side both of them won't allow Yu Ao Tian to date university student, moreover she just 19 years old.

So that, during Yu Ao Tian election process, no matter what Yao Yao must help him, because she wants to end their relationship soon, does not want to owe him any debt. Although, she has made vital mistake, but inside her heart there stills any deep debt.

On the way she backs to dorm, Yao Yao is showing helpless smile on her face.

Staring at stars, staring at the moon, finally the have reached the point she had looked forward for it before, but the past memories and laughter aren't something easy to forget, when meeting once again as stranger, really cannot get used on it.

"Fiuh, actually this also.... Uh!" When Yao Yao is using her key to open her dorm room, that moment, there is one cold big hand suddenly covering her mouth, and then pushing her inside the room.

Who?

This smell....

Although she cannot see the person who covered her mouth, but from the smell that spread from the body, it is special made cologne, this person must be Yu Ao Tian!

'Bam' a sound, the room door is shut. Inside the room is dark.

Not yet turn on the light, Yu Ao Tian has already turned her body, pair of lips with domineering aura pressed down.

"Uh." Yao Yao is completely does not think of it, Yu Ao Tian can suddenly kiss her, her brain is on blank state. Tightly pressing on her lips, his tongue even prying to get inside her mouth.

"Bao Bei, open your mouth!!" that is type of order that not easy to refuse and also mixed up with rushed breathing.

Although still in the darkness, she stills can feel, this moment Yu Ao Tian is so impulsive, or else how can his breathing this rough.

But she....

Actually today she does not want to play this vague game!

"Yu... Uh..." when she wants to open her mouth, Yu Ao Tian hurries covered her lips.

His skillful and also domineering tongue keeps on intertwined with her small tongue.

The tall body is suddenly pressed her body onto the cold-iced wall, followed by his big hand that stroking inch by inch her clothes.

No....

She still hasn't accepted her mother passed away yesterday, and now today she is playing vague with this man, she cannot accept it! "Uh uh!!" using her strength to protest Yu Ao Tian teasing.

He can feel that, the way of Little Thing protest is so different than usual, perhaps there is little bit anger.

"Bao Bei, I have told them that I go to restroom for while, taking this opportunity to look for you, do you really want to treat me this way?"

"You taking an opportunity to come, I really thank you, but your coming at here looking for me, is this what you want to do with me?"

"This thing? Ha, are you such missed me?" Yu Ao Tian coldly loosen up her body, 'pa' a sound, turn on the light inside the room.

At instant the darkness replace by the light, Yao Yao from this man's eyes can see cold gleam, it can be seen, Yu Ao Tian must be angry.

Indeed, since the day she became his lover, until today both of them are still keeping this vague relationship, while he never forced her to progress until the last stage. This is one of her most grateful to Yu Ao Tian!

Perhaps, because Yao Yao still cannot accept her mother death, so that she throwing a tantrum. "Sorry, today I don't want...." said, she is expressionless sitting on her bed.

Yu Ao Tian coldly glance at her. Another second, as heard, 'bam' a sound, the door has shut, when she raised her head, Yu Ao Tian has already left.

Ha....

Still thought after went through many things, both of them can have normal interaction.

As long as today he randomly asking her.... 'What's matter with you?'

She could feel have know this man for such long time, this man perhaps far

from her image about cold blood man, fickle.

At least she might think him as someone who can considerate about someone, or not that impatient toward woman.

But now, she only refused his kiss, he didn't ask but only slam the door and then left. At the moment when she heard the sound of closed door, she can feel her heart already cold.....

Yao Yao isn't type of girl who have many begging, she also not over-confident woman (too proud with herself in controlling 'love' in this case), since she knows Yu Ao Tian that moment, she never begging him, to treat herself very good.

But after her mom death, for Yao Yao it is big hit, moreover Feng Chen Yi companion, his gentle accompanying her, but this way if compare both of them, Yu Ao Tian performance today actually is so worst.

But....

Yu Ao Tian, a man with this type of character, he does not like to put his concerns on his lips, he does not like to put his thought on his lips, for him, the best way to express his passion and his longing toward her is by kissed her.

But Yao Yao is choosing heartlessly to refuse him, and she response him with cold attitude.

As for domineering man alike Yu Ao Tian this must be not a small wound for him!

"Congress Yu, tonight we...."

"I feel little bit uncomfortable, I go back first for taking a rest." Since leaving from Yao Yao's place, Yu Ao Tian's face is expressionless when refusing The Dean invitation, the driver and and the secretary are accompanying him left and get into the car.

Slowly the car is moving, he staring out through the glass window that gradually leaving school, slowly he curled his hand into fist.

Heaven knows, these days how busy he was, if he didn't make any excuse to make inspection to First university, how could he come here, perhaps more than months he won't be able to see that Little Thing.

Who knows, he has planned so well in order to meet her, but those hard work

exchanged with that Little Thing coldness? Damn it!

Yu Ao Tian is fiercely gritting his teeth, but not long after that, he takes his mobile phone and dial Long Qi's number. After all, more or less he stills can read Yao Yao's moods.

"Long Qi, she, what happen to her recently?" now, the secretary and assistant that stay beside Yu Ao Tian's side, all of them are government's men, they are placed in order to spy him, when he and Han Li Shang them having a phone call, when talking he must be extremely careful.

"Don't you know anything?"

Listened to the powerless Long Qi when speaking on the phone, Yu Ao Tian unhappily creasing his forehead: "These days quite busy, if you are also don't know impossible I know what happen to her?"

"Ng, Her mother is murdered, didn't you do it?"

#### **Chapter 309**

# Searching the Reason Why Mother Murdered

'Her mother is murdered, didn't you do it?'

Long Qi's words keeps on echoing at his ears, at sudden when he heard this, he felt his head is going to explode!

'Ring...ring....' immediately right after hung up Long Qi phone call, Long Ye is calling him.

"Hello?"

"Ao Tian, can I have word with you now?"

"You say, I listen."

"Yesterday, last night Long Qi told me that, Xiao Meng Li's mother murdered, right after I got the news, the first thing that I did, immediately I went to Police Station to check, the time of Xiao Meng Li's mother death, with you...."

"Stopped the car!" When Long Ye has spoken half, All of Yu Ao Tian attention is at the piece of news which displayed on electronic big screen.

The car is stopped at the street side, staring through the glass window, his eyes keep on looking at the electronic big screen.

'Last night, there was a reporter who got picture of the Feng's Group second young master with mysterious girl came out from poor apartment building, after that both of them were heading to five stars restaurant to have dinner, after had dinner, for once again both of them got back to that poor apartment building, after few hours later, Feng's group second young master hurried going out from that mysterious girl's place.'

The electronic screen keeps on emphasizing regarding about mysterious girl whom together with the Feng's group second young master, at one glance Yu Ao Tian has seen who that person is, moreover, the poor apartment that being emphasized, Yu Ao Tian knows whose house it belongs to!

Hah, for half month both of them are not seeing each other, when both of them are met, she even use such cold attitude treated him, is because.... For this time, she is always with Feng Chen Yi?

"Hello? Ao Tian, are you still listening?" It is Long Ye from the other side of phone, waiting for sometime there is no response of Yu Ao Tian, he even more panic calling him.

He drawn back his bleak eyesight, coldly said: "Say!"

"Do you need me to explain to Xiao Meng Li, you think?"

"It does not need now. Thing has be at this point now."

"But, due to Xiao Meng Li's IQ, soon or later she will look for her uncle, right? When time..."

"So just take step ahead before her!" Coldly Yu Ao Tian cut off Long Ye's phone call, the next moment, his bottomless eyes dimmed: "If after she investigate it was me who did it, just let her thought like that. Long Ye, this matter, you don't need to interfere!!"

"Understand...."

Hung up the phone call, Yu Ao Tian for once again stares at that electronic big screen that displaying Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao's picture, slowly, he tighten his fist until his vein shown, his eyes gleaming dangerous. "Start the car!" he said coldly.

The car is moving and gradually disappearing from the electronic big monitor.

But, the two persons which shown at the big electronic screen are piercing on his eyes, or precisely, it piercing into his heart.....

First night back to her dorm, Yao Yao even had passed it with nightmare.

She dreamt has afflicted with her grandpa that torment with sickness, in her dream she seen her mother bitter expression before she died, dreaming about

her father who has already at heaven, and then dreamt many things after she was at 6 years.

"Sst.... Headache." it only six o'clock in the morning, she cannot sleep back. In her brain there are many memories regarding her childhood, flowing inside her little head.

Father, mother.... Now only left her grandpa, the only family she has, she hopes everything that arranged by Feng Chen Yi would be going smooth.

Actually who murdered her mother, and even hunted down her Grandpa? She believes that good persons like her mother and grandpa would not do crime, moreover for this time grandpa always at hospital, and how could mother has thought to crash with others?

Robbery is absolutely not possible; revengeful murder? Seems less likely. Those men why they wanted to kill mom?

'Uncle, are you coming from Italy.'

'Ha, Yao Yao has grown this big already. I still have thing to do, I take my leave first. Sis, if you know something you must quickly inform me, if not..... You will make all us get killed!'

'If not.... You make us get killed!'

'Get killed!'

Her brain suddenly recalled the memories, in hospital, the words before uncle leaving.

"Uncle knows it!! Uncle must know what is gong on! Or else impossible for him to say that kind of words.

"And also.... And also, that day, two mysterious persons who were coming to Uncle's place, actually who were they?

Suddenly Yao Yao's face turned to be dim, rolled her body get down from bed, dressed, directly leaving a school, hailed car and heading to uncle's house. But for very long time, the abandoned villa had no one open the door.

Waiting for whole afternoon, she hasn't seen her uncle not even a shadow.

What to do? Regarding someone like her uncle, she does not know anything about him, but deep in memory, he types of person, after her father passed away, he took all her father assets and disappeared without any news.

Now how she contacts this uncle?

She standing in front of the villa by showing her difficulties expression.

Go and look for Yu Ao Tian? If now she looking for Yu Ao Tian with his current status, if he wanted to investigate and search all information regarding of her uncle this is such easy. But yesterday, the thing that happened between them, moreover now he is such busy, after all she has decided not to disturb him, and also there is no reason to make him to get involved in this matter.

"Ss... Perhaps.... There stills a way to find uncle!" thinking to this point, at sudden Yao Yao's face is showing such strange smiles.

"Lawyer Luo, hello. Because the person you wanted to bring a suit against is Australian citizenship, in addition the plaintiff has died, so that you need to show a more favorable evidence, to prove, Mr. Deng Zu Ye misappropriation of yours mother's possession." The thing that thought by Yao Yao, actually to use her Lawyer status to sue her own uncle who misappropriation her family assets 13 years ago.

First her uncle loves money so much, he will absolutely come to join the court; second if the suing is not success, she still can check her uncle's data.

"Prosecutor Zhang, 13 years ago that villa was bought and registered with Luo Tian Ming's name, if there is no mishap, until today it stills not yet changed the ownership name. Thus with my mother Deng Hui Hong's status as legal wife, although she has passed away, it should be entitled to the identity of the first heir, doesn't this not enough to use as strong evidence?"

Yao Yao who has the world class lawyer status, most of the court prosecutor are treating her well.

After listened to Yao Yao reason, helplessly Prosecutor Zhang gives her a smile: "Lawyer Luo, that villa indeed registered with Luo Tian Ming's name, but.... Your mother, wasn't his....legal wife."

"What?" Mother wasn't father's legal wife?

"Lawyer Luo, you take a look at this." after said, that Prosecutor Zhang shown Yao Yao pieces of document copy.

She hurries take a look....

In her father's spouse column there isn't her mother's name?

So who is her mother? Did she her father's lover?

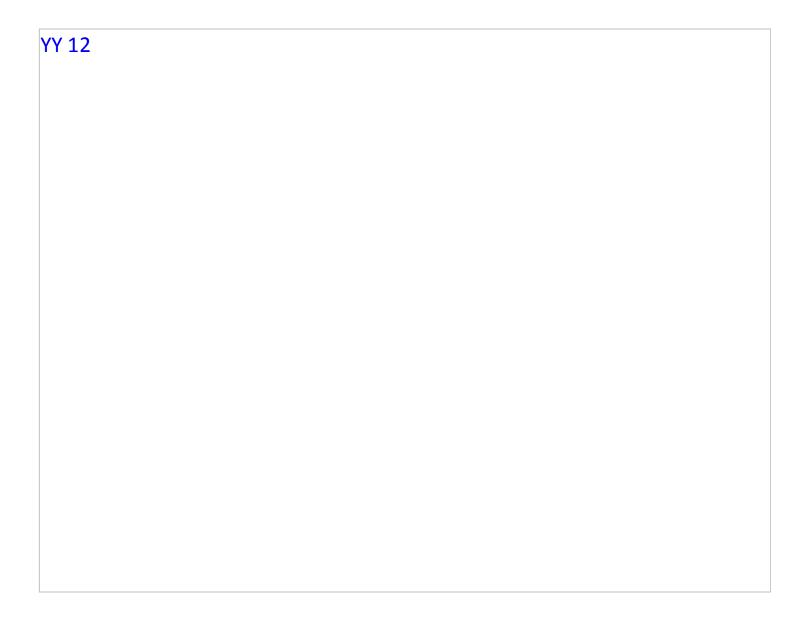
#### **My Comment:**

Finally Yao Yao found out one truth about her mother. Deng Hui Hong isn't legal wife of Luo Tian Ming, but she has made her guess, her mother might her father's lover.

The others truth will be revealed one by one, darker and more thrilling.....

From my translation source, we are almost at the end of book two, only left few chapters before we starting the third book.

#### 310



#### **Chapter 310**

## **Mother is Father's Mistress**

"Zhang....Prosecutor Zhang, about me.... Me...." Yao Yao does not know how to say anything.

Fortunately very fast prosecutor Zhang understood her meaning: "Lawyer Luo, in your relationship column, you are register under your father's name."

Actually what all thing happened? If mother is father's mistress, logically it said that father would not dare to register her under his name, right?

"Prosecutor Zhang, can you give me my father's legal wife contact? And also, the contact of Deng Zu Ye."

"Due to the procedure this is against the rule, but if the person is you, it is not a problem!"

This is one of the best part to be world class lawyer, go to anywhere always have green light. Very fast prosecutor Zhang has done checking about Luo Tian Ming's legal wife contact and also her uncle contact and given it to her.

Although she knows her purpose and her mission is investigating the killer who murdered her mother, but beforewards, she really wants to clear up (understand) the relationship between her father and her mother.

According to the contact which is given, Yao Yao is coming to the relatively old-ancient building, this old-ancient building perhaps have few decades history, although it's old, but during that time this building could be said as type of wealthy people's houses.

'Knock knock knock'

The door is opened, the person who opened the door is a woman who at her forties: "Miss, may I help you?"

"Hello, I am looking for Madam Sang Rou, you...."

"Oh, I am the maid who working with Madam, please come with me."

Under the guidance of the maid, Yao Yao is walking inside this old-ancient building heading to the second floor, a gray haired old lady is sitting on the chair while reading a book, although the years have obscured her original beauty, but looking at her facial features, this old lady must be someone beautiful when she was at her youth.

"Madam, this Miss is looking for you."

"Oh?" Sang Rou smiles graciously, slowly looking at Yao Yao: "There has been quite long time no one coming to pay visit, little girl, why are you looking for me?"

"Madam.... Sang, Madam Sang, I am... I am a reporter from Legal Times, this is almost Grand Celebration of an important election for the politician, our news paper headquarter asked me to do an interview with relatives who used to work for the government." For this old lady who live peacefully, she is showing her respect, although she does not know what kind of animosity among the previous generation. But she does not want to directly expose herself, hence hurt this old Madam.

"Oh? Are you coming to do interview?" Sang Rou looking ups and downs, measuring Yao Yao, her face is showing up generous smile.

"Yes... Yes. Your husband.... Luo Tian Ming?"

"That's right, haha." the old lady is pointing at the long sofa: "Little Girl, you have a seat while interviewing me."

"Oh, alright." Yao Yao is pulling the sofa, wanting to get closer with this old Madam.

"Tian Ming is my husband, he really kind man, career-minded person, also was someone progressing, he was ever worked as secretary for our Vice Prime Minister."

Vice Minister? Father ever worked as Zeng Kai Rui's secretary?

This name, Yao Yao had heard it hundred thousand times, but all were coming from Yu Ao Tian's mouth.

She knew that her father was working in political circle, she also knew that her father was having prestigious occupation as High level secretary, but never thought....

Father was Zeng Kai Rui's secretary!

Mother never brought up the topic before! Moreover her memory that lost before she was 6, whenever mother brought about father, she would have a look being hurt, so she also not dared to ask.

"You.... Are sure that.... Dad.... Your husband ever worked as Vice Prime Minister Zeng's secretary?"

"Of course."

Does not know why, when the old Madam gave her such affirmed answered, Yao Yao can feel her heart uneasy. "Ha, and how about your relationship with

your husband? Where your children?"

"The relationship between Tian Ming and me,,,, always alike best friend, perhaps! Perhaps only a friend, we don't have any child."

"Friend? This really.... Strange relationship. But your husband had daughter, do you know this matter?"

"I knew it. I knew." Sang Rou nodding her head, she putting down the book slowly on the tea table, smiles at Yao Yao: "Little Girl, you are Tian Ming's daughter right?"

*"* 

Ugh, does her disguise as reporter not that good? Or... Did she say something wrong, how could at one moment the old Madam could find her out? Yao Yao awkwardly give her smiles.

Sang Rou helplessly shaking her head: "You this little girl, are you still wanting to lie to elder? Haha, Tian Ming had passed away for many years, how could there still a reporter who coming here to do interview? Said, Little Girl, what do you want to know?"

Cold sweat.... Just as expected ginger must be old one that hot. "Madam Sang, actually, actually I just found out that you are my father's legal wife."

"Very normal, in this world there is no parent who willing to let their children know that they are someone's Mistress." this words said by Sang Rou quite piercing to ears.

But from her generous expression, it seems she does not have an evil purpose.

Moreover, this words are indeed logical, that time, Yao Yao ever thought, if there is a day her relationship and Yu Ao Tian ended, although she has married and had her own children, she also would not tell her children if she ever became someone's lover.

"You, have you known about my mother?"

"En, I have known it for long time, it was your mother who avoiding me. Actually she didn't need to do so, I don't care not even little bit between her relationship with Tian Ming...."

Listen to the story which backwards almost 40 years ago.

That time Luo Tian Ming and Sang Rou were at same age, they were so young, 20 years old, they were soldier at same army, and both of them were introduced through the matchmaker and shortly both of them just ended to stay together.

But after they stayed together, two of them realized they weren't match, so that everyday both of them always quarrel.

About Sang Rou, at the beginning she had boyfriend that she dated for 3 years, but because the other party didn't have good health, so that she forced to separate from her boyfriend.

But after she married Luo Tian Ming, she realized her ex-boyfriend was better, while Luo Tian Ming was not treating her well.

But, because both of them were coming from soldier background in order to do divorce process was more difficult than reaching a sky, in addition that time was semi-feudal era, divorce was something not good.

So that Luo Tian Ming and Sang Rou were spending days like that. Both of them were even had thought that, if they had child perhaps their relationship would be better.

Who knows, no one knows whom between two of them who could have child, so waiting for long time there was still no child.

Every day quarreling, troubles kept coming, then, because of arguing and quarrel, this two persons had spent such days for twenty years.

Until when 18 years old Deng Hui Hong appeared, Luo Tian Ming has already at his forty!

As a woman, Sang Rou's instinct could feel that her husband cheated on her, but because there was no love between her and her husband, but the forty years old Sang Rou didn't young anymore, absolutely she could not gulp this anger, so they were quarreling fiercer than before, even pointing out who was the third wheel.

Just like this, the fight were even getting fiercer, until Sang Rou found out who was the third wheel, she was checking out so many data.

Toward the Deng Hui Hong who came from ordinary family, and Sang Rou who comes from extraordinary family, if wanted to kill her, simply to say as easy as step on an ant.

After Luo Tian Ming knew, he was begging Sang Rou to let off Deng Hui Hong, he even said, whatever she wanted, he would fulfill, money, house, everything, as long as she didn't harm Deng Hui Hong, everything he would do. Even divorce!

#### **Chapter 311**

### Father's Wife

"I still remembered not long after we got married, I had brought up the topic about divorce, but your father because of career, he didn't want to divorce. And then after that, I had brought up few times about divorce, Your father refused. I really never thought your father would agree divorce with me because of your mother, and at same time he agreed to give up his career, gave up everything. That moment, I just realized how deep your father's love toward your mother."

"I hate him, I detested him, but recalled.... At the beginning of our marriage, I did also love other man, if I had your father stubbornness, perhaps now I would have been together with the man I loved."

"Madam Song, at beginning it was because of my father career, and then he refused to divorce with you?" actually, after listened to Sang Rou, Yao Yao little bit blamed on her father, after all during woman's most youthful time asking her to protect his own career, waiting until career has great prospects....he going out to look for..... Other woman. Actually this really too despicable.

"Haha, this was the reason why your father didn't divorce me. But that year my character was too spitfire, if wanted to divorce, still could do so, only because I feared to be embarrassed, also feared to be laughing stock, so that agreed not get divorce. So that, I said, if I had your father stubbornness, perhaps I would not have ended alike today."

So that the matter.... Yao Yao understands very well Sang Rou reason, during that year once a woman was getting divorce it was equal as nothing.

"Well, didn't my father say that he wanted to divorce with you, what's the reason?"

"Actually this was quite strange to say, I had quarreled with your father for

almost my life time, but because of this burst out, both of us even became best friend. He knew that I almost at my forty, I don't have career, don't have child, he asked me, actually did I still want to divorce or not, if divorce, he would agree too; if not divorce, he would take care of me at my old days."

"I have thought, after all your father had already made this step-back, I told him, if the woman that he loves didn't mind, I would not divorce. First, indeed I need you father to take care of me; second, just thought it as doing favor for your father, if I really divorce with your father, you father perhaps would lose everything he had."

So that, this is the reason why father didn't divorce with Sang Rou?

Father did this thing could be called.... Still have feeling and kindness.

Perhaps many people thought, father choosing to divorce because he had Mistress. Wrong, not divorce it really the true meaning of feeling and kindness. Because father had said, Madam Song has already at her forty, does not have child, if during that time really divorce, what to do?

But also from this, it can be seen that mother was feeling sorry toward Madam Song, so that she willingly to be Mistress.

"So how did you know about myself?"

"This was from one year before you father passed away, he was happily to show me picture, said, this is her daughter, she is already five years old, he even asked me whether you were cute or not. Not even to mention how happy he was during that time. Could it be said that your father finally had child during his old aged?"

Old aged has child?

Haha, that's right, the picture that father showed to Madam Sang, he must be at his fifty already, right? But that time mother only twenty something.

With this gap of age it easy to make other mistaken that mom together with father because his money, but Yao Yao believes, Mother must be really love father. If really because of money, impossible for mother to take care Grandpa in such thoughtful manner after father passed away.

"Madam Sang, I have disturbed you for long time, thank you for telling me so much thing, I take my leave first."

"Little Girl, how's your mother recently?"

Mom... "My mom, two days ago my mom has passed away."

When Yao Yao said this word, at sudden Madam Sang expression changed with unbelievable expression: "At least she in her forties, how could suddenly passed away? How could suddenly passed away? Your father also, his aged not yet 50 but he had left. So sudden..."

That's right, everything just too sudden, although father death was caused by traffic accident, but that was also too sudden. "Madam Sang, Take care of yourself, if I have time, I will sure to pay a visit."

After bid good bye to Sang Rou, Yao Yao's heart actually fills with warm heat, it is not like she encourage third wheel to come and destruct others family. But open-minded wife alike Madam Sang, father who is too weight feeling and also kind man, mother who stubborn with her love, actually it really rare seen in the society.

But, the only regret is, Madam Sang does not together with the person she loved, perhaps if she stubborn to divorce with father at the beginning, today she must meet her true love.....

"Hello? Chen Yi, am I disturbed you?" in the street, Yao Yao is phoning Feng Chen Yi.

"No. What's matter looking for me?"

"En, I want to ask your help to do something."

"Say!"

She stopped her footstep, her moist eyes are flashing, slowly said: "Please help me to make use the media to broadcast announcement, just put Single Mother with surname Deng has left a sum amount of legacy to her only daughter who called Luo Yao Yao before her death, now, the initial estimates are at least thirty million."

"Hah? Why must make such announcement?"

She actually does not want to make such announcement, but the problem is since she got the contact from Prosecutor Zhang, she keeps on phoning, but no matter what her phone could not reach, so that she only can do so. "Use to 'hook the fish'!"

"Understand."

'Ring, ring ring....' right after she hung up her phone call, Gong Xiao Man is calling. "Xiao Man, what happen?"

"My beloved! Have you seen...seen the news?"

"What news?"

"You hasn't known it? You and Feng Chen Yi spending night together was photo by reporter!!!!"

With Feng Chen Yi spending night matter? No, she does not know....

Think carefully, was it the night when her mother passed away? Impossible.... How coincide! After all being photo by the media!

But, it must be because she was not too carefully. Recalled the days when she with Yu Ao Tian, as long as both of them are visiting crowded places, they would walk one at front and one at back, and also won't do any intimate gesture in front of others.

After all, these business men are getting more focus than those super stars. Being photo by the media is something normal, she really just not too careful. "How bad the news?"

"You say whether this is bad or not, the media only used 'Mysterious woman' 'Lingering at harem place for few hours', you make your guess, what if Yu Ao Tian seen the news, would he get explode or not?"

That's right! Yu Ao Tian! Though she isn't his lover anymore, but between both of them are still having verbal agreement, this matter cannot being ignore! "Xiao Man, you hung up the phone call, I, I want to make an explanation to Yu Ao Tian first."

"En en, quickly."

She panic hung up Gong Xiao Man phone call, and then she hurries dialing Yu

Ao Tian number.....

The Continuous.....

The Grand Funeral

"Ring, ring ring....' at the government office building.

Hearing his mobile phone ringing, Yu Ao Tian is stopped his footstep.

"Congress Yu?" few of the officials in front of him are curiously looking at him.

"All of you go first to inside meeting room, I answer my phone call first."

"En, alright."

The others staff that accompany him before have entered the meeting room, Yu Ao Tian is slowly answered his phone: "What's matter, Long Ye."

"Just now, the media company which is one of Feng's group has made urgent announcement, the contain about the new was, a lady with surname Deng, after her death she has left a sum of legacy that estimated about 30 million to her daughter, Miss Luo, this Lady Deng and Miss Luo, they must be Deng Hui Hong and Xiao Meng Li, right?"

Yu Ao Tian does not have any interest with the news, but he is interested with.... Feng Group who is made the news broadcast!

It seems, Yao Yao is always contacting Feng Chen Yi secretly.

"Ao Tian, this is the way for Xiao Meng Li to lure her uncle, right? Damn it, that MF Deng Zu Ye also not knowing where he has gone, I had asked subordinates to look for him for day but haven't found him out. Now what to do? If he is contacting Xiao Meng Li secretly, what to do?"

Compare to Long Ye who is more panicking, Yu Ao Tian is appeared so calm down, as if this matter completely none of his business. "The funeral day of sister Hong, do you know when the time?"

"Listened to Long Qi it seems five days later."

"Five day later...." Yu Ao Tian is taking out an agenda from his pocket, flipping to the next five day: "I know it, after five day, you are accompanying me to go to

Sister Hong funeral."

"Ugh? I am talking with you regarding Xiao Meng Li's uncle matter, how could you want to go to the funeral?"

"If nothing goes wrong, Deng Zu Ye will show up during that day. After all that day is one of the safest day!"

That's right, not wrong! Perhaps Deng Zu Ye has thought that Yu Ao Tian might kill him, so that he keeps on hiding not willing to show up, but because of money he will absolutely showing up in front of crowded!

Think to this point, Long Ye highly praised: "Still you have thought for overall! But Deng Zu Ye choosing to show up on that day, we don't have to intercept him?"

"There is me, he won't dare to say anything. When the time is arrived you guys prepare to shoot him."

"Ok! I understand." speak honestly, after this brief communication, Long Ye really can't help himself not to praise, Xiao Meng Li rival is Yu Ao Tian, perhaps someone alike him who is an ordinary person if using brain with both of them, early must be get rid thousand miles away.

"Congress Yu, the meeting is going to start." Yu Ao Tian just hung up his phone call, his secretary has already running over.

He glances at his mobile phone, directly turn off, slowly walking inside the meeting room with his secretary....

"Hello, the phone that you dial is not active...." on the other side, Yao Yao keeps on dialing Yu Ao Tian's phone number, but it always at inactive state.

Thinking about this man's character who is always moody, does not know whether he pretending not to answer her call or he is really busy.

"Forget it, waiting after mother funeral just explain to him, although now explaining to him, he must be still rage in fume, also don't care about few days more."

Five day later....

Yao Yao is picking up the closest mourning hall from her house to set up her

mother funeral ceremony, first it is cheaper, second it could easy her mom to find 'way' to go home.

Small size mourning hall, at least it only can accommodate about 20 persons, the deceased's photo is facing to the entrance, Yao Yao is kneeling down in front of brazier (fire pot) used for burning paper money for her mother.

Two of fellow classmates who arrived at advance come to comfort and patting her shoulder: "Yao Yao, Jie Ai (restrain one's grief)" and then sit down at an empty seat.

"Yao Yao, have you inform the others?" similar alike filial daughter status, kneeling down beside Yao Yao is Gong Xiao Man curiously asked.

"No, I did tell Chen Yi." she told Feng Chen Yi because she needs Feng Chen Yi to help her to catch her uncle.

"Even Yu Ao Tian you didn't tell him?"

"No."

"....." today is the day to send Aunty, Gong Xiao Man does not want to speak much regarding others topic, but this hall only filled with small group of few people, in addition there is no others visitor, it was little bit sad for Mother Luo to go like this.

But, it is also cannot blame on Yao Yao, she just come back not long ago, no relatives, also does not have any siblings, absolutely it become alike now.

This is the miserable to be single child, when the beloved family member gone, they will feel bitter by themselves and alone.

"There is guest!!" suddenly, the person who is responsible for the funeral ceremony (MC for the funeral) speaking in high tone.

Yao Yao and Gong Xiao Man expressionless looking at the funeral big hall entrance.

As seen, Long Qi and Nan Lu are entering with black clothes, they are bowing three times with respect toward the picture, and then walking in front of Yao Yao: "Our deep condolences!"

According to the tradition, Yao Yao and Gong Xiao Man must kowtow three

times. "Thank You."

These two person are sitting on the left side of the funeral hall.

"There is guest!"

And the following, Qi Lian Ao Yun and Gu Xiao Ming, the Vice President showing up, bowing three times with respect, walking in front Yao Yao: "My deep condolences."

"Thank You."

These few people were informed by Gong Xiao Man, and about Vice President Gu Xiao Ming must be brought by Qi Lian Ao Yun.

"There is guess!"

Soon after, Feng Chen Yi, Hei Yan Long, Ou Yang Zi Xuan and Feng Ke Xin also coming, each of them are showing different expression, bowing three times respect to the picture, comforting Yao Yao few words and then they are sitting on the right side of the funeral hall.

Before, the hall was empty but now suddenly crowded, although in here there are many faces that Gong Xiao Man does not know, but at least when sending off Mother Luo it won't be so lonely.

"There is guest arrived!"

The master of ceremony voice down, Gong Xiao Man subconsciousness looking at the entrance: "Mom?"

As seen, a woman who dressed in black Marten coat, wearing a black hat and coming with younger handsome man slowly walked in.

This beautiful woman is Gong Xiao Man's mother.

"Aunty, hello." during in Japan, Yao Yao had ever met Gong Xiao Man's mother for few times, the first impression that gave by this woman when Yao Yao met her was stylish, passionate, and also capable and experienced. Just alike today. No matter she is, she always becomes the subject of attention.

"Yao Yao, my deep condolences." Gong Xiao Man's mother is comforting Yao Yao.

"Mom, why are you coming here?"

"You told me that Yao Yao's mother passed away, of course I must come here to give my praying."

Gong Xiao Man really never thought her mother would be coming, but who is the man coming with mom?

"Who is he?"

"Later I will introduce him to you." after said, Gong Xiao Man's mother is bringing that man to find empty seat to sit down.

"There is guest arrived."

This time the person who is coming to offer praying someone that Yao Yao never thought before..... Wang Han!

This is a man who looked alike father for her, he uses a gentleman's smile, an elegant aura, most of time he always show her as if common father care and love: "Regional Director Wang, how can you come?"

# **Chapter 312**

#### The Elites Gathered

"I heard from Vice CEO Long. My deep condolences, Yao Yao." Wang Han gives her a faint of smile, he extends his hand and stroking her hair and then looking for an empty seat.

"Yao Yao, just now who is that man?"

"There is guest arrived!" before Gong Xiao Man finished her words, the Master of Ceremony for once again said with loud voice.

"How can there still other guest coming?" as seen the funeral hall that only can accommodate 20 persons seems not fit anymore, perhaps if there few people keeps coming there won't be any seat left?

This time, the person who is walking inside the funeral hall not any stranger, they are Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye!

Beyond doubt, their arrival pushed the quiet funeral into the\*\*\*

Sitting on the left side is Hei Yan Long, Ou Yang Zi Xuan who are whispering each other: "This woman hasn't she broke up with Yu Ao Tian?"

Feng Chen Yi with his cold expression swept on Yu Ao Tian who is walking in, coldly said: "This is their matter."

"What is called as their matter?" They had thought that Feng Chen Yi busy for these days to settle Yao Yao's matter, because they thought Yao Yao had already broken up with Yu Ao Tian, never thought....

Feng Chen Yi by all this time acted as altruism?

"Yao Yao, my deep condolences." Long Ye's face is shown bitter expression in front Yao Yao before he gives his respect, extend his hand and stroking her head.

She almost forget, in her life, actually there still someone alike Long Ye who taking role as her Big Brother, isn't it? "Thank you, Long Ye Ge Ge."

"Haha, you are really, if I was not heard it from Long Qi's mouth the news

about your mother passed away, perhaps in this life time you won't tell me right?"

It is not that she does not want to say, the most important she afraid this matter will disturb Yu Ao Tian's time. If she told Long Ye Ge Ge, then Long Ye Ge Ge will surely let Yu Ao Tian know. "I am sorry." Yao Yao feels guilty nodding her head, at the moment when she raises her head, her moist eyes are keep looking at Yu Ao Tian who showing expressionless face.

"Ahem, Ao Tian!" Long Ye can feel the atmosphere turned to be strange, stretch out his hand and then pulling Yu Ao Tian's cloth.

Immediately he shown his elegant smiles: "My deep condolences." turned his back, he takes a seat on right way.

This scenery, it makes Gong Xiao Man who still in kneeling position feels unsatisfied: "What does Yu Ao Tian mean? Even that someone who called as Regional Director Wang, Long Ye, they are saying few of comforting words, but Yu Ao Tian is looking as if coming to stranger funeral ceremony, at least you are his girlfriend, right? His reaction, is he still a human or not?"

"Xiao Man, I am not his girlfriend. Moreover, his reaction is normal, you must have realized now he is member of congress, government official, if he comes closer to me, it will not good for him."

"Yao Yao, are you sick? He because of protecting his own position, can't he understand you? That also need to separate the occasion, he MF, this time still pretending as stranger, simply to say not a human!"

Yu Ao Tian image is slowly turning bad on Gong Xiao Man's eyes, today she is raging in fume.

Regarding to this matter, Yao Yao is showing calm expression, it's okay, if she really needs Yu Ao Tian comforting, she wouldn't not inform him for all this time.

And then....

This two girls are mistaken to understand the reason why Yu Ao Tian shown such cold expression.

As mature man who has many experiences, he is so clear when he must flare

up, when he must suppress himself. Few days ago the news and rumors about Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi hasn't forgotten by him.

But today when he walking into the funeral hall that moment, the first thing that caught by his eyes are Feng Chen Yi. Although he stills thinking to suppress his anger, but he stills not able to control it perfectly!

The bottomless unreadable eyes are looking at Feng Chen Yi. Feng Chen Yi's pair of cold eyes are also looking at him too.

When both of these two men are looking each other, at the same time both of them are showing strange smiles, but at the moment they drawn back their eyesight, the smiles that shown on their faces also disappeared without any trace.

"There is guest arrived!"

Will the person uncle? This time must be uncle? Yao Yao quickly dashed to the funeral entrance to take a look.

As seen, Xia Ren Liang who dressed in black holding Xiao Qiao walking inside, giving respect bow three times, hurried he crouch in front of Yao Yao: "Are you okay?"

"You.... How can you come?" she didn't inform Xia Ren Liang.

"I have read the announcement on the news, I have feeling it must be you, so that I ordered people to ask around. I just found out that today is your mother funeral ceremony. I am sorry, for coming late."

No, the person who must be apologized isn't Xia Ren Liang but her.

"Thank you, Xia Ren Liang."

"How can Lan Du Group Xia Ren Liang also coming?" sitting at the left side, Hei Yan Long curiously asked.

Ou Yang Zi Xuan quickly looking at him, whispering: "Ever pursuing Chen Yi's Ex-girlfriend before."

"....." after Hei Yan Long heard it, simply to say he does not know what to say. "This woman seem quite popular."

Look at the huge crowds of people, the people who sitting here only few who are ordinary people? Can be said, those who are business tycoons are gathering at here.

If counted Yu Ao Tian who just entered the political circle; the person who has underworld background Long Ye, Ou Yang Zi Xuan.

This time funeral ceremony can be said that, the black, the white, three world people are mixed into.

Bugatti Veyron, Bentley, Ferrari, Porsche, BMW, Land Rover, Lamborghini, Rolls-Royce, all of these luxury cars brand are gathered today.

One by one the reporter after receiving the news are coming to dig out the mystery.

"Since not long ago seeing those who are entered the funeral ceremony, Two top management of Berson Group, The CEO and Chairman of Bao Lai's Group, and also the government official Congress Yu, The CEO of Lan Du Group, General Manager of Feng' Group, The sole heir of Ou Yang Group, until now those business tycoons who lead the China business are completely arrived. Really does not know who the person holding this funeral ceremony." this is the scenery, undoubtedly this becomes the headline news for today's.

After all, it is something that won't be seen within 100 years.

But Yao Yao doesn't think this way, she does not inform anyone, because she hopes her mom can rest in peacefully, just alike her life, ordinary.

The funeral hall is crowded by people, everyone is very hard to squeeze to fit in.

"There is a guest!" once again the Master of Ceremony said.

Yao Yao is emotionally looking at the funeral hall entrance: "Uncle!" and next her eyes are glancing at Feng Chen Yi.

Feng Chen Yi understands her signal by nodding his head, and then he exchanges his sights with Ou Yang Zi Xuan who beside him.

"My men are prepared." Ou Yang Zi Xuan confidently showed OK gesture with his hand.

The other side, Long Ye's face turned to be dim, just when he is taking out his phone, Yu Ao Tian pressed down his hand: "The deceased is important. Just wait until the funeral ceremony ended and we make moves."

"Understand."

## **Chapter 313**

# The Firing Sound in the Funeral Ceremony

"Sister! Sister! How can you just go by this way, little brother is not obedient, only by today just got the news of your leaving, little brother gives you a kowtow, a kowtow." Deng Zu Ye is exaggerating kneeling down in the funeral hall, constantly he gives regretful kowtow to his big sister.

Yao Yao only can see him with cold-eyesight, actually she feels her uncle is too hypocritical.

If not because she asked Feng Chen Yi to broadcast that fake news, she believes it is impossible for her uncle to come here! read this at azurro4ciello.wordpress

"Yao Yao, my niece, really pity on you. Oh yeah, regarding the money that your mom...."

"Uncle, this matter just wait until the funeral ceremony ended, okay? My mother has a will, and there also have your share."

"Really?" Once Deng Zu Ye heard it, an instantaneously brighten up.

"Of course! You go with me to the tomb first."

"Okay, okay!"

"Prepare for the coffin." said the Master of Ceremony, the staffs who are responsible to carry the coffin slowly raise it.

Yao Yao hugging on the picture walking at the very in front, the rest are following at her back.

But once she walking out from the funeral hall, many of the reporters alike flies surrounded her: "Miss, I recognized you, you are General Manager Feng's mysterious woman, right?"

When Yao Yao is showing up in front of the reporters, everyone at one glance already recognized her.

"General Manager Feng, is today your girlfriend's mother funeral ceremony?"

"Not right, not right, Miss, I remember, during congress Yu election campaign, you were his representative lawyer, right?"

One by one the reporters are bombing her with question, the road ahead is surrounded by crowded.

"Every reporter, today is my mother funeral ceremony, all questions will not be answered. But, I emphasized to all of you, today whoever that coming and attending the funeral ceremony are my friends, moreover..... Only friends relationship!" Yao Yao is using such strong speaking tone, her face is showing cold than anger.

"I count until three, if all of you are not giving away. Or else, don't let me until find out which media reporter you all!!!" Feng Chen Yi who keeps silent suddenly roaring.

Those reporters realized the situation, they give a small path. Just to know, offend those big business tycoon, there is no benefit for them.

Seize the chance, Feng Chen Yi embraces Yao Yao's shoulder and then faster to break the surrounded.

Leaving by this way, actually Yao Yao feels awkward, with uncomfortable eyes she glances at Feng Chen Yi who embraces her shoulders. Her eyes are slowly glancing at the guests who are coming from behind.

Yu Ao Tian is standing not far from her about 3 meters, that kind of cold eyes, so out of the ordinary, although he is an arrogant, and also at one glance can see that his aura very different with others.

And then, the expression that showed on his face is kind of bottomless unreadable expression, but pair of his hand that inserted into his pocket make into tight fists.

While Feng Chen Yi who besides of Yao Yao can feel her strange eyesight, following her vision line, both of their eyes are meeting together. He can feel, although he is so close with her, but he could not win over closeness between she and Yu Ao Tian!

Zero distant contact.

Feng Chen Yi and her is side by side, if it was old days, both of their heart had stuck together; but this moment although both of them are standing this close, their heart are having a distance is slowly pulling away.

Three meters of distance.

Yu Ao Tian and her are only exchanging a glance, countless of interaction pull their heart get closer but because of countless misunderstanding and pull far their distance, even near breakdown, this moment, the two figures that catch by Yu Ao Tian's eyes are piercing.....

"Bury!" A desolate Cemetery Park, everyone is queuing neatly into three row, eyes are gradually look at the soil and coffin.

An instantaneously, finally the tears that Yao Yao holding back at last still falling down.

Mom rest in peace;

Mom thank you for these years for raising me;

Mom at the next life I will become your daughter again;

Good bye... Mother!

"Make move." Among the crowded Yu Ao Tian pair of eyes make a signal.

At beside Long Ye is hung in his headset on one of his ears and then said two

simple words.

And then, as heard.... 'bag' a firing sound.

The wild birds are startled, the firing sound is shocking everyone and then over and over again the sound echoing in this open spaces.

"Ah!!!!!" The female guests are shocked to the point hug their head while screaming.

Yao Yao is gritting her teeth looking to Feng Chen Yi.

"Zi Xuan, what is going on?"

Ou Yang Zi Xuan creasing his forehead, hurried he takes his earphone and talking with his subordinate.

"There is group of killer has been stalking us since the funeral hall, it seems their target is your Ex-girlfriend's uncle, but it's not a matter, I have my men to stop!"

After heard, Feng Chen Yi rushed to Yao Yao and nodding his head gesturing that everything is okay and then quickly ran to Deng Zu Ye's side.

"Hello, Mr. Deng, I am Yao Yao's friend, now I will ask my men to protect you and send you off safely."

"No, don't, don't kill me! Don't kill me!" very obvious, Yao Yao's uncle is being scared to the point he lost his way, he hugs his head and then screaming and crying. On the moment when he passing Yu Ao Tian, his eyes are filled with begging eyesight. "Let me off, let me off!"

This scenery, accurately without fail from Yao Yao's eyes, how can uncle acting this weird when seeing Yu Ao Tian? He impossible knows Yu Ao Tian, doesn't he? Although he is begging, he must be begging Feng Chen Yi for protection! Actually what is going on?

It does not have much time to considerate too much, the next moment 'bang bang' there are firing sounds, it really hard for them to see who is enemy

and who is friend.

"Long Qi, Qi Lian sunbae, trouble both of you, please protect and sending off all the female guests."

"Understand!" Long Qi and Qi Lian Ao Yun are taking separately moves, protecting the weakling females to leave.....

"What is going on?" standing far and being the observant for the chaos the expressionless Yu Ao Tian asked Long Ye who stay beside at him.

I got the news, Ou Yang Zi Xuan is bringing Xuan Wu's killer group to protect Deng Zu Ye!"

Ou Yang Zi Xuan....

Without slightest doubt, must be because being asked by Feng Chen Yi. It seems that Feng Chen Yi and Little Thing had made this plan for sometime, right? She really believes.... Her ex-boyfriend!!!!

Thinking to this point, That pair of Yu Ao Tian bottomless eyes suddenly become dimmer, "Ask Li Shang to do by himself! Must take Deng Zu Ye!"

"Yes!"

Deng Zu Ye who is following Feng's and Hei's body guards, this suddenly changed to be battle field.

Their target is uncle! It seems that mom really had something, or else impossible those killers are not letting go uncle!

Actually what is the matter, what type of problem that able caused by them who are coming from ordinary family?

Yao Yao is silently standing beside the tomb stone, under tense and uncertainty her eyes are looking at Yu Ao Tian and Long Ye who are standing under the tree.

Both of them are doing simple and short eye contacts, Yu Ao Tian turned back, when he is leaving....

"Ao Tian!"

## Chapter 314

#### Yao Yao's Uncle Get Killed

Yao Yao is hurrying to dash in front but when she wants to open her mouth, she forgets what she wanted to say.

To solve the misunderstanding?

Or should she ask him why he acts this way toward her?

Perhaps, asking him whether he know or not about those killer groups?

Does not know what to say, now her head is in chaos, it was only half month not seeing each others, see him face to face, everything has changed as if stranger, as if both of them never meet before.

It looks alike, each time when both of them are apart, they would like a stranger, this really confused her whether she..... And him ever had interaction!

"What do you want to say?" Yu Ao Tian is coldly looking at her small face.

Yao Yao smiles, shaking her head weakly: "Thank you, today you can come here."

Perhaps, after long time, there is no need to make an explanation anymore, actually it also not bad to have some misunderstanding with Yu Ao Tian for this time.

After all, if she keeps on staying beside him, she could not do anything more

for him, better, just like this slowly being forgotten.

He must go to the path that belongs to his; while her just stays here to become that wood bridge.

"Do you only want to say this?" Yu Ao Tian asked.

She is forcing herself to give a smile, with empty eyes she nodding her head. "En...."

"Ha." so that what he waiting for this time only for a thank you word! Just like an ordinary thank you word given by the family. There is cannot be any ordinary than ordinary of Thank You word. "You and Feng...."

"Ao Tian!" Long Ye's face tense, with little bit panic speaking tone he has interrupted them.

It can be seen, Long Ye must have something urgent to tell Yu Ao Tian, Yao Yao answered him with smile: "I won't disturb both of you, I take my leave first."

Turned, and then she slowly disappeared from their in front.

"What's matter, Long Ye?"

"Just now the killer group made a report, there are another killer group on the highway."

"There are another killer group showing up?" Yu Ao Tian is narrowing his eyes, coldly said: "The target of the other side!"

"Seeing from the killer skill, they were those men who escorting Deng Zu Ye but absolutely not Xuan Wu group's men!"

After listened to Long Ye's report, at sudden pair of Yu Ao Tian's eyes are gleaming brightly, but very fast it replaced by the black cloud (gloomy).

"Ao Tian, can you analyze the other party's intentions?"

"From the surface they wanted Deng Zu Ye to say something toward Yao Yao, but...."

"But, due to the today's Xiao Meng Li whether her background or her capability she stills not someone who can compete with you, so those men didn't have any reason to use Yao Yao!"

That's right, just like as what Long Ye elaborate, due to today's Yao Yao background and her capability she cannot compete to the today's Yu Ao Tian who is such stronger, so that she does not have any use-value.

But another moment, every times Yu Ao Tian who able to control any situation with his head but at same time he is showing his difficult expression. "What's matter seem off?"

This is the first time for Long Ye to see Yu Ao Tian showing this problematic expression, as seen, this matter must be serious one. "Now what to do?"

Silent for moment, Yu Ao Tian drawn back his problematic expression, coldly said: "Deng Zu Ye must be killed, and regarding to the mysterious killer group....
Just leave one to stay alive."

"Understand!"

"Yao Yao, here." on the cemetery entrance, Hei Yan Long with big strides from inside to Yao Yao in front while waving his hand.

She is looking around, looking for Feng Chen Yi: "CEO Hei, where is Chen Yi?"

"He is going with Zi Xuan and also their body guards to protect your uncle leaving this place. Now you get to the car, let's we gather with them."

"En, alright." at glimpse her eyes catch few cars that parked on the street: "CEO Hei, you wait me for moment." she hurries running to the opposite of the street: "Long Qi, Qi Lian sunbae, is everyone safe?"

"En, everyone is safe. The killers target aren't them, so that all of them are safe and soundly." said Qi Lian Ao Yun.

Yao Yao is secretly heave a sigh, too great! If because participating mom's funeral ceremony, and make these fellow friends get into trouble, for her life she will cannot live in peaceful.

Really never thought, this time the funeral ceremony could be turned into this chaotic———-apologizing to everyone.

"Today matter, thank to all of you. Shocking all of you, I am apologizing." Yao Yao back one step, give deep bow toward Long Qi and Qi Lian Ao Yun.

Long Qi who used to be mischievous love to laugh but today obviously Long Qi is looked so different as his usual, because....

At the first time when heard the firing sound, he had already made his guess, those men were Yu Long's men! "You don't have to apologize, Yao Yao, this kind of matter no one wants it, that.... I take my leave first."

"I also leave."

"En, Long Qi, Qi Lian sunbae good bye." her eyes are seeing them until they get into cars, Yao Yao hurries get in into Hei Yan Long's car.

Not long after that, they arrive at their location, one luxurious place.

"Where is this?" Yao Yao is pointing at the luxurious house in front of her eyes, cannot help herself to think about those in Television, those underworlds big boss who lived in such place, aura, also the majestic-feeling, also revealed slightest mystery feel.

"Xi Zuan's house." After said, Hei Yan Long faster gets down from the car, very gentleman he opened the car door for Yao Yao.

This person who always act almighty and arrogant alike big Young Master, today is rare to see him to drive the car by himself, the one of the most never thought is, he even understands politeness to open door for woman, not long ago this man was bringing ten men with him, followed at his back. It is difficult to think that the arrogant big young master and her in front gentleman are same person.

Get down from the car, Yao Yao can't wait to hurry get inside.

Looking at the empty Big Hall.... "No one?" doubted she is looking at Hei Yan Long.

"Please wait." Hei Yan Long turned his back, takes out his mobile phone: "Where are you? We have arrived."

"																													"	,
	••	•	•	 •	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•		

"Understand." within short communication, the expressionless Hei Yan Long hung up the phone call.

From his serious expression, Yao Yao can feel slightly bad premonition: "What's happen? Where Chen Yi and others?"

Hei Yan Long silent for while, one of his hands inserted on his pocket, forcing himself to give a dry-smile:

```
"Your... Uncle.... Being killed!"
```

'Thump'

Although Yao Yao and her bad wicked evil uncle does not have any feeling, but heard the news about his death, cannot avoid it gloomy her feeling little bit.

But the most shocking for her is.... Actually who those mysterious killers who not only twice but also thrice, killed her mother, hunted down her grand pa and now killed her uncle!

Not long after that, Feng Chen Yi and Ou Yang Zi Xuan have arrived to the place where they had promised before.

"Yao Yao....." Feng Chen Yi heaved a sigh, feeling guilty lowering his head: "Sorry."

"It is okay! It is okay!" she afraid because of her matter she would ruin Feng Chen Yi and Ou Yang Zi Xuan moods, hurried she shown them 'does not mind' expression: "As long as both of you are alright, as long as both of you are alright....."

<b>3</b> .	T2	+	3.	Tρ	

Dear Fellow Readers,

Because of some problems that happened for this last few days, I am sorry if make you guys worry. Also I am so thankful for the support given by readers and some even came up with many ideas to help me out from this trouble.

Again, as reminder, I think all of us must move on and stop talking about the 'pirate web'.

Ah yeah, if you are confused with the post, please check on Index session ^-^

## **Chapter 315**

#### **Gradually Clear About The Killers**

She is too understand Feng Chen Yi's character, since the day she dated him, as long as she had any wish, Feng Chen Yi would always fulfill and make it come true for her.

In Feng Chen Yi's world, there is no failure to be accepted, and also there should not be any Yao Yao's expectation turned into bubbles!

But this time, he even failed to protect Yao Yao's uncle.

"Damn! It was so obvious that we were almost arrived at the secure location, but the result....." Ou Yang Zi Xuan fiercely make a fist from his hand and then hit it to the nearest vase.

"Zi Xuan, you calm down for moment, ok? Failed just failed. Rather than you vent your anger in here better you investigate who were the killers that killed Yao Yao's mom." at beside Hei Yan Long coldly said, taking a deep breathe.

Inside the house, all of sudden deathly quiet, everyone is showing gloomy expression, and then, everyone can feel that the death of Yao Yao's mother, really too strange!!

"That's right, Zi Xuan, didn't you catch any of those killer, asking whose men they are?"

Heard Hei Yan Long question, Ou Yang Zi Xuan confused blinking his eyes few times: "During that time the situation was at chaos, we were focusing to protect Deng Zu Ye, there was no thought to catch any of the killer?"

"Oh my God....." Hei Yan Long who is standing beside helplessly hit his own forehead, coldly rolled his eyes.

"Yan Long, what Zi Xuan said not wrong. Under that circumstances, the priority was protecting Yao Yao's uncle, moreover on the way heading to the secure place, the killers were showing up, simply to say could not different who is whose men." Said Feng Chen Yi coldly after keep silent for this time.

"In the middle on the way, the killers showing up?" Hei Yan Long black eyes are flashed, at the moment he changes his look to Yao Yao who keeps on lowering her head: "Actually what problem that your family get involved with, after all could attract so many killers?"

Doesn't know what to say, now Yao Yao head is in mess, without any reason how could there are so many killers keep showing up?

"Sst.... If the other party purpose to do eliminating, why didn't they kill your ex-girlfriend, Chen Yi?" Hei Yan Long's face at sudden shown questionable expression after he done, his face looks not too good while pair of his hand is enveloped his in front: "During at the cemetery, your ex-girlfriend was alone when walking out from there, but there was no one coming with attention to attack her."

Regarding to this point, Feng Chen Yi also curious, that cold pair of eyes are slowly looking at Yao Yao who standing beside him.

"I don't know, I also don't know why they were coming after for my mother, my grandpa, even my uncle who always staying overseas, but why they didn't come after me?"

"That's right, Perhaps there is somewhere we can investigate as the first!" suddenly, Ou Yang Zi Xuan who keeps silent for this time spoke.

Everyone is looking at him.

"If the underworld society is dividing into A, B, C classes, it can be said that the A class (level/grade) underworld group must have their own killer group. Like our country underworld group, there are only four groups that have this right, it divided into four, starting from the fourth rank, Qing Hu Group, the third rank Chi Long Group, the second Zhu Yue group and also my mother's group Xuan Wu group!"

Qing Hu's group? It seems a familiar name, it seemed that group belonged to Young Master Chong's father, the person she met when she worked at the Bar before, but it had eliminated by Yu Long group!

Exclusion of suspicion!

Regarding that Chi Long Group's big boss, wasn't he a man that kidnap Li Mei

Yun before? According to Yu Ao Tian's character, he must have eliminated them too!

Keeps on exclusion of suspicion!

And about Ou Yang Zi Xuan's mother group there is no any possibilities, then it left.... "Zhu Yue Group!

Must be Zhu Yue group!" Yao Yao said with firmness.

But Hei Yan Long who is standing beside her immediately nodding his head: "It wasn't Zhu Yue's Group."

"Why not? Perhaps this is way of Shang Yun Yin to revenge on me, by killed all my family member?"

That's right, forget that.... Hei Yan Long is Shang Yun Yin's God-Brother.

"Hey, women! It not because of Shang Yun Yin and then I disagreed with your way of thinking. But not long ago, Yu Long Group had eliminated Zhu Yue Group, moreover, it was me personally sent Shang Yun Yin to Yu Ao Tian's hands. You as Yu Ao Tian's woman must understand him very well, at least you have a picture how Shang Yun Yin's life would be?"

"....." Did Yu Ao Tian even Zhu Yue Group also being eliminated by him? Furthermore, Shang Yun Yin would be.....

She, does not dare to make further thought about it!

Due to that man heartless character, impossible Shang Yun Yin's life would be ended good.

When Yao Yao is drawn into her own thought, Feng Chen Yi coldly glared at Hei Yan Long.

Without he realized, because of Hei Yan Long words 'You as Yu Ao Tian's woman' it has provoke Feng Chen Yi turned to be unhappy!

"Oh yeah, there is also Yu Long Group! Although, in China Yu Long Group always keeps on being low profile, but due to their position in Japan they must have their own killer group."

Toward Ou Yang Zi Xuan guessing, Yao Yao can give affirm answer, Yu Long

Group indeed has their own killer group, moreover the person who shoulder and become the leader of killer group is Han Li Shang.

"But Yu Long Group is impossible." it is obviously Ou Yang Zi Xuan is more cunning and smarter than Hei Yan Long little bit, when he said about this he only glances at Yao Yao for while and then say nothing more.

"Zi Xuan, when Deng Zu Ye hit by bullet, do you still remember what you said before?" Feng Chen Yi coldly said.

"What words that I said before?" Ou Yang Zi Xuan is seriously analyzing, not long after that, he curled his hand into fist: "That's right! I said, the other side sniper is world class expert, being able to fire a shot during that chaos situation, really awesome! My Xuan Wu group does not have someone like that expert."

"Since it is world class expert, must be not many.... You, do you know who are they?"

Listened to Feng Chen Yi words, Ou Yang Zi Xuan admires said: "Chen Yi, you are so awesome, after all you can start from the most basic thing. If the person is world class expert, gather all of them are about more or less ten persons, 8 are overseas and two in China."

"Then who are those two persons in China?"

"One of them are Berson Group CEO Han Li Shang, When he was young he had award-wining on overseas, his shooting skill is so accurate! As for another person is government employees, already changed name, I also don't know."

"If exclude Yu Long's group, exclude the government employee as the sniper, heh, this time the range quite wide. Chen Yi, it seems that your ex-girlfriend's family also have matter with government's side." said Hei Yan Long.

Who knows, again it makes Feng Chen Yi gives him another cold glance.

Indeed, during this time even joking, actually really not fit the situation.

"All of you don't need to worry my matter." when everyone is talking, Yao Yao who keeps on calm attitude standing up, giving deep bow one time to three of them: "This debt of gratitude, I will remember it, if someday need my help, I will pay it in double. Others...." her eyes are looking at Feng Chen Yi: "Please help me



## **Chapter 316**

## The Truth about Hua Mei Villa's case (I)

The ghastly demolish building, the one and only——— a fairly well kept room was shining bright.

"It is only here, you see, are you satisfied with it?" Feng Chen Yi is pointing at the room which shinning brightly.

Yao Yao glances a moment, satisfied she nodding her head: "Satisfied, thank you."

This is the last favor that she asked from Feng Chen Yi!

'Please help me to choose one secluded place, moreover it has sole IP address internet access, and then— prepare one computer.'

This place is located in a very remote area, everything just fit as Yao Yao wanted. "Chen Yi, immediately leave."

"What do you want to do?"

She silent for moment, expressionless she said: "Can I explain everything about my matter later after I done with it? You leave first okay, also don't guard the door and wait for me. Okay?" she is using heavy begging speaking tone, now the thing that she wants to do, absolutely 'dangerous', she just does not want to make Feng Chen Yi to get involved.

"Okay, I understand." although little bit worry, but Feng Chen Yi still chooses to respect Yao Yao, leaving this place.

She slowly walking inside the secluded room, sitting in front of the computer, faster she hacked the operator system.

Note: Starting the next chapters I will post one paragraph earlier before make full translation post, I have reason to do so and I hope your understanding. Thank you for visiting my blog <a href="http://www.azurro4cielo.wordpress.com">http://www.azurro4cielo.wordpress.com</a> and feel free to leave the comment on comment box ^-^

#### **Chapter 317**

## The Truth of Hua Mei Villa Case

'Oh yeah, there is also Yu Long Group! Although, in China Yu Long Group always keeps on being low profile, but due to their position in Japan they must have their own killer group.'

'One of them are Berson Group CEO Han Li Shang, When he was young he had award-wining on overseas, his shooting skill is so accurate'

'Don't kill me! Don't kill me!!'

Her eyes is gazing at the computer program code, but early Yao Yao's mind has thought about another thing.

Yu Long group has it's own killer group, Han Li Shang has awesome sniper skill. Perhaps, this cannot be any evidence those killers were coming from Yu Long Group.

But when uncle being taken by Feng Chen Yi, why he showed fear expression when looking at Yu Ao Tian?

Could it be another possibilities, he was not begging Yu Ao Tian to safe him; but..... He was begging Yu Ao Tian not to kill him?

Could it be the two mysterious persons who were coming over uncle's house, why they hiding from her when she entered to inside?

Did they afraid she see Yu Ao Tian as one of them?

Does not want!

She really does not want to make a guess that person as Yu Ao Tian, but why this matter is pointing to him?

It is okay, Yu Ao Tian, I believe you are not the person who killed my mother, aren't you? Must not you, right?

Very soon, very soon it will give the result!!!

'brush' at sudden, an encoding program on computer screen.....

A web page that regarding government secret files (internal section of country file) appears in front of Yao Yao's eyes.

The fire case of Hua Mei Villa.....

When she is typing the words her hand keeps on trembling.

Remembered that time, when she was checking about this case in internet, she didn't get anything; when browsing on overseas internet, she also didn't get anything. It seems as if a secret case, since the case seems to be secret case, then it must be kept on the nation international confidential section.

But not long after that, Long Qi said it was only misunderstanding, so she stopped to continue check on it.

But this time, her feeling tells her..... If the fire case of Hua Mei villa didn't have any relationship with her father, then the killers who killed her mother must not Yu Ao Tian, absolutely not! Absolutely not!

'Shua La' (a swishing sound)

The new web page is showing up, but Yao Yao's eyes are avoiding to see it.

Why does not dare to look at it? Is it because afraid of the evidence, that Yu Ao Tian was the person who killed her mother?

Hasn't she told herself, must believe on him! Must believe on him! It absolutely not did by him! Must not him!

Her eyes once again look at the computer screen, Yao Yao's hand is slightly trembling when moving the mouse......

The Case of Hua Mei Villa.

Victim: The Ex-Prime Minister Qi Lian Hao and Yu Yi Ting; Prime Minister First Son.... Qi Lian Ao Tian, The Second Son is Qi Lian Ao Yun....

'woosh'

At the moment, when she read that few words those victims, At sudden Yao Yao's small face is changed white pale, paler!

Qi Lian Ao Tian? Yu Yi Ting?

Yu.... Ao Tian?

He..... He is Ex-Prime Minister's..... Son?

No wonder, there is no trace of the man as some who born from ordinary background, he has elegant manner, even when talking he is bringing such elegant aura, even when he smiles he as king's attitude with him. So how could he as someone who come from an ordinary background alike little scoundrel?

'Ao Tian, Do your goal only want to be congress member?'

'My goal is Prime Minister position!'

That time, Yao Yao was doubting whether this man was joking or serious with her, but now she is absolutely affirmed that Yu Ao Tian must be serious, because his father was the person who ever rule this country before!

'Actually the Deputy Prime Minister this position is still available, as long as Yu Ao Tian can prove that he has relationship with three generation government officials, he can go for the election.'

'Oh, Then Yu Ao Tian already had it. Haha, I just joking.'

It wasn't, it seems that time Long Ye Ge Ge wasn't joking, it was he slipped when said it.

'Ao Tian, since the Japanese side such value and weighing you, why don't you go for the Japanese election?'

'I don't like Japan, this reason, can I?"

Ha, so that time when he gave her an answer, he actually prevaricated her, of course he must to be this country high official, because this country is belonging to his Qi Lian family, isn't it?

Still.... Still, the burn waist scar on his back, remember the first time when taking bath together, Yao Yao didn't have any intention to look at it but because had seen it she asked him. But she won't ever forget, that time he used such cold eyes staring at her.

Not recalling the memory, that kind of painful memory being opened, he must

only have hatred! And then about the burn scar on Yu Ao Tian's waist, it must be something that related to the Hua Mei Villa fire case, that scar must from that incident, right?

Everything, all the mysteries seem to be revealed the truth.

When both of them know not long before, Yu Ao Tian has obviously showed his intention to engage in political, this purpose, his reason is, as long as he goes for the highest political position and then he can have everything he wanted.

Perhaps, this is only one side, while the other sides.....

Does Yu Ao Tian only want to take all the things back which belong to Qi Lian's, doesn't he?

Yao Yao is laughing bitterly, while she does not understand why she can feel this bitter, she only feels that her heart is so hurt, does it because she never understand not even little bit about this man, even until today?

Perhaps, if that time she knew about Yu Ao Tian's background, he in her heart could his image become blurred, become more stranger.

The mouse keeps moving, scrolling down.....

#### 318

As I promised, I will post two long chapters. Thank you for your understanding with my little bit confusing posting. It indeed annoying and uncomfortable moreover, tiring because you must come, check and do refreshing. But, if you 'subscribe' by clicking follow button, there will be notification every time I update my blog.

# **Chapter 318 (Three One Eight)**

### The Thorny Kiss (I)

Handling affairs: Zeng Kai Rui, Luo Tian Ming, Zhao Zhi Cheng.....

In the name list they are six names!

While one by one of the six names, those names even wider Yao Yao's eyes!

She remembered Zhao Zhi Cheng, he was Ao Mei Group's chairman, that time when she realized Ao Mei Group's working contract had problem she even reminded Yu Ao Tian about it.

But who knows, at blink of eyes Zhao Zhi Cheng had died, because this matter she had quarreled with Yu Ao Tian for sometime. Anger herself, wasn't it because of her so busy doing so that she made Zhao Zhi Cheng's death.

Now think it carefully.... Hahahaha, although she didn't realize that working contract had problem, didn't Zhao Zhi Cheng still die?

Of course, Zhao Qing Kong, this name still fresh in her memory, in her memory Zhao Qing Kong was Zhao Zhi Cheng's daughter, because she pregnant, she came to find Yu Ao Tian, Her womb even being taken by Yu Ao Tian. Yao Yao was frighten to the point she pee on her pant, so ridiculous.

Now after she thinks it carefully, Yu Ao Tian is really heartless toward this woman, simply......

Because Zhao Qing Kong was Zhao Zhi Cheng's daughter!

Others there still one name, she really had deep impression, this person was Jiang Cheng Group's chairman, his company had acquisition by Yu Ao Tian, his employees even jumped down from building and then died, while the Chairman disappeared without any trace. Perhaps, he had killed by Yu Ao Tian, right?

Regarding the other two names, she is also not stranger for their names, they are two chairmen whose company recently being acquisition by Berson Group.

While one of them who is most familiarized that she could not be any familiarized is Zeng Kai Rui, this name has been countless times being brought by Yu Ao Tian, at same time countless time being said with same hatred eyesight whenever talked about Vice Prime Minister. So that, because he was one of the person who responsible to investigate about Hua Mei Villa case!

And the last, the person was father!

13 years ago father died because of car incident so that his death was nothing with Yu Ao Tian, because during that time Hua Mei Villa case just happened, that year Yu Ao Tian must be about 15 years old, during that time he was no capability to kill anyone.

So that....

So that....

After 13 years later, because her father had died, Yu Ao Tian killed her mother to vent his anger, wanted to kill her grandpa to vent his anger, come to kill her family only to vent his anger, is it his purpose?

But why, Yu Ao Tian doesn't touch her? Is it because time not yet arrived, or.... He has not been playing enough?

'tick, tick,' the big bead of tears flowing down from Yao Yao's eyes, and slowly down to her keyboard, she feels as if her heart being digging out by something and it feels so hurt.

She thought, she thought slowly by slowly she and he would be familiarized, both of them can be friend, an even both of their relationship can beyond friend.

But the fact proven, she staying beside Yu Ao Tian is only taking role as little clown, that's all.

As if a stupid little pig, every day the owner feed her food, also not asking her to do anything, other than eat, sleep, hardly realized, waiting until the time is arrived, the owner will be coming to slaughter her!

Such ridiculous comparison, but isn't it a fact?

Now she is little bit envy with Zhao Qing Kong, at least she could have cleared break up with Yu Ao Tian. Why didn't Yu Ao Tian treat her alike Zhao Qing Kong, killed her earlier at one time.

Oh..... Perhaps..... Isn't it because she not enough being suffered? Does he want to see Luo Tian Ming's daughter slowly by slowly suffering alike living in the hell?

He is such merciless man!

Well, why Yu Ao Tian could still treat her good and sincere before? That kind of kindness, it not mixed with any profit driven, it simply only a naive kindness toward her.

Or perhaps, this is only the thing that she willingly to think that way?

Heart, gradually becoming sour, Yao Yao does not understand, why at this moment, when all the evidence is pointing at Yu Ao Tian's, this moment, she does not have any impulsiveness to kill him right now, but why only a heartache? Her heart hurt as if being pierce countless times!

If being replaced by other person, a stranger, her heart must be hatred, impossible to feel aching!

The pain alike, as if her heart being torn, she keeps scrolling down the computer screen, scroll down the mouse.....

Qi Lian Hao has greedy heart compare to ordinary people, repeating to overthrow of the public interest into political meeting, has intention to restore constitutional monarchy, wanted to rule the country, therefore purposely on behalf country name to provoke war between two countries by kidnapped other country's heir, to take benefit from this in order to accomplish his own ambitions. Just then founded out by other officials, diplomat negotiations, Qi Lian Hao wicked attitude brought to surface, to appease the war between other country and our country (China).

Between the influence and political status of Qi Lian Hao, the state key officials unanimously decided to adopt a low profile approach, given the task to be settled by Vice Prime Minister Zeng Kai Rui, Official Zhao Zhi Cheng and others to do!

When Yao Yao read until the reason of Qi Lian Hao death, on surface it is abnormal calm, but more or less she knows the internal conflict of political matters. Someone alike Qi Lian Hao who had high political status, can only be executed in the form of an accidental death, and then, silently disappearing from this earth.

There are common in the news reported, that, and that officials are having incident, that, and that official unfortunately died because of severe sickness, aren't they?

Some the contents are real, but some..... Only political approach that done by the insider.

Just never thought, Zhao Zhi Cheng and others were politician before, and then later they resigned from their post in the government, escape to the business world?

Yao Yao takes deep breath from her runny nose, when she wanted to shut down the internet, she found out there still another file......

The mouse keeps on scrolling down.

Qi Lian Hao was kidnapping Ya Si Lan Guo (Aslan Country), Pricess Lan Er Shan, Prince Ao Ni Ken and the country heir Lan.....

'Shua La, Shua La....' (Swooshing sound)

When Yao Yao still wanted to read little bit more about all the case regarding to Hua Mei Villa case suddenly there are heavy footsteps of few people who getting into the building.

"Ha, come so fast!!!!" unhappily she creased her forehead, quickly she shut down the computer, and also wipe dried her tears, her expression is cold when looking at the door way.

"Miss, we are from the Nation Intelligence Service. Please you come with us!"

#### \*\*

#### **Nation Intelligence Service Office.**

Yao Yao was hacking Government internal and also secret archives, likely to use unknown IP address to break into government IP address, instantly when the

computer of the Nation Intelligence Service Officer got the report, then they are looked for the 'hacker' IP address and then come to arrest.

This is the reason why Yao Yao wanted Feng Chen Yi to find secluded place and also asked him to leave immediately.

"Are you Miss Luo, aren't you? Now we have reason to suspicious you as other country espionage!" inside the investigation room, two officers with no expression sitting in front of Yao Yao.

She sneered, she even asked them back: "You guys thought I am as espionage?"

"Miss Luo, impossible for you do not know what kind of web page you have browsed before?"

"Oh...." Yao Yao nodding her head, helplessly she shrugging her shoulder: "Just because of this, all of you suspect me as other country espionage?"

"Miss Luo, are you trying to deny?"

"It is not I wanted to make a denial. But it is the fact, I just too careless and without I realised, I have browsed to that web page, if all of you are suspected me because of this and then thought me as espionage, all of you are just treating me too unjustly." Yao Yao is pretending to make difficult expression and pouted her mouth, but her eyes are filled with provoking gleam.

"Then why you used such secluded place to do your business?"

"Huh? Don't you think that your question is little bit weird? Wherever the place I want to do my business it is my matter, not to mention regarding why I used such remote building do my business, even if I willingly to do my business at vast ocean, there is nothing of you guys business?" when she said this words, Yao Yao really wanted to give herself two slaps on her own face, why didn't she ask Feng Chen Yi to help her to get a boat, and doing this kind of matter in the vast of ocean? By that way she would not being arrested by them?

But..... Better to forget it, think it carefully, it is too expensive to do so.

"Miss Luo, our colleagues have investigated about your profile, you are the person who have IQ 200 above, one from the rare group person, right?"

## 319

The chapters are getting darker and sadness, the plot isn't happened only to Yao Yao – Yu Ao Tian – Feng Chen Yi, but at same time to Han Li Shang – Gong Xiao Man.....

Prepare your tissue box.....

# **Chapter Three One Nine (319)**

#### **Thorny Kiss (II)**

"That's right, and so what?"

Seeing the way how Yao Yao provoke them, the officers who are in shift smiles with hatred: "Then you absolutely know that your action, the operation system can break into the web pages of our country's secret files! You are doing it by intentionally!"

"Aiya...." Yao Yao is smiling and also pointing her fingers to the investigators: "Words cannot be spoken that way. My IQ is above 200 which something that I could not control, an according to your meaning, our country's science and technology protection actually is not enough to withstand the invasion of people with IQ higher than 200? If really this is the case, don't you think that there is even no reason to arrest me? Must go to Parliament House, ask them to make changes toward the science and technology for the Nation, also beware with people who have high IQ? Geez, really useless!!"

"You!!!!"

"Alright!" Yao Yao hurried changed her smile expression into cold, said: "You guys said that I am espionage, and also it begins with suspicious, so that, I have right to ask for protection!"

"Who is the person you want to be guarantor? Say out the contact person."

"I want...." when she said halfway, Pair of Yao Yao eyes are gleaming, coldly said: "Ask Congress Yu Ao Tian to come as my guarantor."

"MF her, this little girl is so outrageous!" two investigators who responsible to make investigation are going out from investigation room with face that fume in rage: "You say, both of our mouth cannot win over that little girl's mouth? Really

so hateful!!"

"Huh, there is reason why she can such outrageous."

"What her reason to do so? Doesn't it because she has IQ above 200, that special right, that's all?"

"You read carefully, the below of her data." after said, that investigator helplessly handed over the profile data from his hand to the other investigator's hand.

This anger investigator took a glance: "World Class Lawyer, advance level? She is..... That world class lawyer? Just that little girl?"

"En, she is not only world class lawyer, but she also the person who had secure our congress Yu position in Parliament!"

"Ugh..... So she was that person being rumor in our department, the lawyer of last time, is she that person? Ha, really never thought, this little girl is someone so awesome."

"That's right, not expected right, dare to be such outrageous? Hurried, go and contact Congress Yu to guarantee her out."

"En."

Reckon also need more or less about an hour, waiting until Yu Ao Tian received the phone call and settle everything and then hurries he rushing to Nation Intelligence Service office.

"Congress Yu."

"Congress Yu." the investigators are giving respect bowing to Yu Ao Tian while greeting him.

He politely nodding toward them, coldly said: "where's she?"

"Immediately being bringing here." not long after that, the staffs are taking

Yao Yao out from the investigation room.

Take a simple procedure, she and Yu Ao Tian are sitting on the same national intelligence service office room, for whole process these two persons are not having any communication, even there is no eye contact from both of them.

The car is stopped at the Government's office entrance, Yu Ao Tian directly walking to his car.

"Wait wait." Suddenly, Yao Yao stopped him by pulling his arm.

Turned his head, Yu Ao Tian bottomless pair of eyes are coldly looking at her, that kind of exuded expression able to freeze oneself.

"Bring me to your home."

"I don't have time. You go back to your home by yourself."

Hah, this kind of cold manner of Yu Ao Tian really out of her prediction, remembered not long ago after her mother passed away, this man even came to her school to look for her, right? Both of them were almost fight.

Why now, that sort of 'passionate' had disappeared? Is it because this public place? Or perhaps, there is not peace at his heart?

"It won't take much of your time, Ao Tian, just half an hour." Yao Yao is trying hard to stay alike usual speaking tone, but she cannot smile, not even the forceful smile, she also cannot do it.

Yu Ao Tian thinks for moment: "Get into car." this is because he forced himself to ask Yao Yao to get into his car.

"Congress Yu, where to go?" inside the car, other than the driver there is also a secretary. She only can take a seat beside the driver.

"Hua Mei road, number 308."

"Yes."

On the way, Yu Ao Tian mobile phone constantly ringing, it can be felt that the current him are especially busy! Super busy! Secretary who sits beside him constantly keeps on writing something, this cannot make Yao Yao not to think of, her father who was Prime Minister's secretary, could he also this busy?

The car arrived at the destination in a moment.

Both of them are getting down from the car one in front one at back.

When they are arrived at the Villa entrance, Yao Yao unconsciously paused her footstep.

Hua Mei road.... Hua Mei Villa....

'Brother, where are you?'

'At home!'

'Which one?'

'Our father and our mother's place they used to live before.'

Hah, this must be Hua Mei villa address, right? Yu Ao Tian must be bought this abandoned building?

No wonder he likes this place utmost, because this place has his childhood memory, has his past!

Really cannot understand, after all he hates so much those who killed his father and mother, but why he brought her to this place? Not understand, isn't her coming only to dirty the place belongs to his father and mother?

Walking inside to the place where Yu Ao Tian stays, carefully counting this place almost more than month Yao Yao never coming. But things still similar on the day she left, it seems that Yu Ao Tian also never come back to this place, right?

Tea cups, plates, bowls and others. Everything just too familiar for her.

It can be said, this place, during the days she stayed together with Yu Ao Tian it so less to find any bad memory about them, furthermore it has many beautiful memories.

But so regretful.....

It was before she knew the truth!

"What's matter?" Yu Ao Tian is loosening his necktie on his neck, expressionless he sits down on the sofa.

Yao Yao is slowly walking in front of him, using a stranger eyesight to look at him: "Why you act such cold toward me?"

"Haven't you known it?"

She knows it? What must she know? Should she know that he is the person who killed her mother?

Endure! Endure! This is not the time to explode. She makes fist from her hand: "Why don't you ask me why I got arrested by the national intelligence officers?"

When Yao Yao asked this question, Yu Ao Tian's pair of eyes are only having cold gleam, and then he keeps silent.

Why don't ask!

Ask!

By this way she can keep on talking!

The hatred in her heart suddenly intensified, she dashed alike an arrow into Yu Ao Tian in front.

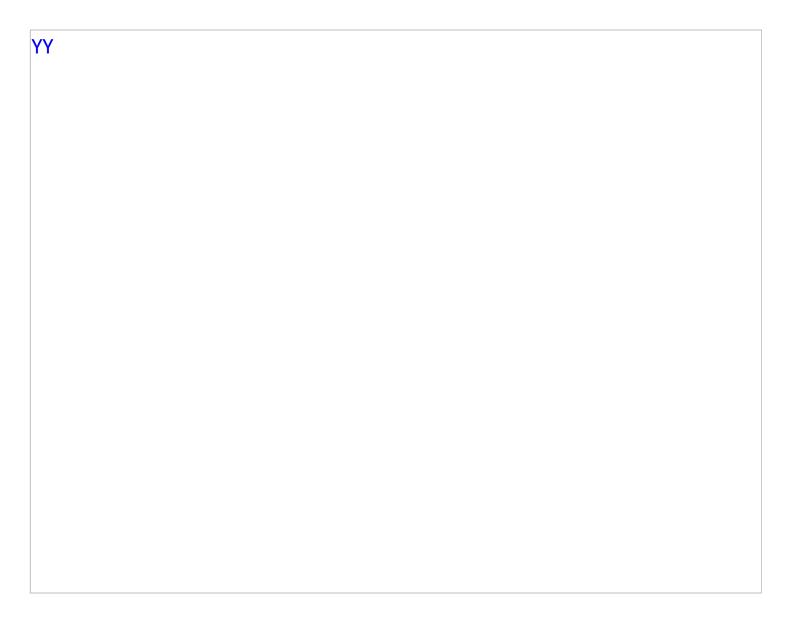
When he hasn't had any reaction, he only can feel nice fragrance overflowing from her lips that pressed down to his lips.

So obviously, dealing with this type of sudden kissed, Yu Ao Tian is little bit shocked, that bottomless pair of eyes wide-opened, in his memory, others than when this Little Thing drunk, this is her first time to take an initiative to kiss him first!

Finally, the emotion that being suppressed by Yu Ao Tian for this time, exploding, there is man's\*\*, but at same time it also has angered feeling regarding Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi!

But this moment, he just wanted to enjoy this kiss!

### 320



### **Chapter 320**

## It hasn't started but it has ended

Slowly close pair of eyes. Although feel it is not enough, he moves and takes an initiative, one hands is holding her waist, using his tongue to pry-open her teeth, and then intertwine with her small tongue together.

Just at this time, Yao Yao opens her eyes, her bead tears just at this moment falling down to her cheeks.

Never thought, staying together with this man for such long time, although

she never take any initiative to kiss him first, but her kissing skill has changed to be skillful.

From Yu Ao Tian steady breathe until his rough breathing, it can be an evidence, Yao Yao kissing is an aphrodisiac (addictive)!

One of the man's free hand is stroking to above her waist, Yao Yao creased her forehead, but there is no refusal gesture. Allowing him to do so, she stroking into the inside suit by her small hand.

An instantaneously, Yu Ao Tian has already could feel something!

His big hand is pressing down her small hand, faster open pair of his eyes.

When he facing that pair of eyes which filled with hatred, Yu Ao Tian pushed her away....

The petite figure stumbled backwards for few steps, hah, the man really has such strong observant capability, as if at the very short time can feel on something, but regretful....

She stills succeed to take a gun from him!

The hand that holding the gun slowly lifting up.

Yu Ao Tian does not have any panic expression, moreover he even showing his devilish smile: "Little Thing, do you know what are you doing?"

"You must know what I am intending to do."

"Is it about you hacking the government internal internet (intranet)?"

"That's right! You guess, What I have read?"

Looking at Yao Yao who smirking, Yu Ao Tian only gives a cold humphed, he crossed his leg freely: "So that, is this your answer?"

"This is because you force me to do, Yu Ao Tian! You force me! I have said, if you dare to harm my family, I will definitely not letting you off!!!" angrily she roared inside that warm room, listened to it really not suitable.

Even Yao Yao can feel that her roaring sound has already messed this house warmness and also her beautiful memory, but, she does not have any option!

"It seems that I must use same way to ask you, with what capability you won't

let me off?"

what....

Capability.....

Talking about underworld, she cannot! Business world, she cannot! Now, Yu Ao Tian's position in government is weight highly, with what should she fight with him? With what must she take revenge for her mother.

Hah, that's right, Yu Ao Tian is giving good question. The today's he is someone who as strong as a big mountain, while her.... She is only a little stone, isn't she?

"Are you looking for Feng Chen Yi? No wonder, for this time you are getting so close with him." when Yu Ao Tian said this his face is showing provoke smile, but his heart is gloomy since that day, the scenery which displayed by the electronic screen.

"Hah, you are reminded me, Yu Ao Tian. It seems that I can look for Feng Chen Yi's help!"

Suddenly, Yu Ao Tian is curled his hand into tight fists, his sexy lips is curved up, looked alike sinister:

"Just like become my lover, will you also go to be his lover too?"

"That is my freedom!!!"

"Freedom? Hah, Little Thing, don't forget, although our lover contract had torn, but the debt you owed me, there's still there."

That's right. That debt still there, always been there!

She cannot leave him, it is because she cannot pass the obstacle in her heart, because she stills owed him. But this moment! She really cannot keep calm herself down and using calm attitude to deal with this debt! "Money, I will think the way to pay you back. But people's life, when will you pay me back?"

"People's life? What's people's life?" Yu Ao Tian titled his head aside, he laughed with disdain expression.

"Yu Ao Tian, you still pretending! Your father was someone ambitious! Your father was intending to change the government rules, being found out by the government, so being executed it was something served his right!! What right

for you to revenge, all of that was served your father right! Served his right!!!"

When Yao Yao anger is roared, Yu Ao Tian's face that showing smile expression suddenly changed and replaced with gloomy expression. Alike, the reaper who is going to take any soul, it sent a chills up to the spine.

"Little Thing, you say it once more!!!"

"This is the fact, Yu Ao Tian! It was your father who deserved to die!!!"

Suddenly, Yu Ao Tian standing up in fast pace.

"Don't move!!!!!!!" pair of Yao Yao hands are holding the gun, simply pointed the gun right into his heart position.

"Hah." with a gloomy smile that shown, Yu Ao Tian slowly raised his hand....

'creak, creak'

One by one the gun bullet is falling from his hand, when it hits the floor it makes crisps sound.

Yao Yao cannot believe open her eyes wide, and then she takes a glance on the gun holding by her hands.....

Since when? Since when Yu Ao Tian has removed all the bullets from the gun?

Think it carefully, it seems on the moment when she took the gun, Yu Ao Tian pressed down her hand, just on that short time?

After all he able to remove the bullets, why didn't he take the gun away too?

He is really unreadable man, just at this moment, once again Yao Yao feels as if a monkey, she is fooled by this man until she injured for her whole body.

"Yu Ao Tian, although you are not removed all the bullets, today I will not kill you with this thing." Yao Yao expressionless tossing away that gun, this is effortless thing, she won't use this kind of dirty thing to kill this kind of man.

"Hah, so what will you do in order to take revenge?"

"I will use all my will and my utmost to take all yours! Yu Ao Tian, although the politician status is something you got by yourself. But.... I will have way to pull you down from where you from!!! We, let see and wait!" after said, her face is dimmer and then leaving this place where filled with many of her good

memories.

"Hah." when Yu Ao Tian is alone inside the room he is helplessly shaking his head, bend down his body and then pick up the gun, slowly walking to the window.

At the moment when that petite figure is walking out from the villa door.

His pair of eyes are dimmed, lifting his gun, he has accurately locked that figure.

But.....

Until Yao Yao disappeared from his vision line, there is no firing from the gun.

"Should I kill you, Bao Bei. But...." he kept the gun, turned his back, half of his body is leaning to the rail's veranda, lonely said: "Cannot do it. Hahahaha...."

One faint smile, as if showing his determination, the heartless man is weighing feeling (love), this lonely side.

It was not long before, if not because Yao Yao took her last effort to prove her innocence, she perhaps had died inside the cold pool.

But now, he cannot do it! Even when he heard when she insulted his father, even to hit her, he could not do it anymore!

Yu Ao Tian is heartless man, he could do everything to those who offend him without spare them, not even give any chance.

He is also cold blood man, dealing and facing with pities bitter begging, facing with others family to beg for mercy, he won't give any mercy!

But, in front of this Little Thing, his cold blood, his heartless just disappearing like that without any traces.....

Is it because of that scar?

Seemingly, for long time his focus is not at that scar anymore. It just, he hasn't realized it.

Beautiful memory, it had messed and ruined because the web.

Still leaning on the rail's of the veranda, that man good looking face is showing

strange expression at the moment and also seems to be lonely, lonely....

Perhaps, Luo Yao Yao who leaving since this day, smashed and thrown all the past they ever had, at same time she also taking that man's heart that not long ago just start beating......

## **Chapter 321**

### **Debt paid to Yu Ao Tian**

Sky, under the rain of snow, it going to be melt whenever hit the body, it's make people don't know whether it is snow or rain.

Nose, the air of breathe is forming a faint misty. It is only a November but the feeling is alike winter already, the cold pierce bones.

In the street, seeing the crowd stream of people never stops flowing, Yao Yao's vision line is turned to be blurred.

The street in front, as if falling into the confusion, although she knows her destination, but she does not know how to walk to this path.

So what if she hatred, she blaming, but this cannot change anything regarding she is only a student who own World Class lawyer license!

Does not have client, does not have her own company, this so-called World Class Lawyer license as alike scrap paper.

Things that Yu Ao Tian said before, she could not listen to him, ignoring him, but, there is one thing is true, that is.... The today of her, with what should she fights against him?

'Are you looking for Feng Chen Yi? No wonder, for this time you are getting so close with him.'

Looking for Feng Chen Yi help?

Talking about the status in society, family background, having Feng Chen Yi as her back up to fight against Yu Ao Tian things are indeed could be any easier, moreover Berson and Feng Group have many projects that overlap, so that these two leading groups are bound to start a competition, and the competition is going to be rivalry.

But....

She really cannot go to find Feng Chen Yi and ask him to help her to fight

against Yu Ao Tian.

Even though both of them are already turned to be rival before, she also cannot take that step.

What to do?

'I will use all my will and my utmost to take all yours! Yu Ao Tian, although the politician status is something you got by yourself. But.... I will have way to pull you down from where you from!!! We, let see and wait!'

Hah, thinking about this words Yao Yao really feel such ridiculous, this is no different with big talk.

Now he is in the black path, business world and even politician world, for the whole he has the leading position, she as an ordinary student how could she drag him down from his position?

Really ridiculous..... Such funny.....

Perhaps because tired of walking, Yao Yao footstep is stopped at the street side.

'Yu Ao Tian, although you are not removed all the bullets, today I will not kill you with this thing.'

If, Yu Ao Tian really not removed the bullet, could she really not shoot him?

Does not know, place that belonged to his father, his mother would it be his graveyard too?

Still.....

At last when looking one glance at that house which ever filled with warmness!

\*\*

### First University

"Yao Yao, what was going on yesterday?" one day after the funeral ceremony, Yao Yao is coming to school, Gong Xiao Man can't help herself not to ask her.

"I, I don't know what was going on." she does not know how to tell Gong Xiao Man, her mother is killed by Yu Ao Tian!

"So scary, impossible you have troubled something right? Those men were not people I dare to offend, actually can't you ask Yu Ao Tian to help you."

That's right, this kind of thing even Gong Xiao Man also understand, 'those men' indeed people that she could not afford to offend. "Xiao Man, I don't have any relation with Yu Ao Tian now."

"Hah? Didn't both of you have settle yours status before?"

"It's not. This time, We have ended our relationship!"

"What situation are we in?" after Gong Xiao Man heard it she is dumbstruck, she even thought both of their relationship has already changed to be boy and girlfriend, how could at moment their relationship changed again?

"Xiao Man, It cannot say be cleared at once, You.... Now please don't ask any."

There is a time, when people at the most painful moment indeed they don't want to bring up the unhappy topic, so that Gong Xiao Man understand it, just alike when she talked about Han Li Shang before. "En, I understand. I will wait until the time you want to tell me."

"Thank you, Xiao Man."

For the whole morning classes, basically Yao Yao is spending her time in blank, all her focus and attention are thinking how to drag down Yu Ao Tian! After she thought it, the first target she able to aim is Berson Group.

Once the bell is ringing, Yao Yao is hurrying running out from the classroom.

"Long Qi!"

Since her mother passed away, it is so obvious that Long Qi tries to make distance with her, this is obviously because he is feeling guilty in his heart. "What's matter?" his eyes are avoiding while walking in front of her.

Yao Yao is taking out a cheque from her pocket, and also a key: "This 200 million, also the car that gave by Yu Ao Tian, trouble you to give it to him."

"You?"

"My grandpa hospital fees, adding with the operation fee, I have counted it, it almost 300 million, I still owed him 100 million, while that car which he gave it to

me as his representative lawyer, he gave it to, now the price is about 200 million."

Since the day Yao Yao had owned her world class lawyer, her teacher ever told her that, once you choose your client, unless you are facing financial difficulty, or else you are absolutely cannot reduce your fees, this is just like self appreciation.

So that, Yao Yao when she became Yu Ao Tian's representative lawyer her fees was 180 million, that car and also the representative fees. The other 20 million it is Funeral money given by everyone for her mother funeral ceremony.

"What do you mean by doing this?" Long Qi is surprised when seeing those thing in his hand.

She pursed her lips, slowly said: "You must know it!"

"I....." "Since the

you told me, Hua Mei Villa case was misunderstanding, you must have known that, soon or later my relationship with Yu Ao Tian would have this kind of ending, don't you think so?"

That's right! At very beginning he had predicted about this result, and then, he never thought if this thing happened, he could be this guilty toward Yao Yao. "Sorry... Sorry, Yao Yao....."

"No need to say sorry. I think, that time when you was lying to me, also didn't want me to fight. I understand you, Long Qi." countless time she told herself, Long Qi did for sake her own goodness, for sake of her goodness. But.... Does she really not even blame of Long Qi? That's must be a lie.

If, Long Qi didn't tell lie to her, perhaps at the beginning she would be able to investigate whether the Hua Mei Villa case had relation with her father or not, and then she could strictly protect her mom, perhaps her mom still be able to escape from this obstacle.

But....

Forget it, thing after all has happened, there is useless to blaming others for this matter.

"What will you do in the future? I mean is....between you... And Yu Ao Tian."

Listened to this question, Yao Yao coldly smiles: "If, Yu Ao Tian is the person

who killed your mother, what would you do?" this words, has such simple meaning.

Believe no matter whoever, facing with the enemy who killed own mother will not sit still.

"But... You, you are not Yu Ao Tian's rival!!" Long Qi smiles, this is also the reason why that time he lied to her.

"Hah, move one step, count one step. After all Yu Ao Tian is not a saint, he will have flawed in his every plan too."

That's right! There must be a flaw, anyone must have their own flaw, and the only flaw that he made, helped her mother to revenge, it is the only chance she had!!!!

### 322

Have you prepared your tissue box?

It hasn't started but it has ended, Yao Yao seems come to realise changing of her feeling toward Yu Ao Tian. Since she ever thought she could be more little bit closer to him, little bit understanding his character, little bit......

She even determined to help Yu Ao Tian to reach the highest position as he wanted.

No wonder she was so hurt when she found out the cruel reality stored at the Government Secret Archives, but is it really a reality and truth she looked for?

Yao Yao first step to fight against Yu Ao Tian, who will win?

## **Chapter 322**

The State Administration Of Taxation Office.....

"Miss Luo, I have heard from my secretary, you are World Class Lawyer, does not know what's matter make you come here to find me?"

Several days in row, Yao Yao is living as like death, although she still going to school, but all her head is filled on how to revenge.

It seems that, she actually has one winning chance, it's because she understands better about Yu Ao Tian's background compare to other people, and also she understands more about his company, all about him.

If really thinking to drag him down immediately using his underworld background, it must be impossible!

Since the election that day, learning from the case of Secretary Fu, before his underworld background being exposed, Yu Ao Tian must be prepared to deal with anyone who wanted to disclosure about him.

Well, she still have something about Yu Ao Tian! That is..... "Chief Liu, I want to make report regarding defraud of the revenue, evade the payment of the tax by Berson Group within this two years, this is the data that I have collected, if you are not believing on me, you can ask your men to do the investigation toward Berson Group!"

"Oh? After all there is such case?" after Chief Liu heard it, with anger expression he takes the data which given by Yao Yao, seriously he flipping every pages said: "Miss Luo, you rest assured, Berson Group is Congress Yu's company, this matter I will take serious action to settle it, absolutely won't let any evil member do to harm."

That's right! This is the result that she wanted to see, although Yu Ao Tian has already stepped back as the second layer of Berson Group, but his position as Board of Chairman, once something happen to Berson, he stills will take all the responsible and also the blame!

The first move in order to crush Yu Ao Tian, it must be pulled him down from

his political seat!

"En, trouble you, Chief Liu." leaving the he State Administration Of Taxation Office, the path which vast and hazy in front gradually it seems to have become clear.

So that, Yu Ao Tian isn't someone who cannot to be captured, after all he had done many bad things before, it is impossible to keep everything.

Of course, thing that make Yao Yao feels more unexpected was Chief Liu angry reaction, before she came to State Administration Of Taxation Office, she had thought that perhaps people in State Administration Of Taxation Office might afraid of Yu Ao Tian's position? But it seems now, they are not! Ha, really expecting, this matter can expose to media soon!

"Yao Yao, today you are particularly happy after coming back from outside?" on those in hazed days, Once Yao Yao got back to her dorm, she always pulls by Gong Xiao Man to have a chat.

"Haha, so-so, it just so-so, it's only..... Encountering something that makes me happy little bit."

"Heh? Did you encounter 'flower bloom'?"

"Xiao Man, are you really.... Hoping me to find boyfriend this quickly? Or do you afraid that I won't be able to marry off myself?" Yao Yao unhappily rolled her eyes.

Gong Xiao Man moves her shoulders, being exaggerating said: "Should I worry you cannot marry off yourself? Every day there are always many people who are pursuing you, if say to worry, better I worried myself."

"Geez, Xiao Man, aren't there also many people pursuing you too?"

This Xiao Man, really is!

Actually those people who are pursuing Gong Xiao Man are also those Gao Fu Shuai (Rich handsome man), but it seems other than Han Li Shang, she seems not to see anyone right? Huh, once falling in love with someone, thing is going to be like this, other people might see as black and white, but only oneself that able to see the person loved as colorful.

```
'Ring... Ring... Ring....'
```

When these good fellow sisters are having joyful conversation, suddenly Yao Yao mobile phone is ringing: "Wait a moment, let me have my phone call." when she looked at he mobile phone display screen, her expression is turned to be dimmer.

"What's matter? Yao Yao, who is calling?"

"Nothing, hahaha, nothing." she shook her head with a nervous tension.

"Well, why don't you accept the phone call?"

Accept?

Should 1?

The person who is calling not anybody, the person is Yu Ao Tian!

What does he want? Does he know that she is attacking him, so he is not happy about it?

Forget it! Serve himself, since dares to do, she must dare to shoulder!

She is using her strength to grit her teeth, suddenly she accepts her phone call: "What's matter?"

"Congress Yu, as you see how should I settle all these report data which given by that little girl?"

"Chief Liu, since the person had given you all the data, why do you still ask me how to settle it?"

"That's, well.... Thinking carefully, that little girl must be asked by other company to disparagingly about you, this kind of unhealthy competition is really shameful, the data that she gave, I will destroy it immediately."

From the phone it heard two persons who are having a conversation, one is Yu Ao Tian and the other one is.... From the way he addressing the person, it must be the state Administration Of Taxation Officer, Chief Liu.

Does Yu Ao Tian not carefully dial her phone number? No.... Impossible he did it so this, he must be showing off toward her, isn't he?

According to the process of the Tax Bureau, Chief Liu must ask his men to

investigate Berson account book, not to make phone call or calling Yu Ao Tian to come and tell him everything about these.

And now, he even asked him how to settle it, at the same time even destruct all the data that she gathered for three days, this is really.... Shameless!!

"Congress Yu, later this subordinate still need your care in the future."

"I take my leave first."

"Let me send you off."

"No need."

And then, from the phone there is sound of the door being opened, and then closed door sound.

This time....

"Bao Bei." Yu Ao Tian straightly forwardly talking on his mobile phone. "You have stayed quite long beside me, how could you still not understand the dark side of government employees?"

After listened to voice from mobile phone, that voice is slightly using mocking speaking tone, for once again Yao Yao feels herself turned to be a clown.

All bureaucrats shield each other, this principle she understands. But, she never thought that chief Liu could be such shameless to this point, at the morning he even acted as if someone who filled with righteous, but after afternoon, he immediately called Yu Ao Tian, to help him out!

Bastard, rotten bastard, simply to say they are group of rotten bastard.

Is because she not having any position in political, so that Chief Liu is looking down at her who gathered data?

Is because of Yu Ao Tian politician position is higher, so that the Chief Liu in order to butter him and then sacrifice her?

Chief Liu just does not know, if she and Yu Ao Tian are not knowing each other, his acted to butter him, it is more than enough to make Yu Ao Tian to kill the person who made a report!!!

"Ok, this time indeed I am doing something foolish. But there won't be next

time anymore!"

"Bao Bei, Do you still that you will have another chance?"

Still, will.... Have another chance?

'creak' Yao Yao is hung up the phone call, next moment, she is using her strength to toss away her mobile phone, turned her back and then climb up to her bed and having sadly to miserably crying.

"Yao Yao? What happened to you? What happened to you? Why are you crying?" at her beside is Gong Xiao Man who is shocked to dumbfounded, before she received the phone call she was still alright, but after she hung up the phone call why?

"Hu....." there is no words that able to describe her mood, it alike anger that she could not vent out.

It is obviously the truth is standing on her side, but the reality everything just not fair for her, she just wanted to use play-fair method to crash on Yu Ao Tian, how could it so difficult? Why it is so difficult?

"Yao Yao, you don't cry anymore, actually what was going on, you tell me, okay?" Gong Xiao Man is panicking while advising beside her, but how can she understand the bitter that suppressing Yao Yao and also how it could be ended only in two or three words (cannot be explained)?

## 323

YY FCY	

## **Married Feng Chen Yi**

'Ring.... Ring... Ring...'

The mobile phone that being tossed to bed aside suddenly ringing, Gong Xiao Man suddenly standing up, ranging in fume when accepting the phone call: "You MF who are you?"

"....." on the other side of mobile phone it silent for while, and then followed with cold voice:

"Gong Xiao Man?"

"That's right, it is me. Who MF you are, why you make Yao Yao crying?"

"Where is Yao Yao now?"

After heard that cold voice, Gong Xiao Man angered vented out: "I ask you, why do you make Yao Yao crying!!!"

"I am Feng Chen Yi! Just now it wasn't me who phoned!!!"

".....ugh...." so this phone called is Feng Chen Yi, Gong Xiao Man who is raging in fume immediately cooling down: "She, she is at dorm now."

'Tutts...' followed after she done with her words, the phone is immediately hung up.

Gong Xiao Man who received the phone call is in confusion, if just now wasn't Feng Chen Yi who called the mobile phone, who would.... Be the person?

She is checking on Yao Yao's phone incoming called, once she takes a look, she found out it was Yu Ao Tian!

Her eyes are glancing at Yao Yao who is still crying on her bed, and then she takes a look at the mobile phone monitor that clearly showing up the phone number.

How could Yao Yao crying such miserable after she received a phone call from Yu Ao Tian?

"Which dorm number she stayed?" after hung up the phone called for a while,

Feng Chen Yi coming to First University, since the dorm for female students cannot easily being entered by a stranger, so that he only can contact Gong Xiao Man to pick him to go in.

"At 403."

"Thank You."

Feng Chen Yi is taking big stride, rushing on dorm 403, from the outside the dorm room he could hear bitter crying voice.

Push open the door.

Yao Yao is still on her bed crying, Feng Chen Yi only need two big steps, he has already arrived at bed side: "Yao Yao, what is happened?" he is pulling her up from her bed.

Her white little face is fuming in rage and turned to be so red, very red, that big moist eyes are open wide showing how dissatisfied she is. It can feel that, at this moment she is absolutely! Must be super angry.

"You, why are you coming?" wiping her tears, she asked with sob voice.

"Just don't ask me why I am coming. What happened to you?"

What happened? Did something happen?

No!

If there is Feng Chen Yi nothing impossible to be happened, that's right! There is him, it means everything can be settled! "Feng Chen Yi, I know, you have power, come, help me! No matter what the price is I willing to sacrifice, help me!!" Yao Yao is emotionally grabbed his hands.

But from that no matter what words, Feng Chen Yi at the moment can feel that she must absolutely facing something big, so that her words sound such confusing.

"Yao Yao, you calm down for moment and then tell me what kind of help do you want from me."

"I understand, now it only yours status that able to help me out, really, I can sacrifice everything, you tell me, will you willing to help me or not!!!!"

"Yao Yao!!!! You calm down, you must tell me first what can I do for you, so that I can give you my answer, whether I can help you out or not, okay?"

Feng Chen Yi higher his speaking tone, that cold face is shown panicking expression. He really does not want to see the lost control of Yao Yao, at least, he must know what makes she lost self-control to this point.

"I, want, you to help me, fight against Yu Ao Tian!!!" she is using her strength to sniff and also stop her tears, she is showing weird smile on her face: "Berson and Feng Group have many projects right? So that, soon or later will go opposite way. So that, let me join, I will go against Yu Ao Tian together with you, can I? Can I?"

Suddenly Feng Chen Yi silent.

His cold eyes are straightly seeing her eyes which filled with hatred, and at same time a small face that shown bitterness and also unhappiness. It can feel, something without any turning back is happened between Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian, so that she could lose control over herself!

After a while, his cold face is changed, smiled: "Alright! But.... This time, I don't want to help you freely!"

It's fine to say whether he is put fire and robbing or taking an advantage of person who in perilous state, but six sense told Feng Chen Yi, this perhaps his last chance to keep Yao Yao stayed beside him!

"Didn't I tell you? I can pay at any cost. I can give you everything that I have. Should I become your lover? I can do it. Whatever it is I can! Of course, as long as you okay with me!" It is so obvious because this time failure Yao Yao is such messing up, or else due to her personality she would not say something like this.

Or perhaps, this is the most drastic chances of hers, the last pounce.

After all, the death of her mother, actually it had given her big shock, too much.

"I don't need you to be my lover."

"So what do you want? Say it!" Yao Yao is emotionally half kneeling on her bed, her face is showing crazy smiles which make people feel worry about her, even looking through her eyes for this moment it is dim.

"Marry with me."

"But...." she gave her answer without thinking, but immediately she gained herself back: "What did you say?" that dim eyes suddenly turned to be bright, she is looking at Feng Chen Yi who in front of her with disbelieved eyesight.

"I want you to marry with me! Becomes my wife. Didn't you say that, you can sacrifice at any cost." Feng Chen Yi's face is showing cold expression while speaking with lower intonation, but his face is perfectly serious, there is no slightest joking intention.

"Wait...." panic! Panic! What does she want to say? What she wanted to do? Why did she forget?

That's right, if want to fight against Yu Ao Tian, she must borrow Feng Chen Yi power in order to beat Yu Ao Tian down.

Didn't she think before, no matter what would happen she won't drag Feng Chen Yi? Why at this moment, she still looking for Feng Chen Yi?

Thinking carefully, is it because Yu Ao Tian capability too strong, so she only can look for Feng Chen Yi to help her put!

But, the revenge for her mother death, and also the marriage with Feng Chen Yi are two different things!

"Feng Chen Yi, you, know.... What does marriage mean? This is not a game."

"Of course I know what does marriage mean, but you must remember, both of us ever together before, what did I ever tell you before?"

'I just want to have one marriage for my life time, so that, I will not be so easily to find any woman as my girlfriend, moreover I won't be such easily talking about marriage. But, as long as there is a girl I want, I will take any cost in order to make her to be my wife!!'

It seems that Feng Chen Yi ever told her before?

But.... "I, I ever became Yu Ao Tian's lover." this is an indelible stain, such ridiculous past, after all she even ever became the lover of the person who murdered her mother!

"I don't have any objection."

"Not objection?" lift his eyelids, Feng Chen Yi pair of cold eyes looking at her who after all almost crying because touched.

How could Feng Chen Yi able to say something like that so affirm and resolute? It is okay for him to hesitate, due to his status, his background, why must he choose someone who ever became other people's lover as his wife? "If you can help me, Whatever the cost it takes I willing to sacrifice, but.... Other than marrying you."

"I just want you to marry me!"

#### Note:

I am sorry to trouble everyone, I don't mean to make things become so complicated, but, Thunder and I were doing little bit experiment in order to 'decide' about future translation works. A naive short tempered girl, the password is removed.....

## 324 A

# **Chapter 324**

### Part 1 (One)

# **Everything just too sudden**

"Feng Chen Yi!!! Do you understand or not, you must looking for someone who loves you as your wife, but the person isn't me!" still said it out, still able to say it out loud.

Without any hesitation, she knows this word might hurt Feng Chen Yi, but there is no way, although looking for hundred and thousand reasons to refuse this time marriage, it's only afraid, according to Feng Chen Yi nature it hard to change his will.

And the only way to stop this reason, say it out, perhaps it able to stop Feng Chen Yi.

That time, when she knew about Xiao Qiao and Xia Ren Liang marriage, the first impression she got for Xia Ren Liang is someone despicable. He is clearly not loves Xiao Qiao, but because of other reason he is going to marry Xiao Qiao.

If this moment she because of taking revenge for her mother, agree to marry Feng Chen Yi, isn't she not any different with Xia Ren Lian?

The marriage life, if one of the other party not loving another party it is such something terrible.

And then, since when it started, she does not love Feng Chen Yi anymore?

Hah, she could not remember it. She only knows, that day when her mother passed away, when Feng Chen Yi was showing up in front of her face, the first reaction she gave, this man is as a part of her family 'relative', but he isn't a man that she love!

"It's okay.... You don't need to love me it's okay."

Her face dropped down, she is dumbfounded looking at Feng Chen Yi who face is showing bitter smile in front of her eyes, she dumbstruck for moment. "You, you.... Don't have any objection?"

"That's right! I don't have any objection! It is okay if you don't love me, as long.....I am loving you and that's more than enough!!!" After said, suddenly he pulled Yao Yao into his embraces. "Yao Yao, give me the answer, Yes or No."

I love you....

I love you....

Heaven knows, how many years she has been waiting Feng Chen Yi for this three words?

Since those two years when they were still together, Feng Chen Yi never told her that three words, never told her before, he loves her. But this moment, this 'cheeseparing' man after all he said it out?

But why.....

She not even feel her heart skip beat, contrary she even feels this three words, is something burdensome? "Feng Chen Yi......"

"Yes or no? Yao Yao, as long as you give me Yes as answer, I will give you my utmost to help you fight against Yu Ao Tian!!!" this time, Feng Chen Yi does not give any chance for her to say anything, he only wants to get the answer.

But this answer can it be such easy to choose either yes or no?

That's right, she really needs Feng Chen Yi help so much, she also needs his power to help her to revenge for her mother. But, the premise of marriage, it is fine with her, but how about Feng Chen Yi? Isn't it too unfair for him?

No....

It could not say as unfair!

Both of them ever dating each other before, moreover she ever loved him for

such long time, after marriage, she can slowly to find back the feeling ever loved him before, the courage to love him back, stay together with him forever, isn't this going to work?

Perhaps....

Can she?

Slowly.... Falling in love with... Feng Chen Yi? "I promise you."

"Ha, hahahaha..." at the moment when Yao Yao made her promise, Feng Chen Yi is happily laughing, as if he has found a treasure, tightly hugging onto her.

He is really happy, so happy!

The woman who he has loved for such long time, and then she coming back to his side again. Although....

He knows, this kind of marriage promise is coming from his despicable method. But it is okay, he will slowly let her to love him back, at same time he will give her happiness, perfect and beautiful future....

Chapter 324

# Part 2 (Two)

### **Everything just too sudden**

The next day early in the morning.

This marriage is really coming too suddenly, either toward Feng Chen Yi or Yao Yao, it seems alike a dream.

Yesterday on the moment she nodding her head and gave him the answer, Feng Chen Yi left.

Even until this early on the morning, Yao Yao is still thinking......

Was Feng Chen Yi really coming to here?

'ring ring' (mobile phone ringing sound)

'I have arrived in front of your school entrance.' when this short message read, she finally affirmed that Feng Chen Yi arrival to her place yesterday indeed something real. She.... Indeed also agreed to Feng Chen Yi's marriage proposal. Because, they have made a schedule, they are going to pay visit to Feng Chen Yi's father.

Dressing,

everything is prepared, hurry Yao Yao gets into Feng Chen Yi's car.

"Morning."

A familiar greeting, it is so similar with two years ago, but the only different thing is, this man is maturer compare to two years ago, he is mature lots. For everyday wearing casual and leisure clothes turned to wear formal suit everyday. "Morning."

When the car is starting to move.

"Wait!!" Yao Yao is showing her difficulty expression when pulling his arm: "You.... Don't you want to think more about it again?"

"Did you think that yesterday I was too impulsive

and out of my mind when I asked you to make a choice?"

That's right!

She is even thought that Feng Chen Yi was not only too impulsive and out of his mind yesterday when asking her to make a choice, but she even thought that she was too impulsive and out of her own mind when giving him an answer.

For this entire morning, she

even asked herself hundred and thousand times, does she really want to marry with Feng Chen Yi?

Marriage, after all it is the entire life matter.

Although later in the future she can fall in love back with Feng Chen Yi, but this moment, she only has a feeling alike family toward him, that's all. "Chen Yi, I advise you, please think it all over again."

"Since you were at your 13 years old first time we met, until today, my feeling toward you, it hasn't been changing not even a little bit, it has been six years already, do you think I still need to consider or think about it again?"

Six years.... Hasn't it really

never been changing, not even a bit? But why that time he still with her.....

Forget it! Now, is she still have a right to blame on Feng Chen Yi?

Actually after thinking carefully, doesn't he also like that, since he was still at his 16, until today he is at his 22, it has been six years, but.... Since when that love feeling gradually disappeared.

"Years ago when I asked you since when you felt in love with me, didn't you tell me it was during my third year of Junior High, did you? But how could you change to the first year?"

Looked at her desperate eyesight, Feng Chen Yi gives faint smile, and directly driving the car: "You make your guess, which one is the right ones?"

"How could I know, one moment you change and the other moment you changing again, this time you have changed it when I was at my 13 years old, geez."

"Hah." Feng Chen Yi lifts up his hand, hooked on her shoulder, turned his head, whispered on her ear: "It was during when you were catching cat."

At first time, he only thought this little girl really too cute, he never seen any cute little girl like hers before.

And then on their second encountering, it was the time when Yao Yao begging him to pet the cat. On that moment suddenly his heart was moved by this cute little girl.

Very mystical, he didn't know what he liked from her, but his heart just wanted to keep her to stay at his side, keeps on loving her.

And before, no matter how Yao Yao asked him about this topic, he would always give her such vague answer.

Now he would not do it anymore.....

Because he had done too many things that he didn't mean and hurt her.

If, two years ago, he could treasure this feeling for moment, things wouldn't be like today.

If, two years ago, when he got caught-red handed cheating on her, if he didn't act as if nothing and not care of anything, he would not torment within these two years.

If, after two years later, when he for once again encountered her, not using that kind childish and ridiculous attitude toward her, but he sat and told her carefully, that he stills love her, perhaps both of them would not been circling and then together after such long time.

If..... Two years later, when she was coming to borrow money from him, if he didn't say those hurting words, she..... Perhaps would not been ever become Yu Ao Tian's lover.

So that, starting this day, he wants to tell himself, he won't be ever hurt this woman anymore, if love he will tell her; the best for her is by showing it out.

3	<b>25</b>		

Yao Yao is going to meet her in laws, what do you think Feng Chen Yi's father would react to his second son marriage plan?

# **Chapter 325**

### **Meeting Parent**

"Chen Yi..... Don't you.... Want to know the reason why I want you to help me fight against Yu Ao Tian?" inside the car, suddenly Yao Yao expression turned to be gloomy, she is gazing at the in front street and slowly opened her mouth.

"Is he related to Aunty's death?"

Suddenly turned her head, looking at his face!

So that, has Feng Chen Yi made a guess?

But she still wants to tell Feng Chen Yi clearly. "En, this is a reason why I need your help, I need you to help me to revenge!"

"I know what you want to tell me, there is no need to tell me again. My words still same, it's okay if you are not love me, as long as I love you it is more than enough." after said, he turned his back, he gives her faint smile.

This moment, his smiles as if a knife that piercing into Yao Yao's wounded heart.

Ha, after circling, circling, and still she is coming back to stay at this man's side, if this thing being found faster perhaps it would be better, at least, her heart would not be this hurt.....

Not long after that, the car is parked in front of a magnificent villa.

From a distance, it is looked as if a castle in general, it located in the center of city, in front of it is covered with big yard. As long as people who are passing by this magnificent villa will exclaim 'see, this is Feng's family mansion.'

The mansion which own by Feng's family can be said as one that listed on the top ten villa in the world!

Getting down from the car, the retainer drives Feng Chen Yi's car to the garage.

He is pulling Yao Yao's hand and then walking heading inside, but Yao Yao as if a stiff wooden stick not even moving but stay still at the original place.

"What's matter?"

"I, I feel little bit nervous." after all this is first time for her to meet elders, moreover the first time to talk about marriage, she is absolutely nervous.

"There is no need to be nervous. It is only formality, it's only simple greeting to my father."

Although words said this way, but she is only an ordinary student, Feng's household which type of high status family will they accept her? "If, if, if your father does not agree?"

"As I said, we are only coming to greet, whether he agrees or disagrees there is out of business."

"Ugh...." this is not good.

"Come on, come with me." After said, Feng Chen Yi is forcibly pulling her to enter the inner villa.

"Second Young Master." once the magnificent metal fence of the villa being opened, inside there are about twenty people in maid uniform lowering their head.

Along the entrance to the inner side as seen, it seems alike bottomless an ancient time Rome hall.

This is nothing alike living in mansion, simply to say this is alike living in the palace.

It feels after walking for few minutes finally they arrived at the big hall.

As seen, Feng Chen Yi's father Feng Xiao is sitting on the gorgeous sofa, while beside him is sitting Feng Chen Rui and one beautiful woman.

"Father." Feng Chen Yi slowly walking in, giving respect bowing.

"Un, uncle, hello." Yao Yao is nervously nodding her head.

Feng Xiao only swept Yao Yao one glance, and then his focus only to Feng Chen Yi: "Humph, Chen Yi, if not because you said that you are bringing your girlfriend to meet me, perhaps I don't know how long I must be waited until you come and pay visit to home?"

"Father, as you know, recently company is quite busy, the place that I stayed now is more convenient to go to office."

"Busy! Busy! Your older brother is also working at same company with you, how could I still able to see him at home everyday?"

"Father, you don't keep on nagging Chen Yi, this time he is bringing his girlfriend to here, you must give a little bit face, mustn't you?" At beside Feng Chen Rui is pretending to be good person, that cunning eyesight is slowly looking at Yao Yao: "Eh, Chen Yi, your girlfriend she looks so familiar, ckckck.... Father and I last time went to your house.... Didn't we ever meet her before?"

After Feng Chen Rui said this, it is obviously Yao Yao's face is tightening.

That's right, last time she had met Feng Chen Yi's father, that time, Feng Chen Yi also introduced her, it seemed as..... One night stand lover, right?

Damn it, Feng Chen Rui this time is bringing up this matter, he is only want to ruin Yao Yao's image in front of their father.

"Chen Rui, once you said about this indeed recalled my memory." Feng Xiao frowning: "Chen Yi, what is going on? Isn't she only the party playing with? How can at moment change to be girlfriend?"

"Father, last time I just randomly said it, actually when we were at school Yao Yao and I were boy and girlfriend."

"Oh? When you was at Japan?"

"That's right!"

Having Feng Chen Yi said this, the way Feng Xiao looked at Yao Yao is little bit changed to be better, after all this son has already 22 years old, and it still the first time he bringing his girlfriend coming home, as father, absolutely he cannot too much not care. "Little girl, what is your name?"

"Uncle, my name is Luo Yao Yao."

"Oh, sit down when talking." Feng Xiao is pointing at the sofa right in front of him.

Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao by this way have a seat, regarding this kind of high status family the rules indeed so many, if Feng Xiao did not open his mouth asking them to have a seat, even Feng Chen Yi as son could not have a seat.

"Miss Luo, what is your parent job?"

After heard this question, Yao Yao's eyes brows frowning for moment, it is not like she feels embarrassed to say about her parent jobs, but her mother just passed away, mentioning about her, just make her heart hurt for once again.

At moment Feng Chen Yi able to sense Yao Yao difficulty, hurries he makes a replied: "Father, regarding about Yao Yao's matter it stills better next time I will tell you, today I bring Yao Yao come here, it is only to introduce her to you as my girlfriend, and at same time I want to tell you, I want to marry Yao Yao."

"Marry?" Once Feng Xiao heard it, his eyes are opened wide: "Chen Yi, marriage isn't playing a game, have you thought it?"

"Of course." he gives faint smiles, while his eyes gazing at Yao Yao. "I have known Yao Yao for six years, so that, I am absolutely sure about this marriage."

"This.... Isn't this too hasty?" Feng Xiao in difficulty creasing his forehead: "Miss Luo, what job are you doing now?"

"I, I am still a student. Uncle."

"Still a student? And how about your parent do they agree with this marriage?"

"Father...."

When Feng Chen Yi is making a reply, Yao Yao has grabbed his hand, she hinted him it's okay with shaking her head, answered: "Uncle, my father had passed away 13 years ago in car accident, my mother... Few days ago she has passed away."

"So this is the circumstance." in order to show his politeness Feng Xiao gives deep sighed, but at sudden changed, his expression to dim and gloomy, coldly said: "Miss Luo, toward your background, I am extremely expressed my deep

condolences. But.... This kind of marriage, I refused!"

Feng Chen Yi had predicted that his father would show his rejection after he heard about Yao Yao's background!

Just not mention about Yao Yao ordinary background, but the point of not having father and mother, toward Feng's family which is wealth and elite family, this is much scarier compare to being born in such ordinary family!

"Father, this is my matter, my purpose coming here today is in order to let you know this matter, I will take my leave first." after said, hurried he pulling Yao Yao's hand, coldly standing up.

#### 326 A

easter-bunny10					

Thank you everyone who had accompanied me to play guessing riddle. The answer for the riddle, Bunny and Moon.

Either in Western or Eastern culture, Bunny has it's own tales such as Bunny moon in Kaguya Princess story (Japan), Jade Bunny in Chang Er story (Chinese), Easter Bunny, etc.

At the first time I was guessed Santa clause too because who does not like old man with long white beard, giving presents during the Christmas Eve and Christmas day. But, Thunder said the answer is Bunny moreover the actually clue was at the second riddle which answer is moon.

So the winner is Periwinkle who got the closest and for the second spot goes to Panda.

#### Part 1 (One)

## Being refused by Feng Chen Yi's father

"Chen Yi! What attitude are you showing? As you know, a family alike ours Feng's household, impossible for us to accept a girl who comes from impoverished family." said half way, Feng Xiao even hinted his apologizing toward Yao Yao: "Sorry, Miss Luo, I don't mean to offend."

"I.... I understand, uncle."

"Chen Yi, you see how understanding Miss Luo is! Since the day you born into this world you must know that you have to shoulder everything according to the Feng's family arrangement to and turn it to be stronger as responsibility. If you are only wanted to date Miss Luo, I won't have any refusal! But, if the case is marriage, you must chose someone who have strong background in order to join marriage with my Feng's family!!"

Toward what Feng Chen Yi's father words, Yao Yao really can understand. After all she has stayed beside Yu Ao Tian for such long time, she has known not less of reality.

Black path has black path rules; politic world has politic world rules; business world has business world rules too.

Perhaps everyone thought that being rich wealthy second generation is happiness, but the wealthier the family of the Young Master, actually more helpless the person is, basically they don't have freedom to choose their own marriage, most often it is decided by parent as older generation, in order to make own family capability to become stronger so that they join-marriage with other powerful family too.

Since today when Feng Chen Yi brought her to here, she has known that Feng Xiao would not disagree with this marriage.

"Father, if you want to make our Feng's family become stronger, I think the thing that you must depend on is the capability of the management, not something alike depending toward what so-called as joining-marriage this kind of matter in order to make our Feng's family to get stronger."

"What do you mean by saying this? Chen Yi? Do you mean that I am asking you to join-marriage is something called as sorts of back doors?"

"Didn't you mean so? Depend on woman, depend on her family. Hah, why don't you ask me to be Xiao Bai Lian, there is no different at all."

(小 Xiao 白 Bai 脸 Lian: the most negative meaning is gigolo, at the same time it has derogatory meaning for good looking man who life depends on woman)

Aish.

If not because the situation and place are not suitable, Yao Yao is almost laughing out loud, she never thought that Feng Chen Yi could say something piercing alike that, isn't he? No matter how she thought of it, she just never thought that, join-marriage is something alike woman's selling their body while; the man's becoming 'Xiao Bai Lian'?

"Chen Yi, are you trying to anger me to death?"

"That's right, Chen Yi, how could you speak that way to our father?" Feng Chen Rui who keeps silent for this moment suddenly opened his mouth while he also enjoying the show, he is acting to be good person by rubbing his father's chest, pretending by showing his face in difficulty expression: "Actually father disagreed with your marriage matter is something for sake of your goodness, okay? Moreover, Miss Luo is someone who ever became Yu Ao Tian's lover before, if this matter being known by outsiders it would destruct our family's face?"

"What?? This little girl even ever became Yu Ao Tian's lover? Chen Yi, are you dummy? After all you wanted to marry a woman who ever became Yu Ao Tian's

lover as your wife?" After Feng Xiao heard what his older son words, he didn't care with his image anymore, just directly exploding alike bolt.

Feng Chen Rui this brat!!! Yao Yao is curled her hands into fists, with hatred she looked at Feng Chen Rui smiling face.

What is his purpose? Is he trying to make sure, no matter what Feng Chen Yi will still want to marry her, so that he want to take this opportunity to ruin Feng Chen Yi relationship with their father?

Too despicable, simply to say he is too despicable!

"Chen Yi, now I have changed my mind, not to mention about marriage, even dating, you must not date this kind of girl! If you really like her so much, if for playing it's okay! If you cannot, just wait until you have married, if you want to keep her as your lover, you can do so, anyway you are not allowed to marry with this kind of woman!!!"

"Father, for once again I told you, today my coming to here only to greet you, the decision isn't on your hand."

#### 326 B

cute_little_bunny						

Good news for the ANSTG's fans....

You guys are getting six extra chapters since winners are solely asking ONLY for A Naive Short Tempered Girl and not others =.=" LOLS. Speak frankly, I quite surprised with A Naive Short Tempered Girl popularity because when I started this translation project, not many people like it. But.....

Well, without too much blabbering, here I presented......

#### Part 2 (Two)

## Being Refused by Feng Chen Yi's Father

"Chen Yi!!!! If you are still stubborn wanted to marry her, not even mentioned about the CEO's position, even the General Manager's position, immediately I will strip it from you!"

When Feng's father said this words, an instantaneous Feng Chen Rui who is sitting beside exposing his smile, this smiles spotted by Yao Yao's eyes, she hates and gritting her teeth, gently she pulling Feng Chen Yi who besides her: "Forget it, Chen Yi."

"It's nothing." Feng Chen Yi is comforting her by showing his smile, and then looking at his father with expressionless face: "Do you really think that I am such wanted that CEO's position? If you are stripping my General Manager's position, it does not matter to me. You don't forget that, before Grand Father passed away, he had given 20% of Feng Group stocks under my name, it is not big deal, I can sell out my 20% stocks, and then I still can start all over again, when it really happen, let's who will us be losing see more severely!"

If really once the 20% stocks of Feng Chen Yi being sold out, it for surely Feng's Group will be at catastrophe. Feng Xiao knows very well compare to anyone who will surely suffer bigger loses. "Chen Yi!!! You are really! Are you want to anger me to death? Just because of this lowly status woman, and then fight against me? Do you think it is worth to do so?"

"That's right, Chen Yi, quickly apologizing to father, as long as you are not marry with this woman, everything is easy to settle." at this kind of situation, Feng Chen Rui faster adding an oil. So that the atmosphere is getting hotter after it gets burn!

Dealing with this kind of shameless older brother, simply to say, Feng Chen Yi decision is to ignore him: "Father, I don't mean to make you angry, if you are agreeing my marriage with Yao Yao, don't you think the matter is much easier, right?"

"I won't agree with it! This little girl no matter her status or her background, she is not suitable to get into our Feng's family door!!!!"

"Well there is nothing more to say. Yao Yao, we leave." After said, when Feng Chen Yi wanted to pull Yao Yao and leave.

His footstep stopped, quickly he turned back, hinting that he and Feng's father will be reconciled.

Feng Chen Yi is smiling, bend down little bit and then whispered on her ear: "Rest assured, although I don't have anything, I will still support and help you to revenge, believe on me...."

It is not like that! Not like that! She isn't afraid if later he does not have anything and then cannot help her to revenge!

But, she really cherish the warmness of this family, she does not want and expecting to see Feng Chen Yi because of her and then stir up trouble with his family to this point.

Feng Chen Yi, why you must be so stubborn to this point?

Is it worth?

Is it because of me, you are willing to break with your father, willingly to lose everything, is it only to marry me?

This is not worth! It really is not worth!!

Her pair of bright twinkling big eyes straightly can see firm and steady eyesight, inside that pair of eyes as if she can see his toward her, his love and also his certainty.

What to do then? Feng Chen Yi, you are treating me this well, what should I do in order to repay you?

Using my companion to accompany you for the rest of my life with you in order

to repay your kindness, can I do so? Now, I only can give this promise to you.

Since it decided to stay forever, well we must get married first, don't you think so?

The marriage without blessing isn't happy marriage, so that....

She cannot accept this kind of situation because of her these son and father relationship stirring up to this point!

Yao Yao smiles faintly, suddenly she swaying away Feng Chen Yi's hand, turned her back and faster she has arrived right in front of Feng Xiao.

"Yao Yao?" quickly Feng Chen Yi chasing in front of her, not understand looking at her.

She smiles again, comforting him by patting Feng Chen Yi's hand.

This time, let her to move Uncle Feng's heart! "Uncle, as you said my background cannot be compared, mine is so ordinary and really ordinary. But, I never thought that, nothing in me which isn't fit your Feng family. It is right, I am not coming from wealthy generation, I cannot give any asset (Financial contribution) support to Feng family. But the worth of myself value isn't something that can be gotten by being wealth generation or money."

#### 327 A

Here is the first extra chapter as promised ^-^

I don't think which part of me does not suit him

### Part 1 (One)

"Miss Luo, do you want to tell me that, you are someone kind and also love Chen Yi, and also not because of my Feng's money? These things, not even can move me."

"Uncle, you are mistaken my meaning, I don't mean to express my personal quality such sublimate, as you mentioned before, this thing won't able to move you. But what I wanted to tell you, about the thing that I have with me as something could not being able bought by wealth and money, it is...." she lifts up her hand, slowly from her pocket she take out her license. "This is my lawyer license." after said. she takes her license and put it the table.

"If you have slightly understanding about Lawyer field this kind of profession, so you must be known how big the value and the power of the World Class Lawyer. I really don't have way to use my family background to help Feng Group, but.... I can use my brain to make Feng Group to be stronger! And at same time I can make Feng Group develop in very fast way, I believe you must be more understand this thing better compare to me."

Feng Xiao is someone who has already at his sixty, what kind of thing that he never face before? Never seen before.

The value and power of World Class Lawyer, how could he not know about it?

Currently in this entire world there are not many of World Class Lawyer left, he really never thought this little girl would be one of them, no wonder she could say something.... 'I never thought that, nothing in me which isn't fit your Feng family.'

That's right, having this kind of position, believes there will be many of business player who will fight for her! "Miss Luo, let me ask you private question, how high your IQ? I don't have ill intention."

"Haha, I understand, uncle. I am indeed someone who coming from 'rare' group, my IQ is 200."

"200?" at beside Feng Chen Rui is dumbstruck, after all this little girl is belonging to high IQ group of people!

But on contrary, Feng Xiao is calmer: "No wonder you are able to get World Class Lawyer license. Ha...."

"Luo, Miss Luo, regarding to your self-value, I am really admire you. But, you are ever being Yu Ao Tian's lover, isn't it also a fact? My father won't allow this matter." Feng Chen Rui sees the situation in bad way for him, for once again he blows the wind.

Just as expected, after Old Master (Feng Xiao) heard this words, the mood that brighten little bit is back to dim.

But this time is Feng Chen Yi's turned to let himself see a good show, he clearly understand, this time his own elder brother is already stirred up the bees nest.

"Mr. Feng Chen Rui, if not because I still see you as Feng Chen Yi's older brother, due to your words, I can directly sue you doing defamation, the crime of insulting World Class Lawyer is big crime!"

"Do you dare to say that you never been Yu Ao Tian's lover?" Feng Chen Rui angered directly standing up.

"Indeed I ever stayed beside Mr. Yu for while, but I was his representative lawyer, that's all." facing with her ugly past, she didn't want to make such leisurely denial, but facing with this kind of ugly big brother, she only can make this kind of decision!

"Oh? I have heard the news about, it said that there's world class lawyer who stayed beside him, so that he could so succeed for his election, was that person you?"

"Haha, uncle, I do not dare to say the successful of Mr. Yu election was because of me, but, regarding that time Mr. Yu election, indeed I was his representative lawyer."

"Father!! You don't listen to her gibberish, she really ever become Yu Ao Tian's lover before!!!" Said Feng Chen Rui who is not letting this at one go.

Yao Yao is using her strength to make a fist, suddenly her small face is showing sharp smiles: "Feng Chen Rui, you said that I am ever become Yu Ao Tian's lover, do you have an evidence? Moreover, if you are so sure that I am Yu Ao Tian's lover, why last time when we were meeting at the restaurant you are begging for my love? You even asked me to be your girlfriend? Not say that because I had refused you, so you still hate me in your heart so that you trying to tarnish my reputation?"

"You...."

"Heh? If bringing up this matter, I still have little bit impression." Feng Chen Yi is completely not giving Feng Chen Rui an opportunity, hurried he opened his mouth: "Yao Yao, I still remembered that my older brother even gave you that Black Card to you, am I right?"

Cold sweat, now Feng Chen Yi is completely showing his 'treacherous villain' expression on his face, he really would directly keeps on pinning.

#### **327** B

Here is the second extra chapter ^-^

#### Part 2 (Two)

"Chen Rui!!! Does she say the truth? You even gave her your Black Card?" this time, the woman who is sitting beside and keep silent for this time suddenly roaring.

Feng Chen Yi is rolled his eyes, pretending to say comforting words: "Big sister in law, you don't be angry, Yao Yao is my girlfriend how could she accept the card from Big brother? Not long after big brother left, she had given the card back to me, and I had given it back to big brother. Am I right? Big brother." Listened to the way how his younger brother words, Feng Chen Rui is pissing off to the point curled his hand into fist.

Yao Yao just found out, actually this woman is Feng Chen Rui's wife, isn't she? If she knew it since the beginning, she would not say about this matter, after all Feng Chen Rui's wife is innocent, she does not want because her hatred toward Feng Chen Rui and then she also dragging his wife along with.

"Feng Chen Rui, you are too much, even want to snatch your own younger brother's girlfriend!" Feng Chen Rui's wife is raging in fume and even roaring louder.

At beside Father Feng is using his strength to pat the sofa's arm rest: "All shut up! Chen Rui, during that time did you know that she is your younger brother's girlfriend or not?"

"Father, listen to my explanation, I...."

"As said, you have known about it before? Chen Rui, you are really disappointed me, simply to say you are embarrassed our Feng family!!!"

"Father, you don't angry."

Seeing Feng Xiao is turned to nag Feng Chen Rui, at beside Feng Chen Yi is pulling Yao Yao and hinted her to leave without voices.

Once they had gone out from front door, he directly laughing.

"Why do you still able to laugh?" sitting inside the car, Yao Yao is curiously asked him.

Feng Chen Yi is slowly explaining his moods, said: "Seeing how work-hard you for our marriage, of course I am so happy."

Ugh....

Cold sweat, really, initially she wanted to stop this marriage, and then at the moment it changed she as someone who is starting to protect this marriage.

But.... She has witness that Feng Chen Yi has sacrificed himself too much for her, and without she realized of it.... She also wanted together work-hard for it too.

It is okay, if not because the Old Master made thing difficult for her, even the thought that they are able to get marriage, her heart would not be in peaceful. But after experience all the suffers, on contrary she has decided in her heart, she wanted to accompany at Feng Chen Yi side forever, although that love isn't there anymore, it is okay....

"Cut it off, it was because you saw your older brother in a difficult position, so that you are able to laugh that happily, am I right?"

"Perhaps it is also one of the reason." indeed, seeing his older brother at that kind of situation, he indeed so satisfied. But the biggest reason is.....

For once again he had witness the miraculous capability of Yao Yao.

He has ever said before, Yao Yao always have this kind of capability, she has a capability to change something impossible to be possible!

"Now where are we heading?"

"We are going to take wedding photo."

"Ah? But uncle hasn't agreed with our marriage yet?"

Seeing Yao Yao shocking expression, Feng Chen Yi is smiling, said: "I have said, I don't need him to agree. Moreover, after listened to the way you made self-introduction, my father, absolutely will agree with it!"

Father Feng is someone who coming from business background, to seek nothing but profit (personal profit before everything) is the most basic characteristic. Someone alike Yao Yao is super rare person that can be encountered but not able to beg, being able to make her stay beside, compare to marrying to ten wealthy family, have background wives, all still can be considered. Which is the most important priority, Feng Xiao knows it very well.

#### 328 A

уу

Feng Chen Yi is bringing Yao Yao to have their photo wedding even Feng Xiao hasn't said anything whether he really agreed with the marriage or not. After previous tense chapters, this chapter seems little bit better since Hei Yan Long and Ou Yang Zi Xuan have made their appearance. Here I presented the Third Extra Chapter ^-^

#### Part 1 (One)

## **How Old Actually Hei Yan Long?**

"The bride groom, look at her; the bride's head is leaning on the bridegroom's shoulder. That's right, just like that." 'click' 'click' (shutter sounds), inside the photo studio, the light is continuously flashing. The photographer again and again keeps on giving instruction to these newbie what kind of pose they must do.

After some time of endurance, it is so obviously Feng Chen Yi's face is showing his impatience, but because of Yao Yao, he is still forcing himself to endure every instruction that given by the photographer.

Just right at this time, Hei Yan Long and Ou Yang Zi Xuan barging into the photo studio. "Is it really or not?"

"Best buddy, I even thought your phone called just now was a frank." both of these persons are surprised to see western suit and wedding dress which wore by Yao Yao, and then they are completely affirm that, their best buddy Feng Chen Yi is really... Wanted to get married!

"Just stop for while!" Feng Chen Yi is taking this opportunity to stop the photographer.

"Alright, Mr. Feng, well, I am taking your bride to shoot her solely photo."

"En."

The photographer and also the Makeup Master along the assistants are taking Yao Yao to go at others photo studio.

When everyone is leaving, Feng Chen Yi let out long sighed, he does not hide his impatience by untied his necktie: "Shot wedding photos are something tiring!" for all this time he always become the person who gives instruction while people do as he said, now being instructed by other person, he is absolutely not getting used of it.

Hei Yan Long and Ou Yang Zi Xuan who are standing in front of the door with shocked facial expression walking in front of him. "How can you say you want to marry and then you are really getting married? Even until now I am still thinking that I am daydreaming."

"Hah, time to get married so get married." Feng Chen Yi just randomly gave an answer.

Although he said so, Ou Yang Zi Xuan always hope this best buddy of him can reconcile with Yao Yao and start all over, but once they are really start all over, they are getting married? This is still so exaggerating, okay? "What I mean, how could both of you can talk about marriage?"

"It was my idea."

"....." Ou Yang Zi Xuan and others even thought that Feng Chen Yi is type of person who belonging to not married group, but never expected among them, he is the first one who will get married for the first! Aiya, perhaps this is what they called as true love.

"Have Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian's matter settled completely?" Said Hei Yan Long who is by this time keep silent.

After listened to this words, Ou Yang Zi Xuan is glared at him.

But Hei Yan Long does think this time he is speaking something that he should not say, as one of Feng Chen Yi's best buddy, he is really afraid that Feng Chen Yi because of love he is being so impulsive, and then together with woman who standing on two boats.

"En, every thing has settled."

"But didn't Yu Ao Tian still come during the funeral ceremony?"

"It must during that time everything had settled."

Once Hei Yan Long heard it, he carefully to make a count: "It just has been few days passed, she and Yu Ao Tian broke up, and then immediately she marrying you? Chen Yi..... You...."

Feng Chen Yi's face is turned to be cold, he raised his hand to stop Hei Yan Long: "I, Yu Ao Tian and also Yao Yao, this matter is ours matter, both of you don't need to get involved."

He is understand very well, What Hei Yan Long meant by his words actually is asking him to consider again, re-consider.

But the relationship among three of them are such complicated, how the outsider would understand about it?

Feng Chen Yi really does not know and at same time cannot to affirm whether Yao Yao really ever loved Yu Ao Tian or not, but the thing that he certain is, at this moment, Yao Yao.... Not love him anymore.

And then, speak frankly about this marriage, it is something that he get by exchanging the marriage with his interest. So that, no matter how to ask him to re-consider, the answer is still same!

Anothe	er Extra Cha	apter, uhm	ı I almo	st lost my	count LO	DLS

#### Part 2 (Two)

## **How Old Actually Hei Yan Long?**

"Mr. Feng, there still left two clothes haven't being photo, can you make a change for moment." one of the assistant suddenly barging into the photo studio, break this weird atmosphere.

"Go and tell your photographer, today photo session is ended, I am little bit tired, I want to take a rest."

"Yes, understood." the assistant left.

Feng Chen Yi is getting up from sofa, patting Hei Yan Long's shoulder: "Yan Long, I know there are many matters that you can help me to consider about; but, this marriage, isn't because of my impulsiveness and then I made the decision."

He loves Yao Yao for such long time, before he ever thought to give up on this feeling but he could not let it go, since this is the case, he must grab tightly this opportunity, forcibly let her stay beside him.

Whether this right or not, he also does not know. But there is something, regarding about this marriage, it is absolutely not decided due to his impulsiveness.

"Alright, I understood, as long as you think it is okay, then I am also think it is not a matter." Hei Yan Long gives faint smile, and then three of them are getting out from the photo studio.....

Not long after that, Yao Yao has removed her makeup, and then changed back with her own clothes and then having lunch with them.

Speak honestly, just now when they were taking wedding photos shoot, if Feng Chen Yi didn't call to stop, she would be the one who called stop, the feeling of

being instructed by others actually something that not comfortable, the most important is.....

During the process when she was taking photo shoot with Feng Chen Yi, she was distracted. As if, that beautiful wedding dress was not suitable being worn by her.

"Congratulation to both of you." inside the private room, Ou Yang Zi Xuan smiles faintly by lifting up his liquor glass.

Beside him is Hei Yan Long also followed him by raised up his glass too: "Congratulation. Woman, it seems that in the future I must call you as Little Sister in law."

"Little sister in law?" Ou Yang Zi Xuan is showing such disbelief expression on his face and then put down his glass: "Aren't you mistaken, Yan Long, you must call Yao Yao older sister in law, right? You even cannot make any difference about generation."

"I am mistaken? Yao Yao is younger than me? So that, it is so normal if I called her as Little sister in law."

"But Feng Chen Yi is older by two years than you, okay?"

When Ou Yang Zi Xuan said his words, Yao Yao who is sitting silently at beside almost get chocked by her drink.

This year Feng Chen Yi is 22 years old, he is older by two year to Hei Yan Long, so that it means.... Hei... Yan Long, this year just.... 20 years old?

To be honest, Hei Yan Long not even slightly looked alike someone who is at his 20, other than his bad temperament, but the way and his manner when talking is very mature.

If say that Ou Yang Zi Xuan this year is 20, she believed it.

No wonder the chairman of Bao Lai Group is always being called as the most youth (youngest) Chairman by the other business men.

Nut.....

Shang Yun Yin has already at her 22, why she must call Hei Yan Long as Godolder brother?

CEO Hei, are you really only 20 years old?" Yao Yao is trying to investigate by asking him.

Hei Yan Long's face is dimmer, his pair of eyes are flashing a gleam: "This year I am 26 years old."

"Cut off your nonsense, Yan Long. It is obvious that you are younger by two years compare with me and Chen Yi. Now Yao Yao is our people, why are you still lying."

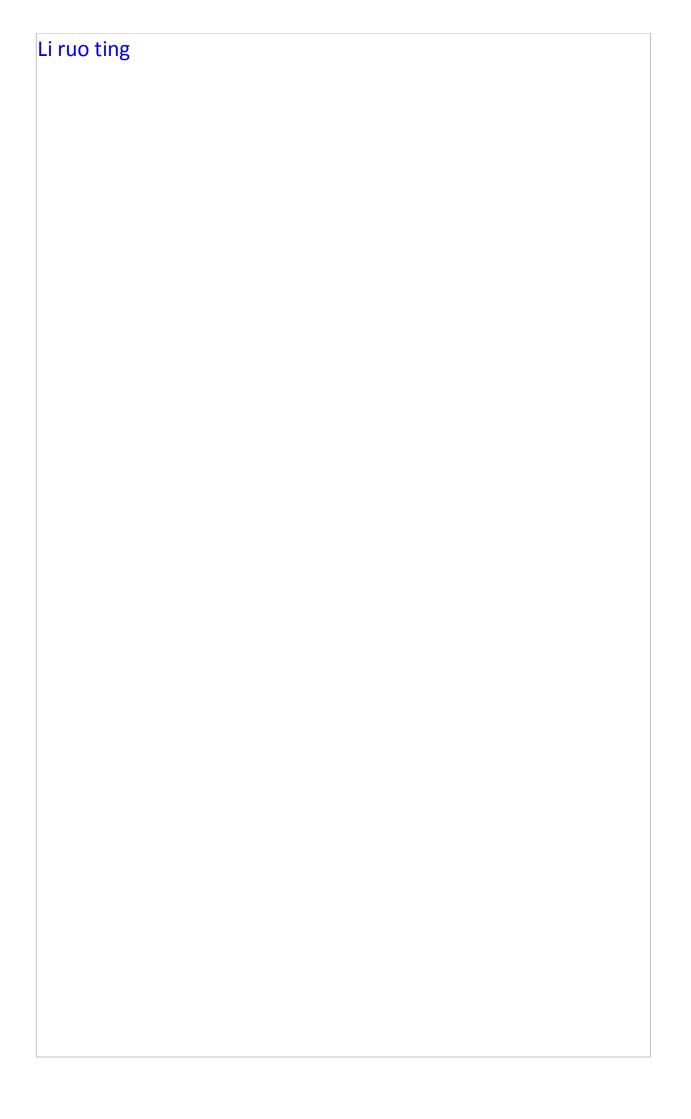
"I am 26!"

No matter how Ou Yang Zi Xuan said, Hei Yan Long is such affirmed that he is already 26 years old, it makes Ou Yang Zi Xuan angered to the point standing up: "If you have guts take out your ID card!!!"

"I don't have matter." Hei Yan Long does not have any objection shrugged his shoulders, elegantly he taking out his ID card from his wallet and then put it on the table.

Ou Yang Zi Xuan has a glanced: "You are too cunning, after all you even changed your birthday year. Darn you!"

"Forget it, Zi Xuan, since Yan Long is willing to be called that old, let him be." at beside Feng Chen Yi feared because of these two people arguing, the good atmosphere going to be ruin with their fight.



Anyone curious why Hei Yan Long needs to hide his real age and even go as

further as made one fake ID card? Also long lost enemy who finally make 'show up' and interrupting Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi plus his best buddies having meal.

#### **Chapter 1 (One)**

### Li Ruo Ting

"En, stop." Hei Yan Long is happily smiling. Ou Yang Zi Xuan is choosing better to endure and gulped his anger and then sit back to his seat.

"Hey, how old Hei Yan Long actually?" because still curious, Yao Yao is whispering to Feng Chen Yi when asking.

He is making a gesture 2 under the table, in order to confirm Hei Yan Long current age.

"So why he lied about his age?"

"Didn't he tell you the matter about his parent."

Ugh....

Trying to recall, Both of Hei Yan Long father and mother were passed away when he was at his 18 years old, and it meant that, since that day he had taken over and managed the company when he was at his 18?

No wonder he could lie about his age, could it be imaging that a 18 years teenager was taking over and managing the entire enlisted companies, managing for hundred and thousand people, hundred of millions current asset, if he doesn't have bold and courage to manage his subordinate, people won't be convinced.

Even though this year he is 20 years old, if he say it out to the outsider he will be questioned by the business-partners, and only by lying his age, then he could secure his authority and power.

Fiuh, really pitied Hei Yan Long, when was at his 18, initially he still enjoying those happy and leisurely days and then suddenly he must shoulder such big cage of company. Moreover, he even able to expand this company so well,

believe that in the future Hei Yan Long succeed will be immeasurable.

"Chen Yi!!" just at the time when everyone is happily and laughing, a discordant voice is flowing from outside to inside the private room.

Open the door, it is Li Ruo Ting who is showing up with her anger face in front of anyone.

"How can you come here?" Feng Chen Yi put down his chopsticks, coldly staring at her.

"I heard that you are going to be married soon, with whom? With this lowly slut?" Li Ruo Ting who still with her anger face is pointing at Yao Yao.

She silent not say anything, she looks at Feng Chen Yi who sits beside her, this is the love-debt which Feng Chen Yi owed, and this must be settled by himself.

The relationship among three of them, it has been tangled for more than two years, if before the showing up of Li Ruo Ting was something harm for her, but this moment, when Yao Yao is facing with Li Ruo Ting she is such calm.

There is no hatred, there is no anger, what is the reason of these? Because, is it because she not have any feeling toward Feng Chen Yi anymore?

"Li Ruo Ting, be careful with your words!" Feng Chen Yi is using his strength to slap the table, that pair of cold eyes are able to send a chills up to the spine.

Li Ruo Ting unhappily curled her hands into fists, but her way of speaking is filled with begging tone, said: "Chen Yi, you don't like me, it's okay, if you want to get married it's okay. But you are not allowed to marry Yao Yao, you understand!!!! How she ruined my older sister?"

#### Li Mei Yun....

Does not know why, at the moment when Li Ruo Ting brought up about Li Mei Yun, Yao Yao's moods starting to wave and uneasy, perhaps, it is evoking her past memories and also at the same time would be revealed by other, right.

"That is your Li's family matter, none of my business!"

"That's right! The matter of my older sister isn't your business, but since you are marrying this woman, it must be something for you right? That time when my older sister was still dating with Yu Ao Tian, she was third wheels, she

became Yu Ao Tian's lover! In order to force my older sister to left, she even schemed to get rid the baby in my older sister womb!!!"

When Li Ruo Ting is using this sharp intonation to say this words, surrounded the private room the waiters and waitresses who are coming to see getting more and more.

Ou Yang Zi Xuan sees the situation going to be chaos, hurried he close the private room's door.

"Why the door being closed? All of you also know this Luo Yao Yao, how many shameless things that she had done before? But this hasn't ended! My older sister was kidnapped by the mafia, it was because this lowly slut! This lowly slut and the mafia's boss contaminated my older sister, it made my sister being\*\* by those people on the spot. Now she is being hospitalized at the mental hospital!!!" Li Ruo Ting is moved one step to in front, glared at Yao Yao with angered: "These matters, are you dare to make denial?"

#### 329 B

/Y	

Finally I fulfilled my promised and here the last chapter of the extras. also I will going to post the newest chapter of Substitute Bride.....

#### Part 2 (Two)

### Li Ruo Ting

Not dare to make any denial, and also cannot make any denial, but Yao Yao really didn't know that..... Li Mei Yun was being\*\*.

Still remembered that time, when she just got out from the warehouse, when she was sitting on the side of pond, suddenly Yu Ao Tian showed up, said that Li Mei Yun had safe and soundly.

So that, he was afraid she would feel guilty, so that the reason he telling lie toward her. Hah....

Yao Yao is expressionless standing up, she is preparing to get out from the room.

Li Ruo Ting is using one of her hands to stop her arm: "Where are you going?"

"Li Ruo Ting, today your coming actually to find Feng Chen Yi or coming to look for me? If you are coming to look for me, I will stay; if you are coming to look for Feng Chen Yi, furthermore to persuade him not to marry me, I think, it still better for me to take my leave first, by this way you can speak comfortably with him, don't you think so?"

Li Ruo Ting really never thought, Luo Yao Yao reaction could be this calm, there is no even any explanation words.

Yao Yao coldly swaying away Li Ruo Ting's hand, faster she is walking out from the private room.

Outside the room, there are many sharp eyes looking at her, pointing at her, if it was the old hers perhaps she would run away, but now, she wants to make firm and steady steps to walk until the exit door.

Since the mistake that had done could not makeup, after all it could not be

changed, so the best way is going to face it.

Either it is rumor or gossip that stained her, after experienced many things, finally she able to face everything so calmly!

Inside the private room.

Feng Chen Yi is looking at Hei Yan Long: "Please help me to take care of Yao Yao."

"En."

"Well, I also want to take my leave first." Ou Yang Zi Xuan saw Hei Yan Long, both of them are going out together from the private room.

Right after the private room door closed, immediately Li Ruo Ting's attitudes get softer: "Chen...."

But when she is opened her mouth, Feng Chen Yi stood up, raised his hand 'slap' he gave her one slap on her face.

"Chen Yi, you?" she used her hand to cover her cheek, her face is shown disbelief.

Feng Chen Yi is narrowed his cold eyes: "Now I don't want to hear anything regarding or about Yao Yao's past."

"But all those things are reality, the truth that would not be ever changed!!!! Chen Yi, due to your position today, marrying that kind of woman, it would give you trouble. Please don't marry her, okay? Don't marry her okay?"

"Mention your price!" Feng Chen Yi is taking out a piece of blank bank note from his suit's pocket.

Li Ruo Ting swayed the bank note which on his hand: "I don't need money! My Li's family is not lacking any money!"

"You sure? Since it is the case, Li Ruo Ting, since this day onwards, you better go further from me, go as further as you can, I don't want to see you anymore. If you still doing something that hurt Yao Yao, I will make sure all your Li's family got to pay it together with you!!!"

"Ha, hahahahahha. Chen Yi, you are really heartless man. But, I believe, even though I am not showing in front of you, there will be countless of women who

will still showing up just right in front of you.

Someone alike this kind of you 'meat' man, green vegetable Luo Yao Yao won't be ever to satisfy you, although both of you are married, soon or later both of you will divorce too!!" after said, Li Ruo Ting with unhappily expression slammed the door and then left.

Leaving Feng Chen Yi alone inside the private room with his hand that curled into fist.

Indeed, he is a normal man, sometimes when he is facing with a temptation, it is hard for him to control it.

Two years ago, it was one of the best example.

And then, he never thought that, in order to make himself happy for while, he has pushed away the woman that he loves the most.

So that, this kind of thing only could happen one time on Feng Chen Yi's life, and there won't be the second time!!!

3	3	0	A
•	•	•	

# Part 1 (One)

Leaving the restaurant, Hei Yan Long is following Yao Yao along the way.

If saying that he is stalking her, but this stalking is so eye-catching, behind there's still long queue group of body guards, and still there is his expensive car that drive slowly.

But if say he is not stalking, but followed along this way, at same time doesn't call her.

At last it is still Yao Yao who could not control her emotion, the most important this kind of 'following', this group has been attracting many passers eyes, she does not want to be this embarrassed. "CEO Hei, you keep on following me this way also not a solution, do you have something to ask me?"

Hei Yan Long stopped his footstep, pair of his hands are inserted inside his pocket, that pair of eyes at sudden changed cold: "Just now what was Li Ruo Ting said inside the private room, was it right or not?"

This is his second times he heard other people said about Yao Yao and Li Mei Yun rotten matter.

If said the first time Shang Yun Yin was lying, then the second time did Li Ruo Ting really said lie too?

Even if it the same lie, still it is too much.

"It was true." Yao Yao gave such calm answer.

Hei Yan Long is creasing his forehead, dash alike an arrow: "Not another misunderstanding?"

"No."

Suddenly he made a fist: "It is because again and again Feng Chen Yi is believing you, so that we are supporting and also giving our bless to your marriage. If just now what Li Ruo Ting said was true, and Feng Chen Yi still wanted to marry you, then he is only a dummy!"

"Hah, you are Feng Chen Yi's friend, do you really think Feng Chen Yi because of woman could be this blind?"

Hei Yan Long also not believes that his best buddy could be such dummy because of love, but....

"Woman, just now the truth that you said before, and now what you have said, what do you mean of it?"

Actually she also does not know what she wanted to express, in short, she does not expect Feng Chen Yi's friend would feel that Feng Chen Yi as dummy that's all.

"Things were happened because of me, and it also had relation with me, from the beginning to the ending, it was still due to my prediction, but there was no way for me to change it." After she said vaguely, Yao Yao is giving faint smile, turned her back and immediately disappeared from Hei Yan Long in front.

That's right, Li Mei Yun was losing her own baby but it was because of her, so that Li Mei Yun using this kind of plan to scheme her.

The kidnapped was happened because of her, basically she could bring Li Mei Yun safe and soundly along with her, but because Li Mei Yun did betray her and in order to protect her own self, so that she only could use that kind of plan.

Case by case, all was happened because of her, things happened because of her as lover.

The beginning until the ending, she had predicted before, wanted to change, but Li Mei Yun didn't give her any chance to do so, so that at the last it made such ending.

Perhaps this is the phrase which called, I don't kill someone, but someone got killed because of me....

chapter 330 part two

Chapter 331 part one

# Part 2 (Two)

First University, inside the class A.

"What? Is it real or not, you and Feng Chen Yi are going to...."

"Sst, Xiao Man, this matter I don't want to announce first."

Although she does not want to make the announcement earlier, but whe "You, have you considered clearly?

Although.... You and Feng Chen Yi are indeed match as couple, moreover his family

"Huh, I do feel.... Perhaps both of us should not marry. But, this matter is Feng

"...... Faint, but forget it, after all both of you did ever have feeling for eac over to think. "I tell you, your bridesmaid position must be given to me."

Haha, still a bridesmaid, she even does not want to have wedding party. Gong X see for the crowded, but Yao Yao as the insider how could she does not know if the

"Hey, you guys see, outside there are many reporters."

"That's true, what is happened, after all so many reporters are coming? Yao Yao and Gong Xiao Man are together taking place from a corner to "Fella student, may I know which one is Luo Yao Yao?" the reporters while student are looked so curious while pointing at the first row po "Thank you, fella student." when the reporters found out their target, or

"Miss Luo, Yesterday our newspaper had received an anonymous email, the mail content described that, when Congress Yu was still the CEO

"Miss Luo, the email content was quite clear to state about your personal, may Do you ever became the lover of Congress Yu?"

"That's right, Miss Luo, inside the email it was also stated you were used to One by one the questions are alike sharp knives, it was not easy for h If last time, she didn't know who did this kind of news, exposing herself She has made promise to herself, facing this kind of things, she would

"Every reporters, I don't know about the anonymous email which you guthis matter to the legal course. Others, regarding the matter about me a not say anything, all of you can directly go and ask Congress Yu."

Enough! She really had enough for all these things!

Didn't she only ever become Yu Ao Tian's lover, was that she really walf not because her MF life is as common as an ant, because of that 10 Why all these reporters and those who wants to own benefit from other, doing "Miss Luo...."

Yao Yao's dimmer, raised her hand to stop the media to keep on asking her: "I have said, this matter I won't comment anything! If the media still wanted to keep pursuing and asked, all of yo letter!!!!"

Seeing Yao Yao's attitude such affirm, those reporters are unhappily retreat.

"Yao Yao, this time the way you expressing yourself are so stubborn, but.... The Today reporters, the reality few of them are not lost, today Yao Yao's attitude headline is going to be Yu Ao Tian's lover attitude such arrogant and audacious.

# Part 1 (One)

"It does not matter, whatever they want to write just let them to write, mouths are theirs, I could not stop all." she is tired, she really is too tired. Regarding all these things, Yao Yao finally can experience the people who live under the limelight actually too exhausted.

'ding ding' The short message notification alert, she read it.

'Now I am in front of the school entrance waiting for you.' it is short and yet simple message, at one glance already know about Feng Chen Yi's character.

Seeing Yao Yao wants to get up and leaving.

Gong Xiao Man curiously asked: "Where are you going?"

"Go out for moment." when she just wanted to leave the class, some of fellow gossiper classmates are gossiping around with sinister smiles.

"Luo Yao Yao, just now what were said by the reporters, was it true or not? You were ever becoming Board Director Yu's lover before?"

"Really envied you, how much pocket money he gave you per months? You can study at here, was the reason because of him? Yao Yao, you see, if really can, can you say few good words about us to Board Director Yu, all of us must be very grateful toward you."

Hah, what kind of world this, doing criticism only based on surface phenomenon.

Still refresh in her mind, during the time when the news about her being someone's lover being exposed, everyone was laughing at her. But now the result when the truth exposed the person is Yu Ao Tian, this group of people are buttering her!

"Me and Board Director Yu are not too familiarized, so that I can't help you guys, regarding about our relationship, stills.... Nothing I can't say about!" Yao Yao coldly smiles, pushed aside through her classmates, hurried she walking out from school yard.

At the road side, a Porsche sport-car parked, at the time when Yao Yao ensured the person who drives the car is Feng Chen Yi, hurried she gets in car and seat: "What's matter?"

"I have watched the news, are you okay?"

"Haha, reporters just left, but don't worry I do fine. But how about you...."

"Me? What's?"

Yao Yao is pouted her mouth, and then takes a deep breath, slowly said: "Do you still want to marry me?"

"My beloved, do both of us just know each others or what? No matter what, how can I feel that you are not even knowing me, even for little bit now?" Feng Chen Yi is trying his best to use usual speaking tone.

She understands this man, after all both of them have known each other for such long time, how could she not understand him?

Once Feng Chen Yi has decided on something it hard to make him to change it, but.... "Now, my matter with Yu Ao Tian had exposed, no matter whether everyone believes or not, as long as you still marrying me, you would turn to be everyone laughing stock!"

Since the beginning, this marriage is a mistake, since the beginning she does not have any certainty regarding to this marriage;

Since the day she became Yu Ao Tian's lover, she has understood, between she and Feng Chen Yi are impossible.....

"Now, the thing that you must consider of is being the most beautiful bride, and no need to focus on what people going to talk about me."

"How could I not concern? Even though I was hate you so much in the past, but now seeing the news about you and me, I feel so frustrated; and moreover, for me, your existence just alike my family member, because of my revenge, I make you to be others laughing stock, how could I not feel bad?"

#### 331B

this is not own by azurro credit to the owner				

I have tried some ways, but I failed. I am tiring too but can I really stop it? I know, some readers even started to complain my blogging style, with all these

password, non-password, odd format, etc....

For once again, I kindly ask the readers not to support any website that host (copy) my translation works because I only wish only to have mine posted in azurro4cielo.wordpress.com

Please be understanding the feeling as if your baby projects that being nurtured suddenly taken by others.

#### Part 2 (Two)

She had lost her mother, her grandpa is at very far away, and now Feng Chen Yi is the only one who closest to her, someone that she can trust and depend on 'family member', so that she cannot see this most important family member, because of her getting problems!

"Since you have said that you thought me as your family member, so you think, would I mind that much? Just make a comparison, there's someone said you are bad, would your mother cut all ties with you?"

Hah....

Feng Chen Yi's words so sharp, makes her cannot argue back with him.

He is using such strong willed man's nature, until this moment he not even showing any hesitation? What should she do? Should she keeps on doing mistakes? Stills....

"Yao Yao, don't think too much about other matters. Didn't you want to revenge for your mother? Well you must think what should you do in order to revenge, and at same time, just think carefully, about our future life. While the other matters just let me to settle it!"

Revenge? The future life? The current her even the problem right in front of her eyes she cannot settle, how could she think about those distant things.

"Alright, I understand, now I back for my class."

"En." his eyes are keep on looking Yao Yao who is almost disappeared and entered school yard, at sudden Feng Chen Yi's face changed dimmer, and faster he takes out his mobile phone from his pocket and dialed: "Lisa, you go and announce to managers from all department to gather for meeting, tell them to make a plan how to acquire Li's group."

"Yes. General Manager Feng."

"Others.... Think whatever the way to stop the rumors about Yao Yao who ever being Yu Ao Tian's lover, that news!"

Lisa who is listened from the other side of phone call, helplessly she pouted her mouth: "General Manager Feng, This news now has been released, it must be so hard to stop it right?"

"That's why just think another way by using any bigger piece of news to cover that news, is this something that I need to teach you again?"

"Yes, Yes, General Manager Feng, I understood."

After hung up the phone called, he is using his strength to toss away his mobile phone to the seat beside him!

If said that, Feng Chen Yi does not mind with this rotten gossip, it is something impossible, after all due to his position today if this news is spreading, absolutely it is worst.

But, married with Yao Yao is something he must have done! There is nothing could change or stop him in order to marry Yao Yao!

'How could I not concern? Even though I was hate you so much in the past, but now seeing the news about you and me, I feel so frustrated; and moreover, for me, your existence just alike my family member, because of my revenge, I make you to be others laughing stock, how could I not feel bad?'

His head is reckoning what was Yao Yao said before.....

Family member.... Family member....

Hah, it stills such intimate called, now Feng Chen Yi really does not know whether he must happy or not with his position in Yao Yao's heart, or should he being hurt, she only sees him as her family member, but not as someone she loves!

'Forget about the past, now I want to love you who at my front....' (mobile phone ringtone)

Just now just hung up the phone call, but the mobile phone is ringing again, Feng Chen Yi impatiently glances at the mobile phone screen, his expression suddenly changed to be dimmer.

"Hello."

"Chen Yi, you are...."

"I am on the way going home." after said, Feng Chen Yi coldly hung up the phone call, moreover he accelerated his car.....

"Second young Master."

"Second Young Master." stills a same magnificent mansion, the atmosphere alike having parade.

Feng Chen Yi is coldly passing through from that maid side, bigger the house, it is even more lacking of warmness so for what? People more, even more no feeling, it does not any different compare to death body.

This is the reason why he does not want to go home, he also does not able to feel the warmness of his family.

Walking to the living room, just in time Feng Xiao is sitting on the sofa while watching television.

'Congress Yu, when was still Berson Group's CEO, did you ever support one female student as your lover?'

'No comment.'

'Congress Yu, we have a solid evidence, moreover we also have confirmed to the entertainment circle, you were indeed ever dating the world class actress Li Mei Yun before, moreover did she also ever pregnant your child? As additional it was also you the person who did the abortion for the baby that never born into this world?'

"Every reporters, let me say once again, your questions, I don't know, if there no really a solid evidence that you guys able to bring up, as for such questions, I will not answer the question.'

'Congress Yu.... Congress Yu....'

#### 332 A

Sadness is easier because its surrender.

悲伤很容易, 因为那是投降。

Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi marriage is getting near, they even had their wedding photo shoot although the rumor about Yao Yao as Yu Ao Tian's lover broke to Media, Feng Chen Yi still insisted to hold the marriage. While Yao Yao keeps on questioning him, 'Chen Yi, are you sure?'

#### Part 1 (One)

### Feng Chen Yi's Mother

'pip' a sound, Feng Xiao shut down the Television. "Chen Yi, I believe you have watched the news before, actually I have considered to accept that little girl, but now the matter is messing up to this point, whether that little girl being wrong or not, I would not accept her to be my Feng's daughter in law!"Azurro4cielo.wordpress

"Father, please let me repeat myself to you once again, I married Yao Yao, I don't need anyone acceptance. Even if you are taking all my power in Feng's group as the premise, I will not step back!"

"Chen Yi!!!" Feng Xiao never thought that his son attitude could be this stubborn? He angry and then stood up: "She is only the person who ever being supported by others, do you really think because of this kind of woman you want to ruin your future?"

"Hah." Feng Chen Yi not only laughed, slowly he walking in front his father. His dim eyes are flashing, roared: "Don't even mention if she is lover, even if today she is prostitute, I will still marry her and make her to be my wife!!!" after said, he turned and leave Feng's mansion.

Toward Feng Chen Yi's private life, Father Feng cannot meddle too much, only since he was a kid taught him, in order to marry someone as wife must get parent agreement. Who would know, this son is growing up, his wings are strong, after all because of one woman he even argue with his father!

"Anger me to death! Simply to say it's really anger me to death!!!"

"Old Master, what is going on with you?" this time, a beautiful middle age woman is going down from the stairs, she is nervously help Old Master to pat his chest, her face is looked worry.

"It is because that brat Feng Chen Yi, after all he is such stubborn to marry that lowly girl as his wife."

"Aiya, Old Master, why you must this angry? Chen Yi always goes as he wants, you get used is okay, why you must this angry?"

"How could it do? As you know, since young I have highly valued the most Chen Yi, he is smart, capable, I ever thought in the future will give all Feng's to him, who knows after all! After all he!"

At the time when that woman heard Feng Xiao said in the future all the Feng's would be given to Feng Chen Yi, at sudden the woman's eyes are flashing cold gleam.

"Haha, Old Master, how about this, I will go to have talk with that woman, ask her to let go Chen Yi, what do you think? But if that little girl does not want, I also cannot do anything."

"En, that's good too! No matter how much money that little girl wants, as long as she does not too greedy, I will satisfy her, as long as she leaves Chen Yi."

"Okay, I understand, Old Master." the middle age woman is giving faint smiles, but the shine that flashed on her eyes are so sharp.....

After three consecutive days, undoubtedly the relationship between Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian become everyone discussion topic.

Until the fourth day, the other bigger news about Feng's Group that acquire Li's group exploded; and the other news is gossip regarding The Berson Group's Vice CEO Long Ye, it is worth to take everyone attentions.

This is one positive thing about today's people, under the great pressure still have time to listen to gossips, as long as there is new news immediately it could attract everyone attentions and forgetting the past one.

"Yao Yao, regarding about Vice CEO Long's gossip, do you say, was it done by Yu Ao Tian?" walking slowly at the school yard, Gong Xiao Man pulled Yao Yao's arm, curiously asked.

"Yes it really fit his characters to do such thing."

"Well, could it prove he toward you...."

"But it does not have any relation with me!" Yao Yao is directly denied Gong Xiao Man guessing.

"Regarding toward this support matters, it would affected toward his political image, so that, he is absolutely used other thing to direct people attention so they will forget this matter."

Seeing Yao Yao who showed cold expression on her face, Gong Xiao Man feels little bit stranger.

This is not Yao Yao, in her heart Yao Yao is somene who understand to feel grateful, a type easily get moved little girl.

Still not to mention what kind of news that Yu Ao Tian made in order really to help her or not, if flashed back to the past, Yao Yao would not think that way. "Yao Yao, actually what is going on between you and Yu Ao Tian? You seems.... Really hate him?"

Although, Gong Xiao Man used to disagree Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian dating, but at the last, when she saw Yu Ao Tian treating Yao Yao good, although they broke up, logically, it wont' leave she hates him this much right.

"Xiao Man, actually there is something that I haven't told you, Yu Ao Tian he....."

#### 332 B

Guys, I really don't know whether to laugh or cry, really. Please anyone tell me, what kind of mood I need to show, either cry or laugh? Thieves even went further not only copied but type words by words of my translation works....

I haven't posted mine work more than three hours but they have been stealing my hours-spent of work hard.....

#### Part 2 (Two)

### Feng Chen Yi's Mother

'pip' 'pip' at the moment when Yao Yao wanted to tell Gong Xiao Man if Yu Ao Tian was the person who killed her mother, a luxury car stopped in front of her.

"May I ask, are you Miss Luo?" the driver of the front seat nodded politely to her.

She glances at the car and then looked at the driver: "Yes, you may ask?"

"My Madam is inviting you to have conversation inside the car."

My Madam? Who would the person would be?

She glances at that expensive car with her puzzled eyes, it seems she understood and guessed who would be the person called as 'My Madam' this person.

"Xiao Man, you go back to dorm first."

"Oh."

After Gong Xiao Man left, Yao Yao gets on that expensive car.

As seen, seating at the back seat there is woman who wear hat on her head, she is using such thick makeup so it makes people hard to guess her age, but the aura of wealthy Madam completely spread out, at one glance it able to make people to guess it this woman isn't someone ordinary.

"Miss Luo, hello. I am Feng Chen Yi's mother."

So this the case.....

Is she Feng Chen Yi's mother?

Haha, it seems her guessing didn't wrong, this woman really is Madam of the

Feng! "Aunty, Hello."

"Miss Luo, you don't need to talk such overcautious toward me. I believe, you must be known what my purpose coming over here right?"

"En, hahaha, more or less I have made my guess."

Madam Feng smiles, slowly she unzip her Hermes limited edition bag and then from the bag she is taking out one cheque: "Actually toward your wedding with Feng Chen Yi, I am quite supported. But as you know our Old Master Feng...."

"Aunty, I understood." Yao Yao gives faint smile, push away the cheque which is on Madam Feng's hand: "Money, I don't want. Regarding about my wedding with Feng Chen Yi, I will talk with him." it seems, useless.

"Haha, Miss Luo, you don't need to have talk with Chen Yi, if you are really want to stay together with him, then you must persistence with your principle, my coming today is only to follow orders. I don't wish, you will tell Chen Yi about my coming looking for you, understand?" Madam Feng smiles when keep back the cheque.

There is moment, Yao Yao little bit vacant.

Since the case Madam Feng coming is to separate her with Feng Chen Yi, why so soon she retreated? And even showed her support? Is it, as she said, she only coming here in order to follow an order?

"Little girl, after all you have chosen to stay together with Feng Chen Yi, you rest assured, as long as both of you stay strong. Our Old Master will certainly give his blessing, while I will help both of you, believe on me." Madam Feng is holding Yao Yao's hand with gentle nature.

#### 333

Don't comment anything, As long as you and I understand what is going on, it's more than enough. Just keep on supporting azurro4cielo.wordpress more chapter is going to post. And please, don't troublesome yourselves to email me, asking about the password. Because you really don't have to do so.

#### Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao wedding party

The car that takes Yao Yao to Yu Ao Tian celebration party is moving fast. While the person who is driving the car is Xia Ren Liang who glanced at Yao Yao, his lips curled up and make faint smiled.

"You, what are you laughing for?"

"HeHe, I think, today must be so many ladies who put heavy makeup and also wearing splendid gown, but you?" when he said this, Xia Ren Liang looked at ordinary Yao Yao.

"So what's?"

"Yao Yao, this time is one of good opportunity to get closer to the top management, why didn't you dressing more beautiful little bit?"

Huh...

At the moment she touched Madam Feng's hand, paused for moment feeling as if the bones caught a chill.

Lifts eyes, facing with Madam Feng's face which filled with smiling face, but somewhat why she feels Madam Feng's smile is too fake? "Aunty, don't you care with those gossips?"

"Of course I don't care. I believed on you and also believed on Feng Chen Yi's eyes, both of you must be stay together, understand?"

Haha, can this called as blessing? After all their thorny marriage has been getting Feng Chen Yi's mother blessing! Ha.....

She is afraid to tell this such gentle mother the truth, the marriage between she and Feng Chen Yi are actually only a transaction, that's all. "Thank you, aunty. If there is nothing else, I take my leave first."

"En, go back." Madam Feng is smiling when sending off Yao Yao who gets

down from the car. Just at the moment when the car door closed, at sudden her facial expression changed dim: "Lao Zhang, drive!"

"Yes. Madam."

The expensive and luxurious car starts the engine, not long after that the car arrived at Feng's mansion.

Madam Feng is standing in front of the villa, at one glance, she has changed her expression as if feeling difficulty when coming in.

"Madam!"

"Madam!"

"Where is Master?"

"Replying to Madam, Master is at back yard."

After Madam Feng heard it, immediately she rolled her eyes: "Giving me to settle this matter, after all he still have time to take care the flowers? Really!" she hands over her limited bag to the maid, faster walking to the back yard. "Old Master."

"Ni Pei, how's thing going on?" Feng Xiao is putting down the sprinkler and hurrying walking until in front of Madam Feng: "Did that girl agree to leave Chen Yi?"

Madam Feng is pretending to heave a sigh, in difficulty shaking her head: "She not agreed."

"Even giving money still not agree?"

"Not like that, the price that she said...."

"Since she has said her price, just give her!"

"But her mouth is asking for 4 Billion!"

"What?" once Feng Xiao heard it, at sudden he is raging in fume: "Really such greedy, My Feng family does not care with this 4 billion, since she wanted it, just give it for her!"

Madam Feng really never thought that Feng Xiao would say something like this, because of his son, he really does not care about money. She is creasing her forehead, with bitterness said: "Master, thing seems not very simple like you thought, that woman perhaps left Chen Yi after she got the money. But, how about Chen Yi?"

"Just tell Chen Yi about that woman!"

"Not like that, Old Master." Madam Feng is helplessly shaking her head: "You see, that girl isn't married yet, but the news has been spreading on the surface, but Chen Yi, he not even care not even a bit.

Although we tell Chen Yi, that girl has accepted our money, would Chen Yi believe us? He would only hate us more. I think.... how about this way."

"Say!"

"Since Chen Yi likes that little girl so much, just let him to marry her. When the time comes, we can ask them to live at home (refer to Feng's mansion), if she has bad intention, it will make us easy to watch her, don't you think so?"

"What crap of way are you saying?" Feng Xiao is sitting in the chair with anger, roared: "I won't let my son to marry a woman like that as my Feng!!!!"

"Old Master, you shouting at me is something useless. Does Chen Yi really ever listen to you? If you keeps on stopping by this way, it will only make Chen Yi hates you more. Why you must bitter yourself?"

"Ni Pei, I want to be alone for while, you take your leave first."

"Understood." Madam Feng is curled her hands tightly with hatred, turned her back and then get inside the Villa.

Father Feng who is siting alone in the back yard creased his forehead, his face is dim.

Regarding toward this son, he can be said dearest and doting him so much, but more he doting him more this son going further from him.

Of course, Father Feng clearly understands, why he such loving and doting his son but this son even acts such cold toward him. "Huh.... Ya Shi, ours son, until today he stills hate me. You say, should I really let that little girl to be part of our family, so that Chen Yi will be happy?" gently murmured, he is slowly taking out his mobile phone from his pocket: "Chen Yi, I agree with your marriage matter,

but I have condition, must be fulfilled, after your marriage, you must move and live with me together!!"

'Yesterday, Feng Group announced an explosive news, that was about the Second Young Master of Feng Group who is also General Manager Feng Chen Yi, within three days which is first December, he is going to marry someone as his wife!'

'Every viewers, according to the detail investigation, Feng Chen Yi future wife is someone who study at First University, coming from ordinary background. It seems this is going to be Cinderella marriage story, does not know whether this woman who comes from poor family can adapt to rich life or not?'

'Last year, Prince William when he married his princess, believed that not less of women evidence the fairy tale love story; while within these three days, for once again there will be another fairy-tale marriage. As reported, The Second Young Master of Feng and his future wife have been knowing each other for 6 years when both of then studied in Japan, these two people love story has been running for 6 years, and now finally they reap the fruit. This is too touching and treasure.'

After Feng Group done with the marriage announcement, all media are overwhelming in order reported about Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao's marriage, more importantly is the media even dig out about their past, and occur many rumors.

Now the news that spread in the spread all the headline are talking about this kind of wealthy marriage, at same time also exposed prince William and princess Kate's marriage which held on last year.

"Ao Tian!!' in the midnight, Long Ye is holding a newspaper in his hand while rushing to Yu Ao Tian's house. "Have you seen...." at the moment he sees the light of television, he knows, it seems that Yu Ao Tian has gotten the news regarding Xiao Meng Li's marriage.

'pip' Yu Ao Tian is expressionless when turn off the television, his bottomless eyes are turned and looked at Long Ye: "You are looking for me only to tell me, about Luo Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi's marriage news?"

"Not like that, Ao Tian! Xiao Meng Li is so sudden wanted to marry Feng Chen

Yi, is it because she want to get support from Feng Chen Yi to revenge???"

"Perhaps." Yu Ao Tian is laughed devilishly at same time titled his head, the expression in his face is such flat, as if there is none of his business, he is also alike others commoners, take this conversation as if tea house rumors.

But Long Ye understands, more Yu Ao Tian showed this kind of attitudes, more pissed off he actually is!!!

"Ao Tian, let me have talk with Xiao Meng Li, let me tell her the truth...."

"Long Ye! Let me tell you for once again!" his cold eyes are gleaming dangerously, he gloomy said: "My matter with Luo Yao Yao, you must not interfere!!"

"Ao Tian, so you will let Xiao Meng Li to marry Feng Chen Yi??? do you really don't have any objection?"

"That's her choice." that's true, it indeed her choice! The bird's wing is stronger, although he wanted to break it, but at same time he is not able to do so!

"Huh...." seeing the expressionless face of Yu Ao Tian, Long Ye is only can let out long sigh, murmured: "Why.... things turned to be like this..... it obviously everything was okay before."

# The glamour wedding party.

Three days later.....

Because of Feng Chen Yi's marriage, Feng's family really not care to spend about 20 Billion, in order to make this kind of wedding party.

The wedding party is using imported tulip flowers, every wedding sweets are wrapped by golden foil, while the wedding party location at seven stars hotel, the entire hotel has booked by the Feng's family. As the wedding car, the bride's wedding dress are custom made, and the others detail things, none of them isn't the best things. As seen, for Father Feng this son indeed so important.

The wedding feast is holding at this seven stars hotel's rooftop with openscenery view, so that every guest not only can enjoy the beauty scenery of the entire city. But at same time they also can enjoy the rooftop rockery set, streams, and also other differences type of environment.

One hundred and sixty table, all seats are occupied, the people who able to sit down at this place are those who backgrounds worth more than billion. Of course, it hasn't included the politician.

"Chen Yi, congratulation, today you are the bridegroom."

"Haha, thank you, Uncle Li."

"Chen Yi, it's good to marry and settle down as this soon, by this way your father can rest assured to hand over Feng's group to you."

"Uncle Liu, thanks for your auspicious words."

At the entrance, Feng Chen Yi who is wearing white suit standing at reception oval flower arch welcoming one by one the guest who are coming.

"Huh, Old Master is favor Chen Yi more. As I could remember during my

marriage, Old Master didn't even spend more than one billion, but when that brat Feng Chen Yi married after all Old Master spent such much money!" sitting at the first row table, Feng Chen Rui showing his jealous expression and pouted.

Behind them, they are Long Ye and Wang. Seeing these two first class men, the Financial Department ladies can be considered as lucky for this rare chance.

"Why Vice CEO Han does not come?" The group of Han Li Shang "Fans" seems to be so disappointed because not seeing their idol coming.

"Vice CEO Han is seldom coming to this kind of occasion."

"Oh, that's right. He is such cold person."

"Hello CEO Yu, General Manager Long, General Director Wang." Everyone is greeting these men.

Yu Ao Tian smiled elegantly: "This is personal gathering, everyone relaxes don't to be so formal like in office, just having your fun."

"Yao Yao, do you like domineering man like CEO Yu?" Xia Ren Liang who is standing next to Yao Yao suddenly asked.

#### **The Glamor Wedding Party Part II**

Sitting beside him is Madam Feng who patting her son's hand: "Chen Rui, compare to this small matter you are really useless, if you want to compare, compare with future."

"Future? It is like you not knowing that, in business world, in politician world, actually they are more able to accept married people. This time after Feng Chen Yi married, perhaps there would be many business men who are more depending and trust him. Mom, as I heard, he able to marry with that little girl, it was because of you?"

"That's right, it was me, what's matter?"

"Mom, why you get involved with this matter?"

"Hah, Chen Rui, if not because Feng Chen Yi that brat wanted to marry with

that lowly slut, it would give a help to you, do you think why I wanted to get involved?" Said Madam Feng, her cunning eyes are straightly looking at her own son.

"Help... me?"

"It's true that I was the person who gave such suggestion to Old Master, I told him to let Feng Chen Yi to marry that lowly slut and then go back to live at home. Old Master really hates that lowly slut, every day everyone is living under same roof, soon or later will wrangle each others. Do you think until the time arrive.... who the person will get the benefit?"

After listened to his mother words, Feng Chen Rui finally gained himself: "Mom, you are really.... ha, well I just keeps sitting and watching the tigers fighting!"

"Ah, does that person Chairman Yu?"

"It seems so, never thought currently he is so busy but still gives his time to attend Feng Second Young Master wedding party?"

"That's right, Feng Second Younger Master really have face."

Said few of the guests who are sitting at beside, Feng Chen Rui is looking at the entrance: "Really is Yu Ao Tian! How can he come? Ha, interesting....."

Indeed recently Yao Yao is sending messages to Long Ye, having phone calls, but all because they are doing thing for Yu Ao Tian, so that they are contacting closer little bit. Impossible because of this, this woman has suspicion that she might have relationship with General Manager Long?

"She is only one of my employees! I am contacting her because of the company matter!" in front of many people, Long Ye can't say much, if there is no one, he won't be such patience to talk this much nonsense with this woman?

"Company's matter? Ha, talking about company matter, could it spend for entire night? You think that I didn't know that both of you are living together, this matter!!!"

"Uh...." when this woman said, inside the cafeteria indistinct noises coming from.

Actually what the woman said wasn't wrong, Yao Yao indeed staying at the same apartment with Long Ye.

"You followed me?"

#### The Glamor Wedding Party III

"Chen Yi, you married while don't you tell me?" at the entrance, Yu Ao Tian is wearing ash-grey western suit, taking Mo Xue Tong along with him, slowly walking right in front of Feng Chen Yi.

Regarding to this marriage matter, on time when the invitation card was going to print his secretary had asked him whether he wanted to invite Yu Ao Tian or not, he even especially said, didn't need to give it to Yu Ao Tian, never thought after all he coming here by his will!

"Chairman Yu, even thought I didn't make any call, but don't you still come, do you?"

"Of course!" Yu Ao Tian pair of eyes flashed, his good looking face is slowly coming closer to Feng Chen Yi's ear, whispered: "Just so soon, I have replaced your position as Ex. How can I not coming to join my Ex-lover's wedding party?"

Every words that Yu Ao Tian said filled with provocative tone, dealing with this, Feng Chen Yi is smiling elegantly: "Well, chairman Yu, please get inside, I will let you understand about the trip has been well worthwhile"."

"Huh, Chen Yi, words don't speak too soon, when the time arrived.... you don't let me to see you as laughing stock." Yu Ao Tian curved upward his mouth makes a smile, he expressing so closely toward Feng Chen Yi by patting his shoulder, and then bring Mo Xue Tong along to get inside.

"Congress Yu, you are also coming."

"Chairman Yu, long time no see." at the moment when Yu Ao Tian gets inside, there are lot of guests who passionately greeting him.

As seen today, his position in business world is something no one dare to offend, even the political world everyone still need to give him way to pass.

"Such coincident, Officer Liu, never thought that we will going to meet in here." Yu Ao Tian's face is showing smiling face when greeting those few people, but that bottomless eyes are slowly looking at Mo Xue Tong.

She replied him by nodding her head, secretly disappeared from Yu Ao Tian's side......

"Not like that, Ao Tian! Xiao Meng Li is so sudden wanted to marry Feng Chen Yi, is it because she want to get support from Feng Chen Yi to revenge???"

"Perhaps." Yu Ao Tian is laughed devilishly at same time titled his head, the expression in his face is such flat, as if there is none of his business, he is also alike others commoners, take this conversation as if tea house rumors.

But Long Ye understands, more Yu Ao Tian showed this kind of attitudes, more pissed off he actually is!!!

"Ao Tian, let me have talk with Xiao Meng Li, let me tell her the truth...."

"Long Ye! Let me tell you for once again!" his cold eyes are gleaming dangerously, he gloomy said: "My matter with Luo Yao Yao, you must not interfere!!"

"Ao Tian, so you will let Xiao Meng Li to marry Feng Chen Yi??? do you really don't have any objection?"

"That's her choice." that's true, it indeed her choice! The bird's wing is stronger, although he wanted to break it, but at same time he is not able to do so!

"Huh...." seeing the expressionless face of Yu Ao Tian, Long Ye is only can let out long sigh, murmured: "Why.... things turned to be like this..... it obviously everything was okay before."

#### The Glamor Wedding Party IV

Makeup room......

In front of the makeup mirror, Yao Yao is makeup beautifully, her black hair is wearing shining crown, simply to say she is looked alike princess from fairly tale, very cute but also mesmerizing.

"My Beloved, today you are extremely beautiful! Come, wear your wedding dress." as the bride maid, Gong Xiao Man excitedly takes that wedding dress which cost million dollars.

Yao Yao with help of two assistants changed her wedding dress with this

diamond wedding dress.

The design of the shoulder, the waist and also the expansion of the hem, give full expression of delicacy her beauty and her natural princess aura to the maximum.

"The power of money indeed not ordinary, simply to say this piece of wedding dress is perfectly beautiful!! ah, Yao Yao you are so happy, simply to say you are the happiest woman in the world now." if said Gong Xiao Man not envied Yao Yao, it was something impossible!

Her own best sister isn't only married 24K golden turtle, but the bride groom also her first love, who would not envy?

"Miss Luo, Second Young Master said that you must wear this." one of the assistants is hand over one wooden box.

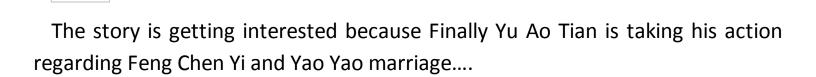
Yao Yao opened and looked at it, so that it is a piece of Daisy series. Haha, the necklace that being broken by Yu Ao Tian last time had repaired by Feng Chen Yi?

"Woah, isn't this yours and Feng Chen Yi token of love? Come, let me help you to wear it." Gong Xiao Man is hurried to take over the box and then carefully to put that little daisy to Yao Yao.

Looking at the mirror it reflects the beautiful princess, Gong Xiao Man who standing behind her can't help not to sigh: "As if day dreaming. I still remembered, that time how happy you were when you told me about this little daisy meaning. That time I thought, you perhaps would marry Feng Chen Yi right? But who knows, things had come to this point, while you..... but not thought, both of you are circling and still at finally together."

"Yao Yao, see the current you, I even thought these two years emptiness as if never happened before. You and Feng Chen Yi as if always, always dating, perhaps this is called as fate, the heaven has determined him to be your husband! Hope you be happy, my beloved....."

### 338A



### Part 1 (One)

# The Bride being kidnapped

Gong Xiao Man's word as if an adhesive in general.

Toward this kind of wedding party, actually until this minutes Yao Yao still doubted, actually should she marry or not?

Speak honestly, she does not matter at all, that time in order for her grandpa medical fee she had crossed one time; now in order to revenge for mother, what must she afraid of?

But....

How's Chen Yi?

Is she really wanted to drag Feng Chen Yi together with her?

But after listened to Gong Xiao Man, her contradiction feeling in her heart suddenly steady and at peace.

Seeing everything in front of her eyes, seeing the wedding dress which she wears, and even the small piece of Daisy, could she really forget the emptiness within last two years, just straightly forward all scenery to the next two years.

He ever did wrong toward her before in the past; she also had endured the past before.

Could she?

Could she try to look for the past feeling of loving him before, could she search back the heart beating memories?

"Hey, just now when I was at the wedding venue I have spotted Berson Group Chairman."

"Are you sure?"

"Really, he is so handsome, compare to with him in television, his real person is more good looking."

"Go, I also want to go and see him." few of the assistants are gossiping in low voice tone but still their words are completely being heard by Yao Yao.

Does she really able to escape from two years ago?

It seems impossible, because as long as Yu Ao Tian still live, she could not forgive this person!

"Yao Yao?" Gong Xiao Man can see Yao Yao restless reaction when she heard Yu Ao Tian's name, hurried she comfort her: "It's okay."

That's right, it's okay! Everything is going to be ok!

<b>330</b>	D

# Part 2 (Two)

#### The Bride Being Kidnapped

But, why she feels such uneasy?

Hard to imagine, how Yu Ao Tian reacted when he found out she would going to marry Feng Chen Yi, but, both of them don't have any feeling for each other, he must not have any reaction, right?

That's right, there is no reason for him to have any objection, but why Yu Ao Tian is coming here to join the wedding party? Is it only to embarrassed her for moment?

So regretful, she won't let Yu Ao Tian gets what he wants, she wants to complete this wedding perfectly!

The coming of Yu Ao Tian, undoubtedly only to make Yao Yao hates him more, this strong hatred as if a pushover, so that she even more affirm with completing this wedding.

"Not good, there is fight in the wedding place." suddenly, there is woman's voice from corridor.

Yao Yao's heart is tightened, at the moment she wanted to stand up and take a look, hurried Gong Xiao Man stopped her: "Now you are bride, cannot randomly move, let me help you to check what is going on." after said, she hurried run out from the makeup room inside.

Who knows, only few minutes, for once again there is a sound door being opened.

Yao Yao is curiously creasing her forehead, at sudden she turned her head and looked at the doorway: "Xiao Man, why are you coming so fast, what is... how can it be you?"

Looking at that figure which is coming over toward her, Yao Yao is uneasy standing up, she is stepping backwards. No, don't.... don't....

"Uh!!!"

The white cloth which had drug cover Yao Yao's nose, she exert all her strength to go forward, but at the short few minutes she has already losing her consciousness.....

### Wedding ceremony venue.

FCY YY marriage	

The guests are almost come crowed, the wedding is scheduled to start on four o'clock afternoon, it's only few minutes left before it to start. Feng Chen Yi stopped to welcoming guest, tidy his necktie: "Lisa, go, and tell Yao Yao to prepare."

"Yes, General Manager Feng."

"Not, not good, Second Young Master." when Lisa wanted to go to call Yao Yao, one of the assistants panicking and hurried running over: "The bride.... the bride is gone!"

'Thump'

As if a piece of invincible big stone suddenly hit on Feng Chen Yi's chest, he narrowed his eyes, his eyes are looking at Yu ao Tian who is sitting on the guest seat.

He could affirm that Yu Ao Tian hasn't even moved from his seat, so how can Yao Yao disappear? "Have you looked for her?"

"Still looking for her."

"Where's the bride maid?"

"At makeup room."

After Feng Chen Yi heard, faster he rushing to the makeup room.

"Feng Chen Yi!"

"Xiao Man, how can Yao Yao disappear?"

"I also don't know ah!" Gong Xiao Man frowned in difficulty: "Obviously everything was good, everything was good. But suddenly someone said that there were fighting in wedding venue, so that I went to check of it, the result nothing was happened, so when I come...."

7	20	
<b>3</b>	<b>30</b>	L

This is such classic and childish scene between Feng Chen Yi and Yu Ao Tian

#### Part 3 (Three)

# The Bride Being Kidnapped

Feng Chen Yi pair of cold eyes flashed: "How about others? Inside the room other than you, wasn't there anyone accompany Yao Yao?"

Listened to Feng Chen Yi roared, the other two assistants nervously answered: "Feng, General Manager Feng....we... we that time were also at... at the wedding venue."

"Damn it!" his facial expression dim, angrily he overturned the whole thing in makeup table: "What did you guys do? Still not hurrying looking for Yao Yao!!!!"

"Yes!"

Seeing the time, it has passed of time for wedding ceremony, the guests are clearly not sitting down.

"What is going on? Why the wedding ceremony hasn't started yet?"

"Don't know. Didn't they say it started at 4. it has passed 5 minutes already, the bride and bridegroom aren't spotted at anywhere. Really strange."

"What is Chen Yi doing? Why the wedding ceremony hasn't started?" Feng Xiao who sat down at the host seat showed his dim expression, he could accept this daughter in law actually could mean that he had made hundred steps back, the good time that set for the wedding ceremony has dragged to this late.

"Every guests, please keep calm down, I am Lisa General Manager Feng's secretary." Lisa took over Feng Chen Yi's position, standing up in front of the stage.

The crowd cast their eyes through.

"Just now our General Manger Feng feeling not really comfortable suddenly, being sent out to hospital, the detail of the sickness not really clear yet. So that, today wedding ceremony is canceled, withal, I express my deep sorry."

"After all The second young master gets sick during this time? Really unlucky."

"That's right, impossible to marry someone with bad luck, right? Not yet married into but have already made husband get sick." every guests are discussing and make their guessing, but none of them could guess actually the bride is being kidnapped.

Feng Xiao who got the information suddenly his face is tensed and then rush out from the big hall.

Lisa who is responsible for the guests aftermath, accompanying.

This time, sitting silently in guests seat Yu Ao Tian is smiling devilish, stood up, slowly walking to leave the wedding venue.....

When he arrived at where his car being parked, at the moment when he wanted to unlock his car door.

No one knows that there is a cold sound flowing from his behind: "Chairman Yu."

He stood at his original place, smiling devilish turned his head: "Chen Yi, aren't you sick? I see, you are quite okay."

"Hah, Chairman Yu impossible for you not to know why suddenly the wedding ceremony being canceled today right?" Feng Chen Yi walked slowly forcing to get close to Yu Ao Tian.

He is pretending not to understand by shrugged: "Isn't it because your sickness?"

"Yao Yao is being kidnapped!"

"Oh?" Yu Ao Tian is showing up his shocked expression: "Aiya, wedding ceremony was getting to start but the bride is being kidnapped, have you been going outside to search?"

"It is useless for me to search, just see whether Chairman Yu going to let the person off or not!!!"

## 339 A

Australia-R18-Rating			

**Chapter 339** 

# Part 1 (One)

### The painful of 'first time'

"What are you saying, Chen Yi. Impossible for you not knowing that I was at the wedding venue for all this time?"

"That's right, you were at the wedding venue, well...." Feng Chen Yi's face is dim, coldly said: "Where is your secretary? I have asked Gong Xiao Man, she said that was a woman who screaming at the corridor before, said there was a fight at wedding venue, when came back Yao Yao has already disappeared. Such high skill of luring the tiger out of the mountain, didn't it something that thought by Chairman Yu?"

Ha, just expected he didn't underestimate Feng Chen Yi! Alike this kind of tense circumstance, Feng Chen Yi stills be able keep calm, his head such clear to find out the real culprit, speak frankly it really rare. "Chen Yi, catch handed the thief. Impossible for you to have less enemies right? Why don't you think carefully whether it done by your enemies or not? Perhaps the other woman who did it?"

"Li Ruo Ting?" an instantaneously Feng Chen Yi said this name.

Yu Ao Tian is giving a smile, conciliate by patting Feng Chen Yi's shoulder: "Hope you to find your wife faster, I take my leave first." after said, he starts the engine and left.

And then, not long after he left the hotel, Yu Ao Tian's mobile phone notification led flashing, read his short message.... 'The good is arrived at home.' few words, it has cleared meaning.

"Hah." at sudden flip back his mobile phone, Yu Ao Tian's mouth is curved upward, makes a smile.....

Don't... don't... don't!

Suddenly opened eyes, in front of eyes there are vast darkness, Yao Yao can feel that there is piece of cloth that covered her eyes.

Where is it?

Didn't he just now prepare herself for the wedding ceremony? How could she....

Oh, she remembered!!

As she remembered not long after Gong Xiao Man went out, someone was coming to the makeup room, and this person was....

Mo Xue Tong!

The person who kidnapped her was Mo Xue Tong, but.... Yu Ao Tian must the person who asked her to do so!

'Thump' 'Thump' her heart skip beat. 'uh! Uh! Uh! Her mouth is trying to let out some voices but stuffed with something, her pair of hand it seems being tied on something. But she can feel clearly that she must be lying down on bed.

What does the demon Yu Ao Tian want to do?

"Bao Bei, you wake up?"

Suddenly, her ears heard Yu Ao Tian who speaking not in rush, she is moving her body, constantly to let out 'uh uh' sounds.

"Hah." sitting on the chair Yu Ao Tian is smiling coldly, before, he had pulled off the black cloth that covered her eyes.

A piercing light hit, subconsciously she narrowed her eyes, in the process with adapting to the light from surrounding, just realized this....

Yu Ao Tian's apartment!

Still thought, she would not ever to come here again; still thought, last time would be their last time. Never thought, on the wedding day, after all Yu Ao Tian is forcing to take her to here, actually what will he going to do?

Eyes which filled with hatred but at same time puzzled not understanding, looking at Yu Ao Tian's pair of bottomless eyes.

It has been sometime to have such close distant with this good looking face, especially, in the past as long as she looked at that pair of eyes she would feel afraid. But since when, she has not that feared or tried to avoid at that pair of

eyes.

But this moment....

This pair of bottomless eyes for once again flashed an eyesight as if able to taking herself to hell, it gives a chill for those who sees it.

"Really beautiful. Just now when I entered the room looking at you simply to say I was not daring to believe, My Little Thing after she wearing a wedding dress she changed to be someone so mesmerizing." Yu Ao Tian is looked alike fool when smiling, that long and slender fingers exploring her body.

'Uh!' she felt disgusting, creasing her forehead, restless keep on moving her body, 'stop to touch me! Stop to touch me!'

## 339 B

Australia-R18-Rating			

**Chapter 339** 

# Part 2 (Two)

#### The Painful of 'first time'

"Bao Bei, what kind of eyesight that is?" Yu Ao Tian's palm is stopped in front of her chest, his mouth is slowly curved upward showing sinister smile: "It was obviously not long ago, you body was still enjoying my teasing. Why, in very short time, you body hasn't gotten used anymore toward me?"

No! No! She never enjoyed the teasing of this rotten bastard man. Doesn't want to hear it, does not want to hear him to bring up about past.

It is so disgusting! So disgusting!

The past scenery one by one flowing in front of her eyes alike film pieces, she really wanted to forget the past she ever had with this man, the teasing which able to make her to lose her control.

"It seems.... I need to help you looking back the old memories!" after said, Yu Ao Tian cold eyes flashed.

Without waiting for Yao Yao to react.....

The white wedding dress as if the holy symbol torn by him in the middle!

Rotten bastard! Yu Ao Tian simply is a rotten bastard, beast!

Since her pair of hand being tied on the bed head, the mouth is stuffed, Yao Yao pair of eyes is filled with hatred, deathly she glared at Yu Ao Tian.

"Bao Bei, during this time with Feng Chen Yi, did he ever played this place?" after said that man pair of cold bottomless eyes glancing at the white flawless neck....

'uh...' feeling that big hand touching, her small hands are curled to make fist.

"Huh? Today reaction is really disappointed." Yu Ao Tian looks unhappily heave a sigh: "Just as expected, still need to hear your voices it will rise my excitement!!" pair of dim eyes, he takes off the handkerchief that covered Yao Yao's mouth.

"Yu Ao Tian, you are rotten bastard! Faster let me go!!!"

"En humph, this is much familiar." he is smiling devilish, gently he lifts up her chin, slowly said: "Bao Bei, when you are swearing me, shouldn't you think carefully of something, what things do you owe me?"

"Owed? Yu Ao Tian, the money that I owed you I had asked Long Qi to give it to you! What other thing that I have owed you?" Yao Yao fiercely gritting her teeth, that few words are almost out from her teeth.

"The thing that I mean isn't money, but...." suddenly his hand that hold her chin put little bit strength, he gloomy said: "Your promise!!!"

Promise????

What kind of promise she owed Yu Ao Tian?

'I will not betray on you, at least within these three years I won't betray on you.....' is this promise?

Indeed, her marriage with Feng Chen Yi is betraying her initial promise with Yu Ao Tian before. But.....

"Have you remembered?" Yu Ao Tian is showing is devilish smile when asked, for once again he grabbed her chin tightly.

She can feel her chin is hurt, but Yao Yao is enduring the pain, gritting her teeth, growled softly: "Since the day you killed my mother, I don't have any promise toward you anymore!!!"

"Hah, since this the case...." loosen his hand, Yu Ao Tian is standing up and walked to the bed end: "Bao Bei, have you done it with Feng Chen Yi?"

Why does he ask me this thing?

Her heart is uneasy and restless, nervously she swallowing her saliva, open her eyes staring at him but does not answer anything.

"In my heart you are the fruit that I have nurtured for such long time, if there is someone who tasted you earlier, my heart is really bitter." Yu Ao Tian is pretending hopeless by shaking his head, that pair of bottomless eyes have power to send a cold chill to everyone who sees it.

"The most important, I never played with second hand thing. But today.... because of you I willing to break my principle!!"

Th	nis content is password protected	. To view it please enter you	ır password
belc	ow:		

Password:		Enter
assitterar		

Australia-R18-Rating		

Dear readers, please be patience and don't be panic whenever you see password chapters, it NEITHER like I am not replying yours email NOR making you begging for this translation Password but, I have too many things to cover so please be understanding. I won't leave or ignore you but please just give me time. Spamming in order to obtain the password really no need to do.

Heaven knows, his mood when he got the news about Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi's marriage. It was feeling as if, the beloved pet that he has nurtured with his utmost, at last biting him without saying anything and then running into other people's embrace!

Thinking to this point, this man was purposely faster his pace.

"Uh...." the body has already felt numb but still could not hold Yu Ao Tian crazy thrusting, for once again she could feel the pain as if her body being torn.

Gradually when facing with that man's pair of eyes, it showed eyes filled with hatred.

Yao Yao really wanted to ask herself whether she saw mistaken?

Yu Ao Tian's hatred? Does he have right to hate?

The person's mother who being killed was hers! And now the person who is being tormented is her, okay?

Hah, really so mockery, so ridiculous.....

Whatsoever, whatsoever, just let everything naturally progressing by this way, this way, it's only make her hate him more, doesn't this also go, does it?

For once again shut close the eyes, the hurtful tears wet her small white face, she is using her strength to bite hard her lips until there is fresh blood stain dripping from her corner lips, it is represented indomitable life!

She..... won't be ever bow down her head anymore in front of this devil!

\*\*

In Feng Chen Yi's place.....

"Chen Yi, Chen Yi, what happened to you?" After got the news about Feng Chen Yi's sickness, soon Feng Xiao rushing to come to his place.

Feng Chen Yi is pretending to sick by lying down on his bed, shaking his head hinting that he is okay to his father.

"Doctor Li, what disease my son gotten?"

This Doctor Li is Feng Chen Yi's personal doctor, naturally he would say according what Feng Chen Yi asked for: "Master Feng, Second Young Master is just having stomach cramps, take a rest, taking a rest it will be okay."

"So this the case...." Feng Xiao relief, heave a sigh, his eyes are sweeping this not too big single room apartment: "Where is Luo Yao Yao?"

"That... uncle. Chen Yi is suddenly sick, as Zi Xuan seen, just sent off the bride first to her house." Hei Yan Long feared that Old Master Feng would find out if Yao Yao is being kidnapped, so that he is looking an excuse, explained.

"humph, really, hasn't passed the door (become part of family) she has become bad luck for Feng Chen Yi's health, really bad luck star!!!! she really is Shang Men Xing (woman who brings ill luck to her husband's family)!!!" Feng Xiao is curled his hand into tight fist, normally elders are more superstitious, but this is much better rather than let him to find out if Yao Yao suddenly being kidnapped.

"Uncle, let me take care of Chen Yi, you go back first to have rest."

"En, this is good too, so trouble you Yan Long."

"This what I should do, I should do." Hei Yan Long personally sending off Old Master Feng left the room.

Feng Chen Yi also asked Doctor Li to leave.

He takes off the quilt, faster get down from the bed: "Yan Long, has Zi Xuan made any phone call yet?"

"Not yet...."

'ding dong' 'ding dong'

"Perhaps that Zi Xuan is coming back." Hei Yan Long rushed to the front of door, opened the door, just expected the person is Ou Yang Zi Xuan: "Zi Xuan, how's thing?"

Ou Yang Zi Xuan is steady his rough breathing, helplessly he shaking his head: "It was not done by the Li's family!"

At the time when Yao Yao had disappeared, Feng Chen Yi has been arranging

Ou Yang Zi Xuan to go to Li's household to look for Yao Yao, while he and Hei Yan Long were responsible to taking care of Old Master Feng's mood.

And now it seems, if this was not done by Li Ruo Ting, so this must absolutely done by.....

Feng Chen Yi's face is dimming when he taking out his mobile phone from his pocket.

'Hello, the phone that you dial is out of reach.'

"Damn it! The person really is Yu Ao Tian!!!!" 'Bam' a sound, at sudden he tossing away the mobile phone from his hand, faster he walked toward the door.

Ou Yang Zi Xuan and Hei Yan Long as they see, hurried they stopped him at the front door: "Chen Yi, where are you going?"

"Go to Berson!!"

"you see, now is already 7 at night, Berson has already closed! Moreover, we don't have evidence, how can we say Yu Ao Tian done it? If this matter you make bigger, it will only draw Media attention. When that time comes, everyone will know the matter about Yao Yao being kidnapped, there won't be any benefit either for you or Yao Yao in the future!"

The words that said by Hei Yan Long is so logical, not long ago there was news about Yao Yao as Yu Ao Tian's lover, supported by him, the result at the wedding day, bride is being kidnapped, and the person who doing the kidnapped was Yu Ao Tian, this would only become a laughing stock for this dark marriage!

"So what to do? Do we only sit here and wait until Yu Ao Tian sendig off Yao Yao back?" Feng Chen Yi could not wait, now he really could not accept the reality Yao Yao is with that dangerous man!

"How about this, Chen Yi, you wait the news at home. I will go together with Hei Yan Long to Yu Ao Tian's place. Search whether we can find any trace or clue about Yao Yao."

"I want to go too!"

"You can't, your current state now is so impulsive, if you go, it only make thing more chaotic, when it happen, it gonna attract Media, and whatever we had done before would be fruitless." Ou Yang Zi Xuan is thought much completely, Feng Chen Yi when he is facing with big problems, indeed he could still maintain calm attitude, but when he facing with his beloved woman who fell into other man's hands, he could not give any guarantee if Feng Chen Yi still be able to maintain his calm attitude.

"That's right, Chen Yi, this mater better let us settle it. You rest assured, you wait at home for our call." After Hei Yan Long said, he followed Ou Yang Zi Xuan left his house.

Once these two persons are arrived at the apartment entrance, at sudden Hei Yan Long's face is dimmed: "If Yu Ao Tian does not want to let off the person, actually, actually no matter how both of us coming over here to ask person, it is useless."

Ou Yang Zi Xuan also knows this principle, the world is boundless, let say that Yu Ao Tian randomly taking and hiding Yao Yao at one place, they also cannot do anything. Moreover Yu Ao Tian initial background is from underworld, his reaction and his observation ability is higher than few times compare to the ordinary people. Although they able to investigate actually it also useless.

"But if we didn't say that, how could we calm down Feng Chen Yi's mood?"

"That's right, Zi Xuan, don't you know Berson Group's Vice CEO Long Ye? Can you go and ask him?"

"Hah, Long Ye is Yu Ao Tian's confidant, You think would Yu Ao Tian or he would help us?"

"Huh.... forget it, well it stills better we trying to search by ourselves then."

"En, only can give a try." These two persons sighed, separately both of them drive their own cars and then heading to different house of Yu Ao Tian.

But.....

Yu Ao Tian's small apartment actually placed little too desolate, not to mention whether they can find it or not, as afraid even if the government asked police to go searching perhaps won't be able to find that place.....

For the full three days time, Yao Yao has been kidnapped inside that little

apartment, when she wakes up there is endless making love, when she is sleeping there is endless nightmare.

Her inside, her body, every inches of her body is covered with that man's body fluid, even though having a clean wash it only wash the surface, but the deep 'kind' which humiliating her heart is something could not be washed out.

"Little Thing, time to have meal!"

From her back, the man cold voice is flowing. She is so weak lying on the bed, slowly she opens her eyes, her eyes are looking at deep mark on her wrist.

She didn't know since when Yu Ao Tian had untied her hands, the only thing that she knows, although her hands are already untied, she also does not have any energy to escape, moreover she does not have any strength to resist the endless demand of this man.

Close her eyes, as if she does not hear his voice.

٦	his content is password protected	To view it pleas	e enter your	password
be	ow:			

Password:		Enter
	- 1	

This	s content is password	protected. T	o view it plea	se enter you	r password
belov	v:				

Password:		Enter
assitterar		

This content is password p	rotected. To view it	t please enter you	r password
below:			

Password:		Enter
	- 1	

### 345 A + B

Thank you for everyone patience for password chapters. This chapter hasn't proofread, I will do the proofreading and continuously do the editing for better translation...

#### Part 1 (One)

## **We Cannot Marry**

"Alright Yao Yao, I know this time Ao Tian indeed doing too over. But...."

You don't need to tell me, he has his own difficulties! Regarding to the Hua Mei Villa case I had made investigation, because of his father intention to coup d'etat, so that Vice Prime Minister and even my father with others were secretly killed by him!!!"

Long Qi never thought that Yao Yao had made investigation that clearly, toward Hua Mei Villa case actually what was the case about, even Long Qi by himself not really clear of it, after all this year he is only 19 years old, there's too many things, Yu Ao Tian and others would not tell him.

"Alright, since you have known everything, you are understood, why still looking for death? Aren't you going to revenge? Didn't you want to revenge on the behalf of your mother?"

Revenge.....

How to revenge?

An initially she wanted to borrow Feng Chen Yi's power, but now.... hah.... "Long Qi, can you help me to leave this place?"

A pair of difficulty eyes are looking eye on eye with Yao Yao's eyes that filled with begging eyesight. He curled tight his hand into fist: "Alright! I will send you.... let's go!"

"Thank you....Long Qi!"

Finally she could leave this room which filled with bitterness, and now, she does not want to beg anything, as long as she can leave here, it is more than enough!!

"You just send me until here, Long Qi." Because when they was going out both of them were too hasty, Yao Yao is only wearing man's shirt. Standing in front of the her apartment entrance, she is afraid her condition being seen by people, she is wavering her hand to Long Qi, and then she is hurrying to dash inside her own house.

Doom!

The key....

All her stuffs was left at the wedding venue, mobile phone, key, purse, and others.....

And also some was left at Yu Ao Tian's house.

What to do? Should she go to find Feng Chen Yi?

Her eyes are glanced down to look at herself, but who knows suddenly the door pushed open.....

Shocked lift up her head, someone with weary face caught by her pair of eyes, there's beard that grows mess on that smooth chin.

"Feng... Chen Yi?" he is obviously someone who is clean freak, there's never any beard grown at his chin before, but why now he.....

"You finally....back to home!" Spontaneously, Feng Chen Yi pulled her into his embrace.

Yao Yao has been missing for three days, Feng Chen Yi has stayed here waiting her without rest for three days. Even Hei Yan Long and Ou Yang Zi Xuan have asked him to go home, but he could not stay still at home.

Think carefully, even thought Yao Yao would come back, the first place she heading must be here, he wanted to be the first person see her!

"We, let's us get into house first, okay?" at the moment when she being embraced by Feng Chen Yi into his bosom, the hole in her heart slowly can find a trace of warmness. Suddenly she feels uncontrolled sour feeling, but she endures it! She does not want to let out any tear in front of Feng Chen Yi, she also does not want he worries about her.

# This Life Time I won't ever give up on you

Yao Yao is backing Feng Chen Yi when he brings her into room, she glanced and focus at the shirt wrapped her body. But, this gesture finally not escape from Feng Chen Yi's eyes.

```
"Chen Yi...."

"Yao Yao...."
```

Both of them are calling their names at same time. Yao Yao turned her head, dried smiled said: "You say first."

"The wedding ceremony hasn't canceled, you say which day should we set the time? Can we do it tomorrow??"

```
"Chen Yi!"

"If you feel it too hasty, how about the following day after tomorrow?"

"Chen...."
```

"How about Sunday, that day also not bad." Feng Chen Yi is persistent to give elegant smile for the whole process of conversation, he is completely not giving her chance to speak up.

Wedding ceremony? Hah.... such ridiculous, which wedding ceremony they would like to hold? "Feng Chen Yi!! you listen to me!" shouted Yao Yao in order to stop Feng Chen Yi who keeps on talking.

"Impossible for us to marry. Do you understand? Both of us are impossible to get married!!!"

"Why?" Feng Chen Yi expression changed cold at sudden, he slowly takes a

seat on sofa, expressionless he said: "Didn't you want to revenge on behalf your mother anymore?"

"That's right! I don't want anymore! I don't want to revenge anymore!!!" alike an arrow she dashed in front of him, Yao Yao is so affirmed when she gave her answer.

"Sssh...." Yao Yao gasped, just by coincidence he is pinching her wrist which has rope mark and wounded because being tied before.

Feng Chen Yi is coldly sweeping his glance to her wrist, at the sudden his pair of eyes are emitting cold gleam. But he does not say anything, but at same time he also does not loosen his hand, and then he pulled her into his embrace, gloomy said: "Even though you don't want to revenge anymore, you must still marry with me!!"

Staring at that handsome face and yet so domineering, her eyes are showing not understanding eyesight: "Why?" She agreed to marry him the reason because revenge, but now she does not want to revenge anymore, why must she marry him?

"Luo Yao Yao, why I want to marry you, don't you know the reason? En!" at sudden that big hand lifts her chin up. Who knows, the kiss marked that kissed by Yu Ao Tian exposed, Feng Chen Yi pair of eyes are gleaming with cold eyesight. "You remember, Luo Yao Yao, this life, when you live, you are my wife, Feng Chen Yi's wife; although you are die, I am Feng Chen Yi won't ever to give up on you!!!"

What kind of domineering love is it? This domineering simply to say is so suffocating.

Yao Yao finally realized, she actually has provoked two men that she should not..... "Actually, you can use another way in order to stay together with me."

"Another way?" Feng Chen Yi slowly loosen up his hand that pinched on he chin, sneered: "Ask you to be my lover? I can't do it!" his cold eyes gloom: "I love you! So that I want to marry with you openly!!!"

At this moment, the tear that Yao Yao tries to hold back finally break, she is looking at him with blaming eyesight while grabbing onto his shirt: "Didn't you

say it before in such natural way? If wanted to take sum amount of money from you, just become your..... hu hu hu!"

That icy-cold lips sticking on her mouth that not yet finished her words, he does not want to hear it, he does not want to hear the continuation. Now Feng Chen Yi is afraid to recall his memory regarding two things.

The first thing was the matter regarding his cheating with Li Ruo Ting; the other matter it was, that time when Yao Yao came to look for him wanted to borrow sum of money, he said that words, you came to be my lover!

Feng Chen Yi thought perhaps that he would never regret whatever he has done in his life before, but these two matters, simply to say he cannot to wash away that memories for long time.

"Hu....hu...." Yao Yao is using her strength to break free herself from this domineering kiss, she really cannot to accept, thing that happened between herself and Yu Ao Tian, and once she come back she is being kissed by another man.

"Enough! Feng Chen Yi!!" suddenly she break free herself from his embrace, Yao Yao faster step backward, dumbfounded standing in front of him.

After silent for moment, she faintly smiles: "Don't you want to ask me what was going on within these three days?"

### 347 A

# Chapter 347 Part 1 (One)

## I'm Serious Won't Give Up on You!

"I don't want to know!"

"But I want to tell you!" after said, Yao Yao torn her clothes.

On her white smooth body, it is imprinted with so many hickey. Every hickey that imprinted was the evidence of endless humiliating for her, and also her unforgettable nightmare. "These three days, I was with Yu Ao Tian! Regarding what we did, you make your own guess? We..... how can we still get married? How can we still marry?"

Why, why Feng Chen Yi wanted to force her to tell what was happened within these three days, she really wanted to forget it, really wanted to forget everything......

"Hah." at the moment Yao Yao thought Feng Chen Yi is going to leave with satisfaction, his good looking face is hanging such indescribable smiles.

The next second, Feng Chen Yi pulled her hand, turn her body and pressed her down to sofa.

"What do you want to do?"

That iced-cold lips suddenly landed on her neck, body, chest, and every hickey which left by Yu Ao Tian, Feng Chen Yi completely kissed all over again. "Now, this hickey that left are mine! Hence, 'the others', I, do, care, less."

"Don't care? Feng Chen Yi, are you idiot? Who would be the man that not going to care? Even I by myself cannot accept myself!!"

"Well then you just think me as idiot. Hah, whatever since the day I fall in love with you, I never..... been normal." Feng Chen Yi gave dry smile, and then for once again he pulled her into his embrace.

Perhaps due to his childhood experienced, he really never had any good impression toward woman, at much when he has necessity he would find woman to fulfill his desire.

And then when everyone persuading him to find girl friend, he was answering them expressionless while shrugging 'why must looking for girlfriend? Better looking for bed mate, every matter that girlfriend can do they also can do it, moreover there's no need so much troublesome.'

But, since he met Yao Yao, suddenly he wanted to have girlfriend, and also wanted to stay together with her, and then suddenly he wanted to marry her.

That time, he thought he must be crazy, he obviously someone not care with woman, but because of a little girl he has changed his mind, so strange?

But he really cannot lie to his heart, after some time, he realized only her the person that he wants to put to his side, forever he only wants to love her.....

"Marry with me Yao Yao. Let me to become your only family, person who protect you, love you, okay?" although only as her family member, Feng Chen Yi does not have any objection, anyway, as long as he could put her stay beside himself then it alright.

"Ha, hahahaha." snuggled into his embrace, Yao Yao is crying and also laughing.

Is there any reason for her to make refusal? How to refuse?

If she keeps on refuse him, she afraid Feng Chen Yi would kidnap her and force her to marry him? This domineering man.... she must....

In what way she has to make up for the debt that coming from deep her heart?

Trying hard to love him? Trying hard to find back that feeling which ever loved him?

No.... still better to accompany him for the rest of live..... until he left. Of course, there is also a possibility that she will be the first person who left him?

"Feng Chen Yi, how could I never realized..... actually you are an idiot?" she murmured, Yao Yao is hugging Feng Chen Yi tightly.

Finally that cold good looking face finally has slightly smiles from bottom of his

heart. But the next moment.....

His bottomless pair of eyes are gleaming dangerously: 'Yu Ao Tian..... let's us wait and see!!!!'

347 B

## Chapter 347 Part 2 (Two)

## I'm Serious Won't Give Up on You!

Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi are canceled the wedding ceremony, this is what Yao Yao asked for, because last time when the wedding ceremony was interrupted, moreover the matter regarding she being Yu Ao Tian's prisoner, this time she does not want to publicize so that she just made up something alike the numerology Master said that Feng Family this year is not easy to have wedding ceremony as the respond to the Media.

But the simple process still need to be done, as simple as tea ceremony\*, introduce to family.

"Father in law please have the tea." in the big hall, Yao Yao is kneeling on the floor, her hand is holding tea bowl in front of Feng Xiao.

"En." Feng Xiao expressionless drinking the tea, and then put it aside.

"Mother in law please have the tea." Yao Yao reckon the same toward Madam Feng giving her a cup of tea.

"Good." Madam Feng smiles, hand over a red pocket to Yao Yao's hand.

But she does not pay attention, when Madam Feng hand over that red pocket, Feng Chen Yi's face turned to be cold!

"Sister in law, don't you need to offer me tea too?" Feng Chen Rui who sat beside opened his mouth.

His wife is glaring fiercely toward him. His wife hasn't forgotten the last time matter regarding Feng Chen Rui ever pursuing Yao Yao.

Even though, Feng Chen Rui had made an explanation that he just joking, but his wife still suspicious toward him.

"Big brother, there isn't no such reason to do so? You are not elder!" Feng

Chen Yi inserted one of his hands into his pocket, and his another hand is pulling Yao Yao up who still kneeling on the floor: "Yao Yao, let me bring you to room and have a rest."

"Why so early entering the bridal chamber?" said Feng Ke Xin who keeps silent for this whole time, and then she walked fast in front of both of them: "Second Brother, I am taking school leave and back to home because your wedding ceremonial, at least you must give me chance to have words with Yao Yao for moment."

"What do you want to say?"

"Not your matter? This is a secret between women!" after said, Feng Ke Xin pulled Yao Yao to upstairs.

Feng Chen Yi really cannot do anything regarding his unruly little sister, but, seeing his little sister now can accept Yao Yao, it can be said that he feels little bit relief.

"Congratulation, congratulation," arrived at Feng Ke Xin's room, she is pretending to clap his hand to Yao Yao.

Yao Yao is looking around the room which is covered with princess's atmosphere. Cannot help herself not to feel envy little bit, it is really kind of dreamy room. "Thank you, Ke Xin."

"Huh, it must be me who should thank you!"

"Hah?"

"Set from your blessing, after Qi Lian Ao Yun sunbae knew the news about your marriage and my second brother, I have succeed win over Qi Lian sunbae!" Feng Ke Xin is happily smiling.

Yao Yao feels unbelievable by creasing her forehead: "You and.... Qi Lian sunbae?"

"That's right. Perhaps in the future he will be your brother in law. But...." Feng Ke Xin is folding his hand in front her chest, while her eyes are looking at Yao Yao: "I don't want any scandal suddenly appear at home, you understand?"

"										"	,

She really does not know how to deal with Feng Ke Xin, she is too arrogant! But, she also does not want to have any scandal at this home.

"Rest assure, I understood."

"Good. And about that, Old man (refer to Feng Xiao) not really likes you."

"This, I can feel it."

"Well, let me tell you one good news, you don't see that old man every day showing that kind of expression, actually he is also old urchin (childish old man), as long as you make him happy, he will like you bit by bit. Just alike me, there are countless time that I coax old man happily."

#### Note:

\*] Tea Ceremony (敬 Jing茶 Cha): tea ceremony is a Chinese custom where the bride is introduced to the groom's family. Kneeling down, the groom and the bride will offer tea to their elders. Starting with the Groom's parents, followed by his grandparents, granduncles and aunties, uncles and aunties and elder brothers and sisters. The elder relatives will give their blessings to the couple by giving them jewelry or red packets. Source: The Chinese Wedding Shop

#### 348 A

17 August Happy Independence Day, Indonesia ^-^

Anyone wonder how Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi marriage life would be after Yu Ao Tian harsh and crazy action by kidnapping Yao Yao 'right in front of' Feng Chen Yi's nose during at the wedding venue?

Just as expected, even though Yao Yao has gone thorough 'that' experience, Feng Chen Yi still so stubborn wanted to marry her and make Yao Yao as his legal wife.

#### The simple ceremony

It can be felt....

Alike Feng Ke Xin who has this ordinary arrogance, she must be being spoiled too much at home. But as seen, Old Master Feng is indeed like Feng Ke Xin so much. Either Feng Chen Rui or Feng Chen Yi, all of them are calling Old Master Feng as Father, it's only Feng Ke Xin who dares to call him as Old Man, no need to question because everyone knows what the reason is.

"Alright, you don't bother me, I want to make phone call to Qi Lian sunbae, you go back to your bridal chamber with my second brother."

"....." Yao Yao is helplessly rolled her eyes, before she left the room, she is pretended to provoke her: "It was clearly you come to bother me, okay?" after said, faster she shut close the door.

Hah.

Feng Ke Xi really one interesting person. But....

Does she really success to stay together with Qi Lian sunbae?

Back to the room that belong to hers and Feng Chen Yi. This room compare to Feng Ke Xin's room is much bigger and splendid, more gorgeous. Simply to say compare to place where Yao Yao lived before, this is bigger by four times, and so similar alike small villa.

Really not understand, Feng family only few persons, don't they afraid to live in such big room?

"You are back?" Lying on the bed reading news paper Feng Chen Yi is smiling when asked her.

"En."

"What did my little sister say to you?"

Yao Yao is creasing her forehead, slowly walking to the bed edge, lying down,

and then fiercely glaring at him, said: "None of your business! This is women thingy, you don't try to get a line on!"

*"* 

Feng Chen Yi glancing at her with unbelievable eyesight, this little rascal, now she is getting fiercer? Even though.... when both of them were dating before, she indeed also little bit fierce!

Put down his newspaper, he curved up his mouth: "I see, you want to recollect something, taste something, should I do it?

"Ugh.... don't! don't!" when Yao Yao wanted to runaway.

Feng Chen Yi has grabbed her wrist, his pair of hand continuously tickling her.

Long time ago, as long as she frustrated Feng Chen Yi, he would come up with this type of punishment for her, until she laughed with tears. "I am wronged.... I wronged.... begging you, let me off, let me off."

"Tell me, do you still dare to speak like that to me again?"

"Not dare, not dare...."

"En, so obedient." Feng Chen Yi drawn back his pair of hand.

She is narrowing her eyes, fiercely gritting her teeth, obedient your little sister (swearing word), every times he always use this kind of method to deal with her, simply to say shameless!

But....

Every times she always fall at the same trick.

Lying on the bed, after she free herself from that tickling 'pain', who knows....

Feng Chen Yi suddenly turn over his body and press on her body.

PS: I will release extra chapters but still consider which project should I?

#### В

As expected it such useless to ask which chapter extra should be posted LOLs....

I must learn from past experience hahahaha, Here I presented.....

#### Part 2 (Two)

## **The Simple Ceremony**

"What do you want to do?"

"you say what I wanted to do?" Feng Chen Yi is curved upward his mouth, slightly smiles, and at sudden his lips landed on her lips.

That petite body as if being acupuncture and immediately stiffen, she thought both of them would stay alike they used to do, lying together on the bed doing nothing.

But she has forgotten something, now both of them are husband and wife!

No.... no....

Wait! Wait!

Yao Yao, you should not refuse, but....

Feng Chen Yi's hand is getting inside her clothes, very skillful he undo her undergarment.

Don't.... don't keep on continuing.

That big hand is unexpectedly move around to in front, cover that white snow skin. It is so obviously Feng Chen Yi breathing turned to be rough.

But Yao Yao's eyes are showing fear eyesight, her body is trembling, as if a little white rabbit which get shocked.

Perhaps because Feng Chen Yi feels something strange, suddenly he opens his eyes, looking at her pair of eyes that filled with feared. He knows....

She must be.... remembered about Yu Ao Tian!

Pair of lips, leaving her lips, his hand also drawn out from her clothes. "Let's sleep."

"Huh...." Yao Yao feels relief, no one knows just now at that moment, who's face was saw by her!

"That's right, let you to see something." Feng Chen Yi smiling mysteriously, pick up the newspaper from the bed head, turn to one of the page, he pointing at the diamond ring: "Like it?"

Eye-measurement, that diamond ring perhaps have few carats. In order to loosen up just now awkward atmosphere, Yao Yao is pretending act doubt, said: "What? Do you want to send me?"

"Do you want?"

"If you are giving me now, then I want it."

"Sttt..... Do you want to difficult me?" Feng Chen Yi is creasing his forehead as if in difficulty, but the next moment, he is smiling mischievously, quickly he spreads open his right hand: "But, this won't give me any trouble!"

Ugh.....

As seen, there is a diamond ring that similar with the one on the newspaper at his palm, this brat, has he planed for long before? She lifts up her head, blinking her eyes with looking down eyesight: "You are really a schemer."

"Of course, otherwise will you ask?" Feng Chen Yi understands Yao Yao, both of them have known each others for many years, this woman really not dares to take present from anyone. "Stretch out your hand."

She is helplessly sighed, slowly stretch out her right hand.

PS: another extra is coming soon ^-^

## Part 1 (One)

#### Feng Chen Yi Miserable Life Experience

Feng Chen Yi smiles when put that diamond ring onto her ring finger. "Listen carefully, this ring has great meaning (very important), absolutely should not lose it!!"

Very important? "How important...." without her realized she looked at Feng Chen Yi's left ear, she surprised asked: "Where your diamond earring?"

Still remembered when they were at school, everyday she was laughing at Feng Chen Yi's diamond earring, 'why do you wear this, you are alike woman.'

But every times she brought up this topic, Feng Chen Yi would show her cold expression, giving her such simple answered 'because this diamond earring has very important meaning!'

"It's has run to your hand."

"Hah?" so this ring is coming from Feng Chen Yi's diamond earring? "How can finally you willing to take it off?"

"Of course. My mother ever said, as long as I have found my wife, she asked me to give it to my wife, don't you think that I have found her."

So that's why Feng Chen Yi always say that the meaning is importance, is it because the diamond gave by his mother to him?

"So this is given by Mother in law to you."

"Mother in law?" Feng Chen Yi is leaning on the bed head, an arm around her shoulders, coldly said: "Who you called as mother in law?"

"Is she that one? Of course the person that I offered her tea before."

"Yao Yao, I will only tell you one time. You listen carefully!" an immediately, Feng Chen Yi expression turned to be iced-cold: "My mother name is Fang Ya Shi, while just now that lowly slut named is Lan Ni Pei!!! I don't wish you later call her as mother in law or mother. Understand?"

The current Madam Feng is..... Feng Chen Yi's step mother?

While he, called.... Madam Feng as lowly slut?

Her doubt eyesight looked at his face.

Yao Yao finally can see, the strong hatred eyesight from Feng Chen Yi's eyes. "Feng Chen.... Yi, where's your biological mother?"

She does not know whether she allowed to ask or not, but she really wants to know his past.

"Has passed away."

Just knew it would be so.... or else, why he is showing deep hatred when talked about Madam Feng. "Madam Feng.... Did she the person who do it?"

"Yes." Feng Chen Yi with sad expression nodding, that bottomless eyes are suddenly turned to be dim: "My mother was growing up at wealthy family, even though she married with my father because join marriage-business. But.... after they married, my mother had fallen for my father. It's only because they married for many years but still didn't have any child...."

This is kind of the taboo matter within the wealthy family!

The initially harmonious family suddenly turned to separate. Feng Xiao finally not going home, and joining drink party at outside. Not long after that, a woman who brought child came to Feng Family.

That woman was Lan Ni Pei!

She said that child was Feng Xiao's son, she was begging that Feng Xiao and Fang Ya Shi must be divorced. And Feng Xiao as husband he also wanted to admit the child's existence. Fang Ya Shi just knew, before she married with Feng Xiao, he has already had other woman at outside, or else how could the child already five years old?

During that time, Fang Ya Shi always crying. An initially, she wanted to use her family influence to get rid Lan Ni Pei. But who knows that Lan Ni Pei has strong support at her back!

It is Ya Si Lan (Aslan) country! She is relative to the royalty. Fang Ya Shi really cannot win over her!

Just like that, both of the women were sharing one husband for many years. Within five years, Lan Ni Pei was using many kind of tricks in order to chase out Fang Ya Shi.

While she only could endure everything. And the most miserable, because his mother family business was failed, it leads her family in straitened circumstances. This made Fang Ya Shi position in Feng family getting worse.

Just at this time, the miracle happened, Fang Ya Shi pregnant! And she pregnant baby boy. By that time Feng Xiao was so happy.

Lan Ni Pei saw thing going to change, secretly schemed her, falsely accused Fang Ya Shi's son as other person's son, she even took out an evidence.

Feng Xiao who was raging in fume asked Fang Ya Shi to get out from Feng Mansion. Luckily, at this time The Old Master Feng (Feng Chen Yi's grandpa) showed up, and then the situation stabilized back.

After few months, Fang Ya Shi was giving birth Feng Chen Yi.

Lan Ni Pei still felt indignant, spreading the rumors to the outside, saying that Fang Ya Shi's son not Feng Xiao's son. "At the cornered situation, my mother was using death in order to prove her innocent, choosing to ended her life. After that, my father brought me to make DNA test, and this finally proven that I am his son."

At the moment when the truth come to light, Feng Xiao was so guilty, while Feng Old Master in order to makeup for the debt owed by the Feng's toward Fang Ya Shi death, immediately he transferred hers' percent share to Feng Chen Yi.

All of these, were said by the maid who worked with Mother Feng for years, to Feng Chen Yi!

While that diamond, it was also personally given by the maid when Feng Chen Yi gradually growing up to adulthood! In order to keep it as a memorial for Mother Feng, he took the diamond and made it into earring, and then wearing it on his left ear and never take it off.

## Part 2 (Two)

#### Feng Chen Yi Miserable Life Experience

After listened Feng Chen Yi regarding all these things, gradually Yao Yao heart feels sour, one's enter into the wealth family. Wealthier the family more powerful the intrigue.

She never thought, at Feng Chen Yi's back he is carrying such heavy burden of his past. "Why didn't you ever tell me about these things before?"

"If not because my father asked me to bring you along to stay at Feng mansion, perhaps I would never tell you about these, forever." in Feng Chen Yi's heart, Yao Yao is someone pure and clean, he does not want to use the darkness reality of the society to tarnish her. But, there is no way, since she has entered this Feng family, if he does not give any shot to Yao Yao, he really afraid that Yao Yao might poison by that lowly slut Lan Ni Pei!

"Damn it!"

Seeing Yao Yao tighten expression, Feng Chen Yi curiously creasing his forehead: "What happened?"

"Lan Ni Pei ever came to look for me, moreover she even talked so affectionately asked me to marry with you.

During that time I thought she was..... now after thinking of it carefully....." Yao Yao is nervously grabbed Feng Chen Yi's hand: "Promise me, no matter what going to happen you must not go against your father because of me. I believe that Old lowly cheap slut so kindness asking me to marry you, because she wanted to see you go against your father because of me!"

"Hah, You are so quick getting into your role. You are so fast changing the way of addressing from mother in law to lowly cheap slut?"

"She made your mother suicide, so that she is my enemy too! Later, just let me to go against that lowly slut!" Yao Yao has no doubt for this matter, she also does not consider what kind of misunderstand about this matter.

Because, in this world, other than her grand pa, the person she trusts most is Feng Chen Yi!

"You, it alright if you can protect yourself well."

"You don't believe on me?" Yao Yao dissatisfied pouted her mouth.

Hah, how can he underestimate and not believe on Yao Yao capability, but he really does not want the pure and innocent Yao Yao changes to be complicated, and schemer. "Let's sleep." the light inside the room is dimmer.

Yao Yao is lying on the bed but she cannot fall sleep.

No wonder, that Feng Chen Rui could act such against toward Feng Chen Yi, and how about Feng Ke Xin whose daughter she is? From the way Feng Chen Yi said, after her mother gave birth him she had suicide, could it be Feng Ke Xin.... that lowly slut's daughter?

Sst.....

It can be seen that Feng Chen Yi quite spoiled Feng Ke Xin, perhaps, because Feng Ke Xin is innocent.

Just unexpectedly Feng Chen Yi isn't kind of person who would kill an innocent one. At least.... he different with Yu Ao Tian!!!

Lan Ni Pei......

Ya Si Lan Guo......

Lan Ni Pei......

Ya Si Lan Guo.......

Lan Ni Shan....

Ugh....?

Recalled! During the time when she investigated about Hua Mei Villa case, on the data there was written, Qi Lian Hao was kidnapping as if also one of the royal family of Ya Si Lan kingdom called as Lan Ni Shan. Well then what is the relationship between Lan Ni Pei and Lan Ni Shan? Both of them are royal family, moreover they are Ya Si Lan's people.

But forget it, this nothing of her concern.

Just at this moment, suddenly Feng Chen Yi turned his body and then hug her from back.

Ugh.

Body turned to be stiffen, but the next moment, a guilty eyesight is filled Yao Yao pair of eyes.

It's not she didn't feel it, just now, when she refused to being intimate with Feng Chen Yi, she could see sadness on his eyes. But she.... now really cannot accept to do such thing with other man, as further when she recalled it, that bitter pain will gush out.

Sorry, Feng Chen Yi, just hope that time will help me to heal and move out from that dark shadow....

That's right!

When Feng Chen Yi felt Yao Yao being afraid and scared, he really sad. Moreover, he hatred!

He hates Yu Ao Tian! He hates that man who came to ruin their marriage!

But, even though he not doing intercourse with Yao Yao, by hugging her, it is enough to make him fall asleep, his heart is more than content. Anyway in the past wasn't he also like this?

Under the dark night, a sad smile showed at Feng Chen Yi's face. Once again, he hugging tightly her waist, and then fall asleep.....

3	50	Α		

## Working at Feng Group Part 1 (One)

## The next day early in the morning.

Feng Chen Yi wakes up early in the morning, he is silently takes a box from the bed head and then heading to bathroom. And then he takes out a white veil.

A sharp piece of blade slit on his finger, the blood is dripping to the white veil. He is carefully walking out from his room.

"Second Young Master...."

"Sst. This given to you, report your work." Said Feng Chen Yi with low voice, he hand over that white veil and gave it to the maid who guarding at the in front of the room.

Although today's is modern world, but there are still many wealthy family that difficult to change the old tradition. For example, during the wedding night at the bridal chamber, in order to prove the virginity of the Young Madam (woman who married into rich family refer as Shao Nai Nai), their first time blood during the wedding night must be on the white veil, as evidence.

Of course, according to the Feng's family custom, there is a need to make checking on the Young Madam's body. But this point, so soon has refused by Feng Chen Yi, while the only thing that he could accept only this kind of way (white veil) in order to prove Yao Yao virginity. Although, this is faking done by him....

Back to the room, Feng Chen Yi sees Yao Yao stills sleeping, silently he changing his clothes.

"Are you going to work?"

"Am I wake you up?"

"No." Yao Yao is rubbing her eyes, slowly raised and sit down: "Bring me along

to company."

Feng Chen Yi knows what Yao Yao intending to do, but.... "Now you are just waking up, if you want later at afternoon you come to find me at company."

"No, I have directly submitted the report in order to take part in the entrance exams for postgraduate. University also approved it, unless I have to go joining big events and examinations, and for the rest of time I can self-study at home." due to Yao Yao intelligence, actually she could graduate sooner from university. Not to mention about university graduation, even for PhD she could smoothly graduate. If not because she wanted to 'earn' that huge amount of scholarship money, and to study at the best school.

"Alright. You faster."

"Hihi, thank you." Yao Yao jumped, alike little monkey directly into Feng Chen Yi's embrace, and suddenly she kissed his cheek.

Hah, this little monkey, it is obvious that she already 19 years old, but in front of him it seems nothing is changed. She stills same like before mischievous and cute, she really make people cannot not to spoil her. Thinking until this point, Feng Chen Yi helplessly smiles.

В	1			

## Part 2 (Two)

#### **Working At Feng Group**

Both of them are going out from their room together, when passing the big hall, Feng Xiao who is sitting in big hall while reading a newspaper looking at them with despise eyesight: "Where are you going?"

"Father in Law, good morning." Yao Yao is politely greeting Feng Xiao with smile.

"Father, I am going to work."

"I don't ask you! I asked your wife, where is she going to?"

Ugh..... "Father in law, I, I am also going to work."

"You are going to work?" Feng Xiao put down the newspaper, pair of his hand support his back, sternly he walking until right in front of her: "Aren't you a student? Where are you working?"

"I have directly submitted the report in order to take part in the entrance exams for postgraduate, now I want to go to Feng Group to help!"

Once Feng Xiao heard this, it hard for him not to recall few days ago when his wife told him about this little girl who asked for 4 billion. Hah, could not get the money and now she is targeting Feng Group? "You are not allowed! The daughter in law of Feng family must be stayed at home. Without my words, you are not allowed to step your feet outside this house, not even one step!!"

Cold sweat, Father in Law seems such bossy, simply to say he is so similar with Feng Chen Yi!

"Father...."

At the moment when Feng Chen Yi wanted to say something, quickly Yao Yao pulled his sleeves, faster hint him with her eyesight, which means.... you don't forget the thing that you promised me last night.

"Father in Law, you say.... compare to big sister in law who have more value, I

am who born from lowly family background, so that I can't help Feng Family, if you are not asking me to working outside to earn my own money, how can I still have face to stay at Feng family, this really no any difference between me with woodworm (parasite)."

Should you this exaggerating? Feng Chen Yi is looking with kind of contemptuously eyesight toward Yao Yao exaggerating expression, endure himself not to laugh.

"Just like this, Father in Law. I don't need salary, also no need any important position. Just doing odd or not so important works it's okay in Feng Group, how is it?"

"En?" Whatever Yao Yao said before without doubt, it has hit on Feng Xiao true heart, he is afraid that this little girl is aiming on his Feng's asset (money), and now after all she has touched him with this words?

"Do you really go working for doing not so important works?"

"Really! Really! As long as I can do even little bit for Feng family, I really more than satisfied."

At the moment when Feng Xiao hesitated, suddenly Lan Ni Pei is coming over: "Old Master, you just agreed at what daughter in law idea."

"Do as you wish." Feng Xiao is helplessly waving his hand, turned his back and left.

Humph, this lowly old woman, during this time said something like this does she want to see something bad happen to her at company? She would not grant what Lan Ni Pei wish for! "Mother in Law, thank you. Now I go for working." although Yao Yao is very clear with Lan Ni Pei motive, but she really acting as good daughter in law on the surface, or else how can later she handle this old lowly woman without her knowing?

"Go to Feng Group to do odd and so not import works perhaps it will be hard to satisfied your heart?" getting inside to the car, Feng Chen Yi is coldly asked.

She is smiling mysteriously, confidently shaking her head: "This is not so, this is not so, I have told your father that doing odd and not so important works, but odd and not so important works also divided into many types. Cleaner, pouring

tea all are odd and not so important. But.... go and get involved in every department are also considered as doing odd and not so important things!"

"You little rascal, did you fool my father?"

"I don't dare to do so."

"Hah." Feng Chen Yi helplessly give a smile, one of his hand on the steer wheel, and the other hand is put on her shoulder: "What's your plan?"

She is smiling naughtily but gradually her face is dimmed: "Which department of Feng Group that compete business with Berson Group then, I will go to that department, I wish to go and compete with Berson Group, get all the projects by myself!"

The target is clear! Concise and comprehensive. Feng Chen Yi can feel this time Yao Yao is going to be fierce, "And then?"

"Force Yu Ao Tian to take over the biggest power at Berson, when that time arrive, my real fight against him are starting!" thinking until this scenery, Yao Yao can feel that the blood in her body is boiling. She really expecting this faster arrived.

#### 351

FCY		

Many of us wonder what will happen to Long Qi after he helped Yao Yao to escape from Yu Ao Tian's apartment. Actually, for my personal view, I would not really matter about Long Qi 'safety'. On contrary, I wonder Yu Ao Tian's reaction, his feeling....

#### **Berson Group is Attacked Part I**

"My beloved, where are you putting my position?"

Ugh... seeing Feng Chen Yi's face is little bit gloom, Yao Yao is nervously gulping her saliva: "Don't you think, your priority is to kick out Feng Chen Rui, and then taking the CEO position of Feng Group? Without your power, how can I progress my movement?"

Speak honestly, the purpose why Feng Chen Yi is joining hand with Yu Ao Tian at the first place, simply to say he is using Yu Ao Tian's hand to kick Feng Chen Rui, and taking the CEO position! It's the case.

"Huh, it seems I must faster my pace...."

Other side.....

"Long Qi! Were you the person who free that Little Thing?" inside the apartment, Yu Ao Tian is sitting on the sofa, pointing at the big door that seems okay.

From these few of people, the person who has all the keys for the whole apartment is only Long Qi!

Long Qi who is standing in front of Yu Ao Tian nodding his head: "That's right, it is me."

"You MF!" Yu Ao Tian's face is gloom, raised, lift his hand and gave him a slap.

That five fingers imprinted on his cheek, Long Qi is raging in fume creasing her forehead: "Ao Tian! Yao Yao wanted to jump down, don't you know it or not? You prison her and forcing her to stay by your side simply to say you are forcing her to die!! I could not help myself to see her suicide, so that, I must bring her away from this place!!!"

"You....!!"

"Ao Tian!!" suddenly Long Ye barging into inner room, he glances at Long Qi,

and then faster he looked at Yu Ao Tian, with difficulty he said: "Yao Yao.... and Feng Chen Yi had done with they marriage....."

Hah, he has predicted it before that's why.....

So that, he just could not let......

Her to go from here!

He have known it, once she left this place, due to Feng Chen Yi's character, no matter what he would go through and done the marriage! "You guys... go out." Yu Ao Tian is suppressing his anger, expressionlessly he moving his hand.

"Ao Tian?" this moment, Long Qi really does not know whether his decision right or wrong by letting Yao Yao off? Is it wrong! But at same time he could not see Yao Yao die, and now he does not want to see this kind of Yu Ao Tian!!

"Get lost!" he roared.

The Long's brother are helplessly going out from the inner room.

Quiet room, Yu Ao Tian is silently sitting on the sofa, that pair of bottomless eyes at this moment rippling dark luster.

He stands up, take out one bottle of red wide from the wine box, 'Gu Dong' (the sound of pouring the wine) he filled the wine glass full.

On the surface of the floating red wine, it reflecting that man good looking and charming face, with single rippling, he lifts up that red wine, in the middle air raised it high..... "Little Thing, happy marriage. Hah...." a sad smiles curved upward his lips corner, he closes his eyes, he drinks that sweet-smelling red wine big mouthful.

Only by this time, this sweet-smelling of red wine is bringing along the slightly bitter taste.....

Is his taste bud got problem? Or is it because.... his moods?

## **352**

Ah~ what do you guys think about this chapter?

#### **Berson Group is Attacked Part II**

Half month later.....

Yu Ao Tian work performance is getting more excellent and very quickly he got promoted to enter the State Council Executive Director, this position.

Just to know, the person who is able to have this position basically those who have minimum 3 years, moreover they must completely back up by family who as public figure. Someone alike Yu Ao Tian who no need to wait until 3 years, and he stills single this is really rare. It can be seen that how powerful and stronger he become within this half month.

'Knock knock' (knocking sound)

"Director Yu, this is the document that sent by today, please take look at it."

"En, it's okay just put it here."

His today's works simply to say so similar with the ancient emperor's works, every day there are endless pile of documents, endless files need to check. And finally he realized what it mean by the higher officer position, the more scarce the hair. Hah, he really afraid himself before four years he would change to be 'middle bald head'.

'knock knock' (knocking sound)

"Come in."

The Financial Secretary is smiled, slowly he walking inside Yu Ao Tian's office room: "Leader, still busy?"

"Haha, officer Liu, it seen as you said."

"I am not wrong right? My official position only five stars, but now yours are three stars officer who is after General Director and Prime Minister. If I don't call you as leader, what should I call you?"

Yu Ao Tian helplessly smiles, pointing at the chair inside his office room: "Have

seat, Office Liu."

"Aiya, I remembered years ago when first time I met you, I knew you are an extraordinary talent. But never thought, you just step into politician world half month, directly being promoted two stars. You are simply a legend."

Listened to the way Officer Liu praising, Yu Ao Tian who is reading his document smiling while said: "If you have words go straightly."

"Ugh.... hahaha." Officer Liu always admire Yu Ao Tian observation ability, he felt that he had covered up well enough, but never thought he could reveal it so soon. "Actually, I am coming here to make a red line (match making)."

"Which family of girl that you want to introduce to me?"

"This time coming from strong family. General Director Qi's daughter! She is so beautiful. Still young, very youth. You think it carefully, okay?"

After Yu Ao Tian heard, his head still head-down to read his document: "Officer Liu, if you are not afraid the girl will cry because of me, it seems you can introduce her to me."

"Sst....Ao Tian, see what you said, you are already 8, it's time for you to have family. Moreover...." When Officer Liu said to this point, suddenly his expression changed to be stern: "If you still want to climb to higher position, your wife must be someone who can be used. If you are married General Director Qi's daughter, that Vice General Director position that still empty until now might be yours!"

#### That's right!

Political circles are extremely have high expectation in marriage, most of the time family with political background will be given a priority choice to the unmarried political people, it started from choosing from their family background. Someone alike Yu Ao Tian who is still single, if wanted to be promoted up to one level, really difficult.

Of course, this is also the reason why Luo Tian Ming didn't divorce Sang Rou and then married Deng Hui Hong. Without doubt it because the political position, one he divorced, and remarriage an ordinary woman, his colleagues would secretly make thing difficult for him. Even though they didn't make thing difficult for him, his divorce status would decline his political position.

"Officer Liu, thank you for your good intention. But currently I have my girlfriend."

"You have?? Why I never heard you mentioned about her?"

Because the reality he does not have any, how could he talk about her?

If this is not inside governmental environment, he really wanted to tell this Officer Liu, he Yu Ao Tian absolutely does not need woman to help him to climb up! "Ha ha, later I will introduce her to you."

'Ring, ring ring....'

Just at this time suddenly his mobile phone is ringing, Yu Ao Tian smiles: "Let me pick the phone call."

"Well, I take my leave first."

"En." when he sees Officer Liu left, his expression changed to be cold at sudden: "What's matter?"

"Ao Tian, initially regarding this matter I don't want to disturb you, but now I really don't have way anymore." it is Han Li Shang's voice flowing from the mobile phone.

He is creasing his forehead: "What is happening?"

"It's about few projects that handled by our company, as long as we compete to Feng Group, our projects absolutely being taken by them. As if they had stolen our plan ahead in some span time."

Yu Ao Tian rolled his eyes: "Have you asked the I department to check all the company's computer if there any hacker attacking it?"

"Had checked on it, but there is no viruses or hacker trace. But impossible for Feng Group to have infinitely resourceful alike magic always beat us one step ahead, taking our proposal, right?"

That's right!

There is no such coincidence to have same proposal, moreover every time it taken by Feng Group one step ahead, and the only logically reason is someone has been attacking Berson group intranet computer.

But Han Li Shang even said with such affirm, there's no any trace of viruses or even being attacked by hacker.

It seems, the person who can freely attacking Berson Group's computers intranet without any trace would be that person.....

Thinking to this point, Yu Ao Tian's mouth is curved upward and making sinister expression, this is the first smile that shown by him within his half month. "Li Shang, how long this thing has happened?"

"Since half month ago it happened."

"Alright, I understand. Now I am at Government Bureau Office, it is not convenient to use the computer in here, you prepare everything in remote area, I want to use your computer to do something."

"Alright."

#### **Chapter 353**

# It's Return to the Ambiguous Atmosphere

#### Feng Group, I Department.

Since Yao Yao has promised Old Master Feng, she is coming to Feng Group to do such odd and not so important works, moreover in the company there is Feng Chen Rui who keeps on spying her, so that she only can do according the proper promise to be 'handyman' (someone who do odd thing or not so important thing).

When she entered the I department, she is looked alike mysterious person, she always sitting on the corner, everyday staring her computer.

While the I department colleagues, basically are tech-nerd, all of them have thought that they are enough boring, enough quirky, but they never thought that the newbie little girl is even more boring than them, even more odd than them! And strange. First time when they saw Yao Yao simply to say they looked her as someone strange.

This point, Yao Yao more or less also could feel it, perhaps they thought her as idiot? But there's cannot help, now she her mission is staring at her computer.

'pip pip' the notification message light is flashing on her computer, pop out from the left corner of the monitor.

Yao Yao is creasing her forehead, she does not seem to be on any chat system, but what is happening now?

At the moment she opened the chat message....

'Bao Bei, do you think that I am not enough tired, so that you must find something to busy me?'

Yu.....

Yu Ao Tian!!!! it's him!!! this person must be him!!

But Feng Group has so many computers, how can he know she is using this computer?

'How can you hacking into my computer?'

'Hah, it is how you hacking into Berson's computers, then this is how I can hack into yours computers.'

"....." Yu Ao Tian this rotten rascal!!!

It's no mistaken! The person who keeps on taking Berson Group proposal without 'any trace' for this half month, the person is her!

Every time she got any wind blowing the grasses, she will be the first person who barging into Berson Group's computer to steal the proposal, moreover will be moved one step ahead to sent it into the Feng Group department.

By this way, first no need to waste brain energy, second it is guarantee to be succeed. And the most important is..... she definitely know that Yu Ao Tian this big fish will get hook!

'Just expected your IQ must be above 200, right?' she clearly remembered, the last level of Ka Luo Men's game that high end game which she could not pass, while Yu Ao Tian could easily passed that level.

During that time she had doubted this rotten rascal IQ must be not simple.

And now he without any trace hacking into her computer, and now he even can accurately lock on her IP, but how high Yu Ao Tian's IQ actually.

'Similar with an ordinary people!'

'Do ordinary people can easily hacking into my computer?'

'Even you little dummy able to hacking into my Berson's computers, why I can't hacking into your computer?'

This rotten bastard!!! 'You are that....' at the moment when Yao Yao want to

type that three words, but suddenly she realized that she is falling into Yu Ao Tian's chat rhythm, immediately she deleted it.

'Bao Bei, why don't you say anything? Is it fun to be thief?'

Yao Yao who is sitting right in front of the computer's monitor is showing her disdain smiles, answered him: 'In order to fight against someone like you, I don't need to do something like grace and perfectly open for all my actions, okay?'

'Not bad, finally you are growing up. You are also realized that being innocent could not have food to eat (means useless being naive). but don't you afraid..... I will use your method to fight against Feng Group?'

That's right!!!!

Yu Ao Tian can this easily hacking into her computer, at the same time he also can use her method to hack into all the computer in Feng Group!!!

Drawn in train of her thoughts, suddenly the notification message led flashing again.

'Rest assured Bao Bei, I am not that leisure and have time to manage Berson's things.'

Damn it!

Yu Ao Tian this time means, he won't fight back?

'Let me tell you, Yu Ao Tian, if you are not fight back, I will keep on using this method to drag down your Berson Group.'

'It is nothing for Berson to lose that few projects, okay? As long as you are happily playing this game.' at the other side, Yu Ao Tian is faintly smiling after he types this few words. Indeed, it's only a few projects, she can be this happy, then that projects not so important.

But at the other side Yao Yao is already raging in fume: 'Yu Ao Tian, are you looking down at me?'

'I just want you to be happy, that's all!'

Enough! Enough! Don't act to be merciful and soften one's heart! Yao Yao is typing fiercely her keyboard: 'Now the only thing that can make me happy is

your death.'

'But that won't do, if I am really die, what if you are sad to heart-broken?' after Yu Ao Tian done typing these words, he is smiling naughtily, before he typed on his keyboard.

'You are sick!!!!' at this side Yao Yao is almost going crazy and losing self control, and now if she has knife she really wanted directly barging into Government Bureau office to chop Yu Ao Tian!

'Bao Bei, how's the marriage life?'

She is gritting her teeth, quickly she replied him: 'Thank you for your consideration, I really have great life!'

'Well how about that thing of Feng Chen Yi? Can he satisfy you? If say he could not, I can help him out by replaced his position, until you satisfied, anyway I am the first man in your life, doing that with you must have good tacit together.'

"You MF rotten bastard!!!!!" speak frankly Yao Yao cannot control herself anymore so she hisses, pair of her hand slap on the table, directly overturned.

But....

She is completely forgotten currently she is inside the office room!

Looking at pairs of eyes that looking at her with scary look, she knows, this group of people might think her as Idiot, in the future they may think her as crazy person?

"Ha...hahahaha. I am sorry, everyone I am sorry, sorry, sorry." constantly she is apologizing toward her colleagues, and then she sitting back to her seat.

Yu Ao Tian this rotten bastard! How could there is no car that crash him to death? No! If sport car bumped to him, the owner of car still need to pay money. Forget it, still better to let train to bump and hit him till death. Government would settle the pay!

Gradually the time is arrived to get off from work, even though Yu Ao Tian didn't find her anymore to have chat. But she still staring on her monitor with anger and frustration.

Until the time to leave the office.....

In order not to attract others colleagues attention, Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi are especially agreed, in the company both of them are not knowing each other. As after get off from work two of them are agreed to meet at two next alley near their company.

Actually Feng Chen Yi feels no need to do so, because company intern had made the announcement regarding both of their relationship, but Yao Yao still persistence to do so, after all not all people know it.

"Let's go." getting into car, she is tied her safety belt.

Car is slowly starting the engine and moving. Feng Chen Yi from time to time is glancing through reflector mirror looking at her facial expression: "How can today you are so quiet?"

"Ugh? Am I?"

"Hah, normally, once you getting into car you must be so noisy and tell me what have you done for the whole day, but why suddenly today you changed alike mute person?"

Yao Yao helplessly shrugging her shoulders: "Today nothing is happened."

"Really?" Feng Chen Yi pair of eyes flashed, at sudden brake the car, coldly looked at her and asked: "Really nothing happened?"

That pair of sharp eyes are flashed looking at her pair of eyes, kind of insecurity feeling, with difficulty she creased her forehead: "Not...."

"Hah." Feng Chen Yi is giving cold smile, his eyes looked at in front, takes out his mobile phone, dialing and then directly touch speaker button, "Hello."

### 354

Feng Chen Yi is really such childish when it comes to handle 'relationship matter'. This chapter is another evidence how childish he could be and this kind of Feng Chen Yi is far from cute. Furthermore, he is not more than rotten childish out from his jealousy.....

## **Chapter 354**

### **Sitting Together to have Meal**

"Chen Yi? It has been long time you not phoned me."

From the other side, it flowing a voice that Yao Yao extremely familiar with. That voice belongs to Yu Ao Tian.....

Why Feng Chen Yi phoning Yu Ao Tian, moreover he even speaker it!

"En, isn't this because recently still having 'husband-wife life', so that forget to contact Chairman Yu. Oh, almost forget, that part of mine still works well, so I don't need you to worry much."

The other side of the phone Yu Ao Tian who have heard this words, immediately his expression changed dim, but his speaking voice still steady and not in rush: "Well then it alright, it's alright. As you know, I don't want my Yao Yao cannot be satisfied."

"You rest assured, Chairman Yu, she is my wife, how could I make her alike in waiting lady. Alright just this all, I hung up." at the moment when Feng Chen Yi hung up the phone called, suddenly all his expression disappeared.

Yao Yao who is sitting beside him in the passenger seat looking at him by using stranger eyesight: "Chen Yi, you...."

"What's matter?" Feng Chen Yi coldly smiles, the expression showed in his face is something not readable.

What's matter? What is going on now? Why today suddenly Feng Chen Yi looked alike stranger to her?

"You are.... asking someone to spy me?"

"Are you speak honest to me?"

"That because I afraid you will going to be worried, so that I didn't tell you. I just really never thought, after all you are phoning Yu Ao Tian directly, do you ever think or not, at the moment when you are speaking that way to Yu Ao Tian,

how my heart would feel it???"

Still that same words, once these two men are engaging fight each other, the most unfortunate person always be Yao Yao. But toward them if seems she has no reason to get angry, because the reason of their fight is always her.

Suddenly Feng Chen Yi silent, for sometime, he smiles and said: "Today we are having meal at outside."

Oh my gosh, the old Feng Chen Yi isn't someone alike this.

Whenever she is angry, he would even angrier. Simply to say whenever both of them are arguing they will keep continuing until both of them laugh together.

But now, she can clearly feel that Feng Chen Yi is suppressing his anger, but why doesn't he vent out his anger? The current him, she is little bit afraid.....

"En. You make a phone call to Father in Law, I just afraid Father in Law will angry."

"Alright. You think where should we going to dine out."

"En...." the atmosphere is changed to be bit relax, but Yao Yao knows, this is only on surface. She hopes later, Feng Chen Yi can change back to the usual him.....

The sport car is parked at the entrance of one exclusive Japanese Restaurant.

"Hah, it looks like you haven't had enough during staying at Japan."

Yao Yao has been quite long time felt dilemma when decided what to eat. Listen to Feng Chen Yi provoking voices, she doubted creased her forehead: "Do you dislike it? As I remembered when we were at Japan during that time you seemed to be so enjoying your meal, right?"

"Weren't you the person who such enjoying when ate it?" Feng Chen Yi would never forget, the first time when he brought Yao Yao along to eat at Japanese restaurant, Yao Yao was so enjoying her meal even swept all the food, since that time he understood, this little girl has such big appetite alike adult man! "Get down from the car."

He holding Yao Yao's hand and then slowly walking inside the Japanese restaurant.

The waiters inside the Japanese restaurant are passionately greeting them: "Mr. Feng, Mrs. Feng, please go inside."

Arrived at one of Japanese style private room, two of them are sitting facing each other.

The waiters are smiling sweetly looking at Yao Yao, it even makes Yao Yao embarrassed.

"Mr. Feng, Mrs. Feng really so beautiful."

"Hahahha." Feng Chen Yi is smiling elegantly, open the menu book: "Order these things."

"Alright. Mr. Feng, Mrs. Feng please wait for moment." The waiter kneels leaving the private room, and then pulled the big door.

At this moment Yao Yao finally asked due to her curiosity: "How could they know that I am Mrs. Feng?" although the first news about their marriage was bit high profile, but later on at their second marriage ceremony it was perfectly very low profile, how could there's people still recognized her?

"Are you dummy? Not long ago there was news about my marriage, today I am dining out and holding a woman's hand, the normal people would know who you are, okay?"

"Uh.... that's right."

"Hah." seeing Yao Yao who is looked as if wakening from a dream, Feng Chen Yi cold-shoulder shook his head when looked at her, this his little wife, she can be smarter than anyone, but when she at her foolish state she could be so dummy to the point alike idiot.

"Have all you seen Mrs. Feng? She is so beautiful. Simply to say she alike Crystal doll." in the entrance hall the waiters in shift are gossiping among colleagues.

"Have seen her. Indeed so beautiful, or else how could she married into wealthy family with her an ordinary family background."

"This indeed true. Aiya, Mr. Feng is such young, how can he get married so quickly?"

"Didn't you guys read the news before, his wife was his high school classmate, both of them have known each other for six years, marry is something so normal okay?"

"Stop chit chat, stop chit chat, there's guest coming!" at this time, the supervisor is pointing at the entrance.

Few of the waiters in shift are hurry to welcome, but once they see, few of them immediately open wide their eyes, you see me, I see You, they looked with bizarre eyesight. "Director Yu, CEO Han, welcomed."

As seen, Yu Ao Tian and Han Li Shang are walking one at in front and one at back with big strides entered inside.

Few of the waiters that lead the way showed helpless expression: "What to do? Arrange to which private room?"

"Don't we still have one empty private room? Just arrange at there, won't it solve?"

"Are you stupid, didn't you know about news, not long ago there was news that reported about Second Young Master Feng's wife was Director Yu's supported lover, you want to arrange them to seat next to each others, don't you think both of them going to fight?"

"......didn't say that, the Second Young Master's wife was his high school classmate? How could now it changed to be Director Yu's lover? How this matter happened?"

"How can I know." these two of waiters are showing difficulties expression on their faces while whispering each other, so that with difficulties they take Yu Ao Tian and Han Li Shang to the private room which is next to Feng Chen Yi's private room.

Actually, if this restaurant only an ordinary restaurant thing won't be this complicated, but the problem is this Japanese restaurant private room only separate with sliding door which can easily open to see each other, as long as one of the next room door being opened, two private rooms of people can easily to have conversation because this is Japanese style of door, the privacy is extremely poor!

"Please."

Yu Ao Tian and Han Li Shang are sitting on their seat, order some simple dishes, and then that waiters left.

"Ao Tian...."

"Tck tck tck..... when you were still at school you always have this poker face, wouldn't you feel tired?"

Han Li Shang just wanted to say something, but he is stopped by Yu Ao Tian. From the next private room it's flowing Yao Yao hihihi laughing voice, and then her speaking voice.

Han Li Shang creasing his forehead: "Change to other restaurant!"

"No need." Yu Ao Tian is expressionless waving his hand, silently sitting there without said anything more.

At same time Han Li Shang also keep silent.

And then, because both of them are keep silent, the conversation from next door private room automatically heard clearly to their ears.

It can be said, Yu Ao Tian and Han Li Shang are eating while listening to Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao conversation.

Just at this moment....

'zhi la' (sound of sliding door being opened).

"Make a move!" there are about 7 or 8 people who wearing black suit holding knives barging into Yu Ao Tian's private room.

#### **Chapter 355**

## Yu Ao Tian is Flirting

But after looked at Yu Ao Tian and Han Li Shang expression, the person who seems to be the leader suddenly reach out his hand: "Wait!" nervously he gulping his saliva, hurried showing his smiling face: "Aiya, how... how can two of you?"

"Big Boss? What's going on?" Little Scoundrel not understand asked.

That Big Boss in bad mood hit his head: "Hurry apologizing toward Director Yu and CEO Han, still daring to ask?"

Few of the little scoundrels who heard it, immediately they understood who are these two men in front of their eyes, no need to said about their on surface status. All are mingling in underworld, there's no one who does not know who is big boss of Yu Long group Yu Ao Tian and also the second big boss Han Li Shang. "Yu, Director Yu, you...."

Yu Ao Tian is coldly stretch out his hand and stopped the little scoundrels who bowing apologized toward him, expressionless cast a glance to their Big Boss, without saying anything. As if he is waiting their Big Boss to give an explanation.

"Yu, Director Yu, really sorry. We are carrying an order come here to find Feng Group's Feng Chen Yi, but as result who knows that.... we are.... coming to wrong room."

So this the case! Walking on two paths the white and black paths, Yu Ao Tian is clearly understand there's some of business men who would come to look for mafia help to do something, it seems that Feng Chen Yi has offended those rotten people.

Yu Ao Tian is silent for moment, slowly his corner of mouth lift up smiles

sinister, raised his hand and pointing at the next room.

An immediately that Big Boss understood what Yu Ao Tian meant: "Thank you, thank you." politely they closed the sliding door, turned their back and then opened the next room door!

At one glance Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi who are chatting happily, immediately both of them already can feel the strange!

"Make moves!" Followed by the command, suddenly few of the scoundrels who are holding knives rushing into the room.

Feng Chen Yi's face dim, faster he flipping over the table: "You go first!" as fast as an arrow he has been in front of Yao Yao protecting her, he got up and fight with that scoundrels.

Whose men are this group of people belong to? Report to the police? Or better to contact Ou Yang Zi Xuan?

Very obvious, this group of men are targeting Feng Chen Yi, but because the door is blocked, Yao Yao only can climb to the next room.

While waiting for a chance when everyone not pay attention, quickly Yao Yao pulling the sliding door that connect to next door, 'sneak off', at the moment she has been hiding inside. Close the sliding door: "Report to police!" she is nervously taking out her mobile phone, she is completely not pay attention toward two persons inside the room.

"Bao Bei, if you are making a report to the police, you are really caused Chen Yi to die."

That's right! If this time making a report to police, Media must be hurried coming here, perhaps there would be news about Feng Group's General Manager being attacked, when time arrives it would affect Feng Group's stocks. "That's right, what you said not wrong!" Yao Yao is talking so affirm by nodding her head to the voice.

But at the moment when that devilish good looking face caught by her eyes.....

'Bam' a sound, mobile phone that on her hand before, it is falling down to the floor, Yao Yao shocked her mouth wide opened: "Yu! Ao! Tian!!"

Yu Ao Tian smiles devilish titled his head aside, stretch out his hand pointing at the food which served on the table: "Leave it for you as your share, do you want to eat together?"

How could he at here?

Yao Yao is sitting on the tatami, her body is leaning on the sliding door, her pair of dark eyes are looking at her back.

Only one door, impossible if Yu Ao Tian does not hear any ruckus happened at the next door. Moreover, how can thing such coincidence, he is sitting in here while that group of men are attacking Feng Chen Yi!

Thinking to this point, Yao Yao is raging in fume frowned: "Do that group of men are people you called to come here?" after said, Yao Yao is picking up her mobile phone and then throwing her mobile phone to Yu Ao Tian.

Han Li Shang who is siting beside seen the situation, his skillful hand quickly stopped the mobile phone, gloomy said: "Woman! You don't act way too much. Do you think Yu Ao Tian such leisure, calling people to come and chop your husband?"

"That's right. Bao Bei, if those men are called by me, I would call the sniper, it won't waste my time and no troublesome." After said, Yu Ao Tian still with his devilish smile took her mobile phone from Han Li Shang's hand and played it on his hand.

It seems that these people aren't called by Yu Ao Tian? Lost in train of thoughts.....

'bam, bam' Yao Yao clearly heard the hard sound from the next door.

She lowers her head, her eyes rolled, she is kneeling to Yu Ao Tian in front, begging and said: "You quickly go and help Chen Yi, okay?"

"En?" Yu Ao Tian is holding the tea cup, takes a sip, and smile devilish: "Why must I go to save your husband?"

"You are such good fighter, it is easy thing for you to deal with those minions (little scoundrels) right, you go to help okay? Can you?"

"Hah....." Yu Ao Tian's lips curved upward, his hand is stopped playing with the

mobile on his hand, that pair of bottomless eyes suddenly are looked eyes to eyes with that pair of big eyes which showed begging eyesight: "Bao Bei, you are learned to be naughty. After all your face is not even blushing now when acting like this."

Yao Yao is dumbfounded, pretending not understanding by creasing her forehead: "What are you saying?"

"Humph? The other party only about 7 or 8 persons, impossible for Chen Yi not able to fight them, if that is the case, how could he pass his childhood safe and soundly. On contrary if it's me...." Yu Ao Tian is reached out his finger, slowly lifts up her chin: "If at this time I showed up, it afraid that tomorrow headline will be Government Officer is getting involved with fighting?"

Geez....

Very quick her lies being revealed, immediately Yao Yao reversed back to her cold expression.

That's right, she just wanted to give a try seeing his attitude, try to see whether Yu Ao Tian is going to help or not, if Yu Ao Tian wants to help, due to his current status as Government officer he would be kicked out from governmental.

If he is not helping, due to Feng Chen Yi ability impossible for him not be able to fight those few little minions!

But, very quick her lies being revealed, there is slightest unhappy in her heart!

Han Li Shang who is sitting beside after listened to these two conversation, and then looked at these two expressions, suddenly he creased his forehead, and still this is his first time to see Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao are trying to trick each other, speak frankly, if not because Yu Ao Tian revealed Yao Yao lies, he really does not know how to react, this is perhaps what called as Woman's scheming!!

Yao Yao is biting hard her lips, she breaks away Yu Ao Tian's hand that hold her chin, coldly raised her body: "Director Yu, I take my leave first!!"

"Aiya, Bao Bei, suddenly you are barging into my place, you think when you say you are leaving.... then you can really leave?"

Seeing Yu Ao Tian sinister expression: "Well what you...." without waiting for her to finish her words.

As seen, Yu Ao Tian quickly extended out his hand, pulled Yao Yao to sit down in his embrace.

Her petite body which tightly being hugged by pair of this man hand, she restless makes moving: "Yu Ao Tian, you let me go!!!"

At the next door, Feng Chen Yi is fighting against few people; only separated by a thin wall, now she is entangling with devil, if she knows the person who sits beside is Yu Ao Tian, she would rather to face those group of scoundrels!

Letting Yao Yao to keep on struggling, that man is smiling devilish, without saying anything, but at same time he also not let her go.

She is so worried and also angry!

Just at this time....

Suddenly the slid door is sliding open.

"Director Yu, CEO Han, next door...." few of the waiters are panicking standing outside the door, but seeing Yao Yao who is in Yu Ao Tian's embrace, suddenly they shut their mouth.

#### **Chapter 356**

## First Time With Feng Chen Yi

An instantaneously, Yu Ao Tian's face is blacken: "Who ask all of you coming inside without knocking the door?"

With panicking looked at the people who are standing outside, damn it! It seems that Media also here! What to do?

Yao Yao who shocked her expression changed to pale creased her forehead, in order to avoid Media to shoot her face, she only can stay at Yu Ao Tian embrace!

"Sorry, sorry, Director Yu, because an incident is happened at Mr. Feng's room which it is on next room, so we are coming to remind you faster to leave here."

"Get out!!" shouted Yu Ao Tian, tightly his hand hold on Yao Yao's body.

This few waiters, quickly shut the door tightly while the outside Media keep on taking his photo.

"Just now who is the woman that embrace by Director Yu?" Few of the waiters are standing outside the door, with an expression you looked at me, I looked at you, they are looking each other, they are guessing that the woman who being embraced perhaps Second Young Master Feng's wife, but they are also not so sure.

While those reporters are constantly checking on their camera: "Aiya, after all the state council officer Director Yu has already had girlfriend? This time really got headline!"

"Are you happy with these?" inside the room, Yao Yao takes all her utmost to free herself, she really does not know whether the reporters have photo her face or not, but once this news exposed, it must be extremely troublesome!

Yu Ao Tian is slowly letting her off from his embrace.

Seize the chance, faster Yao Yao stands up, raging in the fume said: "Yu Ao Tian, if tomorrow we are becoming the headline, you don't think both of us will going to have good day!!!"

"I don't mind." He smiles devilish and shrugging his shoulders, with pair of his hand that support his body, he is flirting: "The most my reputation is going to tarnish as seducer toward other wife."

#### Scumbag!

Simply to say Yu Ao Tian he MF is scumbag!! Yao Yao is fiercely curled his hand into fist, turned her body and then walking toward the door.

"Bao Bei, the reporters are still guarding at outside, if you are walking out from here, it will really get exposed soon."

At her back, there is Yu Ao Tian provocation sounds. Yao Yao is really taging in fume to the point she feels dizzy, actually what big sin she had done in her past life, the person who killed her mother could be this devil?

For once again she make fist, she only can choose to turn back at the room where Feng Chen Yi stayed now.

"Ao Tian, should we do something to the media?" waiting until Yao Yao left, Han Li Shang coldly asked, honestly once the news are exposed, actually it will really give bad impact toward Yu Ao Tian's image.

He smiles, pulled his necktie, and slowly said: "No need. I don't mind it."

After went through such fierce fighting, the next room is absolutely in mess, some of the scoundrels are lying on the floor, while the rest might escape.

"Chen Yi." quickly Yao Yao hugging onto Feng Chen Yi who is sitting at one corner of the room, she looked at him from head to toe: "Are you okay?"

"I'm fine."

She had made her prediction those scoundrels impossible to fight Feng Chen Yi, after all they have known each other for years, Feng Chen Yi martial art is excellent, more or less she knew these things.

"The Media are guarding at outside, what should we do?"

"We leave from next door room." Said Feng Chen Yi, stand up and walking heading to the next room door.

Yao Yao is shocked and opened wide her eyes, the next room... isn't it Yu Ao Tian's room? "Aiya...." at the moment when she wanted to stop him, the sliding door has pulled open by Feng Chen Yi.

But the room at their next has been emptied....

Did Yu Ao Tian and other had gone?

It seems 80% the reporters who guarded in front the door at least had dismissed, right? "Chen Yi, let me take look at the door."

"En."

Yao Yao is tensed when she is pulled open the sliding door a bit, her head pop out looking right and left to make check. There are few reporters who still guarding outside their room.

While outside Yu Ao Tian's room there's no one guarding it. "Let's go!" she is moving her hands, faster she and Feng Chen Yi left from that inner room....

The car is moving to west, but it seems not a way to go home.

"Where are we going to?" Yao Yao is curiously asking Feng Chen Yi who is sitting beside.

"Back to my place."

'back to my place.'?

Feng Chen Yi's apartement?

"Don't we back to home today?"

Feng Chen Yi cast cold glance toward Yao Yao, stretch out his hand and holding her hand: "The place that we are heading now it is ours home!"

Ugh....

Speak honestly, for this half month after she married Feng Chen Yi, she always staying at Feng's Mansion, other than dinner time, most of time Feng Chen Yi always staying at their room, so rare to show up himself.

She could feel that, he must be hate that home, right?

That's right!

If she is asked to stay at the home where she shares the place with person who killed her mother, she would also feel so uncomfortable! "Have you told your father not?"

"I had called him, had called him, before I not realized that actually you are scared my father so much?"

"Of course!" she does not want because of her and then ruin father and son relationship!

Eyes inadvertently looked at Feng Chen Yi's hand that hold her arm: "Chen Yi, you..." Yao Yao is nervously touched.... something wet.....

When she looked at her palm....

Oh. She could not help herself to let out cold breath: "Chen Yi, you are wounded!"

"Hah?" compare to Yao Yao who seems tensed, Feng Chen Yi is clearly showed as if nothing is big matter.

"How can bleed? It's okay, it is only small wound."

"If it only a small wound how can it bleed so much? You stop the car at roadside, let me see it."

"Soon we are arrived at home, when arrived at home you free to see." after said, Feng Chen Yi accelerate his car, not long after that they are arrived at their 'home' apartment.

"Is it really a small wound, but how can...." inside the living room, Yao Yao is creasing her forehead, suspicious looked at his arms which wounded not too deep.

"My beloved Yao Yao, how long would you like to look at it?"

"Ugh...." cold sweat, she is focusing at the wound, but she completely forget to taking care of it! Yao Yao guiltily smiles, hurried she takes out the medicine Box and also band-aid to treat the wound on his arm.

```
"Are your body hurt?"
"No."
```

"I don't believe!! undress, let me check it!!" Yao Yao is forcibly wanted to make a check.

Feng Chen Yi eyes flashed, very cooperate, he take off his clothes. Not long at that, his perfect body posture are naked in front of Yao Yao.

Up to this point, Yao Yao stills not feel anything, and she is such careful to check on Feng Chen Yi's body.

```
"The lower part, do you want to check it?"

"Ugh...."
```

"It's not a big deal, husband can take off and let you slowly to make a check!" after said, Feng Chen Yi is going to take off his jeans.

Seeing his mischievous good looking face, Yao Yao cheeks 'blush' for moment, and then from her neck to her ears it turned red: "No.... no need to check it."

"Oh so this the case." Feng Chen Yi is pretending to be sad and even pouted his mouth, not long after that, his mouth curved up, and turn Yao Yao's body, pulled her into his embrace, softly said: "But husband wanted to check on your body, what to do?"

#### 357A

Australia-R18-Rating		

So this chapter is the continuation whether Feng Chen Yi flirting is succeed or not? Do Yao Yao and Yu Ao Tian Ship really sank to deep sea and Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao ship sailed to the vast ocean

Again I need to warn this chapter is bit hotter and still able to thump one's heart LOLS

## **Chapter 357**

An intoxicating and teasing voice is flowing to Yao Yao's ear, it makes her heart a ripple.

Her back sticking to the man's strong chest, it is clearly can be felt the man's warm body temperature is getting hotter.

Since when Feng Chen Yi learn to flirt this way? It clearly he wasn't someone like this before. "Chen Yi, stop to tease." she restlessly moving her waist.

However, this action is rubbing the man's body. Feng Chen Yi pair of deep eyes dim, one his hand turned her head, his cold icy lips are quickly pressing down hers.

Yao Yao shocked open her eyes big, initially she wanted to refuse, but she does not have reason to do so.

Thus she lets him to kiss her.

Very obvious, Feng Chen Yi isn't satisfied with this kiss: "At least you replying my kiss, or else I feel alike kissing with wood."

Seeing his helpless expression, Yao Yao feels guilty and lower her head.

Thinking carefully, since she married with Feng Chen Yi, although both of them are sleeping on the same bed, but they never did any intimate gestures. All her attention put on her ways to revenge, she is completely ignoring Feng Chen Yi as her legal husband this matter, and she never done her duties as wife.

Although her reason wanting to borrow Feng Chen Yi power in order to revenge on behalf her mother, but, she has told herself, as long as this marriage is available, she promised to stay at Feng Chen Yi side forever!

Thinking to this point, Yao Yao is pursed her lips light, slowly close her eyes, and then slowly kissing Feng Chen Yi's lips.

Her small mouth seriously and carefully sucking his cold lips, that add lustre of little tongue clumsily inserted to his mouth.

Under this flirting situation, Feng Chen Yi bull eyes, excitedly hold her little

tongue and suck it back.

'hu....hu...' quite a while, the vague atmosphere inside the room changed little bit hot, while the air feels washy-wishy.

After all Yao Yao is new leaner, being guiding by Feng Chen Yi passionate kiss, very obvious she could not hold onto it, her breathing becomes rougher.

"Yao Yao, you are breathless." Feng Chen Yi goes down to her collar bone licking it lightly and then moved to lick her sensitive earlobe, the warm-hot air is spreading to her ear, it even force her to breath rougher.

"Uh." for while she feels numb, Yao Yao can't endure so she moves her body: "So itchy, stop it." her faint resistance of sound as if an invisible temptation.

Feng Chen Yi seems could not hold back himself anymore, he inserted his hand inside her clothes.

"Humph.... don't!" her sensitive body gradually turned and trembling.

His hot passionate hand is gently teasing her sensitive part: "Yao Yao, in here you seems to have prepared, right?"

"Don't, Chen Yi, take out your hand. This is enough." Yao Yao is trying to make the man takes out his hand from her inner clothes.

But how can by this time asking the man to stop when the food is almost at his mouth?

Feng Chen Yi with his domineering aura flip over her body and pressing her down to sofa, faster he lifted her body, slowly goes lower....

"En ah....." something alike invisible electric is flowing over her body, Yao Yao feels in difficulty frowned: "Don't.... stop to suck it. Don't be like this...."

The rapid breathing and mixed with the woman's sound of resistance, for the man this is type of unimaginable temptation.

Feng Chen Yi kisses from her flat stomach along the way to her lower part, forcing to take off her long pants.

"Don't! stop it! Please don't continue, Chen Yi, stop it!" the unsteady breathing suddenly turned to be feared feeling, today she only can reply his

kissing that's all, and she could not move to further step with him.

But Yao Yao not even a bit understand about man, once man has already into\*\* it hard to stop them,

The long pant has already taken off by Feng Chen Yi, with domineering aura he squeezed between her pair of leg, that pair of eyes with lust is looking at her frightened white small face, unsteady breath: "Wifey, give me. I could not hold it back anymore...."

Since they are married, this is the first time Feng Chen Yi officially called her wifey.

And inside the man's pair of eyes filled with impatience and also strong possessive gleam, it makes Yao Yao dumbfounded, such stranger.... Feng Chen Yi.....

When she is at the blank-state, suddenly she can feel as if something get into her body.

Yao Yao who has been through this kind of experience shortly could make guess what kind of thing that is. "Chen Yi, you calm down!! don't be like this, okay? I.... I am so scare...."

Even though it has been passed for half month, but Yao Yao stills cannot move on from the nightmare when she was \*\* by Yu Ao Tian.

There's time she even dream about that scenery when she was \*\* by him.

Today, she able to respond toward Feng Chen Yi's kiss actually she has made big progressing. So that if asking her to do thing completely, it is impossible!

"I am sorry." at sudden, Feng Chen Yi's pair of eyes which filled with lust turned into icy-cold eyes, he faster gets up and then tidy his own clothes.

As seen Yao Yao also quickly dress her clothes back. "Sorry... really sorry."

"It's not your matter, it not your mistake...." so whose mistake it is? Feng Chen Yi mocking himself, raised, expressionless he walking toward bathroom.



Yu Ao Tian or Feng Chen Yi?

## **Chapter 357**

### Part 2 (Two)

He unscrew the faucet, he looked at the clear water which filled the sink. He suddenly plunged into the wash basin, constantly using the cold clear water washing his face.

'Chen Yi, you calm down!! don't be like this, okay? I.... I am so scare....'

Other than him, impossible for other to understand the feared that showed in Yao Yao's eyes.

He was not intentionally to hurt his beloved wife, as additional he was not intentionally to recall that nightmare which buried inside his wife's heart. Because, there's a time he also could not control himself not to think the scenery when Yu Ao Tian and Yao Yao were on same bed!

After all, a domineering man alike Feng Chen Yi impossible for him to accept that his wife ever get intimated with other man before. He only tries not to think of it, tries hard to let himself to forget.

But....

He is also a normal man!

He thought, as long as she can stay beside him then it is more than enough, but.... after for sometime, he even thought to have more and more, he even think to intimate with her!

But, there is someone who invisible intrude into their life!

"Yu Ao Tian!!! your move indeed enough evil!!!" at the moment when Feng Chen Yi lifts up his head, the mirror is reflecting his pair of eyes that filled with hatred.

If at the beginning he did take this matter seriously regarding Yu Ao Tian's move few days ago taking and raping Yao Yao on their wedding day, but now he finally understand how deep Yu Ao Tian scheme!!

(this paragraph means at beginning FCY didn't understand why YAT must make such moves [kidnapping and raping] during FCY's wedding day but not before the wedding day but after this time finally he understood, YAT was taking best move for himself to be thorn in their marriage so FCY won't be able to have YY in his life due to the trauma YAT gave)

'Bam!'

At sudden, it is sound of something fall down and break from living room.

Feng Chen Yi is creasing his forehead, nervously he rushing out from bathroom to living room to check: "Yao Yao?"

As seen, Yao Yao is dumbstruck standing in kitchen, with her guilty face she pointing at the plate which she broke into pieces: "I want to make dessert for you.... but...."

Since the day he meets Yao Yao, he has known that she is born naturally not to become wife! Still dare to make dessert? If she able to cook white rice it is way better!! "Huh, what kind of dessert you want to make, tell me, let me make it." after Feng Chen Yi said, helplessly he smiles.

Forget it, she is a girl that not yet completely growing up, it stills better for him to spoil her like he used to do in the past, accompany her playing, much better.

## **358**

Forget about Yu Ao Tian and Feng Chen Yi, finally my biased is showing up LOLS Hei Yan Long is come back to spotlight, after all the sweet-depressing and suffocating chapters.

## Chapter 358

#### First Time Coming to Bao Lai Group

Midnight.

Both of them are lying on the bed facing each other. Feng Chen Yi is pulling the quilt on their body, slowly said: "Yao Yao, tomorrow I will be going to Turkey. You this few days just...."

"Rest assured, I won't let your step mother to bully me. If I keep on staying at here, on contrary it would give other reason to do harm, reported bad thing to father in law!!" at the moment Yao Yao has guessed what Feng Chen Yi wanted to say.

He is helplessly sighed: "Well, you take care yourself well, if there anything happen just call me at anytime."

"En en. You rest assured." Yao Yao gives faint smile, suddenly she remembered about those people who attacked them. "Oh yeah, what was going on with those attackers?"

"Haha, sometimes there's businessmen who because of business competition, looking for Mafia in order to scare. This is something so normal."

The way Feng Chen Yi said this alike casual conversation, this is first time for Yao Yao to encounter something like this, never thought something happened in drama, or reported in news regarding the competition among business men are something real. It seems that business world also not really peaceful.....

\*\*

## Bao Lai Group.

Early in the morning, Yao Yao is not even going to company, she is directly heading to Bao Lai Group.

This is her first time she stepped her feet into Hei Yan Long's company,

although the place isn't as big as Berson Group or Feng Group, but the interior and style are sophisticated and splendid.

"Miss, may I know do you have appointment?"

When passing the receptionist, Yao Yao is directly heading to elevator to CEO's room.

"Hello, I am a person who asked by Feng Group's General Manager Feng to meet CEO Hei for something. So that.... I don't have any appointment."

"Ah, you are the person who is asking by General Manager Feng, faster get inside." once the secretary heard Yao Yao as the Feng Group's people hurried she gives her green light.

She has known, once she mentioned Feng Chen Yi she really no need to have any appointment, she believes this is also applied to Ou Yang Group, right? These three best buddy, really so 'closely united'.

'Knock knock' the secretary is pushed open the CEO's room: "CEO Hei, General Manager Feng's employee is coming to meet you."

Inside the splendid and gorgeous CEO's room, Hei Yan Long is holding a black golf club backing the door playing golf inside his room.

"En, ask the person to come in."

"Yes." The secretary is smiling to Yao Yao, and then politely she close the CEO's room door.

She looked around the office room that super shinning, suddenly she feels there's a flash blind feeling. She really wanted to ask Hei Yan Long this kind of 'over splendid' office room does not he afraid to get blind of it?

"What's matter Chen Yi looking for me?" Hei Yan Long still backing the door, coldly asked.

Yao Yao is giving faint smile, said: "It's not Chen Yi who asked me to come here, but I have matter to look for you."

Once Hei Yan Long heard this speaking voice, immediately he stopped his golf, turned his head: "Sister in law (younger)? what's matter you looking for me?"

If others who do not know Hei Yan Long real age, he speaks this way is something so common. But she has already known this brat is only older by one year than her, compare to Feng Chen Yi, he is younger by two years after all he is so thick skin to call her as Sister in law (younger)! really..... huh....

"CEO Hei, is today you have join a Blind Auction?"

"En."

"Toward this time 'Auction and Bidding' how strong your will? How much money your company willing to pay?"

Listen to Yao Yao question, Hei Yan Long puts his golf club beside, slowly walking and sitting down at his office chair: "Sister in law, don't you know this is my company secret, right? What's? don't say that your husband also interested with this time 'Blind Auction'? so that he asked you to come here for digging some information, are you?"

"You are misunderstood me, CEO Hei." looked at Hei Yan Long stern facial expression, Yao Yao is helplessly pouted her mouth: "You know, Feng Group property is always responsible by Feng Chen Rui. So that Feng Chen Yi won't have interested with this time 'Auction and Bidding'."

"So why are you asking me?"

"Regarding this, actually I have little bit attention toward this time 'Blind Auction', so that I wonder whether I can help you out or not, that's all." Yao Yao is smiling sweetly sitting on the chair facing Hei Yan Long.

His pair of black eyes are dim, raised his hand and take one of the document tossing in front of her.

"What is this?"

"Our company proposal for the bid price."

Cold sweat....

Just now Hei Yan Long is protecting as if jade vase, never thought he could be so fast to show his bid price proposal to her? Yao Yao is flipping the bid document, carefully read it.

Facing with Hei Yan Long who by this time slowly opened his mouth: "You must

know that, our Bao Lai toward this piece of property is priority for our progressing. It can be said this time piece of land is so important for our Bao Lai Group. But, this piece of land is government's, moreover it is 'Blind Auction', and also this time competitive bidding still has Berson. So that...."

Hah, if not because Berson she also lazy to follow up this kind of matter.

'pa' a sound of document being closed: "It's okay CEO Hei, I understand what you mean. You just want the piece of land, but the 8% of the land, the government has decided to give it to Berson?"

This what so-called as dark mark of Blind Auction, in which a piece of land hasn't had price tag but the 8% of the land has already given to Berson, asking each of the real estate companies are asked to give their own price.

Perhaps the government had decided the price to be 100 million Yuan, if there is someone who closer to this million yuan, then this piece of land belongs to that person. If there is someone who tag the price more, then this piece of land belongs to that person.

But, if this piece of land only worth one billion of dollars, and there is someone given 600 million, even though able to get this piece of land, but without realized lose millions. Therefore, there are many of developers (real estate companies) will be underpriced the default bid price, so there, price won't be higher than the default price.

"Humph, they Berson have Director Yu at their back, Director Yu must be known in advance the fixed price given by the government." So that, Impossible for Hei Yan Long to estimate the quasi valuation alike Berson Group!

"How about this, CEO Hei. If you believe on me, how about you take me along to the Auction Venue, can you?"

"Do you want to come too?" Hei Yan Long doubted creasing his forehead.

"En. Perhaps I could not help much, just thought as you give me a chance and taking me to see the world."

Anyway bringing anyone just same, Hei Yan Long nodding his head: "Alright."

"Other, I still have small requirement...." Yao Yao is smiling naughtily titled her

head.

Hei Yan Long's face dimmed: "Still have a requirement?"

"It's so small, very small requirement. Can you... change your bid price to.... 13 Billion?"

Once Hei Yan Long heard it, his face changed to green, is this so-called as small requirement? He put 16 billion in his bidding document, Yao Yao directly wanted to change it to 13 billion. Hah, can this be called as small requirement? "Sister in law, next time, when you are thinking to tell me your little requirement, can you give me time to make preparation for my heart. Or else, I afraid I could not suppress my rage!!!"

Hei Yan Long is someone rude and belongs to violent character. But he is also someone who keeps his face well, very loyal person. Even though he dislikes Feng Chen Yi's wife mingle on his business, but because seeing Feng Chen Yi's face, he stills changed the bid price in his proposal to 13 billion.

7		0
≺	7	ч
J	J	J



Li Ruo Ting for the N times coming to give trouble for Yao Yao. This time she has been so over-boarded, no wonder Feng Chen Yi never fallen for her.

# Chapter 359

#### Get Splashed gasoline all over the body

"You go to the parking lot first waiting for me. Later I will come to find you."

"Alright, CEO Hei." Since Yao Yao left Hei Yan Long's office room, she is obediently and directly heading to the elevator and then stopped at parking lot.

More or less she can feel it, Hei Yan Long seemed not to satisfy with her, but she also has confident to make Hei Yan Long changed his perception toward her!!

"Luo Yao Yao, you go die!" suddenly, a sharp voice echoed in quiet underground parking lot, not long after that, it's something cold liquid splashed to Yao Yao's body.

She carefully smells the cold liquid-thing that splashed on her body actually is.... gasoline? Suddenly when she turned her head: "Li Ruo Ting!!"

"You this lowly s\*! I want to bring you together with me to hell!!!" after said, Li Ruo Ting is light a lighter.

Yao Yao's heart tightened, she steps backward step by step: "Li Ruo Ting! Have you done yet with all these! That time, when you slept with Feng Chen Yi, I didn't come to find you for revenge, but you are keep coming to disturb my life as if everything not enough yet?"

"It's served your right! It was you who could not grab your man, so that you gave me a chance!!"

"That's right! Very well, like what you said. So what yours right to scold and even condemned me regarding snatched away your big sister's man as third wheel?"

Listened to Yao Yao questioned her, Li Ruo Ting scorned and laughed: "You don't compare yourself with me! I am not as schemer as you!!!"

"Schemer? I really have enough!!!! you can go and asked your big sister,

actually who is schemer between both of us!" Yao Yao angrily curled her hands into fists, shouted: "That time, when I had known that Yu Ao Tian was your big sister boyfriend, I had constantly stepped back. But she still coming to find fault to me and even harmed my family, she even made my grandpa almost jumped from building!!"

"You keep saying that, I was the person who caused your sister miscarriage. I can swear to heaven, I never even once harmed your big sister, it was your big sister who abort her baby by herself, by blaming to myself, and even asked Yu Ao Tian to break with me!!!!"

"Hah, Luo Yao Yao, do you think I am dummy? There is no woman who would use baby in her stomach to frame other?" Li Rui Ting scorned.

Yao Yao creased her forehead, continuously said: "There is! Your big sister is that type of person, because she knew that Yu Ao Tian absolutely would not want to let your big sister to have that baby, she by herself also knew this matter, so that she intended to abort the child by put a blame onto me!"

"Other, you are keep on saying I was the person who caused your big sister being raped. If not because of your big sister, I would not being kidnapped by the Mafia. That time, I had said to your big sister, I could bring her out safe and sound left that place, but how's about she? She because of wanted my death, she even sold me out to the mafia boss."

"It's true! I admitted, your big sister being rape and even rounded it had my responsible. But human could not do as much as heaven! If she didn't force me to no way, I would not do something like that in order to safe myself!" regarding this matter, actually Yao Yao was doubting, during that time with that kind of situation was she really no way to choose.

"Luo Yao Yao, even though all of these are true. I won't ever forgive you. If not because of you, Chen Yi would not make my family went bankrupt, you go die! Luo Yao Yao!!" after said, Li Ruo Ting with hatred tossed the lighter from her hand.

Just at this time....

A shadow flashed, slowly to the lighter which fly to Yao Yao's stopped in the air! Hei Yan Long is catching that Lighter with his hand.

"CEO Hei?"

"CEO Hei!!" the bodyguard who are followed at Hei Yan Long's back rushed to the in front, checking on Hei Yan Long's hand.

He coldly looked at Li Ruo Ting who is standing not far from there.

She seems knowing had gotten herself into big trouble, Li Ruo Ting turned her head and run away: "Luo Yao Yao, Let's us wait and see, I am absolutely won't let you off."

Hei Yan Long takes back his disdain glared toward Li Ruo Ting, his black eyes gradually looked to Yao Yao whose body smells gasoline, There is indescribable expression which shown by Hei Yan Long at this moment.

But, just now conversation between these two women, once Hei Yan Long heard it he understood clearly!!

So that the thing was.....

Now finally he understood, the word that Yao Yao said before 'Things were happened because of me, and it also had relation with me, from the beginning to the ending, it was still due to my prediction, but there was no way for me to change it.' this such vague words are represented what.

It seems.... Feng Chen Yi really is not mistaken seeing person, it's only he does not really understand this woman, that's all.

Just in short time suddenly, Hei Yan Long seems to have interested toward Yao Yao, actually last time she could explain clearly these things, but she decided to keep silent, she really different with others women.

"CEO Hei, are you okay?" Yao Yao fasten her steps walked at his in front, looking at Hei Yan Long's palm.

He drawn back his hand. Shook his head: "It's nothing." his eyes are looking at her with measuring eyesight.

Yao Yao helplessly smiles: "It seems, today there is no way for me to come along to Bid meeting."

"It's okay. There still have time before the bid, I will take you to change your clothes first."

"It's no need, CEO Hei."

Hei Yan Long simply to say ignore whatever Yao Yao said, his pair of black eyes flashed. Two of his bodyguards are taking Yao Yao to sit down inside his gorgeous splendid cars.

"Ou...." (almost vomit sound) along the way, Hei Yan Long is wrinkle his face, covering his nose, "Open the window!"

"CEO Hei, the windows are opened."

"Then accelerate the car faster!"

"CEO Hei, we are at the fastest!"

"Damn it!" Hei Yan Long is pulled his head out to the window, the thick gasoline smells simply to say stimulate his brain and stomach almost throwing out.

"CEO Hei, how about..... I get down from the car?" Sitting facing him Yao Yao is showing guilty expression when said it.

He powerless moving his hands: "Get down? Don't know who will light the fire beside you? Don't you want to live anymore, but at least you must consider other people, okay?"

"....." the problem is Hei Yan Long keeps on showing his bothersome expression, not to mention how bitter she stays inside the car.

The car is arrived at beauty salon first, with the alert body guards, they are sending off Yao Yao to the beauty salon, and let the hairdresser to help her to wash her hair.

And then, very fast they are arrived at one department store. And still with full alert of bodyguards guarded, as if Yao Yao is someone dangerous, she being surrounded by the bodyguards. People who are passing by would look with a strange look.

"CEO Hei, welcomed."

In front of one Hermes store, Hei Yan Long is pushed open the door and walked inside, the salespersons are passionate welcoming him.

Yao Yao has made guess that he would bring her to Hermes shop, since the first time she saw Hei Yan Long that time, this man is wearing Hermes all over his body. Hah, he really types of.....who loves luxury items!

"Go, and pick dresses for this Miss, and then asked her to have change."

"Yes, CEO Hei." the salesperson smiles, passionately bringing Yao Yao to changing room.

Hei Yan Long is sitting on the sofa while flipping the magazine.

Not long after that, Yao Yao is going out from the changing room: "I have done changing, let's we go."

Hei Yan Long lifts his head, looking at the new clothes which wear by Yao Yao, coldly shook his head: "Cannot! Go and change to other!!"

## 360 A

I don't know why when I read this chapter, the first person who pop out in my mind is Zhao Li Ying with her purple dress. Since Yao Yao is described as someone who has petite figure, and Zhao Li Ying also someone who has petite figure, this just matched my imagination LOLS.

PS: the picture is credit to MS. Koala

# Chapter 360

#### Hei Yan Long Seen Her Body (O.Ops)

"Hah??"

"Woman, I say this is not good, go and change to others, okay!!"

"....." Clothes are worn by her, whether it beautiful or not what's the matter with Hei Yan Long? If this brat is particular paying attention to his outfits, why must he also dragged her together alike him so noise about outfits!

"Miss, CEO Hei dislikes it, you better go and change into another." said the salesperson, hurried whispered on Yao Yao ears: "Miss, perhaps you just dating CEO Hei? His temperament is absolutely no good, please don't make him angry."

*"* 

Hahahahaha, of course she knows very well if Hei Yan Long has very bad temperament, but the matter is..... she isn't his girlfriend okay?

Helplessly, Yao Yao has to force herself and then get into the changing room again to try others.

Keep changing the clothes. She simply to say wanted to fiercely smashed the mirror with the clothes that she keeps on trying, a domineering man like Feng Chen Yi not even dare to control her and even give her freedom to wear whatever she wanted, why this Hei Yan Long.... can.... be this domineering?

Hei Yan Long who is sitting on the sofa seems impatiently waiting for her, with his blacked face he raised, constantly he moving to the women changing room.

His deep black eyes eventually spotted on a small strapless dress. Quickly he takes it, and directly go to the changing room, turned up the curtain of the changing room: "Woman, wear.... this dress!"

Inside the changing room, Yao Yao just wearing a pair of under garment, and just by chance she is facing face to face with Hei Yan Long, she stupidly opened wide her mouth, and she is getting into blank-state, she even forget to cover her

body.

The clock ticking away, one, two. Two people's eye are interlocked in the air. The next moment, Yao Yao finally gained herself: "Ah!!!!!" she screamed, hurried she used her hands to cover her chest area.

"What are you screaming for? Take the dress! Wear it!"

"....." how will there be such kind of man in this world? A normal man whenever they see this kind of scenery, don't they immediately turned their head, or put down the curtain? How can Hei Yan Long looked a like Gay standing there as if nothing happened?

Yao Yao is dumbfounded taking the dress.

And then Hei Yan Long finally put down the curtain.

But the next moment suddenly....

His white smooth good looking face suddenly blushed pinkish. Intolerable frowned, he is letting out his long breathe, secretly murmured: "Really... damn it!"

Wearing the dress which given by Hei Yan Long, Yao Yao slowly walking out from the changing room.

Those few salespersons who see it..... "Woah, CEO Hei... indeed has great eyes!"

Hard not to say, the dress which chosen by Hei Yan Long worn by Yao Yao simply to say make her looks so lovely, shown her aura and elegant. Compare to them who are professional staffs in choosing clothes, Hei Yan Long is stronger few couple times.

"CEO Hei, this time can it? If you are keep on changing, we are going to be late on Blind Auction." Yao Yao is expressionless walking to Hei Yan Long in front.

Toward just now matter, she more or less stills cannot let it go. But she does not show any expression, she looks just.....

Hei Yan Long lifts his head up, looking at her from head to toe: "Not too bad, let's go." raised, walking to outside.

Yao Yao silently keeps on following at his back. Waiting until two of them getting into the car. Hei Yan Long sniffed with his nose: "How could there still gasoline smell?" suddenly stretch out his hand.

Without waiting for her response, Hei Yan Long has pulled her into his embrace, smells her hair: "Hair indeed still smelly." Loosen his hand, he narrowed his eyes: "Woman, give a consider, how about cut your hair."

*"* 

Yao Yao is shocked open wide her mouth, she really wanted to say something.... how can this Hei Yan Long such bossy and also picky? Because he does not like to smell the gasoline and then asked other to cut the hair?

Oh, My heaven, simply to say she really not daring to imaging, if there really a day whomever the blind girl going to fall with Hei Yan Long, what kind of end that girl going to have?

#### Chapter 361

## **Blind Auction**

The huge auction venue, Hei Yan Long is taking Yao Yao and also his bodyguards quickly entered.

This kind of grand coming entered into everyone vision lines, not less of the business men that politely greeting him. "CEO Hei."

"CEO Hei...."

One of Hei Yan Long's hand is inserted into his pocket, while his eyes only focus on his own seat, that kind of atmosphere simple so similar with an ancient emperor, aloof and arrogant.

Yao Yao who is following beside him almost dumbstruck, even though someone alike Feng Chen Yi's characters who is domineering and also cold, Yu Ao Tian who is moody and unpredictable with such emperor aura, they are still know how to interact as social elites, but this Hei Yan Long simply to say aloof and arrogant not even bother himself to give fake smile to reply others, really can't help (give up because his character)!

When they are sit down on their seat. Not long from their place there's few voices.

"CEO Han."

"CEO Han, long time no see."

"Long time no see." As seen, Han Li Shang and Mo Xue Tong are exchanging greeting to few of their acquaintances before they sit down at the position of left side first row in the auction place.

Yao Yao glanced at Han Li Shang's back, her cunning eyes are rolled, at sudden her lips corner arch make strange smile.....

"The following competitive bidding will start. Please every business man's representative collect the bid proposal in front." Said the person who is responsible for the bidding at in front.

Hei Yan Long turned his head and looked at Yao Yao: "Let me ask you once again, is it really giving 13 billions?"

She understood Hei Yan Long meaning, from the high price he put at the beginning, she could see the important of this piece of land toward him. But....

"CEO Hei, your price is too high, it is impossible for us to compete with Berson Group!!" after said, Yao Yao is looking at the place where Han Li Shang and Mo Xue Tong sat.

"Do as you like." Hei Yan Long giving his bid proposal to his secretary.

And at same time, Han Li Shang also give the bid proposal to Mo Xue Tong.

All of the people has such fierce eyesight alike tigers toward this time of bidding after it collected.

The person who is responsible for the bidding spoke: "Please all the business men's CEO to wait about one hour, after one hour, we will announce the result."

"Geez, what sort of result, anyway it's just to keep off." inside the auction room, three, two people are sighed.

Basically there are few of CEOs who have left the place. Everyone is business people, it is not like no one not know about this trick?

Due to Yu Ao Tian's position today as the Politician, who will able to win over His Berson Group?

After one hour, initially there are twenty fives companies of CEO who came but some now it left not more than a dozen.

The person who is in charge for the bidding finally returned to the stage: "Twenty five companies bidding proposal we have seen it, the experts had made

a check, this time who is closer to the land price is Berson Group. So that, the piece of land is going to Berson Group!" After said, the person who is in charge of the bidding hit the hammer in his hand.

Hei Yan Long let out cold breathe: "Let's go." when he wanted to stand up.

Faster Yao Yao pulled his arm: "Don't go!"

"En? Woman, do you still have way out?"

She twitched, slowly stand up, strangely said: "The real bidding is begin!!"

Her sharp eyes are looked at the stage.

As seen, Han Li Shang and Mo Xue Tong are slowly walking to the stage, when they are about to take over the land certificate from the person who in charge for the bidding, Yao Yao is coldly opened her mouth: "Why this piece of land must be given to Berson Group?"

This sound is followed with questioning tone, so that some businessmen who are going to left suddenly stopped their footstep.

Standing beside her is Hei Yan Long who is creasing his forehead, actually what this woman wanted to do?

"This Miss, I have explained very clearly, The bid price that given by Berson group is the most closest to the price of the land itself!" The person who is responsible of the bidding is sternly explained to Yao Yao.

"Oh yeah?" faster she walked heading to the stage, coldly asked: "Well, may I know how much the price that given by Berson Group?"

"Miss, this is the business secret. You must respect the bidding rules." The person who responsible to the bidding frown, his eyes are looking at HEi Yan Long: "CEO Hei, is she your's people?"

"That's right! She is my people!"

"Well, please troublesome CEO Hei to bring her to leave from here."

Due to Hei Yan Long's temperament, he won't have any question regarding this kind of bidding. But, he also hates the most when people tell him what to do

(giving him order)!

Hei Yan Long is inserted one of his hands in his pocket, quickly he walking beside of Yao Yao: "I am sorry, whatever the question of Miss Luo, it is also my question."

"CEO Hei, it's okay if this Miss does not know the rules regarding Blind Auction, but impossible for you not to know the rules of Blind Auction, aren't you?"

Since it is what so-called of Blind Auction, it means no one know the whole process of the bidding!

The responsible party will not disclose how much the bid price from other companies, of course Hei Yan Long knows this rule, but stills a same word, he really hates other people using such tone when speaking with him. So that, this time he absolutely sides on Yao Yao and together they making this fuss.

But...

He really does not have any way to change the Blind Auction rules.

But....

Yao Yao has a way! "That's right, in [Business competition rules], indeed there's rule in which cannot disclosure other parties bidding price. But.... the world class advance lawyer indeed have this sort of access to investigate regarding Blind Auction!" After said, quickly Yao Yao taking out her Lawyer license from her pocket, arrogantly said: "Now! I want to know the bid price which given by Berson Group!!!!"

"That little girl is world class lawyer?" When Yao Yao took out her lawyer license, all the person who are below the stage dumbstruck. They never thought that Hei Yan Long is going to take such fierce role to the auction venue.

Don't even mention whether they know it or not, even Hei Yan Long by himself also does not know if Luo Yao Yao is world class lawyer, furthermore she is advance lawyer? He only knew that Yao Yao ever became Yu Ao Tian's representative lawyer, but he never thought her lawyer level is such high!

At this moment, the auction venue is turned to be so silent, everyone is focusing and looked at Yao Yao. There's reverence glow on their eyes, and at

same time there's also jealous eyesight toward Hei Yan Long because he has someone like Yao Yao, no one knows.

But.....

This is also the reason why there are many business players compete to have world class lawyer to join their sides;

This is also the reason why the world's class lawyer community are trying to hide the world class lawyers.

Because this kind of high world class lawyer alike Yao Yao can enjoy so many, too many privilege, and also can have so many, so many powerful ways out.

If the government get them, it will get the way to navigate; if the business player get them, they will get green light; if the underworld people get them, they will be turned to be more ruthless. It can be said, the world of the advance world class lawyer can be saint or even the most dangerous group, it make good use it would benefit, if make bad used then they are becoming killing machine.

"Lawyer Luo, CEO Hei, CEO Han, please all of you come to my office room." Said the person who responsible for the auction, once he saw Yao Yao took her lawyer license, faster he changed the way he speaking.

Just afraid because of this matter it would give another big troublesome, he only can bring few of witness to come to his office room.

#### Note:

Blind Auction: Another term for a sealed bid auction in which bidders simultaneously submit bids to the auctioneer without knowledge of the amount bid by other participants. Usually, the highest bidder (or lowest bidder in a procurement auction) is declared the winner. The winner pays either the amount bid (a first price auction) or an amount equal to the next highest bid (a second price auction). Source: Theory net.com

Picture credit to Baidu

# **Chapter 362**

#### **Hei Yan Long Surprises**

Sitting, Han Li Shang is coldly glared at Luo Yao Yao, and he even expressionless glanced at the person who in charge of the auction.

That person who is responsible for the auction helplessly taking out Berson Group bidding proposal, with difficulty he glanced at Han Li Shang and then slowly hand over the bidding proposal to Yao Yao's hand.

She is flipping the bidding proposal, carefully reading the contain. At the moment when she closed the proposal, she spoke sarcastic: "What is going on? It is obviously our Bao Lai Group also gave same bid price alike Berson Group which is 13 trillion, but why you are still giving this pieces of land to Berson Group?"

At beside when Hei Yan Long heard this words, his black eyes are wide open, no wonder this woman was so persistent to ask him changed the bid price to 13 billion, so in order to stay fair to Berson Group?

"Ugh... that. Because the plan which given by Berson Group is more suitable for the development of this piece of land." the person who is responsible for the auction stammered when explained.

Yao Yao is laughing mockingly: "This piece of land is located near to port.due to the theory of export trade, Bao Lai Group's plan is more suitable to do build 18th layers of commercial office building; while the plan that given by Berson Group is doing the construction for export import factory. Although both of these plans are suitable for the future development for this piece of land. But.... the commercial office building is far better compare to build factory, right?"

"Ugh... I think.... factory is more...."

When the person who is responsible for the auction wanted to help on behalf

Berson Group, hurried Yao Yao cut off his words: "Don't say it because of Director Yu who as the person support Berson Group, and this piece of land is government's target, so that, you guys affirm to give this piece of land to Berson Group?"

"This.... this is absolutely impossible! Director Yu has so many things to do, impossible for him to meddle with this small case! Moreover, he is clean person, how could he do something like this! This must be the mistake done by the experts, must be!" the person who is responsible to the auction panicking giving his explanation, helplessly looked at Han Li Shang: "CEO Han, it seems that.... this piece of land is more suitable.... to Bao Lai's group.... plan."

Han Li Shang's face turned dim, coldly nodding his head: "I understood."

Standing beside Hei Yan Long's eyes are immediately gleaming brightly.

But, Yao Yao even whispered something on his ears: "You say, you don't want this piece of land."

"Hah?" Hei Yan Long not understand looked at her.

Yao Yao is smiling devilishly raised her eyebrow: "Say, It's okay."

Understood with the situation, Hei Yan Long coldly said: "Wait, this piece of land ours Bao Lai's group does not want it anymore!!"

"Ah?" after the person who is responsible for the auction heard it, shocked to dumbstruck, and then the next moment he hurried cast a glance to Han Li Shang: "CEO Han, then..."

"Ours Berson Group also does not want it anymore!" iced cold of glance cast fiercely to Yao Yao who standing beside. "We don't want later people will say our Chairman Yu is someone who used public offices for private gain!!!"

"CEO Han, I never said something like that, it just all of you done it too obviously, that's all." Yao Yao gave provoking smile, and the next moment, her expression changed: "CEO Han, are you sure yours Berson Group does not want this piece of land anymore?"

Han Li Shang keeps silent not saying anything, but his eyes are coldly looked at

the other party.

Yao Yao is taking this opportunity, for once again she whispered on Hei Yan Long's ear: "You say, if this piece of land price 1 billion, ours Bao Lai's group will take it!"

Hah....

This vicious woman!!! all of sudden, Hei Yan Long is completely aware actually what's Yao Yao purposed!

She was so persistent required him to change it to 13 Billion, it was only to have fair priced with Berson Group, and then made the government side in difficulties.

The today's, Berson Group in order to avoid rumor, so they didn't want this piece of land anymore. And then, there are many people who had known this piece of land had been taken. If at the end this piece of land hasn't taken ,people would gossip.

At this time, if their Bao Lai Group wanted to spend no matter how much sum of money, the government side would still sold it to them for keeping their face. "I want to buy it 1 Billion, do you willing to sell it or not, if not willing then forget it." After said, Hei Yan Long expressionless stood up.

That person who is responsible for the auction furrowed his brows, gritting his teeth and then gave his answer: "Alright! Sign the contract....!"

This in the course of contacts, Hei Yan Long got the piece of land nothing to say, but he even saved few of billions. Without doubt, this time savior is Yao Yao.

After signed the contract, Hei Yan Long is walking out from the office: "Woman, want do you want? House? Car?"

She smiles: "You can believe me, you really changed the bid proposal to 13 billions, I am really thanked you."

"Hah. I was looking at Feng Chen Yi's face then I listened to you. But now it seems, this is indeed the right decision to take." Said Hei Yan Long happily, he could not help himself not to recall back what Yao Yao said when she came to visit him.

It was obviously she said came to have experience, experienced, the result.... Hah, so this woman is really tiger which disguised herself in pig! No wonder she able to 'settle' Feng Chen Yi!!

"Luo Yao Yao!" suddenly, one iced-cold voice cut off their conversation.

Yao Yao and Hei Yan Long are at same time looked there.

As seen Han Li Shang and Mo Xue Tong are standing in the middle of corridor, coldly looked at them.

"Let's we wait and see!" one sentence that brought threatened feel, and then Han Li Shang dare to turn his head and then left.

Hei Yan Long slowly opened his mouth: "CEO Han, Can I know why are you threatening my goddess of wealth?"

Han Li Shang keeps silent saying nothing, that sort of iced eyesight which able to give chills feeling to other spine.

At beside Yao Yao afraid there would be misunderstanding between Hei Yan Long and Han Li Shang, hurried she drew Han Li Shang attention toward herself by said: "CEO Han." She quickly walked in front of Han Li Shang: "I am not by intention to make you as my enemy. But if Yu Ao Tian still does not want to take the biggest power of Berson Group, later in the future not to mention either Feng Group or Bao Lai Group who compete business with Berson Group, any other companies, as long as they wanted to accept my idea, I will come and join, to take all Berson Group's business!!!"

"Luo Yao Yao, if Yu Ao Tian really get involved, be careful.... you don't even have any chance to cry!" Said with hateful, Han Li Shang brought along Mo Xue Tong to leave the place....

"Hah, I say recently during this period of time as long as there are projects where Feng Group and Berson Group joined, Feng Group will always be won it over. So that, all were done by you?" listened to Yao Yao and Han Li Shang conversation, at least Hei Yan Long understood what was going on, that time he even thought that Feng Group perhaps dug type of strong group of people, but at last it was actually Yao Yao one person done it.

"Haha, nothing that exaggerating like that. The most important still the Elites

from Feng Group who are awesome." Yao Yao modestly smiled: "CEO Hei, I must back to Feng Group, I take my leave first."

"Let me send you off."

"No need." Yao Yao waving her hands, jokingly she pointing her head: "Don't you afraid with the gasoline smells on my hair? I take my leave first."

"Hah, en." His eyes are looking at Yao Yao's back disappeared, Hei Yan Long is smiling while shaking his head: "Really such odd woman." he slowly taking out his mobile phone....

## 363

This picture is nothing had relation with the chapter ^\_^ It's just I like this picture

Picture credit to the owner, I do not own it.

## **Chapter 363**

### **Other Surprises**

"Is something happened to Yao Yao, Yan Long?" once the phone call accepted, it is Feng Chen Yi panicking voice.

Hei Yan Long helplessly pouted his mouth: "Your wife is absolutely well. See how nervous you are."

"So why are you calling me during this time? Don't you know that now is 1 AM in Turkey?"

"En? Don't this time is your time to 'go out time'? what's? your wife is not at your side, so you cannot go for whoring?"

At the other side of phone call once Feng Chen Yi heard the way Hei Yan Long questioned him, he could not help himself not to rolled his eyes: "Are you so boring? Or do you able to spy Yao Yao? Speak seriously!"

"Ahem, alright." Hei Yan Long is changing his speaking tone, coldly asked: "Your wife other than she is world class lawyer, is there any other skill she has?"

"Why are you asking me this question?"

"Today's Blind Auction. I thought that perhaps I had chanced to win over it, but who knew that suddenly your wife was coming and looking for me, asked me to bring her along. The rest not only won the bid, she even helped me to save few billions. azurro4cielo.wordpress.com From the way she talked about the things, impossible she only a simple world class lawyer, right?" since just now Hei Yan Long was so curious, Yao Yao not only understood, regarding the land and property matter but she also knew many things, logically as long as the internal business men who know and understand the things, she who is only 19 years old little girl impossible for her to know everything such clearly.

"Haha, this is so normal. She is not only understood about land and property but also many things, everything won't be hard for her."

"Oh?" then Hei Yan Long even more curious. "All around player? Is in this world really has someone like that? You don't tell me that her IQ is higher than normal."

"En. Her IQ indeed higher than normal. Indeed."

"Geez, really?" simply to say Hei Yan Long still not believing what his ears heard.

```
"Really!"
"
```

He only ever heard that there are few people who have IQ higher than normal, but never thought that little girl is one of them? Feng Chen Yi really married someone awesome!

Hah, the most ridiculous, first time when he met her, after all he even looked down at her?

But this was also normal, no one would think that sort of person who take very small role actually is genius little girl, right?

"There's a matter, Chen Yi.... how can your wife goes against Yu Ao Tian?"

"Huh..." Feng Chen Yi could hear such hesitate and helpless sighed from the other side of phone call, coldly said: "The person who killed her mother was.... Yu Ao Tian!"

"...... was Yu Ao Tian?" Hei Yan Long creased his forehead, that deep black eyes are flashed with unbelievable gleam: "If he could have done that, then if your wife stills go against him, would it...."

Even though, Feng Chen Yi didn't know the reason why Yu Ao Tian killed Yao Yao's mother, but there is one thing that he certainly affirmed! "Rest assured, Yu Ao Tian won't harm Yao Yao..."

That's right.... Yu Ao Tian absolutely won't harm Yao Yao!

Or else, impossible for him to do such thing when Yao Yao wanted to marry Feng Chen Yi....

"Xiao Luo.... Xiao Luo..." inside the I department office room, one of man who

looked refine and wearing glasses calling Yao Yao.

She dumbfounded glanced at this man: "You?"

"I am yours colleague. Haha, alike us who has profession as technology professional nerd it easier being ignored by others."

Professional? Technology nerd?

She is not technology professional and nerd okay? For this short time she only focusing on her computer so that.....

Alright, no need to explain. Now she is the technology professional and a nerd! "What do you want?"

"Soon we are going off from work, outside the weather is not so good, would you like us to gather our money and then take taxi to go back together?"

"....." gather money? Take taxi to go back together?

Yao Yao is awkwardly swallowing her saliva, seeing around one by one of these people who are professional technology nerd and also wearing glasses. Is this what so-called as the tradition of I-Department?

At the normal situation there is no interaction, but when it comes to spending money, everyone is gathered funds?

.....

Really.

"I am... sorry, today, my... my husband is going to pick me up." Although this is a lie. Cold sweat.....

"Uh. So that you are married?" That glasses man seems as if found out a whole brand new world, tug his glasses: "How could you do it? People like us who are technology professional and also nerd, not to mention about marriage, even in order to find someone as couple it is quite hard."

For one more time, she isn't technology professional and nerd okay, hu..... "I, me and my husband are childhood sweat heart."

"No wonder! As I said. Well. I won't disturb you anymore." the glasses man

politely turned his head and then left.

'Knock knock' this time, Feng Chen Rui's assistant Aaro knocking the door of I department office room.

"Assistant Aaro what's matter?" The I department supervisor welcoming him with smile.

Aaro politely nodding his head: "Vice CEO Feng is looking for Luo Yao Yao from your I Department."

"En? I understood. Xiao Luo... Xiao Luo.... Vice CEO Feng is looking for you."

She has heard it, really did not know why Feng Chen Rui looking for her?

For this past half month he hasn't come to find fault (give troubles) with her, don't say because Feng Chen Yi is having business trip so he trying to give her trouble?

Yao Yao is followed Aaro left I Department office room. This is because facing with those computer nerd, if changed the place to Marketing Department or PR Department, perhaps the news of Vice CEO looking for her going to spread, and the entire office rooms would be blown up.

"Aaro, isn't Vice CEO office room at third floor? Why are we going to ground floor?" once entered the elevator, Yao Yao coldly asked.

"Second Young Madam, our Vice CEO is waiting you at the Ground floor parking lot." Aaro is Feng Chen Rui's confidant, naturally he knew Yao Yao and Feng Chen Yi relationship as wife and husband.

"I understand." Followed Aaro till the Ground parking lot.

Yao Yao can't think of what kind of tricks hidden on Feng Chen Rui,, but.... since everyone now is 'family', she believed that Feng Chen Rui would not dare to make any move toward her.

Not far, one Rolls-Royce sport car is parked in the parking lot. Yao Yao walked slowly and stopped at the back seat door, knocking the car window.

The black glass slowly pulling down, "Younger Sister in Law." Feng Chen Rui is smiling when greeting her.

"Big Brother, what's matter you looking for me?"

"Get in car!"

"Haha, Big Brother, later I will go home by taking public bus."

Feng Chen Rui narrowed his eyes, one of his hand is supported to glass window, slowly said: "But Father was giving me a mission to take you along to go home, you get inside the car or not it up to you!"

"Father in Law?" Did Father in Law ask Feng Chen Rui to take her along go home? What's matter happened? Yao Yao could feel something amiss going to happen, but seeing that face of Feng Chen Rui she really lazy to ask. So that she took a seat at the back seat.

"Second Young Madam." Xiao Zhang, the driver is politely greeting her before he started the engine and driving the car.

"Younger Sister in Law, recently within this half month you are really done many hard work for ours Feng Family."

Sitting on the opposite seat Feng Chen Rui slowly opened his mouth. Yao Yao is coldly swept him a glance, turned her head and then keeps on looking outside through the window.

"You say, you keep on taking Berson's group business, if your old lover knew it, would he anger to death because by you? But speak frankly, today there are not many business men who dare to offend Yu Ao Tian, perhaps only you are the one. Huh.... Aaro, still better to be woman. Don't you think so?" Feng Chen Rui knew that Yao Yao would ignore him, so he turned his head and talking with his assistant.

Aaro is giving such provoking smile, and even busy himself to nod his head: "That's right, woman is always good in settle matter, only by undressed everything is settled."

"Hah, Aaro, you don't speak things too clear. At least, Yao Yao is still my Younger Sister in Law. But, this few days I have argued with my fierce wife."

"Big Young Madam?"

"En."

"What is the reason, Vice CEO Feng."

"Huh, it is because that brat Feng Chen Yi is married such clever wife. Just looked at my fierce wife, other than her background is good, she does not have any capability." Said Feng Chen Rui, intentionally cast his glance to Yao Yao who sits oppositely, not long after that, he changed the topic: "But.... now I feel my wife is still better!"

"Of course. Big Young Madam and Madam Feng are having good background and also coming from Ya Si Lan Guo (Aslan Country) who are also still relative to the royalty, since young age already taught with strict teaching, virtuous, how could there any other who can compare to Big Young Madam's background and also more refined than her?" Aaro is saying this thing intended to let Yao Yao to hear it.

But, it was true that Feng Chen Rui's wife indeed has first class background. Madam Feng in order to stronger Feng Chen Rui position in Feng family she was especially back to hers country to find a wife for his son.

As said that, Lan Ling is Ya Si Lan Guo (Aslan Country) queen's niece, her position is not less than Madam Feng, she is also counted as the royalty.

"Haha, not to mention Lan Ling's background, the most important is she understanding what called as wife duties\*. If I was alike my younger brother who married such lowly\*\*wife, I don't even know where my face should be hung at!!"

#### Note:

\*三 San 从 cong 四 Si 德 De: The three obedience and the four virtues, three obediences (in ancient China a woman was required to obey her father before marriage, and her husband during marriage life and her son in her widowhood) and four virtues (fidelity, physical charm, propriety in speech, and efficiency in needle work) wifely submission and virtue.

#### 364

I hard to describe my mood when translating this few up coming chapters because another storm hit Yao Yao's peaceful marriage life moreover Feng Chen Yi wasn't there for her. As for Yu Ao Tian, what love mean for him? No one can be blamed and yet three of them (Yu Ao Tian – Yao Yao – Feng Chen Yi) had shared responsible for everything happened revolved this triangle love.

# Chapter 364

#### **Being Harass by The Entire Family Member**

The way of Feng Chen Rui said people is more rude.

If he didn't mention about Feng Chen Yi, perhaps Yao Yao would take his words not more than farts, but since this brat is mocking Feng Chen Yi from pee worse to shit this simply something could not be endured anymore!

"Big Brother, you don't so confidence. How can you know if Big Sister in law would not be derailed? It isn't like you are staying beside her everyday." Yao Yao who keeps on silent by this time finally opened her mouth.

Feng Chen Rui is smiling, confidently said: "Ha, ridiculous! Lan Ling everyday is staying at home, never once leave home, how would there any chance to derailed?"

Once Yao Yao heard this, she is pretending to be dummy by blinking her eyes: "Doesn't inside a house also have many male servants?"

'Geez!' at beside after Aaro heard this word he almost laughed it out.

This even makes Feng Chen Rui's face turned to be green (super pale), he hatred gritting his teeth: "Really such smooth talker little girl. Later when arrived at home there will be time for you to cry!!!"

What does he mean?

Seeing Feng Chen Rui expression fierce mixed with hatred, Yao Yao could feel more restless, without any reason why suddenly her Father in Law was asking Feng Chen Rui to being her along to home? Feng Chen Rui even said that there will be a time for her to cry?

At home.... actually what is going on?

Arrived at Feng Mansion, Aaro left.

Feng Chen Rui and Yao Yao are walking one at in front and one at the back heading to inner villa.

"Big Young Master, Second Young Madam." there are few maids who welcoming and greeting them in front of the entrance.

Feng Chen Rui is expressionless pulling his suit and faster walking to the inner big hall, once entered, he well-behaved bowing respectively to Feng Xiao: "Father, Mother."

Followed at his back Yao Yao also bow down with respect: "Father in Law, Mother in Law."

"Chen Rui, sit down."

"Yes. Father." Feng Chen Rui is sitting beside Lan Ling his wife.

While Yao Yao is still standing at her place, she lifts up her head, looking at Feng Xiao stern facial expression, and just now when she heard his speaking tone.....

Father in Law was asking Feng Chen Rui to sit down, but why wasn't he ask her to sit down too?

Would this mean....

Yao Yao seems alike little kid who is doing wrong and then being punished to stand up in the inner big hall. While the others are sitting on the sofa and having tea, sometimes they glancing at her.

Time, one minutes, two minutes passed. Until some minutes, finally Feng Xiao is looking at Yao Yao:

"Three days ago, where were you going?"

Three days ago?

It's seemed the night when Feng Chen Yi told her that he would go to Turkey for business trip? "Father in Law, I was having dinner with Chen Yi at outside."

"This I knew it, you don't have to tell me. I am asking you, other than you went together with Chen Yi, had you been with other people?"

Other than with Chen Yi together?

It seemed that after they had their dinner they straightly went home? "Not with anyone, Father in Law."

"No one? Well!" Feng Xiao is coldly narrowed his eyes, lift up the newspaper in his hand and then tossed it to the table: "You see it, what is this?" after said....

Lan Ling who is watching television just now suddenly turned off the television, grinning and then exchanging her glances with Feng Chen Rui, there's kind of expression waiting to see good show.

Yao Yao is walking slowly heading to the table and then pick up the newspaper....

Didn't this!

She recalled it, that day when she was having dinner Feng Chen Yi was attacking by few people, she was rushing to the next door private room and then she met Yu Ao Tian, and the result....

Seeing on newspaper, it's picture where Yu Ao Tian was hugging onto her. Yao Yao can't help herself not to let out cold breathe, it seems.... this matter still being exposed by the media!

"Father in Law, why are you asking me to look at this?" act to her utmost, even though Yao Yao is so restless inside her heart, but still she is pretending to be tough and calm in front of Feng Xiao.

"You still dare to say, the woman who was in Yu Ao Tian's embrace wasn't you?" that picture, even though it only photo the woman's back. But that black long hair until waist, and also her petite body posture, anyone who sees it might think her as Yao Yao.

"This absolutely not me, Father in Law!"

At this time, Lan Ni Pei who is silent for this time suddenly opened her mouth: "Aiya, Daughter in Law, I know when something like this happened no one would admit it. If there is misunderstood, you can say it, I believe Old Master will understanding you."

Lan Ni Pei is extremely poisonous!

Simply to say invisibly killing others!

Using such gentle and nice speaking tone, actually she is hinting her to admit the person in the newspaper actually is her, luring her to admit! Really.... such poisonous!

Passing this half month of interaction, Yao Yao is so certain that Lan Ni Pei is type of person who belongs to 'cotton with needles'. if not because on the wedding night Feng Chen Yi didn't tell her about that matter, so certain she must be tricked to death by Lan Ni Pei!

Since Lan Ni Pei loves to pretend as good person, well let her accompany her to play. "Mother in Law.... that person really wasn't me! That night I was accompanying beside Feng Chen Yi for the entire time, we were not separated, how could I meet Yu Ao Tian?" she is pretending to act weakling and pity.

Old Master is fiercely furrowed his brows: "Alright! Now let me make a phone call to Chen Yi to confirm."

No....

Cannot.

Yao Yao believes, even though Father in Law makes a phone call to Feng Chen Yi, Chen Yi will still help her. But.... he will immediately able to make a guess, the person who was in newspaper must be really her!

Really does not want to see Feng Chen Yi's mood get affected because of Yu Ao Tian. Does not want to see Feng Chen Yi becomes not happy because of Yu Ao Tian! "Father in Law, now in Turkey it is midnight, are you really still wanted to call Chen Yi?"

Feng Xiao always love his son, once he heard Yao Yao's words, he immediately forget to do so: "Well. I won't make any phone call to Chen Yi. But now you must give me an explanation regarding this matter!!"

"Daughter in Law, you don't make the Old Master gets angry. Old Master is someone who already aged, he has enough worried regarding you twos matter. Would it be better if you trying to explain about this matter?" Lan Ni Pei is still trying to make her move forcing Yao Yao to admit.

While at Feng Xiao side he is trying to use rough move.

Yao Yao can feel her head is going to be exploded soon: "Mother in Law, let me say for once again, that person in the picture wasn't me!!" Perhaps she is little

bit panic, so her speaking tone is little bit high.

Taking it as opportunity, Lan Ling who at beside 'rebuke' standing for moment, raised her hand 'slap' she is giving Yao Yao fierce slap on her cheek: "Who is allowing you to speak that way to Mother in Law?"

Suddenly Yao Yao felt blur in her vision because of that slap.

This Lan Ling just alike how Feng Chen Rui described before, she is fierce tiger. This half month, as long Feng Ni Pei was trying to make things harder for Yao Yao, Lan Ling would be stayed beside constantly adding oil in the fire.

"I am sorry Mother in Law, I, I don't have intention to offend." she understood her disadvantage position, Yao Yao only can take this lost silently, her hand covered her cheek, feeling difficulties she lower her head.

"Really such shameless, simply to say you are dishonor Feng's family!" Lan Ling aggressively keeps on scolding.

Feng Chen Rui also joined, raised his brow and smile: "That's right, Younger Sister in Law. You are really too shameless. After all you dared to do such thing."

"Daughter in law, you say that Chen Yi is so loving you, how could you do this such shameless thing toward him?"

This time Yao Yao still hasn't admitted anything, but these three mother-Sonand his wife are trying to put a blame toward her. Even though she has one clean mouth she would not win over theirs. So she keeps silent.

"Since this day onward, you must stay at home, you are not allowed to go anywhere!!" at this time, Feng Xiao finally made his decision.

#### Cannot go out?

That can't do! She still wanted to revenge behalf of her mother! "Father in Law, the person in that picture really wasn't me!"

"I don't care whether the person was you or not! You are not allowed to get out from Feng's house, or else you get lost from Feng's house!!!"

Covered her cheek with her hand, her pair of eyes is helplessly looking right and left.

Lan Ni Pei is showing her bitchy smiles, Feng Chen Rui is showing his cunning smiles, Lan Ling is showing her provoking smiles.... one by one their disgusting facial expression are entered her eyes, strangely she felt her head slightly dizzy.

At the past, was Feng Chen Yi really growing up in this kind of environment?

Being bullied by his stepmother, being bullied and oppressed by Brother who older ten years by him and being abused by this sister in law?

His life must be like this, or else why Feng Chen Yi could move out from this house, and how could he even studied to Japan?

When a baby who never breast-feeding to be able walking, learn to speak, he must, he must had so many, so many difficulties.

### **Chapter 365**

## **Being Chased out From Feng Mansion**

His such cold and chilling pair of eyes, why there was no warmness at the first sight?

Is that his nature? Or is it.... he never felt any warmness from this home?

Tears falling down, streaming down slowly wet her cheeks, Yao Yao turned her head, she would not come back and rushing out from Feng's mansion....

Sky, it has gradually turned dark. When the dim moonlight and the snowflakes falling down to her body it's give cold and chilly pierce feeling.

In front of her eyes, it seems as if an illusions, there's little boy at tenth something standing in the middle of snowing helpless and crying.

Although, he has much money to spend, has such excellent family background, but sadly could not makeup his empty heart, could not to find out someone who really love him and someone who able to give him a warmness.

Chen Yi, since the day I gotten know of you, I used to scold you by having such paralysis expression; I used to speak sarcasm way talking about so-what if you are having wealthy family.

If I wasn't your wife; if I wasn't coming to Feng's house, perhaps in my life time I would been ever experienced the bitterness that you ever felt before.

Why you never told me about this, about your past? Why never told me, that you were such hurt and bitter before?

At this moment, the tears that streaming down wet Yao Yao's cheeks not for herself, but.... it's because of Feng Chen Yi.

This still her first time to feel the bitterness of being jointly-attacked, but how about Feng Chen Yi? Someone who perhaps growing up in this kind of

environment?

Painful, speak it for itself!

Such a family, it's not even worth to mention.

Whatsoever, she will be his the only family member; while he will be hers only family member!!!

Coming back to that 40 meter square little house, strangely Yao Yao can feel a satisfaction feeling.

So what if that Feng's mansion is big? Human feeling is as thin as ice house; so what with small house? It stills create many marvelous things.

Perhaps, if later in the future she lives in here with Feng Chen Yi might not a bad idea.

Will he get used with it?

Not right, he stills has that small apartment, if he is not getting used with here, perhaps later they still can back to live at that small apartment.

Since the wedding day until today, Yao Yao has never dreamed her future living with Feng Chen Yi,, but this moment, in her head gradually there seems to have expected the future scenery, her mouth is curved upward and hung up happiness smiles.

Perhaps, it was because Feng Chen Yi's past that never known before, shook her up.....

'Knock knock knock' (knocking door sound)

Suddenly there's sound door being knocked, Yao Yao who is still daydreaming about her future naturally creased her forehead: "Who would be?" She just came back to home, how could there's someone pay a visit?

Are Feng's family, their men coming here?

Stand up, at the moment when she opened her house door, Yao Yao's eyes are caught someone figure which makes her eyes glared big.

When she wanted to shut the door, but it was firmly stopped by a big hand. "Bao Bei, is this your way to welcome your guest?"

The familiar devil voice heard by her ears, tensed she looked at Yu Ao Tian who is standing right in front of her door, he is wearing a black coat match with a white turtleneck cloth which makes him looked so mature and charming. But toward Yao Yao, his coming is alike the death God who is quietly patronize.

"You, why are you coming here?"

"Just by coincidence I am passing by your house, I saw your light is on. Immediately I get in. Never thought, you are really at home."

For this half month she has not back to her house, today is her first day coming back here and even met Yu Ao Tian, she really does not know what kind of deed she made so that she got this 'Dog shit Luck'!

"Here, here, is not, is not welcoming you! You go!!!!" Yao Yao is using her utmost strength to shut her door close.

But her strength could not suppress man's strength?

Yu Ao Tian is only using one of his hand to block the door, she has completely not had way out. "Bao Bei, don't you invite me to have seat inside your house?"

"Chen, Chen Yi is here. I don't, I don't want he see you!! you go!!!"

"En?" Yu Ao Tian bottomless pair of eyes flashed, his corner of mouth moves cannot help showing his devil smile: "Apparently, I have been quite long not seeing Chen Yi, greeting him for while also not bad." After said, he used little strength.

Yao Yao who is blocked the door being pulled inside, while Yu Ao Tian is taking big stride get into the inner room, followed by shut the door.

"Yu, Yu Ao Tian, you are trespassing!!!!" Yao Yao is alike seeing demon personifying pestilence and then backwards in small steps.

Yu Ao Tian not only took of his outer coat, but vain manner of walking and then sat on the sofa: "Where is Chen Yi?"

Nervous eyes are keeps on looking right and left, she is gulping her saliva, faster she pointed at bathroom: "He, he is in bathroom."

"Huh." Yu Ao Tian cannot help himself not to laugh, his body is reclining on the sofa, his slender fingers natural and elegantly touching his forehead hair: "Bao

Bei, you are really worst at lying. Why are you alone staying at your house? Impossible you are chasing out by the Feng's family, aren't you?"

Just expected there is nothing can be hide from Yu Ao Tian! She furrowed her brows, fiercely gritting hard her teeth: "It's not! Chen Yi won't chase me out!!! he is going to Turkey for business trip!!"

"Oh....? so Chen Yi is having business trip!"

Darn it!

Looking at Yu Ao Tian's eyes which filled with a strange gloss, she cannot help herself not to tremble. How could she burst out the matter regarding Chen Yi having a business trip?

"Bao Bei, it seems the member of Feng Family then who chased you out? Aiya, you just not long ago entered their home, they, the Fengs are such bullied you?"

Hit the point!

Yu Ao Tian observance skill indeed such strong. "This who to blame? If last time when having dinner, you were not act like that, impossible for the media to take ours picture!"

"Even your face isn't seen, how could Feng Family such affirm it was you?"

En?

It seemed that Yu Ao Tian had seen the newspaper? Could it be after he seen the newspaper so that he made the guess that she would be chased out by Feng family?

This is really ashamed. She is so frustrated, that news obviously only caught her back, how could Feng Family so affirmed if it was her.

Even though, that person in picture is her!

"Come." Yu Ao Tian is smiling sinister while his finger is moving gesturing her to come, that bottomless pair of eyes surging impenetrable gloss.

Yao Yao is secretly taking long breathe: "You, what do you want?" constantly she is stepping backward.

As seen, he is moving as quick as an arrow, grabbed her arm.

"Let me off!" Yao Yao is surprised and frightened to the point didn't know what to do.

But Yu Ao Tian is staring at her small face, there is no other movement. But, the five fingers imprinted in her cheek really irritated for his pair of his bottomless eyes.

Turned, he sitting back to sofa.

Yao Yao can feel little bit relief, and then without she realized she touched her own cheek, he... has he seen it?

"Bao Bei, the wealthy people life style really not suit you, still better to consider, consider to hurry up divorce with Feng Chen Yi." Said Yu Ao Tian, his corner of lips slowly curved upward and make devilish smiles.

She is trying to gain herself, raging in fume and creased her forehead: "That's my matter, there is none of your business! Moreover, the marriage is mine with Feng Chen Yi, both of us. As long as I love him, he loves me then it is more than enough! I won't divorce with Feng Chen Yi!!"

"Love?" the smile that hung on Yu Ao Tian's face gradually disappeared, and it even replaced with his dim and cold expression.

### 366

Australia-R18-Rating	

Dear fellow readers,

Updated note: Sorry to keep you waiting for this chapter. I was having trouble with my internet connection.

The novel is progressing about 55-60% which mean we have passed half of it. I would kindly to remind, please don't put any spoiler in the comment box because I will absolutely mark it as spam and don't feel being offended if your comment not showing up. although some not mind with spoiler but doesn't mean it represent the rest. Moreover I by myself not wish to read any spoiler since it going to affect my mood and the pace when doing the translation LOLS, but if you are too 'itchy' for spoiler You can go to other forum to do discussion or put any spoiler but not in here.

Ah~ this chapter is going to be another steamy but also sad chapter....

Some might have little bit idea what going to be happened T^T

## **Chapter 366**

### Yu Ao Tian, Don't do it!

"That's right! I have liked him since I was 13 years old. It is not easy for us to stay together, why must we divorce?" Yao Yao angrily spoke, her finger is pointing at the door way: "Yu Ao Tian, now I please you to get out!!!"

"Since thirteen years old liked him? Always.... until now?"

The speaking tone neither slow nor hurry but it's almost alike bomb, suddenly in front of Yao Yao's eyes.

She's just because wanted to go against to Yu Ao Tian, so she said that words, but she just ignored.....

She and Yu Ao Tian also had spent sometime together and this is also a reality!!!

Staring at the man bottomless pair of eyes which filled with luster, as sharp as an eagle eyes.

She really does not know how to answer this question, it's only nervous and also rough breathing, and following by her body which getting closer to wall, slowly by slowly heading to the door way. Her six sense told her, this man.... extremely angry!

"Bao Bei, where are you going?"

When her footstep almost at the front door, Yu Ao Tian opened his mouth.

"You, if you are not leaving, can I go, can't I?" her facial expression gloom, Yao Yao faster pulled open the door, at the moment when she almost step out....

since when, Yu Ao Tian has already walked behind her. His big hand is grabbed her waist, and then directly took her into bedroom.

"What do you want to do? Yu Ao Tian!!!" her body is tossed on bed, Yao Yao is scared and glared with her big eyes.

The man without any expression shut closed the bedroom door, said: "Bao bei,

after thinking carefully, that three days I was bit rough toward you, now I am going to make up to you." as fast as an arrow, his big hand suddenly tearing her clothes.

"Don't.... don't!" A strong sense of unease, she is trying to do her final struggling. Her clothes that she wore easily being torn by the man, she is thinking to cover her body, but her hands were firmly being fixed by the man.

"Sst. Bao Bei, now you, only need to enjoy, okay." lower his head, his sexy lips are brushing to her sensitive part of her neck and goes down.

"Uh." gradually there's familiar disgusting thrill sensed, her white skin body constantly trembling. "Don't, stop it!"

"Humph? Bao Bei, your body is trembling badly. Are you afraid? What you afraid of? It's afraid, your such sensitive body going to be reacted and hot because of my teasing and it will make you ashamed and being humiliated?"

Her body is devastated by the man, even she could feel her ears are corrupted by the man. She is biting hard her lips, trying herself not to hear anything what he said, at this moment she even wanted to escape immediately from this situation.

That soft lips are moving to her lower abdomen, his tongue is teasing by circling.

"Uh ah...." her mouth let out a moaning sound with could not be controlled by herself, she is restless keeps on moving, and also close tight her pair of legs.

But it stills being opened by that man.

"Don't... stop it!" at the moment.... when it touched by the man, Yao Yao unconsciously bend her body, the eyes slowly shed tears.

"Bao Bei, who is knowing your body better, me or Feng Chen Yi? Does he know where's your sensitive parts? Ckckck.... it is obviously just now still dry, but this fast it has already given a response." his finger is getting inside.....

She is fiercely biting her lips, don't, she does not want to hear Feng Chen Yi's name, at this moment she does not want to hear Feng Chen Yi's name. "Yu Ao Tian! Simply to say you are a beast!!!"

The finger that inserted into Yao Yao is moving at faster pace, he slowly taking it out, playfully he moving in front of her eyes: "Does it being humiliated by the Beast still given a response?"

The crystal bright thing on his finger is like an invisible bayonet, she clearly understand that her heart is absolutely refused. But her body even....

No need to mention, Yu Ao Tian just too understanding Yao Yao's body. Every inches of her body sensitive part, he could find it precisely!

"It's enough now. Bao Bei, this time I will carefully make it up for you!" after said, Yu Ao Tian unzip his pant.

Yao Yao hold her breathe, heart 'thump, thump, thump' crazily thumping constantly. Don't.... stop it! don't continue it.... she does not want to experience the nightmares alike those days.

"What kind of posture should we have? Oh, that's right, you like the 'back inserted'!" The man is forcing to turned the body to back.

The pieces of memories coming back flashing in her eyes, she is climbing down from the bed and moving her body: "Yu Ao Tian, you stop it! Now I am Feng Chen Yi's wife! You cannot do this to me!!!"

Indescribable panic and also hesitation in her heart. She only knows that, if this time Yu Ao Tian really got what he wanted, no matter how gorgeous and splendid the future going to be, she would never let go herself, she also would not able to let go her guilty toward Feng Chen Yi. But this word which said by Yao Yao without she realized has burned this man.

At this moment, Yu Ao Tian does not want to hear the reality she is Feng Chen Yi's wife, at least not from her mouth.

He repeatedly get off his hand, but he didn't stop this kind of marriage.

This thought, stopped at here, but at the moment when his eyes spotted at her, he could not calm himself anymore, he could not restrain and endure the longing in his heart, could not help himself out in order to have her only for him.

Alike.....

That time when they were at Japanese restaurant.

At the moment when he saw the news that exposed in the newspaper, Yu Ao Tian mysteriously rush to Yao Yao's house downstairs. When seeing light in her home, he has made his guessing that Feng family might be chased out Yao Yao.

This, perhaps the things that he has been yearning to long time.

But, when he saw her alone staying at this house, moreover when he saw the hand print that quite visible on her face, he felt little bit guilty because he didn't ask Han Li Shang to stop the news being published.

'I have liked him since I was 13 years old. It is not easy for us to stay together, why must we divorce?'

But, that words which said by Yao Yao was extremely made him raging in fume, lit the fire that has been in Yu Ao Tian! That moment, his heart as if being stabbed, and only thought, making her crying, and destroyed this marriage completely!!!!

The big head of that thing keeps moving, he paced, there's a sinister smile in Yu Ao Tian's lips corner, his pair of eyes dim, his body is fiercely getting into....

"Don't!!!!"

'crash, crash' it is a sound as if something broken into pieces, Yao Yao only can feel that her vision line is blurred, then her final struggling only turned into smoke (useless). She is alike her soul being transferred to bed, her tears keeps streaming down wet her cheeks.....

"Oh. Really damn tight!" Yu Ao Tian impatiently creased his forehead, comfortable gasped, 'trudge' head forward: "Bao Bei, just as expected you indeed have such\*\*body, as if no matter being played, there won't be any changes! Still so similar as tight as the first time!!"

The body slowly moving, the man's breathing gradually increased. Not long after that, the sweat has already covered head. "Relax! Simple to say I am about die because place in your between!" one warm big hand down at the lower abdomen alike rock-climbing.

Suddenly, a strong rush of excitement hit, Yao Yao is using her strength to bite her lips, but her mouth that zip tightly still let out pleasure-moaning sound: "Uh..."

## 367 + 368

Australia-R18-Rating		

I think the title is more than clearer to describe the contain of this chapter. It is obviously after sequences of painful things that happened to Yao Yao.

Note: I have done updated two chapters today ^\_^

## **Chapter 367 – 368**

#### Suicide

"Oh!" and the same time, for once again the man is letting out cold breath, he has never tried such beautiful body, as if as it little bit faster the pace then he would disarmed and surrendered. Really damn it!

The breathing sound, loud crash, constantly echoing inside this small inner room. Yao Yao tighten her fists, that cute little face also gradually changed to be screwed.

"Bao Bei, are you going to reach or not? No need to endure, just vent it out." Yu Ao Tian obviously could feel her body is tighten and getting hotter. This is obviously a sign that getting closer to limit.

#### Enough! Enough!

Now she didn't want to beg this man to stop anymore, she just wanted everything ended faster, could not go so far for her to the extreme shame.

But....

That familiar and yet strange feeling surge suddenly swept away everything. Yao Yao's body is leaping straight, her mind gradually drawn into blank-state, next moment, she could not control herself and then let out long moaning....... "Ah en...." the whole person as if does not have bones and then turned into a moisten spring, totally powerless.

"Hah, Bao Bei, betraying your own husband and making love with other man the feeling not bad too right?"

At back, there's man insulting voice constantly piercing into Yao Yao's ears, she fazed fluster close her eyes, it was not easy for her to build her little house and now it's gradually broken into pieces.

Thought, perhaps there would be a day she could forget that three days humiliating....

Thought, perhaps there would be a day she could restart and get into new life.....

But now it seems, this simply alike sick person having a dream.

Every times when she wanted to let go those bitterness memories, this man who is the caused of her bitterness would be showed up in front of her, again and again! Again and again! Harming her soul, on her body draws one by one of things that she never able to brush clean the trace.

"Oh...." suddenly, the man letting out satisfaction moaning, that kind of longing desire\*\* deeply thrust inside hers.

Yao Yao weakly lying on the bed, inside that empty eyes could not restrain to fall such bitter tears. "Yu Ao Tian.... you absolutely will get your karma."

"Bao Bei, what are you talking about?" this time, after Yu Ao Tian vented out his desire he didn't leave, but after he doing simple tidying up, he is lying beside her.

An empty eyes are looking at the man's handsome yet devilish face, she fiercely said few words: "Yu Ao Tian, you will absolutely get your karma! You will absolutely won't have peaceful death!!"

Even on behalf Chen Yi, on behalf her mother, all and everything, even though this life time Yu Ao Tian would not get his karma, at the next life he will get his karma. This rotten bastard! Sooner or later he will go to hell!!!

"Hah." Yu Ao Tian gave one sinister smile, his big hands are tightly hugging onto her waist, gently whispered: "Even though I must die, I will also drag you together with me. Bao Bei, don't think to leave me...."

Again this words....

As if a nightmare, it keeps repeating.

If before she didn't believe this kind of curse, but at this moment she believed it, she really could not leave and escape from this demon.

But....

She does not want to be possessed by this devil, does not want!!!

For the whole night, Yu Ao Tian was sleeping beside Yao Yao and not even left her, pair of his hand cage her body.

She has thought few times to leave, but as long as she moved, the man would wake up.

This is really absurd, really disgusting.

Now she is Feng Chen Yi's wife, but she even done something like that with other man, moreover she even slept together with him. Could not be forgiven.... she could not understanding all of these things....

Early in the morning, the ray of sunshine is illuminating inside the small inner room.

Woman is opened her eyes, upturned face, \*\*lying on the bed. The man who is lying beside her body could not restrain not moving, inside the inner room, from time to time it flowing sound of body collision.

Does not know how long time had passed, followed by the man moaning sound, that\*\* finally ended....

"Fiuh...." Yu Ao Tian let out a sighed, satisfied wearing his clothes: "Really want to stay beside you and not leaving, but unfortunately, today I have an important meeting to attend."

Does not know why, this little thing's body as if alike an opium, he really could not restrain himself to ask more and more.

Once wake up, could not restrain wanted twice with her, as if it stills could not satisfy him.

"Bao Bei, I go to work." Yu Ao Tian is gently kissing her lips, giving her a pamper smile, turned his back and then left from the inner room.

"Hah." gazing at the man's back that left, at the moment when heard the sound of door being closed, Yao Yao is scorning and giving mocking laughed.

How could Yu Ao Tian take all these things such naturally after he done it?

Did he forget that his pair of hand stain with whose blood? Didn't he forget whose wife he keeps on 'demanding'?

How could thing come to this point?

Didn't he have slightest guilty feeling for this?

Slowly raised her body, could not bear tears flowing down from her eyes, Yao Yao with her naked body is slowly walking to bathroom.

Standing in front of mirror, she could not bear to see her dilapidated body, she really wanted to forget everything that happened last night and also in the morning...........

"Arghhhhh!!!" one scream voice, Yao Yao took a stool which inside in the bathroom and suddenly she smashed it into the mirror.

The smooth glossy mirror is broken into pieces alike spider web, pieces of the broken mirror falling onto floor, as if it showed her broken heart which broken into pieces.

"I can't endure it...."

"Really cannot stay persevere anymore....."

"I really cannot, cannot anymore, cannot hold onto it anymore....! simply to say cannot hold onto it anymore!!!"

The hatred of her mother's death interspersed with her guilt toward Chen Yi, this kind of repeating torment made Yao Yao felt endless pain. She picked up one of the glass pieces from the floor, slowly walking to inner room.

Lying, she is facing looking at the ceiling.

Yu Ao Tian, I lost.

I could not win over you, this life time I am destined to be loser.

You are not only succeed to revenge for your father and mother's death, you are also succeed to make me living in suffering and also pain in this world.

It's okay....

I will wait you at hell!

I will constantly cursing you from hell, sooner or later we will meet! If it could not in this life time, just wait the next life! If the next life still could not, just the next next life time. Today's you gave me this pain, in the next life, I want to pay it

double! Doubling pay it back to you!!

The iced-cold mirror piece slit onto her slender wrist, the blood is gushing out.

Picking up the mobile phone which next to pillow, she is opened her mobile phone and looked for Feng Chen Yi's contact.....

Chen Yi, good bye....

The words that just typed, immediately she deleted it.

Chen Yi, I do sorry you....

And again she deleted.

By this repeating ways, over and over again, when she just typed few words immediately she deleted it again. At this moment, she didn't know what she wanted to say toward Feng Chen Yi.

As if, without saying anything perhaps the best thing. Because nothing could be better and happily leaving this world freely, even though.... this is such irresponsible.....

Close pair of eyes. Only taking small effort, it has become a stream of blood dripping on the floor. While there is faint smiling expression hung on Yao Yao's face, finally she no need to be tortured by hatred and revenge, finally she no need to repeatedly living with her guilty feeling in her heart....

Good bye, everyone.....

## Chapter 368

### **Coming Back From the Edge of Death**

"Stop the car." inside the sport car, followed by after Hei Yan Long spoke, the car is slowly stopped at the road side.

"CEO Hei, what's matter?" The body guard inside the car curiously asked.

Hei Yan Long is gazing at the figure on the opposite street: "That person..... isn't he, Yu Ao Tian?"

When the body guard is followed Hei Yan Long's gazed at the other side, Yu Ao Tian has already gotten inside the car which had parked there before and directly left. "It's government license plate, it should be Yu Ao Tian's."

"How could he show up in here?" Hei Yan Long creased his forehead, his eyes are looking at the small district area in the street. "Faster start the engine!"

"Yes. CEO Hei." The car is moving, U-turn, straightly entering the road heading to the small district.

This place apparently to be Yao Yao's mother living place before.

Today Hei Yan Long went to Feng Group, but Feng Chen Rui said that last night she had left house.

Thinking, this woman might nowhere to go so she should be went to her mother's house. Hence, he hurried come here. Who knows, outside the small district entrance he saw Yu Ao Tian!

SSt....

Yu Ao Tian had showed up in here early in the morning, would it.....

Having an affair?

No, this woman isn't seemed to be one!

"I go there by myself, all of you just wait me in front of the door entrance."

"Yes, CEO Hei."

Hei Yan Long walked up the stairs to Yao Yao's house.

'Knock...' just knocking for moment, the door is unlocked and open.

"Also not locking the door, this woman indeed such careless." pushed open the door, with wide big stride entered. Inside the living room so quiet. "Younger Sister in Law? Are you at home? Younger Sister in Law." probing with calling twice, Hei Yan Long's eyesight shifted to the tight close inner room.

Is she still sleeping? "Younger Sister in Law."

'Knock knock knock' (knocking sound)

"I am entering?" Hei Yan Long impatiently frowning, and then he pushed open the inner room door.

But when he seeing the view in front of him, at the sudden he is dumbstruck, his black pupil is wide open.

The clothes are messy on the floor, while the woman who lying on the bed is\*\*, moreover she is bleeding.

"Hey!! Luo Yao Yao!!! Luo Yao Yao!!!" the big crystal clear sweat dripping from forehead, Hei Yan Long hurried taking a blanket to cover her body, and then take out his mobile phone: "Faster called Doctor Zhang to come here!!!"

About one hour.

Initially the room is quiet but changed to be full of people, Hei Yan Long with his blacken facial expression sitting inside the living room.

Not long after that, his private doctor getting out from the room: "CEO Hei, that Miss wound has been treated. Only....

"Only what?"

"This Miss has lost too much blood, and she needs a blood transfusion."

"Then you give her blood transfusion ah? What the use you tell me?" Hei Yan Long is raging in fume roared.

Doctor Zhang is lowering his head: "Hei, CEO Hei, ours.... ours black family's blood saving only prepare the blood for you, while this Miss has special blood type, afraid even ours Medical Blood Bank saving also does not have hers."

"So according to you, is it helpless?" Hei Yan Long narrowed his eyes.

This doctor also knows that he has bad temperament, hurried he shaking his head: "Just now I have asked nurse to make a check, the blood type that suitable with this Miss for transfusion, perhaps there's some in Feng family's blood saving."

Every wealthy family, in order to avoid difficulty regarding no blood stock for transfusion, so that they prepared everything in their own blood saving. That blood are those every year they pump their or taking from somewhere.

Hei Yan Long is creasing his forehead, was it when Yao Yao married into Feng's household, The Feng's has prepared her blood in their blood saving?

"Not early said! I will make a phone call to uncle! Oh yeah, What type of blood that Yao Yao need?"

"O type, special blood. You say like that to the Old Master Feng, he supposed to know it."

"En." Hei Yan Long hurried to make phone call to Feng Xiao, his cold good looking face immediately hung such elegant smile: "Uncle, it's me, Yan Long."

"What's matter, Yan Long?"

"Like this. I.... have very good friend, just now having car incident. But her blood type is bit special, after being checked, it seems her blood types similar with the blood that keep by yours family."

"Oh? Does your friend is someone come from Ya Si Lan's country?"

After listened to Feng Xiao, Hei Yan Long is dumbfounded, Ya Si Lan (Aslan country)? Aren't Feng Chen Yi's stepmother and his sister in law Ya Si Lan's people?

Why when he said wanted to borrow blood, suddenly Uncle Feng said something like this?

Hei Yan Long pair of black eyes rolled, smiled when spoke: "Uncle, how can you know my friend is someone who coming from Ya Si Lan (Aslan country)?"

"Hahaha, as you know your auntie and also Chen Yi's big sister in law are Ya Si Lan's people, perhaps only my family which only have this special blood type in whole nation. You are suddenly looking for me to borrow blood, perhaps you wanted to borrow O types special blood, aren't you?"

What is going on?

Does this special O types blood is belong only to the Ya Si Lan's people?

Strangely, as if Hei Yan Long found out sort of secret, little bit mess. That pair of black eyes are turned and glanced at the inner room.

This Luo Yao Yao, how can she has same blood type with Feng Chen Yi's stepmother and also Feng Chen Yi's big sister in law!

Even though Hei Yan Long has incomparable curiosity, but now the most important is saving Yao Yao first, so that he only can suppress his curiosity, asked his men to go to Feng's Mansion to bring the blood that Yao Yao needed.

Time, slowly, slowly by slowly passed.

Hei Yan Long slowly walking inside the inner room, seeing her pale face, could not help not to crease his forehead.

"CEO Hei, you haven't eaten anything for a day, let this subordinate buy something for you."

"No need, all of you go out." Hei Yan Long moving his hand, all the bodyguards who are standing inside the living room are getting out from Yao Yao's house.

Just at this time, suddenly Yao Yao's mobile phone is ringing.

Hei Yan Long hurried take the mobile phone, glance at the mobile phone screen, he hurried accept it....

"What are you doing?" on mobile phone, it is familiar sound.

Hei Yan Long is in difficulty gazing at Yao Yao, forcing himself to give a smile, and then trying to use such relax speaking tone to answer: "You guess what I am doing now?"

"Yan Long? How can you.... where's Yao Yao?"

"I am such boring so that I looked for her to have meal together, she just now went to washroom. Later I will ask her to phone you back." "Oh yeah, Chen Yi." Hei Yan Long pair of black eyes flashed, slowly said: "When will you back from your business trip in Turkey?"

"There's still few days, what's matter?"

Still a few days....

Pair of black eyes are staring at Yao Yao's wrist which being wrapped by gauze. Hurried he let out a smile: "Nothing, I just asking randomly. When you back we must together have a meal."

"En. I hang up."

"En." hurried Hei Yan Long hung up the phone call, and then let out long sighed.

If at the beginning he really didn't understand the reason why Yao Yao wanted to suicide, and then when he accepted Feng Chen Yi phone called that moment, he could consider somewhat understand it.

Even he could feel in difficulty when facing Feng Chen Yi, moreover the person is .... Yao Yao?

"CEO Hei....?"

At sudden, a weak sound flows to dumbfounded Hei Yan Long's ears, his body as if get sudden shocked, with little bit anger he looked at Yao Yao: "Suddenly let out a voice, you want to scare me to death, woman?" she has been unconscious for whole afternoon, not she is conscious, he could rest assured little bit.

### **Chapter 369 - 370**

# Hei Yan Long Helped Her

Yao Yao weakly said: "Sorry." her eyes are staring at the IV bottle which hanging near the bed.

She even thought this time she finally could free herself, but at the moment she opened her eyes the first person she saw actually Hei Yan Long, it seemed that he is the person who saved her.

Hah. Her eyes could not hide her hopeless, she gradually looked at Hei Yan Long, so weaken said: "How can you be here?"

"Don't ask me how could I be here, you hurry make a phone call to Feng Chen Yi!"

"Chen... Yi?"

'Thump' heart, heavily sink down. No! She does not want to make phone call to Feng Chen Yi, does not want to hear Feng Chen Yi's voice!!!

"You, have you said it to Feng Chen Yi?"

"I just told the truth, that's all."

Truth? Yao Yao face turned to be tensed.

Keep listening, Hei Yan Long continued: "Aren't both of us having meal? You suddenly went to wash room. I helped you to receive Feng Chen Yi's phone call. Others thing, I didn't see anything and also didn't know anything."

Hah, not to mention, Hei Yan Long indeed such smart man! After heard his words that pretended to be dummy and also dumbfounded gesture, Yao Yao heart which heavy before gradually lessen for bit. At least....

He did really understand not to ask everything about this. And still leave bit respect for her.

"Trouble you, please give me the mobile phone." one of smooth hand was drawn out from the quilt. The quilt is uncovered to her chest, showing the woman's white bare shoulders.

Yao Yao small face is white pale, recalled just now her suicide attempt, she didn't wear anything. Panicking she wanted to cover with a quilt.

At beside Hei Yan Long helplessly shook his head: "The thing must be seen at the beginning had already seen. Let me do it." after said, he was so carefully pulling up the quilt, covering the skin that showing up.

At this moment, Yao Yao could feel how embarrassing herself, her eyes are avoiding to look at Hei Yan Long's eyes.

He took the mobile phone.

She slowly took it from him, and at the moment when she wanted to dial Feng Chen Yi's number, once again Hei Yan Long opened his mouth: "Your way of speaking tone is really cannot do so. If you have little bit strength, give a little bit 'emotion'."

"En." Yao Yao forcing herself to nod her head, let out long sighed, as if she has already determined to make this phone call.

"Have you eaten full?"

At the moment when she heard that warm and also familiar voice, her nose suddenly felt runny sour.

Feng Chen Yi no matter to whom he forever always use such cold voice, but only when he together with her, he forever always use such warm speaking tone.

"Why don't you say anything?"

Gained herself back, Yao Yao nervously gulped her saliva, and using all her strength to give him an answer: "Ate.... fulled."

At beside Hei Yan Long who stared at Yao Yao who eyes are redden, afraid she would fail, grabbed the mobile phone from her: "I am bullied her, what can you do?"

"How can you still with Yao Yao?"

"Are you jealous?"

"Forget it, I still have many works to do, I hung up."

At the moment when Feng Chen Yi hung up the phone call, Yao Yao who is holding back her tears finally break out..... "Hu...." She didn't want to cry in front of Hei Yan Long, but she really could not hold it back anymore, she really could not hold it back anymore.

Heaven know, at the moment when she heard Feng Chen Yi's voice, how bitter it was inside her heart, as if she is living inside the hell, so bitter great in pain.

Why, why not death, and still wake up. What should she do after waking up? How to face all these things? She because could not face these things so that she could choose to suicide!

Chopping crying voice echoing inside the inner cold room, give a sense of different bleak feeling.

Hei Yan Long who is sitting at the bed side turned his head, his face extremely not good curled his hand and made into fist!

He really never thought, seeing this little girl crying, after all his heart can feel ache! Basically he could clearly feel, what kind of emotion she has right now.

Really such torment! And now he only can feel suffocating difficult to breathing....

After long time.

The crying sound finally faded away and stable.

Then Hei Yan Long dared to turn back his head looked at her. "You, what's your plan?"

"Hah, after all could not die, then just can...."

"Don't tell me you are going to divorce Feng Chen Yi!" Hei Yan Long coldly opened his mouth, his pair of black eyes are flashing cold gleam which give a chill feeling.

"Then what I supposed to do? Now, I don't even dare to listen to Feng Chen

Yi's voice, thus how must I face him in the future?"

"How can't you go and face him?" Hei Yan Long coldly narrowed his eyes: "The person who wronged, wasn't you; not even Feng Chen Yi, there's no reason for both of you getting the punishment! If you are divorced Feng Chen Yi, you just gotten into someone bad trick! Woman, you must learn how to live well, so that you would be able to make that someone gone crazy, continue to torture that person, this is the right thing!!"

"But now the person who in torment is me! The person who gone crazy is me!" she and Feng Chen Yi staying together won't be able to touch Yu Ao Tian, how could that cold heart and merciless man could be provoked?

Seeing the torment gleam in Yao Yao's eyes, Hei Yan Long is secretly laughing, seeing this little girl really didn't know Yu Ao Tian toward her.....

"Believe on me. More your relation good with Feng Chen Yi, that person, will be more in pain!!!"

That's right.

Thing had come to this point, Hei Yan Long finally understood Feng Chen Yi's words 'rest assured', Yu Ao Tian would not harm Yao Yao.... this real meaning.

So that, Yu Ao Tian is such cared toward Yao Yao!

All of them are mingling at the same circle, Hei Yan Long had heard countless stories regarding to Yu Ao Tian, so he more understand about Yu Ao Tian's attitudes toward women.

Such easy and free, such straightforward man, how could he keep on tangling one woman and not letting her go? Even went to r\*pe? Hah, he is Yu Ao Tian how hungry and thirst he could be until he dared to toss away his status by raped a woman, moreover she is someone wife?

Others....

Yu Ao Tian is too cared with this woman, so that he could act without thinking so much things, and also such crazy done this kind of thing! His goal not more than wanted Yao Yao felt guilty toward Feng Chen Yi and then taking a divorce path.

Hah.... this is really such unpredictably evil intention, such unscrupulous divisive man's tactic!

Thinking to this point, Hei Yan Long secretly laughing. Bend down his body, and then squat at her side, slowly said: "Woman, there's a thing since it had done, beside it was something out of our control, stop to blame yourself. Better you think for further way, and think another way to makeup for those you love and cherish."

She understood the meaning of Hei Yan Long's words, or else how could she think to use her life time to accompany Feng Chen Yi after they married. But....

"This is not the first time, I really could not go through the tied in my heart!!!"

Not the first time?

Could it be, last time when Yao Yao was kidnapped by Yu Ao Tian....

Hah, now Hei Yan Long more affirmed with Yu Ao Tian purposed. But, he quite hand it to Feng Chen Yi.

Perhaps Feng Chen Yi had seen Yu Ao Tian intention, so that no mater what he still decided to marry with Yao Yao.

But....

At the time when both of men are secretly having a fight, there's a woman who actually an invisibly gotten severe hurt and injured to black and blue. And then, when Hei Yan Long pitied Yao Yao, at the same time he only could view all this thing coldly.....

Because both of men are fight caused by Yao Yao. If both of these men didn't give one step back, forever these three persons, no matter what forever will entangle in bitterness.

Today's he finally understood, why Feng Chen Yi didn't let them to get involved with three of them matter.....

"Even though cannot get over the tied in heart, still must think the way to get it over! Or else, Chen Yi would feel same bitterness alike you do! Understand?" suddenly Hei Yan Long expression turned to be serious.

## **Chapter 370**

### For Once Again Yu Ao Tian is Appeared at Her Room

She slowly closed her eyes, that's right, if she left by this way, how about Chen Yi?

Keeps on torturing by Yu Ao Tian, entangled, she always shows how care she is, and how about Chen Yi will he be more concerned?

Hei Yan Long was right, even though cannot get over the tied in heart, she still must find away to get it over. She should not let Feng Chen Yi to feel the torment alike hers.... "I understood." powerless she nodding her head.

Hei Yan Long staring at her white pale face, let out long sighed.....

if, he isn't Feng Chen Yi's friend, he will absolutely persuade Feng Chen Yi and Yao Yao to get divorce.

Alike this triangle love relationship, as long as one step back, this complicated thing will be easily solved.

But there's no way, he didn't have any choice, Feng Chen Yi is his friend, do that he only can stand at Feng Chen Yi's side, persuade Yao Yao to be persistent about this marriage!

'Ring ring ring....'

Suddenly the phone is ringing. Yao Yao heave a sighed, suddenly open her eyes.

Hei Yan Long glanced at the mobile phone screen, his face dim, forcing to give smiling face, said: "It is Chen Yi, Let me help you to accept the call." after said, he didn't give Yao Yao chance to speak, taking the mobile phone and then walking out from the inner room.

At the time he has ensured the door closed tightly, Hei Yan Long could clearly see it is Yu Ao Tian's name in the phone screen, his half body is leaning on sofa, slowly accept the phone call....

"Bao Bei, what are you doing?"

Listen to the sweet filled with love speaking tone, he curved upward his mouth, today the most fertile two of businessmen which are most fierce and powerful person, when facing with the woman they loved the most, they able to let out such gentle and also such loving care speaking tone. "Director Yu, isn't it not good to address other person's wife this way?"

"Chen Yi?"

"I am not Chen Yi, I am Hei Yan Long."

"En? CEO Hei. Where's Yao Yao?" suddenly the speaking tone from the mobile phone turned to be cold.

Hei Yan Long folded his pair of hand in front of his chest, slowly said: "Just now have saved her from Hell Gate. Now she is lying in bed recuperate, Director Yu would you want to come 'get up steam', or else afraid in the future you won't be able to see her anymore!!!!"

'Tutututtttt'

Suddenly the mobile phone being hung up, pair of Hei Yan Long black eyes flashed: "Hah, really someone hard to deal, not even willing to speak more words, simply to say really similar and one species with Feng Chen Yi!" raised, he came back to the inner room.

Yao Yao hurried to look at him: "What did Chen Yi say?"

"Nothing, he just asking about you came back from office."

"Did he suspicious on something?"

"Nothing." Hei Yan Long showed such natural, it made Yao Yao not even could guess actually who was phoned before.

"Then...." an empty eyes subconsciously gazing at the thick gauze which wrapped her wrist: "Even though able to lie to Chen Yi, wait until he come back, seeing this kind of wound he would find out what was going on before?"

"Didn't you chase out by the Feng's family? He is such hate his stepmother, when the time arrived just put all the account onto his stepmother."

Her expression stiffen, suddenly she can feel that.... this Hei Yan Long really.... despicable! "although his stepmother isn't what good thing, we also could not do something like this, right?"

"You are indeed foolish girl. In the business world we can call this as win over on two sides! Anyway we also could not let Chen Yi to know about this matter, furthermore Chen Yi hates his stepmother so much. Also you were chased out by his stepmother, so this is the simplest and yet most fit reason."

Hahaha... it seems to be.

Forget it, when time arrived just think one step and move one step.

"Oh ya, foolish girl, is your mother or your father Ya Si Lan's people?"

Seeing the curious expression on Hei Yan Long's face, she shook her head: "No ah. Both of them are Chinese."

"Hah? Then it little bit weird...." if neither Yao Yao's mother nor Yao Yao's father is Ya Si Lan's people, could it be she not her father and mother biological daughter, could she mistaken her own bloodline.

"What's matter? CEO Hei, why you ask me?"

"Oh, like this, because...."

'ring ring ring....' at the moment when Hei Yan Long wanted to open his mouth, his mobile phone is ringing.

"Hello?"

"CEO Hei, something come out at company, Vice CEO wanted you to come here for while."

Hei Yan Long unhappily creased his forehead: "Didn't I have say? Today all the matter regarding company don't come to bother me!"

"But, CEO Hei.... this matter is urgent, you must come here to settle it."

"Alright, I understood! Really troublesome!" he is raging in fume when hung the phone call, at the moment he lifted his head....

Yao Yao has given him faint smile: "CEO Hei, today really trouble you, I have disturbed you for a day, you hurry go back to company."

"En." Hei Yan Long's eyes swept at 'drip' IV bottle: "Later when the IV bottle liquid done dripping, can you pull it by yourself?"

"Can."

"Oh, that's right, I have asked my subordinate to buy you clothes, it put in living room. After it done you go and wear the clothes. Others..." Hei Yan Long looked at his watch: "Perhaps it won't take longer time to settle, you can call me anytime. I will let my subordinate to send you food."

Listened to Hei Yan Long who arranging everything such in detail, Yao Yao really get touched, moreover she even envied Feng Chen Yi who has this best friend, of course she still have Gong Xiao Man. "En, I understood, CEO Hei, thank you."

Watching until Hei Yan Long left, she is dumbfounded looked at the ceiling, as soon as she let herself to empty her mind, stop to think anything.

Perhaps because of the drug infused, perhaps she just too weary for one night, without she realized she fallen asleep....

'Even though I must die, I will also drag you together with me. Bao Bei, don't think to leave me....'

'Hah, Bao Bei, betraying your own husband and making love with other man the feeling not bad too right?'

'Oh. Really damn tight!'

'Relax! Simple to say I am about die because place in your between!'

Don't.... don't....

Nightmares one by one haunted her, all her dreams are completely Yu Ao Tian's figure.

That man good looking face and yet such devilish, bottomless pair of eyes, and constantly moving his body, again and again it showing up in his mind and recalled her memories.

She is having rough breath and cold sweat covered her forehead. "Damn it, what time is it?" mobile phone, turn on the bedside lamp, she hurried to take look at her IV bottle. It has emptied!

She has over slept.... luckily she is not too late.

Yao Yao raised her hand, at the moment when she wanted to pull out the IV needle, she realized it isn't at her back of hand.

"The needle had been pulled down."

Suddenly, a cold voice flown from one side, Yao Yao alike get shocked little white rabbit who fur straight up, and then she turned to the voice resource....

On the chair, Yu Ao Tian is absent-minded straightly sitting at there, the dim of light lighted his gloomy face, it's give a fear for heart.